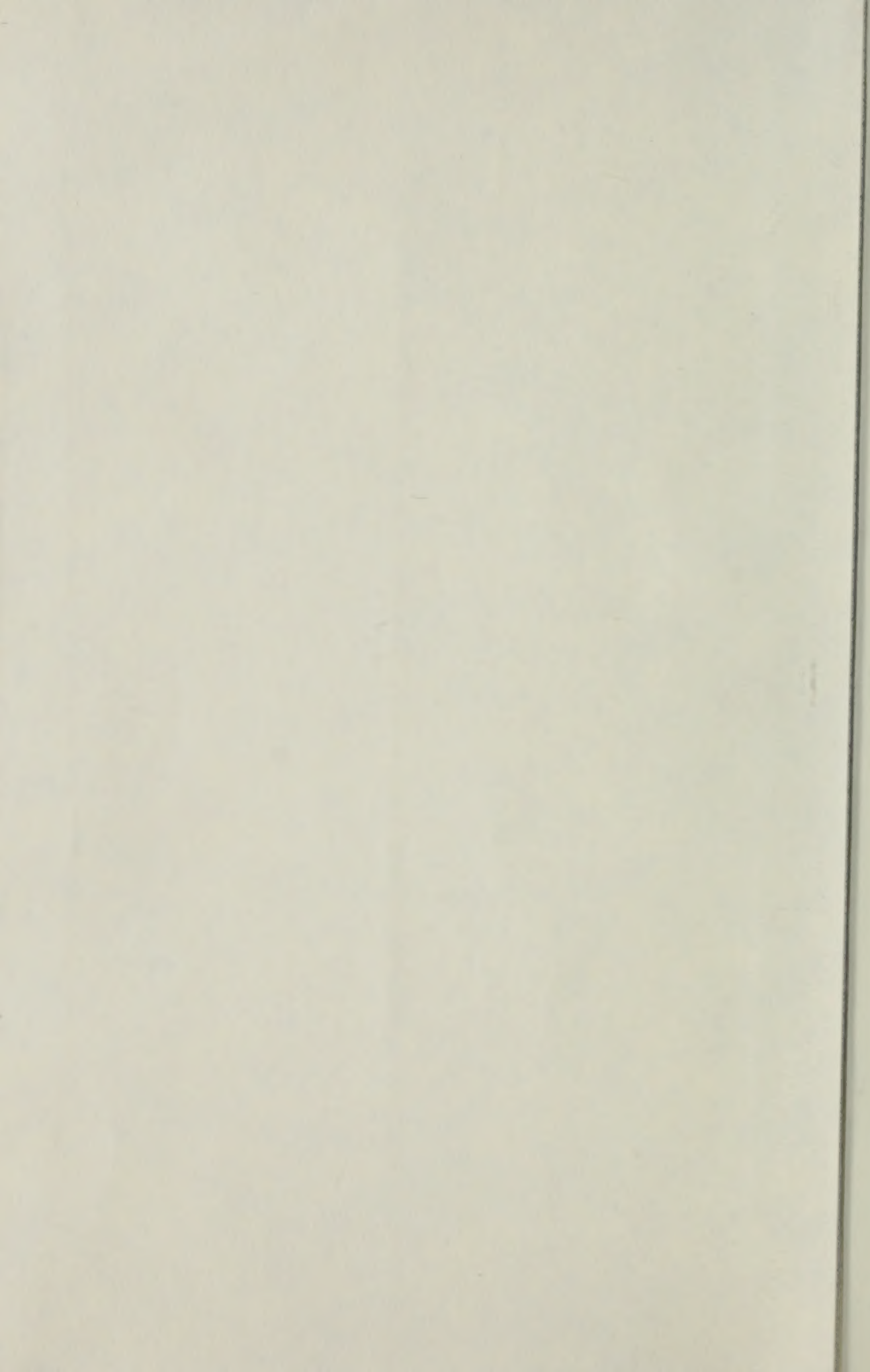


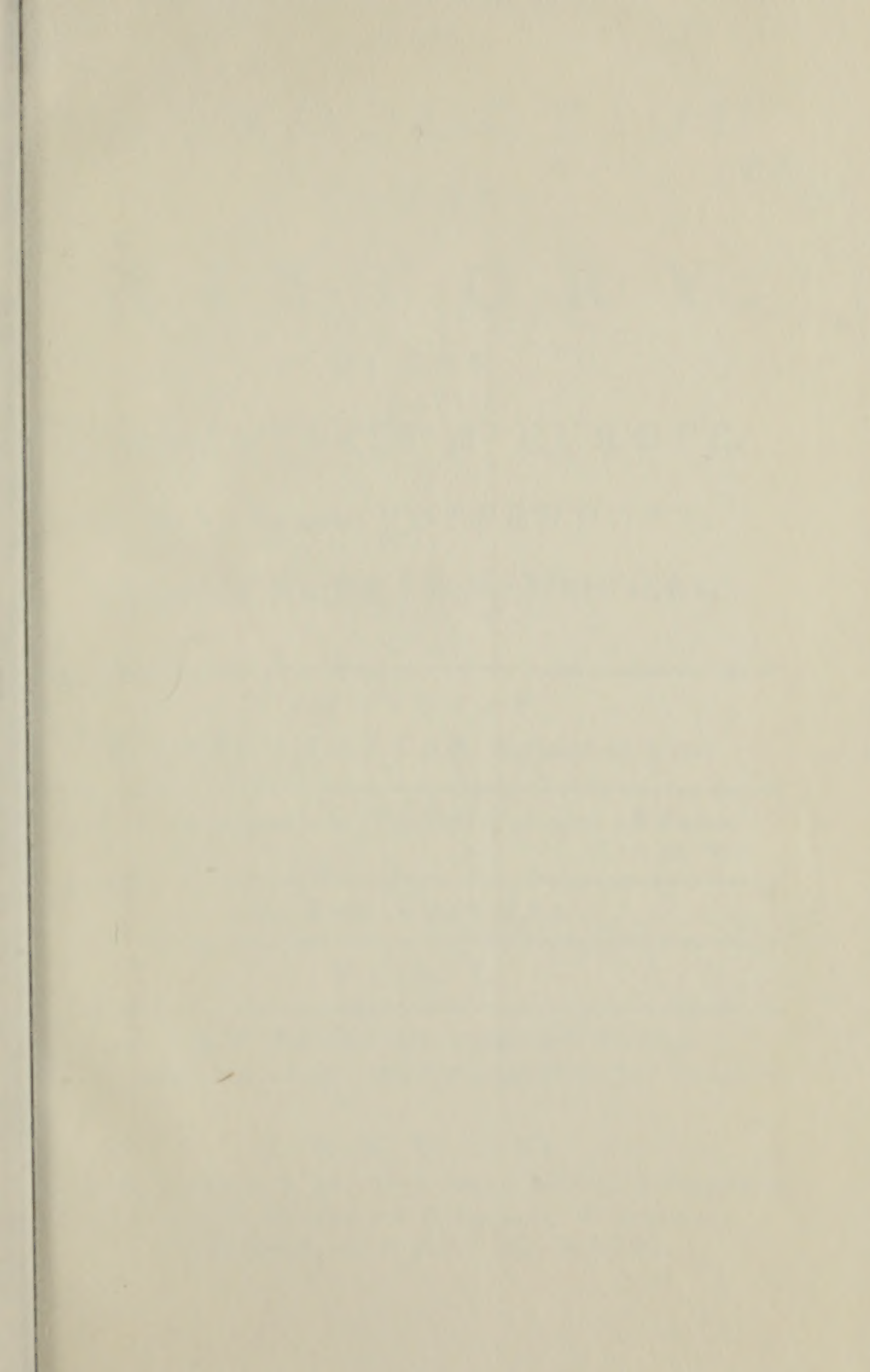
TUFTS UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

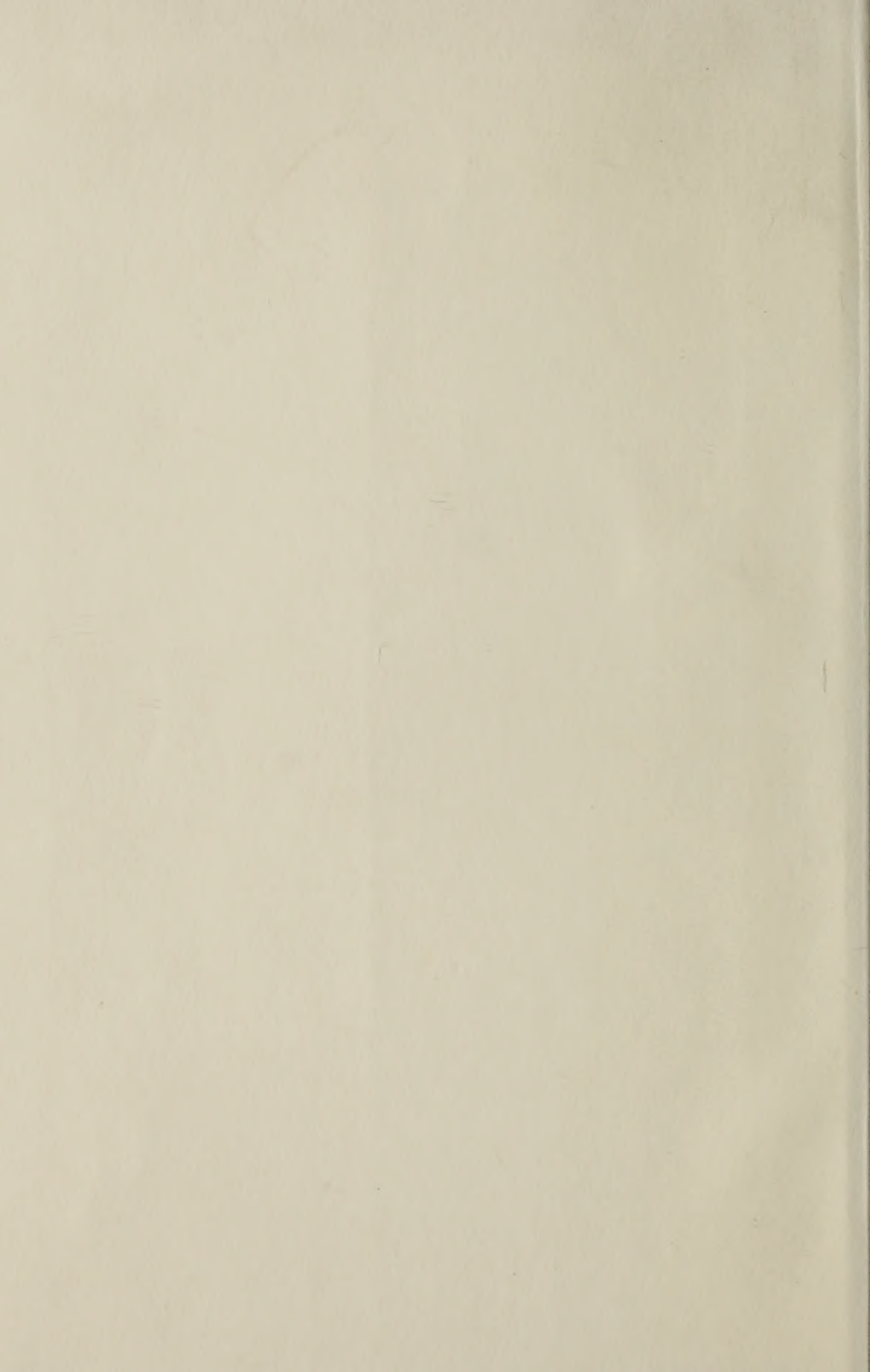


Gift
Hon. Richard Frothingham

HON. RICHARD FROTHINGHAM







INTRODUCTION
TO THE
HISTORY
OF THE

Principal STATES of EUROPE.

Begun by BARON PUFFENDORF:

Continued by Mr. DE LA MARTINIERE.

IMPROVED

By JOSEPH SAYER Serjeant at Law.

Nescire quid antequam natus sis acciderit id est semper esse Puerum.

Cic. de Orat.

In TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

A NEW EDITION revised and corrected.

L O N D O N:

Printed for A. WILDE, A. MILLAR, B. DOD, J. HINTON, J. RIVINGTON,
L. HAWES, W. CLARKE and R. COLLINS, W. JOHNSTON,
T. LONGMAN, and B. LAW. M.DCC.LXIV.

31751. I. I. O. V.

A NEW EDITION revised and corrected

103

Page

TO HIS
ROYAL HIGHNESS,
PRINCE GEORGE.

S I R,

THE established Reputation of the original Author, and the Figure made by the Continuer of this Introduction in the learned World, will it is humbly hoped in some Measure excuse the Presumption of addressing it to your ROYAL HIGHNESS; and this will further be excused by the Nature of the Subject.

HISTORY the Mirrour of past Times is more peculiarly the Concern of Princes. In this, if not sullied by the Breath of Prejudice, nor obscured by the Flaws of Partiality, the Actions of the Oppressors of their Fellow-Creatures appear, as they justly ought, most horrid, most detestable. On the

contrary, such Princes as have been indeed Fathers of their People are herein represented, that others may be excited to an Imitation of their Godlike Qualities, in the most amiable Forms; and their Images, which will be reflected down to the latest Posterity, will from Time to Time be more and more admired.

MAY all the Virtues of your Illustrious House center in your ROYAL HIGHNESS: But especially may that Freedom from false Ambition, and that Easiness of Access, which so remarkably adorn your Royal Father, strike deep Root in your tender Breast. Alas! what Uneasinesses, what Misfortunes to themselves; what Miseries to Nations arise from the ambitious Views of Princes? And Easiness of Access is in Princes a most endearing Virtue: The Ears of such as are thereof possessed being like Heaven's Gates always open to the Prayers of their Subjects; and they delight in nothing so much as in granting their reasonable Requests.

THIS last Virtue, besides being infinitely beneficial to the Governed, is moreover of the utmost Importance to Governors. How many, who might otherwise have passed for good Princes, have suffered their Confidence and Authority to be engrossed and abused by Favourites, Juntos or Parties; who under the
Pre-

DEDICATION.

v

Pretence of Zeal for their Master's Interest, when nothing was intended but the Gratification of their own Lust of Riches and Power, have laid Load after Load upon their Fellow-Subjects. This has by Degrees alienated the Minds of Subjects from their Sovereigns; and some Princes have been so deceived or blinded, as not to see the Mistake until their Ruin was inevitable.

THAT Flatterers the Disgrace of human Nature, the Curse and often the Bane of Princes, may be ever far from your ROYAL HIGHNESS; that your Soul may be betimes fired with the Love of every heroic Virtue; and that you may for a long Time be an Honour and Blessing to your Country; is the ardent Wish and earnest Prayer of,

YOUR ROYAL HIGHNESS'S

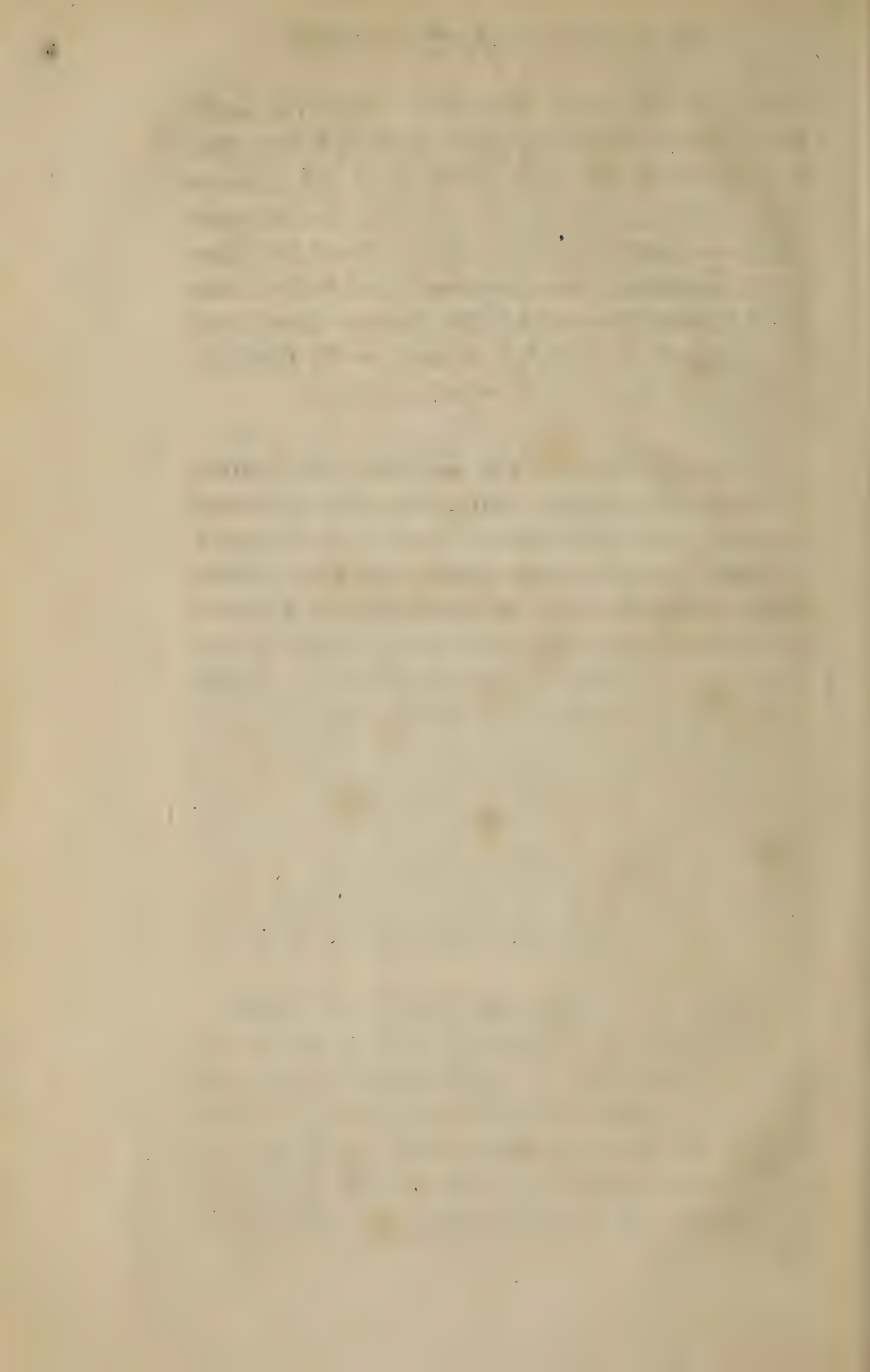
Most dutiful,

Most obedient,

And most humble Servant,

CLARE,
1748.

J. SAYER.



BARON PUFFENDORF's

P R E F A C E.

IT being allowed by the learned that History is a most useful as well as pleasant Study, and particularly so to those who are intended for publick Employments, young Gentlemen of Family should be exhorted to apply themselves thereto while young; because their Memory is at that Time in its full Vigour. It is moreover to be feared, that such as have no Relish for History will not make any considerable Progress in the other Sciences.

Some of the antient Historians are indeed read in Schools, and so far from condemning this Practice they should in my Opinion be always begun with: But it seems to be a great Mistake in those to whom the Education of Youth is committed to neglect the History of later Times; for if it be true that young Persons ought to understand those Things most which will be most useful, it is certainly more proper for them, and especially for such as are likely to be employed in Affairs of State, to understand well the modern History of their own and the neighbouring Nations, than to be ever so great Masters of *Cornelius Nepos*, *Curtius* or any other of the Antient Historians.

In order to remove the Difficulties that obstruct the Study of History, which arise principally from the Extensiveness of the Subject and the Variety of the Languages in which it is written, I not many Years ago drew up, for the Use of some young *Swedish* Gentlemen my Pupils, a compendious History of such States as had any Con-

nexion with the Kingdom of *Sweden*. This at first quite a rough Sketch was designed only for their private Improvement: But Copies thereof having fallen into divers Hands, I had Reason to fear that some Bookseller would, as it has happened to many others, publish it without my Consent or Knowledge. Hereupon notwithstanding the multiplicity of Business at that Time upon my Hands I revised it; and having made it somewhat more perfect chose rather to publish it myself, than suffer a surreptitious Copy thereof to be published. These Considerations will I hope dispose the Reader to judge favourably of a Work, which was not intended for Men advanced in Learning, but adapted to the Apprehensions and Capacities of young Persons; whom I was willing to induce, by thus paving the Way and giving them as it were a Relish of the Subject, to search farther into History.

As I have in the general taken the History of every State from its own Historians, the Reader ought not to be surprized, if he sometimes meets with a Disagreement in the different Accounts of the same Transaction: For as Historians have usually a Partiality to their respective Countries this could not be avoided, except, which was not my Province, I had taken upon myself to decide or reconcile all such Differences.

For the Sake of giving a clearer View of the History of every State I have, without designedly flattering or undervaluing any one, added such Observations as have been usually made upon the Nature of its Soil, the Manners of its Inhabitants, its Strength, the Form of its Government, and its Interest with regard to other States. The Design of these is to incite in young Gentlemen a
Curiosity

Curiosity to inquire when they travel, or when they converse with Men of Experience, into such Things. What I have said of the Interest of States must be understood as applicable chiefly to the Time when this Book was composed. It must be confessed, that the Knowledge of this is not so easily to be attained by young Persons as by those of riper Years: Yet I could not pass it by; for unless the Interest of a State be understood, no good Judgment can be formed whether its Affairs are well administred.

It is proper for the Assistance of young Persons in this Particular to observe, that the Interest of a State may be divided into its imaginary and real Interest. The former of these, which I take to consist in aiming at universal Monarchy, a Monopoly, or some other Thing of the like Kind, can never be pursued by a Prince without infinite Expence and Destruction to his Subjects; and besides that no solid Benefit would arise therefrom if it should succeed, the Attempt at any one of these would certainly fail: It being for the Interest of all other States to oppose it with all their Might. *Num si vos omnibus imperare vultis sequitur ut omnes servitutem accipiant?* In other Words, *Is there any Reason that because you would be Masters of all Men all should submit tamely to your Yoke?* The other or real Interest of a State is to be considered as permanent or temporary. The former of these depends upon the Situation of its Dominions, its Constitution and the Disposition of its People: The latter upon the Strength or Weakness of the neighbouring States. An Alteration in either of these must vary the temporary Interest of such State; and hence it happens, that it is at some Times prudent in order to preserve the Ballance of Power for one State to assist

assist another, which it is at other Times equally prudent to join against.

As the temporary Interest of a State must one would think be in the general obvious, it may be asked, how it comes to pass that such great and pernicious Mistakes are so frequently made therein? One Answer is, that the Persons, in whom the supreme Power is vested, are sometimes quite ignorant of the true Interests of their respective States; or which is still worse that they are entirely governed by their Passions, or by those of some Favourites. It likewise happens, where the Administration of Affairs is committed to Ministers, that these do not in many Cases see what is most proper to be pursued; or that they prefer their own private Interest to that of the State; or, which too often happens, that being split into Factions they are more intent upon ruining their Rivals than serving their Country.

Upon the whole it appears that, although the temporary Interest of a State be for the most Part obvious, no good Judgment can be formed whether this will be pursued, without knowing the Capacities, Inclinations, Caprices and private Views, of those who have the Management of its Affairs; for it sometimes happens, that a State in itself weak is made respectable by the Prudence of its Directors: And on the contrary, a Nation naturally powerful is frequently brought by the weak or wicked Conduct of those who sit at the Helm into a most contemptible Condition. The Knowledge of these, which is quite necessary to all who have the Care of the foreign Affairs of a State, must as the Scenes are often changed in Courts be very difficult to acquire; because it is only to be learned by Observation, or from Men who are well acquainted therewith.

Mr.

Mr. SERJEANT SAYER'S

P R E F A C E.

THE Reception of this Introduction, in most Parts of *Europe*, having been such as was reasonably to be expected from the great Reputation of Baron *Puffendorf* in the learned World, Mr. *Martiniere*, who has given sufficient Proofs of his Knowledge in History, was prevailed upon about the Year 1719 to publish an Edition thereof brought down to that Time. It was afterwards continued by him to the Year 1743. Besides continuing the Baron's Chapters, which were but thirteen, namely of the *ancient Empires, Spain, Portugal, England, France, Holland, Swisserland, Germany, Denmark, Poland, Muscovy, the Pope's spiritual Monarchy and Sweden*, Mr. *Martiniere* has added many new Ones.

Some of these, as the Chapters of *Sardinia, Naples and Sicily, Prussia, Genoa, Tuscany, the Pope's Dominions, Venice and Turkey*, which are too considerable States to be omitted in a Book of this Kind, are retained: But as the Design was that the present Edition should be conformable to the Baron's Plan, it has been thought proper to omit the Chapters of *Lorrain, Parma, Placentia, Mantua, Modena, Malta, the House of Radzivil, Geneva, Hungary, Bohemia* and the *German Princes*. Several of these are not of Consequence enough to have Place in a Book which professes to treat only of the principal States of *Europe*;
and

and the History of some other States, or at least the Modern part thereof, which have lost their Independency, is interwoven with that of the State to which they are at this Time subject. The Memoirs of the House of *Radzivil* are foreign to the Subject; and as the principal Actions of the *German* Princes are mentioned in the Chapter of *Germany*, it was neither necessary nor proper to continue Chapters, which contain very little more than the Genealogy of their respective Families. As to the Interest of the respective States, which is in divers altered since the Baron's Time, Mr. *Martinier*'s Opinion is in the general adhered to: But in some Instances, where this seemed to be misunderstood, the Liberty has been taken of differing from him.

Perspicuity and Brevity have been principally aimed at: Yet no Pains have been spared to make the Style correct, and as elegant as the Nature of the Subject where Transitions are so frequent would admit. It is feared that many Faults will be discovered in the Style: But it is at the same Time hoped, that the Declaration of having endeavoured to come up to the Purity and Beauty of the *English* Language will procure more Indulgence from the judicious Reader, than an Affectation of having been regardless of those Things, in which the Publick has a Right to expect from every Author the utmost Care.

The Freedom taken with Mr. *Martinier*'s Edition may perhaps be thought too great: But this is in a great Measure if not altogether justified by the following Passage in his Preface. *Il seroit à souhaiter que dans la Suite quelqu'un prenant cet Ouvrage, tant du Baron Puffendorf que de moi, remaniât le tout, & lui donnât une Forme assez parfaite*

*faite pour en faire un Livre classique en Faveur de
jeuns Gens, qui doivent avoir une Teinture de l'His-
toire. In other Words: It is to be wished that some
Person would hereafter take it upon him to revise
this Work, as well Baron Puffendorf's Part as
mine, and give it such a Degree of Perfection as to
make it a classical Book for the use of young Persons,
who ought by all Means to have some Knowledge
in History. The Design was to make it such a
Book: How far this is executed must be submitted
to the Reader's Judgment.*

C O N-



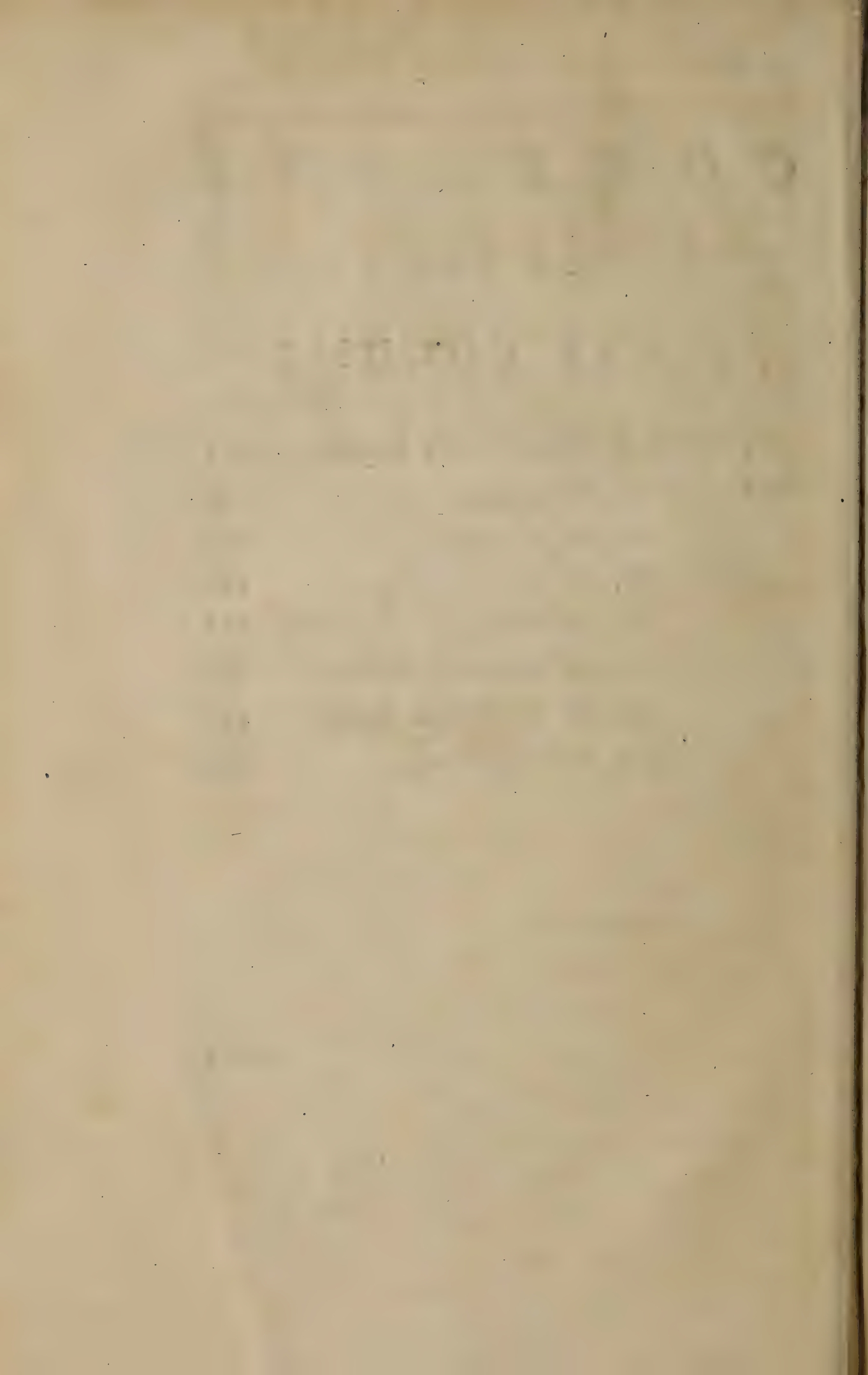
C O N T E N T S

O F T H E

F I R S T V O L U M E.

C HAP. I. Of the <i>ancient Empires</i> , Page 1	<i>Ref -</i>
II. Of <i>Spain</i> ,	21 "
III. Of <i>Portugal</i> ,	120 "
IV. Of <i>Great-Britain</i> ,	142 "
V. Of <i>France</i> ,	216 "
VI. Of the <i>United Provinces</i> ,	310 "
VII. Of the <i>German Empire</i> ,	345 "
VIII. Of <i>Switzerland</i> ,	399 "

A N



A N INTRODUCTION

TO THE
HISTORY of the principal Kingdoms
and States of *Europe*.

C H A P. I.

*Of the ancient Empires, and particularly of
the Roman, on the Ruins of which many new
Kingdoms and States were formed.*

AT the first peopling of the World every Father had an uncontrouled Power in his own Family; and it is probable that no civil Government was constituted before the Flood; for it is scarce credible, that there could have been such an universal and monstrous Depravity of Manners as to provoke the Almighty to drown the whole Species, if Mankind had been subject to Laws and Governors. This Supposition is moreover confirmed by the Consideration, that although Men have at all Times had the same Passions and Propensities, they have not since the Formation of civil Societies been in the General guilty of such enormous Crimes as before existed.

The Disputes and Quarrels betwixt neighbouring Families, which could be decided no other Way than by force, was perhaps the first Inducement, for it appears that the paternal Power continued for some Time after the Flood, to the forming of civil Societies. As the World moreover grew populous, there were of Course many Villains; and as a Combination of these was sufficient to ruin any single Family, it became necessary

*Of the first
State of Man-
kind.*

*The Origin of
CIVIL SOCI-
ETIES.*

necessary for several Families to unite for their mutual Defence. The better to execute the Designs of these small Societies, which at first consisted perhaps of a few neighbouring Families that could conveniently assist each other, it was proper that some one or more, whose Wisdom and Courage were conspicuous, should have the Direction of their Affairs; and to prevent Divisions among themselves that all Matters in Dispute should be referred to his or their Decision. It is likewise probable, that when any Number of them agreed to seek out new Habitations they chose a Leader from amongst themselves, to whom the Care of the Expedition and of settling themselves in some neighbouring Country was committed. Hence it appears, that the most ancient Form of civil Government was what *Aristotle* calls *Heroical*. It is not however to be imagined, although for the good of themselves they might lodge the executive Part thereof in the Hands of one or more, whose Authority was considerable enough to give Weight to his or their Orders, that the Fathers of Families, who before had the whole Power, should at once divest themselves of all Share in the Government.

*The first State
not easily to be
determined.*

At what Time the first Civil Society in the World was formed it is hard to determine, or which ought to be looked upon as the most Ancient; for although the *Assyrian* is commonly reckoned the first Monarchy, it does not follow that it was the first Civil Society. Nay it is evident from the Account we have of the Wars of the first *Assyrian* Monarchs, that there were at that Time other States. As other human Inventions do not presently come to Perfection, so it is probable that the first Civil Societies were rude and imperfect; and that Laws and other Regulations necessary for the carrying on of Civil Government were by Degrees made. It is likewise plain that they were small, since the further one looks back into History the more independent States are to be found; which in Process of Time were either united together, or the less powerful States were subdued by the more powerful ones.

*Of the ASSY-
RIAN Empire.*

The *Assyrian* is generally allowed to be the most Ancient of the larger Monarchies. The best Reason that can perhaps be given for this is, that this Part of the World was first peopled: For it follows of Course that

that the first Civil Society was here formed; and it is much easier for a Society that is already established to conquer a neighbouring one in its Infancy, than for a new feeble State, whose Members are under a Necessity of tilling the Ground or else must starve, to subdue the older One. The vast Armies employed by *Ninus* and *Semiramis* in conquering very distant Countries do indeed render the common Chronology and History of the first Times a little suspected; but without entering minutely into this Matter, which is not our Business at present, it may easily be conceived that when any one State had subdued divers others, it might, with the Addition these would make to its Strength extend its Conquests a great Way. Amongst other Methods made Use of by the *Affyrian* Monarchs to keep the many Nations of which their vast Empire consisted in Awe, the two following were the most remarkable. They were in the first Place seldom seen by any except their favourite Ministers, which made the People entertain a Kind of Veneration for their Persons as if they were more than Men; and in the second a large Army sufficient to strike Terror both at Home and Abroad, of which some trusty General had the Command, was always quartered near the Place of their Residence. This Army composed of a certain Number from every Province was disbanded every Year, and a new one was raised. By this Means a great many from all Parts of the Empire had in Process of Time an Opportunity of seeing and admiring the Grandeur and Power of their King; and it was thereby put out of any General's Power so to ingratiate himself with the Army as to endanger the Empire. The Ruin of this Empire under *Sardanapalus* was not so much owing to his Effeminacy as to the Inactivity of several preceding Kings, who by giving themselves up to Voluptuousness had lost their Authority amongst the People. This furnished the Governors of Provinces with an Opportunity of increasing their Power; and at length two of them, *Arbaces* Governor of *Media* and the Governor of *Babylon*, assumed the Sovereignty of their respective Provinces, which afterwards became Part of the *Persian* Empire.

Cyrus the Founder of the *Persian* Monarchy joined
 great Part of lesser *Asia* to the Kingdoms of *Media* and *Babylon*.
 Of the PER-
 SIAN Empire.

Babylon. Amongst other wise Institutions this Prince built Castles in all the Provinces where he had Governors, and gave the Command of these to Officers of no great Rank; who were not to obey any Orders from the respective Governors but to receive their Orders immediately from the King. This had a great Tendency to preserve the Peace of the Monarchy; for without the Connivance of these Commandants, who were so many Spies on their Conduct, the Governors could not carry any ambitious Design into Execution. On the other Hand nothing was to be feared from the Commandants; for a Combination of many of them would not, as they were of low Condition and their Power was much limited, have been sufficient to form any considerable Party against the King. The Kingdom of *Egypt* was annexed by *Cambyfes* to this Empire, but some Attempts made afterwards to extend it further failed. The Design of the same *Cambyfes* to subdue *Æthiopia* came to nought; nor had *Darius Hydaspes* any better Success in his Enterprize against the *Scythians*. The Successors of *Xerxes*, warned by the shameful Issue of his *Grecian* Expedition, instead of attacking the *Grecian* States took the Advantage of their Divisions; and by making it a Rule to assist the weaker ones kept them always together by the Ears. Being at length tired and exhausted with Intestine Wars, the *Greeks* were glad to accept the Proposals of Peace offered by *Persia*; which although seemingly reasonable, for every City was to be free and independent, were calculated to prevent their attempting for the future any Thing of Consequence. Notwithstanding all this Precaution the *Persian* Empire was ruined by *Macedonia* an inconsiderable Part of *Greece*. Its Ruin must however in some Measure be imputed to the Imprudence and Negligence of its own Monarchs. Had these attended properly to the growing Power of *Philip* and *Alexander* his Son, they would, as it had been a Maxim with their Predecessors to do, have stirred up whatever the Expence of it had been the other States, and by this Means have cut out Work enough for these Warlike Princes at Home: But being enervated by Luxury, and having too mean an Opinion of other Nations, they drew upon themselves their own Destruction.

Greece in ancient Times was divided into many Com. Of GREECE.
monwealths, every one of which had its peculiar Laws.

In Process of Time the City of *Athens*, whose Inha- Of ATHENS.
bitants surpassed the other Greeks in Understanding,
Civility of Manners, and the Love of Arts and Sciences,
gained the Ascendancy; and its Glory was greatly encrea-
sed by the brave and prudent Conduct of the *Athenians* in
the *Persian Wars*. The commodious Port of *Pyræum*
being afterwards annexed to this City it acquired im-
mense Riches by Trade; and its naval Strength became
considerable enough to subdue the Islands in the *Archi-
pelago* and the Coast of lesser *Asia*. Elated by this
Success the *Athenians* grew overbearing and wanted to
be Masters of *Greece*. This being perceived a Confe-
deracy headed by the *Spartans*, who could not bear to
see the Pride of the *Athenians*, was entered into against
them by the *Peloponnesians* and other States. After a
long War, in which the *Athenians* behaved bravely, they
were routed in *Sicilia*; which with the Loss sustained
by their Fleet on the *Thracian* Coast entirely ruined
their Affairs. *Athens* was afterwards taken, and the
Spartans established in it thirty Governors who carried
it with a very high Hand. Their Tyranny becoming
insupportable they were at length expelled by *Thrasybu-
lus*; and the City recovered itself a little, but never
could arrive at its ancient Grandeur. Thus the *Athe-
nians* by grasping at too much, for as their whole Num-
ber was not more than 10,000 it was scarce possible for
them to support themselves in large Conquests, lost all:
And indeed, as the Loss of a Battle or two commonly
ruins such States, it is much more for their Interest to
mind Trade and the Security of themselves than to at-
tempt any Thing against their Neighbours.

Next to *Athens Sparta* was the most famous City of Of SPARTA.
Greece, its Inhabitants being by the wise Laws and Se-
verity of Manners introduced by *Lycurgus* fitted for war-
like Atchievements. While the *Spartans* adhered to
the former of these they were able to defend themselves
against all other States; and while as a Consequence of
the latter a noble Contempt of Riches prevailed amongst
them, they had no Thought of disturbing any of their
Neighbours. Aiming afterwards at vast Things they
found a wide Difference betwixt defending themselves
and subduing powerful States. Not content with van-

quishing the *Athenians* and becoming Masters of *Greece*, the *Spartans* conceived Hope of conquering *Persia*; but their General *Agésilas* was scarce landed before they found it necessary to recall him for the Defence of themselves against the other States of *Greece*, who being jealous of their Greatness and spirited up by the King of *Persia* had taken Arms against them. The *Spartan* Fleet was afterwards worsted by *Conon*; and being themselves defeated at the Battle of *Leuctra* by *Epaminondas* they had much ado to defend their own Walls.

Of THEBES.

While *Epaminondas* who commanded the *Thebans* against the *Spartans* lived, the City of *Thebes* was by his Wisdom and Valour raised to a great Pitch of Glory; but it afterwards returned to its former State and was in the End ruined by *Alexander*.

Of the MACEDONIAN Empire.

Macedonia, inconsiderable in itself and exposed to the Incurfions of the *Thracians* and other barbarous Nations, was before *Philip's* Time looked upon as the most despicable of the *Grecian* States: Yet by the military Prowess of two succeeding Kings it became so powerful, that it conquered great Part of the World. After chastising the neighbouring Nations who were much addicted to Robberies *Philip* entertained the Thought of making himself the Head of *Greece*. In order to this, for notwithstanding their ancient Glory was lost they would if united have been too much for the *Macedonians*, he made it his Study to foment Quarrels betwixt the different States. Being hereby weakened and rendered averse to the helping of each other, he by attacking one after another before they were aware of it became too powerful for them all.

Character of PHILIP.

This Prince, who laid the Foundation of the *Macedonian* Empire, was well qualified for contriving and executing vast Designs. His Judgment was quick and penetrating, and the Thirst of Glory was strong in him. He would if possible find out a fair Colour for his Actions; but in Case of Necessity would stick at nothing to carry his Point. He was so great a Master of his own Passions that no Body could know his Design; and at the same Time would insinuate so artfully as to find out if it was possible to do it the Intention of another. Under the Pretence of Friendship to two Parties at Difference he would betray both; and he would if it could be done set such as were Friends at Variance,

riance. He could talk seriously or merrily; and spared for no Expence that was necessary to the carrying on of his Purposes. He was a consummate General and had made his Men such good Soldiers, that the *Macedonian Phalanx* invented by him was terrible even to the *Romans*. He always headed and exercised his own Troops, and took Care to see them punctually paid. Being arrived at the utmost pitch of military Greatness, he was proclaimed with the Consent of all the States General of *Greece* against the *Persians*; but while he was preparing for an Expedition against *Persia*, he was assassinated and left the carrying of it into Execution to his Son *Alexander*.

The History of this Prince justly furnamed the Great, *Success of*
 who with an Army of not more than 30,000 Men sub- *ALEXAN-*
 dued vast Kingdoms, and carried his victorious Arms *DER.*
 from the *Hellepont* to the *Indies*, is scarce to be paralleled. This surprising Progress is next to the Providence of Almighty God, upon which the Duration of every Empire depends, to be ascribed to the personal Bravery of *Alexander* and to the Goodness of his Troops; which being composed of chosen and experienced Men always fell on with such Vigour, that no new raised Troops how numerous soever they were could stand against them. It should however be observed, that *Darius* was guilty of a great Mistake in coming to an Engagement with *Alexander*; for besides that his Troops were raw and undisciplined, it had been always found that the *Greeks* were much superior in a pitched Battle to the *Persians*. His Business was to have lengthened out the War; and in the mean Time by cutting off his Supplies and other Stratagems of War to have brought *Alexander* into such Difficulties, that his Army must either have retreated or fought at a great Disadvantage. As this Prince, whom Peace and Luxury had enervated and infatuated, did moreover neglect to cause a Diverſion at Home, for the *Greeks* who envied *Alexander's* Greatness might easily have been excited to this, nothing less than his Ruin and that of the *Persian* Empire were to be expected. By the sudden and untimely Death of *Alexander* the Fruit of this glorious Expedition was entirely lost. His Children being young were not only robbed of their Father's hereditary Kingdom; but such Contests arose amongst his Generals, that the conquered Nations were

for a long Time exposed to all the Miseries of War. It must indeed be allowed that sudden Greatness is seldom lasting, and that the keeping of Conquests is more difficult than the making of them; nor could a firm Union betwixt so many Nations have been brought about without much Time and the utmost Prudence. It was therefore necessary for *Alexander*, it being impossible for a Handful of *Macedonians* to keep such great Numbers in Awe, to treat the conquered with Tenderness, that they might be sensible of no Change but that of having a better King. He knew this very well, and notwithstanding the Censures of some Authors was certainly right in marrying the dead King's Daughter, and in conforming to the Habit and Manners of the *Persians*: For it was not to be supposed that they should consent to the Introduction of the *Macedonian* Laws and Customs. It is impossible to say what the Event would have been; but it is probable that if *Alexander*, who besides being liberal, brave and endowed with uncommon greatness of Soul was a Prince of singular Prudence, had lived or left a Son capable of succeeding him, the *Persians* would have continued easy under their Subjection to his Family.

The Division
and Ruin of
the MACEDONIAN
Empire.

Upon the Death of *Alexander* his Generals thought themselves too great to obey, nor was the Authority of *Aridæus* who poor Man! had only the Name of King sufficient to keep so many ambitious Men, of whom each thought himself entitled to the Whole or Part of the Empire, in Awe. After a long and bloody War in which divers of the Competitors were slain, three Kingdoms, viz. those of *Macedonia*, *Syria* and *Egypt* were erected. As to that Part of the *Persian* Empire which lay East of the River *Euphrates* the *Macedonians* were driven from it, and it became Part of a new Empire called the *Parthian* Empire. In Process of Time *Philip* King of *Macedonia* attempted to make himself Master of *Greece*: But the Commonwealth of *Rome* then grown considerable thought proper to interpose, lest he should by the Addition this would have made to his Power become formidable to *Rome*. A League being hereupon entered into by the *Romans* with the Cities of *Greece* *Philip* was driven back into *Macedonia*, and the Cities of *Greece* were restored to their ancient State of Independency. This not only divided
and

and consequently made the Power of *Greece* less dangerous to *Rome*: But as it endeared the *Romans* to the *Greeks*, who looked upon them as their Deliverers, it paved the Way for their future Conquests on this Side. In the Time of *Perseus* the Kingdom of *Macedonia* was entirely subdued by the *Romans*. *Syria* had afterwards the same Fate; and which compleated the Ruin of the *Macedonian* Empire, the Kingdom of *Egypt* was at Length brought by the Emperor *Augustus Cæsar*, who defeated *Cleopatra* together with his Rival *Mark Antony*, under the *Roman* Power.

Before we speak of *Rome* it is proper to say something Of *CAR-*
of Carthage, which for a long Time contended with *THAGE*:
Rome for the Superiority. This City admirably well
situated for Trade, having thereby acquired immense
Riches, became so populous and powerful, as to make
great Part of *Africa* tributary. Not content with
this it sent vast Armies into *Sicily*, *Sardinia* and *Spain*,
which by giving Umbrage to the *Romans* laid the Foun-
dation of the Wars that ensued betwixt the two Re-
publicks. In the two first the *Carthaginians* defended
themselves with great Bravery; but in the last for no-
thing less would satisfy the *Romans* they were entirely
ruined. It was a great Mistake in these People to con-
ceive a Design of making large Conquests; whereas if
they had consulted their own true Interest a few
Lands for the Support of themselves, and some Sea Ports
in *Sicily* and *Spain* for the Conveniency of Trade, which
ought to have been their principal Object, would have
been sufficient for them. By thus aiming at too great
Things they drew upon themselves the Jealousy of
Rome; and the very making of Conquests abroad, as
it put too much Power into the Hands of their *Gene-*
erals, more than once threw their Constitution into
imminent Danger. Besides this the Sea being the
natural Element of the *Carthaginians* they were un-
fit for Land Service; so that they were under a Ne-
cessity of supplying their Armies with hired Troops.
On these as the Quarrel is not their own there
can be but little Dependance, and their Faithfulness
is always to be suspected; for as they have acted
upon a base mercenary Principle in letting out their
Bodies for Hire, is it probable that they should
if there be a good Bidder refuse to let out their
Souls

Souls for hire also? It is moreover evident from all History that these Hirelings will, whenever there is a proper Time for doing it, fly in their Masters Faces. As there was then this Difference, that while the *Romans* fought *pro aris & focis*, the *Carthaginians* trusted principally to Wretches who had nothing in View but the Hope of Pelf or Plunder, it is no Wonder that the former should in the End prevail. Trusting moreover to this strange and to them unnatural Way of carrying on War, they neglected what ought always to be the principal Care of a trading Nation their Marine; and having thereby lost the Superiority at Sea, they could expect nothing less than to see a *Roman* Fleet at some Time or other in their own Port. *Hannibal* was indeed once in a fair Way of ruining the *Romans*: But whether it was owing to a Jealousy of him or whatever else was the Cause, for want of his being properly supplied the *Romans* recovered themselves; and were so quickened by the Remembrance of this imminent Danger, that they never rested till *Carthage* was laid even with the Ground.

Of the Ro-
MAN Empire.

As no State ever equalled the *Roman* in Power and Greatness, and as it is necessary that young Minds, for whom this Introduction is chiefly intended, should have a clear Understanding thereof, we shall go back to its Origin. The first Inhabitants of *Rome*, the Situation of which was quite unfit for Trade, being a Rabble of indigent Wretches collected from all Parts, and so numerous that had they understood Agriculture the Lands adjoining thereto could not have supported them, they soon found themselves under a Necessity of starving or plundering their Neighbours. Being thus as it were a Den of Wolves who lived by Prey it was proper to make this City populous, and that its Inhabitants should be trained up to Arms; for nothing less could be supposed than a Combination of their injured Neighbours against them. With a View to the former *Romulus* ordained that no Child, which barbarous Custom prevailed in *Greece*, should be killed except it was deformed; and that Slaves should not only be made free but enjoy all the Privileges of Citizens. It was moreover his Practice, which contributed more than all the rest to the peopling of the City, instead of putting them to Death or selling them for Slaves, to make the Prisoners he took

in Battle free of *Rome*. It has been observed by the *Roman* Historians, that the short Duration of the Republics of *Athens* and *Sparta* was principally owing to their not naturalizing Foreigners; whereas it was the Custom of *Romulus* to receive them as Citizens in the Evening with whom he had fought in the Morning: And it is certain that War cannot be long maintained or Conquests be preserved without constant Supplies of Men. That *Rome* however should not be overstocked nor the conquered Places be quite abandoned, he from many of these brought only the most opulent and brave of the Inhabitants, and filled up their Places with some *Roman* Citizens of the lowest Sort. Thus *Rome* became rich as well as strong; and these last made good Garrisons for many Towns in the conquered Countries.

It is hence plain that Necessity made the *Romans* va- Of the Ro-
 liant, yet this was not at all; for their warlike Kings, MAN military
 who took Care to establish the best Discipline amongst Constitution.
 them, had a great Hand in bringing them to such a pitch of military Glory. The *Roman* State whose Constitution was as it appears quite Military flourished a great while; yet it must be allowed that it was upon the whole a bad Constitution; for it is not safe for any State that martial Spirits should too much prevail in it: And we find this Observation verified amongst the *Romans*, who as soon as they had got rid of foreign Enemies could not contain from sheathing their Swords in each others Bowels. Amongst the Regulations for the Encouragement of Valour that of *Servius Tullius* ought to be taken particular Notice of. Whereas before his Time every Person served without Distinction in the Army, he ordained that the Poor should be exempted from this except on pressing Occasions. It is not pretended that Riches make any Man brave; yet as all served at that Time without Pay, it was proper for the Burthen of War to lie on those who were best able to bear it; and they were more to be depended upon. A poor Man has nothing to lose, and he is besides under a strong Temptation to betray his Party if an advantageous Offer is made to him; but a rich Man's Wealth is a Pledge to the Publick for his Fidelity, for who in his Senses would leave certain Possessions for the Hope of Reward from an Enemy for Treachery. This Regulation was disused under the Emperors; yet to induce
 the

the Soldiers to be faithful part of their Pay was kept in Hand, nor were they ever paid their full Arrears till they were disbanded.

Of the Con-
stancy of the
ROMANS.

It is remarkable that although the *Romans* had frequently a Series of ill Success, they in order to keep up the Spirits of their People never consented to dishonourable Terms, except with *Porfenna* and the *Gauls* called *Senones*. To the first, which was so shameful that their Historians avoid the speaking of it as much as possible, they gave Hostages for the performance of a Treaty; by an Article of which they obliged themselves not to make any other Use of Iron than for tilling the Ground. The latter had at one time undoubtedly, the Capitol being besieged and reduced to great Extremity, put an End to the Commonwealth, if he had not been pacified by a large Quantity of Gold: For the Story that *Camillus* raised the Siege while the Gold was weighing is looked upon as fabulous. It cannot be denied, that in all other Cases however desperate their Affairs were the *Romans* behaved with extraordinary Courage and Constancy. *Hannibal* had them in the second *punick War* almost in his Power, being advanced at the Head of a victorious Army to the Gates of *Rome*; yet the Word Peace was never mentioned amongst them. In like manner whenever their Generals made a scandalous Peace, as was done at the Defiles of *Caudina* and at *Numantia*, they instead of ratifying it delivered the Authors thereof into the Hands of the Enemy. In Order moreover to make their Soldiers meet Death boldly, and that they might think of nothing but of extricating themselves in howsoever great Danger they were, it was held in the utmost Contempt for any Roman to ask Quarter; and than which nothing can more excite Men to fight desperately the *Romans* seldom ransomed such as were taken Prisoners.

Of their Reli-
gion.

It is proper to take Notice that the Religion of the *Romans*, although founded upon the *Greek* superstition, was calculated to serve on many Occasions Purposes of the State. As nothing conduces so much to encourage Men in the Execution of an Enterprize, as the Prevalence of a Notion that it is favoured by the Gods, it was from the Beginning a Maxim amongst the *Romans* not to undertake any Thing of Consequence without a lucky Omen. The taking of Omens from Birds was founded on an ancient Notion of the *Heathens*, that the
Gods,

Gods, whose Residence they supposed in the Region next above the Air, make Use of the Creatures of this Element to interpret their Will to Men. These Predictions from Birds were moreover thought best because they could be taken at all Times; and nothing was so proper to answer the Designs of Government: For their Motions and Chirping, which are infinitely various, could always be explained as it best suited the Exigency of Affairs. Hence artful Priests could inspire the ignorant Vulgar with Hope or Despair, Boldness or Fear: The Predictions from Birds being founded on such uncertain Principles, that the old *Cato*, who was himself an *Augur*, did not scruple to say, *he wondered how one Augur could look another in the Face without laughing.* Further in what was called Religion amongst the *Romans*, no Care was taken to explain to the People the Nature and Will of God; nor were they instructed how they might govern their Actions and Passions so as to please him. If Sacrifices and outward Ceremonies were but complied with the Priests never troubled themselves about any thing further: Nay the great Doctrines of the Immortality of the Soul and of a future State of Retribution were either not mentioned, or they were in the general looked upon as State Tricks to keep the People in Awe. On the contrary their Religion consisted in Sacrifices, in the Celebration of Holidays, and in other things of an external Nature. In these Matters the greatest Pomp and Ceremony were in Order to dazzle the Minds of the People made Use of: And lest the changing of any thing should take off their Veneration for the whole the utmost Exactness was observed in them. The *Roman* Temples were also magnificent; and in Order to cajole the People, who often judge of the Excellency of a Religion from the Dignity of the Persons employed about it, their Priests were commonly chose out of the most considerable Families. It was besides absolutely necessary, Religion being the grand Engine to bring the People into the Views of their Governors, that the Priests should understand well the Interest of the State, and have themselves a large Share in the Management of Affairs: And if the meaner Sort had been raised to the Priestly Office they might have formed Parties amongst the People, who are never so easily imposed up-

on as by Priests, against the leading Men ; or for Want of being in the Secrets of State they could not have known which Way to influence them. There was moreover another Reason for this, the admitting of Priests who are always fond of Power to so considerable a Share in the Management of Affairs, was the only Way to prevent their combining together and usurping at the Whole : Which as the Religion of *Rome* was calculated for the Peoples being deceived and rid by Priests, they might in all Probability have effected.

*Expulsion of
Kings from
ROME.*

After *Rome* had been governed by Kings above two hundred Years another Form of Government was introduced by *Brutus*. The Handle for this was the Rape committed upon *Lucretia* ; but it has been doubted whether this Crime was a sufficient Reason for the dethroning of *Tarquin*. It was indeed so brutish and barbarous that it was not to be forgiven ; and there are many Instances in History of Princes who for violating the Chastity of the Wives or Daughters of their Subjects have been deprived both of their Dominions and Lives. In this Case however it seems a little hard, that a King should be deposed and his whole Family excluded for a Crime done by his Son, which it does not appear that he either was privy to, approved of, or refused to give Satisfaction for. Upon the whole it may be observed that the strict Rules of Justice are not always adhered to in Revolutions ; and that the principal Agents in bringing them about, notwithstanding their Outcry against the Faults and bad Conduct of the reigning Princes, are for the most Part influenced by Ambition or Envy. Without entering any further into this Affair it is not likely, whether it had happened or not, that Regal Power would have continued long in *Rome* ; for although *Monarchy* be best when the Subjects are dispersed in distant Places, it is certain that an *Aristocratical* or *Democratical* Form of Government was most suitable to such a State as the *Roman*, which consisted of one large populous City. This will not appear strange if it be considered that as most Men are by Nature wild and unruly, and very apt to free themselves from the Restraints of Civil Power, it requires the Assistance of many to keep a great Multitude under Subjection. A King there-
fore

fore who is only Master of one large Town is never safe; for as his Subjects are already in the same Place they can upon any Disgust quickly assemble and deprive him of the Sovereignty. He may indeed strengthen himself with foreign Guards and a strong Castle: But this would not do; for when once a Prince becomes odious, which nothing is so likely as these Methods to occasion, the Disaffection in a State where the People all live near together spreads itself at once through all Ranks and like a mighty Torrent bears down all before it. On the Contrary where the People live a few in one Place and a few in another, it requires so much Time for them to consult and get together, that the King would have an Opportunity to assemble his Friends, and would for the most Part be able to suppress a Rebellion before it could come to any great Head. Be this as it will, it is certain that the *Roman* Power encreased prodigiously upon changing the Form of Government; nor is it probable that it would ever have arrived at such a Pitch if the State had continued to be *Monarchical*: for some Kings would without Doubt have found it necessary for their own Security to damp the martial Spirit of the Citizens; and the Weakness or bad Conduct of others must in some Measure have weakned the State.

The *Roman* Empire after having been extended over a great Part of the World became a Prey to the Northern Nations: But as the Way to its Destruction was paved by Intestine Troubles, it is proper for the Understanding of these clearly to look back to the Beginning of them. The People of *Rome* being naturally brave and trained up to War their Kings, who knew they had no other Way to keep a Multitude of such and all in one Town under Subjection, endeavoured to do it by mild Treatment. This Method which the first six had observed was neglected by *Tarquin* the Proud: But it cost him dear; for having by laying on heavy Impositions lost the Affections of the People it was easy for *Brutus*, especially as the revenging of the Outrage done to *Lucretia* furnished him with a good Pretence for so doing, to drive him from the Throne. Sudden Changes of Government have because there is not Time to provide against all Accidents commonly their Defects. So had this of the Government of *Rome*;

*Causes of the
Ruin of this
Empire.*

and the Oversights committed at this Juncture laid the Foundation of infinite Troubles. It is highly probable that *Brutus* and his Associates intended to introduce an *Aristocracy*; for it cannot be conceived, that being themselves Noblemen they would at the Peril of their Lives have expelled *Tarquin*, if they had had nothing else in View than to subject themselves to the common People: Yet in Order to please these, who could at any Time if they had found no Benefit from the Change have opened the Gates again to *Tarquin*, it was proper to make large Concessions to them. With a View to this *Valerius Publicola* went so far as to cause the *Fasces*, which were the principal Ensigns of Authority, to be lowered before them; and as a tacit Confession that the supreme Power was in the People, he allowed Appeals to be made to them. It was moreover necessary, if they expected to maintain their new acquired Authority, for the Nobility to use the common People well and to provide for the Poor, lest these should be compelled by Want to disturb the Publick Peace: But neither of these Things was attended to. There being at that Time no written Laws the Nobility, who were in Possession of all the Offices, carried it with so high a Hand that a middling Man was never sure of having Justice done him: And the Citizens who served in War without Pay often found themselves reduced to the greatest Poverty. Having in this Distress no other Resource they were forced to borrow Money of the richer Sort; who instead of considering that they had exhausted their Substance in Defence of the State treated them with great Rigour. At Length the Commons exasperated at this unequal Distribution of Justice and at the Sufferings of their Body, some of whom were every Day thrown into Prison and loaded with Irons, unanimously quitted the City; nor would they return before the Senate had consented that they should elect from amongst themselves Tribunes, whose Office it was to protect them from the Insolence and Oppressions of the Nobility.

Contests be-
tween the PA-
TRICIANS
and PLEBEI-
ANS.

From this Time the *Romans* were divided into two Bodies, *Patricians* or Nobility and *Plebeians* or common People; whose Jealousy of each other was the Occasion of almost constant Feuds. It was highly reasonable that the latter should be screened from the Ty-
ranny

ranny of the Nobility: But by thus empowering the People to chuse Tribunes, the Commonwealth became as it were double Headed. The Imprudence of this Step soon discovered itself; for the Tribunes, instigated by Ambition and that Hatred which is usual from the common People to the Nobility, instead of contenting themselves with freeing the *Plebeians* from the heavy Taxes imposed by the Nobility soon wanted to raise themselves above the Senate. Having after a warm Contest forced the Senate to consent, for as the *Plebeians* were vastly the Majority it would have been dangerous to have refused it, that the *Plebeians* might marry into *Patrician* Families, their next Step was to have one of the Consuls always chose out of the Body of the People. By Degrees Things were carried so far, that the Tribunes made Laws without the Consent of the Senate, and usurped all the Prerogatives of Sovereignty. In order to employ the People the Senate took Care to keep them constantly engaged in a foreign War, that they might not have Leisure to create Disturbances at Home. This did very well for some Time, and the Power and Dominions of the State were thereby greatly encreased. There arose however some Inconveniencies from it which in the End made Things worse. If the conquered Lands had been distributed amongst the needy Citizens, *Rome* would have been delivered from many whose Want made them fit for any Thing: But the Nobility under a Pretence of farming them got all into their own Hands. By the Revenue arising from these and the Plunder taken in War, most of which fell to them as Commanders in Chief, they acquired immense Riches; while many *Plebeians* were starving for Want. The Animosity of the *Plebeians* to the Senate was hereby increased, and being joined by some disgusted *Patricians*, who although they expressed great Regard for the Liberties of the People meant nothing more than to carry on their own ambitious Views, they soon came to an open Rupture with the Senate; and nothing but cutting each others Throats was to be seen in *Rome*. Further, the vast Increase of the Empire, together with Inadvertency and little Power of the Senate, had laid the Foundation of another Misfortune. Large and rich Provinces having been committed to the Government of Citizens

who had the Command of great Armies, and this for several Years together, some of them could not bear the Thoughts of returning to a private Station. It is certainly a great Mistake in any State to throw too much Power into the Hands of a General: For he that has the Army at his Devotion is under a strong Temptation to do it; and it is not easy to prevent his obtaining the Sovereignty. Attempts of this Sort which proved fatal to many were made by *Marius*, and by *Sylla*: But the Liberty of *Rome* was not quite ruined till the Time of *Julius Cæsar*. Thus nor indeed could it be otherwise, for the Senate had lost all Authority, the Laws were trampled upon and the Soldiers had more than once tasted the Sweets of Plundering the City, the Commonwealth of *Rome* when arrived at the utmost Pitch of Glory degenerated into the worst Sort of Monarchy: *i. e.* one founded upon military Power.

The SOLDIERS engross the whole Power.

During the long Reign of *Augustus*, who being a wise Prince kept up the Dignity of the Senate and the great Officers of State, and only took upon himself the Direction of what concerned War, Things went on pretty easy: But the Discontent of the Nobility, who could not brook the being subject to one, discovered itself soon after his Death. Attempts being frequently made by them to recover their Liberty, the Emperors on their Side did all they could to humble or exterminate them: So that in about 200 Years Time very few of the ancient Nobility were left. All however would not do to establish this Monarchy; for as the Soldiers found that the whole Power was in them, the Senate and People being but empty Names, they made no Scruple of murdering Emperors who did not please them: And such Generals as could, by encreasing their Pay or other Acts of Liberality, gain their Favour were sure of being raised to the Throne. Hence arose great Confusion and Misery; for as other Troops as well as the Prætorian Bands, who were the Emperor's Guards, usurped this Power, an Emperor was so far from being sure of transmitting the Imperial Dignity to his Children, that he could not, as it depended upon the Caprice of licentious, covetous and unsteady Soldiers, promise himself the Enjoyment of it a single Day. Brave and virtuous Princes were frequently assassinated to make Room for the

the meanest and worst of Wretches. Two or more were sometimes declared Emperors at the same Time; and it cost the Lives of many worthy Citizens before any one of them could make his Title good. It may from hence be easily accounted for that so few of the first Emperors died a natural Death; and the Strength of this vast Monarchy was greatly impaired by these intestine Struggles. The Removal of the Imperial Residence from *Rome* to *Constantinople* by *Constantine* the Great hastened a good Deal its Ruin: For the old Legions, stationed along the *Rhine* and *Danube* being thereupon called into the East, the western Provinces were exposed to the Insults of the neighbouring Nations. The Empire being further weakened by the Division thereof by *Theodosius*, who gave the Eastern Parts to his Son *Arcadius* and the Western to his Son *Honorius*, the latter were soon over-run by the barbarous Nations; who being tempted by the Richness and Fertility of the *Roman* Provinces poured into them in prodigious Numbers.

England the *Romans* quitted because they were not able to defend it against the *Scots*; and having other Enemies upon their Hands they wanted the Legions which were there nearer Home. The *Visgoths* settled themselves in *Spain*; the *Vandals* in *Africa*: and *Gaul* was divided amongst the *Goths*, *Burgundians* and *Franks*. *Rhetia* and *Noricum* were conquered by the *Suevi* and *Bavarians*; the *Huns* took Possession of *Pannonia* and a good Part of *Illyria*: and to compleat the Ruin of the western Empire the *Ostrogoths* erected a Kingdom in *Italy*; who did not think *Rome* before Mistress of the World worthy to be the Residence of their Kings.

The eastern Empire did indeed continue some Hundreds of Years: But its Power and Grandeur were by no Means to be compared with those of the ancient Empire. *Agathias* says that the *Roman* Forces, which had before amounted to 645000 Men, did not in the Time of *Justinian* amount to 150000. In the Reign of this Prince *Belisarius* drove the *Vandals* out of *Africa*; the *Ostrogoths* whom Peace and Plenty had enervated were driven by *Narses* out of *Italy*; and the Empire began to recover something of its former Splendor: But by the Effeminacy of some succeeding Empe-

rors who gave themselves up to Ease and Luxury, and by the Divisions which arose, it was so weakened as to become an easy Conquest to the neighbouring Nations. The *Bulgarians* subdued Part of it; and the *Saracens* made themselves Masters of *Syria*, *Palestine*, *Egypt*, *Cilicia* and other Provinces. The City of *Trebisond* together with some neighbouring Countries erected themselves into an independent Empire; and the Princes of *Greece* refused to acknowledge any longer the Emperor of *Constantinople*. In process of Time the *Turks* over-ran the Provinces which the *Saracens* had subdued; and *Greece* it being divided amongst several Princes became an easy Prey to them. They afterwards subdued the Remainder of the Empire; and *Constantinople* which was taken by Storm became the Residence of the *Ottoman* Emperors.

CHAP. II.

Of SPAIN.

SPAIN like most other Countries was anciently *The Ancient* divided into many petty States; which being inde- *State of* pendent of each other and without experienced Leaders SPAIN. became an easy Conquest to other Nations. It would take up too much Time to relate particularly by what Means the *Celtæ* from *Gaul* over-ran the Provinces of *Spain* bordering upon *Gaul*, and being incorporated with the *Iberians* were called by the common Name of *Celtiberians*; on what Occasion *Roses* was built by the *Rhodians*; *Saguntum* by some Adventurers from *Zant*; and *Malaga*, *Cadiz* and some other Towns by the *Phœnicians*. Nor shall we but just mention that the *Carthaginians* during the first *Punick* War conquered a great Part of *Spain*. In the second it was for a long Time the Seat of War; but a good Part of it was at last reduced by *Scipio* afterwards surnamed *Africanus* into a *Roman* Province. The *Romans* continued to gain Ground in *Spain* till the Time of *Augustus*; who having entirely subdued the *Cantabrians* annexed the whole of it to his Empire. Under the *Romans* it enjoyed a long Peace, being only disturbed by the Share it sometimes necessarily had in their civil Diffensions.

Upon the Declension of the western Empire and about *Goths and* the Year of *CHRIST* 410 the *Vandals*, *Silingi*, *Suevi* *SUEVI settle* and *Alans* conquered and divided amongst themselves a *there, 410.* great Part of *Spain*. Shortly after the *Vandals* went over into *Africa*, and the *Alans* and *Silingi* being driven out by the *Suevi* these last became Masters of all this Part of *Spain*; and if they had not been prevented by the *Goths* would have easily made themselves so of the Whole.

Alaric the *Goth* well known for his ravaging of *ATULPH the* *Italy* was succeeded by his Brother *Atulph*. This Prince *GOTH.* having married *Placidia* Sister to the Emperor *Honorius*, while she was a Prisoner among the *Goths*, soon made Peace with his Brother-in-law; and quitting *Italy* went

to establish himself in the *Gallia Narbonensis* *. The *Suevi*, *Vandals* and *Alans*, not being contented with the Settlement they had with the Consent of some Emperors made in the two *Pannonias* †, had before settled themselves in this Part of *Gaul*: But upon the Approach of the *Goths* they in order to avoid a Contest with this brave People passed the *Pyrenees* and threw themselves into *Spain*; where as they well knew the *Roman* Power was much declined. *Atulph* meeting with no Resistance extended his Conquests beyond the *Pyrenees*, so as to take in the *Roussillon* and *Catalonia*. In this Manner the *Goths* got Footing in *Spain* about the Year 415. These *Goths* to distinguish them from their Countrymen in *Italy*, who were called *Ostrogoths*, had obtained the Name of *Visigoths*. Being satisfied with his present Acquisitions *Atulph* began to enjoy the Sweets of Peace, and resided sometimes at *Narbonne* at other Times at *Barcelona*: But as this Disposition of his did not suit the restless Temper of the *Visigoths*, they assassinated him together with the six Sons which he had by a former Wife; and detained *Placidia* whose only Son *Theodesius* died an Infant as an Hostage.

415.

SIGERICK,
417.

After the Murder of *Atulph* in the Year 417 *Sigerick* a favourite Commander was elected King; but the same pacifick Disposition proved fatal to him and his five Sons.

WALLIA.

Wallia his Successor warned by these Examples was determined to find Employment for his Subjects. With a View to this he embarked an Army for *Africa* against the *Romans*; but great Part of it being lost by a Shipwreck, he was forced to make Peace with the Emperor and to restore his Sister *Placidia*. He afterwards for the Sake of busying his Subjects assisted *Constantius* the *Roman* General against the *Suevi* and *Vandals*: which so pleased *Honorius* that he gave him *Guienne* and the City of *Tholouse*. He died at this last Place in the Year 420.

THEODORED
420.

The Line of *Atulph* was hereupon restored in the Person of *Theodored* his nearest Kinsman an experienced and fortunate Warriour. He assisted the *Romans* and *Franks* against *Attila* the *Hun*, and had a great Share

Defeat of At-
TILA 451.

in the Victory gained over him in the Year 451: But it
* *Provence* and *Languedock*. † *Lower Austria* and
Hungary.

cost him dear, for being thrown from his Horse he was trampled to Death by his own People.

Torrismund the eldest Son of *Theodoric* succeeded his Father, and followed his Steps in assisting the Romans against *Attila*; who was a second Time defeated at the Battle upon the *Loire*. He was soon after, in the Year 454, assassinated by *Ascalerne* his Favourite at the instigation of his Brother and Successor *Theodorick*. TORRIS-MUND 451. Battle of the LOIRE.

This Prince obtained Leave from the Emperor *Valentinian* to make Conquests on the *Suevi* and other Foreigners in *Spain*. *Rechaire* the first Christian King of the *Suevi*, who had married *Theodorick's* Sister, endeavoured to oppose his Progress: But he was defeated, taken Prisoner and beheaded. As *Theodorick* had no Male Issue his younger Brother *Eurick* grew weary of waiting for the Crown; and following his own Example caused him to be murdered in the Year 467. THEODORICK 454.

Eurick considerably extended his Dominions both in *Spain* and *France*. In the former he made himself Master of *Pampelona*, *Sarragossa* and great Part of *Lusitania*. In *France* the *Limousin*, *Quercy* and *Rouvergue* together with the Towns of *Clermont*, *Marseilles* and *Arles* submitted to him. His Reign will be for ever memorable for the giving of their first written Laws to the *Visgoths*, and for expelling of the Romans from *Spain* after they had been established there near 700 Years. EURICK 467. ROMANS driven from SPAIN.

Upon the Death of *Eurick* in the Year 483 *Alarick* his Son succeeded. This Prince maintained a long and bloody War with *Clovis* King of *France*. It came in the Year 506 to a decisive Action near *Poitiers*; where, both Kings being personally engaged the Goth after giving signal Proofs of his Valour was dismounted and slain. This Defeat together with the Minority of *Alarick's* Son *Amalarick* gave *Clovis* an Opportunity of recovering the Southern Provinces of *France* from the *Visgoths*. ALARICK 483. Battle of POITIERS.

Amalarick being an Infant the People raised *Gesalick* natural Son of the late King to the Throne. Upon this *Theodorick* King of the *Ostrogoths* sent *Ilba* with an Army of 80,000 Men to maintain the Right of the young Prince his Grandson against *Gesalick*; and at the same Time to stop the rapid Progress of the French: Who flushed with their late Success had gained a second Victory near *Castlensaudari*. They afterwards made themselves Masters of *Tholouse*, where all the Treasure taken

Progress of the seized at the sacking of *Rome* by *Alarick* the Brother of
FRENCH. *Atulph* was deposited; and had in one Year's Time taken
all in *France* except the two *Narbonne* Provinces from
the *Visgoths*. *Clovis* was now with an Army before *Car-*
cassonne where *Gesalick* had shut himself up; but on the
coming up of *Ilba* he decamped, and joined his Forces to
those of *Gondebold* King of *Burgundy* who had laid Siege
to *Arles*. *Ilba* attacked them; and cut off above 30,000
of the *French* and *Burgundians*. During these Trans-
actions *Gesalick* retired to *Narbonne*. He was soon after
besieged by *Gondebold* and forced to fly to *Barcelona*;
where he was glad to make Peace with *Clovis* on any
Terms. *Clovis* soon after found it convenient to ac-
commodate Matters with *Theodorick* also. *Ilba* after
taking Possession of all in *Gaul* that remained to the *Vis-*
goths in the Name of the young Prince marched with
his Troops into *Spain*. *Gesalick* hereupon went over
into *Africa*; from whence being supplied with Troops
by *Thrasimond* King of the *Vandals* he returned into
Catalonia; but being met by *Ilba* within twelve Miles
of *Barcelona* his Army was cut to Pieces. He after-
wards endeavoured to fly for Refuge into *Burgundy*: But
was taken Prisoner at the Passage of the *Durance* and
shortly after put to Death.

FRENCH and
BURGUNDI-
ANS defeated.

The Usurper
GESALICK
put to Death.

AMALA-
RICK.

Amalarick being about the Year 510 put into the full
Possession of his Dominions, the Administration of Af-
fairs was during his Minority committed to *Theudis* his
Grandfather's Master of the Horse. *Clovis* who died in
the Year 511 left four Sons and a Daughter: And al-
though the eldest Son was illegitimate ordered the King-
dom of *France* to be divided amongst them. The *Vis-*
goths soon took the Advantage of this divided State of
France to recover the *Rouvergue* and some Places in *Lan-*
guedock. *Amalarick* being grown up married *Clotilda*
Sister to the four Kings; and had with her as a Portion
Tholouse and other Places in *France*. This Match although
advantageous enough in Point of Interest proved very
unhappy. She being rigidly Orthodox endeavoured to
persuade him to be so to. He on the contrary used all
Methods to force her into *Arianism*. She bore his ill
Usage a great while; but complaining at last to her
Brothers, they united so heartily and speedily in her
Quarrel that *Amalarick* was surprised and slain at *Barce-*
BARCELONA. *lona* in the Year 531.

The

The Royal Line being now Extinct, *Theudis* whose THEUDIS,
late wife Administration had won the Hearts of the 531.
People was advanced to the Throne. The *French*
Kings were prevented by their Wars with the *Burgun-*
dians and Quarrels amongst themselves from disturbing
the former Part of his Reign: But about the Year 543 FRENCH in-
they marched an Army into *Spain* under the Pretence vade SPAIN.
of rooting out *Arianism*. They had over-ran *Arragon*, 543.
and laid Siege to the Capital; but were so touched with
the Solemnity of a religious Procession on the Ramparts,
that upon a Promise being made that Heresy should be
discouraged they agreed to return home. In repassing the
Pyrenees they were attacked by *Theodegesilus* Lieutenant of
Theudis, and made to pay dear for this unjust Invasion.
Soon after a Plague which lasted two Years made great A severe
Havock in *Spain*. Upon the ceasing thereof *Theudis* Plague in
went over into *Africa* and laid Siege to *Ceuta*; but SPAIN.
having lost great Part of his Army before the Place he
returned home, where he was murdered by one who
feigned himself mad in the Year 548. The Motive of THEUDIS is
this Action was never known. It was however a just assassinated.
Punishment of *Theudis* who had formerly assassinated a
General he served under.

Theodegesilus Lieutenant of *Theudis*, and Nephew by THEODEGE-
his Mother to *Totila* King of the *Ostrogoths* in *Italy*, SILUS, 548.
was on account of his high Birth and Valour next raised
to the royal Dignity. He very ill answered the good
Opinion entertained of him; for he gave himself up
to all manner of Lewdness and Cruelty. His Subjects
after enduring his Tyranny about a Year did themselves
Justice on him.

Agila a Person of obscure Birth was now chosen King. AGILA, 549.
The *Cordevans* refusing to acknowledge him he made an
attempt to reduce them to Obedience by Force; but
miscarrying therein he was obliged to fly for Safety to
Merida. Being rendered contemptible by this ill Suc-
cess *Athanagilde* one of his Subjects raised Forces against
him, and begged Succours from the *Roman* Emperors.
Some were readily granted him by *Justinian* Emperor
of the East; who having lately been fortunate in dri-
ving the *Vandals* out of *Africa* was glad of this Op- A ROMAN
portunity to send a *Roman* Army into *Spain*. *Agila* after Army sent into
being defeated by the *Romans* was put to Death at *Me-* SPAIN.
rida in the Year 554.

Athana-

ATHANAGILDE, 554.

Athanagilde who succeeded having answered his Purpose of obtaining Possession of the Throne wanted to get rid of his *Roman* Ally: But the View of the Emperor was very different. Being an ambitious and politick Prince he flattered himself that, while *Narses* was driving the *Ostrogoths* out of *Italy*, this Body of his best Troops might, under the Colour of assisting an Ally, fix themselves in some advantageous Posts, and thereby make the Conquest of all *Spain* easy to him. *Athana-gilde* plainly perceived this Design and opposed it with all his Might: But although he struggled hard during his whole Reign he was not able to dislodge the *Romans* from the Settlements they had made in *Arragon*, *Valencia* and *Toledo*. He died in the Year 567: And leaving no Male Issue the People reassumed their Right of Election.

LEUVA, 567.

Leuva the Governor of *Gaul* was the Person they fixed their Choice upon: But he had not reigned above a Year before he divided the Kingdom with his Brother *Leuvigilde*, giving to him all that lay in *Spain* and reserving to himself only what belonged to the *Visgoths* in *Gaul*.

LEUVIGILDE, 572.

Upon the Death of *Leuva* in the Year 572, *Leuvigilde* then sole Monarch took upon himself to use the Scepter, Crown and other Ensigns of Royalty. Being a valiant and successful Prince he drove the *Romans* from the greatest Part of their Possessions in *Spain*. He made *Toledo* the Residence of the Court: Which had been by his Predecessors kept at *Seville*. Under the Pretext of aiding *Eborick* King of the *Suevi*, whom *Auduca* his Father-in-Law had shut up in a Monastery, he marched an Army into the Kingdom of that young Prince: But having made himself Master of all his Dominions, instead of bestowing them on *Eborick* he annexed them to the Kingdom of the *Visgoths*. Thus

An End put to the Kingdom of the SUEVI.

an End was put to the Kingdom of the *Suevi* about 174 Years after their Establishment in *Spain*.

Quarrel betwixt LEUVIGILDE and his Son HERMENIGILDE.

Some Time before this *Leuvigilde's* eldest Son *Hermenigilde* had married *Ingonda* daughter of the King of *Austrasia*. The Wife of *Leuvigilde* having in vain tried all Arts to convert this Lady to *Arianism* came at last to use her cruelly. *Ingonda* suffered all with so much Patience and Constancy, that her Husband embraced the Orthodox Faith: Which so exasperated his Mother that she prevailed upon the King to treat him as an

Enemy.

Enemy. Upon this *Hermenigilde* fled for Protection to *Miron* King of the *Suevi* Father of the young Prince just now mentioned. After a War of some Continuance *Leuwigilde* was reconciled to his Son; but such is the insatiable Rage of Bigotry the Queen could not rest till she had once more incensed his Father against him. The Prince was again assisted by *Miron* and by the Emperor's Lieutenant in *Spain*: But the former of these being shortly after slain in Battle the Lieutenant deserted the Cause of *Hermenigilde*, and perfidiously kept his Wife and Infant Son who were lodged for Safety in his Camp Prisoners. The Prince was now obliged to shelter himself in a Sanctuary. He was decoyed from HERMENIGILDE is be- thence by fair Promises, and soon after beheaded by his Father's Order because he would not re-embrace Ari- headed. anism. The unhappy *Ingonda* not being permitted to return into her Native Country died of Grief as the *Romans* were carrying her to *Constantinople*.

Leuwigilde, apprehending the united Resentment of the Kings of *France* for this Treatment of their Relation, amused one of them *Chilperick* King of *Neustria* for some Time with the Proposal of a Match between *Recarede* his Son and *Rigonte* the Daughter of *Chilperick*. After this he fomented Matters to such a Degree betwixt the Courts of *Neustria* and *Austrasia*, that *Fredigonda* the Wife of *Chilperick* hired Assassins to murder her own Sister the Queen of *Austrasia*. All his Arts could not however prevent *Gontran* King of *Burgundy* Uncle to the injured *Ingonda* from marching against him with a powerful Army. To oppose this *Recarede* was sent with a large army from *Spain*. As the two Armies came to no decisive Engagement *Leuwigilde*, being advanced in Years and willing to leave his Son in a State of Peace, sent Ambassadors more than once with large Presents to *Gontran*; but this last would hearken to no Terms of Accommodation: Nor had *Leuwigilde* to the Time of his Death in the Year 586 the Satisfaction of bringing about a Peace, although he most ardently desired it.

Recarede being now at the Head of a Kingdom, which by his Father's brave Conduct had been extended so as to take in very near all *Spain*, the Provinces of *France* thereto adjoining, and part of *Mauritania*

INTRIGUES OF
LEUVIGIL-
DE at the
Courts of
FRANCE.

WAR WITH
GONTRAN
King of BUR-
GUNDY.

RECARDE,
586.

ritania in Africa, he married a Princess called *Bada* of *British* or as others say of *Gothick* Extraction. *Mariana Isidore* of *Seville* and other *Spanish* Historians mention a Battle in this Reign near *Carcassone*, in which *Claudius* Duke of *Lusitania* a Lieutenant of *Recarede's* with three hundred *Visgoths* defeated an Army of 60,000 *French* commanded by *Boso* Lieutenant of *Gontran* King of *Burgundy*. This is exploded as fabulous by the *French* Historians: Who object the Silence of their own Historian *Gregory* of *Tours*; and they say moreover that there was not at that Time such a Person as *Claudius* Duke of *Lusitania*. *Recarede* having abjured *Arianism* was reconciled to the *French* Courts; and upon the Death of *Bada* his first Wife married *Clodofuinte* Sister to *Childebert* King of *Austrasia*. After a prosperous Reign of fifteen Years he died in the Year 601.

He abjures
ARIANISM.

LEUVA II.
601.

Leuva II. the eldest Son and Successor of *Recarede* had reigned scarce two Years before he was deprived of his Life and Crown by one of the Nobility called *Witterick*.

WITTERICK
usurps the
Throne.

The Usurper to ingratiate himself with the People endeavoured to dispossess the *Romans* of what they still enjoyed in *Spain*. He was at first unsuccessful, but had afterwards the Advantage over the Emperor's Forces in an Action near *Siguensa*. *Witterick* attempted to re-establish *Arianism*, which so enraged the Populace that they broke into his Palace, murdered him, and dragged his Body through the Streets. Thus an End was put to his Usurpation in the Year 610.

GUNDEMAR,
610.

Hereupon the People bestowed the Crown on *Gundemar* a Person of great Courage and Prudence: But we find nothing remarkable in his Reign, except the resenting of an Affront done to his Ambassadors by the *French*, and the retaking of two Places in *Gaul* which *Recarede* had by Treaty ceded. He died in the Year 612 much lamented for his Piety and Wisdom.

SIGEBUT,
612.

The Choice fell next on *Sigebut*. He reduced the *Asturians* who had refused to acknowledge him to Obedience; gained some Advantages over the Emperor's Forces in *Spain*; and banished the *Jews* his Dominions. He died in the Year 621 having all along preserved the Character of a brave and pious Prince.

Recarede

Recarede II. succeeded his Father *Sigebut*. At his RECACEDE
Death which happened within a few Months, the Fa- II. 621.
mily of *Recarede* I. whose Memory the *Visgoths* greatly
revered was restored to the Throne in the Person of
Suinthila his second Son.

Suinthila, who had while a private Person given SUINTHILA,
great Proofs of his Courage and Prudence, was after 621.
his Advancement to the Throne so charitable as to be
called the Father of the Poor. He was successful in The ROMAN
quelling the Sedition of the *Gascons* in *Navarre*, and in Power in
accomplishing what his Predecessors had in vain at- SPAIN quite
tempted the entire Abolition of the *Roman* Power in ruined.
Spain: And his Reign would have been most happy and
glorious, if he had not for the sake of making the Crown
hereditary in his Family associated his Son *Rechimir* in
the Government with him. As the People who were
not consulted in this looked upon it as an Infringement
of their Right of electing their Kings, they in the Year
630 chose *Sizenand* for his Successor. The Kingdom
being on this Occasion divided into two Parties, that of
Sizenand strengthened by large Succours from *Dagobert*
King of *France* marched to attack the King's Party.
At his Approach *Suinthila* was deserted by his own Deposition of
Troops; and he had shortly after the Mortification of SUINTHILA.
seeing his Opponent crowned.

Sizenand, finding the Nation not perfectly united in SIZENAND,
his Favour, assembled a Council at *Toledo*; and took 631.
great Pains to bring the Bishops of which it was com-
posed into his Interest. He so wrought on them by
begging upon his Knees with Eyes full of Tears the
Assistance of their Prayers for his governing well, and
by expressing the greatest Regard for Religion, that after
settling some Church-Matters they came to the follow-
ing Resolutions.

I. That no Person do presume to take upon him the Resolutions of
Regal Authority without the free Consent of the Nob- the Assembly of
ility and Bishops. TOLEDO.

II. That no Man dare to violate his Oath of Alle-
giance.

III. That no King ought to abuse the regal Power
which is vested in him for the *publick Good* ONLY.

IV. That *Suinthila* and his Family be anathematized
for his abuse of the regal Power.

The

The Reign of *Sizenand* was after this undisturbed. He died in the Year 635.

CHINTILA,
635.

The Nobility and Clergy were unanimous in the Choice of *Chintila* for his Successor: But it was thought proper, for the sake of quieting the Minds of the People laudably jealous of their Rights, to confirm this Election in two general Assemblies. Having reigned near four Years he died in the Year 639.

TULGA, 639.

Tulga the next Successor was chosen in the same Manner. He although very young is by Historians represented as possessed of all virtues that could adorn a publick or private Life. He was to the great Grief of his People carried off suddenly by a Distemper in the third Year of his Reign.

FLAVIUS
CHINDUA-
CUISTE, 641.

The unexpected Death of *Tulga* gave an Opportunity to *Flavius Chinduafinte* Commander in Chief of the Army to seize the Crown. The Wisdom however and Equity of his Government with the good Laws made by him in some Measure atoned for this Violation of the People's Right of Election. Having reigned seven Years he, notwithstanding the like Attempt had so lately cost *Suinthila* his Crown, ventured to associate his eldest Son *Flavius Recesuinte* in the Government. He managed indeed so as to carry this Design into Execution; but in order thereto he was forced to give the Power so much out of his own Hands, that although he lived three Years after his Son's Reign has been always reckoned to begin in the Year 648.

FLAVIUS RE-
CESUINTE,
648.

By *Flavius Recesuinte* a religious and prudent Prince the Laws of the *Visgoths* were very much improved. He chastised the Insolence of the *Gascons*, who had taken Arms and committed great Havock in the neighbouring Provinces, and reigned happily near 23 Years. In his Time there happened a remarkable Eclipse: Which was looked upon by some to portend great Misfortunes to *Spain*.

A remarkable
Eclipse.

WAMBA,
672.

Upon the Death of *Flavius Recesuinte* without Issue the People passing by his Brothers fixed their Choice upon *Wamba*, a Person of great Reputation for his Conduct both in the Field and Council. He would have excused himself, and with Tears in his Eyes represented, that he was by Reason of his great Age incapable of the Fatigue of Government; but he consented at last to their Importunity, on Condition that he should be crowned at *Toledo* in a full and free Assembly of the States.

His

His Reign notwithstanding all this Precaution was soon disturbed by Insurrections in the Provinces of *Navarre* and *Biscay*.

While he was personally engaged in suppressing these Rebellion in a much more dangerous Rebellion, headed by *Hilperick* GAUL. Governor of *Nismes*, broke out in *Gaul*. *Wamba* sent *Paul* an experienced General against him with a powerful Army; but instead of hastning with his Troops to crush the Rebels he debauched them to his ambitious Views, and by slow Marches gave an Opportunity to all the disaffected of joining him. The Cities of *Barcelona*, *Gironne*, *Vic d'Offone* and divers Towns were, by the Intrigues of *Ranofinde* Duke of *Tarragona* and *Hildigise* a Person of great Authority, likewise brought into his Interest. Having thus strengthened himself, he joined his Forces with those of *Hilperick*, and caused himself to be proclaimed King and crowned at *Narbonne*. At the Approach of *Wamba*, who being apprized of this Treachery marched with all Expedition against him, *Barcelona* and many other Places in one of which *Ranofinde* was taken Prisoner submitted to him. Coming before *Nismes*, where *Paul* who expected large Succours from *France* and *Germany* had shut himself up with his Accomplices and some Foreign Auxiliaries, it was soon obliged to surrender at Discretion. To prevent his being engaged in new Broils *Wamba* thought proper to dismiss the *French* and *Germans* found with the Rebels. Having quelled this most unnatural Rebellion he soon after made a publick Entry into *Toledo*. The Chiefs of the Rebels followed him in Chains, their Heads and Faces having been first shaved which was at that Time a Mark of the greatest Infamy; and *Paul* was ridiculously distinguished from the other Prisoners by a Crown of Black Leather. They were all afterwards condemned to perpetual Imprisonment.

The *Moors*, by which Name the *Saracens* who settled *The MOORS* themselves in *Mauritania* were called, had entirely driven attempt to in- the Emperor's Forces out of *Africa*, and were in the vade SPAIN. Possession of all Places on the Coast of the *Mediterranean* except *Ceuta* and *Tangiers*. As they were now making great Preparations for War, *Wamba* apprehensive that these might be intended against *Spain* put himself into the best Posture of Defence both by Sea and Land. By thus timely Arming he was able to destroy a Fleet

WAMBA enters into the MONASTICK State.

Fleet of 270 Sail of their Ships; which were soon after sent to make a Descent on *Spain*. Some Historians say, that the *Moors* were put upon this Enterprize by *Ervige* Nephew to *Recesvinte*. However this was, he not long after found Means to give the King a poisoned Cup: the Effects of which were at first so violent, that *Wamba* supposing he should scarce live the Night out according to the superstitious Custom of that Time put on the Monastick Habit. He so little suspected *Ervige's* villany that he signed an Act appointing him his Successor. Recovering from the Disorders brought upon him by this Poison, *Wamba* was concerned to find himself changed from a powerful Monarch to a contemptible Monk: But being prevented by a Decree of the 6th Council of *Toledo* from returning to the World again, he spent the remaining Part of his Life in Exercises of Devotion. *Wamba* had at this Time reigned eight Years.

ERVIGE 680. Although *Ervige* had acquired the Crown by these most wicked Practices, yet being a Prince possessed by Nature of many good Qualities he governed with Mildness and Prudence. The Affair of the poisoned Cup being discovered it rendered him odious to the People, who deservedly held *Wamba* high in their Esteem; but he took Care, by encreasing the Power and Interest of the Clergy to attach them strongly to his Interest. Besides this to atone in some Measure for his Crime, and to secure to himself the quiet Possession of the Throne, he gave his Daughter *Cixilona* in Marriage to *Egica*, a Person of great Merit and Interest who was nearly related to *Wamba*. Having reigned seven Years and appointed *Egica* his Successor *Ervige* died in the Year 1687.

EGICA 687. *Egica* now no longer concealed the Hatred he had all along born to his Father-in-Law. As he had married *Cixilona* only for the Sake of paving his Way to the Throne, he immediately divorced her notwithstanding he had had several Children by her; and having made strict Enquiry into the Deposition of *Wamba*, he most rigorously punished all that were Accomplices in it. Justice being done by this Severity to *Wamba* who was still living, the Reign of *Egica* was afterwards so merciful, so prudent, and so happy, that he will ever be remember'd amongst the best of Princes.

The authors of WAMBA's Deposition brought to Justice.

He left three Children *Witiza* his Successor; *Oppas* Archbishop of *Seville* who was so deeply concerned in the *Moorish* Invasion we shall presently speak of; and *Fandina* Mother of *Florinda* whose Violation was the Cause of the Revolution that followed thereupon.

Notwithstanding *Witiza* had for some Time shared the Government with that good Prince his Father, he was no sooner in the full Possession of Power than he abandoned himself to every kind of Lewdness and Tyranny. Fearing that the People who detested him for his Vices would depose him and bestow the Crown upon *Theodofred* Duke of *Cordova*, or upon *Favila* Duke of *Cantabria*, both Sons of *Chindasunte* heretofore King, he without regarding their great Age, or that they were his Grandmother's Brothers, caused the Eyes of the former to be put out and the latter to be assassinated. *Roderick* Son of *Theodofred* and *Pelagius* Son of *Favila*, both afterwards Kings, had also fallen Sacrifices to his cursed Jealousy if they had not timely saved themselves by Flight. This cruel Behaviour to his Relations drew the Hatred of his Subjects more upon him, which would have certainly proved fatal if he had not had Recourse to the last Resource of Tyrants the dismantling of Towns and disarming of the People. Having thus reigned or to speak more properly tyrannized ten Years, he died leaving two Sons *Iba* and *Sizebut*.

The *Visgoths* to shew their Detestation of the Memory of *Witiza* set aside his two Sons, and declared *Roderick* the Son of *Theodofred* King. This Prince was by Nature possessed of great Accomplishments both of Mind and Body; and as these had been improved by an Education in Adversity the School of Virtue, the People flattered themselves with the Hopes of seeing better Days; but being advanced to the Throne he was so intoxicated with Power that he outdid *Witiza* in all Manner of Wickedness. The Sons of *Witiza* having born his ill Usage a great while fled at last for Safety to *Africa*; where Count *Julian* Husband to their Father's Sister was Governor. These Princes, who were not excluded from the Throne for any Fault of their own, had always a considerable Party in *Spain* headed by *Oppas* Archbishop of *Seville* their Uncle,

WITIZA,
701.

RODERICK,
711.

Uncle : Which was considerably increased by the present wicked Government and their own Sufferings. *Roderick* quite sunk in sensuality took no proper Measures to strengthen himself against their growing Interest : On the contrary, fancying the People would bear with him as they had done with his Predecessor, he set no Bounds to his unbridled Lust.

Rape of FLO-
RINDA.

Florinda the Daughter of Count *Julian* was one of the Maids of Honour to the Queen. Being very beautiful neither her great Rank nor the Regard which *Roderick* ought in Prudence to have had for her Father, a brave Officer and a Man of great Interest, could prevent her from falling a Sacrifice to his Brutish Lust. Count *Julian* being informed by *Florinda* herself in the most moving Terms of this Outrage he vowed Revenge upon *Roderick* ; but in the mean Time dissembled so well that his Intention was to the last never suspected. While *Oppas* his Brother-in-Law managed amongst the Friends of their Family in *Spain*, *Iba* and *Sizebut* his Nephews who wished for nothing so much as the Destruction of *Roderick* requested Succours from the *Moors*.

MOORISH In-
vasion, 713.

Being convinced of the Sincerity of the Persons who now invited them the *Moors*, who had long wished for an Opportunity to get Footing there, in the Year 713 landed a large Army in *Spain*. *Roderick* assembled his Forces immediately which were numerous enough ; yet as the People had been disarmed in the preceding Reign and all Military Discipline had in the present been neglected the *Moors* carried every Thing before them. Finding his Affairs were like to grow worse and worse, for being generally hated the *Spaniards* went over in great Numbers to the *Moors*, *Roderick* resolved to come to a decisive Action as soon as possible. In this which happened near *Xeres* *Oppas* and *Julian* both threw off the Mask ; and instead of assisting the King attacked him with the Troops under their Command in the Rear while the *Moors* charged him in Front. After an obstinate Resistance his Army was entirely routed ; and *Roderick* who had during the Battle given great Proofs of his personal Bravery was very near being made Prisoner. As all the strong Towns of *Spain* remained in the dismantled State wherein *Witiza* had left them, there was
after

after this Defeat no Place for the Natives either to collect their shattered Forces in or to make a Stand at. The Consequence was that the *Moors* soon over-ran all Spain.

Roderick died shortly after having reigned three Years; and with him ended the Power of the *Visgoths* which had cost three Ages to establish in Spain. Thus the *Moors* in less than eight Months and by a single Battle possessed themselves of a Country; which it cost 800 Years and more than four Times that Number of Engagements to drive them from. The Conquest of Spain being compleated Count *Julian* and the Princes *Iba* and *Sizebut*, who as we have seen sacrificed all regard for their Country to the Gratification of their Resentment, met with the Fate they justly deserved; for the *Moors* did not think themselves secure while these enterprizing Men who had had so large a Share in overturning the last Government were alive.

PELAGIUS the Son of *Favila* was on the Account of his having been a Companion of *Roderick* in his sufferings under *Witiza* always a great Favourite, and had bore a great Command in the Army of *Roderick* at the fatal Battle of *Xeres*. After the Defeat there this Prince fled with some few shattered Troops to the Mountains of *Asturia*. While the *Moors* were busied in making sure Work in the southern Provinces that their Communication with *Africa* might be preserved, *Pelagius* had gathered together a considerable Army; and had so fortified the Passes, that finding it both difficult and dangerous to attack him they were glad to accommodate Matters with him.

Not long after *Munuza* a Spaniard by Birth, but in the Interest of the *Moors* and by them entrusted with the Government of the Province of *Asturia*, did by some Means get the Sister of *Pelagius* into his Power and forced her to marry him. *Pelagius* represented this to his Followers as a great Insult, and having inspired them with that Rage which actuated in his own Breast led them on to attack *Munuza*. He at first gained some Advantage over *Munuza*: But this last being greatly reinforced *Pelagius* thought it best to retire into the Mountains. The *Moors* who pursued him held him in such Contempt that they sent *Oppas* to summons him to surrender;

der; but he returned such an Answer as the Insolence of the Message delivered by this Traitor to his Country deserved.

MOORS
routed, and
PELAGIUS
takes the Title
of King of
ASTURIA.

An Action being hereupon commenced the *Moors*, though vastly superior in Number, were by the Conduct of *Pelagius* and Bravery of his Forces entirely defeated with the Loss of their General and twenty thousand Men: And of those who endeavoured by Flight to regain the Low Country many were cut off by Parties posted for that Purpose in the Defiles. This almost miraculous Victory animated the Christians and struck Terror into their Enemies. *Pelagius* made so good an Use of it that he in a little Time became Master of *Leon*, *Astorga*, *Gyon* and other Places; and at the Request of his Followers took upon himself the Title of King of *Asturia*. It must however be confessed that the Divisions amongst the *Moorish* Chiefs together with that impolitick Expedition into *France*, where after ravaging some of the southern Provinces they were entirely routed by *Charles Martel*, contributed in some measure to the Success of *Pelagius*. This Prince who is justly called the Deliverer of his Country died at *Cangas* in the Year 737, leaving Issue *Favila* his Successor and *Ermesinda* who was married to *Alphonso*.

FAVILA,
737.

Favila gave himself up to Voluptuousness and Indolence, and was in a fair Way of ruining what his Father had so gloriously begun: But happily for the People before he had reigned quite two Years a Bear he was hunting turned upon and killed him. As he died without Issue the Crown passed to his Sister's Husband; and this which was the first Instance of any Person's succeeding in the Right of a Female has been since the constant Custom in *Spain*.

ALPHONSO,
739.

Alphonso, who had been a faithful Companion of *Pelagius* in all his Undertakings, continued to preserve the great Reputation he had gained under this Prince. Having beat the *Moors* in divers Engagements and taken many Places in *Galicia* and *Portugal* from them, he died in the Year 757 after a glorious Reign of eighteen Years: And was for his great Piety canonized. His Children by *Ermesinda* were *Froila* his immediate Successor; *Vimarane* murdered by his Brother; *Aurelio* afterwards King; and a Daughter called *Adesinda*.

Froila,

Froila the Founder of *Oviedo* was a brave Prince and *FROILA*,
 successful in War. He soon reduced the *Gascons* who 757.
 had revolted to Obedience; and in one Battle slew fifty
 four thousand *Moors*. His putting a Law in Execution
 which forbid Priests to marry laid the Foundation of a
 Conspiracy to dethrone him and make his Brother *Vi-*
marane King. Thinking thereby to secure himself he
 caused *Vimarane* although he had no hand in the Plot
 to be assassinated: But to wipe out this Stain upon his
 otherways glorious Reign he afterwards named *Vere-*
mond the Son of *Vimarane* for his Successor. This Dis-
 position was however prevented from taking Place by
Aurelio his other Brother: Who caused *Froila* to be
 murdered in the eleventh Year of his Reign and seized
 the Crown.

Soon after the Usurpation of *Aurelio* his People took *AURELIO*,
 up Arms against him. Being conscious of having abused 768, &c.
 the Power he had so wickedly obtained, and consequent-
 ly jealous of his own Subjects, he called in the *Moors*
 to his Assistance; and in Return for this infamously con- *Infamous*
 sented to furnish them yearly with many Virgins of good *Treaty with*
 Families. He died without Issue in the Year 774; but *the MOORS.*
 took care still to exclude the Children of his two Bro-
 thers, by appointing *Silo* his Sister *Adosinda*'s Husband to
 be his Successor.

About this Time the *Moors*, whose Divisions had *MOORS uni-*
 been of great Use to the *Christians*, were all united under *Abderame* King of *Cordeva* and became much more *ted under AB-*
DERAME.
 formidable.

Silo having need of the *Moors* Assistance against his *SILLO*,
 rebellious Subjects in *Galicia* renewed the Treaty con- 774, &c.
 cluded by his Predecessor with them. In this Reign the *Order of Ricos*
Order of Ricos Hombres which had many Privileges *Hombres.*
 annexed to it and gave Rise to that of *Grandees* was
 founded in *Spain*.

After the Death of *Silo* in the Year 783, *Alphonso* the *MAURE-*
 Son of *Froila* was advanced to the Throne; but he was *GATE*,
 shortly after dispossessed by *Mauregate* a natural Son of 783, &c.
Alphonso I. This Prince, for the sake of having the
 Assistance of the *Moors* in maintaining himself on the
 Throne, agreed to furnish them with a hundred Virgins
 annually; fifty of whom were to be of the best Families.

He died in the Year 788 without Issue; and passing by *Alphonso* appointed *Veremond* Son of *Vimarane* to succeed him.

VEREMOND,
788.

Veremond quitted the Monastick State which he had entered into and took upon himself the Regal Authority; but was so influenced by the Superstition of the Times that after marrying and having Children he renewed his Vow. He was so conscientious that notwithstanding he had Sons of his own he admitted *Alphonso*, to whom the Crown of right belonged, to be a Sharer in the Government during his Life; and at his Death in the Year 795, which was vastly lamented by the People, left him in Possession of the whole of it.

ALPHONSO
II.
795.

Alphonso II. was from his extraordinary Continency surnamed the *Chaste*. His Sister *Chimena* who was of a quite different Disposition had married privately to *Sancho* Count of *Saldagnes*; by whom she had *Bernardo Del Carpio* so famous in Romance. This being discovered the Count was arrested at an Assembly of the States; and after putting out his Eyes he was confined in a Prison where he ended his Days miserably. The Child was nevertheless educated with as great Care by the King his Uncle as if he had been his own Son. It was not likely that a Prince of his austere Virtue should willingly prostitute so many *Christian* Virgins every Year; and it luckily happened that the *Moors* had with domestick Broils and foreign Wars so much upon their Hands that they were not in a Condition to force him to do this. On the contrary *Alphonso* gained many Victories over them and took *Lisbon*. During his Reign a *Moorish* Chief called *Mahomet* fled to him for Protection against the Resentment of *Abderame* King of *Cor-dova*. He was well received by *Alphonso*; but being afterwards reconciled to *Abderame* he ungratefully joined in an Attempt to surprize *Alphonso*. The *Moors* perswaded of the Probability of this Scheme united all their Forces; and being conducted by *Mahomet* had already penetrated into his Kingdom. *Alphonso* was however apprized of this Danger time enough to put himself in a posture of Defence; and although his Forces were far inferior in Number he cut to Pieces 50000 of the *Moors*.

Signal Victory
over the
MOORS.

Notwith-

Notwithstanding this Success against the *Moors* the DOMESTICK Reign of *Alphonso* was not free from intestine Troubles. *Troubles.*

The rebellious *Galicians* had at one Time reduced him to the Necessity of hiding himself in a Monastery: But as the *Moors* were not at Liberty to make Use of this Conjunction, he was by the Steadiness and Fidelity of the Nobility soon restored to his Authority. He was a good deal perplexed on another Account. *Bernardo Del Carpio* who had given many signal Proofs of his Courage and Zeal for the King's Service strongly solicited the setting of his Father at Liberty; and some other Circumstances conspired to make it imprudent to disoblige a Man of *Bernardo's* Merit and Interest in the Army. *Abderame II.* King of *Cordova* having reduced his revolted Subjects to Obedience was preparing to attack *Alphonso*; and *Charlemain* at whose Name the *Moors* had so often trembled being dead, his Son was far from being able to cause any Diversion in Favour of *Alphonso*: Yet notwithstanding these Considerations and the Intreaties of the whole Court he would not consent to the Enlargement of *Sancho*; Which so disgusted *Bernardo* that he retired from Court.

After a glorious Reign of forty-eight Years he died *Death of* in the 85th Year of his Age, having appointed *Ramire* ALPHONSO, the Son of *Veremond* from whom he received the Crown 843. to succeed him.

In this Reign the Provinces of *Navarre* and *Arra-The Kingdom* *gon* which *Charlemain* had conquered, being exposed to of NAVARRE the IncurSIONS of the *Moors* and not at all protected by erected.

Lewis the Son and Successor of *Charlemain*, formed themselves into the Kingdom of *Navarre*; and chose for their King *Inigo* Count of *Bigorre* surnamed the *Bold*. This new Kingdom was at first much enlarged by the Conquests made by *Inigo* on the *Moors*; but becoming afterwards equally powerful and sometimes clashing in its Interest with that of *Asturia*, the two Kingdoms instead of uniting against their common Enemy frequently turned their Arms against each other. At the Election of *Inigo* a Charter was drawn up for securing the Liberty of the People from all tyrannical Extensions of the King's Prerogative. The People of *Navarre* afterward negligently lost the Benefit thereof; but the *Arrogonese* being wiser would never give it

FORE DE
SOBRABE.

up, and do to this Day enjoy many Privileges founded on this Compact, which was from the Place where it was agreed upon called the *Fore de Sobrabe*.

RAMIRE,
843.

Ramire was scarce possessed of the Throne when *Nipotien* one of his own Subjects endeavoured to supplant him; but by the Diligence of *Ramire* this was prevented, and the Traitor being made Prisoner was punished with the Loss of his Eyes. Not long after *Abderame* at the Head of a powerful Army demanded the Tribute of *Virgins*. He was met by *Ramire* near *Alveda*; and a Battle ensued which lasted two Days. On the first the *Moors* had the Advantage; but in the following Night *Ramire* dreamed that *St. James* appeared to him and assured him of Success. In the last Reign a Tomb had been discovered in *Galicia*: In which the *Spaniards* persuaded themselves that this Apostle was buried. This Circumstance together with the King's Vision so animated them that they next Morning renewed the Fight with great Vigour: And entirely defeated the *Moors* with the Loss of 60000 Men. In the Heat of the Action, such is the enchanting Power of Superstition, the *Spaniards* fancied they saw *St. James*, whom they now looked upon as their tutelar Saint, carrying before them a white Flag with a red Cross in the Middle of it.

The MOORS
routed with
great Loss.

Descent of
the NOR-
MANS.

In this Reign the *Normans* made a Descent on *Galicia*; but *Ramire* having cut off a great Part of them and burnt some of their Vessels the rest were glad to retire. They afterwards ravaged that Part of the Coast in Possession of the *Moors* which extended from *Lisbon* to the Straights of *Gibraltar*. After this active Reign *Ramire* died in the Year 850 at *Oviedo*, which was now become the Place of the King's usual Residence; and *Ordonio* his Son succeeded.

ORDONIO,
850.

Musa a Renegado Goth had some Time before revolted, and had made himself Master of *Toledo*, *Saragossa* and some other Places which belonged to the King of *Cordova* his Sovereign. Elated with his Success he in the Beginning of this Reign penetrated into the Kingdom of *Asturia* as far as *Logrogno*; and in his Way took *Alveda*: But *Ordonio* marched against him and repulsed him with considerable Loss.

Lopez the Son of *Musa*, who died shortly after of the Wounds he had received, finding himself likely to be attacked by the King of *Cordova* was willing to make Peace with *Ordonio*. This last glad of an Opportunity to divide and so weaken the *Moorish* Interest assisted him with 12000 of his best Troops; But these Allied Forces being entirely routed he was thereby so much weakened, that he could not hinder the *Normans* who shortly after invaded his Dominions from ravaging the Coasts. The Divisions however of the *Moors* still continuing his Affairs had begun to take a better Turn, when the Gout put an End to his Life in the twelfth Year of his Reign.

To *Ordonio* succeeded *Alphonso* his Son who on the Account of his heroick Disposition was surnamed *the Great*. Soon after his Accession *Freila* Count of *Galiccia* forced him to quit the Throne and go for Shelter into *Cantabria*; But the tyrannical Behaviour of the Usurper was such that the People quickly assassinated him, and by that Means made Way for *Alphonso's* Restoration. His whole Reign of forty-eight Years was almost a continued Series of Success against the *Moors* or his own rebellious Subjects; and he made it his Business in the Intervals of Peace to rebuild, fortify and People the Places taken from the *Infidels*.

Bernardo del Carpio restored by *Alphonso* to his Command in the Army had a considerable Share in his Victories over the *Moors*. After this great Man had thus signalized himself, he requested the Liberty of his Father who was still languishing in Prison. This being refused he again left the Court, and retiring to his Castle of *Carpio* great Numbers who either resented his ill Treatment or pitied the Sufferings of the Count of *Saldagnes* resorted to him. The King, who was already engaged with the *Moors*, dreading the Consequences of this agreed to deliver up his Father to him. *Bernardo* immediately delivered up his Castle to *Alphonso*; but instead of receiving his Father into his Arms he was shocked with the News that the venerable old Man was dead in Prison. The Reputation of *Alphonso* was much hurt by dealing thus fraudulently

fraudulently and dishonourably with a Man who had deserved well at his Hands: And he was moreover very unhappy in his own Family.

*The Sons of
ALPHONSO
take Arms
against him.*

His Wife a *French* Lady having for some Time entertained a deadly Hatred of him, she prevailed at last upon his Sons to join with her in it. Having by long Wars and expensive Buildings exhausted his Treasure he laid new Taxes upon the People: At which they were greatly disgusted. His Sons encouraged thereby took up Arms against him: And being joined by the Majority of the People *Alphonso* was after a Civil War of two Years forced in the Year 910 to give up his Crown to *Garcia* the eldest of them.

GARCIA,
910.

Garcia enjoyed the Fruits of his unnatural Rebellion but three Years; during which nothing remarkable happened.

ORDONIO II.
*takes the Title
of King of
LEON, 914.*

Ordonio II. upon the Death of his Brother succeeded to the Throne: And making *Leon* the Seat of his Residence the Title of King of *Asturia*, which began with *Pelagius*, was changed by him and his Successors for that of King of *Leon*. He was at first successful against *Almanzor* King of *Cordova*: But the latter receiving Succours from another *Moorish* Prince in *Africa* he became an Overmatch for the united Forces of *Leon* and *Navarre*, although these were commanded by *Sancho Abarca* King of *Navarre* one of the bravest Princes of his Time. The Counts of *Castile*, who had been long endeavouring to render themselves independent, were now so formidable that *Ordonio* durst not openly attack them. Pretending to want their Advice in an Affair of great Consequence he desired a Conference with them: But upon giving him a Meeting they were all seized, and being sent Prisoners to *Leon* were shortly after beheaded. Being with good Reason apprehensive that the *Castilians* would resent this Piece of Treachery he was arming to prevent it, when he died at *Zamora* in the Year 923 leaving two Sons *Alphonso* and *Ramire*.

*Seizes the
Counts of
CASTILE.*

FROILA II.
923.

Froila II. on the Death of his Brother seized the Crown; but after a Reign of 14 Months remarkable only for Weakness and Cruelty an End was put to his Life by a Leprosy.

The

The *Castilians* irritated by the last Prince and encouraged by the Weakness of this now entirely threw off their Dependence on the Kingdom of *Leon*. They were at first governed by two Judges, of which one had the Care of civil the other of military Affairs: But on the Death of these the whole Power devolved on *Gonsalva Nunes* descended from a *German* Nobleman, who coming into *Spain* on a Pilgrimage to the Tomb of St. *James* had signalized himself against the *Moors*. CASTILE becomes an independent State.

Alphonso IV. the elder of *Froila's* two Nephews succeeded: But being a weak Prince *Gonsalva Count of Castile* extended his Conquests on the Kingdom of *Leon* as far as the River *Pisuerga*. The *Castilian* having afterwards attacked *Sancho Abarca* King of *Navarre* the two Sovereigns engaged in a single Combat at the Head of their Armies. *Sancho* being in this mortally wounded his Troops were afterwards defeated. *Alphonso* more fit for the idle Life of a Monk than to govern in the Year 930 abdicated the Crown in Favour of his Brother; and retired into a Monastery. He would afterwards have re-ascended the Throne; but was prevented by *Ramire* who caused his Eyes to be put out. ALPHONSO IV. 924. Progress of the Count of CASTILE.

Ramire II. being naturally of a warlike Temper, and knowing it would endear him to his Subjects, engaged in a War against the *Moors*. Having obtained several Victories over them and taken *Madrid*, he had a Mind to attempt the bringing back of *Castile* to its Obdience: But *Gonsalva Count of Castile* represented to him, that such an attempt would by weakning both States make them an easy Conquest to their *Infidel* Neighbours. Hereupon *Ramire* being a Prince of good Sense desisted from his Purpose; and was afterwards assisted by *Gonsalva* whose wife Council he had followed against the *Moors*. He died in the twentieth Year of his Reign and was succeeded by *Ordonio* his eldest Son. RAMIRE II. 930. Is successful against the MOORS.

Sancho the Brother of this Prince, being assisted by the King of *Navarre* and *Gonsalva Count of Castile*, forced him to abandon his Capital: But he took Care to secure himself in an inaccessible Fortrefs till the *Navarrese* and *Castilians* were called home to defend their

Joins with
GONSALVA,
Count of CAS-
TILE, against
the MOORS.

their own Country against the *Moors*. *Ordonio* having now only his Brother to deal with soon defeated his Troops; and being returned to *Leon* divorced and sent home *Urac* his Wife the Count of *Castile's* Daughter. *Gonsalva* had during these Transactions obtained a signal Victory over *Algahib* the *Moorish* General; and was returned about the same Time in Triumph to his Capital. *Abderame* King of *Cordova* trusting to the Animosity between him and *Ordonio* sent another powerful Army against him: But in this he was mistaken, for the King of *Leon* attentive to their common Interest and that of Christianity assisted *Gonsalva* with all his Forces; and the *Moors* were a second Time defeated with great Loss. *Ordonio* died soon after in the Year 955, leaving an Infant Son named *Veremond* whom he had by *Elvira* his second Wife.

SANCHO,
955.

Usurpation of
ORDONIO.

Sancho surnamed the Fat, who had still a considerable Party, taking the Advantage of his Nephew's tender Age got himself to be proclaimed King; but by the Prevalence of a Party who backed the Pretensions of *Ordonio* Son of *Alphonso IV.* he was soon obliged to quit the Crown and Kingdom. *Ordonio* for the Sake of supporting himself had married *Urac* Daughter of *Gonsalva* the late King's divorced Wife: But he grew so odious to the People that he was called the Wicked.

SANCHO is
restored.

After a long Absence *Sancho* returned at the Head of a powerful Army which he had obtained from *Almanzor* the *Moor*. *Ordonio* having nothing to expect from the People on the Approach of *Sancho* fled to his Father-in-law: But he was so enraged at this cowardly Behaviour that he took his daughter from him and would not suffer him to stay in his Dominions. Thus deservedly abandoned he went for Shelter amongst the *Moors*, and shortly after died in an obscure Village near *Cordova*. *Sancho* was not a little displeased with *Gonsalva* for giving his Daughter in Marriage to *Ordonio*; but he had for the present enough upon his Hands to rectify the Disorders which the Kingdom had by the late Management been thrown into: And it was moreover for his Interest to cultivate Friendship with a Prince, who by many signal Overthrows of the *Moors* had done great Service to the common Cause.

Theresa

Theresa the Mother of *Alphonso* could not forgive *Intrigues of*
Gonsalva the Death of *Sancho Abarca* her Father. As *THERESA,*
she could not prevail upon her Son to attempt any *Mother of*
thing against *Gonsalva* she proposed a Match between *SANCHO.*
him and her Sister *Blanche*; and under the Pretence
of its being celebrated with greater Pomp decoyed
him to *Navarre* where he was thrown into Prison.
Being delivered by the Contrivance of *Blanche* he car-
ried her with him to *Burgos*: And after marrying her
marched against the King of *Navarre*, who contrary to
a solemn Treaty had taken the Opportunity of his
Confinement to invade *Castile*. Having defeated his
Army he made him Prisoner, yet he was prevailed on
by his Wife to set him at Liberty. The King of
Navarre was touched with this generous Treatment;
but nothing could satisfy his Sister *Theresa's* implacable
Hatred of *Gonsalva*. She contrived afterwards to get
him again into Prison at *Leon*, whither he was invited
to settle some Matters in dispute between this Kingdom
and *Castile*. He however once more notwithstanding
the Orders for strictly guarding him regained his Li-
berty by the Assistance of *Blanche* his faithful Wife.
The *Moors* had during these Transactions made some
Conquests in his Dominions: Which, as the like had
never before happened to him, with the base Usage of
the House of *Navarre* so affected this great Prince that
he shortly after fell sick and died. Some Time before *Death of*
his Death he took Care to have the Independency of *GONSALVA,*
Castile on *Leon* declared by a formal Treaty. This *Count of*
Bulwark of Christianity being now dead, and the Chri- *CASTILE.*
stian Princes being divided amongst themselves, the
Power of the Infidels in *Spain* was greatly encreased.

Sancho died in the Year 967, and was succeeded by *Ra-* *RAMIRE III.*
mire his Son: Who being young the Government was 967.
administred by his Mother and Aunt. *Veremond* Son
of *Ordonio III.* taking the Advantage of this Minority
made himself Master of *Galicia*, and was declared King
thereof. In the Reign of *Ramire* the *Moors* of *Sa-*
ragossa having vanquished Count *Borelli* took *Barce-*
celona; and another Body of them laid Siege to *Pampe-*
lona the Capital of *Navarre*. *Alhazeb* who at the
same Time entered *Galicia* with a powerful Army, *Progress of the*
had *MOORS.*

had taken *Compostella*; and was in a fair Way of subduing all *Spain* if a Dysentery which seized his Army had not put a Stop to his Progress.

VEREMOND II. 982. Upon the Death of *Ramire* in the Year 982, *Veremond* King of *Galicia* succeeded to the Kingdom of *Leon*. In his Time *Albazez* was defeated by *Garcias Ferdinand* Count of *Castile* Son of the great *Gonsalva*:

Defeat of AL- And the proud *Moor* who had ravaged the Territories of the Christians no less than 52 Times laid it so much to Heart that he died soon after. The Divisions of the *Moors* on the Death of this great Soldier gave the *Christians* a fair Opportunity of recovering what they had lost: But instead of this *Garcias* being deserted by half his Forces with his Son *Sancho Garcias* at their Head the Infidels attacked him, and having routed his Army made him Prisoner. *Barcelona* was however about this Time re-taken by *Borelli*; and the Siege of *Pampelona* was raised by the King of *Navarre*. *Veremond* having reigned seventeen Years without doing any Thing remarkable was succeeded by his Son *Alphonso*.

ALPHONSO V. 999. *Alphonso* V. in Conjunction with his Allies the Count of *Castile* and King of *Navarre* recovered all their Predecessors had lost from the *Moors*. He afterwards pushed them vigorously on the Side of *Portugal*; but approaching too near the Walls at the Siege of *Viscu* in the Year 1028 he was killed by an Arrow from the Ramparts. He lived in Amity with *Abdallah* one of the *Moorish* Chiefs; and with a View of converting married his Sister to him. She took great Pains with him but it was all in vain; and at last to get rid of her Importunity he sent her back to *Leon*. In this Reign the Mother of *Sancho Garcias* Count of *Castile* fell desperately in Love with a *Moorish* Gentleman. Foreseeing that her Son would never consent to her marrying him, she prepared for her Son a poisoned Cup; which being discovered he compelled her to swallow it herself: But this Action was the Cause of great Uneasiness to him during the Remainder of his Life.

VEREMOND III. 1028. VEREMOND III. although very young was upon the Death of *Alphonso* V. his Father crowned by the Nobility. He applied himself to the Arts of Peace and to the Reformation of the Laws. *Garcias*

Garcias Sancho Son and Successor of *Sancho Garcias* Unhappy Count of *Castile* had two Sisters; the elder of whom Death of was married to *Sancho the Great* King of *Navarre* GARCIAS SANCHO, Count of CASTILE, the other to the King of *Leon*. To make the Alliance between these Princes still stronger it was agreed that the young Count of *Castile* should marry *Veremond's* Sister. He set out in Company with the King of *Navarre* to celebrate his Nuptials at *Leon*; but riding on before through Impatience to see the Princess he was assassinated by three Miscreants the Sons of a Rebel to his Father, who after their Father's Death had been received by him into Favour. On the coming up of the King of *Navarre* he pursued these ungrateful Villians: And as they justly deserved put them to an ignominious Death.

By the Death of this Prince *Sancho the Great* al- CASTILE ready Master of *Navarre* became possessed of *Castile* in annexed to the Right of his Wife: And as *Veremond* had no Chil- NAVARRE, dren nor Brothers, he for the Sake of securing the Succession to that Crown also in his Family proposed a Match between one of his Sons and *Sancha* Sister to the King of *Leon*. The Nobility, apprehensive of this Kingdom's becoming a Province to *Navarre* rejected the Proposal: But upon *Sancho's* declaring War and pushing his Conquests as far as *Mount Occa* they were glad to comply. They moreover were forced to consent, that the Princess should have immediately Part of the Kingdom as a portion and the Remainder after the Death of her Brother.

This brave and politick Prince fell into the Mistake Mistake of of dividing his Dominions, as *Charlemain* and other SANCHO the great Kings before him had done: But this Division so GREAT in di- fatal to the Cause of Christianity might perhaps be a viding his good deal owing to the unhappy Quarrels in his own Dominions, Family.

While he was engaged with the *Moors* his eldest Son Quarrels in was very desirous of riding one of the King's favourite his Family. Horses; which being opposed by his Mother and the Master of the Horse he publicly charged his Mother and the Master of the Horse with a criminal Intimacy. The Queen was hereupon imprisoned and a Day was fixed for her Trial by single Combat; by the Laws of which

which if nobody did espouse her Quarrel she was to be burnt alive. Her own Family and Friends deserted her; yet when the Time came *Ramire* a natural Son of the King's boldly stepped forth in her Defence. While they were fixing upon another Champion for the Prince, a venerable Ecclesiastick having first pacified the King a little convinced him of the Inconveniencies and Uncertainty of this Method of Trial. Then turning to *Garcias* the good old Man dealt so roundly with him, that his Conscience pricking him he confessed the Crime of having falsely accused the Queen and threw himself at her Feet. She like a good *Christian* forgave him; but insisted that he should never enjoy any Part of *Castile*, and that her Champion *Ramire* should for his Generosity have the Kingdom of *Arragon* free of all Dependency upon *Navarre*. *Sancho* who was shortly after assassinated disposed of his Dominions by Will in the following Manner.

The Will of
SANCHO the
GREAT.

To *Garcias* his eldest Son he gave *Navarre*, with some Parts of the neighbouring States which lay convenient for it.

To *Ferdinand* his second Son *Castile* as it had been enjoyed by the last Count his Mother's Brother.

To *Gonsalva* his third Son the small Territories of *Sobrade* and *Ripagorça*.

And to *Ramire* his natural Son *Arragon* as the Queen had procured it for him.

Six independent
States in
Christian
Spain.

Christian Spain was much weakened by being thus divided into six independent States, the four just mentioned, that of *Leon*, and *Barcelona* which was subject to its own Count: And the *Moors*, who were in Possession of the Provinces which lay all along the Coast from *Catalonia* to *Gibraltar* and from thence as far as *Galicia*, had it in their Power whenever a favourable Opportunity offered to attack any of the Christian Princes.

NAVARRE
attacked by
RAMIRE.

Garcias being set out on a Pilgrimage to *Rome*, to atone perhaps for his Crime against his Mother, his Dominions were attacked by *Ramire*; but *Garcias* returning expeditiously he was surprized while he lay before a Town, and being soon after stripped of his own Dominions was forced to fly for Refuge to *Gonsalva* King of *Sobrade*.

In

In the mean Time *Veremond*, hoping to recover what *War betwixt* had been conquered from *Leon* by *Sancho* the Great, de- LEON and
clared War against *Ferdinand* King of *Castile*; but ex- CASTILE.
posing himself too much in a bloody Action upon the
River *Carion* in the Year 1037, he was run through with
a Lance. In him, for he left no Children, the Race of
Kings descended from *Pelagius* ended; and the Crown
of *Leon* devolved in Right of his Wife on *Ferdinand*.

This Prince being grown by the Union of the King- FERDINAND.
doms of *Castile* and *Leon* under him very powerful, he 1037.
resolved to turn his Arms against the *Moors*. *Garcias* LEON united
his Brother did the same; and such was the Success of to CASTILE.
these Princes, that after taking a great Number of
Towns both in *Spain* and *Portugal* several of the *Moorish*
Princes were obliged to pay them an annual Tribute.
They had now a fair Opportunity to abolish entirely *Success against*
the Power of the *Moors* in *Spain*; but this was pre- the MOORS.
vented by an unhappy Quarrel which broke out between
themselves. After mutual Stratagems to make each
other Prisoners it came to a decisive Battle in the Val-
ley of Mount *Occa*: In which *Garcias* was killed by one *Death of*
of his own Subjects whom he had formerly injured, GARCIAS.
and left the Crowns of *Navarre* and *Arragon* to his
Son *Sancho* a Minor. Notwithstanding that *Ferdinand*
could now have taken what he pleased from his Nephew,
as he had all along shewn great Moderation, and would
gladly have been reconciled while the Armies stood ready
to engage, he contented himself with some few Places
which heretofore belonged to *Castile*.

Some time before this *Gonsalva* King of *Sobrabé* GONSALVA
was assassinated; and leaving no Children *Ramire* who, assassinated.
as we before observed had fled to him for Refuge suc-
ceeded. Taking the Advantage of *Sancho's* Nonage he
also conquered *Arragon*, and made such Progress in *Na-*
varre that the young Prince was glad to give up Part
of it by Treaty to secure the rest. *Ramire* afterwards
attacked the *Moors*, and made the Kings of *Saragossa*
and *Lerida* tributary to him.

Ferdinand, who still maintained his Superiority over FERDINAND
the *Moors*, having about this Time taken upon himself *takes the Title*
the title of Emperor, it was complained of by *Henry III.* of Emperor.
who insisted that as *Roman* Emperor Homage was

due to him from *Spain*. It being referred to Pope *Victor II.* he decided in Favour of *Henry*, and *Ferdinando* out of Regard to the Pope's Authority would have submitted; but the *Spanish* Nobility asserted strenuously, that all Dependence of *Spain* on any foreign Power was put an End to by the *Gothick* Conquest. While this was under Consideration, *Don Rodrigo Dias de Bivar* so well known in Romance by the Name of the *Cid*, whose Valour and Conduct had not a little contributed to *Ferdinand's* Success against the *Moors*, came into the Council; and after declaring loudly for Independency took it upon himself to oblige the Pope to do the *Spaniards* Justice. He for this Purpose put himself at the Head of a powerful Army: Which had the desired Effect, a Legate being immediately sent to declare the Independency of *Spain* on the *Empire*. *Ferdinand* who was for his Bravery surnamed *the Great*, and who was canonized for his Piety, fell into his Father's Mistake of dividing his Dominions by Will. To *Sancho* his eldest Son he gave *Castile*; to *Alphonso Leon*; and *Gallicia* to his other Son *Garcias*: Nor were his Daughters *Uraca* and *Elvira* forgot; one had *Zamora*, the other *Toro* with its Dependencies.

SANCHO II.
King of
CASTILE,
overcomes
RAMIRE.

Sancho II. being by this Partition much weakened, the King of *Navarre* assisted by *Ramire* King of *Arragon* attempted to recover what had been by *Ferdinand* annexed to *Castile*; but he was by the Conduct of the *Cid* soon compelled to sue for Peace. Although *Arragon* was comprised in this Treaty a new War soon broke out, occasioned by *Sancho's* attacking the *Moors* of *Sarragossa* who were under the Protection of *Arragon*; which ended in the Death of *Ramire* and the Reduction of *Sarragossa*.

He attacks
GARCIAS.

Sancho, who during his Mother's Life had carried it fair to his Brothers, as soon as she was dead resolved to strip them of their Dominions; and having lulled *Alphonso* into a Neutrality easily found a Pretence for attacking *Garcias*. In this War, which the *Cid* conscious of its Injustice with great Reluctance took the Management of, *Garcias* was defeated; and dying soon after under Confinement in the Castle of *Luna* his Dominions were annexed to the Kingdom of *Castile*. The

King

King of *Leon* now too late saw his Folly in being an idle Spectator of his Brother's Ruin; for he was soon told by the Conqueror, that it was not in the Power of their Father to give away from him, being the eldest Son, the Kingdom of *Leon* which came by their Mother.

A War ensuing *Alphonso* was robbed of his Kingdom; *He deprives* but by the Intercession of his Sister his life was spared. ALPHONSO It was however on Condition that he should go into a of LEON. Monastery. As this was forced upon him he would never put on the Habit; and taking the first Opportunity of escaping sheltered himself at *Toledo*. *Sancho* did not stop here, for he took *Toro* from his Sister *Elwira*, and laid Siege to *Zamora* which belonged to *Uraca*; but while he was before this last Place, he was in the Year 1073 murdered by a Defenter from the Town.

Alphonso VI. succeeded his Brother *Sancho* in the Kingdoms of *Castile* and *Leon*; and uniting with *Sancho Ramire* King of *Arragon* they made great Conquests on the *Moors*: Yet he had so much Regard to the kind Treatment he received during his Retreat to *Toledo*, that he disgraced the famous *Cid* for making an Incurfion upon the Territories of this City. The *Cid* although *Exploits of the* divested of his Command put himself at the Head of *CID after his* some brave Volunteers; and conquered so much from *Disgrace.* the *Moors* on the Side of *Valencia*, that had not the Love of his Country and Loyalty to his Master restrained him he might easily have formed a new Kingdom.

About this Time *Sancho* King of *Navarre* was assassinated by his Brother *Raymond*. As his Sons were very *annexed to* young the *Navarrese*, being determined that the Mur- ARRAGON. derer should not reign over them, conferred the Crown on the King of *Arragon*.

Hiaya King of *Toledo* the Son of *Almannon* having rendered himself hateful to his Subjects the *Moors* *Siege of* begged the Protection of the King *Badajoz*, as did the TOLEDO. Christians at the same Time that of *Alphonso*. They both accepted the Invitation; but the *Moorish* King on the Approach of *Alphonso* quitted his Party and retired. As the *Moors* however chose rather to be reconciled to their own wicked Prince than to submit to a Christian King, *Alphonso* unwilling to lose all the the Trouble he

1085.

had given himself resolved upon besieging *Toledo*. This Siege made a great Noise in the World, and brought to him many Volunteers of high Rank from different Nations: And amongst others the *French* Princes *Raymond* Count of *Tholouse* and *Henry* and *Raymond* of *Burgundy*. After a long and vigorous Siege and many fruitless Attempts of the *Moors* to raise it the Town capitulated. The Terms were that the *Moorish* King should have safe Conduct to *Valencia*; and that the *Moors* who chose to stay in *Toledo* should not be molested in the Enjoyment of their religious or civil Rights or have any new Taxes imposed upon them.

MADRID and
other Places
erected into the
Province of
New CAS-
TILE.

As *Madrid*, *Medina* and many other Places hereupon submitted voluntarily to him, he united them all into one Province under the Name of *New Castile*: And having encouraged many Christian Families to come and settle in *Toledo* established an Archbishoprick there. In Reward for their signal Services *Alphonso* gave his three Daughters in Marriage to the *French* Princes who had acted as Volunteers under him. To *Raymond* of *Burgundy* he gave his Daughter *Uraca* by *Constance* his Queen with the Title of Count of *Gallicia*: And to *Henry* of *Burgundy* *Theresa* a natural Daughter, and he created him Count of *Portugal*. *Raymond* of *Tholouse*, to whom he gave *Elvira* another natural Daughter, having received her Dowry in Money and Jewels returned into *France* with her.

Insurrection in
TOLEDO.

Setting out soon after on a Journey to *Leon* *Alphonso* left the Government of *Toledo* to the Queen and *Bernard* the new Archbishop; who being hurried on by intemperate Zeal took an Opportunity to seize the principal *Mosque* which by the Capitulation had been left to the *Moors*. As these were more numerous than the *Christians* the City was hereupon thrown into the utmost Confusion: And had not the King returned the Consequences might have been fatal. He was highly incensed at this unjust Proceeding and offered to do justice to his *Moorish* Subjects: But they, foreseeing that whatever Satisfaction they might have for the Present it would in the End turn out to their Disadvantage, endeavoured to pacify the King; and by giving up their *Mosque* with a good Grace greatly recommended themselves to his Favour.

Alphonso

Alphonso after this turned his Arms against *Benhadet* King of *Seville*; but falling violently in Love with *Zaida* his Daughter, he after she was baptized married her and received some Towns with their Districts as a Portion. Depending on the Assistance of his Son-in-law *Benhadet* now amused himself with the Thought of uniting all that the *Moors* possessed in *Spain* to the Crown of *Seville*. At his Sollicitation the King of *Castile*, who was so fond of his Daughter that he could refuse him nothing and yet did not choose to assist openly an *Infidel* King, obtained for him a powerful Army from *Joseph Tephin* King of *Morocco*.

ALPHONSO
marries
ZAIDA, a
MOORISH
Princess.

Abenaxa who commanded it being arrived near *Seville*, he finding himself stronger than *Benhadet* contrived to quarrel with him; and having defeated and slain him in Battle took upon himself the Title of *Miramolin*, which Title the first *Moorish* Conquerors of *Spain* had made use of. After this he declared War against the King of *Castile*, and had the Advantage in two Engagements against *Garcias* and *Roderigo*; but in a third, in which *Alphonso* commanded in Person, he was worsted and obliged to retreat to *Cordova*.

ABENAXA
defeats BEN-
HADET, and
takes the Title
of MIRAMO-
LIN.

The King of *Morocco* enraged at the perfidy of *Abenaxa* came over at the Head of another large Army; and having made himself Master of *Seville*, he caused *Abenaxa* to be beheaded and took the Title of *Miramolin* upon himself. This sudden Revolution alarmed the *Christians*: But the Alarm was soon over; for on the Approach of the Forces of *Arragon Tephin* who had done no other Mischief than that of plundering the Country a little thought proper to retire.

ABENAXA
is beheaded.

Sancho Ramire King of *Arragon* and *Navarre* being killed while he was before *Huesca*, his eldest Son and Successor *Peter* continued the Siege with great Vigour. The King of *Huesca* joined by some *Castilian* Troops endeavoured to raise the Siege: But *Peter*, although his Forces were much inferior, attacked them so briskly that he gained a compleat Victory; and having carried the Place made it a Bishop's See. Dying without Children in the Year 1104 he was succeeded by his Brother *Alphonso*.

Death of
SANCHO
RAMIRE.

*Progress of the
CID.*

The renowned *Cid*, whom the King of *Castile* had before the Siege of *Toledo* found it necessary to employ against the *Moors* of *Andalusia*, acquitted himself in this War with his usual Success. He after this greatly extended the Conquests begun in *Valencia* while he was banished from Court; and having taken the Capital he established a Bishoprick there, and made it the Seat of his Residence. The *Moors* in his last Illness laid Siege to this Place; but so prudent was his Conduct notwithstanding his very weak Condition that they could not take the Place till after his Death.

*CASTILE
invaded by the
MOORS.*

The *Miramolin Joseph Tephin* lived in constant Amity with his Neighbour the King of *Castile*, by whose Encouragement he had got footing in *Spain*: But upon his Death *Castile* was attacked with a powerful Army by his Son and Successor *Hali*. *Alphonso* being ill sent against him two of his best Generals; and was so imprudent as to send his only Son no more than 11 Years of Age to see the Campaign. In a Battle fought in the Plains of *Velez*, called from the Number of Counts slain in it the Battle of the seven Counts, the *Castilians* were beat and the young Prince was slain: But as *Hali* did not push this Advantage, *Alphonso* had an Opportunity of putting himself into such a Condition that he shortly after braved it to *Hali* at the very Gates of *Seville*.

*Battle of the
SEVEN
COUNTS.*

*Contests con-
cerning the
Succession.*

Alphonso having no Children the Succession of Right belonged to *Urac* his Daughter, who had a Son but just out of the Cradle called after his Grandfather *Alphonso*. As this Prince was an Infant and the Son of a Foreigner the Nobility could by no Means brook the Thought of his reigning over them: And their Dislike was increased by the Neglect of his Mother, who since the Death of *Raymond* Count of *Galicia* her husband had taken no Care to have him educated suitably to his Birth. To prevent the Mischiefs arising from a disputed Succession it was resolved that some Person fit to reign should marry *Urac*; But the Difficulty was whom to fix upon. The Nobility insisted it should be a *Castilian*; and judged the Count of *Candesquina* the most proper Person. Others and especially the Clergy preferred the
King

King of *Arragon*, that *Christian Spain* might by the Union of the two Crowns become more powerful: And their Choice being approved of by the King she was married to him. *Alphonso* died soon after at *Toledo* in the Year 1109; which was the 79th of his Age and 44th of his Reign.

Alphonso VII. King of *Arragon*, confiding in the Abilities of *Don Pedro Ansurez* who was left Regent and being busied in making Conquests upon the *Moors*, did not set out immediately to take Possession of the Crown. Sending *Urac* before she under the Pretence of her Marriage being void, because it was as she said a forced one, would have excluded him from all Share in the Government of *Castile*. The King dissembled his Rage at this Conduct: But made a Handle of her Lewdness to confine her; nor was he opposed in so doing by the Nobility, to whom it was notorious that she intrigued with *Don Pedro de Lara* and the Count *de Candespina*. By the last of these she had a Son named *Hurtado*; from whom sprang an illustrious Family.

Alphonso the Son of *Raymond*, who was now grown up, being very promising the Clergy of *Leon* and *Castile* declared in his Favour: And his Mother's Marriage with *Alphonso* of *Arragon*, which was found upon Enquiry to be within the forbidden Degrees of Consanguinity, being declared void by the Pope the People of *Galicia* did the same. Upon this *Alphonso* divorced the Queen formally and set her at Liberty; hoping that her proud and lecherous Disposition would create Discord amongst the Heads of her Son's Party. He was in this mistaken: For she was forced to give up *Galicia* entirely to her Son and governed in *Castile* herself.

Preparations being now made on all Sides for a War the Queen's Troops were commanded by her two Gallants; and those of the young Prince by *Don Pedro de Trava* and the Bishop of *Compostella*. *Alphonso* soon defeated the Queen's Forces, and the Count *de Candespina* was slain in the Action. Having afterwards the same Success against the *Gallicians* he took *Don Pedro* Prisoner; and the Prince was with great Difficulty prevented from falling into his Hands. These two Victories were followed with the Reduction

of *Burgos*, *Leon* and many other Places; but while he was before *Astorga* the Bishop of *Compostella* having received large Re-inforcements from *Galicia* raised the Siege and obliged him to shut himself up in *Carion*. This brave Bishop by convincing them it was for their mutual Interest brought about a Reconciliation between the Queen and her Son. It did not however last long; for Lust being her ruling Passion she gave up herself entirely to her lewd Commerce with *Don Pedro de Lara*, and countenanced him in his Insolence to the Nobility. Having hereby rendered her Government intolerable she was soon obliged to resign it to her Son *Alphonso*.

ALPHONSO VIII.

Alphonso VIII. the Son of *Raymond* of *Burgundy* being now in the Possession of *Castile* and *Galicia*, the King of *Arragon* fortified some Places which he had taken; and giving over all Hopes of making further Conquests returned home to *Arragon*. Shortly after being joined by some *French* Lords who were not Time enough to accompany *Godfrey* of *Bouloign* in his Expedition to the *Holy Land* he laid Siege to *Saragossa*. The *Moors* attempted twice to relieve it; but being both Times unsuccessful it was after a Siege of eight Months taken in the Year 1114, and became the Capital of his Kingdom of *Arragon*.

1114.

Institution of an Officer called JUSTICIA.

It is by some thought that about this Time the Office of *Justicia* was instituted; a Magistrate whose Business consisted in limiting the regal Power, and defending the Privileges which the People of *Arragon* had reserved to themselves when they submitted to the King of *Navarre*. Others say that this Magistrate was long before President of a Body called *Ricos Hombres* composed of the greatest Men in the Country; who had such a Kind of Power as the Parliament of *England* at this Day have.

War with ARRAGON.

After this a War broke out between *Arragon* and *Castile*; but no Advantage being gained on either Side, the two *Alphonso's* were by the Mediation of Pope *Calisto II.* a near Relation to the King of *Castile* reconciled. After a mutual Reddition of Places the King of *Arragon*, to shew his Sincerity, made up a Match between his Brother of *Castile* and *Berengera* a beautiful Princess Daughter of *Raymond Arnold* Count of *Barcelona*, which

which was celebrated in the Year 1122. Henceforward they united in attacking the *Moors*: And while the *Castilian* plundered all their Country between the *Guadiana* and the *Tagus*, the *Arragonian* penetrated into *Andalusia* and defeated twelve *Moorish* Kings in a pitched Battle.

The Troubles which now arose in *Portugal* put a Stop to this rapid Progress. *Theresa* the Sister of *Portugal*. *Urac* after burying her first Husband *Henry* of *Burgundy*, who had been made upon marrying her Count of *Portugal*, was married privately to *Ferdinand Paex* Count of *Translamara*; who carried it to the Nobility with so high a Hand and used the young Prince *Alphonso* Son of *Henry* so ill, that they united against him and an Army was levied under the young Prince. *Ferdinand* who immediately marched against him was defeated; and being taken Prisoner was after taking an Oath never to return into *Portugal* banished. Hereupon *Theresa* whom her Son had thrown into Prison called her Nephew of *Castile* to her Assistance; and promised him the Kingdom of *Portugal* which her Son had as she said by his Behaviour rendered himself unworthy of. The *Castilian* who marched immediately to her Relief was met on the Frontiers by his Cousin and defeated. He raised fresh Forces; but being again repulsed by the young Count he thought proper to come to an Accommodation with him in the Year 1127.

The three *Alphonso's* being thus at Peace amongst themselves they now flattered themselves with the Thought of driving the *Moors* out of *Spain*; but on the Death of the King of *Arragon* without Issue, who was cut off soon after by a Party of the Enemy as he was going to join his Army, a new Contest arose about his Dominions. Out of his Zeal for the Christian Cause he had given them to the *Knights Templars*: But the King of *Castile* who as well as himself was a Descendant from *Sancho* the Great laid Claim to them.

No Regard was paid either to his or the *Knights Templars* Pretensions; for the *Arragonefe* being determined to have a King of their own chose *Don Ramire* who had been forty Years in a Monastery for their King; and the *Navarrese* proclaimed *Garcias* Son of *Ramire* by the

1122.

Success against
the MOORS.

1127.

Death of AL-
PHONSO of
ARRAGON.NAVARRE
detached from
ARRAGON.

Cid's

Cid's Daughter and Grandson of that *Sancho* who was assassinated by his Brother *Raymond*. As this Division gave *Alphonso* of *Castile* an Advantage over them he took *Saragossa* and many other Places from the former, and obliged both of them to do him Homage. Thinking thereby to make good his Loss *Ramire* attacked *Navarre* under a pretence that it belonged to his Kingdom of *Arragon*; but his Conduct in this War rendered him contemptible. Endeavouring afterwards by cruel Means to recover his Authority he became so odious to his Subjects that they sent him back to his Monastery.

RAYMOND,
Count of
BARCELONA,
succeeds to
ARRAGON.

His only Daughter *Petronilla* having while she was very young married *Raymond Berenger* Count of *Barcelona*, it was agreed by the States of *Arragon* that *Raymond* who was a virtuous Prince should have all the Authority of a King, but that the Title should be reserved for *Alphonso* his Son by the Princess *Petronilla*. Thus *Arragon* was strengthened by its Union with *Barcelona*, whose Counts, for it had long been hereditary, had by Marriages or Conquests made themselves Masters of near all *Catalonia* and good part of *Languedoc* and *Provence*. Besides this *Alphonso* of *Castile* who had married *Raymond's* Sister *Berengera* discharged him of the Homage due to *Castile*, and gave him back *Saragossa* with all beyond the River *Ebre* which had been taken from *Ramire*.

ALPHONSO of
PORTUGAL,
proclaimed
King, 1139.

Alphonso of *Portugal* being proclaimed King in the Year 1139 by his Army, which Title has ever since been continued to his Successors, it gave Umbrage to *Alphonso* of *Castile* who had taken upon himself the Title of Emperor; but being of a brave and generous Disposition he was prevailed on, by the Consideration that this new Dignity would excite *Alphonso* to distinguish himself still more against the *Moors*, to desist from the Purpose of opposing his taking this new Title.

Remarkable
Prudence of
ALPHONSO of
CASTILE.

Alphonso of *Castile* was moreover grown so attentive to the common Interest of Christianity, that he came to a Resolution never to go to War again but with the *Moors*. Instead of falling in, as an ambitious Prince would have done, with a Scheme proposed to him of dividing *Navarre* between *Castile* and *Arragon*, he for the sake of confirming the Union by his Means brought

about

about in *Christian Spain* gave *Uracá* his natural Daughter in Marriage to *Garcías* King of *Navarre*; and although he could not make his Son-in-law and the King of *Arragon* quite good Friends, he prevailed upon them to suspend their private Quarrel and unite in an Expedition he had concerted against the *Moors*.

This which lasted ten Years commenced in the Year 1146. The City of *Cordova* which had long been the Metropolis of *Moorish Spain* soon submitted to *Alphonso*; *Bacca* was taken after a vigorous Defence; and *Almeria*, *Calatrava* and many other Places shared the same Fate. *Tortosa*, *Lerida*, *Fraga* with other Places in *Barcelona* were taken by *Raymond Berenger*; and the King of *Portugal* who was also active on his Side after taking other Places made himself Master of *Lisbon* in the Year 1147. A Stop was for a while put to these Conquests by the Death of *Raymond* and by *Alphonso's* Marriage with *Richilda* of *Poland*; and about the same Time *Garcías* who had also been vigorous against the *Moors* was killed by a Fall from his Horse. His Son *Sancho* who succeeded being very young the King of *Arragon* renewed his Proposal to *Alphonso* of dividing *Navarre*. *Alphonso* was averse to it as the Event plainly shewed; yet to avoid a Rupture at this Time with *Arragon* he by a Treaty made at *Tudelin* consented thereto.

Expedition
against the
MOORS,
1146.

LISBON taken
from the
MOORS,
1147.

Lewis the Young King of *France*, who had married *Constance* Daughter of *Alphonso* by *Berengera*, about this Time made a Visit to his Father-in-law in *Spain*. He was magnificently received by the Emperor at *Toledo*, and the Kings of *Arragon* and *Navarre* together with *Alphonso's* two Sons, the eldest of which had since his Father's taking the Title of Emperor been called King of *Castile*, repaired thither to pay their Compliments to him. At this Interview *Sancho's* Behaviour so recommended him that the *French* King, who had always been a faithful Ally of his Father's, assured him of his Friendship; and the *Castilian* promised him his Daughter *Beatrix* in Marriage. As soon as *Lewis* was returned home the *Arragonian*, who persisted in his Design against *Navarre*, for the sake of hastening the Execution of the Treaty of *Tudelin* proposed a Match between the Infant of *Arragon* and a Daughter of *Alphonso's* by *Richilda*. The

LEWIS of
FRANCE
comes to
TOLEDO.

Castilian

Castilian accepted of this Proposal ; but a new Expedition which he shortly after engaged in against the *Moors* furnished him with a plausible Pretence for deferring the Execution of the Treaty. *Alphonso* marched against the *Moors* and had gained some Advantages over them in *Andalusia* ; when not being able to bear the excessive Heat of the Season he left the Command to *Sancho* his eldest Son, and was returning to *Castile* for the Benefit of the Air. Before he could reach *Castile* a Fever put an End both to his Life and Reign in the Year 1157. This Monarch fell also into the Mistake of dividing his Dominions. *Sancho* had *Castile*, and *Ferdinand* his second Son *Leon* together with *Gallicia* and *Oviedo*.

Death of
ALPHONSO.

SANCHO III.
1157.

Sancho III. endeared himself to the People as much as his short Reign would admit of ; for he reigned only one Year. *Alphonso* his Son by *Blanche* of *Navarre* succeeded him.

ALPHONSO
IX.
1158.

Alphonso IX. being at his Father's Death but four Years of Age the Kingdom of *Castile* was during his Minority greatly disturbed by Factions at home ; and at the same Time attacked by *Ferdinand* of *Leon* and *Sancho* of *Navarre*. After he came of Age it cost him him some Time to extricate himself from these Difficulties : But the three Princes were at last reconciled, and having agreed how their Conquests should be divided they united in attacking the *Moors*. This War was at first attended with divers Losses : But these were abundantly made amends for by the Battle of *Losa* in the Year 1210. The Success of this Battle, in which 200,000 Men were left on the Field, being in a great Measure owing to the Intrepidity of the King of *Navarre*, who first broke the Chain with which the *Moors*

Battle of
LOSA.
1210.

An Addition to
the Arms of
NAVARRE.

had environed their Army, his Successors have ever since borne in their Arms a Chain with an *Emerald* in the Middle. *Alphonso* died in the Year 1214 leaving many Children by *Eleanor* Daughter of *Henry* of *England* : Of which the most remarkable were *Henry* his Successor ; *Blanche* married to *Lewis* VIII. of *France* ; *Berengera* married to *Alphonso* the Son of *Ferdinand* of *Leon* who after her Brother's Death enjoyed the Crown of *Castile* ; and *Uraca* Wife to *Alphonso* II. of *Portugal*.

As *Henry* the Successor of *Alphonso* was only eleven **HENRY**.
 Years old his Mother had the Administration of Affairs; 1214.
 but on her dying within a few Months it came into the
 Hands of *Berengera* his Sister who had been divorced
 from *Alphonso* of *Leon*. *Henry* died in the fourth Year *Is killed by the*
 of his Reign of a Hurt received by the falling of a Tyle *Fall of a Tyle*.
 on his Head. The *Castilians* apprehending that *Alphonso*
 would seize the Crown concealed the Death of their
 King, and requested that his Son *Ferdinand* might come
 to assist his Mother in the Regency; which being con-
 sented to she immediately resigned the whole Power in
 his Favour and he was declared King.

Alphonso resented this and marched against the *Casti-* **FERDINAND**
lians; but finding them ready to oppose him he accom- II.
 modated the Affair with his Son. At his Death in the 1217.
 Year 1230 *Leon* was reunited with *Castile* under *Ferdinand*. **LEON and**
 The Heads of the House of *Lara*, who during the Re- **CASTILE**
 gency of his Mother had caused great Disturbances, *reunited*.
 persisting in their factious Designs they were justly ba-
 nished by this Prince. Turning his Arms afterwards *His Progress*
 against the *Moors* he ruined all their Country as far as *in MOORISH*
Granada and *Valencia*, and forced both these Kingdoms **SPAIN**.
 to buy Peace. In the Year 1236 he conquered the
 Kingdom of *Cordova* together with *Merida* and other
 Places. *Murice* submitted to him in the Year 1240,
Jaen in the Year 1243, and *Seville* with the greatest
 Part of *Andalusia* in the Year 1248. While he was
 thus pushing his Success against the *Moors* Death put
 an End to his Hopes of driving them quite out of *Spain*
 in the 35th Year of his Reign.

The King of *Arragon* took also in this Reign from *Success of*
 the Infidels the Islands of *Majorca* and *Minorca*, and **ARRAGON**
 in the Year 1238 made himself Master of the City and *against the*
 Kingdom of *Valencia*. **MOORS.**

Alphonso surnamed the *Wise* who succeeded his Father **ALPHONSO**
 was universally esteemed for his Learning and particu- X.
 larly for his Skill in Astronomy. The *Ptolemaic System* 1252.
 which at that Time prevailed seemed to him so confused, *Is well skilled*
 that he said; "If he had been of God's Council when he *in ASTRO-*
 "made the World he could have given him good Ad- **NOMY.**
 "vice." An irreverent Expression! but not so impious
 perhaps as it is commonly imagined; if he meant no
 more

more than that such a complex unintelligible System could not be the Production of Omniscience. The Wisdom of this Prince did not however appear in governing; for having exhausted the royal Treasure he raised the Value of the Coin and fixed the *Indulto* on the Merchants Goods so high that all Trade was ruined. By these and other Oppressions he became so odious to his Subjects that he durst not leave *Spain* to go and support his Title to the Imperial Dignity, which was conferred on him by some of the German Electors, against *Richard Duke of Cornwall*.

Descent of the
King of
MOROCCO.
1275.

In the Year 1275 *Jacob aben Joseph* King of *Morocco* taking the Advantage of this Situation of Things made a Descent upon *Spain*. The *Christians* were defeated in one Battle with the Loss of 4000 Men and their General; which so discouraged them that in a second Engagement as soon as the Action was commenced they scandalously betook themselves to Flight. Their Commander the Archbishop of *Toledo* being taken by the *Infidels* they barbarously put him to Death in cold Blood.

A Rebellion
headed by his
Son SANCHE.

1284.

About the same Time *Sancho* the second Son of *Alphonso*, his elder Son *Ferdinand* being dead, rebelled against him, and had so strong a Party amongst the Nobility that he was crowned during his Father's Life; and neither the Curses of *Alphonso* nor the Excommunication of the Pope were sufficient to make him quit the Throne. *Alphonso* not being able long to bear the Mortification of seeing himself despised and his Son reign died in the Year 1284. His Children by a Daughter of *James* of *Arragon* were First *Ferdinand* surnamed *La Cerda*, that is the *Hairy*, who died in his Life-time, from whom sprang an illustrious House of that Name of which the Duke de *Medina Celi* is a Branch. Secondly *Sancho*; Thirdly *John*, from whom by his second Wife *Mary Dias de Haro* are descended several noble Families at this Time existing: And lastly *Peter* whose Sons died without Issue. He left besides these two natural Children, a Son named *Alphonso* and *Beatrice* Wife of *Alphonso III.* of *Portugal*.

SANCHE IV.

Notwithstanding that his elder Brother *Ferdinand* left two Sons *Alphonso* and *Ferdinand*, to whom their Grandfather *Alphonso X.* had devised the Crown, *Sancho* kept Possession

Possession of it : and hoping thereby to bring over his Father's Friends stifled his Resentment for their Attachment to him. His two Infant Nephews instead of finding Protection from the King of *Arragon* to whom they fled were at first thrown into Prison : But being afterwards by the Intercession of *Philip* of *France* their Mother's Brother set at Liberty, the eldest was proclaimed King of *Castile*. This occasioned a War between *Sancho* and *Alphonso* of *Arragon* ; but it never came to a decisive Action : And upon the Death of this last *James* his Brother and Successor abandoned the Interest of the young Princes and made Peace with *Sancho*. Soon after *John* the Brother of *Sancho*, who had fled to *Portugal* and afterwards to *Morecco*, returned with a powerful Army and laid Siege to *Tariff* ; where *Alphonso Peres des Gusman* was Governor. This great Man had an only Son taken Prisoner by the Enemy ; yet such was his Loyalty that rather than give up the Place he suffered his Son to be put to the most cruel Death. The Reign of *Sancho* besides the three before his Father's Death lasted eleven Years. He died in the Year 1295 : Leaving by *Mary* of the House of *Molina* his Marriage with whom had been declared unlawful *Ferdinand* his Successor ; *Peter* afterwards Governor to *Alphonso XI.* his Grandson ; *Elizabeth* first married to *James II.* of *Arragon*, and afterwards being divorced from *James* on the Account of Proximity of Blood to *John* Duke of *Britany* ; and *Beatrix* Wife to *Alphonso IV.* of *Portugal*. His natural Daughter *Violante* married *Don Fernando Ruis de Castro* ; and was Grandmother to *Jane de Castro* Queen of *Castile* and *Agnes de Castro* Queen of *Portugal*.

His Reign is greatly disturbed.

As *Ferdinand III.* was by some looked upon as illegitimate his Title was disputed by *John* his Uncle whom the King of *Portugal* assisted, and by *Alphonso de la Cerda* whose Cause was espoused by *Arragon*. These two Princes agreed to unite their Forces, and to divide the Dominions of *Ferdinand* which they seemed confident of conquering betwixt them : But they found themselves much mistaken, for *Ferdinand* being well supported by the *Cortez* entirely frustrated their Attempts. In the Year 1298 he united himself strongly with *Por-*

FERDINAND III.

1295.

His Right to the Crown is disputed.

tugal

tugal by marrying *Constance* the Daughter of *Denis*, and by giving his Sister *Blanche* to *Alphonso* the Brother of *Constance*: And the Princes *De la Cerda* being no longer supported by the King of *Arragon* went into *France*. Fresh Disturbances being shortly after stirred up by some Princes of the Blood, the Princes *De la Cerda* were invited back from *France*, and the King of *Arragon* once more espoused their Interest: But a Treaty being soon after brought about by the Mediation of *Denis*, *Alphonso de la Cerda* was delivered up as a Victim to *Ferdinand*.

Institution of a
JUBILEE.
1300.

The Year 1300 was famous for the Institution of a Jubilee in *Spain* by Pope *Boniface*, who ordered it to be celebrated once in a Century. This Term was reduced by *Clement VI.* to sixty; by *Urban VI.* to thirty; and by *Sextus V.* to twenty-five Years. About the same Time *Bilboa* in *Biscay* was built.

Order of
KNIGHTS
TEMPLARS
ruined.

The Order of *Knights Templars* being ruined about the Year 1309 *Ferdinand* became Master of thirty Towns which they possessed in his Dominions. He afterwards attacked the *Moors*, and having taken *Gibraltar*, *Quehada* and *Bedmar* extended his Conquests as far as *Martos*. He at this Place condemned upon very slight Evidence two Brothers to Death for the Murder of *Gomez* of *Benevida* who had been assassinated at *Palencia*; nor could their Protestations of Innocence or the Intreaties of their Friends move him to alter his Sentence. As they were going to suffer they appealed to GOD for their Innocence; and summoned the King to appear at the Bar of Heaven to answer for this Injustice within thirty Days. The King laughed at this: But he soon fell sick; and though he was on the 30th Day much better than he had been for some Days, he was that Day found dead in his Bed whither he had retired to repose himself. This happened in the seventeenth Year of his Reign. He left a Son named *Alphonso* and a Daughter married to *Alphonso IV.* of *Arragon*.

FERDINAND
dies in an un-
common Man-
ner.

ALPHONSO
XI.

1312.

As *Alphonso XI.* afterwards surnamed the *Just* was at his Father's Death but little more than a Year old, his Mother *Constance*, his Grandmother *Mary* of *Molina*, his Uncle *Peter* and *John* his great Uncle, were equally ambitious of getting the Regency into their

their Hands: But it was in the Year 1314 resolved by the States that the supreme Power should be in a Council of Regency; that the Princes *Peter* and *John* should have the joint Command of the Army; and that *Constance* should have the Education of the Infant King. *Peter* having had the good Fortune to defeat a considerable Body of the *Moors*, *John* that he might also signalize himself marched with the Forces under his Command to join him, and they attempted together the Siege of *Granada*. Failing in this the *Moors* fell upon them in their Retreat and cut off the two Princes with great Part of their Army. Upon the Death of these Princes things were thrown into such Confusion by the Divisions amongst the Nobility, that it was thought proper for the King although scarce fifteen Years of Age to take the Government into his own Hands. As *Don John Manuel* and *Don John* of *Biscay* continued in Arms against him, *Alphonso* for the sake of setting these two at Variance married the Daughter of the former. Having by this Means an Opportunity of putting the latter to Death he quickly divorced *Don Manuel's* Daughter, and married the Princess *Mary* of *Portugal*. *Don Manuel* enraged hereat went over to the *Moors*, and endeavoured to bring the King of *Arragon* into an Alliance against *Castile*: But *Alphonso* took Care to prevent it by marrying his Sister *Eleanor* to this Prince. Shortly after the Kings of *Castile*, *Arragon* and *Portugal* united in attacking the *Moors*; and having taken some Towns obliged the King of *Granada* to go over into *Africa* for Succours.

Defeat and
Death of the
Princes
PETER and
JOHN.

Alphonso of *Lacerda* having lost all Hopes of obtaining the Crown he about this Time submitted to the reigning Prince; who thereupon assigned certain Lands to him for his Support.

ALPHONSO
of LACERDA
is reconciled to
the King.

The King of *Granada* being returned with a large Army commanded by *Abomelic* Son of the King of *Morocco*, he retook *Gibraltar*. *Alphonso* was endeavouring to put a stop to the Progress of the *Moors*: But a Rebellion in *Biscay* stirred up by the *Arragoneses* obliged him to clap up a Truce with them. Turning now all his Forces against his rebellious Subjects he soon reduced them to Obedience, and caused *Don John de Haro*

Rebellion in
BISCAY.

their Chief to be beheaded. This necessary Example of Severity struck such Terror into *Don Manuel* and the rest, that they were glad to submit to his Mercy.

Success of AL-
PHONSO
against AR-
RAGON and
NAVARRE.
He attacks the
MOORS.

Castile being attacked in the Year 1335 by the Kings of *Arragon* and *Navarre*, they were both defeated by *Alphonso*; and he had not long after the same good Success against the *Portuguese* Fleet.

Battle of
TARIFF,
1340.

The *Christian* Princes being again reconciled *Alphonso* gained a compleat Victory over the *Moors*; their General *Abomelic* with 10,000 Men being slain. His Father piqued at this Misfortune embarked with the largest Army that ever came out of *Africa*: And after defeating the *Spanish* Admiral with great Loss laid Siege to *Tariff*. The *Infidels*, though they were vastly superior in Number, being in the Year 1340 attacked by the united Forces of the *Christians* they were repulsed with great Slaughter. Two Sons of the King of *Morocco* fell in this Battle, and *Abobamar* another Son was made Prisoner; and the two *Moorish* Kings with much ado saved themselves by Flight. This Success was followed with the taking of many Towns; and gave the *Christians* an Opportunity of putting their Marine into such a Condition that they soon became Masters of the Sea.

A severe
PLAGUE.

In the Year 1348 a Plague from the *Levant* after making great Havock in *Italy* carried off vast Numbers in *Spain*. In the following Year it seized *Alphonso* while he was before *Gibraltar*, and put an End to his Reign of thirty-eight Years. He was succeeded by his Son *Peter*.

PETER the
Cruel,
1350.

Peter surnamed the *Cruel* united *Biscay* to the Kingdom of *Castile*. While a Treaty of Marriage was on Foot between this Prince and *Blanche* a virtuous and beautiful Lady Daughter of the Duke of *Bourbon*, *Henry* a natural Son of the late King raised a Rebellion in *Asturia*. *Peter* going in Person to suppress it unhappily cast his Eyes on *Mary* of *Padilla*; with whom he was so enamoured that he privately married her. He nevertheless married *Blanche* with great Ceremony; but soon left her. Being afterwards charmed with *Jane de Castro* *Peter* married her also; but he sent her away the Morning after Consummation. Her Brother

He marries
three Wives.

ther *Don Ferdinando de Castro* provoked at this Treatment of his Sister joined with other discontented Lords in taking Arms against *Peter*: And he was forced to shut himself up with his Mother in *Tordesillas*. She made her Peace with the Rebels and went into *Portugal*: where leading a lewd Life she was poisoned. *Peter* was obliged to give up some Favourites, and for his own Safety to consent to all the Demands of the Rebels: Yet getting afterwards some of their Chiefs into his Hands he put them to Death. The *French* in Revenge for the Death of *Blanche* who had been poisoned assisted *Henry* so powerfully, that in the Year 1366 all *Castile* acknowledged him: But Prince *Edward* of *England* coming to the Assistance of *Peter* he was by the Battle of *Nojara*, which was fought in the following Year, restored to the Throne. Instead of making good his Promises to Prince *Edward*, who went home discontented, his only Care was to wreak his Malice on the Heads of the Malecontents. At Length his Subjects in general being tired out with his unheard of Cruelty abandoned him; and joined with *Henry* who was again supplied with Troops and Money from *France*. Hereupon *Peter* retired to *Montiel*; but being delivered up he was put to Death by the Order of *Henry* in the Year 1369. His two Daughters *Constance* and *Elizabeth* were married to the Dukes of *Lancaster* and *York* both Sons of *Edward III.* of *England*.

1366.

Is deposed and put to Death.

Henry II. soon made himself Master of *Carmona* where *Peter* had deposited his Sons and Treasure, and threw the young Princes into a Prison in which they shortly after died. His illegitimate Birth however together with his manner of getting the Crown prevented his enjoying it peaceably. The Kings of *Arragon* and *Navarre* endeavoured to get what lay convenient for them; the King of *Portugal* in Right of his Grandmother *Beatrix* Daughter of *Sancho* laid Claim to the Whole; and *John* Duke of *Lancaster* Husband of *Constance* did the same: But as the *English* were in Possession of *Guienne* *Henry* was more apprehensive from this last who had already taken the Arms of *Castile*. *Henry* had by *Jane* great Grand-daughter of *Ferdinand II.* *John* his Successor, and a Daughter married to the King of

HENRY II.
the Bastard,
1360.

Navarre. After an uneasy Reign of ten Years he died in the Year 1379.

JOHN,
1379.

Battle of
ALJUBA-
ROTTA,
1384.

John was soon attacked both by the *English* and *Portuguese*; but after a War of some Continuance, in which nothing remarkable happened, it was in the Year 1382 agreed that *Beatrix* Heiress of *Portugal* should marry *Ferdinand* Infant of *Castile*. Having shortly after lost *Eleonor* his Wife *John* married this Princess himself: But the *Portuguese* resolved that a *Castilian* should never reign over them; and upon the Death of their King which happened not long after proclaimed *John* his natural Son. The Foundation of a bloody War being hereby laid, the *Portuguese* obtained a signal Victory over a superiour Army of *Castilians* near *Aljubarrotta* in the Year 1384. Being much weakened by this Battle, and finding that *John* of *Lancaster* was coming to the Assistance of the *Portuguese* with an *English* Army, the *Castilian* was glad to come to an Accommodation with *John* of *Portugal*; and to satisfy the Duke of *Lancaster's* Pretensions to his *Crown* he consented that his eldest Son should marry the Daughter of this Prince. He was killed by a Fall from his Horse in the Year 1390.

HENRY III.
1390.

During the Minority of *Henry III.* his Son the Kingdom suffered a good deal by the Factions of the Nobility. Nothing remarkable happened in his Time. He died in the Year 1407, leaving *John* his Son who was only two Years of Age under the Care of the Queen and his Uncle *Ferdinand*. The States of *Castile* offered the Crown to *Ferdinand*; but he would not consent to take it from his Nephew. Providence did not suffer this Generosity to go unrewarded; for *Ferdinand* was afterwards advanced both to this Throne and that of *Arragon*.

JOHN II.
1407.

John II. having been educated by his Mother with too much Fondness he gave himself over to his Pleasures; and committed the whole Care of Governing to his Favourite *Alvar de Luna*. The Insolence and Cruelty of this Minister rendred him universally odious; but he was for some Time protected by his Master from the Resentment of the People which he had justly drawn upon himself. It came at last to an open Rebellion; and such was the Steadiness and Resolution of the Nobility that *John* was, though vastly against his Inclination,

clination, obliged for his own Safety to give him up in the Year 1453. He died in the following Year.

About the Year 1420 *Jane* Queen of *Naples* having *War with* no Children adopted *Alphonso* King of *Arragon*. Upon ^{FRANCE} a Quarrel which happened afterwards she set him aside, ^{concerning} and appointed *Lewis* Duke of *Anjou* her Successor. A ^{NAPLES.} War breaking out on this Account between *France* and *Arragon*, *Alphonso* subdued the Kingdom of *Naples* and gave it to *Ferdinand* his natural Son.

Henry IV. who succeeded *John* his Father was the ^{HENRY IV.} Disgrace of *Castile*. Having to take off the Suspicion ^{1454.} of his own Impotency hired *Bertrand de la Ceuva* to lie with the Queen, he for this infamous Service made him Count *de Ledesma*; and declared *Jane* the Issue of the adulterous Conversation Heiress of *Castile*. The *Domestick Castilians* enraged hereat exposed him in Effigy on the *Troubles.* publick Stage; and proclaimed his Brother *Alphonso*. Hence arose a Civil Commotion, which after several Battles ended in the Year 1468 in the Death of *Alphonso*. About this Time *Ferdinand* Heir apparent of *Arragon* married *Isabella* Sister of *Henry*; upon whom to satisfy the People *Henry* settled the Succession. He would afterwards have altered this in favour of *Jane*, who was promised in Marriage to *Charles* Duke of *Aquitain* Brother to *Lewis XI.* of *France*; but he died in the Year 1472 before he had accomplished this Design.

In the Beginning of this Reign *Alphonso* of *Portugal*, ^{FERDINAND} under the Pretence of being engaged to marry *Jane* and *ISA-* *Henry's* supposititious Daughter, attacked *Castile* and ^{BELLA,} caused her to be proclaimed Queen: But this Prince ^{1472.} was defeated, and to put an End to all Disturbances on her Account *Jane* was shut up in a Nunnery. *Ferdinand* had some Disputes with the States of *Castile* about settling the Extent of the Regal Authority. These were however amicably ended, and the *Spanish* Monarchy was by him raised to such a Pitch that it has ever since been the Terror and Envy of its Neighbours.

In the Year 1478 he established the Court of Inquisition, which was at first set up for punishing the *Moors* ^{The Inquisition} and *Jews*: But under the Pretence of preventing Dis- ^{established in} ^{SPAIN,} ^{1478.} orders from a Diversity of Opinions in religious Mat- ^{ters}

ters it has been since turned against the *Christians*. The Proceeding of this Court are very cruel, and as it is calculated only to make Men Hypocrites, but can never promote the Interest of true Religion, it has been constantly cried out against by all *Protestants*, and has never been introduced into many *Catholick* Countries.

ARRAGON
annexed to
CASTILE,

The Strength of *Ferdinand* being greatly increased by his Accession on the Death of his Father to *Arragon*, he commenced in the Year 1481 a War against the *Infidels*. The *Christians* were in the Beginning thereof worsted near *Malaga*: But having great Success afterwards they in the Year 1492 laid Siege to *Granada*. *Boabdil* its King was obliged after a long Siege to surrender; and thus an End was entirely put to the *Moorish* Power in *Spain* which had continued there seven hundred Years. To take away all Possibility of its Re-establishment *Ferdinand* banished the *Moors* and *Jews* to the Number of 170,000 Families. *Spain* was however hereby greatly impoverished; and to this it is owing that great part of it has ever since been uninhabited and uncultivated. He after this conquered *Mazalquivir*, *Oran* and some other Places on the Coast of *Africa*. This vast Success of *Ferdinand* may be a good deal imputed to his having brought the *Grandeess* under an entire Submission to him, and to his having taken upon himself the Dignity of Grand Master of all the Orders of Knighthood; for some Grand Masters had heretofore made themselves so formidable as to be able to oppose the Designs of his Predecessors.

The MOORISH
Power in
SPAIN quite
ruined, 1492.

AMERICA
discovered,
1494.

About the Year 1494 *Christopher Columbus* by Birth a *Genoese* made the Discovery of *America*. His Proposal was rejected with Scorn by the *English* and *Portuguese* to whom he first applied; and it cost him seven Years Solicitation at *Castile* before he could obtain seventeen thousand Ducats to fit out three small Ships for this Purpose. At so trifling an Expence did the *Spaniards* first get Footing in *America*. It would take up too much Time to shew with what Ease they made vast Conquests! what immense Riches they have from thence drawn! and how cruelly they have in Return treated the poor *Natives*!

Shortly

Shortly after a War broke out between *France* and *War with Spain* of which all *Europe* felt the Effects. *Charles VIII.* FRANCE. of *France* having a Mind to attempt the Conquest of *Naples*, *Ferdinand* considered that this would be a vast Acquisition of Power to a Monarch, who was by the Marriages of his Daughters already in Alliance with *England*, *Portugal* and the *Netherlands*; and notwithstanding that the *French* King had lately for the sake of keeping him quiet given him the *Rouffillon*, *Ferdinand* determined to oppose it. As he could not prevail on *Charles* to desist from this Enterprize he entered into an Alliance with the Pope, the *Emperor*, the Republick of *Venice* and the Duke of *Milan* against *France*; and sent an Army under *Gonsalva Ferdinand* of *Cordova* afterwards called the *Great Captain* to the Assistance of the *Neapolitans*: Who not only drove the *French* out of *Italy* but made an Irruption into *Languedoc*.

About the Year 1500 *Lewis XII.* of *France* and FERDINAND. *Ferdinand*, under the Pretence of its being useful in their *becomes Master Wars* with the *Turks*, agreed to divide *Naples* betwixt of NAPLES. them: But Disputes arising about settling their Shares 1500. it came to a Rupture; and the *French* being twice defeated by *Gonsalva* were obliged to abandon the whole. *Gonsalva* was ill requited for these good Services, for *Ferdinand*, surmising that he would deliver *Naples* to *Philip* of *Austria* who had married the Daughter of *Ferdinand*, under the Pretence of rewarding him decoyed *Gonsalva* *Spain* and took away his Command.

The Death of *Isabella* during these Transactions laid PHILIP. the Foundation of a further Misunderstanding between reigns in *Ferdinand* and *Philip* his Son-in-Law. This last came CASTILE. into *Spain* in the Year 1506 and made himself Master of *Castile*, which he claimed in Right of *Jane* his Wife: But dying shortly after the weak Administration of his Wife caused such Disorders, that notwithstanding the Claim put in by the *Emperor Maximilian* in the Name of *Charles* his Grandson the Crown of *Castile* was settled during his Life upon *Ferdinand*.

An Alliance was entered into about the Year 1510 NAVARRE. between the Pope, *France*, *Spain* and the *Empire* against conquered by FERDINAND. *Venice*; but the Pope and *Ferdinand* apprehending that

France already in Possession of the *Milaneſe* would become too powerful in *Italy* reſolved afterwards to ſupport the *Venetians*. A War being hereupon commenced with *France* *John* King of *Navarre*, who aſſiſted the *French*, was excommunicated by the *Pope*, and Leave was given for any Power to ſeize his Kingdom. This *Ferdinand* did; and the *French* ſo far from being able to carry their Deſigns upon *Venice* into Execution, could not recover *Navarre* for their Ally.

TRIPOLI
taken by the
SPANIARDS.

About the ſame Time the *Spaniards* took *Bugie* and *Tripoli* in *Africa*; but they were defeated in a naval Engagement near the Iſland of *Gerbi*. *Ferdinand*, who is allowed by all to have been the moſt politick Prince of his Time, after this glorious Reign of forty-four Years died in the Year 1516. He never had any Sons. One of his Daughters was married to *Philip* Archduke of *Auſtria*; the other into the Houſe of *Liſbon*. This Prince for his Exploits againſt the *Infidels* was ſurnamed by the *Pope* the * *Catholick*; and his Succeſſors have been ever ſince diſtinguiſhed by the ſame Title.

CHARLES,
1516.

Charles the Son of *Philip* of *Auſtria*, *Jane* his Mother being ſtill incapable of governing, was on the Death of *Ferdinand* put into Poſſeſſion of the whole *Spaniſh* Monarchy. Being beſides Heir to the *Auſtrian* Dominions and of a warlike Diſpoſition he became more powerful than any Prince ſince *Charlemain* had been. In the beginning of his Reign he put a Stop to the Attempt made by *John* for recovering the Kingdom of *Navarre*.

War with
FRANCE.

Francis of *France* jealous of this Prince's Power, who by poſſeſſing the *Netherlands* as well as *Spain* almoſt ſurrounded him, left no Stone unturned to prevent the Imperial Dignity from falling upon him. As he could not do this, and apprehended from the vaſt Deſigns which *Charles* was continually forming that he aimed at nothing leſs than univerſal Monarchy, he thought it beſt to come to an open Rupture with him; and joining his Troops with thoſe of *Robert de la Mark* Baron of *Sedan*, who was alſo diſguſted with the Emperor, they attacked him in the *Netherlands*. Upon this,

* 'Tis very probable, that the ſetting up of the *Inquiſition* helped a good deal to procure him this Title.

Charles

Charles made an Irruption into *Milan*; and having obtained a Victory over the *French* near *Bicoca* easily made himself Master of this Dutchy. *Francis* went into *Italy* with all his Forces to recover the *Milanese*; but after taking *Milan* his Army was entirely routed by the *Imperialists* before *Pavia*; and being himself made Prisoner he was carried into *Spain*. The Troops of *Charles* were at the same time successful in *Flanders* against the united Forces of *France*, *Robert* Baron of *Sedan*, and *Charles* Duke of *Guelderland* who had entered into an Alliance with these. Notwithstanding *Charles* was by some advised that the releasing of the *French* King without Ransom would lay him under a lasting Obligation, he listened to others who persuaded him to make all the Advantage he could of this Accident. The Terms he proposed were very disagreeable to the *French*; yet fearing that their King, whose long Confinement and Uneasiness had thrown him into a dangerous Distemper, should die a Prisoner they at last consented to them.

The Emperor's Acquisition of the *Milanese* gave such Umbrage to the *Italian* Princes, that at the Instigation of the Pope a large Army was set on foot to preserve the Liberty of *Italy*. His Generals in Revenge marched directly to *Rome*; and after plundering the City, which was taken by Surprise, laid Siege to the Castle of *St. Angelo* where Pope *Clement VII.* had shut himself up. *Charles*, although this was done by his own Troops, did not fail to cause publick Prayers to be daily made for his Deliverance. Provisions at last failing the Pope was forced to surrender in the Year 1527, and to renounce the Alliance he had entered into.

Francis for the sake of obtaining his Liberty had agreed to give up to the Emperor the Dutchy of *Burgundy* with the Provinces of *Flanders* and *Artois*; to renounce all Pretensions to the Kingdom of *Naples* and Dutchy of *Milan*; and to marry his Sister: But being returned into *France* he declared that he did not look upon himself to be bound by a Treaty extorted from him while he was in Prison. Having soon after entered into an Alliance with *England*, *Venice*, *Switzerland* and the Town of *Florence* he sent an Army under the Baron de *Lautrec*

Lautrec into Italy. This Army made at first some Progress; but being ruined before *Naples Francis* was glad to comply by the Treaty of *Cambray* with the Terms he had before agreed to.

Treaty of
CAMBRAY.

CHARLES is
crowned by
the POPE,
1530.

In the Year 1530 *Charles* was crowned as Emperor by the Pope; and it was agreed that the Town of *Florence* should be erected into a Dutchy for *Alexander de Medicis* who had married *Margaret Charles's* natural Daughter. About the same Time the Provinces of *Utrecht* and *Overyssell* submitted to the Emperor, as *Guelderland*, *Zutphen* and *Groninguen* had before done.

Expedition
into AFRICA,
1535.

In the Year 1535 *Charles* went over into *Africa*, and took *Tunis* and *Goulett*. The former he restored to *Muly Hassen* its King whom *Haradin Barberossa* had deposed; the latter a strong Place commanding the Harbour of *Tunis* he put a Garrison into.

War with
FRANCE,
1537.

A new War was kindled by *Francis* in the Year 1537, who could not stomach the Cessions he had made. Thinking thereby to open a Way to *Milan* he seized the Dominions of the Duke of *Savoy*; but he was forced to retire on the Approach of *Charles*. The French having likewise sustained great Losses in *Flanders* a Truce of ten Years was concluded at *Nice* by the Mediation of Pope *Paul III.* and the two Princes at an Interview on this Occasion gave each other such strong Proofs of being heartily reconciled, that an Insurrection happening soon after at *Ghent Charles* ventured to go through *France* in his Way to the *Low Countries*.

Truce for ten
Years.

Hostilities re-
commenced,
1541.

In the Year 1541 this Truce was justly broke by *Francis*; because his Ambassadors in passing through the *Milanese* in their Way to *Turky* were assassinated by order of the Governor. The Duke of *Cleves* attacked *Brabant*; *Luxemburg* and some other Places were taken by the Duke of *Orleans*; the *Dauphin* penetrated into the *Roussillon*; and the famous Corsair *Barberossa* at the same Time ravaged the Coast of *Calabria*. Hereupon *Charles* finding himself attacked on all Sides sacrificed the Interest of *Catherine* his Aunt to his own; and concluded an Alliance with *Henry VIII.* of *England*. It being agreed between them that *Henry* should penetrate into *France* through *Picardy* while *Charles* did
the

the same through *Champaigne*, this last took the Field CHARLES *penetrates into* with fifty-thousand Men; and having defeated the Duke *the Heart of* of *Cleves* soon retook *Luxemburg* and some other Towns. FRANCE. He next entered *Champaigne* by forcing the Posts of *Lagni* and *St. Dizier*: Nor did the *French King*, who was encamped on the other Side of the *Marne*, dare to give him Battle. Instead thereof he after ruining the Country, that the Progress of *Charles* might be stopped as much as possible, made the best of his Way to *Paris*, to put a Stop to the Consternation which this City was thrown into on account of the near Approach of the Emperor's Army. If *Henry* had according to the Agreement now advanced to meet him, they might easily have subdued all *France*; but he busied himself with the Sieges of *Bouloign* and *Montrueil*; and sent word he would come no farther till he was Master of these Places. Upon this *Charles* finding himself unsupported by his Ally, and reflecting that a long War with *France* would retard the Execution of a Scheme he had laid for oppressing the *Protestants* in *Germany*, thought proper to conclude a Peace at *Crepi* in the Year 1544.

Peace of
CREPI, 1544.

Being now at Peace with *France* he very easily ruined the allied Forces of the *Protestants* in *Germany*; *Civil War in* GERMANY. and in the Year 1547 made their Chiefs the Elector of *Saxony* and Landgrave of *Hesse* Prisoners. To these Misfortunes of the *Protestants* the Divisions amongst the Heads of their Party, which were with great Art and Industry increased by the Emissaries of *Charles* and the *Pope*, contributed a good deal: And the Deaths of *Francis I.* and *Henry VIII.* which happened at this Time, who would undoubtedly have opposed the further Extension of his Power in *Germany*, were also very fortunate Events for the Emperor. He did not however long enjoy the Fruit of this Success; for many were disgusted at his treating the Vanquished too rigorously and using the Princes his Prisoners ill. Having moreover exasperated *Maurice* of *Saxony*, by paying no Regard to the safe Conduct he had granted his Father-in-Law who went to treat with *Charles*, that Prince who was before spirited up to act against his Kinsman the Elector of *Saxony* fell upon him so unexpectedly, that he was forced to save himself by flying in the Night

Treaty of
PASSAU.

Night to *Inspruck*. Soon after a Treaty for securing the Protestant Religion was concluded at *Passau*.

HESDIN and
TEROUEENNE
levelled with
the Ground.

During this Confusion in the Empire *Henry II.* of *France* had taken *Metz*, *Toul* and *Verdun*. *Charles* attempted to retake the former; but was repulsed with Loss. He in Revenge rased *Hesdin* and *Terouenne* to the Ground and put the Garrisons of both to the Sword.

CHARLES
resigns the Go-
vernment,
1556.

Being quite worn out with the Fatigues of a long and active Reign *Charles* resigned the Throne in the Year 1556 to his Son *Philip*; and reserving only 100,000 Ducats a Year for his Subsistence retired into a Monastery where he died about two Years after. His Will being penned in very free Terms gave so great Offence to the Inquisition, that if his Confessor and some others his Companions in the Monastery had not solicited strongly it would have been burnt as heretical.

PHILIP II.
1558.

In the Reign of *Philip II.* the Grandeur of the *Spanish* Monarchy which his Father and Grandfather had carried to so great a Height began to decline. This was in some measure owing to *Charles's* giving all of the *Austrian* Succession in *Germany* to his Brother *Ferdinand*, and causing him to be elected King of the *Romans*. He flattered himself indeed that *Ferdinand* would return the Favour to his Son *Philip*; but *Ferdinand* who had a Son of his own was quite averse to this: And if he had been willing the *Germans* were too sensible of the sad Effects of *Spanish* Councils in the *Empire* to consent to it.

His Impru-
dence with
Regard to the
NETHER-
LANDS.

The Power of *Spain* was still more hurt by the imprudent Management of *Philip* in the *Low Countries*. Instead of going in Person to put a Stop to the Disturbances there, as his Father formerly had done only upon a slight Insurrection in *Ghent*, he sent amongst the *Flemmings* who had been always used to mild Governors the cruel Duke *d'Aylva*. He treated all of them as well those who had no hand in pulling down the Images as the Guilty with such Rigour, that it gave Rise to the following burlesque Saying of a *Spanish* Officer: *Hæretici fraxerunt Tempia, boni nihil faxerunt contra ergo omnes debent patibulare*: That is, *The Hereticks have plundered the Churches, the Catholicks did nothing to hinder it therefore all ought to suffer*. Besides this

Philip

Philip instead of adapting the Manners of the *Flemmings* as *Charles* had done and spending some Time amongst them lived altogether in *Spain*; and cared for nothing but to make himself as absolute as possible in the *Low Countries*. On the other hand the *Flemmings*, who had the utmost Hatred to the Pride of the *Spaniards* and were tenacious of their Liberties, could not bear to be used like a conquered People. When *Philip* therefore would have put *Spanish* Garrisons into their Towns; and for the sake of their admitting this quietly would have given the Command thereof to the Prince of *Orange* and Count *Egmont*, they told him plainly, that all the brave Stands they had made against the Power of *France* availed them but little if they must at last be enslaved by another foreign Power.

Some neighbouring Powers and especially the *English*, *The FLEM-* pleased with this Occasion of lessening the overgrown *MINGS are* Power and Riches of *Spain*, supported the Prince of *Orange* who headed the Malecontents as much as *assisted by* possible: And the Protestants in *Germany* who had the *ELIZABETH* greatest Aversion to the *Spaniards* did the same. As *of ENGLAND.* for the Emperor, if no Difference had subsisted between him and his Nephew about the Succession to the *Empire*, he would have been unwilling to disturb so soon the Repose of *Germany*; which was scarce recovered from its late violent Agitations.

As this gave Occasion to a War between *Philip War with* and *Elizabeth of England*, this Princess supplied the *ENGLAND.* *Low Countries* with every thing they had Occasion for; and by her Ships of War greatly annoyed the *Spanish West India Trade*. The famous Sir *Francis Drake* at the same Time pillaged the South-Sea Coast; and got vast Booty there. *Philip* on his Side not only supported the Rebels of *Ireland* against *Elizabeth*; but had formed a Design of entirely conquering *England*. With a View to this he after many *The INVINCIBLE AR-* Years Preparation in the Year 1588 fitted out a Fleet *MADO,* of 150 Sail of Ships; which carried 600 brass Guns and *1588.* above 1000 Iron ones. In these Ships were embarked besides 8000 Sailors and a great Number of Volunteers 20,000 regular Troops. The Expence of this vast Armament was at least 30,000 Ducats a Day: And it was

Battle of
CADIZ.

was called by the Pope who had excommunicated *Elizabeth* and given her Dominions to *Philip* the *Invincible Armado*. After all this Fleet the like to which had never been seen before sustained such Losses by Tempests and the Enemy, that on its Return to *Spain* all the noble Families went into Mourning. The Firmness and Equanimity of *Philip* on this Occasion was very surprizing. Being informed of the Misfortunes of his Ships he said without shewing any Uneasiness, *Je ne les ai pas envoyés combattre les Vents et les flots de la Mer*: That is, *I did not send them to fight with the Winds and the Waves of the sea*. Another Spanish Fleet was eight Years afterwards beat off *Cadiz* by the combined Fleet of *England* and *Holland*; which after taking many rich Prizes made itself Master of this Town: But the Earl of *Essex* General of the *English* not attending to the great Importance it was of to keep Possession after plundering the Town quitted it.

Intrigues of
PHILIP in
FRANCE.

The Intrigues of *Philip* in *France* were equally unsuccessful. For the Sake of excluding the House of *Bourbon* and annexing that Crown to his Monarchy, or at least of raising some Creature of his own to it, he joined with the *League* against *Henry IV*. All the Designs of his Enemies were however baffled by the Valour and Conduct of this Prince: And at last to take away all Pretence for continuing the *League* he conformed to the Church of *Rome*. Thus *Philip* did not only lose the Pains and Expence he was at; but while the Duke of *Parma* Governor of the *Low Countries* was gone into *France* on this Account the *Hollanders* had Time to strengthen themselves.

War with
FRANCE,
1594.

Henry was besides so enraged that having reduced his rebellious Subjects to Obedience he in the Year 1594 declared War against *Spain*; and his Army in *Flanders* under the Count de *Fuentes* took *Cambray*. In the following Year *Calais* was indeed taken by the Archduke *Albert*: But *Henry* made himself Master of *la Fere*; and after an obstinate Defence he retook *Amiens* which had been surprized by the *Spaniards*. Notwithstanding this Success, having now revenged himself, *Henry* had so much Regard for the Condition *France* was by civil Broils brought into that he listened to the Proposals of *Philip*;

Philip; and a Peace was concluded towards the End of *Treaty of*
the following Year at *Vervins*. VERVINS.

Spain was also in this Reign embroiled with the *War with the*
Turks: The famous *Corsair Dragut* having about the *TURKS*.

Year 1551 retaken *Tripoli* after it had been forty Years
subject to the *Spaniards*. The Fleet which *Philip* sent
in the Year 1560 against them after taking the Island 1560.

of *Gerbi* was worsted in an Engagement with that of
the *Turks*; in which it lost 10,000 Men with 42
Ships and the Island it had just taken. In the Year
1564 *Pennon de Velez* was recovered from the *Moors*; 1564.
and about two Years after *Malta* which the *Turks* had
besieged was relieved by *Philip*.

Besides all these Difficulties which *Philip* had to en- *A Revolt*
counter with a dangerous Insurrection was stirred up in *amongst the*
the Year 1567 amongst the *Moors* of *Granada*. This cost *MOORS in*
him three Years to quell; and if the Succours they re- *SPAIN*.
ceived from *Algiers* had arrived time enough the Con-
sequence would have been fatal to *Spain*.

In the Year 1592 some Disturbances broke out in *Rebellion in*
Aragon, occasioned by the Stickling of the *Arragonesse* *ARRAGON*,
in Defence of *Antonio Perez*, who by Virtue of the 1592.
Privileges claimed by them refused to submit to a
Trial for murdering an *Escovedo* a great Favourite of
Don John of *Austria*. Although this was done by an
express Order from *Philip* he spirited up the Prosecu-
tion against *Perez*, hoping thereby to remove the Suspi-
cion of his being concerned in the Assassination and at
the same Time to revenge himself on *Perez*; who ha-
ving been employed to procure a Mistress for his Master
had kept her for himself. This Affair did not indeed
turn out to his Credit; yet he so availed himself thereof
to retrench the Privileges of the *Arragonesse*.

In the Year 1568 *Philip* put his Son *Don Carlos* to
Death. The Reason given for this was that he had *DON CARLOS*
made Attempts upon *Philip's* Life: But it is more pro- *executed,*
bable that it was done for the Sake of marrying *Isabella* 1568.
to whom *Don Carlos* was betrothed.

Upon the Death of *Henry* King of *Portugal* in the *PORTUGAL*
Year 1579 many pretended to this Crown; and *annexed to*
amongst the rest *Philip* King of *Spain* as being Son of *SPAIN*, 1579.
Isabella

Isabella the Daughter of *Emanuel* King of *Portugal*. The Duke *de Alva* who was sent with a powerful Army to assert his Right entirely conquered the Kingdom; and obliged the Bastard *Antony* whom the *Portuguese* had proclaimed to fly for Shelter into *England*. He after this went into *France* where he died in the Year 1595; nor could he ever, although assisted by the *French*, recover any Part of his lost Dominions. Notwithstanding the immense Revenue drawn by *Philip* from the *East* and *West Indies*, yet his Treasures in which he trusted were quite exhausted by the Wars his Ambition had hurried him into. Dying in the Year 1598 he in his last Illness declared that the War in the *Netherlands* alone had cost him 564,000,000 *Ducats*.

PHILIP III.
1598.

Philip III. his Son found the War in the *Low Countries* more and more troublesome. His Father having a little before his Death married *Isabella Clara Eugenia* *Philip's* Sister, to *Albert* Archduke of *Austria* and given her the *Netherlands* as a Portion, the *Spaniards* conceived great Hopes that the united Provinces would be brought to submit to *Albert*: But the *Hollanders* gave sufficient Proofs both of their Power at the Siege of *Ostend* which followed soon after, and that they would never come again under the Dominion of *Spain*, however artfully the Pretence for inducing them to it was coloured over with the Notion of having a Prince of their own. This with the Progress made by the *Hollanders* in the *East Indies* made it necessary for the *Spaniards* to accommodate Matters with them at any Rate. It is however scarce probable that so haughty a Nation as *Spain* would have consented to a Treaty, by which amongst other Things the *Dutch* were allowed the Liberty of carrying on a Trade to the *East* and *West Indies*, if it had not been apprehensive of an Attack in the Weak Condition it was then in from *France*: whose Power had been constantly encreasing during the long Peace it had enjoyed under the auspicious Reign of *Henry IV*.

A Treaty with
the HOLLAN-
DERS.

MOORS ban-
nished from
SPAIN, 1609.

In the Year 1609, the same Year that the Truce was made with *Holland*, *Philip* under the Pretence of their having fomented a Rebellion and requested Succours from *France* banished 900,000 *Moors* from *Spain*: And
towards

towards the close of this Year the *Spaniards* took Fort *Arache* on the Coast of *Africa*.

About the Year 1619 the *Spaniards*, who had been *PHILIP assists* some Time Masters of *Final*, assisted the Inhabitants of *the Rebels in* the *Valteline* in their revolt from the *Grifons*. Their De- *the VALTE-* sign was to annex this Country to their *Dutchy of Milan*: *LINE, 1619.* But the *Grifons* being powerfully supported by *France* and the *Pope*, who could not bear the Thought of any further Extension of the *Spanish* Power in *Italy* even at the Expence of a Protestant State, they were after a War of many Years continuance again put into Possession of the *Valteline*. During the Troubles which soon after broke out in *Germany* *Ambrose Spinola*, who commanded in the *Spanish Netherlands*, made an Irruption into and subdued Part of the *Palatinate*.

Philip IV. succeeded at his Father's Death in the *PHILIP IV.* Year 1621. He immediately dismissed all the Creatures *1621.* of the Duke *De Lerma*, who had been so great a Favourite in the preceding Reign: But the Duke apprehending that the Storm raised against his Dependents would in the End fall heavy upon himself, for the Sake of securing his Life found Means to obtain a *Cardinal's* Cap.

The Truce for twelve Years being now expired the *War with the* War with *Holland* was re-kindled. In the Year 1622 *DUTCH re-* *Bergen-op-Zoom* was besieged by the Marquis of *Spinola*; *newed, 1622.* but on the Approach of the Duke of *Brunswick* and Count *Mansfield* who had defeated the *Spaniards* near *Fleury* he was forced to raise the Siege with great Precipitation. In the Year 1628 *Peter Heyn* took the *Spanish* Fleet the Cargo of which was worth 12,000,000 Livres: and about the same Time the *Dutch* made a Descent on the Coast of *Brazil* and became Masters of *Oleinda*. In the following Year the *Spaniards*, for the Sake of obliging the *Dutch* to give over the Siege of *Bois le Duc*, threw themselves into the *Velaw* and took *Amersfort*: But *Wesel* being surprised by the Troops of the *States* they were obliged to retreat hastily in order to secure their Passage over the *Iffel*. In the Year *1628.* 1639 a considerable *Spanish* Fleet under the Command *1629.* of *Oquendo* was entirely ruined in the Downs by the *SPANISH* *Fleet destroyed* *Dutch* Admiral *Martin Trump*. The Design of this *in the* Armament was not then known; but it appeared after- *Downs.*

wards, that it was to have taken twenty-thousand *Danes* on Board at *Gottenburgh* in order to attack *Sweden*.

Peace with
HOLLAND,
1648.

This War, in which the *Spaniards* had generally the worst and which had cost them no less than 15,00,000,000 *Ducats*, was ended by the Treaty of *Munster* in the Year 1648: By which the *Dutch* were acknowledged to be a free Nation and absolutely independent of *Spain*; and all the Places they had taken in the Course of the War were left to them. *France* then at War with *Spain* used her utmost Art to prevent the *Dutch* from concluding a separate Peace: But they would not listen to her, justly fearing that if *Spain* was too much reduced the *French* would easily over-run the *Spanish Netherlands*; and that the united Provinces would in the End share the same Fate. Besides what Reasons could the *Dutch* have for continuing a War which had already greatly run them into Debt? when the *Spaniards*, for the Sake of being in a Condition to act with greater Vigour against *France* and *Portugal*, were willing to grant all they had so long contended for.

Contests for the
Succession to
MANTUA,
1628.

On the Death of *Vincent II. Duke of Mantua* in the Year 1628 the Emperor would have excluded *Charles Duke of Nevers* from the Succession; because he was a *Frenchman* and had neglected to receive in a proper Manner the Investiture of this Duchy. Hereupon the Duke of *Savoy* renewed his Pretensions to it, and the *Spaniards* hoped to gain something by the Squabble: But the Duke of *Nevers* being supported by the *French*, he was put into Possession of the whole Duchy; and the *Spaniards* besides the Charge they were at on this Occasion lost their Credit in *Italy* very much.

War with
FRANCE,
1635.

In the Year 1635 War was declared by *France* against the *Spaniards*. The Pretence for it was that they had made *Philip Christopher* Elector of *Treves* Prisoner, and notwithstanding there was in it a *French* Garrison had taken his Capital: But the true Reason was that the *French* being by the Enjoyment of a long Peace in a flourishing Condition had a Mind to reduce the Power of the House of *Austria*, which by the Battle of *Norlinguen* and Treaty of *Prague* was become very formidable in *Germany*. After beating Prince *Thomas* near *Avennes* the *French* Army marched into *Flanders*.

It

It however made but little Progress considering its Strength, nor did the Affairs of *France* in *Italy* succeed much better. In the next Campaign the Prince of *Conde* was forced to quit the Siege of *Dole*; and the City of *Paris* itself was thrown into great Consternation by the News of the Success of the *Spaniards* in *Picardie*. The *Imperial* General *Gallas* attempted to penetrate at the same Time into *Burgundy*; but he failed in his Enterprize. In the Year 1637 the *Spaniards* lost *Landrecy*, and were in the following Year repulsed with great Loss at *Fort Leucate*: But the Prince of *Conde* had on the other Side no better Success at the Siege of *Fontarabia*. In the Year 1639 the *Spaniards* obtained some advantage near *Thionville*; but they lost in the same Year *Hesdin*, *Salses* and *Salines*. The *Spaniards* lost *Arras* next Year: And being defeated before *Casal* they could not muster a sufficient Force to oblige the Duke of *Har-*
court to give over the Siege of *Turin*.

1636.

1637.

Battle of
THIONVILLE,
1639.

Battle of
CASAL.

In the same Year a Rebellion broke out in the Army; the first Sparks of which were owing to a Disgust taken by the *Catalonians* at the Duke *de Olivarez*. They had often complained; but instead of having any Redress the Duke who was a great Favourite took Occasion from thence to oppress them more and more. Being besides irritated at the Behaviour of the *Castilians*, who did not support them properly when they went to the Relief of *Salses*, they separated from the other Troops and went home. Upon this some of their Privileges were at the Duke's Instigation taken away: And to keep them in awe he quartered a great Body of Troops amongst them. At length all Things being ripe for a general Revolt the City of *Barcelona* declared first, and the *Catalonians* soon drove the *Castilian* Troops out of their Country. As all Hopes of Pardon were by this Step quite taken away, they afterwards craved the Protection of the *French* King and swore Allegiance to him. It cost the *Spaniards* a great deal of Trouble and eleven Years Time to recover this Province; nor had they done it at last if the Divisions in *France* had not prevented the sending of Succours to *Barcelona*.

Revolt of the
CATALONI-
ANS, 1640.

The *Spaniards* had moreover in this same Year another still worse Business on their Hands. Notwith-

standing
PORTUGAL,
1640.

standing that *Philip II.* who subdued the *Portuguese* by Force of Arms, endeavoured by the mildest Treatment and greatest Regard for their Liberties to moderate the inveterate Hatred they had to the *Castilians*, it came at last to such a Pitch that their Priests exclaimed against them in their Pulpits, and constantly put up this Prayer: *Daignez Seigneur nous Affranchir du Joug de la Domination Castillane*; that is, *Vouchsafe O Lord to deliver us from the heavy Yoke of the Castilians*. Finding that gentle Means would not win their Affections, it was resolved by the *Spaniards* to treat the *Portuguese* more rigorously. Being enraged hereat and perceiving that Fortune began to frown upon the *Spaniards*, they in the Year 1636 mutinied in several Towns. The Sedition was at that Time easily quelled; and it was thought proper in order to busy restless Spirits to give some of the *Portuguese* Commissions in the Army, and great Numbers of the lower Sort were taken into it. Upon the breaking out of the Rebellion in *Catalonia* the *Portuguese* were ordered to march into this Province; which being refused the Jealousy of the *Spaniards* was much increased, and great Pains were taken to entice the Duke of *Braganza* a vast Favourite in *Portugal* to *Madrid*. He however excused himself very artfully from going. At length it being insisted upon that they should serve in the *Catalonian* War, the *Portuguese* Nobility, having first sounded the Inclinations of the Duke of *Braganza*, determined to throw off their Subjection to the *Castilians*. They immediately took the Field: And having seized the Guards easily became Masters of *Lisbon*. Their next Step was to proclaim the Duke of *Braganza* by the Title of *John IV.* and in about eight Days, having put to Death *Vasconcello* the *Spanish* Secretary who had always been proud and cruel with one or two more, they entirely ridded the Kingdom of *Castilians*. This Event is a remarkable Instance, how easily a Revolution may be brought about in a Country where the People have no Affection for their Governors.

The Duke of
BRAGANZA
is proclaimed
King of POR-
TUGAL.

The SPANISH Garrison turned out of Mo-
NACO, 1641. Besides this great Blow to the Monarchy of *Spain* in the Year 1641 the Prince of *Monaco* turned out the *Spanish* Garrison and submitted to *France*. The *French* afterwards

afterwards took *Perpignan* and attempted to penetrate into *Spain*; but the Siege of *Lerida*, at which the Prince of *Conde* commanded, miscarrying they were glad to give over this Enterprize.

In the Year 1647 a dangerous Insurrection headed by MAS-ANEL-
*Mas-Anello** a poor Fisherman was stirred up in *Naples*, LO's Insur-
 by which, if he had been in Time assisted by the *French*, rection at
 the whole Kingdom would have been thrown into the NAPLES,
 utmost Confusion: But it was happily suppressed by the 1647.
 good Conduct of the Count d'Ognante Governor of *Na-
 ples*. About the Year 1650 the *English* became Masters JAMAICA
 of *Jamaica*. lost.

The *Spaniards* having now their Hands full on all Sides were glad to make Overtures for a Peace with FRANCE.
France; which was in the Year 1660 concluded in the
 Island of *Faisan* near the *Pyrenees* by those two great
 Ministers Cardinal *Mazarine* and Count *de Haro*. By
 this Treaty it was stipulated that the *French* should keep
 all the *Roussillon*, and all the County of *Artois* except *St.
 Omers* and *Aire*; and *Gravelines*, *Bourbourg*, *St. Venant*,
Landrecy, *Quesnoi*, *Avesne*, *Mariembourg*, *Philipville*,
Thionville, *Montmedy*, *Ivry* and *Damviller* were more-
 over given up to *France*.

Things being thus accommodated with *France* the War with
Spaniards turned their whole Force against *Portugal*; PORTUGAL.
 but having entered this Kingdom and taken some incon-
 siderable Places they were worsted in several Engage-
 ments: Of which the most remarkable were the Battle Battles of
 of *Estremos* in the Year 1662, and that of *Villa Viciosa* in ESTREMOS:
 the Year 1665. In the former of these Don John of and VILLA-
Austria commanded, in the latter the Marquis of Cara- VICIOSA.
cena. The Success of the *Portuguese*, who in both en-
 tirely routed the *Spaniards*, was in a great Measure
 owing to the Conduct of Marshal *Schomberg* a German
 who had been in the *French* Service.

To *Philip* who died in the Year 1665 succeeded CHARLES II.
Charles II. his Son: The Guardianship of whom, he be- 1665.
 ing but four Years of Age, was committed to the Queen
 his Mother. The War with the *Portuguese* having been
 continued with little Success it was in the Year 1668

* The Man's Name was THOMAS ANELLO, MAS being a
 Corruption of the Word THOMAS.

Peace with
PORTUGAL.
War with
FRANCE.

found necessary to make up Matters with them in order to repel the *French* who had invaded *Flanders*.

Notwithstanding that *Maria Theresa* Daughter of the late King had on her Marriage with *Lewis IV.* renounced her Right to the *Spanish* Succession, this Prince was determined not to lose the Opportunity which the flourishing Condition of *France* and declining one of *Spain* gave him of extending his Dominions. Beside these favourable Circumstances he well knew that the War between *England* and *Holland* would prevent both of them from assisting *Spain*. To justify his Conduct he pretended that by a Custom of *Brabant*, which is called the *Right of Devolution*, the real Estate must descend to the Issue of the first Marriage. The *French* meeting with little Resistance soon made themselves Masters of the whole *Franche Compte*, and took *Tournay*, *Lisle*, *Charleroy*, *Douay*, *Oudenarde* and many other Towns in *Flanders*. This surprizing Progress hastened the Conclusion of a Peace between the Maritime Powers, and gave Rise to the *Triple Alliance* between *England*, *Sweden* and *Holland* in the Year 1667; the Design of which was the Preservation of the *Low Countries*.

The TRIPLE
ALLIANCE,
1667.

Peace of AIX
LA CHA-
PELLE,

A Peace being soon after made it was agreed that the *French* should give up the *Franche Compte* and keep what they had conquered in *Flanders*: But on the Breaking out of the War betwixt *Lewis* and the *Dutch* in the Year 1672, the *Spaniards* well knowing that their Interest in the *Netherlands* was inseparable from that of the *Dutch* joined their Forces to those of *Holland*.

War renewed
with
FRANCE,
1672.

War being thereby renewed the *Franche Compte* was a second Time conquered by *France*, and the Town of *Messina* at that Time in Disorder submitted to the *French* King: But he soon after abandoned it. In the Course of this War *Limburg*, *Conde*, *Valenciennes*, *Cambray*, *Ipres*, *St. Omers*, *Aire* and *Ghent* were taken by the *French*.

Peace of
NIMEGUEN,
1678.

By the Treaty of *Nimeguen*, concluded in the Year 1678, the *French* were to remain Masters of the *Franche Compte*, and of all in *Flanders* except *Limbourg*, *Ghent*, *Courtray*, *Oudenard*, *Ath* and *Charleroy*. Some Difficulties arising about settling the Frontiers a Congress was held at *Courtray*, but it broke up without coming to any Agreement, hereupon *Luxemburg* and some other

Places

Places were seized by the *French*: Yet the strongest Declarations were all the while made by the *French King* of his having no Inclination to come to a Rupture; and that if *Spain* would give up *Luxembourg* he was willing to quit his Pretensions to *Alost* and some other Places, which by the Treaties of *Nimeguen*, *Aix la Chapelle* and the *Pyrenees* justly belonged to him.

As the Court of *Madrid* could by no Means relish this War with Proposal, it was resolved in the Year 1682 to declare FRANCE, War against *France*; and the Assistance of *England* and 1682. *Holland*, who had not only taken upon themselves the Guaranty of the late Peace but were nearly concerned in preventing the entire Conquest of the *Low Countries*, was depended upon. The *English* Ministry were however so blinded by fair Promises and Bribes from *France* that they would not meddle; nor could all the Pains which the Prince of *Orange* took prevail on the *Dutch* to go into this War. As *France* made good Use of this Conjuncture *Dixmunde* and *Courtray* were taken in the first Campaign; and in the next *Luxemburg* which she had so long set her Heart upon after a most obstinate Defence fell into her Hands. The *French* Marshal *Bellefond* was indeed beaten before *Gironne*; yet the Battle of *Spaniards*, finding themselves deserted by their Allies GIRONNE, and having nothing to hope for from *Germany* then engaged with the *Turks*, were glad to conclude a Truce A Truce for for twenty Years. The Conditions of it were that twenty Years. *France* should keep *Luxembourg*: But that *Dixmunde* and *Courtray* should be restored.

Notwithstanding this the *Spaniards*, hoping to recover what they had lost, joined with the Emperor and War with *Holland* in the War which was in the Year 1688 FRANCE commenced against *France*. The Allies began with de- renewed. molishing *Guastalla*, which the Duke of *Mantua* had fortified as it was supposed at the Expence of *France*: But their Army under Prince *Waldeck*, who was not apprized of Marshal *Luxembourg's* being joined by a large Body of Troops under Marshall *Boufflers*, was after a bloody Battle fought in July 1690 entirely routed near Battle of *Fleurus*. *Mons* and *Namure* were taken in the next FLEURUS, Year; and in the Year 1692 a second Battle was fought 1690. by Marshal *Luxembourg* at *Steenkirk*: In which Lieute- Battle of nant- STEENKIRK, 1692.

nant-General *Mackay* was killed on the Side of the Allies and Prince *Turenne* on that of *France*. As the Slaughter was great on both Sides each laid claim to the Victory ; but it looks as if the *French* had the Advantage, because they in the following Year took *Charleroy* after an obstinate Siege. *France* had equally good Success on the Side of *Spain*. The Duke *de Noailles* who attacked the *Spanish* Army in *Catalonia* cut off above 4000 of it, and afterwards took *Palamos* and *Gironne* by Storm. In the Year 1695 the Allies took *Casal* and retook *Namur* ; but *Dixmunde* and *Deinse*, notwithstanding their numerous Garrisons, by the Cowardice of their Governors *Ellenberg* and *Offerel*, the former of whom was afterwards beheaded, surrendered to the *French* at Discretion. In the Year 1697 they reduced good Part of *Brussels* by Bombardment to Ashes ; and *Ath* and *Barcelona* submitted to them. An End was put to these Conquests by *France* herself ; who towards the Close of the Campaign consented by the Treaty of *Ryswick* to restore all she had taken in this War from the *Allies*.

Treaty of
RYSWICK,
1697.

War with the
MOORS.

The Partition
Treaty.

Spain was equally unsuccessful in the War about this Time carried on against the *Moors* ; who took *Mamorra* and Fort *Arache* and have ever since blocked up *Ceuta*.

The Joy, which so advantageous a Peace as that of *Ryswick* must naturally give *Charles*, was soon disturbed by a Treaty whereby some Powers had agreed to divide the *Spanish* Monarchy. Although this was kept as secret as possible it got Air and gave great Disgust to the *Spaniards* ; who took it for granted, that as the two *Maritime Powers* were Parties to it no less was intended than the Introduction of Protestantism into *Spain*. Hereupon the King, provoked to the last Degree that any Powers should take it into their Heads to dispose of his Dominions and in his Life-time without his Knowledge, appointed by a Will made on his Death-bed the Duke of *Anjou* to succeed him.

The Duke of
ANJOU is ap-
pointed Heir
to CHARLES.

The Court of *Vienna* gave it out, that this Will was forged by the Cardinals *Portocarrero* and *Borgia* and others whom the *French* had bribed into their Interest ; and it was moreover insisted upon as a Thing unlikely, that *Charles*, who had always shewn the greatest

greatest Regard for the Court of *Vienna* and had lately sent the Duke of *Molez* thither to treat secretly about the Succession, should settle it in a manner so contrary to the Professions he had constantly made. Others thought that the *Spanish* Ministers, after making some Alterations in this Will which they supposed to be drawn up in *France*, had taken the Advantage of the King's weak State and of his Prejudice against the *Partition Treaty* to prevail upon him to sign it. However that was, the Will signed by the King and confirmed by a Codicil contained in Substance, that the Duke of *Anjou* second Son of the *Dauphin* should be Heir and Successor to the whole *Spanish* Monarchy. In Case he died without Issue or succeeded to the Crown of *France* it was to go on the same Terms to his Brother the Duke of *Berry*. On the Failure of his Issue it was given to *Charles* the second Son of the Emperor *Leopold*: And after him to the Duke of *Savoy*. During the Absence of the Successor the Administration was to be in a Council composed of the President of the Council of *Castile*, the Vice-Chancellor, the President of the Council of *Arragon*, the Cardinal *Portocarrero*, the Inquisitor-General, a Grandee and a Member of the Council of State. All Matters under Deliberation were to be determined by a Plurality of Voices: And if they happened to be equal the Queen Dowager was to have a Casting Vote. The same Regency was also to take Place whenever the Successor to the *Spanish* Throne should happen to be under Age. *Charles* dying within a few Days after the Execution of this Will the Duke of *Anjou* was proclaimed King by the Name of *Philip V*.

Upon his Arrival at *Madrid* in February 1701 the PHILIP V.
Queen Dowager was ordered to retire to *Toledo*; the 1701.
Inquisitor-General to his Bishoprick of *Segovia*; and the Confessor to the late King was sent into a Monastery. *England*, *Portugal*, *Holland* and the Duke of *Savoy*, whose second Daughter *Philip* married in the November following, acknowledged the new King; and having taken the Government into his own Hands *Milan*, *Naples*, *Sicily*, *Sardinia* and the *Netherlands* immediately submitted to him: But the Court of *Vienna* was particularly astonished that Prince *Vaudemont*

Battle of
CARPI.

Progress of
Prince
EUGENE.

PHILIP sets
out for
ITALY.

mont Governor of the *Milanese*, whose Obligations to the Emperor were remarkably strong, and the Elector of *Bavaria* Governor of the *Netherlands* should do this so readily. The *French* Troops hereupon sent into *Italy* made themselves Masters of all the Passes into *Germany*. Prince *Eugene* made Shift however to pass the *Alps* at a Place which was looked upon to be inaccessible; and having with incredible Difficulty brought over his Artillery and Baggage he defeated the *French* Army under *Catinat* at *Carpi*; and obliged them to retreat in great Disorder to *Goito* a Place belonging to the Duke of *Mantua* who had declared for *Philip*. Prince *Eugene* then passed the *Mincio*, and gained a Victory over the United Forces of *France* and *Savoy* commanded by Marshal *Villeroy* near *Chiari*. They endeavoured to rally at *Urago*; but were forced to decamp and met with some Loss in passing the *Oglio*. Having afterwards taken many Towns in the *Mantuan* some *Grandeas* of *Naples*, encouraged by the Nearness of his Army, formed a Conspiracy in Favour of the House of *Austria*: But this being discovered the Duke de *Medina Celi* Vice-roy put an End to it by imprisoning the principal Persons concerned, one of whom *Don Carlos de Sangro* was beheaded.

The *Spanish* Nation being much more easy than could have been expected under the Government of a *French* Prince, *Philip* set out his Queen accompanying him as far as *Barcelona* for *Italy*; and arrived at *Naples* on the 16th of *April* 1702. He was received there with all possible Marks of Joy; and was Complimented in the Name of the *Pope* by the Cardinal *Barberino*. Having given the necessary Orders for maintaining the Tranquillity of this Kingdom, he parted from thence in *June* to go by the Way of *Leghorn*, *Savona* and *Final* to *Milan*. In the mean Time Prince *Eugene* had secured *Bersello* and taken Quarters in the *Parmesan*, notwithstanding the Protestations of its Duke who insisted that as his Country was a Fief of *Rome* this was an Infringement of the Rights of the holy See.

1702. In the same Year Prince *Eugene* failed in his attempt *VILLEROY* is to surprize *Cremona*: The Marshal *Villeroy* was how-taken Prisoner. ever taken Prisoner. The Duke of *Vendosme* succeeded
Villeroy

Villeroi in Commanding the Army of the two Crowns: Which by the Time *Philip* arrived at it was increased so as to be 50,000 strong. As the Army of Prince *Eugene* was greatly inferior he left *Mantua* which he had for some Time blocked up; nor could he prevent *Caneta* and *Castiglioni* the Garrisons of which were made Prisoners of War from falling into the Enemies Hands; and *Visconti* an Imperial General was in July defeated near *Santa Vittoria* with the Loss of 800 Men killed and wounded by a large Detachment from the Enemy. Prince *Eugene* attacked the Army of the two Crowns in August near *Luzara*; but as the Battle continued till Night the Victory was claimed by both Sides. *Luzara* and *Guaftalla* whose Situation prevented the Imperialists from protecting them being also taken by *Philip*, the two Armies after lying for some Time in the Neighbourhood of each other went into Winter Quarters.

Battle of
LUZARA.

While *Philip* was in Italy England and Holland declared in Favour of the Archduke *Charles*; who looked upon the Will as a Forgery, and insisted that the House of *Bourbon* was rendered incapable of succeeding to the Spanish Monarchy by the Renunciations of the two Infanta's before their Marriage into this House. Having taken upon himself the Title of King of Spain by the Name of *Charles III.* the combined Fleet of the Maritime Powers endeavoured to surprize *Cadix*. Failing in this they afterwards attacked the *Galleons* at *Vigo*; but as most of the Treasure was prudently unloaded and sent some Miles into the Country they got but little Booty. *Philip* being informed of these Things returned to *Madrid*: Where a strong Party was already formed in Favour of *Charles*.

The Archduke
CHARLES
claims the
Crown.

In the Beginning of the next Campaign, while Prince *Eugene* was at *Vienna* soliciting a Reinforcement, the Duke of *Vendosme* well knowing his Superiority had laid a Scheme to penetrate into the *Trentine*; and by joining the *Bavarians* to cut off the Communication of the Imperial Troops with Germany: But Count *Stabrenburg* who was left to command in his Absence took care to frustrate this Design. This General marched afterwards through a Country which the Enemy

CHARLES ar-
rives in
PORTUGAL,
1703.

Enemy were in Possession of, in order to join the Duke of *Savoy* who had deserted the Party of his Son-in-Law *Philip*: And the Mortification of *Philip* was encreased by the Arrival of *Charles* in *Portugal*. *Charles* immediately published a Manifesto setting forth that he was come to take Possession of a Kingdom which by the Laws of God and Man belonged to him, and to rid his faithful Subjects whom he exhorted to join him from the Yoke of an Usurper. An Answer to this was soon published by *Philip*: And he at the same Time declared War against *Portugal*.

1704.
GIBRALTAR
Surrendered.

Philip took the Field in Person in the *May* following, and made himself Master of some Places on the Frontiers of *Portugal*; but he could not long keep them. The Prince of *Darmstadt* who by being Governor of it in the late Reign was well acquainted with *Barcelona* attempted to surprize this important Place; his Design however was discovered and opposed by the Inhabitants. He in Revenge bombarded it. The important Fortrefs of *Gibraltar* which was blocked up by Sea being obliged to surrender in *August* to the Allies, Marshal *Tesse* was sent to assist the Marquis of *Villadarias* in retaking it: But the Squadron under the Baron *De Pointis* being destroyed by that of the Allies they in *April* following gave over the Siege. The *Imperialists* in *Italy* who could not in this Campaign look their Enemies in the Face retreated into the *Trentine*.

Progress of
the ALLIES,
1705.

The Allies being early in the Year 1705 Masters of *Valencia*, *Alcantara* and *Albuquerque*, *Charles* who went on Shipboard in *August* after receiving the Homage of *Gibraltar* passed the *Streights* and landed near *Barcelona*. After taking *Fort Montjoy*, at the Attack of which the Prince of *Darmstadt* was killed by a Musquet Shot, the Town was forced to surrender before the Succours from *Philip* could arrive. The Diversion made on the Side of *Portugal* was of great Use to the Allies: And notwithstanding all Correspondence was forbid on the severest Penalties with *Catalonia* the People of *Valencia* were prevailed upon by Lord *Peterborough*, who had been very serviceable at the Siege of *Barcelona*, to submit to *Charles*. The same was soon after done by those of *Arragon*. All the Passes into *Italy* being in the Hands of
the

the Enemy Prince *Eugene* was forced to conduct the Imperial Army, which had been considerably reinforced, over the Mountains of *Bressan*. He afterwards passed the *Oglia* and took some Places which lay in his Way; *CASSANO*. but attempting to pass the *Adda* near *Cassano* he was after a bloody Action obliged to Retreat. By this however he hindered the Duke of *Vendosme* from undertaking the Siege of *Turin*.

Notwithstanding the ill Situation of his Affairs in *Spain Philip*, having received Advice that the French Succours under the Duke *de Noailles* had joined his own Troops commanded by Marshal *Tesse* in *Catalonia*, set out from *Madrid* early in the Year 1706 to put himself at their Head. The Campaign was begun by opening the Trenches before *Barcelona* about the 6th of *April*; the Town being blocked up at the same Time by the Fleet of Count *Toulouse* the French Admiral. The Siege was carried on so vigorously that Fort *Montjoy* was taken and the Town reduced to the last Extremity: But as the whole Fate of the War depended on relieving this Place, since *Charles* who was there must have been made Prisoner, the allied Fleet slipped by that of the French in the Night and landed seven thousand Men. The Besiegers upon this raised the Siege and quitted *Catalonia* with great Precipitation: Well knowing that if the Garrison from whom they every Day expected a Sally should have the Advantage their Army must be entirely ruined, all the Inhabitants of the Country being in the Interest of *Charles*. A remarkable Eclipse of the Sun which happened at this Time was by some looked upon as portending Misfortunes to *Lewis XIV.* who bore a Sun in his Arms.

While almost all the Forces of *Philip* were employed at this Siege, the allies under the Marquis *de la Mina* and Lord *Galway* easily became Masters of *Alcantara* and other Towns on the Side of *Portugal*: Nor could the Duke of *Berwick* whose Army was very small have prevented *Madrid* from falling into their Hands; but they deferred marching thither till the Success of the Siege of *Barcelona* was known. Upon hearing the News of its being raised they advanced towards that Capital; where the Consternation was such that *Philip*

1706.

Siege of
BARCELONA.

Progress of the
ALLIES on the
Side of POR-
TUGAL.

PHILIP leaves
MADRID.

who came Post for the sake of quieting the Minds of the Inhabitants found it necessary to retire with his Court towards *Navarre*: Nay so desperate were his Affairs that it was suspected in his own Army he would return into *France*. To remove these Jealousies he declared at the Head of his Troops, that he was resolved to shed the last Drop of Blood rather than desert his faithful Subjects. Upon the Approach of the Army of the Allies *Madrid* with the other Towns in *Castile* acknowledged *Charles*; and *Carthage* and *Alicant* were about the same Time taken by their Fleet. Every Thing being now ready for proclaiming *Charles* at *Madrid* the Generals, who well knew no Time ought to be lost, represented to him in the most pressing Terms the Necessity of his coming thither as fast as possible. Instead of this following the Advice of Count *Cifuento* he went to be proclaimed at *Sarragossa*, and determined to receive the Homage of *Arragon* before he set out for *Castile*. As the Army of *Philip* being by Reinforcements become superior to that of the Allies appeared soon after at the Gates of *Madrid*; these last who were in Want of Provisions thought proper to retire to the Confines of *Valencia*; for the sake of covering this Province, *Arragon* and *Catalonia*, and that they might at the same Time preserve a Communication with the Fleet. *Carthage* was afterwards retaken for *Philip*; but the Allies in Return conquered the Islands of *Majorca* and *Ivica*. While these Things were doing the Duke of *Vendosme* who commanded in *Italy* attacked the Imperial General *Reventlau*, who was defeated with the Loss of 2000 Men and all his Artillery: Yet the Joy hereby occasioned in *France* was soon put an End to by the ill Success of the Siege of *Turin* and Loss of *Milan*. The Citadel of this last held out for some Time; but the *Milanese* and *Lombardy* were intirely evacuated by the Armies of the Two Crowns in the following Spring. The Garrisons of the several Towns retired according to Agreement to *Susa*; the Duke of *Mantua* to *Venice*; and the Dukes his Consort went with Prince *Vaudemont* into *France*.

Defeat of
REVENTLAU

1707.

The Affairs of *Philip* in *Spain* succeeded much better in the Year 1707: where the sad Effects of *Charles's* Conduct

Conduct in the preceding Year were already felt. As the Army of the Allies was surrounded on all Sides and could receive no Supply of Ammunition or Provision but from the Fleet, which was subject to great Delay and Uncertainty, it was resolved by the Generals to attack the Duke of *Berwick* before he was joined by some fresh Troops he expected. They began with destroying his Magazines and then laid Siege to *Villena*. The Duke willing to relieve this Place gave them Battle *Battle of* near *Almanza*; and after an obstinate Action in which *ALMANZA*.

the Duke lost 4000 Men the Allies were defeated, and besides 2000 taken Prisoners left 8000 Men all their Cannon and a good Part of their Baggage upon the Field of Battle. This Victory was followed with the Submission of *Valencia* and *Arragon* to *Philip*; who to chastise the Defection of the People abolished their Privileges, and incorporated both these Provinces with *Castile*. The Town of *Xativa* stood it out against him; but being taken after an almost incredible Resistance it was entirely demolished, and a Pillar was erected on the Spot where it stood with this Inscription: ICI A ETE' UNE VILLE NOMME XATIVA, QUI EN PUNITION DE SA TRAHISON ET DE SA REVOLTE CONTRE SON ROY ET SA PATRIE A ETE' RASE'E JUSQU'AUX FONDREMENTS. In other Words; HERE STOOD A TOWN CALLED XATIVA, WHICH AS A PUNISHMENT FOR ITS TREACHERY AND REBELLION AGAINST ITS KING AND COUNTRY WAS RASED TO THE GROUND. After the Battle of *Almanza* the Duke of *Orleans* took the Command of the *Spanish* Army; and while the Duke de *Noailles* took *Livia* and *Puicerda* he made himself Master of *Lerida*. The Joy of *Philip* for the Success of this Campaign was doubled by the Birth of a Son on the 20th of *August*: Who was called *Lewis Philip* and honoured with the Title of Prince of *Asturias*.

XATIVA laid even with the Ground.

Charles got Ground in *Italy* as fast as he lost it in *Spain*; and Count *Taun* had Orders to pass through the *Imperialists* in *Italy*. *Pope's* Dominions who had been all along partial to *Philip* in his Way to *Naples*. Being arrived on the Confines of this Kingdom he detached General *Vaubonne* to *Capua*, whilst he advanced with the main Body

to the Capital which opened its Gates to him; and the Garrison were made Prisoners of War. The Viceroy together with the Duke of *Brisaccia* and Prince *Cellamotte*, who had fled to *Gaeta*, were on taking this Place carried back Prisoners to the Castle of *Naples*. The whole Kingdom soon submitted to the *Imperialists*; and nothing but the *Isles* remained to *Philip* in *Italy*.

1708.

SARDINIA
and MINOR-
CA conquered.

Negotiations
for Peace
comes to no-
thing.

1709.

PORTU-
GUESE defeat-
ed at BADA-
JOX.

CHARLES is
acknowledged
by the POPE,
1710.

Battle of
SARRA-
GOSSA.

In the ensuing Campaign the Duke of *Orleans* took *Tortosa*; but the *Allies* were so strong on the Side of *Portugal* that they gained some Advantages over the Marquis *de Bay*. The *English* Admiral *Leake* reduced *Sardinia* to the Obedience of *Charles*; and with the Loss of no more than seven Men became Master of *Port Mahone* and the whole Island of *Minorca*.

Negotiations for Peace were set on foot in the next Year; but it being among other Preliminaries insisted upon that *Philip* should renounce all Pretensions to the *Spanish* Monarchy they were soon broke off, and his Troops defeated the *Portuguese* at *Badajox*. On the other Side *Stahrenburg* the Imperial General passed the *Segre* within Sight of the Enemy and took *Balaguer*. *Philip* joined his Army with a Design to attack him; but altered his Mind upon finding him advantageously posted.

The *Pope* for the sake of getting rid of the Troops quartered in his Dominions acknowledged *Charles* in the Year 1710 as King of *Spain*; which notwithstanding its being against the Grain was so resented by *Philip*, that he ordered his Nuncio to leave *Madrid* and forbid all Intercourse with *Rome*. The Army of *Charles* being reinforced, and that of the Duke of *Noailles* weakened by sending a large Detachment into *Languedoc* which was threatened with a Descent, his Affairs in *Spain* grew much better; and General *Stanhope* after routing his Cavalry near *Almanara* obliged the Army of *Philip* to retreat in great Haste towards *Lerida*. By this Advantage a Way was not only opened into *Castile*; but the Army of *Philip* was in great Danger of being surrounded. To prevent this he marched to *Sarragossa*. *Charles* followed him and a Battle was there fought, which it was supposed would have decided the Fate of the *Spanish* Monarchy; for the Two
Crowns

Crowns lost twelve Pieces of Cannon, all their Baggage, seventy-two Colours, fifteen Standards and several thousand Prisoners: And *Philip*, who fled almost alone to *Madrid*, caused his Army to move towards *Navarre* and his Court to *Vittoria*. *Charles* being by this Victory become Master of both *Arragon* and *Castile* he repaired immediately to *Madrid*; and from thence went to pay a Visit to the Queen Dowager at *Toledo*. The *Portuguese* instead of acting vigorously at this Juncture gave *Philip* an Opportunity of returning with great Reinforcements to *Madrid*; and *Charles* was in his Turn forced to quit this Capital and retire into *Catalonia*. His Army in *Arragon* having exhausted the Country was about the same Time forced to decamp; and for the Sake of being subsisted to march in several Columns. To this hasty Retreat it was owing that the *English* were shut up in *Bribuegen* a walled Town. General Stan-
hope their Commander defended the Place with great Bravery; but being overpowered by Numbers he at last surrendered himself with his Corps consisting of eight Squadrons and as many Battalions Prisoners of War. Count *Stahrenberg*, who was just come up at the Time, being quite a Stranger to his surrendring attacked the *Spanish* Army which lay near *Villa Viciosa* with great Vigour. The Battle lasted from three in the After-
noon till Night. Both Sides boasted of having routed and ruined the Army of the Enemy; and *Te Deum* was sung both at *Paris* and *Vienna*. The Troops of *Charles* afterwards retired further into *Arragones*.

General
STANHOPE
is made Pri-
soner.

Nothing remarkable happened in the next Campaign except the taking of *Gironne* by the Duke de *Noailles*.
GIRONNE taken, 1711.

The Death of the Emperor *Leopold* on the 5th of May 1705 made no Alteration in the Affairs of Spain; for *Joseph* his eldest Son and Successor continued to espouse his Brother's Quarrel with all his Forces; nor was the Ardour of the Allies for the Interest of *Charles* in the least abated. Being on the Death of his Brother without Issue in April 1711 advanced to the Imperial Dignity, *Charles* was obliged to leave *Spain* in September for the sake of going to be crowned at *Frankfort*; which, notwithstanding that he left his Spouse in *Catalonia* as a Pledge that he by no Means gave up his

CHARLES
is advanced to
the IMPERIAL
DIGNITY,

Pretensions to *Spain*, turned out very much to the Advantage of *Philip*.

*Treaties of
Peace with all
the ALLIES
except the
Emperor.
1712.*

On the Renewal of the Negotiations in the Year 1712 the *English* Ministry, who could have no other View in this War than the Preservation of the Ballance of Power, apprehending he would become too formidable by possessing at the same Time the *Austrian* Succession, the *Spanish* Monarchy, and the Imperial Dignity, grew cool to the Interest of *Charles*. This Disposition being laid hold of by *Lewis XIV.* who wished for nothing so much as Peace provided it could be had without sacrificing the Interest of his Grandson *Philip* entirely, Treaties of Peace were concluded with all the Powers at War except the Emperor, whom nothing less than the Cession of the whole *Spanish* Monarchy would content. To prevent the Union of the Crowns of *France* and *Spain* under the same Sovereign it was stipulated in these Treaties, that in case *Philip* or his Heirs should at any Time accept the Crown of *France* that of *Spain* should be ceded to the House of *Savoy*. The other material Articles were, that the Duke of *Savoy* should be put into immediate Possession of the Kingdom of *Sicily*; that all *Italy* should be neuter and remain in *Statu quo*; and that *Catalonia* should be evacuated by all foreign Troops. A solemn Renunciation of his Right to the *French* Crown was soon after made by *Philip* at *Madrid*, and a Renunciation of all Right to the Crown of *Spain* was demanded from the *French* Court; but it being insisted upon by the Marquis *de Torcy* that such a Renunciation was contrary to the fundamental Laws of *France*, the Maritime Powers for the sake of some Advantages in Trade waved it and renewed their Acknowledgments of *Philip* as King of *Spain* and the *Indies*. The Treaty with *Portugal* there being some Things to be adjusted was not indeed settled so soon as those with the other Powers; but all Hostilities ceased and a Finishing Hand was put to it in the next Year.

*Misfortunes of
the CATALO-
NIANS.*

As to *Catalonia* it was earnestly contended by the Emperor that the Privileges of this Province should not be lessened for its Adhesion to him. *Philip* on the contrary insisted that this, as it was a Matter which depended on his Clemency, must be left to his Discretion; and that
though

though he had the greatest Regard for the Emperor, it could not be expected that the *Catalonians*, who had been the most obstinately rebellious of all his Subjects, should when they were in his Power force him into their Terms. The Queen of *England* promised to intercede for them and did do it. The Fruit however of her good Offices was lost by their refusing to lay down their Arms; and Admiral *Wishart* had Orders to assist in reducing them. They were by him prevailed upon to leave the Matter to the *English* Ambassador at *Madrid*, and a general Pardon was obtained: But as *Philip* persisted in refusing to confirm their Privileges they would not accept of it. The Trenches were hereupon opened before *Barcelona* in July 1714. The Inhabitants after being reduced to the greatest Extremity represented to the *English* Admiral, that all they had done for *Charles* was done at the Request of the Queen of *Great Britain*, and begged that Hostilities might cease at least till the Return of an Express they would send once more to *London*. No Regard was paid to these Remonstrances: And the Duke of *Berwick* had moreover Orders from his Master *Lewis XIV.* who being on the Point of making Peace with the Emperor and in a bad State of Health wanted to see an End of all the Troubles of *Europe*, to press the Siege. The Inhabitants still held out desperately, and called upon GOD at their Altars to revenge this Breach of Faith upon the *English*, who had so often given them the most solemn Assurances of Protection. The general Assault being made on the 11th of *Septem-* BARCELONA
ber, all this unhappy People could obtain was, that taken, 1714.
their Lives should be spared and the Town saved from Plunder, upon Condition that they would give up *Cardonne* and assist in bringing back the Island of *Majorca* to its Duty.

In the same Year died *Maria Louisa Gabriella* of *Death of the Savoy* Queen of *Spain*; and the King was soon after *Queen of* married to *Elizabeth* Daughter of the Duke of *Parma*. SPAIN.
Alberoni an *Italian* Priest and vastly intimate with the Duke de *Vendosme* had a great Share in making up this Match. A Cardinal's Cap was in Return procured for him by the Queen; and he was soon placed at the Head of the Ministry.

Hostilities re-
commenced by
SPAIN.

As the Evacuation of *Catalonia* was upon Compulsion and quite disagreeable to the *Imperialists*, they took Care to leave the Seeds of Disaffection of which they hoped one Day to avail themselves amongst the People. The Emperor moreover would never by any publick Act renounce his Pretensions to the *Spanish* Monarchy. So that although the Neutrality prevented for the present all Attempts in *Italy* the Reconciliation betwixt the two Rivals was far from being hearty. The *Venetians* being attacked by the *Turks* in the Year 1716 the Emperor was prevailed on to assist them. The Court of *Spain* was solicited by the Pope to do the same; and the more readily to bring *Philip* into it he consented to the raising of large Sums on Ecclesiasticks. A Fleet was hereupon fitted out by *Philip*, which saved *Corfu* this Year and did still greater Things in the next: But this was not all he aimed at; for judging the Opportunity favourable he resolved to attack the Dominions of the Emperor in *Italy*. His Pretence for this was that *Charles* had forfeited his Right to *Naples* and *Sardinia*; which were ceded to him on Condition of his giving up *Majorca* to *Philip*.

Quadruple
Alliance,
1718.

The *Spanish* Fleet easily became Masters of *Sardinia*: But this Blow which was quite unexpected alarmed the Powers of *Europe*, and laid the Foundation of the *Quadruple Alliance* concluded at *London* in the Year 1718. The Design of this Treaty being to bring about a general Peace three Months Time was allowed for the Accession of *Spain* to it. Instead thereof the *Spaniards* attacked *Sicily*, which the Duke of *Savoy* had according to the Tenour of this Treaty exchanged with the Emperor for *Sardinia*, and soon made themselves Masters of great Part of that Island. Upon this the Court of *London* interposed; and after some Threatnings sent a Fleet into the *Mediterranean* which entirely ruined the *Spanish* Fleet.

A Rupture
with ENG-
LAND and
FRANCE.

A Rupture ensuing *France* was called upon by the Allies; but it is probable she would for some Time have excused herself from fulfilling the Engagements entered into by the *Quadruple Alliance*, if it had not happened that the Duke of *Orleans* was just then highly incensed against the Cardinal *Alberoni*, who had laid a Scheme in

in Concert with Prince *Cellamare* the *Spanish* Ambassador at the *French* Court to remove him from the Regency. This being discovered by Letters found on the Abbot *Porto-Carrero* the *Spanish* Ambassador was sent home guarded and War was declared against *Spain*. Thus by the Intrigues of the Cardinal Minister the Regent, who as it appeared by the Manifesto he published had taken upon him to procure the Restitution of *Gibraltar*, was so provoked as to engage with the Houses of *Austria* and *Hanover* in a War against a King of *Spain* of the Blood Royal of *France*. Such an Event would about seven Years before have been thought scarce possible; yet so it fell out and *Biscay* was attacked by the *French*. Negotiations were hereupon entered into at the *Hague* under the Mediation of the *Dutch*; but the Success of them may be principally ascribed to the Disgrace of Cardinal *Alberoni* in the Year 1719.

This Prelate forgetting the Obligations he lay under to a Queen, who had so generously rewarded his Services, prevailed on the King to banish her from his Council and afterwards from the Kingdom. *Philip* soon saw his Mistake; and having disgraced the Cardinal was prevailed on by his true Friends to accede in February 1720 to the *Quadruple Alliance*, and thereby to put an End to a War which would have so soon again involved all *Europe* in its Misfortunes. He was desirous of adding some Things to what had been agreed upon by the contracting Parties; the chief of which were the Restitution of *Gibraltar* and *Port Mahone*, and the Succession of *Don Carlos* to *Parma*, *Placentia* and *Tuscany*: But all these were left to be settled at a Congress for a general Peace which was to be held immediately at *Cambray*.

SPAIN accedes
to the QUADRU-
PLE
ALLIANCE,
1720.

In the next Year two Marriages were agreed upon: A double Marriage. The first betwixt *Lewis XV.* and *Maria* Infanta of *Spain* then but three Years of Age; the second betwixt the Prince of *Asturias* and *Madamoiselle de Montpensier* Daughter of the Regent. Great Expectations were hence raised of a happy Union betwixt the two Crowns; and these were still more encreased, when the People not only saw these two Princesses exchanged, but another Treaty of Marriage set on foot in the same Year be-

twixt *Don Carlos* of *Spain* and the Regent's fifth Daughter *Mademoiselle de Beaujolois*. As a good Understanding subsisted at the same Time betwixt the two Crowns and *England Philip* entertained great Hopes of succeeding in his Demands: But he was quite mistaken; for the Emperor upon various Pretences put off the Investiture of *Don Carlos*; and the King of *Great Britain* did not think proper to break with the Emperor, from whom he was soliciting the Investiture of the States he had newly acquired in *Germany*. Besides this the *English* Nation would by no means consent to give up *Gibraltar* and *Port Mahone*; which had cost them dear and were of vast Importance to their Trade in the *Mediterranean*.

Death of the
FRENCH
REGENT,
1723.

Before these Difficulties were adjusted the Death of the Regent in *December 1723* produced an entire Change in the *French* Ministry.

Abdication of
PHILIP,
1724.

The next Year was introduced with an Event which astonished all *Europe*. The King of *Spain* declared on the 15th of *January*, that having seriously reflected on the Miseries of this Life, and called to Mind the Misfortunes of War and Rebellion it had pleased GOD to try him with; and having also considered that his Son was come to Years of Maturity, already married, and sufficiently capable to take the Reins of Government into his Hands: He was for these Reasons fully determined to abdicate the Throne in favour of Prince *Lewis* his eldest Son.

LEWIS.

An Abdication being made next Day in the most solemn Manner, the new King was immediately proclaimed in Council and at *Madrid* with the usual Ceremony. On the 9th of the next Month the Marquis *de Grimaldo* Successor in the Ministry to *Alberoni* retired with his Master, and the People conceived great Hopes from the Reign of this Prince a Native of *Spain*; but an End was put to these together with the Life of the new King by the Small-pox in the *August* following.

PHILIP re-
mounts the
Throne.

The States being hereupon assembled it was resolved that *Philip* should be entreated to resume the Government; and they at the same Time represented to him the great Need the Kingdom had of him. Some Divines said that the Abdication was annulled by the

Death

Death of the Prince in whose Favour alone it had been made; by the Minority of his Brothers; and by the Alteration of the Circumstances which were the Occasion of it. Others were indeed of a contrary Opinion: But that noble Maxim the Good of the People is the supreme Law prevailed; and *Philip* who had been induced by pious Motives to put off the Crown consented to put it on again. He reserved however the Liberty of laying it aside again as soon as *Ferdinand*, who was shortly after declared by the *Cortes* Prince of *Asturias*, should be of Age to reign.

The Duke of *Bourbon*, who succeeded to the Regency of *France*, did not look upon himself to be bound by the Promise of his Predecessor that *Gibraltar* should be restored, especially as he found the *British* Parliament would hear nothing of it: But *Spain* insisted on the fulfilling of this, without which she had never acceded to the *Quadruple Alliance*. The two Courts were further embroiled by another Incident. As *Lewis XV.* was very infirm and his Spouse quite young, it was feared he would not live long enough to have any Children by her. For this Reason another Princess was found for him and the Infanta of *Spain* was sent home; which so provoked the Court of *Spain* that her Plenipotentiaries were recalled, and thereby an End was put to the fruitless Congress of *Cambray*.

The Congress of
CAMBRAY
broke up.

It was hereupon proposed by the Baron *de Ripperda*, A separate formerly Ambassador from the *States General* at *Madrid* Peace with the now in the Service of *Philip*, to clap up a separate Peace Emperor, with the Emperor; and Negotiations being secretly entered into four Treaties were concluded at *Vienna* early in the Year 1725. By the first it was agreed that *France* and *Spain* should never be united; that *Spain* should give up her Right to the Reversion of *Sicily*; that the eventual Succession to *Tuscany*, *Parma* and *Placentia* should be granted to *Don Carlos*; that *Leghorn* should for ever remain a free Port; and that the Possession of *Sardinia* should be confirmed to the House of *Savoy*. The second was between *Spain* and the *Empire*. The third was a Treaty of Commerce; and the fourth a defensive one between these two Powers. *France*, *England* and *Holland* were all disgusted at these Treaties. The

1725.

former grudged the Sums which *Spain* had engaged to furnish the Emperor with; and *England* had besides her Fears for *Gibraltar* good Reason to unite with the *Dutch* in complaining of the *East India* Company, which was to be established at *Ostend* under the Encouragement and Protection of *Philip*.

Treaty of
HANOVER.

The Emperor and King of *Spain* being by this close Union become formidable to *Europe*, a Treaty of Alliance betwixt *France* and *Great Britain* was entered into at *Hanover* in the *September* following. The King of *Prussia* was a contracting Party but he afterwards disagreed to this Treaty. It was acceded to by the *States General*; but this was done with such Restrictions as shewed their Moderation, and that they had no other View than that of securing the Tranquillity of *Europe*.

RIPERDA
resigns his
Employments,
1720.

Although the Peace with the Emperor was far from being advantageous to *Spain*, the Baron *de Ripperda* who negociated it upon his Return to Court received the highest Marks of Esteem, being made a Duke and prime Minister; but carrying it with too high a hand he became so odious to the *Grandeess*, that not thinking himself safe he in *May* 1726 begged leave to resign his Employments. This was granted him with a Pension: Yet being still apprehensive he sheltered himself in the House of Mr *Stanhope* the *British* Ambassador. As this strange Conduct betrayed Guilt he was dragged from thence by Order of the Court and confined in a Castle: By which Proceeding the Coolness between *Spain* and *England* was encreased. The Marquis *de la Paz* succeeded *Ripperda*; but he was soon dismissed for the sake of the Marquis *de Grimaldo* who had been prime Minister before the Abdication.

War with
GREAT-
BRITAIN.

The Court of *London*, being informed from *Ripperda* and other Hands that the *Spaniards* were resolved to recover *Gibraltar*, which as they said was promised to them at the Accession of *Spain* to the *Quadruple Alliance*, thought it the best Way to send a Fleet to stop the Galleons, and thereby put it out of her Power to furnish the Emperor with the stipulated Subsidies. Hostilities being now commenced in *America* the *English* sustained great Losses there; nor did the Interest of *Spain* suffer so much by the Detention of the Galleons as that

that of Foreigners who had Effects on Board. Instead of this the *Spaniards* had a good Pretence for not distributing in Time of War the Treasure of the twenty-two Sail, which Admiral *Castagneta* had made shift to bring into *Cadiz*. As War was thus begun in *America* *Philip* made no Scruple of besieging *Gibraltar*: But as *GIBRALTAR* the Place was provided for a vigorous Defence, as the *besieged*. Emperor furnished him with no Assistance, and as the *Allies* of *Britain* declared they would join against *Spain* if she refused their Mediation Preliminaries of a general Peace were agreed upon at *Paris*; and a Congress was appointed to be held at *Soissons*.

The Year 1728 was spent in settling the Losses which *Congress of Great Britain* had sustained by the *Spanish Guard de SOISSONS, Costas* in *America*; and in persuading the Emperor to 1728. submit to some Alterations concerning the Succession of *Don Carlos* to *Tuscany*, *Parma* and *Placentia*.

The Court of *Madrid* was also this Year taken up *A double Marriage* with the Marriage of the Prince of *Asturias* with a *Princess* of *Portugal*, and with that of the Prince of *PORTUGAL*. *Brazil* with the *Infanta* of *Spain*.

As Things succeeded no better at *Soissons* than they *PARIS becomes* had done before at *Cambray* the Court of *France* became the *Center of* the Center of Negotiations. Cardinal *Fleury*, who *Negotiations.* was prime Minister there in the Duke of *Bourbon's* room, took great Pains to prevent a Rupture betwixt *Spain* and the *Emperor*: But this last, as the *Allies* of the *Quadruple Alliance* had acknowledged *Tuscany*, *Parma* and *Placentia* which depended before on the See of *Rome* to be Fiefs of the *Empire*, and he was in Possession of *Sicily*, became less and less tractable.

At length, as *Great Britain* whose Trade suffered much *Treaty of SE-* by the *Spanish* War grew uneasy at the Delay of the *Ne- VILLE, 1729.* gotiations, a Treaty was concluded at *Seville* in the Year 1729 between *Great Britain*, *France* and *Spain*. By this it was agreed that *Great Britain* should have Satisfaction for the Depredations committed on her Merchants; that she in Conjunction with *France* should secure the Succession of *Parma*, *Tuscany* and *Placentia* to *Don Carlos*; and the more effectually to do this that 6000 *Spanish* Troops should be introduced as *Garrisons* into *Italy* instead of the same Number of *Swiss*, which

which had by former Treaties been agreed upon. The contracting Powers took upon themselves at the same Time the perpetual Guaranty of these States to his Serene Highness and his Successors.

Origin of the
Quarrel be-
twixt SPAIN
and GREAT
BRITAIN con-
cerning Depre-
dations.

As the Affair of seizing the *English* Merchant Ships by the *Spanish Guarda de Costas*, for which Satisfaction was to be made, became more and more serious, it will be necessary to explain this Matter. During the Minority of *Charles II.* the Queen Regent his Mother concluded a Peace with *England* about the Year 1667. By this the contracting Parties contented themselves with regulating the Commerce of *Europe*: But all that concerned the *West-India* Trade was left to be settled by another Treaty three Years after, which was called the Treaty of *America*. The *English* who during that War had made great Advantages by trading with the *Spaniards* continued to do the same: And as *Jamaica* was in their Hands they never wanted a Pretence for sailing near the *Spanish* Coast. The Court of *Madrid* being too much engaged to attend to it this illicit Trade had greatly encreased, and must in the End have quite ruined the *Spanish* Trade. To put a stop to it *Philip*, who was by the Treaty of *Utrecht* left in Possession of *Spain* and the *Indies*, stationed Ships of War on the *Spanish* Coasts. By these not only such Ships were searched as were actually carrying on an illicit Trade, but all that were suspected to have done it; and whenever any *Spanish* Goods were found on Board the Vessels were confiscated. *Spain* consented by the Treaty of *Seville* that Satisfaction should be made for all unjust Captures: Yet insisted that all such as appeared by their Lading to have been carrying on an unfair Trade were good Prizes. This Matter was left to be decided by Commissaries at *Madrid*; and to them also it was left to settle the Losses of the *South-Sea Company*, whose Effects in *America* were on the breaking out of the War with *England* seized contrary to the *Asiento Contract*: But the Conferences opened for these Purposes continued some Years without concluding upon any Thing.

DON CARLOS
introduced into
ITALY.

The Introduction of *Don Carlos* being in the mean Time deferred Orders were given to the *Spanish* Ambassador at *Paris* to declare, that as the *Allies* had failed
in

in their Engagements his *Catholick* Majesty thought himself discharged from the Obligations of the Treaty of *Seville*. Upon this *Great Britain* bestirred herself; and having first prevailed on the *Emperor* to consent to the change of Troops, she by an Act signed in *July* 1731 promised to introduce *Don Carlos* into *Italy* within five Months and kept her Word.

In the *January* following *Anthony Duke of Parma* Death of AN- and *Placentia* the last Prince of the *Farnese* Family died: THONY Duke Yet as the *Emperor* had with the greatest Reluctance of PARMA. agreed to the Introduction of the Infant into *Italy*, he put off his Investiture to these Dutchies for some Time under the Pretence that the Dutchess Dowager was pregnant. When this appeared to be without Foundation *Don Carlos* took Possession of them; but fresh Difficulties with Regard to the Investiture were raised by the Court of *Vienna*.

Upon the Death of *Augustus II.* King of *Poland* in WAR on Ac- *February* 1733, *Lewis XV.* used his utmost Endeavours count of the to advance his Father-in-Law *Stanislaus* to this Throne POLISH which he had before possessed. His Election being op- ELECTION, posed by the *Emperor* with great Warmth a War broke 1733. out: And the House of *Savoy*, which had long and in vain hoped for the Redress of some Grievances from the *Emperor*, joined with *France* and *Spain*. The *States General* judging it not proper to engage in a War which no Ways concerned them, and which they had taken great Pains to prevent, contented themselves with obtaining a Neutrality for the *Netherlands* which was religiously observed; and as the *Dutch* would not come in *Great Britain* meddled no further than by offering her Mediation. After the *Emperor* had lost all in *Italy* except the Town of *Mantua* *France* in the Name of the *Allies* proposed an Accommodation; and Preliminaries were signed privately at *Vienna*.

By these it was agreed that the *Milanese* and *Man-* Preliminaries *tuan* should be restored to the *Emperor*, and that he of VIENNA. should have the Dutchies of *Parma* and *Placentia* in Exchange for *Naples* and *Sicily*; that *Don Carlos*, who had during the War taken Possession at first in his Father's Name of *Naples* and *Sicily* and afterwards in his own Name upon the Cession of his Father, should

should be acknowledged as King of the two *Sicilies*; and that the Duke of *Lorrain* should have *Tuscany* in Exchange for his own Dutchy, which *Stanislaus* was to have to make amends for his Loss of the *Polish* Crown. *Spain* being by no Means satisfied with this Disposition, by which the Infant was deprived of three Dutchies, kept Possession of these as long as possible; and although she was at last forced to evacuate them still laid Claim to the Allodial Estates of the *Farnese* Family.

Depredations
in the WEST-
INDIES con-
tinued.

The Court of *Madrid* now again at Leisure resolved to put a Stop to the illicit Trade of the *English* in *America*; and Orders were sent to the Commanders of the *Guard de Costas* to be very strict in searching, and to seize all Ships which had any *Spanish* Goods on board. Complaints being hereupon made by the *British* Court, it was against consented to by the Court of *Madrid* that Satisfaction should be made for all unjust Captures; and Commissaries on both Sides were appointed. A long List of their Losses was given in by the *English* Merchants; but as these were even in the Opinion of the *English* Commissaries too much exaggerated, it was agreed to reduce them to 200,000 Pound Sterling. On the other Side *Great Britain* had by the Treaty of *Madrid* in the Year 1721, and by that of *Seville* in the Year 1729, consented to restore or pay for the *Spanish* Ships taken by Admiral *Byng* in the Year 1718. It was insisted that these were worth 180,000 Pound: But it was agreed by the Commissaries that 60,000 Pound should be allowed; and they moreover agreed, that for the Sake of having the Balance paid by *Spain* directly there should be an Abatement of 45000 Pound. By these Deductions the Ballance on the Side of *England* was 95000 Pound. As to the *South-Sea Company* 68000 Pound was acknowledged to be in Arrear from them to the Court of *Madrid*; but according to their Reckoning a much greater Sum was due to the Company from this Court.

The Conven-
tion with
SPAIN.

For the Sake of adjusting this Matter the Signing of the Convention, which was ready in *September* 1738, was put off; but it was signed the *January* following. By this it was agreed, that Conferences should be opened at *Madrid* for regulating what concerned the Trade and

and *Navigation* of the two Nations; that every Thing in *Carolina* and *Florida* should remain in the present Condition till Plenipotentiaries had fixed the Limits of these Provinces; and that all other Matters in dispute should be determined by a new Treaty, of which the Treaties of the Years 1667, 1670, 1715, 1721, 1729 and the *Asiento Contract* of the Year 1716 were to be the Basis. *Spain* engaged to pay the 95000 Pounds to the *British* Merchants within four Months: But it was on Condition that 68000 was payed her by the *South-Sea Company*. In Default of this his Catholick Majesty by a Protest entered at the Time of Signing it declared the Convention to be void; and reserved to himself the Right of suspending the Privileges of that Company. The *English* Merchants, who had for a long Time contrary to Treaty traded with considerable Advantage to the *Spanish West-Indies*, were by no Means willing to leave the Affair of visiting to be settled, and demanded that their Ships should be neither visited nor stopped upon any Pretence whatever except they were found in *Spanish* Ports. On the other Side the *Spaniards* said that there was no other Way to prevent the contraband Trade of the *English*: And insisted strenuously on the Right of visiting.

So great a Fermentation was raised on this Occasion by War with the Enemies to the *British* Minister that it was deter- GREAT BRITAIN.
mined to declare War against *Spain*: But the Allies of *Great Britain*, who were not under the same Obligations to assist her as if she had been attacked first, would not meddle in the Quarrel. Prizes were taken on both Sides: But the Theatre of War was chiefly in *America*.

In the Year 1740 Admiral *Vernon* appeared before *Car- PORTO BELLO*
thagena: But he retired without attempting any Thing. taken.
He afterwards took and destroyed the Fortifications of *Porto Bello*: And the Magazine and Fort at the Mouth of the *Chiagre* had the same Fate. *Great Britain* encouraged by this Success sent a strong Fleet into *America* with 8000 veteran Troops. Thus strongly re-inforced the *British* Admiral returned to *Carthagena*, and soon made himself Master of the Harbour. The Troops were landed and an Assault was made on the Place; but being repulsed with some Loss and many of them being carried

carried off by Sickness it was thought proper to give over this Enterprize.

Having thus given a short View of the principal Events in the *Spanish* History, we shall before we close this Chapter give some Account of the Country; of the Genius of its Inhabitants; of its Strength; and wherein the Interest of *Spain* with Regard to other States consists.

Nature of the
INHABI-
TANTS.

The *Spaniards* who are allowed not to want Genius are remarkable for being slow in resolving. Some Opportunities are by this Means lost; but when they once come to a Determination they are very steady in carrying it into Execution, nor are they discouraged by any Difficulties. They are very good Soldiers, since they not only attack with great Briskness but will stand a long Time: And their Temperance and Dryness of Habit enable them to bear well all the Fatigues of War. Such as have lived a good While amongst them assure us that their Gravity, which makes them so disagreeable to Strangers, is not so much owing to Haughtiness as to a melancholick Disposition and to the small Acquaintance they have with Foreigners. They are in the General great Bigots to the *Romish* Religion, and as Bigots ever will be much given to persecute all whose religious Opinions are different. They are naturally so proud and slothful, that Agriculture and Trades which require Pains are for the most Part carried on amongst them by Strangers. With these they abound so much, that if Report says true there are in the single Town of *Madrid* no less than 40000 *French* Men; who being generally Merchants or Mechanicks for the Sake of avoiding the Hatred of the *Spaniards* to them go by the Name of *Burgundians*. The Haughtiness, Avarice and Cruelty of the *Spaniards* render them odious to the Nations who are in Subjection to them. As *Spain* is thinly peopled and consequently incapable of setting large Armies on Foot, it is very difficult to keep under Subjection her extensive Dominions. Divers Reasons are to be given for this. Their Women being by the Heat of the Air of a dryer Habit are less fruitful than in northern Countries; and the Inland Parts are in many Places incapable of producing what is necessary to support

port Life. Another Reason may be the great Number of Ecclesiasticks who take the Vow of Celibacy. The Wars of this Nation in *Italy* and the *Netherlands* have moreover vastly lessened the Number of its Inhabitants; but nothing has more contributed to the unpeopling of *Spain* than its *American* Colonies: To which the *Spaniards* are quite fond of going, because from small Beginnings they soon are enabled to make a handsome Figure. To all these Reasons may be added the banishing of so many thousand *Moors* from *Spain* by *Ferdinand* and *Philip*.

The Soil of *Spain* which is of large Extent is in *Of the Soil* some Parts very dry and barren, affording scarce any *and Commo-* Thing for the Sustenance of Man or Beast: But the *dities of* Provinces towards the *Sea Coasts* are pleasant and fruit- *SPAIN.* ful. Its Cattle are chiefly Sheep. There are indeed fine Horses; but these are in no great Number. The Situation of *Spain* is convenient for Trade, being almost surrounded by the Ocean and *Mediterranean* and well furnished with good Harbours. The Exports of this Kingdom are Wool, Silk, Wine, Rice, Oils, Raisins, Soap, Iron, Salt, &c. The Gold and Silver Mines of *Spain*, which were heretofore very valuable, are now prohibited from being worked upon the severest Penalties. The Reason is thought to be that the Treasure of these may be preserved for some great Emergency. The Revenue of this Kingdom is principally drawn from the *West-Indies*: From whence vast Quantities of Gold and Silver are yearly brought into *Spain*.

We have already mentioned at what Time *America Of the WEST* was as some Historians say first discovered by the *Eu- INDIES.* *ropeans*: But it ought not to be passed over in Silence, that this Discovery is said by others to have been made in the Year 1109 by *Madoc* Son of *Guisneth* a *Welch* Prince, who after having made two Voyages died in *America*. They add that he built a Fort in *Florida* or *Virginia*; or as others say in *Mexico*. Hence they account for the *British* Words which are met with in the *American* Language; and to this it may be owing that some Remains of Christianity were found amongst the *Americans* when the *Spaniards* first landed: So that if a Right to a Country be founded in making a
Discovery

Discovery of it the *English* have a better to *America* than the *Spaniards*. However this was, the *Spaniards* had certainly no just Pretence to subdue these People by Force of Arms. As to the Claim under a Bull of Pope *Alexander VI.* by which he gave the *West-Indies* to the Crown of *Spain*, it is ridiculous; and the *Americans* have merrily observed, *that the Pope must be a queer Fellow to give away what he had nothing to do with.* The *Spaniards* however think it sufficient that they are in Possession: And to say the Truth if a strict Enquiry was made the Title to most conquered Countries would be found none of the best. All conscientious *Spaniards* speak with the utmost Detestation of the horrid Cruelty at first exercised by their Countrymen against these unhappy People, who had never done them the least Injury. After many Hundred Thousands had been barbarously put to Death in cold Blood the rest were forced to submit to the most intolerable Slavery. At length *Charles V.* being informed of their miserable Condition ordered them to be set at Liberty. *Chili, Peru, Mexico,* and the Islands and other Parts of *America* now subject to the *Spaniards* are inhabited by five Sorts of People. The first are such as come from old *Spain* by whom all publick Offices are executed. The second being born of *Spanish* Parents in *America* are called *Creolians*. The Reason these are not trusted by the State is, lest being born in *America* they should be induced by the Love of their Country to attempt the delivering of it from the Yoke of the *Spaniards* whom they hate. For the same Reason the Governours who might by long Continuance in Power render themselves independent are changed once in three Years. On their Return into *Spain* they commonly have a Seat in the Council for the *Indies*, as being the most proper Persons to judge of what concerns them. The third Sort from a Mixture of *Spaniards* with *Indians* is held in great Contempt. Some of these who are born of an *Indian* and a *Spaniard* are called *Metifs*; others of a *Spaniard* and *Metif* are called *Quatralvos*; and others of an *Indian* and *Metif* are called *Tresalvos*. The fourth are the Remains of the ancient Inhabitants, who are by no Means so ignorant and barbarous as
many

many imagine; having amongst them Laws and Customs which *Europeans* may blush at the Want of. The fifth Sort are Negroes, who being bought in *Africa* are carried into *America* and put upon the most laborious Services. Such as are born of a *Negro* and an *Indian* or *Spaniard* are called *Mulattos*. The *Negroes* are good Servants and tractable; but are withall so treacherous and stubborn that it is necessary to keep them under with great Strictness. Notwithstanding the Numbers which have from Time to Time been sent thither from Old *Spain* and *Africa*, *America* has never recovered the Loss of Inhabitants it sustained by the Butchery of the *Spaniards* at their first settling: It is not however easy to drive the *Spaniards* from any Towns they are in Possession of for the following Reasons. In the first Place the Access to them is generally difficult. The Expence and Danger of transporting a sufficient Number of Troops from *Europe* is another Obstacle. If these two are surmounted, it is highly probable that an Army would for want of being enured to the Climate suffer so much from Distempers as not to be in a Condition to do much. As their Settlements in *Chili* and *Peru* are scarce to be come at by Land, and the Voyages to them, which must be by the *East-Indies* or round South *America*, are too long and sickly to be undertaken by a large Body of Forces, they look upon themselves to be very secure there. The *Spaniards* at their first landing in *America* found no Coin, the Use of this being unknown to the Natives; but this was sufficiently made amends for by an incredible Quantity of Gold and Silver, wrought without the Help of Iron Tools into Vessels of various Sorts. Of these immense Riches all of which they seized a good Part was swallowed up by the Sea in carrying them Home. The Rivers were also by Degrees cleared of their Golden Sand, so that all the Gold and Silver which at this Time comes from the *West-Indies* is dug out of the Bowels of the Earth. Vast Quantities of Silver are still found in the Mines of *Potosi* in *Peru*, with which and other rich Goods a Fleet is yearly laden for *Spain*: Yet of this so little remains when the *French*, *British* and *Dutch*

Merchants have had their Due, that it is with good Reason said, *the Spaniards keep the Cow but others drink the Milk.* In Allusion to this when the *Spanish* Ambassador, in a Dispute which happened at *Rome* in the Year 1536 with the *French* Minister about Precedency, to set forth his Master's Greatness spoke of the Riches of the *West-Indies*, this last answered, *that all Europe and particularly Spain had suffered greatly by every Thing being grown much dearer on this Account: That since the the Discovery of the new World the Spaniards were grown Slothful and their Country depopulated and uncultivated; That their Kings trusting in their Riches have engaged in many unnecessary Wars; and that notwithstanding her Boasts Spain was the poorest of all Nations, being drained of her Treasures by other States who furnish her with Troops and goods. Emeralds are also found in America as were formerly Pearls; but the Stock of these last is long since by the Avarice of the Spaniards entirely exhausted. This Country produces great Quantities of Druggs used in Medicine and by Dyers. Sugar is also brought from thence and Hides in such Quantities, that one Fleet in the Year 1583 had on board no less than 90794. The Bulls and Cows which the Spaniards first carried into America having encreased prodigiously, they shoot them for their Hides Sake, the Flesh being of small Value. As the Dependence of the Spaniards is so much upon the West-Indies they are very cautious to maintain their Power in them. With a View to this they will not suffer any Trade or Manufacture to be established there; nor are the Inhabitants allowed to receive any European Goods which they can no Way shift without but in Spanish Bottoms.*

Of the
CANARY
ISLANDS.

Besides these vast Dominions in *America* the *Spaniards* are in Possession of the *Canary* Islands, from whence are exported great Quantities of Sugar and Wine. Of the last of these it is reported that *Great Britain* alone takes annually 13000 Pipes at near 30*l.* Sterling per Pipe.

Nothing now
remains to
SPAIN in the
NETHER-
LANDS.

As the united Provinces are separated from the rest of the low Countries, and as Part of the other Provinces were by the Treaty of *Utrecht* left to *France*, *Prussia* and

and *Holland*, and the Remainder to the House of *Austria*, *Spain* retains at this Time nothing of what belonged to the House of *Burgundy* except the Golden Fleece in its Arms.

The *Spaniards* have in the *East-Indies* the *Phillipine Settlements Isles*. These are however of so little Consequence in in the EAST-
themselves, that was it not for the Trade which by INDIES.
the Help of *Manilla* their Capital is carried on between
the *East* and *West-Indies* they had been long ago
abandoned.

Although *Spain* be naturally powerful, having under Of the
it many rich and flourishing Kingdoms, which are not Strength of
only productive of what is necessary to support the In- SPAIN.
habitants but are also able to spare a great deal to other
Nations, and although the *Spaniards* are neither bad Po-
liticians nor bad Soldiers, yet this Kingdom instead
of being formidable to its Neighbours can scarce sup-
port itself. Amongst other Reasons for this the most
considerable is, that the Inhabitants of *Old Spain* are
not numerous enough to keep its extensive Provinces
naturally prone to Sedition quiet, and at the same Time
to make Head against a powerful Enemy. This can-
not safely be made Amends for by drawing Succours
from the Countries subject to them; because it is ne-
cessary to discourage in these all Valour and military
Skill, lest the Inhabitants should in after Times be able
to throw off their Yoke: And whenever they do levy
any Forces in these Countries, they are never trusted
with the Defence of their native Country but employed
at a Distance under *Spanish* Commanders. Thus it comes
to pass, that when *Spain* is engaged in a foreign War she
is obliged to hire Troops: Which besides being very
expensive can never be so well depended upon as Sub-
jects. By this Want of People *Spain* is also prevented
from keeping up a large Fleet, notwithstanding this is
so necessary for the Security of her Monarchy. The
great Distance of some of its Dominions is another
Misfortune to this Kingdom, it being almost impossible
for the King to know how his Governours behave, or
for the People when oppressed to represent their Grievances to him: And the transporting of Troops for the
Defence

Defence of distant Countries besides other Inconveniences exhausts the Blood and Treasure of *Spain*. This Kingdom being moreover liable to be attacked on many Sides, it must always greatly divide its Forces: So that although these united would be considerable, yet as some Provinces cannot by reason of the Distance receive Assistance from others they become an easy Prey to Invaders. It is also to be considered, that *America* from whence the Treasure of *Spain* entirely comes is separated from her by a vast Ocean; for which Reason whenever the Fleet which should bring it home is lost, taken or stopped, she is rendered incapable of doing any Thing. Notwithstanding the *West-India* Trade is of so great Consequence to *Spain*, it is so ill managed that most of the Treasure comes into the Hands of Foreigners, and is often made use of against herself. Another Thing which has much weakened *Spain* is, that after the Death of *Philip II.* the Supineness of his Successors and the long Minority of *Charles II.* gave the Grandees an Opportunity of encreasing their Power and Riches to the Prejudice of the Publick. It remains to be added, that the Clergy as is generally the Case in *Roman Catholick* Countries have too much Power: For although good Part of the Wealth of this Kingdom is got into their Hands, they pretend to be exempted by Right Divine from all Taxes; nor will they contribute but in Cases of the greatest Necessity and with the *Pope's* Consent to the publick Expence. It is indeed true, that the Kings of *Spain* have by a Grant from *Pope Adrian VI.* the Power of presenting to all considerable Ecclesiastical Benefices, and are grand Masters of all Orders of Knighthood in *Spain*: Yet this Kingdom is always zealously attached to the See of *Rome*, because the *Spaniards* are in the general Bigots and there are many Jesuits in it.

Interests of
SPAIN with
regard to its
Neighbours.
BARBARY.

Spain still retains on the Coast of *Barbary* the Forts of *Pennon de Velez*, *Oran* and *Arzilla*. It is of Consequence for her to keep these and if she could to get *Algiers* and *Tunis*. Notwithstanding the Nearness of their Coast she has no Need to fear an Invasion from the *Moors*: For the whole Race of them is now extinct
in

in *Spain*. As to the Piracies of their *Corfsairs* this Kingdom does not suffer so much by them as others: It being not customary for the *Spaniards* to carry their Goods to other Parts of *Europe*; but for the Ships of other Nations to load in *Spanish* Ports and trade to *Italy*, *Turky* and other Places in the *Mediterranean*.

As nothing in *Italy* now belongs to the *Spanish* Mo- TURKY.
narchy, the *Turks* are at too great a Distance to have any Influence upon it.

Spain has nothing to fear from *Italy*, it being a ITALY in
Maxim amongst the *Italian* Princes to be at Peace with General.
Spain, that they may have her Assistance against the Encroachments of *France*. On the other Hand, if *Spain* was to attempt any Thing against *Italy* all the States would join against her: And if they were not able to cope with her, *France* would without Doubt be ready to assist them.

The Pope and *Venetians* have since her being de- The POPE and
tached from *Italy* nothing to quarrel with *Spain* about, VENETIANS.
but on the contrary great Reason to be upon good Terms with her; the former on Account of the large Sums of Money he draws from thence; the latter for the Sake of having a powerful Ally of *Spain* in Cases of Need.

It was formerly of great Consequence for *Spain* to GENOA.
be in Alliance with the *Genoese*; because upon this the Preservation of the *Milanese* much depended. With a View therefore to make them dependent on *Spain*, *Charles V.* formed a Project of building a Citadel in *Genoa*. As the *Genoese* being convinced by *Andrea Doria* of the Mischief of this would not consent to it, the *Spaniards* contrived to borrow large Sums of them upon the Security of the King's Revenues in *Naples*. They afterwards, to put it absolutely out of the Power of the *Genoese* to cut off their Communication with the *Milanese*, made themselves Masters of *Final*. As the *Spaniards* have now lost both the *Milanese* and *Final* they have nothing to fear from *Genoa*: But it is much for the Interest of the *Genoese* to be upon good Terms with them.

SARDINIA.

It much concerns *Spain* to cultivate a good Understanding with *Sardinia*; for the Friendship of this Court may be very serviceable on many Occasions.

SWISSER-
LAND.

It is for the Interest of *Spain* to be upon good Terms with the *Swiss* Cantons, because these have Troops to lett; and although they are divided in Religion Money is the ruling Principle of them all. The Influence of *Spain* prevails most in the Catholick as does that of *France* in the Protestant Cantons; but these last are the most powerful.

HOLLAND.

Before the Treaty of *Munster* the *Dutch* were the worst Enemies *Spain* had; but it is now for the Interest of both Powers to be in Amity, since their Trade would mutually suffer by a War. There is no Need to apprehend any Thing from *Holland* in the *West-Indies*; because it concerns *France* and *Great Britain*, as well as *Spain*, that the *Dutch* who are already Masters in the *East* should not become so in the *West-Indies*. While the *Netherlands* belonged to *Spain* it much concerned *Holland* to prevent their being conquered by *France*: But this Matter is since the Treaty of *Utrecht* quite altered.

GREAT
BRITAIN.

It is in the Power of *Great Britain* to annoy the *Spaniards* by Sea and in the *West-Indies*; yet a War with *Spain* would do her more Hurt than Good: For her Trade with *Old Spain* which is very considerable would be quite ruined, and that in the *Mediterranean* would suffer much from *Spanish* Privateers. Besides *France* and *Holland* would not bear to see *Great Britain* make much Progress in the *West-Indies*.

PORTUGAL.

Portugal alone can do *Spain* no Hurt. It must be allowed, that if *Spain* be at War with other Powers the *Portuguese* by making a Diversion may do her a good deal of Mischief; but they could get nothing and might in the End lose by it.

FRANCE.

France is the most formidable Enemy to this Kingdom, being by her Situation and great Power able to give much Disturbance to *Spain*: For which Reason, notwithstanding the good Understanding which at present subsists betwixt the two Courts, it much concerns

Spain

Spain to guard against any further Aggrandisement of *France*.

As the Empire is most capable of assisting *Spain* in GERMANY. Case of a War with *France*, it is for her Interest to be upon good Terms with the House of *Austria*, and to cultivate a good Understanding with the *Germanick* Body.

C H A P. III.

Of P O R T U G A L.

PORTUGAL, **I**N the Reign of *Roderick* the last King in *Spain* of the *Gothick* Line, *Portugal*, which comprehends the greatest Part of what was by the *Romans* called *Lusitania*, fell with a great Part of *Spain* under the Dominion of the *Moors*. When *Alphonso VI.* King of *Leon* about the Year 1080 mustered all his Forces and craved the Assistance of Foreigners against the *Moors*; amongst other Volunteer Princes who served under him there was one named *Henry*. Historians are not agreed as to his Extraction. Some say he was a younger Brother of *Robert* Duke of *Burgundy*, who was Son of *Robert* King of *France* and Grandson of *Hugh Capet*. Others will have him to be of the House of *Lorrain*, and alledge that his being born at *Besançon* was the Reason of his being generally supposed a *Burgundian*. However this was, *Alphonso* in Return for the Bravery he shewed on that Occasion gave him *Theresa* his natural Daughter in Marriage; and all in *Portugal* which at that Time belonged to the *Christians* with the Title of Count for her Portion. He further granted to him as much of the Country beyond the *Guadiana* as he could conquer from the *Moors*: On condition however that he should be a Vassal of *Leon*, and serve under the King. in the Time of War with three hundred Horse. This Prince died in the Year 1112; leaving *Alphonso* a Son very young.

ALPHONSO I. During the Minority of *Alphonso* his Dominions suffered greatly by the Usurpation of *Ferdinando Paez* Count de *Traylamara* his Mother's second Husband: But being arrived at Years of Maturity he took Arms against him, and after driving him out of *Portugal* shut his Mother up in a Prison. *Alphonso VII.* of *Leon* was prevailed

vailed upon by her Promise of disinheriting her Son, and giving him *Portugal* to come to her Assistance: But he was defeated by the Count; who not long after took an Opportunity of throwing off all Subjection to *Leon*, and was in the Year 1139 proclaimed King by his Army at *Cabecas des Reyes*, while he was upon an Expedition against *Ismar*, whose Dominions lay beyond the *Tagus*, and four other *Moorish* Kings. The Soldiers were so animated by this new Title, that they obtained soon after a compleat Victory over the *Moors*, and took their Standards from the Body Guards of the five Kings: In Remembrance of which five Standards are to this Day born in the Arms of *Portugal*. *Alphonso* took afterwards many Places from the *Moors*, and amongst the rest *Lisbon* was with the Assistance of a Fleet from the *Netherlands* taken by him in the Year 1147. He was afterwards taken Prisoner by *Ferdinand* of *Leon*; but he set him at Liberty without any other Ransom than his restoring to *Leon* some Places he had taken in *Galicia*. After carrying the Bounds of his Kingdom still farther, an End was put to his glorious Reign in the Year 1185 and eighty-first of his Age.

He throws off
Subjection to
LEON, and is
proclaimed
KING.

1139.

LISBON

taken, 1147.

Sancho his Son and Successor built and peopled many Towns; and being assisted by a Fleet from the *Low Countries* he took *Selva* from the *Moors*. Having been during his whole Reign constantly engaged with the *Moors* he died in 1212.

SANCHO I.
1185.

He was succeeded by *Alphonso* II. his Son surnamed *the Fat*. In this Reign nothing happened worth Notice, except the taking of *Alcassar* from the *Moors*.

ALPHONSO
II.
1212.

At his Death in the Year 1223 *Sancho* II. his Son succeeded; but being quite indolent and governed by his Wife the *Portuguese* deposed him, and raised *Alphonso* his Brother to the Throne. He died in Exile at *Toledo* in the Year 1246.

SANCHO II.
1223.

Alphonso III. put away his Wife *Matilda* Countess of *Bologna* on account of her Age, and married *Beatrice* Daughter of *Alphonso* King of *Castile*: With whom he had the Province of *Algarve* as a Portion. He was excommunicated by the Pope on this Account. His Reign was however happy and many Towns were by him added to the Kingdom.

ALPHONSO
III.

To

DENIS, 1279. To *Alphonso* who died in the Year 1279 succeeded his Son *Denis*; whose Justice and Generosity are much extolled by the *Portuguese*. He laid the Foundation of the Univerſity of *Coimbra* and ſo many other magnificent publick Buildings, that they have in *Portugal* this Saying, *King Denis could do what he pleaſed*. He died in the Year 1325.

ALPHONSO IV. 1325. *Alphonso IV.* ſurnamed *the Brave* his Son and Succeſſor was ſucceſſful both in Peace and War: He is however blamed for uſing ill and afterwards baniſhing his natural Brother a great Favourite of the late King and of the People; and for putting to Death *Donna Agnes de Caſtro* a beautiful young Lady who was privately married to his Son *Peter*. This young Prince being thereby greatly exaſperated fomented a Rebellion againſt his Father; and obliged him after great Loſſes ſuſtained to come to Terms with him.

PETER 1357. *Peter* his Son who ſucceeded in the Year 1357 was ſurnamed *the Cruel*; yet ſome Hiſtorians ſay that he by no Means deſerved that Name being only rigorous in puniſhing Malefactorſ. He died in the Year 1368 and was ſucceeded by *Ferdinand* his Son.

FERDINAND, 1368. This Prince diſputed the Right to the Crown of *Caſtile* with *Henry* the Baſtard; who became Maſter of it by murdering *Peter* his Brother. The Pretenſions of *Ferdinand*, which were backed by many of the Nobility of this Kingdom, were founded on his Mother *Beatrice's* being Siſter to *Sancho IV.* But as *Henry* was ſucceſſful in a War which broke out on this Occaſion, *Ferdinand* was glad to make Peace. The War being renewed in the Year 1373, becauſe *Ferdinand* ſheltered ſome Traitors who had fled from *Caſtile*, *Henry* advanced with his Army into the Heart of *Portugal*. The Death of *Henry* which happened at this Juncture gave *Ferdinand* an Opportunity of making up Matters with his Son *John*: Yet his reſtleſs Temper could not be quiet; for having loſt all Hopes of making good his own Claim he put *John* Duke of *Lancaſter*, who had married *Conſtance* of *Caſtile* *Peter's* Daughter, upon aſſerting his Right thereto. A conſiderable Army was here-upon brought over from *England* under that Prince; little was however done, and a Reconciliation was ſoon brought

brought about betwixt all the Parties concerned. After this *Beatrice* the Daughter of *Ferdinand* married *John* King of *Castile*; but it being agreed that the Issue of this Match should succeed to *Portugal* a Foundation was thereby laid of a cruel War. This Prince whose ill Management had been the Cause of great Losses to the Kingdom died in the Year 1383; and with him ended the Race of the first Kings of *Portugal*.

It was agreed by the Marriage Contract of *Ferdinand's* Daughter, that the Regency of *Portugal* should be in *Beatrice* during the Minority of the Children she might have by the King of *Castile*. This Princess entirely lost the Affection of the People by leaving every Thing to the Management of her Favourite the Count *de Andeira*; who having rendered himself odious to the Nobility was murdered by *John* a natural Son of *Peter* King of *Portugal*. By this Action *John* recommended himself to a great Part of the Nation, who dreaded the Yoke of the *Castilians*; whereupon *Beatrice* finding the People irritated to the last Degree against her, joined with such as did not like *John* in begging the King of *Castile* to take upon himself the Crown of *Portugal*.

In all Likelihood this might have been done if he had set out immediately; but by delaying the Party of *John* had Time to strengthen themselves: And upon his Arrival in *Portugal* he found the People, to whom his reserved Manner was not at all agreeable, very cool towards him. Some indeed of the Nobility and some few Towns declared for him; the Majority however adhered to *John*, who was a Prince of great Sense and Courage and much beloved by the People. After attempting the Siege of *Lisbon* the *Castilians*, who had lost a great Part of their Army by a Plague, were forced to retire.

In the following Year *John* was proclaimed King. He soon reduced the Places which refused to submit to him; and when the *Castilians* strongly reinforced again entered *Portugal*, he obtained a signal Victory over them near *Aljubarotta*, which is to this Day annually celebrated. The *Portuguese* in their Turn attacked *Castile*; and by flattering him with the Hopes of this Crown prevailed upon the Duke of *Lancaster* to join with them.

Great Disturbances in
PORTUGAL.

The King of
CASTILE is
invited to the
Crown.

JOHN the
Bastard,
1385.
Battle of
ALJUBA-
ROTTA.

Peace with
CASTILE,
1399.

MADEIRA
discovered,
1415.

EDWARD,
1443.
A Plague
makes great
Havock.

ALPHONSO
V.
1448.

them. After great Havock amongst the *English* by Sick-
ness a Peace was made; the Condition of which was,
that the King of *Castile's* Son should marry the Duke's
only Daughter *Catherine*, whom he had by *Constance*
Daughter of *Peter* King of *Castile*. Upon the Expira-
tion of a Suspension of Arms at the same Time agreed
upon between *Portugal* and *Castile* the War was renew-
ed; but the *Castilian* was glad to make Peace in the
Year 1399; and *John*, who had by his Bravery esta-
blished himself in the Kingdom of *Portugal*, reigned a
long Time over it with great Applause. Having settled
all Things that concerned the Quiet of his Kingdom
he carried his Arms into *Africa*, and took *Ceuta* on the
Coast of *Barbary*. In the Year 1415 the Island of
Madeira was discovered by his Son. He died in the
58th Year of his Reign much lamented by the *Portu-
guese*; who have ever since retained the greatest Regard
for his Memory.

The Reign of *Edward* his Son and Successor was very
short, it being put an End to in the Year 1448 by a
Plague; which after ravaging the Kingdom for some
Time was conveyed to him by a Letter. His Brothers
who had a little before his Death made a Descent upon
Africa were taken Prisoners; nor could they obtain
their Liberty without a Promise that *Ceuta* should be
restored to the *Moors*. One of them *Ferdinand* was
left as an Hostage; and as the *Portuguese* would not
make good this Promise he spent the Remainder of his
Days in Prison.

Alphonso V. was only six Years of Age at the Death
of his Father *Edward*; who by Will appointed the
Mother of this Prince Regent. The States of *Por-
tugal* disliking the Administration of a foreign Prince's
transferred the Regency to the Duke de *C Coimbra* *Ed-
ward's* Brother: But it cost him dear, for being accused
to the young King of fomenting a Rebellion, he was
assassinated upon the Road as he was going to justify
himself. *Alphonso* being a brave and wise Prince in his
Reign *Tangier*, *Arzilla* and other Places on the Coast
of *Africa* were taken by the *Portuguese*; and he caused
a large Quantity of Gold brought from *Guinea* to be
coined into *Cruzados*.

A Contract of Marriage was made between *Alphonso* War with and *Jane* a nominal Daughter of *Henry IV.* King of *CASTILE, Castile*, but begotten as it was generally believed in Adultery. A Dispensation was after long Importunity obtained for this Marriage from the Pope, she being his Sister's Daughter: but *Alphonso* was so cunning as not to consummate the Marriage till he could see what Use was to be made of her Right to *Castile*. Having first taken the Arms and Title he seized some Places belonging to this Kingdom. Some of the Nobility at the same Time declared for him, and he received Succours from *France*; yet Fortune was favourable to *Ferdinand*, who after recovering all the *Portuguese* had taken from *Castile*, and beating them twice at *Taoro* in *The PORTU-* the Year 1476 and at *Alubera* in the Year 1479, car- *GUESE beat* ried his victorious Arms into their own Kingdom. in two *Ex-* Finding he could get nothing by this War *Alphonso* was *gagements.* glad to make Peace by renouncing his Pretensions both to *Jane* and the Kingdom of *Castile*. A Marriage was afterwards proposed between this Princess and *John* the Son of *Ferdinand* then an Infant; but being determined to be no longer the Sport of Fortune she in the Year 1487 went into a Nunnery. As *Alphonso* died shortly after, his Death was supposed to be a good deal owing to Uneasiness occasioned by the Disappointments he met with.

1487.

His Son *John II.* was hardly seated on the Throne *JOHN II.* before a dangerous Conspiracy was formed against him; which being discovered cost many their Lives, and amongst others the Dukes *de Braganza* and *de Viseo* whom the King stabbed with his own Hands. This Prince it was who paved the Way to a Trade in the *East Indies*: For he not only caused an exact Survey to be made of the Coast of *Africa* as far as the *Cape of Good Hope*, but dispatched some over Land to learn the State of the Country. Having afterwards built *Fort St. George de la Mina* on the Coast of *Guinea* he died without Issue in the Year 1495.

To *John* succeeded his Cousin *Emanuel* Son of *Fer-* *EMANUEL;* *dinand* Duke *de Viseo* and Grandson of King *Edward.* 1495. A Claim to the Crown was put in by the Emperor *Maximilian*, in Right of his Mother *Elcanor* Daughter of the same King *Edward*; But the People declared for *Emanuel*

Jews and
Moors
banished.

Emanuel who was much esteemed for his good Qualities. To establish himself on the Throne he married *Isabella* eldest Daughter of *Ferdinand* of *Castile*; by whom he had a Son named *Michael*, who if he had lived would have been Heir to all the Kingdoms in *Spain* except *Navarre*. In Complaisance to his Wife he published an Order requiring all *Moors* and *Jews* to depart the Kingdom of *Portugal* within a Time limited upon the Pain of Slavery. The *Moors* fled into *Africa*. From the *Jews* all their Children under fourteen were taken by Force and baptized; and some were so ill used and plundered upon their going away, that many of them consented to be baptized although they still retained their Prejudices against Christianity.

Trade carried
on by Sea to
the EAST
INDIES,
1497.

In this Reign the Navigation to the *East Indies*, towards which some Steps had been taken in the preceding, was carried into Execution. *Viseo de Gama* in the Year 1497 made the Tour of *Africa* and landed at *Calicut*: But the *Portuguese* met with great Opposition from the Sultan of *Egypt* and Republick of *Venice*. As all the *East India* Goods which before this Time were brought into *Europe* came by the Way of *Egypt* and *Venice*, these two Nations united in using their utmost Efforts to prevent the interfering of the *Portuguese* in a Trade so advantageous to them. Their Endeavours were however ineffectual; and the *Portuguese*, not caring to trust to the fair Words of the *Indian* Kings, took Care to build Forts in the Places most convenient for Trade. In doing this they met with little Resistance; partly because the *Indians* were terrified at the Artillery and Ships of *Europe*; and partly because they were ignorant of what dangerous Consequence these Forts might be.

Progress of
the Duke
D'ALBU-
QUERQUE
in the EAST
INDIES.

The Conquests of the *Portuguese* in the *East Indies* were much enlarged by the Duke *D'Albuquerque*, who made himself Master of *Ormuz*, *Malacca*, *Cochin* and *Goa*: The last of which was made the Residence of their Governor. This *India* Trade was not only in itself very valuable to *Portugal*, but the more so, because it gave them an Opportunity of making Settlements in all the proper Ports on the Southern as well as Western Coasts of *Africa*, and thereby engrossing the *African* Trade.

Besides all this, in the Year 1500 *Brazil* was as *BRAZIL* discovered by *Peter Alvarez Capralis*; or as covered, 1500. others say by *Americus Vespufius*; and many Colonies were established there by the *Portuguese*. In the Year 1521 *Emanuel* died, during whose Reign such immense Riches were brought into *Portugal* that it has been usually called *The Golden Age*.

John III. his Son and Successor sent *Francis Xavier* JOHN III. and other *Jesuits* to preach the Gospel in the *Indies*; 1521. who boasted of converting to Christianity and baptizing great Numbers of the Inhabitants.

At the Death of *John* in the Year 1557 *Sebastian* his SEBASTIAN, Grandson then but three Years of Age succeeded, 1557. and upon the Refusal of the Queen his Grandmother the Regency came into the Hands of Cardinal *Henry* his Father's Brother. *Sebastian* being of a warm Temper and fond of Fame he was easily led by Parasites into Schemes, which by no means suited his Age or the Circumstances of the Time. As he thought of nothing but War his whole Study was to revive in his Subjects their ancient Valour; which by the long Continuance of Peace and their Application to Trade was in a great measure lost.

He had once a Mind to attempt something in the *East* His Expedition *Indies*. This was however laid aside, and a Resolution into *AFRICA*. was taken of assisting *Muley Mahomet* King of *Morocco*, whom his Brother *Muley Molucco* had drove from his Dominions: Nor could all the Persuasions of *Philip* of *Spain* and other Princes his Friends prevail upon him to desist from this Enterprize. Having landed in *Africa* he contrary to all the Rules of Prudence advanced so far into the Country, as to put himself under a Necessity of engaging a much larger Army and of better Troops than his own. The *Is defeated and* Event was such as his Rashness deserved, great Part of *slain*. his Army being cut to Pieces and the rest made Prisoners. This Battle, which was fought in the Year 1578, was remarkable for the Death of three Kings on the Field: for *Sebastian* and *Muley Mahomet* were slain in the Action; and *Muley Molucco* died of a Fever during the Engagement.

His Uncle Cardinal *Henry* was now notwithstanding HENRY, ing his great Age advanced to the Throne; but his 1578. Right

Right to it was during the two years he reigned constantly disputed.

1580.
PORTUGAL
united to
CASTILE.

Upon his Death *Philip II.* of *Spain* concluded, that the best and shortest Way to make good his Pretensions was to do it Sword in Hand. Being no Stranger to the Aversion of the *Portuguese* to the *Castilians*, and to the Party which was forming in Favour of *Anthony* natural Son of *Lewis* Duke of *Bela*, who was Son to King *Emanuel*, he immediately sent the Duke *D'Alva* with a powerful Army into *Portugal*: Who in a few Days subdued the whole Kingdom and obliged *Anthony* to quit it. The Island of *Tercera* having received some Succours from *France* held out for some Time; but after the Loss of a Battle it was forced to acknowledge *Philip*. This Subjection to *Castile* so hateful to the *Portuguese* was attended with very bad Consequences. *Philip* imagining thereby to reduce the *Netherlands* to Obedience forbid them all Commerce with *Spain* and *Portugal*: But instead of answering his Purpose this put the *Dutch*, who till then fetched all their *India* Goods from *Spain* and *Portugal* and carried them to the northern Parts of *Europe*, upon attempting the Voyage to the *East Indies*.

The DUTCH
get Footing in
the EAST
INDIES and
BRAZIL.
1630.

After great Difficulties they got Footing there, and drove the *Portuguese* before sole Masters of the *Asiatick* Commerce from some of their best Settlements: Nor did the Affair end here; for in the Year 1630 they made themselves Masters of Part of *Brazil*, and of many Places on the Coast of *Africa*. It is highly probable that the *Dutch* would neither have attempted nor succeeded in these Conquests, if the *Portuguese* had continued under a King of their own.

The PORTU-
GUESE get
rid of the
SPANISH
Yoke: and
proclaim
JOHN IV.

About the Year 1640 *Philip* summoned the *Portuguese* Nobility to assist in suppressing a Rebellion in *Catalonia*. Being armed and assembled on this Occasion they concluded it a proper Time to deliver themselves from the *Spanish* Yoke, and forthwith proclaimed the Duke *de Braganza* by the Name of *John IV.* The *Spaniards* were to be sure very remiss in not securing the Person of this Duke; who, besides being greatly beloved and having an apparent Right to the Crown, was in Possession of at least a fourth Part of the Kingdom. As *Spain* was at the same Time embroiled with

with *France* and *Holland* as well as *Catalonia*, the *Portuguese* had a fine Opportunity of re-establishing their Affairs. Their next Step was to agree with *Holland* that each Nation should keep what it had: But shortly after the Places in *Brazil* belonging to the *Dutch* revolted the *Portuguese*.

The *Dutch* insisting that this was occasioned by the *War with* Intrigues of the *Portuguese* declared War immediately *HOLLAND*. against them; and in Revenge for the Loss in *Brazil* took from them many Places in the *East Indies*. After *Conquests of* losing *Malacca* and all on the Coasts of *Ceylon* and *Co-* the *DUTCH* *romandel*, together with *Cananor* and other Places on the *in the EAST-* *Malabar Coast*, the *Portuguese* were glad to save what was *INDIES*. left by making Peace with *Holland* in the Year 1661.

Alphonso VI. the Son of *John* being at his Father's *ALPHONSO* Death in the Year 1651 a Minor, his Mother gover- *VI.* ned with great Prudence during his Minority. After 1651. the War between *France* and *Spain* was put an End to *War with* by the *Pyrenean Treaty*, the *Spaniards* turned all their *SPAIN*. Forces against *Portugal*. *France* had promised by this Treaty to give no Assistance to the *Portuguese*; yet Count *Schomberg* and other *French* Officers were permitted to go into their Service. The *Portuguese* defended themselves with great Bravery; and after gaining the Advantage on several Occasions entirely defeated the *Two Victories* *Spaniards* near *Estremos* in the Year 1662, and near *Villa over the* *Viciofa* in the Year 1665. The *Netherlands* being at- *SPANIARDS*. tacked by *France* in the Year 1668 *Spain* was glad to *Peace with* make Proposals of Peace, which were readily listened to *SPAIN*, 1668. by *Portugal*: Who wished for nothing so much as to get honourably out of a troublesome War. By a Treaty soon after made *Spain* gave up all her Pretensions to *Portugal*.

Alphonso as *Don Peter's* Friends relate was a Prince *ALPHONSO* of a very poor Capacity, and had in his Youth con- *takes the* tracted a Distemper which rendered him incapable of *Government* governing. However this was, being arrived at full *into his own* Age he much against her Inclination took the Admini- *Hands*. stration from his Mother, and not long after married a Princess of the House of *Savoy Nemours*. This Princess after cohabiting with him sixteen Months retired into a Monastery; and in order to be divorced from him alledged not only that he was Impotent, but that he

He is dethroned.

would have had her submit to the Embraces of one of his Favourites, to the End that there might be an Heir to the Crown. The Misunderstanding between the King and *Peter* his Brother came at last to such a Pitch, that the latter suspected a Design upon his Life. Having hereupon engaged the greater Part both of the Nobility and People in his Favour, *Alphonso* was forced to resign the Government to him; the Sum of 270,000 Livres yearly with the Palace of *Braganza* and its Appurtanances being reserved for his Support.

DON PETER
marries his
Brother's
Wife.

Don Peter, who contented himself for the present with the Title of Regent, having obtained a Dispensation from the Pope married the Queen his Sister-in-Law; and to put it entirely out of his Brother's Power to give him any Disturbance, he sent him under a strong Guard to the Island of *Tercera*.

PETER, 1683.

At his Brother's Death in 1683 *Peter* who had before all the Authority took upon himself the Title of King. He had by the Princess of *Savoy Nemours* an only Daughter, who was engaged to but did not marry the Duke of *Savoy*: For when the *Portuguese* Fleet went for him, he having all of a sudden altered his Mind sent it back, and not long after married a Daughter of the Duke of *Orleans*.

He marries a
second Wife.

Before the Death of the Infanta *Peter* was strongly solicited by his Subjects to take a second Wife: Lest, as this Princess was very infirm, the Kingdom should be plunged into the Miseries which commonly arise from a disputed Succession. They at length prevailed upon him, and he married *Maria Sophia* Daughter of *William* Duke of *Neubourg* Elector *Palatine*: By whom he had *John* his Successor; *Frances Xavier* born in the Year 1691; *Anthony* born in the Year 1694; and *Emanuel* born in the Year 1697.

He offers his
Mediation for
the Treaty of
RYSWICK.

Peter having before the Treaty of *Ryswick* offered his Mediation at the Court of *Versailles*, this Court gave him for Answer, that she was willing to accept the Mediation of any neutral Power if the Powers embroiled with her would do the same. This being looked upon as a genteel Refusal he gave himself no more Trouble about the Mediation; which was afterward undertaken by *Sweden*.

The Situation of his Dominions would not suffer *Treaty with Peter* to be neuter in the War which arose on the Account of the *Spanish* Succession. He at first sided with *Philip V.* of *Spain*, the Duke of *Anjou*, and concluded with him a Treaty which consisted of the following Articles: That the Treaty between the two Nations concluded in the Year 1688 should be inviolably preserved; that *France* should make no further Incroachments on the *Portuguese* in *America*, and should make Satisfaction to *Portugal* concerning the *Negro* Trade; that *Peter* should acknowledge *Philip V.* as King of *Spain*; and that no Shelter should be given in the *Portuguese* Ports to the *English* or *Dutch* in case of their declaring for the Archduke *Charles*. It was moreover agreed, that if *Portugal* should be attacked on the Account of this Treaty *France* should send to her Assistance thirty Sail of Men of War; that, in Consideration of a Subsidy of 300,000 Crowns to be annually paid by *France* during the War, *Peter* should fit out a Fleet of twelve Ships in Support of the common Cause; and that *France* should assist in recovering the Isle of *Ceylon* from the *Dutch*. These Engagements with *France* did not however induce the Court of *Lisbon* to acknowledge the Pretender as King of *England*, notwithstanding the strong Sollicitations made use of for this Purpose.

The Event plainly shewed that the Design of this *Treaty with Prince* was only to gain Time, till he could see what the *ALLIES*, the other *European* Powers would do on this important Occasion: For upon the Arrival of a Fleet of the Allies on the Coast of *Portugal* this Treaty gave way to a Neutrality, which was soon followed by Engagements directly contrary. By a Treaty with the *Allies* concluded in the Year 1703 it was agreed, that the Archduke *Charles* should marry the Infanta *Donna Theresa* then but seven Years of Age; that when he was established upon the Throne of *Spain* he should cede to *Portugal*, *Badojox*, *Albuquerque*, *Valentia*, *D'Alcantara* and *Alcantara* in *Estremadura*; *Bayonne*, *Vigo* and some other Towns in *Galicia*; together with all in the *West Indies* that lies between *Brazil* and the River *Plata*.

In Consequence of this Treaty *Charles* in the following Year, being furnished with twenty-eight Sail of Men of War and an hundred and sixty Transports from *England* and *Holland*, embarked with ten thousand Land Forces for *Portugal*. Having already given an Account of the Success of this Expedition we shall only observe, that the *Infanta* his intended Bride died about fifteen Days before his Arrival at *Lisbon*. On the 9th of *December* in the same Year *Peter* died; and was succeeded by *John* Prince of *Brazil* his eldest Son.

JOHN V.
1704.

Having in the preceding Chapter taken Notice of this Prince's Share in the War on the account of the *Spanish* Succession, we shall but just shew, that about the Time of concluding the Treaty of *Utrecht* the Kingdom of *Portugal* was brought into imminent Danger. *Charles* after his Accession to the *Imperial* Dignity quitted *Spain*, and turned his whole Force against *France*. This last was unequal of herself to the united Forces of the *Allies*: But as some of these were weary of the War, and others judged that the Change produced by the Death of the Emperor *Joseph* made its Continuance unnecessary, Negotiations for a Peace were set on foot. In this Situation of Things it was highly necessary for *Portugal* to be comprehended in a Treaty made with her Allies. The doing of this was indeed attended with Difficulties; for *John* not only expected that all *Charles* had promised to *Portugal* should be made good, but insisted that *Coria*, *Cividad Rodrigo* and some other Places should also be added to his Barrier. On the contrary the Court of *Madrid*, which was willing to pay what was due to the *Portuguese* Merchants on the Account of the *Negro* Trade, would listen to none of these Demands. While this wide Difference subsisted between the two Courts the Treaty of *Utrecht* was concluded, without any Thing but a Suspension of Arms having been stipulated for *Portugal*.

Peace with
FRANCE,
1713.

A Peace however was in *April* 1713 concluded between *France* and *Portugal* on the following Conditions: That the Prisoners and Conquests on both Sides should be given up; and that *Cape de Nord* on the *Brazil* Coast and all the Country between the River of the *Amazons* and the River *Yapoco* in *Guiana* should be ceded to the *Portuguese*.

Still

Still *Spain* held out ; nor was a Treaty concluded with this Court till the Year 1715. The Principal Articles *Peace with* of it were, that *Spain* should restore the Castle of *Nou- SPAIN, 1715.* *dar*, the Island of *Verdoejo* and the Territory of *St. Sacramento* ; that she should pay the *Portuguese* Merchants at three equal Payments 600,000 Crowns due on the Account of *Negroes* ; and that *Portugal* should restore *Albuquerque* and *Puebla*.

Since that Time this Kingdom has enjoyed an unin- *Profound Peace* terrupted Peace : Having with great Prudence minded *enjoyed by* her own Trade and kept out of the Quarrels which have *PORTUGAL.* embroiled other Powers ; yet some few Things have happened which deserve to be mentioned.

In the Year 1724 the Abbe *de Livri* went to *Lisbon* *Disputes with* with the Character of Ambassador from *France*. He *the FRENCH* was received with all Marks of Distinction ; but *Don Ambassador* *Diego de Mendoça* Secretary of State refused to pay him *about a Punc-* the first Visit, which he insisted upon as a customary *tilio, 1724.* Thing. The Secretary asserted there was no such established Custom ; and that if there were Instances of it, they were only friendly Visits amongst Ministers who were before acquainted or on the Account of private Affairs. Each persisting in his Opinion, and the Conduct of both being approved of by their respective Courts, the Abbe returned home some Months after without having had an Audience of the King ; yet this Dispute had no bad Consequences.

Upon a Difference between the *Portuguese* and *Dutch* *Difference* *African* Companies about the Meaning of some ancient *between the* Treaties which related to the *Negro* Trade, the Abbe *PORTU-* *de Mendoça* Son of the Secretary was sent to their *GUESE and* *High Mightinesses*. Meeting with a good deal of Dif- *DUTCH* *AFRICAN* *Companies.* ficulty in this Affair some Persons at the *Dutch* Court were by him prevailed upon to interpose ; but this made Things worse, and the Affair was at last by hard Words and nice Distinctions brought almost to a Rupture. Upon this he was recalled, and *Don Lewis d' Aucune* was sent in his Room ; by whose more moderate Conduct the Matters in Dispute were amicably adjusted.

Great Contests
with the Court
of ROME about
the Promotion
of BICHI to
the CARDI-
NALSHIP.

The Portuguese Ministry were after this greatly embarrassed with the Affair of the Nuncio *Bichi*. His Portuguese Majesty requested, that this Minister should on the ending of his Nunciature at *Lisbon* be promoted to the *Cardinalship*; but it was refused by the Court of *Rome*, under a Pretence that Complaints had been often made against him. The Foundation of these was this. When the Emperor *Charles VI.* was in *Spain*, and kept a Court at *Barcelona* under the Title of *Charles III.* Mr. *Bichi* was, at the Recommendation of his Uncle Cardinal *Bichi*, sent by *Clement XI.* in the Year 1710 to *Lisbon* in the Quality of Nuncio; and the Abbe *de Lucini* set out about the same Time for the Court of *Barcelona*, where he was refused an Audience because he had only the Character of *Inter-Nuncio*. As *Bichi* did not in his Way pay his Compliments to *Charles* he complained of him at *Rome* and *Lisbon*, and the King of *Portugal* complained also of his Conduct; but being afterwards better informed he did him Justice and had the utmost Regard for him. He was also accused by the Abbe *Bernabi* and other Ecclesiasticks whose Promotion to Benefices he had opposed of *Simony*: And it happened unluckily for *Bichi* that his Uncle died about this Time. His Enemies being hereby encouraged represented to the Pope, that it would be very imprudent to admit into the sacred College a Person accused of such a Crime; and at the same Time to disoblige so powerful a Family as that of *Austria*. The Court of *Charles* being by his Brother's Death removed to *Vienna*, he desisted from opposing the Promotion of *Bichi*: Which was yet more and more contended for by the Court of *Lisbon*. It was still refused by the See of *Rome*; and *Innocent XIII.* Successor of *Clement* paid so little Regard to the Sollicitations of his Portuguese Majesty, that he recalled *Bichi* and sent another Minister to *Lisbon*. As the King of *Portugal* would neither admit the new Nuncio, nor let the old one go without a Promise of his being made a Cardinal, a Congregation was held at *Rome*; in which, if the Death of that Pope had not intervened, it would have been resolved to recall him upon Pain of incurring the most severe Ecclesiastical Censures.

Benedict

Benedict XIII. the next Pope was willing to have compromised this Affair with the King of *Portugal*, if it had not been for the Opposition of the Sacred College: The Majority of whom were determined to exclude *Bichi* from the Purple. Being at last ordered to leave *Lisbon*, he did it and repaired by the Way of *Madrid* to *Italy*. Hereupon his *Portuguese* Majesty piqued at this contemptuous Usage broke all Measures with the Papal Court; ordered all the *Portuguese* at *Rome* who lived in great Splendor there to come home; and put a Stop to the Revenue which was annually drawn from his Dominions by the Holy See: But the Cardinal *Corfini* Successor of *Benedict* in the papal Chair, who endeavoured at it in good earnest, brought about a Reconciliation between the two Courts.

Upon the sending back of the *Infanta* of *Spain* from *France* the Court of *Portugal*, finding that *Philip* was established in the Throne and acknowledged by *Charles* his Rival, proposed a Match between the Prince of *Brazil* and this Princess; and another between the Prince of *Asturias* and the *Infanta* of *Portugal*. It was agreed, that these Marriages should be celebrated with great Solemnity in the Beginning of the Year 1729: And that their *Catholick* and *Portuguese* Majesties should have an Interview and make the Exchange of the two Princesses in Person. The Island of *Pegon* near *Badajoz* being the Place fixed upon, a wooden Palace was built with two Gates one upon the *Spanish* the other upon the *Portuguese* Side, that the two Kings might enter at the same Time without either giving the upper Hand. The King of *Spain* being arrived at *Badajoz* and his *Portuguese* Majesty at *Elwas*, they on the 18th of *January* congratulated each other upon their happy Arrival. On the 19th they had an Interview, at which the Marriage Contracts were read and the Princesses were exchanged. The same Night the Prince of *Asturias* and his Consort received the Benediction from Cardinal *Borgio* at *Badajoz*, as did the Prince of *Brazil* and his from the Cardinal *Almeida* at *Elwas*: But the Consummation of the latter Marriage was deferred because the *Spanish* Princess was no more than eleven Years of Age. On the 23d the two Monarchs had another Interview; and some

*A double
Match with
SPAIN, 1729.*

Discourse passed about their mutual Interests. They saw one another for the last Time three Days after, and parted with the greatest Professions of Friendship. At this last Meeting his *Portuguese* Majesty presented Mr. *de Belmonte* to the King of *Spain* as his Minister; and he went with the Court to *Madrid*.

A Prisoner at In *February* 1735 a Peasant, who had committed
MADRID *rescued by the* some great Crime, fled for Shelter to the Chapel of
Servants of the this Minister; from whence he was forcibly taken by
PORTU- Order of the President of *Castile*. As they were con-
GUESE ducting him to Prison and in the Way passed by the
Minister. *Pardo*, he was rescued by the Servants of the *Portuguese* Minister in the Sight of many People: Who it being of a *Sunday* in the Afternoon were upon the publick Walks. Mr. *Belmonte* was all the while in his Garden with some Ministers who had dined with him, and knew nothing of it till it was over. He immediately wrote to the President of *Castile* to declare his Ignorance and Disapprobation of this Affair; but the prime Minister *Don Joseph Patinho* was so incensed, that he gave Orders for seizing in his House all the Servants of the *Portuguese* Minister who had any Hand in it. The Court of *Lisbon* having in its Turn arrested the Domesticks of the *Spanish* Ambassador Mr. *Capicelatro*, this Minister immediately set out for *Madrid*, as did Mr. *Belmonte* for his Court; and Orders were given for some *Spanish* Troops to file off towards *Portugal*. As his *Portuguese* Majesty could not be prevailed upon by *Great Britain*, to declare for the *Emperor* in the War at that Time carrying on in *Italy*, it was by some imagined, that the Court of *London* had bribed *Don Diego de Mendega*, to concert this odd Business with his Brother-in-Law Mr. *Belemonte* on purpose to embroil the two Courts: But this was not the Case; for the Court of *Portugal* so far from thinking of a Rupture had scarce Troops enough on Foot to defend *Lisbon*. The Marine of the *Portuguese* had besides been so much neglected, that their *Brazil* Trade was chiefly carried on by *British* Ships. His Catholick Majesty insisted upon Satisfaction; which the King of *Portugal* was so far from thinking due that he demanded it himself. The *Portuguese*

guese Court would have submitted this Affair to the Mediation of *Great Britain*, as would the Court of *Madrid* to that of *France*. Neither of these offers being accepted, it was on the Part of *Spain* promised that *Portugal* should not at present be attacked; and on the other Side, that the *British* Fleet then in the *Tagus* should not act but in Case of Hostilities being committed against *Portugal*. Orders were at the same Time given for Mr. *Vandermeer*, the *Dutch* Ambassador at *Madrid*, to act in Concert with Mr. *Vaugrenant* the *French* and Mr. *Keen* the *British* Ambassador, in bringing about an Accommodation. By an Act which these Ministers signed it was agreed that *Portugal* was in the wrong; that the Prisoners at *Madrid* and *Lisbon* should be set at Liberty at the same Time; that Ministers should be reciprocally sent from the two Courts; and that Satisfaction should be made on both Sides for all Hostilities committed in the *West Indies*. This Declaration signed in *July* 1736 was quite satisfactory to the *Spanish* Court; but the *Portuguese* could not brook the Words being in the wrong. Some Disputes were hereupon raised, and other Negotiations were set on Foot which lasted till the *March* following.

About the Year 1729 Hostilities were commenced *Hostilities in* by the *Indians* against *Francis Joseph de St. Payo* Viceroy *the EAST* of *Goa*: And as the *Indians* have ever since harrassed *INDIES*. the *Portuguese*, these have never been without Fear for this important Place.

The *Portuguese* have all the haughty Airs of the *Spaniards*; but are not allowed to be so wise or politick. *Manners of the* They are too much elated with Prosperity, and in Ad- *the PORTU-* versity are too apt to become desperate. Their Go- *GUESE.* vernment of their Colonies is very rigorous: And such is their Avarice that they will stick at nothing to get Money. They are moreover accused of being naturally malicious and wicked.

Portugal considering its Extent and how many Fa- *Of the Soil and* milies have went from thence to *Brazil*, *Africa* and the *Commodity of* *East Indies* is pretty well Peopled: But the *Portuguese* *PORTUGAL.* are so far from being able without hiring Foreigners to keep large Armies on Foot, or fit out considerable Fleets, that

that they have but just People enough to garrison their Frontier and carry on their extensive Trade. The Soil of *Portugal* being in the general barren the *Portuguese* are supplied with most of their Corn by Foreigners; but this Country has many good Cities and Towns and abounds with commodious Harbours. Its principal Commodities are Salt, of which large Quantities are transported into the Northern Parts, and Oil and Wine, of which last great Part is since the large Duty laid there on *French* Wine sent into *Great Britain*. There is also in *Portugal* a Silver Mine near *Guadalcanal*, the annual Produce of which is immensely valuable.

Of BRAZIL.

Amongst the foreign Dominions of the *Portuguese* *Brazil* is the Chief. This Country, which although not wide is of great Extent along the Coast, is boasted of for its fine Air and Fertility. Besides great Quantities of Sugar, with some of which the delicious Fruits that grow there are preserved, it produces Ginger, Cotton, Indigo and a beautiful sort of Wood known by the Name of *Brazil* Wood. Here are also found Diamonds; but the exporting of these is prohibited by the King of *Portugal*, lest they should become too common in *Europe*. As the Natives of *Brazil* are naturally slothful and averse to every Thing which requires Labour, the *Portuguese* are obliged to buy *Negroes* on the Coast of *Africa*, which they carry thither and sell like Oxen in a Market for Slaves.

Of the PORTUGUESE Trade in AFRICA.

The Trade of the *Portuguese* on the western Coast of *Africa* has been very inconsiderable since the *Dutch* have established themselves there; nor, to say the Truth, do their Settlements on the Eastern Coast serve for any other Purpose than to enrich the Governors who are sent there.

Of their Settlements in the EAST INDIES.

What they have still left in the *East Indies* is of some Consequence. *Goa* is a large City, and a profitable Trade is carried on there with many Nations. It was the imprudent Conduct of the *Portuguese* in the *East Indies*, who by regarding only the Gratification of their Pride and Avarice rendered themselves odious to the Natives, which made Way for the great Progress of the *Dutch* there: They have however at this Time
the

the Liberty of trading directly to *China*, which the *Hollanders* whom the *Chinese* abhor have not; and they are in Possession of the Island of *Macao*, which by lying near the Empire of *China* is very commodious for that Purpose.

The *Portuguese* being formerly well established in *The PORTUGAL* by the Industry of their Missionaries the *Jesuits*, GUESSE perceived above 400,000 of the Natives were baptized; and they conceived great Hopes of the whole Country's embracing *JAPON*.

Christianity: But about ninety Years ago they were rendered suspected to the Emperor by the Intrigues of a *Dutchman* named *Caron* *. Having intercepted a Letter to the Pope, in which the *Jesuits* assured him that in a few Years all *Japon* would be brought under Subjection to the See of *Rome*, he persuaded the Emperor, that a Scheme was laid by the *Jesuits* in Conjunction with their new Profelytes to drive him from the Throne. He moreover insinuated at the Court of *Japon*, that the Pope made a Practice of taking Kingdoms from one and giving them to another just as he pleased; and that the King of *Spain* who then possessed *Portugal* was a great Favourite of his. There was no great Difficulty to make the *Japonefe* believe all this: For they were before jealous of the great Regard which was shewn by the new Converts to their Priests; and many Governors complained that their customary Presents fell short, because the new Profelytes carried every thing that was precious to the *Jesuits*, whose Hands were always open to receive. A Geographical Chart was at the same Time shewn to the Emperor; from which it appeared easy for the King of *Spain*, who had already pushed his Conquests on one Side as far as *Macao* and on the other as far as *Manilla*, to make himself Master of the *Japonefe* Empire. A most horrid Persecution was hereupon raised; and such Torments as are hardly to be described were inflicted upon those who would not renounce Christianity, which, for new Converts are commonly stiff in their Opinions, very few of them did. It was carried so far as to root out Christianity entirely,

* He is by some thought to have been encouraged by the DUTCH EAST INDIA COMPANY.

tirely; and the *Portuguese* were forbid upon Pain of Death to set a Foot within this Empire: Nay to this Day although the *Dutch* are allowed to trade there, they are not suffered in the least to exercise the *Christian* Religion.

Of the
AZORES.

The Islands called *Azores* belong also to the *Portuguese*: of which the two principal ones *Tercera* and *Madeira* are very fruitful.

Interest of the
PORTU-
GUESE in ge-
neral.

Upon the whole it plainly appears that the Prosperity of *Portugal* depends upon Trade; and that its Forces are not sufficient to attempt any Thing against the other Powers of *Europe*. It is consequently for the Interest of this Kingdom to aim at nothing but the preserving itself in its present State, and to keep out of War; and especially out of one with a Nation that is powerful by Sea; since its distant Provinces on which its Revenue principally depends may easily be invaded.

With Regard
to SPAIN.

Although it is no hard Thing for the *Spaniards* to enter this Kingdom: Yet are they not much to be feared; partly because it is so barren that an Army of above 20,000 Men could not be subsisted without great Difficulty, and for such a Number the *Portuguese* would be a Match; and partly because *Spain* is not able to fit out a Fleet sufficient to annoy the Coasts of *Portugal*. It is besides not to be supposed, that the other *European* Powers would suffer *Spain* to conquer this Kingdom. On the other Side, it can never be for the Interest of *Portugal* to join at the Solicitation of any Power in a War against *Spain*; since all it could gain would not make Amends for the Men and Money it would be thereby drained of.

FRANCE.

Portugal has nothing to fear from *France*, which lies at a great Distance and is not strong enough at Sea to attempt any thing against this Kingdom or its Settlements: Nor is it likely that *France* should quarrel with *Portugal*, it being for her Interest to preserve the Independency of this Kingdom.

HOLLAND.

The *Hollanders* have been hitherto the most dangerous Enemies of *Portugal*, nor does it seem a hard Matter for them to drive the *Portuguese* entirely from their Possessions in the *East Indies*: Yet as it has been
for

for some Time a Maxim with the *Dutch* to attempt no new Conquests, and to keep up no more Ships of War than are necessary to protect their Trade, there is no Reason to fear this: And if it was attempted *Great Britain* would certainly exert herself against any further Progress of the *Dutch* in the *East Indies*.

As her Fleet is powerful and she is in Possession of GREAT the Port of *Gibraltar*, it would be easy for *Great Britain* to ravage the Coast of *Portugal*, or to invade its Settlements in the *East* or *West Indies*: But besides that she would thereby draw upon herself the Resentment of other Powers, the Trade with *Portugal* is so valuable to *Great Britain*, that it can hardly be supposed she would willingly come to a Rupture with this Kingdom.

C H A P. IV.

Of GREAT BRITAIN.

*Ancient State
of BRITAIN.*

BRITAIN, the largest Island which the Ancients knew of, was formerly subject to many independent Chiefs; of whom every one had the Title of King. The Variety and Opposition of Interests amongst these many Sovereigns involved the Inhabitants in almost constant civil Wars; and rendered them although naturally brave and hardy incapable of repelling any foreign Force.

*Conquered by
the ROMANS.*

A Descent was after subduing *Gaul* made on this Island by *Julius Cæsar*; but notwithstanding he had the Advantage in some slight Skirmishes he was glad to retire with his Troops, without having penetrated far into or made any Part of it tributary. Discouraged at this ill Success of the best General *Rome* ever saw, no further Attempts were made by the *Romans* on *Britain* till the Reign of *Claudius*. A powerful Army being landed by this Emperor, at a Time when the People divided amongst themselves could make little Resistance, Part of the *Island* was subjected to the *Roman* Power. The *Romans* gradually extended their Conquests, but not without being several Times repulsed with great Loss. At length *Julius Agricola*, appointed by the Emperor *Domitian* to command in *Britain*, carried his victorious Arms through the southern Part thereof; and after obtaining a compleat Victory over them subdued the *Caledonians* *. As however the extreme Parts of *Caledonia* were so mountainous as to be almost inaccessible, the *Romans* gave over all Hope of reducing them entirely; and to prevent the Incursions of the Inhabitants a Wall was built from Sea to Sea by the Emperors *Adrian* and *Severus*. After having been Masters of *Britain* above 400 Years the *Romans* quitted it, in order to oppose the

Irrup-

* The Inhabitants of SCOTLAND were so called anciently.

Irruption of the northern Nations on the western Parts of their Empire.

As the *Romans* did not only transport their own *Le-Saxons* ^{cont} gions, but carried with them to the Continent the ^{into} *BRITAIN*, Militia composed of the Flower of the Inhabitants, the 450. southern Parts of *Britain* were soon over-run and miserably ravaged by the *Picts* and *Scots*. In this Distress the *Britons* having no Hopes of Succour from the *Romans* chose *Vortigern* for their King; who finding himself unable to make Head against these Spoilers called in the *Angles* a *Saxon* People who dwelt in *Holstein* to his Assistance. By their Help, who came over in a large Body under *Hengist* and *Horfa* about the Year of CHRIST 450, the *Scots* were chastised; but liking the Country a Resolution was taken of establishing themselves in it. The Natives soon saw their Mistake and endeavoured to drive the *Angles* out of the *Island*; but being re-inforced by many Thousands of their Countrymen the eastern Parts of it was soon brought under the *Saxon* Yoke.

The *Saxons* gradually extended their Conquests; yet *CADWALLA*-the ancient Inhabitants supported themselves in the ^{DER} *retires* western Parts till the Time of *Cadwallader*. This ^{into} *FRANCE*. Prince the last King of the old *British* Race, his Forces being so diminished by a Plague and Famine which continued for the Space of eleven Years that he could not make Head against the *Saxons*, retired into a Part of *France* since called from his Followers *Bretany*. He continued there for some Time: But finding his Affairs quite irrecoverable he went to *Rome* about the Year 689, and threw himself into a Monastery where he died.

All the southern Part of *Britain* except the Province *Origin of the* of *Wales* being in Process of Time subdued by the *Name ENG-* *Saxons* it was called from the *Angles*, who were the *LAND*. first of this Nation that settled themselves in it, by the Name of *England*.

As the *Saxons* gained Ground several Kingdoms were *Seven King-* formed; which at last amounted to seven. The County ^{doms erected by} of *Kent* was about the Year 455 first erected into a ^{the} *SAXONS*. Kingdom, and continued under seventeen Kings above *KENT*. 350 Years. The next called the Kingdom of *Suffex*, *SUSSEX*. which

WEST
SAXONS.

which comprehended the Counties of *Suffex* and *Surry*, began in the Year 488, and after being governed by five Kings ended about the Year 601. The third bounded on the East by the Kingdom of *Suffex*, on the North by the *Thames*, and on the South by the Channel extended westward as far as the Lands End, and was called the Kingdom of the *West Saxons*. This Kingdom, founded in the Year 519 in the End swallowed up all the rest. In the eleventh King thereof ordained, that every of his Subjects worth ten Pence should give one Penny annually to the Bishop of *Rome*; which Tax at first called King's Alms was afterwards called *Peter's Pence*. The Fourth comprehending the Counties of *Essex*, *Middlesex* and Part of *Hertfordshire*, and which was distinguished by the Name of the Kingdom of *Essex*, began in the Year 527, and lasted under 14 Kings till the Year 808. The Kingdom of *Northumberland*, which took in all of *England* that lies North of the *Humber* and *Mersey*, was founded in the Year 547, and governed by twenty-three successive Kings till the Year 828. The sixth called the Kingdom of the *East Angles*, comprehending the Counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk* and Part of *Cambridgeshire*, began in the Year 571, and continued under fifteen Kings till the Year 792. The seventh called the Kingdom of *Mercia* was bounded on the South by the *Thames*, on the West by the *Severn*, on the North by the Kingdom of *Northumberland*, and on the East by the Kingdoms of *Essex* and the *East Angles*. This was founded in the Year 585, and after being governed by twenty Kings ended about the Year 825.

PETER'S
PENGE first
paid.
ESSEX.NORTHUM-
BERLAND.EAST AN-
GLES.

MERCIA.

EGBERT King All these Kingdoms, called from their Number the of *ENGLAND*, Heptarchy, were subdued by or submitted themselves to 828. *Egbert* the seventeenth King of the *West Saxons*. He began to reign in the Year 800; and having compleated his Conquests about the Year 828 took upon himself the Title of King of *England*.

DANES in-
vade ENG-
LAND.

In his Reign the *Danes* began to invade *England*. They were for some Time repulssed with great Vigour; but at length found Means to establish themselves in the North.

ETHELRED
II. 979.

After having for several Reigns lived there quietly they during the Reign of *Ethelred* II. who succeeded to the Throne

Throne in the Year 979, made Inroads into the southern Parts; where they exacted large Sums of Money from the *English*, ravished their Wives, and carried it with so high a Hand that they obtained the Name of *Lord-Danes*.

In the Year 1002 all the *Danes* that could be found DANISH were murdered in cold Blood; but this barbarous Mas- MASSACRE, sacre was amply revenged by *Sweyn* King of *Denmark*, 1002. who in the following Year made a Descent upon *Cornwall*. All the Preparations of *Ethelred*, who had just Reason to expect the Resentment of *Sweyn*, were rendered ineffectual by the Treachery of *Edrick*: Notwithstanding he had made him Duke of *Mercia*, and given him his Daughter in Marriage; and *Ethelred* was forced after seeing great Havock made in his Kingdom to fly for Safety into *Normandy*.

Sweyn being killed by an unknown Hand at the sack- SWEYN: ing of *St. Edmunds Bury* in *Suffolk* *Ethelred* returned from *Normandy*, and forced *Canute* the Son of *Sweyn* to retire into *Denmark*. Whilst *Ethelred* was concerting ETHELRED Measures for stopping the Progress of *Canute*, who not returns. long after landed with a powerful Army, he died in the Year 1016; and was succeeded by *Edmund* his Son.

This Prince surnamed *Ironside* defended himself with EDMUND great Bravery against the *Danes*; and had it not been IRONSIDE, prevented by the Perfidy of *Edrick* would have driven 1016. them quite out of the Island. It being at length agreed by the two Kings to determine the Fate of the War by single Combat, *Edmund* was victorious; yet for the The KING- sake of Peace he consented to divide the Kingdom with DOM divided. *Canute*. The Enjoyment he hereby proposed to himself lasted but a short Time; for he was in the Year 1017 assassinated at the Instigation of *Edrick*.

Upon the Death of *Edmund* *Canute* having convened CANUTE, the *English* Nobility asked them, if on the Division 1017. of the Kingdom there was any Provision made for the Succession of the Brothers or Children of *Ethelred*? Being answered in the Negative, for they durst not answer otherways, he was crowned King of all *England*. After extirpating all of the Royal Family he could lay his Hands upon *Canute* married the Widow of *Ethelred*; and having to render himself agreeable to the People sent home the *Danes* he reigned with great Applause. In order

A remarkable to expose the Flattery of certain *Parasites*, who had attributed something of Divinity to him, he caused himself to be set in a Chair on the Sea Shore; and with a loud Voice commanded the Sea not to wet his Feet. The Waves rolling on as usual and beginning to beat upon him; *you may see*, says he to the Spectators, *you may by this see how inconsiderable the Power of earthly Kings is.* He died in the Year 1035.

HAROLD,
1035.

Harold his Son and Successor, surnamed from his running fast *Harefoot*, was remarkable for nothing but the Murder of *Emma* his Mother-in-Law, and some of her Children, whom he enticed by fair Words out of *Normandy*.

HARDI CANUTE,
1039.

Upon his Death without Issue in the Year 1039, the Heads of the Kingdom pitched upon *Canute*, on the Account of his great Strength called *Hardicanute*, his Brother by the Father's Side to succeed. This Prince who was born of *Emma* the Relict of *Ethelred* is said to have been so voracious, that he would eat heartily four Times every Day. Growing quite odious to his Subjects, they at his Death, which happened in a little more than two Years, made publick Rejoycings; and the *Danes* now grown contemptible were ridiculed in the open Streets. With him the *Danish* Government in *England* ended.

EDWARD the
CONFESSOR,
1042.

Edward surnamed the Confessor, son of *Ethelred* and *Emma*, was upon the Death of *Hardicanute* invited from *Normandy*, whither he had fled for Safety, and crowned. In order to ingratiate himself with the People he immediately remitted a Tax called *Dane-geld*, which they had for forty Years groaned under. His Reign was sometimes disturbed by *Danish* and *Irish* Pirates: But he always chastised their Insolence. He was the first King to whom the Virtue of curing the Distemper called the King's Evil by Touching was attributed. Dying without Issue in the Year 1066 he appointed his Kinsman *Edgar Atheling* Grandson of *Edmund Ironside* to succeed: But as this Prince was very young, *Harold* Son of *Goodwin* Earl of *Kent* his Tutor contrived to have the Crown set upon his own Head.

HAROLD II.
1066.

Harold II. enjoyed the Fruit of this Usurpation only nine Months; for he was at the End of this Time defeated

defeated and slain in Battle by *William Duke of Normandy*.

William surnamed the Conqueror, was a bastard Son WILLIAM of *Robert Duke of Normandy* by *Arlotte* a Furrier's the Conqueror; Daughter: With whose Beauty he was struck, as she 1066. one Day danced with other young People in the Fields. His Family was of *Danish* Extraction, being descended His Extrac- from *Rollo*, who with some *Danes* and *Normans* made tion. a Descent in *France* about the Year 900; and after committing great Ravages compelled *Charles the Simple*, to cede the Province of *Neustria* called afterwards *Normandy* to him and his Heirs. Notwithstanding his being a Bastard, *Robert* prevailed on the Nobility to acknowledge *William* as his Successor when he was only nine Years of Age. As his Father died soon after, this Prince had in his Youth many Difficulties and Dangers to encounter with: But by his Valour and Prudence all were happily surmounted; and being informed of *Edward's* Death, he determined to attempt the Conquest of *England*. Some say he founded his Pretensions on *Edward's* having left him this Kingdom by Will, in return for the Favours he received from *Robert* his Father while he sheltered himself in *Normandy*: Others that there was only a Promise from *Edward*: but that *Harold* while he was in *Normandy* had been obliged to confirm this with an Oath.

However that was *William* embarked for *England* with He invades a considerable Army, composed of *Normans*, *French* and ENGLAND. *Flemmings*, and landed without any Opposition; for *Harold* was engaged in the North against his Brother and *Harold Harfagar* King of *Norway*. After vanquishing both these and recruiting his Army, which had sustained great Loss and was fatigued with long Marches, as much as the short Time would admit of, he on the fourteenth of *October* came up with the *Norman* near *Hastings* in *Suffex*. A Battle ensued, and it was Battle of fought with great Obstinacy on both Sides: But at HASTINGS, length, *Harold* being mortally wounded, Victory de- in which HA- clared for *William*, and he was unanimously proclaimed ROLD is mor- King. As he did not at first invade any Man's Property, and only gave vacant Lands to his Followers; as he

*The Corfew
Bell.*

EDGAR A-
THELING
*disturbs the
North.*

1076.

WALES con-
quered.

WILLIAM
grows TY-
RANNICAL.

was allied to some of their former Kings, and was recommended by the Pope, the *English* were for some Time very well satisfied with him. He nevertheless thought proper to disarm the People; and to prevent nocturnal Assemblies, it was ordered, that neither Fire nor Candle should be seen in any House after the Evening Bell, called the Corfew Bell, had been rung. Forts were also built in several Places: Yet notwithstanding all these Precautions his Reign was greatly disturbed.

Edgar Atheling, who had fled with some of the principal Nobility into *Scotland*, in Concert with some *Danish* Pirates committed great Disorders in the North: And after burning the City of *York* he put all the *Normans* found in it to the Sword. Having got the Better of these Enemies a dangerous Conspiracy was in the Year 1076 formed against *William*; but it was happily stifled before those concerned could unite their Forces. He was likewise obliged to carry over an Army against his Son *Robert*, who endeavoured to make himself Master of *Normandy*. The Father and Son being personally engaged in a Battle there, *William* was thrown from his Horse; but *Robert* knowing him by his Voice to be his Father immediately dismounted, embraced him, and they were reconciled. He after this conquered *Wales*; and forced *Malcolm* King of *Scotland* to take an Oath of Fidelity to him.

Finding his Clemency had been abused by some, *William* in the latter Part of his Reign fell into the contrary Extreme, and became quite a Tyrant. Religious Houses, in which Gold and Silver had been deposited as the most safe Places, were plundered by him; he imposed heavy Taxes; and having seized most of the Lands of *England* gave some of them with the Reserve of annual Rents to his Favourites. He took upon himself the Guardianship of Minors; and allowing them what he thought sufficient for their Maintenance, the Remainder went into his own Coffers. Old Privileges and Laws were abolished or changed by him; and new Laws being introduced written in the *Norman* Tongue, of which the People were ignorant, they unavoidably fell under severe Penalties.

Before his Time the Use of the great Bow, by which *The Use of the* his Victory over *Harold* was in a great Measure gained, *Great Bow* and which was afterwards of great Use to the *English* in *introduced.* their Wars with *France*, was unknown in *England*. His Son *Robert* being again stirred up against him by *Philip I.* of *France*, *William* went over into *Normandy*. Matters were soon made up with his Son; but falling sick at *Roan*, the *French* King sent a Messenger to know, *how long he intended to lie in?* *William* sent him for Answer, *that as soon as he had been church'd, he would offer a thousand Tapers in France.* Being recovered he kept his Word; for he made an Irruption into *France*, and put a large Extent of Country to Fire and Sword: But over-heating himself in this Expedition, he fell ill and died, leaving by Will *Normandy* to *Robert*, and to *William* his second Son the *English* Crown.

The Title of *William II.* surnamed *Rufus* was *WILLIAM* disputed by his Brother *Robert*; and divers Lords re-*RUFUS.* belled against him. The former he made easy by agreeing to pay him 3000 *Marks* yearly, and that he should succeed. Of the latter some were by fair Means, others by Force brought to Obedience. This Rebellion was of great Service to the *English*; for as the Persons concerned in it were for the most part *Normans*, the former were afterwards more respected by *William*. He was successful in two Wars against *Malcolm* King of *Scotland*, and maintained his Authority over the *Welsh*. Amongst other Expedients of his to raise Money the following was remarkable. Having raised an Army of *His artful* 20,000 Men, he when they were going on Shipboard to *Way of raising* be carried into *Normandy* caused it to be proclaimed, that whoever would pay twelve Shillings might stay at home: Which being preferred by all, it answered his Purpose of raising a large Sum. He was killed in the Year 1100, by an Arrow shot by one of his Domesticks while he was hunting.

Henry his younger Brother took the Advantage of *HENRY,* being present when this happened, and of his Brother *1100.* *Robert's* being engaged in the *Holy Land*, to get himself proclaimed King. He endeavoured to gain the Affections of the People by easing them of some Grievances:

And in order to secure the Friendship of *Edgar* King of *Scotland* he married his Sister *Matilda*.

MATILDA'S
Wife.

It has been said that this Princess had vowed a Vow of Chastity: And that when her Brother forced her to marry, she wished the Issue of the Match might never be happy. Whether this was so or not, her Children and their Posterity were very unfortunate. *Robert* being returned from *Palestine* landed in *England* with a powerful Army: But by the Interposition of some Friends Things were prevented from coming to Extremities; and on *Henry's* agreeing to pay him a yearly Pension he went back to *Normandy*. Repenting afterwards of this Agreement *Henry* made a Descent on *Normandy*; and having vanquished *Robert*, not only condemned him to perpetual Imprisonment, but caused his Eyes to be put out. From this Time *Normandy* was annexed to the Crown of *England*.

NORMANDY
annexed to
ENGLAND.

War with
FRANCE.

Umbrage being taken at the growing Power of *Henry*, by *Lewis* the Fat of *France*, he in Concert with *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou* and *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders* undertook to put *William* the Son of *Robert* into Possession of *Normandy*. After a long and bloody War one of the principal Terms of Accommodation was, that *William Henry's* Son should swear Fealty to *Lewis* for the Duchy of *Normandy*. The Title of Duke of *Normandy* was ever after while it belonged to *England* born by the King's eldest Son. *William* the Son of *Robert* becoming afterwards Earl of *Flanders*, he made a second Attempt to recover *Normandy*: But it was to no Purpose. *Henry* was as some Historians say the first Prince who admitted the Commons to deliberate upon publick Affairs; and in Consequence thereof the Parliament, which before consisted only of Peers and Bishops, was divided into the upper and lower Houses. His Son *William* being drowned in his Passage from *Normandy* to *England*, *Henry* managed so as to have his Daughter *Matilda*, who was first married to the Emperor and afterwards to *Geoffry Plantagenet* Earl of *Anjou*, acknowledged by the Parliament as Heir to the Crown; and an Oath of Allegiance was taken to her in his Life Time.

COMMONS
admitted to
Parliament.

Upon

Upon the Death of *Henry* in the Year 1135, *Stephen* Earl STEPHEN, of *Boloign* his Sister's Son, by promising to restore the People's Privileges and the *Saxon* Laws, procured himself to be crowned. He had joined in the Oath to *Matilda*; but it was now insisted upon by him and his Partisans, that as it had been extorted from them it was not binding. In order to fulfil in some Measure his Promises to the People divers Taxes were remitted by him, and he suffered the Nobility to build Castles; and the better to establish himself upon the Throne, he caused his Son *Eustace* to marry *Constance* Daughter of *Lewis* of *France*; yet his Reign was full of Troubles.

The *Scotch* and afterwards his own Nobility con- His Reign con- fiding in the Strength of their Castles gave him much stantly di- Disturbance; but his greatest Contest was with the Em- sturbed. press *Matilda*. Upon her landing Numbers flocked to her, and *Stephen* was soon after defeated and made Prisoner at *Chester*; nor could any Thing have prevented her enjoying the Fruit of this Success, had she not imprudently disoblige the *Londoners*, by refusing to restore King *Edward's* Laws. The Party of *Stephen* being hereby strengthened, she was herself within a little of being taken Prisoner at *Oxford*; and her Rival was set at Liberty. Some Years after her Son *Henry*, Heir by the Father's Side to *Anjou*, by the Mother's to *Normandy*, and possessed in the Right of *Eleanor* his Wife, Heiress of the last Duke of *Guienne*, of *Guienne* and *Poitou*, having attained the Age of nineteen determined to assert his Right to the *English* Crown. Landing with a powerful Army, he had not much Difficulty in accomplishing his Design; for as *Stephen's* Son *Eustace* dyed suddenly, he consented to adopt and appoint *Henry* his Successor. In the Year 1154 not long after this Agreement *Stephen* died.

Henry II. took the first Opportunity of demolishing HENRY II. the Castles built by the Nobility in his Predecessor's 1154. Time. After a prosperous Reign of eighteen Years, he in order to secure the Succession to him would have his Son, who was married to *Margaret* of *France*, crowned and associated with him in the Government: But this imprudent Step involved him in many Difficulties.

ficulties. His Son wanted to assume the whole Power; *Lewis* King of *France* looked with jealous Eyes on his being Master of so much in this Kingdom; and the *Scotch* wished for nothing more than an Opportunity of plundering *England*. Upon the whole these two Kingdoms united with the young Prince against *Henry*; but he defended himself so well, that the *Scots* were repulsed with great Loss, and the *French* came to Terms. *Alice* Daughter of *Lewis* being afterwards betrothed to *Richard* his second Son, it is reported of *Henry*, that falling in Love with he privately enjoyed her, and contrived Ways to retard the Consummation of the Marriage. The young Prince, who was by the Death of his Brother *Henry* become Heir to the Crown, being justly exasperated hereat, he stirred up an Insurrection against his Father; and *Philip* of *France* took the Advantage of this Quarrel to make himself Master of *Mans*. Finding himself thus at once attacked both by Relations and Friends, it broke his Heart; and he died shortly after of Grief in the Year 1189.

IRELAND
conquered.

Ireland was conquered by this Prince, and annexed to the *English* Crown. It was possessed with the Title of Lord of *Ireland* by him and his Successors, till *Henry* VIII. in despite of the See of *Rome*, which claims an exclusive Right of erecting Kingdoms, took upon himself the Title of King thereof.

Contest with
THOMAS
BECKET.

He had also a long Contest with *Thomas* of *Becket* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who asserted that it was derogatory to the Honour of God, for Ecclesiasticks to be on any account subject to secular Tribunals: But the King insisted upon it, that for Murther and other atrocious Crimes they ought to be and should be tried like other Subjects. As the Archbishop being backed by *Rome* would not give Way in the least, he was after giving *Henry* an infinite deal of Trouble assassinated at the Altar.

RICHARD I.
1189.

His Expedition to the
HOLY LAND.

Richard Son and Successor of *Henry* was so infatuated with the Superstition of the Times, that he undertook in Concert with *Philip* of *France* an Expedition to the *Holy Land*. In his Way he took the Island of *Cyprus*, which being afterwards given to *Guido* *Lusignan*

signan, the latter resigned all Pretensions to *Jerusalem*. Having a considerable Share in the taking of *Ptolemais* in the Year 1192, *Richard* caused the Standard of *Leopold* of *Austria* to be pulled down, and his own to be put up in its Stead. Great Hopes were now conceived of retaking *Jerusalem*; when all at once *Philip* resolved to return home, and *Hugo* Duke of *Burgundy* followed his Example. The *Turks* being hereupon re-animated, and News being received that *Philip*, notwithstanding his Oath to *Richard* before he set out from *Palestine* that he would attempt nothing against his Dominions, had attacked *Normandy*, *Richard* made Peace with the Sultan *Salladin*. He attempted to pass *Incognito* through *Austria*: but was discovered; and being in Revenge for the Affront put on *Leopold* at *Ptolemais* thrown into Prison, he was forced to pay 100,000 Livres for his Ransom. Upon his Arrival at home he found every Thing in the utmost Confusion. The *French* had overrun *Normandy*; and his Brother *John* was endeavouring to rob him of the *English* Crown: But he obliged *John* to ask his Pardon, and drove the *French* back into their own Provinces. He died shortly after in the Year 1199, of a Wound he received at the Siege of a small Place in *France*.

1192.

Is thrown into Prison.

His Brother *John*, surnamed because his Father left him no Inheritance *Lackland*, managed so as to have the *English* Crown set upon his Head: But his Right was disputed by *Arthur* Duke of *Bretany* Son of *Geoffry* his elder Brother; and the latter implored the Assistance of *France*. This being granted by *Philip*, who was glad of the Occasion, many Towns in *France* were taken from the *English*. To balk however if possible the Expectations of his Nephew, *John* consented to a Match betwixt *Philip's* eldest Son and *Blanche* Daughter of *Alphonso* King of *Castile* by his Sister *Eleanor*; and gave her as a Portion all the Towns except *Angiers*, which had with the Assistance of the *French* been taken from him. As *John* afterwards married *Isabella* Heiress of *Angoulême*, the Earl of *Marche*, to whom this beautiful Princess was engaged, in Revenge sided with *Arthur*: But their united Forces were routed in the Year 1202; *The Death of Arthur* being made Prisoner died shortly after in the Castle of *Roan*.

1199.

ARTHUR.
1202.

PHILIP conquers NORMANDY.

It being suspected that this young Prince had foul Play, his Mother *Constance* complained to *Philip*; and *John* was cited to answer as a Vassal of *France* for his Death. Not appearing his Dominions in *France* were declared to be forfeited: And *Philip* made himself Master of *Normandy*, which had been severed from the *French Crown* above 300 Years. The *French* afterwards attacked *Angiers*; but being repulsed with Loss a Truce for two Years, which gave *John* an Opportunity of chastising the *Scots* and quelling a Mutiny in *Ireland*, was agreed upon. War being at the Expiration thereof renewed in *France*, the *English* were defeated; and *John* was glad to conclude a second Truce.

JOHN resigns his Crown to the POPE.

A Quarrel which arose betwixt this Prince and Pope *Innocent*, concerning the Election of an Archbishop of *Canterbury*, was carried so far, that he was excommunicated; and *Philip* at the Instigation of *Rome* made vast Preparations for invading *England*. Apprehending nothing else would prevent his Ruin, *John* laid his Crown and other Regalia at the Feet of Cardinal *Pandulph* the Pope's Legate: And notwithstanding he did this Homage, and took an Oath to obey the Pope in all Things, it was five Days before they were restored to him.

His War with the BARONS.

The Minds of his Subjects, who were before disgusted, being by this base and shameful Submission quite alienated, the Barons took up Arms against him; and demanded that the People should be restored to all the Privileges they enjoyed before the Conquest. Instead of complying with this demand, he for the Sake of having the Pope's Protection resigned his Crown a second Time to the Pope's Legate; and consented to every Thing that was required of him on the Part of the Pope. The Barons however adhered bravely to their Purpose, and as their Cause was good their Party encreased daily: Nor would they give over Hostilities, till *John*, agreed to sign the GREAT CHARTER and the *Charter of Forests*. On his refusing afterwards to confirm these, *Lewis* the Son of *Philip* being invited by the Barons came over into *England* with a powerful Army. While *John* was preparing to make Head against this Prince, whose landing seemed quite agreeable to all Ranks of People, Death put an End to the Cares and Misfortunes that had long overwhelmed him.

MAGNA CHARTA signed.

As *Henry III.* who succeeded in the Year 1216 was *HENRY III.* very young, the Prejudices conceived against his Father 1216. subsided, and the *French* were defeated by the Earl of *Pembroke* near *Lincoln*. A considerable Body coming to their Assistance being afterwards destroyed at Sea, *Lewis* renounced all Pretensions to *England*, and returned into *France*. Great Uneasinesses arose in this long Reign; which were chiefly occasioned by the bestowing of Places of Profit and Trust on Foreigners. No less than 300 *Italians* were sent over at one Time by the Pope, who having got Possession of the best Benefices encreased the Revenues of them as much as possible. Heavy Taxes were at the same Time laid upon the People: Yet the King was poor; for the Relations of his Wife, who was Daughter to the Earl of *Provence*, took care to enrich themselves out of his Treasury.

The Discontents hereby occasioned came at last to *War with* an open Rupture with the *Barons*: During which the *the BARONS.* King sold all his Claims on *Normandy, Anjou, Poitou, Touraine* and *Mons* to the *French King* for 1,800,000 Livres. In the first Battle *Henry* was taken Prisoner; but the Earl of *Leicester* being afterwards defeated by his Son *Edward*, *Henry* was set at Liberty, and the Rebellion was entirely suppressed. He died in the Year 1273.

Although Prince *Edward* was at his Father's Death *EDWARD,* in *Palestine*, and continued there a Year, he on his Re- 1273. turn to *England* took Possession of the Throne without any Opposition. *Lionel* the last Prince of *Wales* having rebelled against him, he was slain in Battle: And this Principality was perfectly united to *England.* *WALES* In this Reign the Animosity betwixt the *Scotch* and *united to* *English*, which lasted so many Years, and was the *ENGLAND.* Cause of so much Bloodshed, began on the following Occasion.

Alexander III. of *Scotland* dying without Issue, *Ed-* *Origin of the* ward, as several *Scotch Kings* had done Homage to his *Wars with* Predecessors, took upon him to determine the Rights *SCOTLAND.* of the several Competitors for this Crown. It appearing that the Pretensions of *John Baliol* and *Robert Bruce* were best founded, *Edward* sent privately for the latter, and

and promised to determine in his Favour, provided he would take an Oath of Fealty to him. *Bruce* honestly disdained the Offer, and told him plainly, he was not so fond of Power as to sacrifice the Independency of his Country for it. *Baliol* being less scrupulous accepted of such a Proposal, and was crowned. A Suit arising betwixt the Earl of *Fife* and the *Aberneth* Family, one of whom had killed the Earl's Brother, it was determined by the new King in Favour of the latter: But on the Earl's appealing to the *English* Parliament, *Baliol* was summoned to appear and vindicate the Justice of his Sentence. Being not allowed an Advocate, but forced like a common Man to plead his own Cause before the Parliament, it was looked upon by the *Scotch* as a most gross Affront; and on his Return into *Scotland* he declared the Oath taken to *Edward* to be in itself void, for that he had no Power to take such an Oath. The ancient Alliance being hereupon renewed with *France*, and War being declared against *England*, *Edward* marched into *Scotland*; and having forced the *Scotch* to swear Fealty to him brought *Baliol* Prisoner into *England*. The Forces *Edward* left there being shortly after driven out by the *Scotch*, who were commanded by a private Man named *William Wallis*, he went a second Time; and having defeated 40,000 of them near *Falkirk*, the Oath was once more rammed down their Throats. The Crown of *Scotland* being afterwards conferred on *Robert Bruce*, the Success betwixt his Forces and the *English* was various. At length in the Year 1307 *Edward* marched against him in Person; but he fell ill in the Way and died.

1307.

EDWARD
loses many
Places in
FRANCE.

Some of the Subjects of this Prince in *Aquitaine* having committed Ravages on the Coast of *Normandy*, he was summoned to answer for these before *Philip* the Handsome; which being refused all his Possessions in *France* were deemed confiscable, and several Places were seized. Entering afterwards into an Alliance with the Emperor and Earl of *Flanders* he went over into *Flanders*; but finding his Affairs in *France* quite irrecoverable he concluded a Truce with *Philip*. In the Twenty-fourth Year of this Reign the *Jews* were ordered to quit *England*; and all their Effects

Jews banished,
1297.

Effects except what they could carry with them were seized.

Edward II. married *Isabella* Daughter of *Philip* the EDWARD II.
Handsome, and had with her *Guienne* and *Ponthieu*, 1307.
which had been taken by the *French* from his Father.
This Prince was very unsuccessful in the War with
Scotland. At the Battle near *Bannocksborough* an Ar-
my of one hundred thousand *English* were defeated by
thirty thousand *Scotch*; which struck such Terror into the
former, that they durst not look a *Scotchman* in the Face.
The *Scotch* encouraged by this Success made a Descent *Truce with*
on *Ireland*. They were forced to retire with some Loss; *SCOTLAND.*
yet *Edward* was glad to clap up a Truce with them.

Refusing to give up *Gaveston* and afterwards the *Spen-* *His Imprudence*
cers his *Favourites*, who were become odious to the *in protecting*
People, the *Barons* flew to Arms; but the King's Party *wicked Mini-*
being victorious it cost many of them their Heads: And *sters, costs him*
the Queen herself from whom the *Spencers* had alienated *his Crown and*
the Affections of her Spouse fled into *France*. She re- *Life.*
turned with an Army, and the King being made Pri-
soner, the *Spencers* with some others felt the Effects of
the People's Resentment which they had so long despised.
After being carried from Place to Place, and treated
with the utmost Contempt, this miserable Prince, who
too late saw his Mistake in suffering his Power to be
abused by Ministers, was deposed by Order of Parlia-
ment; and about six Months after in the Year 1327
was murdered in Prison.

During the Minority of *Edward III.* who was very EDWARD III.
young at his Father's Deposition, the Queen-Mother 1327.
and *Mortimer* her Favourite had the entire Manage-
ment of Affairs. At the beginning of their Admini-
stration all Claims to the Sovereignty of *Scotland* were
formally renounced; and the *Scotch* gave up their Pre-
tensions on *Cumberland* and *Northumberland*. For agree-
ing to this dishonourable Treaty and for other Reasons
the Queen was within a few Years thrown into Prison,
and *Mortimer* was hanged.

After the Deaths of *Lewis*, *Philip* and *Charles* Sons of *He lays Claim*
Philip the *Handsome* without Heirs, *Edward* in the *to the FRENCH*
Right of his Mother *Isabella* their Sister laid Claim *Crown.*
to the *French Crown*: But *Philip* of *Valois* their Fa-
ther's

ther's Brother's Son was preferred by the States of *France*, notwithstanding his being a Degree further off. Although in Excuse for this *Edward* was said to be excluded by the *Salique Law*, the true Reasons were without doubt the Aversion of the *French* to a Foreigner, and the Sollicitation of *Robert* Earl of *Artois* in Favour of *Philip*. The going of *Edward* into *France* to do Homage for *Guyenne*, was indeed a tacit Cession of his Right: But his Youth and the troubled State of *England* at this Time did in a great Measure excuse it. Appearing in the Church of *Amiens* with his Crown on his Head, he was ordered to lay that together with his Sword and Spurs aside, and to take the Oath of Fidelity kneeling: The *English* Nation were however highly exasperated at this Treatment of their King by *Philip*, and *France* paid dearly for it.

*Is successful
against the
SCOTCH.*

About the same Time the Pretensions of *Edward* Son of *John Baliol* to the Throne of *Scotland* were supported by *Edward*, notwithstanding the young King *David* had married his Sister. After several Victories over the *Scotch*, who lost in one Battle 30,000 Men, *Baliol* was crowned and did Homage to *Edward*. The *English* took moreover the Opportunity of this Quarrel to recover *Berwick*.

*His Expedition
into FRANCE,
1340.*

Being arrived at full Age *Edward* took the Arms of *France*, and at the Persuasion of *Robert* of *Artois* determined to assert his Right to the *French* Crown. The *French* Fleet sent to prevent his Landing was defeated with the Loss of 30,000 Marines in the Year 1340, and *Tournay* was invested; but a Truce for a Year being concluded he gave over the Siege. In the mean Time the *Scotch* headed by *David Bruce* had driven out *Edward Baliol*. The War with *France* being renewed *Angoulesme* and some other Places were taken by the *English*; and a Descent being made by *Edward* on *Normandy* great Progress was made in this Province and in *Picardy*. In the Year 1346 an Army of 60,000 *French* was defeated by half that Number of *English* near *Cressy*. No Quarter being given the *French* lost in this Battle 30,000 Men, amongst whom were 1500 of Distinction; and a Body of 7000 Men coming to join the Army were the next Day cut to Pieces. About the same Time

*Battle of
CRESSY,
1346.*

David

David King of *Scotland*, who entered *England* with 60,000 Men to make a Diversion in Favour of *France*, was defeated, and he was taken Prisoner. The Victory of *Cressy* was followed with the Reduction of *Britany* and *Guienne*; and *Calais* submitted in the Year following to *Edward*.

Some Years after the young Prince *Edward* was sent Battle of into *Guienne*, and gained great Reputation there: But *Poitiers*. advancing too far in the Year 1356 with only eight thousand Men, he was met near *Poitiers* by *John* King of *France* at the Head of 60,000 Men. The *French* King imagining he had him in his Power would listen to no honourable Terms: But the Prince posted his Men so advantageously amongst the Hills and Vineyards, that the *French* Horse which began the Attack were after being much galled by Arrows entirely broke. The whole Army being hereby thrown into Confusion, *John* and one of his Sons were after great Slaughter taken Prisoners; and no less than 1700 Persons of Rank were left on the Field of Battle. 1356.

The Kingdom of *France* being afterwards over-run by *Treaty of* three Armies, which were Commanded by *Edward*, *Bretigny*, the Prince his Son and *John* Duke of *Lancaster*, a Peace was by the Pope's Mediation concluded at *Bretigny* in the Year 1360. The principal Conditions were, that *Poitou*, *Saintongue*, *Rochelle*, the *Pais d' Aulnis*, *Perigord*, *Angoumois*, *Bigorre*, *Limoisin*, *Quercy* and the *Angenois* with the absolute Sovereignty of all these should be added to what the *English* had already in *France*: That *Calais* with the Counties of *Oye*, *Guisnes* and *Ponthieu* should be kept by *Edward*; and that 3,000,000 of Livres, for the Payment of which three of his Sons, his Brother and thirty of the principal Nobility were to be Hostages, should be given for the Ransom of *John*. All other Places taken by the *English* were to be restored: And it was agreed that *Edward* should renounce all Pretensions to the *French* Crown. 1360.

Prince *Edward*, whom his Father made Duke of *Guienne*, had afterwards a considerable Hand in restoring *Pe-ter* King of *Castile* to his Dominions; but having there- by drained his Coffers he found it necessary to lay new Taxes on his Subjects. Complaints being made of this he was summoned to appear at *Paris*. On his answering that

that he would come with 60,000 Men, *Charles V.* declared War against *England*; and in a Manifesto declared, that *Edward* had by committing some Hostilities forfeited what was ceded to him by the Treaty of *Bretigny*. While Preparations for War were making on all Sides Prince *Edward* died; and with him the good Fortune of the *English* ended. The Loss of this Prince and the Success of the *French*, who soon became Masters of all *Guienne* except *Bourdeaux* and *Bayonne*, so affected *Edward*, that he survived him but ten Months.

RICHARD II. *Richard II.* Son of Prince *Edward* was only eleven Years of Age at his Accession in the Year 1377. The *French* despising his Youth burnt some Places on the *English* Coast; and the *Scotch* made at the same Time some havock in *England*. The War with *France*, several Truces intervening, was continued many Years without any remarkable Event on either Side.

His Reign is very unhappy. This Reign was greatly disturbed by some intestine Commotions. In *Kent* and other Counties the *Populace* provoked at their ill Treatment by a Receiver of the *Poll-Tax* gathered together, and threatened nothing less than to destroy the Nobility and Clergy; but by the King's personal Valour this Tumult was soon appeased. It having been for a good while observed that *Richard* was disposed to rule arbitrarily, some Resolutions were come to in Parliament for restraining the Prerogative. No Regard being paid to these, Things were in another Session carried so far, that he was forced to give up his Favourites whose Insolence had made them universally hated to Death or Banishment; and to promise upon Oath that he would for the Time to come be advised by the Lords. A Conspiracy against him being soon after discovered, it cost many of the principal Persons concerned their Lives, and he seemed to have got the better of the Malecontents: When the following Accident happened, which though inconsiderable in itself laid the Foundation of his future Misfortunes.

Quarrel betwixt the Dukes of NORFOLK and LANCASTER.

Henry Duke of Hereford afterwards Duke of *Lancaster* accused the Duke of *Norfolk* of speaking disrespectfully of the King. The latter denied it, and mutual Challenges ensued; but when they were ready to enter the Lists the King forbade the Combat, and they were both banished. *Lancaster* went into *France* and great Numbers of disaffected

affected Persons invited him over with Promises of raising him to the Throne. He ventured to land in *England* with only a few Friends; but as *Richard* was in *Ireland*, he had Time to take his Measures; and luckily for him the Messenger sent with the Account of his landing was detained six Weeks by contrary Winds. The King was likewise guilty of a great Mistake in altering his Resolution of coming immediately into *England*. His Friends were for want of his Presence dispirited; and many of the Troops raised for his Service were easily dispersed. Finding when he did arrive that his Enemies carried all before them, he not knowing what Course to take submitted to the Duke of *Lancaster*. Many Things being laid to his Charge in a Parliament forthwith held, he was declared incapable of wearing the Crown any longer; and he was shortly after in the Year 1399 murdered in Prison.

LANCASTER
is invited into
ENGLAND.

RICHARD is
deposed and
murdered.

If the Right of *Henry* of *Lancaster* who succeeded be strictly enquired into, it will appear to be grounded entirely on an Order of Parliament: For the Story of *Edmund* the Founder of his Family being the eldest Son of *Henry* III. and set aside for his Deformity, is given up by all good Historians as a Fiction. He was at first surrounded with Difficulties; but he happily extricated himself out of them all.

HENRY IV.
1398.

The Design of the *French* to restore *Richard* lasted all his Life; and a Conspiracy of some Lords was discovered even before *Richard* died. The *Scotch* paid dear for quarrelling with him; and the *Welsh*, who wanted to rid themselves of the *English* Yoke, were notwithstanding their being joined by the Malecontents of *England* routed with great Loss. In the Action with these last *Henry* is said to have killed thirty-six Men with his own Hands. Another Conspiracy being discovered the Heads of it fled into *Scotland*, well knowing that the *Scotch* were glad of every Opportunity to disturb *England*: But they succeeded no better in this than in their former War with *Henry*. He died in the Year 1415, and was succeeded by *Henry* V. his Son.

He surmounts
great Difficulties.

This Prince, who in his younger Years promised very indifferently, behaved after his Accession so as to be justly reckoned among the best Kings that ever sat on the *English* Throne.

HENRY V.
1415.

*He demands
the FRENCH
Crown.*

Being determined to signalize himself, he sent Ambassadors to demand of *Charles VI.* the Resignation of the *French Crown*, with a proposal to marry his Sister *Catharine*. On his refusing, nor indeed was it to be expected he should resign tamely, *Henry* went over into *France*; and after taking *Harfleur* obtained a signal Victory over the *French*, who as the *English* Historians relate were six Times the Number of their Countrymen, near *Azincourt* in *Picardy*. The *French* left

*Battle of
AZINCOURT.*

10,000 Men upon the Field, and as many were taken Prisoners: Yet *Henry* who only lost a few hundred Men neglected to improve this Advantage. The *French* Fleet was afterwards worsted by that of *England*; and in the Year 1419 *Henry* made himself Master of *Roan* and other Places in *Normandy*. It cannot however be denied, that the Factions *France* was split into during the Incapacity of *Charles VI.* made Way for this Success: For the Queen and Duke of *Burgundy* were more intent to support themselves in the Regency, than to oppose the Progress of the *English*; and the Duke of *Burgundy* being assassinated, at a Conference held with the Dauphin for a Reconciliation betwixt them, his Son *Philip* openly espoused the Cause of the *English*.

*Treaty with
CHARLES VI.
of FRANCE.*

At his Persuasion a Treaty was concluded; by which *Henry* was to marry the Princess *Catherine*; to have the Administration of Affairs during the Life of *Charles*; and at his Death to succeed him. After the Celebration of the Marriage this Treaty was confirmed in the most solemn Manner by the Estates of *France*; and the Dauphin was summoned to answer for the Death of *John* Duke of *Burgundy*. Not appearing he was doomed to perpetual Banishment; and being driven from one Place to another by the *English*, he was in Derision from making it his Residence called King of *Bourges*. As *Henry* was in the Year 1422 marching to the Relief of *Cosne* which the Dauphin had besieged he fell ill; and being carried to *Bois de Vincennes*, he died there in the Flower of his Age and Meridian of his Glory. The Duke of *Bedford* was by him left Administrator of Affairs in *France*; and to his other Brother the Duke of *Gloucester* the Government of *England* was committed.

Henry

Henry VI. his Son a Child but eight Months old succeeded. On the Death of *Charles*, which happened soon after that of his Father, he was proclaimed King of *France*; and the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Britany* renewed their Confederacy with the *English*: But the Dauphin being likewise proclaimed and powerfully supported, War was carried on with great Vigour by both Parties. In the Year 1423 the *French* were routed near *Crevant*, and in the following Year near *Verneuil*. *St. Jaques de Beuvron* being reduced to the greatest Extremity in the Year 1425 by the *French*, the Garrison prayed with a loud Voice to *St. George of Salisbury*; which being overheard by the Besiegers, they imagining the Earl of *Salisbury* whom they dreaded was coming up raised the Siege with the utmost Precipitation. While the Siege of *Orleans* was carrying on, the *French* were defeated in an Action, called because they intended to intercept a Convoy of Provisions *The Battle of the HERRINGS*; and the Town having lost all Hopes of Relief offered to surrender to the Duke of *Burgundy*. As the *English* would not consent to this, the *French* animated by *Joan of Arc* fell upon them soon after with such Vigour as to drive them from before it. *Joan of Arc*, so called from *Arc* in *Lorraine* where she was born, was from this Success called *The Maid of Orleans*. After causing *Charles* to be crowned at *Rheims*, for which she pretended a special Commission from Heaven, she did Wonders against the *English*; but being at length made Prisoner in a Skirmish, she was carried to *Roan* and burnt there as a Witch.

HENRY VI.
1422.

The Battle of the HERRINGS.

JOAN of ARC
or the Maid of
ORLEANS.

As the Coronation of *Charles* had been followed with the Submission of many Towns to him, it was judged proper by the *English* for *Henry* to be crowned at *Paris* in the Year 1432. Not long after a Truce for six Years was concluded under the Pope's Mediation; yet several Places were induced to submit to *Charles*: Which being brought about by artful Insinuations was said to be no Violation of the Truce. This Conduct fell in with a Maxim constantly observed by *Charles*; which was to avoid fighting as much as possible, and to ruin the Affairs of the *English* by Stratagems.

HENRY is
crowned at
PARIS, 1432.

The Misunderstanding that arose betwixt the Dukes of *Bedford* and *Burgundy* was moreover a fatal Stroke

Reconciliation to the English; since it made Way for the *Reconciliation of the latter with Charles*. There had been for some Time a secret Grudge, to remove which a Conference was proposed at *St. Omers*; but the Time for holding it being come, a Dispute arose which should repair thither first. The Duke of *Bedford* insisted, that as Regent of *France* he ought not to give Place to any Vassal of that Crown. The other standing on his Prerogative as being Sovereign of the Place appointed for their Meeting none was held; and from this Time all Measures being broke with the *English* he assisted *Charles* with his whole Forces.

Death of the Duke of Bedford.

1436.

The Death of the Duke of *Bedford* which happened soon after, as it gave Rise to a Contest for his Office betwixt the Dukes of *Somerset* and *York*, proved another great Misfortune to the *English*: For although the latter did carry the Point, his Designs were so thwarted by his Rival, that the City of *Paris*, which had been seventeen Years subject to the *English*, submitted to *Charles* in the Year 1436. The Duke of *Gloucester* was indeed afterwards successful against the Duke of *Burgundy* in *Flanders*; and the brave *Talbot* did great Mischief to the *French* on another Side; yet all was insufficient to retrieve the Affairs of the *English* now fast declining.

Cessation of Hostilities in France.

During a Cessation of Hostilities shortly after agreed upon, a Treaty of Marriage was concluded betwixt *Henry* and the Earl of *Armagnac's* Daughter; but *Charles* prevented it from taking Effect by seizing both the Earl and his Daughter. Another Match was hereupon proposed, by the Earl of *Suffolk* Ambassador from *England* to the *French* Court, with *Margaret* Daughter of *Rene* Duke of *Anjou* and King of *Naples*; and notwithstanding its being done without his Order *Henry* consented thereto. The Duke of *Gloucester* endeavoured to prevent this Marriage, by alledging that her Father had only the Titles of Duke and King; and that it would be doing great Injustice to the Daughter of the Earl of *Armagnac*.

Marriage of Henry.

These and other Reasons being disregarded it was consummated; and for the Sake of obtaining her *Anjou* and *Maine* were ceded to the *French*. As *Henry* afterwards suffered himself to be governed entirely by the Queen and her Favourites, she in Revenge caused

the Duke of Gloucester to be seized for Male Administration, and he was secretly murdered in Prison: But the Death of this brave and innocent Man fell afterwards heavy upon her. *Death of the Duke of Gloucester.*

In the Year 1449 the French made themselves Masters of all Normandy; and the English being in the next Year driven out of Guyenne, Calais and a few other Places thereabouts were all that remained to them in France. *The English driven out of France.* 1449.

This great and sudden Loss may be in some measure imputed to the bad Behaviour of the English Governors and Garrisons; but it was chiefly owing to the Troubles secretly stirred up in England by the Duke of York, which prevented the sending of Succours into France. Being sensible of the King's Incapacity, and of the Dissatisfaction of the People with the Queen's Government, the Duke of York hoped thereby to pave his Way to the Crown; to which as he was descended from a Daughter of Lionel Duke of Clarence third Son of Edward III. he thought himself more justly entitled than Henry, who was descended from John of Gaunt fourth Son of the same King.

Having got an Army on Foot under the Pretence of removing some dangerous Favourites and especially the Duke of Somerset, he came up with and defeated the King's Troops near St. Alban's: And the Duke of Somerset being slain in this Action, he was with the Consent of Henry declared protector of the King and Kingdom. *Troubles in England.*

A fresh Misunderstanding arising it came again to an open Rupture; in the beginning of which the Duke of York was worsted and forced to fly into Ireland. The royal Army being however afterwards defeated by the Earl of Warwick, and the King being taken Prisoner, the Duke of York was again declared Protector and Heir to the Crown; but it was agreed that Henry should during Life enjoy the Title of King. Not long after the Queen, who had levied a considerable Army in Scotland, gained a compleat Victory over the Duke's Forces, and put all the Prisoners to the Sword: Yet notwithstanding the Duke of York fell in this Battle, his Son having in Conjunction with the Earl of Warwick raised fresh Forces marched to London, and was in the Year 1460 proclaimed King by the Name of Edward IV. *Duke of Somerset is slain.*

The Duke of York is made Protector.

EDWARD IV. This Prince immediately marched against *Henry*, who was in the *North* at the Head of a powerful Army, and the most bloody Battle ever fought in *England* ensued. No less than 36,796 Men were left upon the Field; for *Edward* knowing the Superiority of his Enemy had ordered that no Quarter should be given. *Henry* who went into *Scotland* returned with another Army; but being a second Time defeated, he with great Difficulty saved himself by flying into *Scotland*. Coming afterwards *incognito* into *England*, this unhappy Prince, who was more fit for a Priest than to govern in these distracted Times, was seized and thrown into the Tower.

New Troubles in ENGLAND. This did not however give long Repose to *England*: For *Edward*, notwithstanding his having sent the Earl of *Warwick* to conclude a Treaty of Marriage with *Bona* Daughter of *Lewis* Duke of *Savoy*, in the mean Time clapped up a Match with *Elizabeth* Widow of *John* Gray. The Earl irritated hereat declared for *Henry*; and having brought the Duke of *Clarence* *Edward's* Brother into his Party, they fell suddenly upon and made him a Prisoner. The Carelessness of *Edward's* Keepers furnished him with an Opportunity of escaping, and he came to an Agreement with *Warwick*: But Hostilities being soon recommenced the latter was routed and fled into *France*.

HENRY
is restored.

Warwick returned into *England* and was so well received, that *Edward* was glad to fly for Refuge to *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*; and *Henry* after having been nine Years a Prisoner was again raised to the Throne. *Edward* landed afterwards in *England* with some *Burgundians*; but finding himself ill supported, he promised with an Oath to live quietly upon his own Estate and never to disturb *Henry* more. It being however perceived that he was secretly raising Troops, the Earl of *Warwick* marched against him: But a Reconciliation being brought about betwixt the two Brothers, the Duke of *Clarence* with all his Followers went over to *Edward*. *Warwick* being hereby rendered incapable of stopping his Progress, *Edward* made the best of his Way to *London*, and was joyfully received by the *Londoners*, to whom he owed large Sums; and he was likewise said to be a great Favourite of their Wives.

Having once more secured *Henry* in the Tower, he the Year 1471 marched against the Earl of *Warwick*.
After

After an obstinate Battle Victory seemed to encline to **WARWICK** the Earl; but a thick Fog arising his Troops were *is defeated*. thrown into Confusion, and himself with many other Lords being slain *Edward* remained Master of the Field. It was moreover fortunate for *Edward*, that *Warwick* was defeated before the Winds would suffer the Queen and the young Prince *Edward*, who had a considerable **HENRY is** Force in *France*, to come over into *England*. Arriving *murdered by* afterwards she was made Prisoner; her Son was assassinated; and the cruel Duke of *Gloucester* killed *Henry* **the Duke of** **GLOUCES-** with his own Hands. **TER.**

Tranquillity being now restored in *England*, *Charles* War with Duke of *Burgundy*, hoping to draw some Advantage from **FRANCE.** their Quarrel, stirred up *Edward* against *Lewis IX.* of *France*. The *French* King dreading this Storm endeavoured to accommodate Matters with *Edward*, and so Discord betwixt the two Princes. The Failure of *Charles* in not sending the promised Succours for carrying on the Siege of *Nuys* made Way for the latter; and the magnificent Presents of *Lewis* contributed a great deal to the Success of his Negotiations with *Edward*. To confirm the Peace *Lewis* proposed an Interview with *Edward*; and instead of standing upon Ceremony not only went first to the appointed Place, but ordered a large Quantity of Wine to be distributed amongst the *English* Soldiers. *Edward* behaved bravely in his Wars with the *Scotch*, and ended them with great Honour to himself.

While these Things were doing, the Duke of *Glou-* *Death of the* *cester*, for the Sake of getting a Step nearer the Throne, *Duke of* had caused the Duke of *Clarence* his elder Brother to be **CLARENCE.** assassinated. Finding he had been a Dupe to *Lewis*, who after his Return home payed no Regard to the Treaty, *Edward* resolved to renew the War with *France*: But while he was preparing for it, he fell ill and died in the Year 1483.

Edward V. his Son about eleven Years of Age was **EDWARD V** proclaimed; but his Uncle *Richard* Duke of *Gloucester*, **1483.** the greatest Monster that ever appeared in human Shape, deprived him of his Life and Crown in less than three Months. After putting to Death their best Friends, he secured the King's and his Brother's Person, under the Pretence of taking upon himself the Care of their Education,

*Intrigues of
the Duke of
GLOUCESTER.*

cation, and caused himself to be declared Protector. He next by the Help of some Churchmen circulated a Report, that the late King his Brother was begotten in Adultery; and that the Crown of Right belonged to him. A Proposal being hereupon made by the Duke of *Buckingham* to the Lord Mayor of *London* of offering *Richard* the Crown, and received with great Acclamations by some Wretches assembled for that Purpose, his Usurpation was coloured over with the Appearance of his being called to the Government by the unanimous Voice of the People.

RICHARD
III.
1483.
EDWARD
*is murdered in
the Tower.*

After being proclaimed and crowned, he caused *Edward* and his Brother who were both confined in the Tower to be murdered. A Difference arising betwixt him and *Buckingham*, who had been chiefly instrumental in raising him to the Throne, this Duke left the Court in Disgust; and concerted Measures for delivering the Kingdom to *Henry* Earl of *Richmond* then in Exile in *Britany*. His Design was discovered and cost him his Head; but this did not hinder the Embarkation of *Richmond* in the Year 1484. Being driven and detained on the Coast of *Normandy* by contrary Winds, he begged Succours from *Charles VIII.* of *France*: Which were readily granted. Many *English* Men who resorted to him while there swore Allegiance to him; and he bound himself by an Oath to marry *Elizabeth* Daughter of *Edward IV.* For the Sake of marrying this Princess *Richard* had caused his Wife to be secretly murdered; but the Danger which threatened him from *Richmond* obliged him to defer the Marriage.

RICHMOND
lands in
WALES.
Battle of
BOSWORTH.

In order to prevent its Consummation *Henry* landed as soon as possible in *Wales*; and was joined by great Numbers. *Richard* met him, and a Battle ensued in the Year 1485 near *Bosworth*; but as Lord *Stanley* and others went over to *Richmond*, and Part of his Army refused to fight, he was after giving great Proofs of personal Valour defeated and slain. His Crown being found upon the Field of Battle, it was immediately set on *Richmond's* Head; and he was proclaimed King at the Head of his Army.

HENRY VII.
1485.

England had for many Years been miserably rent in Pieces by the fatal Quarrels betwixt the Houses of *York* and *Lancaster*; the first of which bore in its Arms

as a Mark of Distinction a white Rose, the other a red one. By the Marriage of *Henry* with *Elizabeth* Daughter of *Edward IV.* the two Families were happily united; and by his Prudence an End was put to many Calamities.

This Prince was however disturbed by intestine Com- **LAMBERT** motions. One *Lambert Symnel* a Baker's Son, who took **SYMNEL is** upon himself the Title of Earl of *Warwick*, was pro- **proclaimed** claimed King in *Ireland*; and his Imposture first con- **King.** trived by a Priest was countenanced by *Margaret* Widow of *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy* and Sister of *Edward IV.* in order to give *Henry* whom she hated Trouble. Landing in *England* he was easily defeated; and being made a Prisoner was forced to do the Office of Turnspit in the King's Kitchen. In the Year 1491 *Henry* made a Descent on *France*, and laid Siege to *Bouloign*: But he was prevailed upon by a Sum of Money, to desert his Alliance with the Emperor and return home.

In the mean Time the Duchess *Margaret* set up **PERKIN** another Impostor named *Perkin Warbeck*; who took **WARBECK,** upon himself the Name of *Richard*, and pretending to **another IM-** be a younger Son of *Edward IV.* formed a considerable **POSTOR.** Party in *Ireland*. From thence he went into *France*, and was well received; but on the Conclusion of Peace with *Henry* he retired to the Duchess *Margaret*. He returned to *Ireland*, and going afterwards into *Scotland*, was not only received as the Son of *Edward*; but the King gave him a near Relation in Marriage, and made an Irruption into *England* in his Favour. There was an Insurrection at the same Time in *England* on Account of some new Taxes; yet the Rebels were suppressed, and the *Scotch* were repulsed with great Loss: And by a Peace made with *England* the *Scotch* engaged neither to harbour nor assist *Warbeck* for the Time to come. He went back into *Ireland*, and coming over into *Cornwall*, was proclaimed King: But finding that no Persons would join him, and that the Forces of *Henry* drew near he took Sanctuary in a Church. Being dragged from thence he was committed to the *Tower*; and lest he should escape, to do which he made several Attempts, and stir up fresh Disturbances, he was some Time after hanged.

He is hanged.

In

JAMES King
of SCOTLAND
marries HEN-
RY'S Daugh-
ter,

1501.

Prince HEN-
RY marries
his Brother's
Widow.

In the Year 1501 the Marriage of *James* of Scotland with *Margaret* Daughter of *Henry*, which laid the Foundation for uniting the two Kingdoms, was celebrated: And not long after *Henry's* eldest Son *Arthur* espoused *Catherine* Daughter of *Ferdinand* the Catholick. On the Death of *Arthur* shortly after, his Father being unwilling to repay her Dowry, and desirous of preserving the Friendship of *Ferdinand*, caused *Henry* his second Son then only twelve Years of Age to marry the Princess *Catherine*. As the first Marriage had not been, as it was said, consummated the Pope readily granted a Dispensation for the second: But it occasioned strange and unlooked for Events in *England*. *Henry* was justly reckoned the wisest Prince of his Time: But it is said, that he was of an avaritious Temper; and that in order to extort Money from them many wealthy Persons were in his Reign falsely accused. He died in the Year 1509.

HENRY VIII.
1509.

Henry VIII. in Obedience to his Father's Injunction celebrated upon his Accession to the Throne his Nuptials with his Brother's Widow, although it was not quite agreeable to his own Inclination: And so long as he lived on good Terms with her, nothing but Mirth and Splendor were to be seen at Court.

War with
FRANCE.

Under the Pretence of protecting the holy See, he entered into an Alliance with the Pope and *Ferdinand* against *France*. As an Inducement thereto *Ferdinand* promised to assist him in recovering *Guyenne*; but the Army he for this Purpose landed in *Biscay*, for want of being supported by his Father-in-Law, who was wholly taken up in conquering *Navarre*, was forced to return home. In the Year 1513 he went over into *Flanders* with a powerful Army, and having in spite of the Attempts of the *French* to relieve it taken *Terouane*, he rased it to the Ground. He became afterwards Master of *Tournay*, which the *French* ransomed for a Sum of Money: But whether it was out of that Carelessnes which young Men are liable to, or because it was the Pope's Quarrel rather than his own, he did not push his Success. Imagining that *Ferdinand* only wanted to amuse him, he in the next Year accommodated Matters with *France*, and gave his Sister *Mary* in Marriage to *Lewis XII.* While he

TEROUANE
and TOUR-
NAY taken,
1513.

was absent, *James* of *Scotland* had at the Instigation of *France* invaded *England*; but he was defeated with great Loss, and lost his Life in the Action.

In the Year 1522 War was recommenced with *France*; *Renewal of* but the Troops *Henry* sent over made little Progress in War with this or the next Campaign. The taking of *Francis I.* FRANCE, Prisoner at the Battle of *Pavia* gave him an Opportunity of striking a bold Stroke, and especially as he had a Fleet ready to make a Descent on *Normandy*: But instead of improving this, he quitted his Alliance with *Charles* and made Peace with *France*. After this *Charles* paid no Regard to *Henry*; and breaking off the Match concluded with his Daughter *Mary* married a *Portuguese* Princess. Some have thought, that the accommodating of Matters with *France* was the only Way to prevent the too great Aggrandisement of *Charles*. It has however been more generally believed, that this Step was taken by Cardinal *Woolsey* who managed every Thing; because *Charles* had not only hindered his Elevation to the Popedom, but had likewise after giving him Expectations of it refused him the Archbishoprick of *Toledo*. Whatever might be the Motive, it is certain that *France* was thereby extricated from the most imminent Danger.

After twenty Years cohabitation with the Queen, *HENRY* *doubts the* *lawfulness of* *his Marriage:* *Henry* began to have Scruples concerning the Lawfulness of marrying his Brother's Widow. Some thought these were put into his Head by the President of the Parliament of *Paris*, who came over to propose a Match betwixt *Henry's* Daughter and the second Son of *Francis*. Others said that he wanted to get rid of his Wife, because she stood in the Way of his marrying *Anna Bullen*: But the more general Opinion was, that *Woolsey* put him upon divorcing *Catherine*, on purpose to mortify *Charles* and please *Francis*, by paving the Way for a Match with the Duchess of *Alençon* his Sister. The Matter being carried before the *Pope*, it was referred to the Cardinals *Campegius* and *Woolsey* and some others. The *Pope* had at first a Mind to gratify *Henry's* Desire, and it is said a Bull for this Purpose was actually sent to *Campegius*; but as Things took such a Turn before the Time intended for its Publication was come, that his Holiness durst not disoblige *Charles*,
he

he was ordered to burn it, and spin out the Affair as long as possible. The Queen who refused to answer before the Commissioners appealed to the Pope himself; and the Commission was protested against both by *Charles* and his Brother *Ferdinand*. The King's Love for *Anna Bullen* being moreover perceived, *Woolsey*, who imagined that his marrying of her would ruin his Authority, secretly solicited the Pope to refuse the Divorce: But the Artifices of this ambitious Prelate were seen through, and being disgraced he died shortly after in a miserable Condition.

*He breaks
with the Pope
and divorces
CATHARINE,*

1533.

It being at length perceived by *Henry*, that the *Pope* trifled with him and attended only to his own Interest, he prohibited the appealing to *Rome* by his Subjects on any Pretence whatsoever. Many Universities in *France* and *Italy* were now consulted, who all agreed that such a Marriage was contrary to the Law of God; yet the Pope constantly found some Pretence for deferring the Decision of the Matter. *Henry's* Patience being at length worn out, he with the Advice of his Parliament divorced his Wife; to whom he had in all Things except bedding with her carried it very civil while the Affair was depending.

*He marries
ANNA BUL-
LEN.*

A few Months after this which happened in the Year 1533 *Henry* married *Anna Bullen*, and had by her *Elizabeth* afterwards Queen of *England*. Having in the same Year caused himself to be declared Head of the *English* Church, *John Fisher* Bishop of *Rocheſter*, and Sir *Thomas More* Lord Chancellor were beheaded for refusing their Consent to the annulling of the Pope's authority in *England*. His Antipathy however to the Pope did not go so far as to receive the Doctrines of *Luther*; against whose Opinions a Book had some Time before been published under *Henry's* Name: for which the Pope gave him the Title that his Successors have ever since retained of DEFENDER OF THE FAITH. *Luther* wrote a severe Answer to it; and to say the Truth expressed himself in such Terms, as a private Person ought not to use to a crowned Head.

*Origin of the
Title of DE-
FENDER OF
THE FAITH.*

*Dissolution of
MONASTE-
RIES.*

Monks being looked upon as an Useless, and by Reason of their Devotedness to the Interest of *Rome* as a Dangerous Set of Men, Monasteries were by De-
grees

grees dissolved; and the Revenues of all Convents, Colleges, Chapels and of the Knights of *St. John of Jerusalem* were appropriated to *Henry's* Use. Part of these, which as some say amounted in the whole to above 500,000 a Year, were spent in founding six new Bishopricks and in Donations to the Universities. The Remainder he granted to the most considerable Families of the Kingdom, to the End that their Support in the Changes he had made and was resolved to make might be secured. He moreover entirely abolished Image-worship, and made such other Alterations in Religion, that he may be justly said to have laid the Foundation of the Reformation. About this Time many *Catholicks* were executed for refusing to acknowledge the King's Supremacy; and as many Friends to *Protestantism* suffered for denying the real Presence: But it must be confessed, that this Effusion of Blood was not so much owing to the King as to some Bishops, who were forward to make and rigorous in the Execution of penal Laws.

The *Scotch* who in the Year 1543 made an Inroad *The Scotch* into *England* were beat back by a Handful of the *Eng-* repulsed, 1543.
lish; which gave *James V.* so much Uneasiness that he died shortly after. For the Sake of uniting the two Kingdoms, *Henry* would fain have married his Son *Edward* to *Mary* the only Daughter of *James*; and had it not been for the Opposition made to it by the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, the Marriage would in all probability have taken Effect.

Another Treaty being entered into with *Charles* War with
against *France*, it was agreed that the Armies of *Henry* FRANCE.
and *Charles* should meet near *Paris*; and after plundering this City ravage the Country as far as the *Loire*. Instead of pursuing this Scheme *Henry* wasted the Campaign in taking *Bouloign*; and he engaged by a Treaty made in the Year 1546, that if the *French* would pay 600,000 Livres within eight Years it should be restored. The Money was paid; and *Edward* his Successor made good this Engagement by restoring the Place in the Year 1550.

This Prince had after divorcing *Catherine of Arragon* HENRY very
several Wives: In most of which he was very unfortu- unfortunate in
nate. his Wives.

nate. The first of these *Anna Bullen* was beheaded for Adultery and Incest; but it being generally believed that she suffered for favouring the Reformation, the *Protestants* in *Germany*, who before intended to make *Henry* Head of the League, would from that Time hold no Correspondence with him. *Jane Seymour* his next Wife died in Childbed: And he put away *Anne* of *Cleves* whom he afterwards married under the Pretence of some bodily Infirmary. The fifth *Catherine Howard* was beheaded for Adultery. *Catherine Par* Widow of Lord *Latimer* his last Wife survived him.

EDWARD VI. At the Death of *Henry* in the Year 1547 *Edward VI.* his Son succeeded; who being only nine Year of Age, the Duke of *Somerſet* his maternal Uncle had the Administration of Affairs. In order to force a Marriage betwixt his Nephew and *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, he made an Irruption into *Scotland*; and defeated the *Scotch* in the bloody Battle of *Muſſelborough*: Yet he could not carry his Point; for the Queen was conveyed into *France* and married to the *Dauphin*.

The Protestant Religion is eſtabliſhed. Under this Prince the *Proteſtant* Religion was eſta- bliſhed; and the Celebration of the Maſs was prohibited. He met with great Difficulties in this Affair: But they were all happily ſurmounded. Falling dangerously ill the Duke of *Northumberland*, who had before procured the Duke of *Somerſet*'s Death, prevailed upon him under the Pretence of making the Reformation ſecure to exclude his Siſters *Mary* and *Elizabeth*. As to the Queen of *Scots* no Notice was taken of her, and he ſettled the Crown by Will on *Jane Gray* Daughter of the Duke of *Suffolk* by *Mary* a Daughter to *Henry VII.*

JANE GRAY This Project proved fatal both to *Jane* and its Author; *is proclaimed.* for notwithstanding ſhe was upon *Edward*'s Death in the Year 1553 proclaimed Queen, great Part of the Nobility, on her promiſing to make no Change in Religion, declared for the Princeſs *Mary*. Her Party being ſtrengthened by Part of the Army and Fleet, and by the Majority of the Privy Council, the Londoners declared for her; and ſhe was proclaimed Queen there: Nay the Duke of *Northumberland* himſelf, who underſtood well the Art of temporizing, proclaimed her at *Cambridge*; but this Trick did not ſave him from the Scaffold.

Mary,

Mary from the Moment of her Accession set about the MARY, 1553. Re-establishment of the *Roman Catholick* Religion; and the Pope's Authority was again formally acknowledged in *England*. Many *Protestants* were put to Death, and Cardinal *Pool* was sent to re-unite the Kingdom to the See of *Rome*: But she did not attempt the Restoration of the Church Revenues, for fear of disobliging the Families who were in the Possession of them.

The Conditions of her Marriage with *Philip* after- She marries wards King of *Spain* were, that she should have the PHILIP King Disposal of all Offices and Revenues in her own King- of *Spain*. dom; that if she had a Son he should enjoy *England*, *Burgundy* and the *Netherlands*; and in Case *Don Carlos* the Son of *Philip* by a former Wife, to whom *Spain* and the *Italian* Provinces were allotted, should die without Issue, he was to inherit the whole *Spanish* Succession. This Match did not please the People; because as *Mary* had been thirty Years before offered in Marriage to her Husband's Father, it was very unlikely she should have any Child.

To put a Stop to some Insurrections on this Account, *JANE GRAY* the Duke of *Suffolk*, *Jane Gray* his Daughter who had and others been for some Time a Prisoner, her Husband Lord beheaded. *Guildford*, and some others who were looked upon to be the chief Promoters of them, were put to Death. *Elizabeth* afterwards Queen had also suffered the same Fate, had it not been for the Interposition of *Philip* and the *Spaniards* in her Favour; and this was not so much out of Regard for her, as that they feared the taking of her off might, since *Mary* Queen of *Scots* the next Heir was married to the *Dauphin*, make Way for the annexing of *England* and *Scotland* to the *French* Crown.

Notwithstanding it was amongst other Things agreed MARY en- that *Mary* should not be obliged to engage in *Philip's* gages in the Wars with *France*, she sent him some of her best Troops; War against to whose Valour, in Reward whereof *Philip* gave them FRANCE. the Plunder of this Town, the important Victory near Battle of St. *St. Quintin* was in a great Measure owing. This fur- QUINTIN. nished *Henry* with a Pretence for attacking *Calais*; which Place being ill garrisoned the Duke of *Guise* made himself Master of it in a few Days; and the *English*, who were obliged to quit the City immediately, were not suffered

suffered to carry away any Thing valuable with them. The Castles of *Guifnes* and *Ham* being afterwards taken, nothing remained to the *English* in *France*. In the Year 1558 not long after these Losses *Mary* died.

ELIZABETH,
1558.

She refuses
PHILIP'S
offer of Mar-
riage.

Elizabeth being forthwith proclaimed with the unanimous Consent of the People, *Philip* proposed to marry her; and would have taken it upon himself to procure a Dispensation. The Queen was unwilling to affront *Philip* to whom she had been so much obliged; yet as the Divorce of her Father from *Catherine* was founded on a Supposition that the Pope had no Power to dispense with the Laws of GOD, and as she did not care to have any Concern with the Pope, she excused herself in the genteelest Manner she could.

EPISCOPACY
is established in
ENGLAND.

The Protestant Religion and Episcopacy being in her Time established by Act of Parliament, the Exercise of the Catholick Religion was forbid; and Fines were set on all who did not attend publick Worship in the established Churches every *Sunday*. All her Subjects being by another Act obliged to acknowledge her as supreme Head in Spirituals as well as Temporals, only 489 Ecclesiasticks, amongst whom were fourteen Bishops, refused to take the Oath set forth for this Purpose.

PURITANS
and PAPISTS
are kept under.

The *Puritans*, who disliked Episcopacy and all Ceremonies that had the least Resemblance to those of the Church of *Rome*, and wanted to have every Thing regulated according to the Model of *Geneva*, being very numerous, they gave her much Trouble; but she vigorously supported her Authority over them. Conspiracies were formed against her, and Attempts, especially after Pope *Pius V.* had excommunicated her, were frequently made upon her Life by *Papists*: but being all frustrated, they served only to make Work for Executioners, and to occasion more rigorous Laws against those of the *Roman* Communion. Seminaries were hereupon founded at *Doway*, *St. Omers* and other Places, for instructing the *English* Youth in the *Romish* Doctrines; and *England* has never since been without Priests and other Emissaries from these Schools, who take great Pains to propagate the Catholick Religion.

Elizabeth

Elizabeth having been at the Sollicitation of *Mary* Intrigues of Queen of Scots and her French Partisans, notwithstanding the Opposition secretly made thereto by Spain, declared illegitimate by the Pope, *Mary* in concert with the Dauphin took the Arms of England. In Revenge *Elizabeth* joined with the Earl of *Murray* a natural Brother of *Mary*'s in driving the French out of Scotland, and in introducing the reformed Religion there. After the Death of her Husband *Mary* returned into Scotland, and married *Henry Stuart* Lord *Darnley* the handsomest Man in Britain: By whom she had a Son named *James*. *Darnley* being persuaded that she granted criminal Favours to *David Ritz* an Italian Musician, he with the Assistance of some Gentlemen dragged him from the Queen's Closet where he was at Supper, and stabbed him in the Anti-chamber. From this Accident, at which his Mother then big with him was frightened, *James* afterwards King could as it is said never bear the sight of a naked Sword. Her Husband being soon after murdered in the Night, it was given out by the *Murray* Party, and *Buchanan* the Scotch Historian affirms the same, that *George* Earl of *Bothwell* whom *Mary* afterwards married was the assassin. Others say that the Stories of her Intrigues with *Ritz*, and of *Darnley*'s Death, were forged by the Earl of *Murray* and her other Enemies, in order to make her odious. However this was, an Insurrection being raised *Bothwell* was forced to fly into *Denmark*, where he died some Years after miserably; and the Queen was confined. Finding a Way to escape she in the Year 1568 levied Troops: But these were defeated; and having retired into England she was made Prisoner by *Elizabeth*. While *Mary* was in Prison, a Conspiracy was formed by the Duke of *Norfolk*, whom she intended to marry, to make her Queen of England: Which being discovered the Duke was confined. He was afterwards set at Liberty: But being again detected in carrying on the same Scheme, he was beheaded in the Year 1572; and a more strict Guard was kept over *Mary*. Many Attempts for setting her at Liberty having been in vain made, Negotiations for this Purpose were set on Foot; but as no sufficient Security, that she would no more disturb her,

She marries
Lord DARN-
LEY.

He is assassi-
nated.

She is made
Prisoner in
ENGLAND.

The Duke of
NORFOLK
suffers Death.

could be given to *Elizabeth*, they came to nothing. At length growing impatient she fell in with the Designs of *Spain*, the *Pope* and the *Guises* against *Elizabeth*: And her Privy thereto being discovered from some intercepted Letters of *Mary's* own Hand-writing, a Commission was appointed to try her. Being condemned to die the Parliament pressed the Execution of the Sentence; but *Elizabeth* listened to the Solicitations of *James* her Son and of the *French* on her Behalf. An Attempt being afterwards made at the Instigation of *Aubespine* the *French* Ambassador to assassinate *Elizabeth*, she gave Way to the Importunity of the People and signed the Warrant for *Mary's* Execution. Her Secretary *Davidson* to whom it was delivered, notwithstanding an Injunction laid upon him to keep it till further Orders, delivered it to the Council; and the Queen of Scots was beheaded in the Year 1587. *Elizabeth*, who in the whole Course of the Affair had or seemed to have a Desire to save this unhappy Princess from the Scaffold, shewed great Concern for her Death and removed *Davidson* from his Place. *James* King of Scotland was urged by many to join with *Spain*, and revenge his Mother's Death; but *Elizabeth* found Ways to pacify him, and there was ever after a good Understanding betwixt them.

MARY Queen
of Scots is be-
headed, 1587.

ELIZABETH
supports the
FRENCH PRO-
TESTANTS,
1562.

In order to mortify the *Guises* her mortal Enemies, *Elizabeth* supported the Protestants in *France* with Men and Money. They in Return put *Havre de Grace* into her Hands in the Year 1562: But her Troops were forced to quit this Place in the Year following. The *French* engaged by the Treaty of *Chateau Cambresis*, which was soon after entered into, to restore *Calais*: But she never could prevail upon them to do it.

She assists the
NETHER-
LANDERS.

She afterwards entered into an Alliance with *Henry IV.* and assisted the *Netherlanders* in throwing off the *Spanish* Yoke. They twice offered her the Sovereignty of the Low Countries; but she refused it: And although she sent the Earl of *Leicester* her Favourite to be their Governor, it was thought proper to recall him in the second Year, because his supine Behaviour contributed to the embroiling of Affairs there. She greatly annoyed the *Spaniards* by her Admiral *Drake* in the *West-Indies*; and

and *Cadiz* was taken by the Earl of *Effex* in the Year 1595: But he did not keep Possession of it. The *Spaniards*, finding they could never reduce the *Netherlands* without conquering *England*, fitted out a Fleet called from its Strength the *Invincible Armado* for this Purpose: But this Fleet, although such an one as had *The SPANISH* never been seen before, suffered so much from Tempests *ARMADO is* and the *English*, that only a few Ships and those in a *destroyed* miserable Condition returned home. Notwithstanding the *Spaniards* in their Turn supported the *Irish* Rebels, these were generally worsted; but she never could bring them entirely to Obedience. The Earl of *Effex* being *Earl of ESSEX* arrested for his bad Conduct in *Ireland*, he took it so *is beheaded* ill; that notwithstanding he was soon set at Liberty, he endeavoured to stir up an Insurrection in *London*: Which cost him his Head. Negotiations for a Peace with *Spain* were set on Foot in the Year 1606, under the Mediation of *Henry IV.* at *Bouloign*; but Disputes for Precedency arising they were soon broke off, and the War was continued.

The Subjects of *Elizabeth* frequently solicited her to *ELIZABETH* marry: And Offers of Marriage were made her by *Phi-* would never *lip of Spain*; *Charles* Archduke of *Austria*; *Eric* King of *Sweden*; the Duke of *Anjou*; the Duke of *Alençon* his *consent to* Brother; the Earl of *Leicester* and others. She never gave a flat Denial; but amused them all with Hopes, for the Sake of procuring or keeping their Friendship. In Pursuance of this Maxim *Charles* of *Austria* was kept in Suspence seven Years: And the Affair went so far with the Duke of *Alençon*, that the Marriage Articles were drawn; yet she took Care to have some Clauses inserted, which gave her an Opportunity of breaking of the Match.

In her Time the *English* began to trade in the *East-Trade begins* *Indies* and in *Turky*: And by the Help of the *Nether-* to flourish. *landers*, who fled thither for Shelter, the Manufactures of *Bays* and *Serges* were established in *England*.

She also greatly improved the Coin, and rendered the *She supports* naval Force of *England* considerable: Nay her Jealousy *her Superiority* of maintaining a Superiority at Sea was such, that al- *at SEA* though she gave the *Hollanders* all the Assistance she could against the *Spaniards*, they were not suffered to

build Ships of War. For want of guarding against this in the two succeeding Reigns, the *Dutch* became very formidable at Sea; and disputed the Dominion thereof with *Cromwell* and *Charles II.* After nominating *James VI.* of *Scotland* for her Successor, this truly great Queen died much lamented in the Year 1602, being the forty-fourth of her Reign.

JAMES I.
1602.

James being besides allied to the Crown of *England*, by the Marriage of *Margaret* a Daughter of *Henry VII.* to *James IV.* of *Scotland* his Grandfather, he was received in *England* with the utmost Marks of Joy: Yet a Conspiracy for dethroning him and raising the Marchioness *Arabella Stuart* to the Throne, who was likewise descended from the same *Margaret*, was soon after his Coronation formed.

A Conspiracy in
Favour of
the Lady
ARABELLA
STUART.

After the Death of *James IV.* *Margaret* married *Archibald* Earl of *Douglafs*: By whom she had *Margaret*; whose third Son *Charles* by the Earl of *Lenox* was Father of *Arabella*. It was agreed that this Lady should marry the Duke of *Savoy*, and that by the Assistance of *Spain* the *Catholick* Religion should be restored; but the Conspiracy being discovered, the principal Persons concerned in it, amongst whom were the Lords *Cobham* and *Gray*, were punished with Death.

The POWDER
PLOT.

A severe Law against *Jesuits* and all Popish Priests being passed in the next Session of Parliament, some Popish Miscreants hired a Vault under the House of Peers and conveyed Gunpowder into it: With an Intent to blow up King, Lords and Commons. Some Suspicion being raised from a Letter delivered by an unknown Hand to a Servant of Lord *Monteagle*, wherein after many ambiguous Expressions his Lordship was conjured not to be in the House of Peers on the first Day of the Session, strict Search was made; and this hellish

An Oath of
Allegiance en-
joined.

Contrivance was discovered. Hereupon a Resolution was taken in Parliament; that every Subject should by a solemn Oath acknowledge *James* as his lawful Sovereign; and that the Pope had no Power to dethrone Kings or absolve Subjects from their Allegiance.

Peace with
SPAIN, 1604.

In the Year 1604 *James* concluded a Peace with *Spain*; and he had a great Share in bringing one about betwixt *Spain* and the *United Provinces*. When his Son-in-law the

the Elector *Palatine* was driven from his Dominions, he would interfere no further than by his good Offices: But a Treaty of Marriage being afterwards set on Foot betwixt his Son *Charles* and the *Infanta* of *Spain*, it was at the Desire of the *English* Nation broke off, because the *Spaniards* would not consent to the restoring of that Prince. Money was also voted by Parliament for putting the Elector by Force into the Possession of his Dominions; yet nothing was done for him.

An End being put to the Quarrels which had so often exposed *England* and *Scotland* to infinite Calamities by his Accession to the Crown of the former, *James* in order to prevent Jealousy on the Account of Precedency in the Royal Title, took upon himself the Title of King of GREAT BRITAIN. An Attempt was moreover made to unite the two Kingdoms; but this did not succeed, because the *Scotch* looked upon it as becoming a Province to *England*. He takes the Title of King of GREAT BRITAIN.

In this Reign several Colonies were planted in the *West-Indies*: Yet some have been of Opinion that *England* was thereby weakened, and that it would have been more advantageous to have employed these People at home in Manufactures and in the Herring Fishery; from which last the *Dutch* have drawn vast Riches. Others have thought, that in order to preserve Tranquillity at home, it was necessary to get rid in this Manner of many idle turbulent Spirits. The *East-India* Trade was also increased; but as the *Dutch* had got the Start in this, the *English* could never vie with them. He died in the Year 1625. COLONIES
the WEST-INDIES.

Charles his Son and Successor, who after his dispointment in the *Spanish* Match had married *Henrietta* Daughter to *Henry IV.* of *France*, fitted out a considerable Fleet in the Year 1626 against *Spain*: But the *English* after making a Descent near *Cadiz* were repulsed with Loss, and all Commerce betwixt the two Nations was prohibited. *Charles* came also to a Rupture with *France*; but failing in two Attempts to relieve *Rochelle*, he in the Year 1629 made Peace with this Nation, and in the Year following with *Spain*. As the engaging in these Wars, in which he gained nothing, with two formidable Powers at the same Time was imprudent, CHARLES I.
1625.
Peace with FRANCE and SPAIN, 1629.

dent, and served only to run him into Debt, the Affections of his People were thereby greatly alienated.

This Prince had frequent Differences with his Parliament: Into the Origin of which as they ended in a surprising Revolution it is worth while to enquire.

Prudent Conduct of ELIZABETH.

Elizabeth, who wisely saw that the natural Strength of an Island is naval, steadily attended to the Augmenting of her Fleet; and although for the Sake of checking the exorbitant Power of the House of *Austria*, she supplied the *Dutch* and other Enemies of *Spain* with some Troops, she always took Care to preserve the Superiority at Sea.

Mistakes in the Reign of JAMES.

As *James* a great Lover of Peace applied himself more to Books than to the Art of War, the People who commonly fall in with the Inclinations of their Prince neglected all military Exercises; and the Vices which generally arise from Peace and Plenty prevailed. Being besides too fond of Power, he hoped that the Enervation of his Subjects by Luxury and Ease would make Way for the Extension of his Prerogative. The *Dutch* took the Advantage of the Indolence and Inattention of *James*; and in a few Years encreased their Ships of War, which *Elizabeth* would not during her Reign suffer them to do, so as to vie with the naval Force of *England*.

CHARLES thirsts after arbitrary Power.

His Son *Charles* had more Spirit: Yet as he had been unhappily educated with too high Notions of Prerogative, he preferred the being at Peace with foreign Powers, however dishonourable the Terms were, to the asking of Supplies from his People for carrying on War. It having been usual for Parliaments to allow the King an annual Revenue for the Support of his Crown and Dignity, out of which he was to keep up a Fleet for protecting Commerce, the first Parliament called by *Charles* granted the Customs for this Purpose: But as he afterwards dissolved it in an extraordinary Manner, the People thinking the Want of Money would force him to call a new Parliament were unwilling to pay these.

He raises Money without the Consent of PARLIAMENT.

Being confirmed in his Resolution of governing without a Parliament, by the Advice of some corrupt Lawyers, who contrary to the fundamental Laws of the Kingdom told him, *That he might for the publick Service,*

Service raise Money by his own Authority, he under the Colour of paying some Debts contracted by his Father and himself, encreased his Revenue by laying on new Taxes. He moreover imposed a Tax on Houses called Chimney Money for keeping up the Navy; and laid Claim to the Forests and Woods which had formerly been granted by the Crown. Suits being commenced for these, many of which were stubbed up and converted into Arable Land, it cost the single County of *Essex* 300,000 Pound *Sterling* to buy them off: And it is probable that other Counties would have been forced to pay in Proportion, had not the Troubles which broke out prevented it.

The *Puritans* being oppressed, to which the Council *The PURITANS are* of Archbishop *Laud* a hot-headed Bigot contributed a good deal, and the *Papists* being at the same Time *oppressed* treated with Lenity, the former conceived a great Hatred against *Charles*: And did not scruple to accuse him in some Libels handed about of a Design to introduce Popery. At length the Flame which had long been smothered burst out in *Scotland*.

Being persuaded that *Episcopacy*, as Bishops are dependent on the Crown and have a Seat in Parliament, best suited his Purpose of extending the Prerogative, it was a common Saying with *James* no Bishop no King; and he took great Pains to establish that form of Church Government in *Scotland*. *He endeavours to establish* Instead of reflecting on his Father's not having been able to do this, and how ill-timed the Attempt was, *Charles* abrogated all Classes and provincial Synods; and a Liturgy being composed he enjoined the Use of it in *Scotland* upon severe Penalties. It being moreover ordered that the *Scotch* should conform to *Episcopacy* and all the Ceremonies of the Church of *England*, the *Presbyterians* in general took up Arms in the Year 1637. There was too another Thing which helped to promote this Insurrection in *Scotland*. *EPISCOPACY in SCOTLAND.*

At the introducing of the Reformation there, most of the Church Lands were leased out by the Crown to the younger Sons of the best of Families. As the Rent paid was inconsiderable, and many of these had continued from Time to Time in the same Families, they began to

look upon them as their own Estates; and Titles had been annexed to the most considerable of them. These being seized by *Charles* the late Possessors of them joined with the Presbyterians, who were headed by *Alexander Leslie* a Scotchman, who had served under the King of Sweden in Germany.

A Directory called the Covenant, is drawn up.

A Council was appointed for the Management of the Affairs of *Scotland*: And a Directory called by the Name of the *Covenant*, quite different from the Liturgy, being composed, in order to draw in the common People by the venerable Names of Religion and Conscience, the Nobility as well as Ministers took an Oath to maintain it even against the King himself.

The Marquis of HAMILTON is sent into SCOTLAND.

To divert this Storm the Marquis of *Hamilton* was sent into *Scotland*, with Orders for putting a Stop to the rigorous Proceedings there; but it only served to make the Rebels more obstinate. A Parliament was called shortly after by the King; but instead of its coming into his Views against the Insurgents, the *Covenant* was confirmed, *Episcopacy* abolished, and *Presbytery* restored. Recourse to Arms being now the only Thing left, many *Roman Catholicks* entered into the King's Service, and these supplied him with some Money; but as his Coffers were empty, and most of his Subjects refused to advance any, this was not sufficient to put a considerable Army on Foot: Nor did the Story given out, with Intent to fright the People into a Compliance, that a vast Number of *Irish* and *German* Papists were at the King's Call, answer any Purpose except that of encreasing their Animosity. It is probable however that the Royal Army would have been too many for the *Scotch*, had it fallen immediately upon them. For want of so doing, they had Time to receive Ammunition and Money from *France* and *Holland*; and their Case being favourably represented by *Deputies*, the *English* prevailed on the King to compromise Matters with them. Besides that his Authority was hereby greatly lessened, *Charles* soon found that the *Scotch* continued diffident and only intended to gain Time.

A Compromise with the SCOTCH.

He calls a PARLIAMENT in ENGLAND.

A Letter being moreover intercepted wherein the *Scotch* solicited Officers and warlike Stores from *France*, *Charles* convened a Parliament; and hoping to render the
Scotch

Scotch odious to the *English* caused it to be read : But no Regard being paid thereto by the Lower House, and Supplies being still refused this Parliament was in a little Time dissolved.

As *Charles* soon after caused a *Scotch* Commissioner who *Hostilities* had signed that Letter to be seized in *London*, *Hostilities commenced*, were commenced; and the *Scotch* made themselves Masters of *Edinburgh* Castle. *Charles* marched against them with what Troops he could raise: But part of these were repulsed in attempting to force a Pass; and great Complaints were made in all the Counties he passed through, because his Soldiers having no Pay lived by Plunder. Ten thousand Men raised for him by the *Irish* Parliament being likewise disbanded for want of Pay, he was reduced to the Necessity of making a Truce with the *Scotch*, and of calling another Parliament into *England*.

In this Parliament, which assembled in *November* in the *Another PAR-* Year 1640, the Rancour which had long been in People's *LIAMENT is* Minds discovered itself plainly: For so far from joining with *called, 1640.* the King it entered into an Agreement to pay the *Scotch* Army, which was to be at its Disposal. Having extorted a Promise from the King, that he would not dissolve this Parliament without the Consent of its Members, which was in Effect giving up his Authority, the Earl of *Strafford* Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland* was impeached. He took great Pains to prove himself innocent; and the King interposed in his Favour as much as possible. Being condemned by the House of Lords, *Charles* refused to sign the Warrant for his Execution; but as the Parliament were very importunate, and the *Londoners* called out loudly for Vengeance upon the Earl, he at length did *Lord STRAT-* it. Some of the King's other Ministers were imprisoned; others saved themselves by Flight. The Bishops *FORD is* were excluded the House; severe Laws were passed against *beheaded.* *Papists*; the Authority of the *Star-Chamber*, *Privy Council* and *High Commission Court* were suppressed; and the Customs and Command of the Fleet were taken from the King: All which he seemingly consented to. Going afterwards into *Scotland*, he in order to make the *Scotch* easy granted whatever they asked. In the mean Time the *Irish Catholics* under the Pretence of maintaining themselves in the Exercise of their Religion flew

flew to Arms, and a most horrible Slaughter of the *Protestants* ensued. As Resolutions for restraining the Prerogative continued, notwithstanding all his Concessions, to pass in Parliament, the King resolved to exert his Authority; and without considering the great Danger of such a Step, insisted on having six Commoners, whom he accused of High Treason, delivered up. His Demand not being complied with, he went in Person to the Lower House, and delivered himself in sharp Terms from the Speaker's Chair: But as his Power was known to bear no Proportion to his Rage, the House paid no Regard to him; nor could there be a stronger Instance of his Weakness, than his Submission and as it were asking Pardon for this Violation of the Privileges of Parliament.

*An Insurrection
in LONDON.*

An Insurrection being hereupon stirred up by the Lower House in *London* and the neighbouring Parts, the King not thinking himself safe retired into the Country. He would now have secured *Hull*; but as the Parliament had forbid all Governors of Sea Ports to obey his Orders any longer, Admittance was refused to him there except he would dismiss his Followers. After many Messages, Declarations and Answers betwixt the King and the House of Commons, for since the Bishops were voted out of it, and the King's Friends had left it, the Number and Authority of the Lords in the Upper House were inconsiderable, it came to an open Rupture. The King had the Advantage in one or two Actions; but on the coming of a *Scotch* Army to the Assistance of the *Parliament* he was routed near *York*, and not knowing what Course to take surrendered himself to the *Scotch*. On Condition that no Injury should be done to his Person, he was delivered into the Hands of the *English* for the Sum of 400,000 Pounds *Sterling*, and carried from Place to Place as a Prisoner.

*The King is
delivered, by
the SCOTCH
into the
Hands of the
ENGLISH.*

*The Independents get the
Upper Hand.*

Negotiations for an Accommodation were entered into; but the *Independents* whose violent Zeal and Pretensions to extraordinary Sanctity had now gained them the Ascendency could not bear the Thoughts of it. The *Presbyterians* who intended to have ingrossed all the Power, finding that the *Independents* had by their Forwardness in the Cause and Cunning insinuated themselves into most of
the

the military Employments, moved the House that Part of the Army might be sent into *Ireland*; and that the rest a few Forces being kept to preserve Peace in *England* might be disbanded. It being hereupon represented by *Cromwell* Lieutenant-General of the Army, an artful Man of the Independent Party, to the Soldiers, that they were after all their signal Services to be disbanded without Pay or sent to starve in *Ireland*, they entered into Association against the Parliament.

Under the Pretence of setting him at Liberty they soon after took the King into their Custody; and every Thing that had been done by the House towards an Accommodation was declared void. In order to put a Stop to these violent Proceedings, which disgusted the Considerate of every Party, the People took up Arms in several Places, and the *Scotch* came into *England* to succour the King: But by the Prudence of *Cromwell* all Insurrections were suppressed; and after defeating the *Scotch* Army he made their General *Hamilton* Prisoner. During his Absence in the North the Parliament renewed their Conferences with their King; and these would in all Probability have succeeded, had not many Members who were for making up the Differences, been turned out of the House by *Ireton* Son-in-Law of *Cromwell* Commissary General of the Army.

The House being by this Means reduced to about forty Members, all which were Officers or Favourers of *Independency*, it was resolved to treat no more with the King; and that the supreme Power should for the Time to come be lodged in the Commons. A Tribunal consisting of 150 Persons being moreover erected, with full Power to try condemn and punish the King, no Regard was paid to the Clamour of the People, the Preaching of the *Presbyterian* Ministers, the *Protestation* of the *Scotch*, and the Representation of the *Dutch* and other foreign Ministers against it. Before this Court, in which many of mean Birth sat as Judges, the King was accused not only of High Treason and Tyranny, but also of all the Murders and Devastations which had happened since the Beginning of the War. Refusing to acknowledge its Authority he was condemned to be beheaded by sixty-seven Members of the Court; the rest amongst whom

was

The Army enters into an Association against the PARLIAMENT.

CROMWELL defeats the SCOTCH.

Many MEMBERS are turned out of the House.

It is resolved to treat no more with the King.

*The King is
beheaded,
1648.*

was *Fairfax* choosing to be absent: And after receiving some ignominious Treatment from the Soldiers, the Sentence was executed upon him before his Palace of *Whitehall* on the thirtieth of *January* 1648.

*It is declared
High Treason
to proclaim
his Son.*

Upon his Death the Parliament who would be thought to have the supreme Power, which was in Fact in the Army, declared it High Treason to proclaim the King's Son; and many of his Adherents were put to Death or banished. The Royal Party being still strong in *Ireland* *Cromwell* was sent thither; by whose Courage and Conduct it was in the Space of a Year entirely suppressed.

*The Prince
of WALES
arrives in
SCOTLAND.*

In the mean Time the *Scotch* having consented upon some Conditions which he did not half like to proclaim *Charles* Prince of *Wales*, he arrived there from *France* and was crowned. Upon this *Cromwell* was recalled from *Ireland*; and being made General in the room of *Fairfax*, whom the Parliament began to distrust,

*The SCOTCH
are worsted by
CROMWELL.*

he marched into the *North*. After defeating the *Scotch* in several Engagements, and particularly at the Battle of *Leith*, he amongst other Places took *Edinburgh Castle*: Which had always been judged impregnable. While these Things were doing *Charles* entered *England*; but as the Forces he brought with him were few, and his Expectation of being well supported was baulked, his Army was routed near *Worcester* by *Cromwell*. He was forced to fly in Disguise; and after escaping many times the Danger of being killed or taken Prisoner got over into *France*. General *Monk* who was left to command in *Scotland* entirely subdued this Kingdom; and the *Scotch* were obliged to submit to very hard Terms.

*Battle of
WORCES-
TER.*

*A new PAR-
LIAMENT is
called by
CROMWELL.*

The Parliament having now a Mind to disband Part of the Army, *Cromwell* took Care to prevent it by putting an End to its Session; and he so managed, that the new one of 144 Members which he called consisted of *Enthusiasts* and others, whom he knew to be devoted to and capable of serving him. These silly whimsical People soon plunged themselves into Absurdities and Difficulties; and not knowing how to extricate themselves, they came easily into the Proposal of *Cromwell's* Friends, which was to offer him the supreme Power. He accepted it with the Title of Protector in the Year 1653: And thus a new Monarch who governed the three
King-

Kingdoms without Controul was set up by those very People, who had taken so much Pains and run so many Hazards to abolish regal Power.

That he might have a specious Pretence for keeping CROMWELL up his Forces, on which he well knew his Continuance *is made Pro-* in Power to depend, and in order to chastise the *Dutch* *tektor*, 1653: who treated him contemptibly, he resolved to push the War begun in the Year 1651 against them. In this War 1700 Merchant Ships were taken from the *Hollanders*; and they were defeated in five Engagements at Sea: In the last of which their Admiral *Tromp* was killed and 27 Men of War were sunk or taken. They hereupon sued for Peace; and amongst other Terms prescribed by *Cromwell* consented, that the Prince of *He forces the Orange* and his Descendants should for ever be exclu- *HOLLAND-* ded from the Office of *Stadholder* which his Predecessors *ERS into his* had enjoyed; and that *Charles II.* should never be suf- *own Terms.* ferred to reside in the *United Provinces.*

The conducting and happy End of this War gained *All the EU-* *Cromwell* such Reputation, that the most considerable *ROPEAN* Powers of *Europe* sent Ambassadors to and were glad to *POWERS seek* be on good Terms with him. He afterwards with one *his Friendship.* Fleet curbed the Insolence of the *Corfairs* of *Barbary*, and sent another into the *West Indies.* His Design upon *St. Domingo* miscarried: But *Jamaica* was notwithstanding many died by the Distempers incident to the Climate conquered; and the *Spaniards* suffered incredibly by the plundering of their Plate Fleet. In Return for some Troops sent to the Assistance of the *French* in *Flanders* they surrendered *Dunkirk* to him; and after *The Death of* carrying the Glory of the *English* Arms as far as any *CROM-* King had ever done he died in the Year 1658. *WELL.*

By indulging Liberty of Conscience to all he gained *Some Account* the Affections of the different Sectaries so far that no *of his Conduct.* considerable Party could be made against him: And if any Conspiracy was formed, his Spies who knew their Vigilance and Faithfulness would be well rewarded never failed to acquaint him of it in time. He is accused of making Religion a Cloak to his ambitious Designs; nor can it be conceived, that his Purpose of obtaining the supreme Power by the Help of Fanaticks and Visionaries could be carried on without dissembling: Ex-
cept

cept which is hardly to be supposed of a Man of his Understanding he was really as superstitious as the rest. It must be allowed that he had great Faults: But it can never be denied that he was one of the ablest Generals *England* ever saw; and which contributed vastly to his Success, that he made it his Study to find out and employ Men of Courage and Capacity.

RICHARD,
his Son suc-
ceeds to the
PROTEC-
TORSHIP.

His Son *Richard* who succeeded to the Protectorship, being unequal to the Weight of Government, was soon deposed by the Parliament; but as its Members were quite divided amongst themselves nothing could be fixed upon. General *Monk* Governor of *Scotland* took the Advantage of the Confusion which ensued to march into *England*; and having made himself Master of the City of *London*, the Restoration of *Charles II.* was easily effected in the Year 1660.

CHARLES II.
is restored
1660.

This Prince revived the ancient Form of Government both in Ecclesiastical and Civil Affairs; nor had he much Difficulty in doing this: For as the People in general had suffered greatly by the Struggles of the different Parties for Power, they were now almost mad with Loyalty.

War with
HOLLAND,
1665.

In order to humble the *Hollanders*, who began to look big again at Sea, and in Revenge perhaps for their agreeing with *Cromwell* that he should not reside in their Dominions, *Charles* in the Year 1665 declared War against them. After several Engagements in which no great Advantage was gained on either Side, the *Dutch*, who for the Sake of putting an End to the War determined to strike a bold Stroke, to the great Dishonour of the *English* Flag came up to *Chatham* and burnt the King's Ships in the Harbour. *Charles* being hereby laid under the Necessity of making one, a Peace was concluded by the Mediation of *Sweden*; but it is probable, that the Success of the *French* in the *Netherlands* contributed a good deal to bring the *Dutch* into it.

English Ships
are burnt at
CHATHAM.

A second War
with HOL-
LAND, 1672.

His Resentment however continued; and being exasperated by the ill-timed Boastings of the *Dutch*, *Charles* in the Year 1672 while the *French* invaded them by Land attacked them by Sea: But this War succeeded no better than the first; for the *English* Merchants lost many Ships and no Advantage was gained over the *Dutch*. At length

as

as the *English* Nation looked with jealous Eyes on the Progress of *France*, *Charles* was in order to satisfy his People forced to make a separate Peace; and a Treaty was afterwards made under his Mediation between the other Powers at War.

As the Duke of *York* Brother to the King professed *Jealousy of the Roman Catholick Religion*, the People began to be under Apprehensions, that if he came to the Crown, to which he was next Heir, he would endeavour to re-establish it in *England*.

In the Year 1678 Captain *Bedlow* and *Titus Oates* a Man of no extraordinary Character, who after being educated in *Protestantism* had entered into the Order of *Jesuits*, made Oath, that the *Papists* had laid a Scheme to make Way for the Duke of *York's* Accession by killing the King, and to root out the *Protestant Religion*. The Earl of *Stafford*, *Coleman* Secretary to the Duke of *York*, and some *Jesuits* were executed for being concerned in this Plot; and the Duke of *York* himself went by the King's Advice into *Holland*. His withdrawing did not content the People, most of whom suspected him of Designs against the *Protestant Religion*; and a Bill for excluding him from the Succession passed both Houses: But instead of giving his Assent to this Bill, the King, who looked upon it as an Invasion of the Royal Prerogative, dissolved the Parliament and called his Brother home.

The Duke of *York's* Party getting afterwards the Ascendency, Lord *Russel*, *Algernoon Sidney* and others, who were in the Year 1683 convicted of being concerned in a Conspiracy, suffered Death: And the Earl of *Essex* one of the Parties accused was before his Trial found dead in the *Tower*. It was given out that he cut his own Throat; but some Circumstances occasioned a strong Suspicion that he was murdered. It being said that the Duke of *Monmouth* a natural Son of the King's was the Contriver of this Plot, and that the Design of it was to advance him to the Throne, he was banished by *Charles* from Court and went into *Holland*. At the Death of *Charles* in the Year 1685, his Brother *James* Duke of *York* succeeded.

The News of this Prince's Accession being received in *Holland*, the Duke of *Monmouth* and the Earl of *Argyle*,

Jealousy of the Duke of YORK.

OATES's Plot 1678.

The Duke of YORK goes into HOLLAND.

The Bill of Exclusion passes both Houses.

Lord RUSSEL and others are executed, 1683.

The Duke of MONMOUTH is banished the Court.

1685.

*The Duke of
MONMOUTH
and Earl of
ARGYLE
are beheaded.*

Argyle set out from thence. The former landed in the West of *England*: The latter in *Scotland*. Their Design was to dethrone *James*: But as the People, notwithstanding their Jealousy of the King on the account of his Religion, were not generally disposed to take up Arms, the few who joined these two were quickly dispersed, and it cost them both their Heads. Lord Chief Justice *Jefferys*, who was sent on this Occasion into the *West* to try the Rebels, proceeded with great Severity: Nay he did not scruple to boast, that he had in this one Assize condemned more than all the Judges had done since the Conquest.

*The PAPISTS
are encouraged*

It was soon perceived that *James* gave great Encouragement to the *Papists*: And for the sake of including these, because the People would have been quite averse to the Toleration of Popery in express Terms, an Act for the Toleration of all Religions was passed. A College of *Jesuits* was hereupon erected in *London*; and some venal Judges having given it as their Opinion that the King might dispense with the Laws, none of the penal Laws were put into Execution against the *Papists*. Instead thereof many of them were raised to Places of great Trust and Dignity. In the Year 1688 *James* published a Proclamation for universal Liberty of Conscience; and some Bishops who refused to order the reading of it in their Dioceses were committed to the Tower. Under all this the People comforted themselves with the Hopes, that as his Daughters were Protestants Things might after his Death be set right again: But when the Queen's Pregnancy was made publick, the Fear of her having a Son, who might finish what his Father had begun in Favour of Popery, made them very uneasy. Upon the Declaration that the Queen was delivered of a Son, the Prince of *Orange* was invited over by many of the principal Nobility and Gentry: Some of whom had doubted of her being with Child. As this Prince, besides his strong Attachment to the Protestant Religion and the Cause of Liberty, was concerned in Point of Interest, that the Right of his Wife elder Daughter of *James* to the Crown of *England* should not pass to a Prince esteemed supposititious, he complied with the Sollicitations made to him: And the *States General*, whom the Alliance lately

ately concluded betwixt *England* and *France* had disgusted, readily assisted him with Ships and Forces.

He landed without any Opposition from Lord Dartmouth the *English* Admiral at *Torbay* on the 5th of November 1688; and the People, who were pleased with his Declaration that he came to deliver them from a *Popish* King and to see a free Parliament called, flocked in to him. As whole Regiments of the King's Forces went also over to him, the Queen and the pretended Prince of *Wales* were sent away for *France*, and James himself followed them. The Prince and Princess of *Orange* being shortly after crowned, as King and Queen of *England*, they were acknowledged by the *Scotch* as lawful Sovereigns.

The Prince of ORANGE lands at TORBAY.

JAMES goes into FRANCE.

In order to regain the Dominions which he had lost by his Bigotry to the *Romish* Religion James landed in the Year 1690 with some *French* Troops in *Ireland*; and the *Dutch* Fleet not being well supported by the *English* Fleet under Admiral *Torrington* was worsted by that of *France*: But James's Success was short-lived; for he failed at the Siege of *Londonderry*, and his Army suffered an entire Defeat at the Battle of the *Boyne*. In this Action which was decisive the Duke of *Schomberg*, one of the best Officers that served under *William*, and one of the bravest Men of his Time, received a mortal Wound. Giving over all for lost James now returned into *France*; and *Dublin* with some other Towns submitted to the Conqueror. In the next Year the Army which still adhered to the Interest of James was defeated by General *Ginkle* near *Athlone*; and their General *St. Ruth* being killed all that were left of the *French* got home as well as they could.

WILLIAM III. and MARY, 1688.

Battle of the BOYNE, 1690.

Battle of ATHLONE, 1691.

Being now Master of the three Kingdoms William entered into the Alliance, which the *States General* and House of *Austria* had concluded for checking the ambitious Designs of *Lewis XIV.* As several other Powers came afterwards into this Alliance it was called the *Grand Alliance*. In the Year 1692 the *French* Fleet under Marshal *Tourville* was defeated by Admiral *Ruffel*, who commanded the combined Fleet of *England* and *Holland* near *La Hogue*; and to prevent their falling

WILLIAM enters into the GRAND ALLIANCE.

Battle of LA HOGUE, 1692.

into the Hands of the Enemy the *French* set Fire to some of their own Ships.

Death of
MARY, 1694. Upon the Death of *Mary* in the Year 1694 *James* came from *St. Germans* to the Sea Coast, in order to embark with Marshal *Boufflers* and a *French* Army for *England*; but as the Conspiracy against *William*, for which *Charnock* King and others were executed, had been discovered, and he was known to be generally esteemed by the *English*, the Expedition was laid aside.

Treaty of
RYSWICK, 1697. By the Treaty of *Ryswick*, concluded in September 1697 under the Mediation of his *Swedish* Majesty, *Lewis* acknowledged *William* and engaged not to disturb the Succession to the *English* Crown, which had been settled by divers Acts of Parliament in the *Protestant* Line. Some Things moreover which concerned Trade were settled by this Treaty; and Restitution being made of all that had been taken in the *West Indies*, it was agreed that Commissioners should be appointed for ascertaining the Boundaries of the *English* and *French* Colonies there.

The PARTI-
TION
TREATY.

The Partition Treaty, which was concluded soon after that of *Ryswick*, drew upon *William* the Indignation of the *Spanish* King. Complaint being hereupon made in reproachful Terms by the *Spanish* Minister at *London*, he was ordered to come no more to Court; but when the Will of *Charles II.* was published *William* found he had been deceived, and that all Measures had been secretly taken by *France* who was a contracting Party to this Treaty to prevent the Execution of it. Being unable to withstand the Power of *France* alone the Duke of *Anjou* was acknowledged by him as King of *Spain*; But he afterwards entered into an Alliance with *Holland* and the House of *Austria* in Favour of *Charles* second Son of the Emperor *Leopold*. While Preparations were making for putting this Prince into Possession of the *Spanish* Monarchy, *William* died in the Year 1702 being the 51st of his Age by a Fall from his Horse in Hunting. Before his Death he had the Mortification to hear that the pretended Son of *James*, who died a few Months before *William*, was acknowledged by *France* as King of *England* under the Name of *James III.*

Death of
WILLIAM.

Anne Princess of *Denmark* second Daughter of *ANNE*, 1702.
James II. was scarce upon the Throne, before the *English* Parliament, provoked at the Behaviour of *France* with Regard to the pretended Son of *James*, came to vigorous Resolutions for carrying on the War against *War with France*; and not only confirmed the Succession in the *FRANCE*. House of *Hanover*, but all Papists were for ever excluded from the Throne.

While the Duke of *Marlborough* commanded in *The GAL-*
Flanders, a Fleet of *English* and *Dutch* Men of War *LEONS de-*
under the Duke of *Ormond* attempted to surprize *Cadix*; *freed at*
but as the Inhabitants who adhered to *Philip* were ap- *VIGO*.
prised in time of the Design it could not be carried into
Execution. The *Spanish Galleons* were afterwards at-
tacked in the Port of *Vigo*; and notwithstanding the
Precaution of carrying as much as possible of their Cargo
into the Country, the combined Fleet got a consider-
able Booty and burnt some of the Ships. In 1703 *Bonn*
and *Limburg* were taken by the Duke of *Marlborough*; 1703.
and which was of great Consequence to the *Allies* the
King of *Portugal* declared against *Philip*. The Battle *Battle of*
of *Hockstet* in the next Year was a fatal Stroke to the *HOCKSTET*,
House of *Bourbon*; for from this Time the Affairs 1704.
of *France* began to decline. As no less than the saving
of the Empire may be ascribed to this Victory, the *Eng-*
lish General to whose Conduct it was principally ow-
ing was made a Prince of the *Empire*; and when he
returned home received all Marks of Respect from his
Mistress and Country for his important Services. 1705.
The next Campaign was spent in observing the Motions of
the Enemy; but the Year 1706 was one of the most
remarkable in this Reign.

England and *Scotland* although united since the Time *The UNION of*
of *James I.* under one King had separate Parliaments, and *the two King-*
each was governed by its own Laws independently of *doms, since*
the other. The Union of the two Kingdoms which *called*
had been before in vain attempted was brought about *GREAT*
in this Year; and both Nations have been ever since *BRITAIN,*
under the Direction of one Parliament and called *Great*
Britain. While these Things were doing at Home;
the Duke of *Marlborough* who was active in the Field
by his personal Bravery contributed a good deal to

Battle of
RAMILLIES.

the Success of the Allies in the Battle of *Ramillies*. *Antwerp, Malines, Louvain, Brussels* and all *Brabant* being likewise taken in this Campaign, Proposals of Peace were made by *France* through the Hands of the Elector of *Bavaria*. These were received with great Coolness; and it was resolved in the *British* Parliament to prosecute the War until the House of *Bourbon* would renounce all Pretensions to the *Spanish* Monarchy.

The Pretender
embarks for
SCOTLAND,
1708.

The *Scotch* had by the Union some Advantages in Trade and otherwise; yet many of them were dissatisfied with it. It being hereupon represented by some of the Malecontents at the Court of *St. Germains*, that the *Scotch* were all ready for a Revolt if the *Pretender* did but appear amongst them, a Squadron was with incredible Diligence fitted out at *Dunkirk*; and he went on board it in the Year 1708. After being retarded for some Time by Winds he steer'd towards *Scotland*; but finding his Expectation of an Insurrection in his Favour disappointed he soon made the best of his Way back to *Dunkirk*. A *French* Man of War on board of which were some Persons of Distinction was taken by the *English* Admiral *Byng*; and he was very near falling in with the whole Fleet.

The Zeal of
GREAT
BRITAIN *for*
the carrying on
the War de-
clines, 1709.

The Zeal, which notwithstanding the Endeavours of *France* at the Conferences of *Gertrudenberg* to disunite the *Allies* had all along been shewn by *Great Britain* for carrying on the War, was towards the End of the Year 1709 observed to decline. In the next Year the Doctrines of Passive Obedience and Non Resistance were publicly avowed in two Sermons preached by Dr. *Sacheverel*: For which, as the admitting of these Doctrines was quite inconsistent with the *Revolution* and the *Protestant* Succession, Articles of Impeachment were exhibited against him by the House of Commons. No Pains were on this Occasion spared by the Commons; yet by the Intrigues of some great Persons this Trumpeter of Sedition, who had thrown the whole Nation into a Ferment and whose Trial had cost an immense Sum, was only silenced for three Years. The Favours and Presents he afterwards received caused it to be believed that he was the Tool of a Party, who perceiving the *Queen's* ill State of Health wanted to make Way
for

SACHEVE-
REL impeach-
ed.

for the bringing in of the *Pretender*: Nay some suspected that she herself was not averse to it.

In the Year 1710 the Lords *Sunderland* and *Godolphin* were succeeded in the Posts of Secretary of State and first Lord of the Treasury by *Henry St. John*, Esq; afterwards Lord *Bolingbroke* and *Robert Harley*, Esq; on whom the Queen conferred the Title of Earl of *Oxford* both known Friends to the Doctor. Change of the Ministry, 1710.

Peace being resolved upon by the new Ministry *Negotiations* Mr. *Pryor* was sent into *France* to settle the Preliminaries. Mr. *Menager*, than whom no body in *France* understood Trade better, came at the same Time from *FRANCE*. the *French* Court to *London*; and considerable Remittances being made to Count *Tallard*, who had been Prisoner in *England* ever since the Battle of *Hockstet*, he by a prudent Application of the Money sufficiently made good what his Country had suffered by his Defeat. Complaints being made by the *Allies* of the *English* Ministry for treating separately, Lord *Raby* afterwards Earl of *Strafford* protested at the *Hague* that *England* would never desert the common Cause; nay while the *Negotiations* were carrying on the *English* Troops were ordered to act in Concert with the *Allies*. As this however was done only to amuse the *Allies*, Count *Tallard* set out from *England* for *Versailles* in the Year 1711 to forward the Peace; and in Return for a Present of Horses and Dogs carried by him to *Lewis XIV.* a Quantity of most delicious *Champaign* and *Burgundy* and some very rich Silks were sent into *England* to the Queen. The Enmity which had long subsisted was now quite forgot; and great Hopes were conceived of mutual Advantages in Trade from the Revival of a good Understanding betwixt the two Nations.

As soon as the Preliminaries were agreed upon, the QUEEN declared her Intention to treat of a Peace at *Utrecht* on the Plan laid down by these. The principal Articles of them were: That *France* should acknowledge the Queen and the Succession as settled in the Protestant Line; that all possible Precautions should be used to prevent the Junction of the *French* and *Spanish* Monarchies under the same Sovereign; that reasonable Satisfaction should be given in the Treaty to be concluded to every one of the *Allies*; that the *United Provinces* and the *Empire* should

*They are not
satisfactory to
the ALLIES.*

have a sufficient Barrier; that Dunkirk should on the Payment of an Equivalent in Money be demolished; and that besides being re-instated in his Dominions some Cession in Italy, conformably to the Engagements of the Allies on his declaring for them, should be made to the Duke of Savoy. The Allies objected to these Preliminaries, and Prince Eugene was sent to London on Purpose to expostulate with the *British* Ministry; but it signified nothing, and the Duke of *Marlborough* was given to understand the Queen had no further Occasion for his Service, because he expressed his Dissatisfaction with the Preliminaries. After a long Debate in the House of Commons it was resolved to address her Majesty not to conclude a Peace, except the whole *Spanish* Monarchy was ceded to the House of *Austria*: And the making of eighteen new Lords, for the sake of securing a Majority in the House of Peers, shews the great Probability that otherwise it would have been so resolved in this House likewise.

*Conferences
opened at
UTRECHT,
1712.*

*The Duke of
ORMOND
commands in
FLANDERS.*

Early in the Year 1712 the Bishop of *Bristol* and Lord *Strafford* repaired to *Utrecht*; at which Place the *French* Ministers who had Orders to act in Concert with them were before arrived. Every Thing betwixt *Great Britain* and *France* was soon adjusted; but the signing of the Treaty was deferred for the sake of giving the Allies Time to settle what concerned them. In the mean Time the allied Army took the Field, and the Duke of *Ormond* who succeeded the Duke of *Marlborough* in his Command seemed willing to act with the other Generals: But when it was proposed to attack the *French* he declared that he had Orders from his Court not to risque a Battle. Upon this *Quefnoi* was besieged and taken. Not long after he declared that he had Orders to publish immediately a Suspension of Arms for two Months betwixt *Great Britain* and *France*; and to march some Troops to take Possession of *Dunkirk*, which the *French* Court had agreed to put into his Hands as a Security for the Uprightness of its Intentions. As the national Troops and some others in the Pay of *Great Britain* from this Time formed a separate Camp, the *French* Army was superior to that of the other Allies.

In the next Session some Lords protested against a *The Majority* Peace, unless there was a Cession of the whole *Spanish in both Houses,* Monarchy: But the Majority of this House were for *and the City of* it; and the Queen was addressed on the Prospect of *LONDON, for* Peace by the City of *London.* The House of Commons moreover was now so altered, that instead of coming to such Resolutions as the Heads of the Opposition expected, the Conduct of the Duke of *Marlborough* and of his Friends who had been at the Head of the late Ministry was inquired into: And Complaint was made that the *Allies* had been deficient in their *Quota's* for maintaing the War.

In order to fulfil the Promise which the Allies had made of obtaining advantageous Terms for the Duke of *Savoy* it was proposed by *England* that he should have *Sicily*; And it was likewise proposed that the Elector of *Bavaria* should, to make Amends for his Disgrace and Sufferings in having been put under the Bann of the *Empire*, be made King of *Sardinia*. The former was effected; as to the latter it was stipulated, that he should have Part of the *Netherlands* till the Emperor restored him to his own Electorate.

Stipulations in Favour of the Duke of SAVOY and the Elector of BAVARIA.

In the Beginning of the next Year the *British* Ministers informed those of the *Allies*, that they had Orders to sign a Treaty with *France*; and that if the other Powers, and especially the *Dutch*, did not hasten to settle Matters they must make Peace without them. A Treaty was at length signed, and the principal Articles of it which concerned *Great Britain* were: That the *French* King should acknowledge Queen *Anne* and the Succession in the House of *Hanover*; that *Dunkirk* should be demolished; and that all *Acadia*, the Island of *St. Christopher's*, *Hudson's Bay* and *Newfound-Land*, the Right of fishing and drying Fish, being only reserved to the *French*, should be ceded to *Great Britain*. This Treaty was followed with another, by which some Things that concerned the Commerce of the two Nations were regulated. A Treaty with *Spain* signed in *July* the same Year, which was also negociated at *Utrecht*, was little else than a Confirmation of the Treaties of the Years 1667 and 1670.

Treaties signed with FRANCE and with SPAIN, 1713.

*Jealousy of
Designs carry-
ing on i Fa-
vour of the
PRETENDER.*

As it was agreed by the Treaty with *France* that the *Chevalier de George*, a Title the Pretender had taken since his *Scotch Expedition*, who had protested by an Act dated at *Germain's April* the 25th 1712 against all that should be stipulated in the Congress of *Utrecht* to his Prejudice, should quit that Kingdom he went into *Lorrain*. Being still thought too near *England* by such as apprehended Designs to be secretly carrying on in his Favour, many Addresses were presented begging that the Queen would set a Price upon his Head: And it was proposed to send for the hereditary Prince of *Hanover*, that he might take his Place in the House of Peers as Duke of *Cambridge*. The Queen did not think fit to comply with the first Request; and being provoked at the latter Proposal she in a Letter to *Hanover* dated in *May* 1714 expressed her Dislike of it in very sharp Terms.

*Lord Ox-
FORD
is removed
from his Office,
1714.*

Lord *Oxford* being shortly after removed from the Office of first Lord of the Treasury, he at taking Leave told the Queen plainly that his Rival's, meaning *Bolingbroke's*, Counsel would be the Ruin of the *Protestant Religion*. As this was understood to mean his advising the Queen to raise the Pretender to the Throne of *Great Britain*, and her Health declined a great Pace, all the Friends of the House of *Hanover* bestirred themselves. The sudden Death of the Queen on the first of *August* following entirely broke the Measures supposed to be carrying on in favour of the *Chevalier*: And *George* Elector of *Hanover* was proclaimed King.

*Death of
ANNE.*

*GEORGE I.
1714.*

The Duke of *Ormond* and Lord *Bolingbroke* dreading the Resentment of this Prince for their notorious Opposition to his Interest went immediately over to *France*: And from thence repaired to the Pretender's Court. The new King was received in *London* with all Marks of Joy; but the Solemnity of his Coronation was in some Places disturbed by the Acclamations of the Populace in Favour of *James*. While Precautions were taking to stop these Tumults of the People the Parliament made strict Enquiry into the Management of the late Administration. By some Extracts from *Bolingbroke's* Papers which were published by a Committee appointed to inspect them it appeared, that the late Mi-

*The Conduct
of the LATE
MINISTRY
enquired into.*

nisters

nisters and some others were absolutely devoted to the Interest of *France*; and that great Pains had been taken to secure the Throne after the Death of *Anne* for the Pretender.

In a Manifesto dated *August 29*, containing his Reasons for asserting his Right to the *British Crown*, the Pretender used these remarkable Words, which shew sufficiently what Intrigues had been carrying on: *Since the sudden Death of the Princess our Sister has prevented the Execution of her kind Intentions in our Favour: Which we have for some Years been sensible of, and which have been the Cause of our Inactivity, &c.* The Minister of *Lorrain* being suspected of spreading this Manifesto his Master endeavoured to justify himself by a Letter; but as he continued to harbour the Pretender his Protestations of Regard for the reigning Prince were looked upon as insincere.

In the ensuing *June* the *Chevalier* by a Declaration fixed up at the *Royal Exchange*, and at other Places in *London*, acquainted the People of his Intentions to deliver them from Usurpation, and exhorted them to assist him: And the Earl of *Marr* having set up his Standard caused him to be proclaimed by the Name of *James VIII. of Scotland* in most of the Towns North of the *Tay*. This Earl who did not care to pass the *Firth* was reinforced by General *Gordon's* and Lord *Seaforth's* Men; and some *Scotch* and *English* Lords assembled an Army of about 3000 Men at *Kelso* in *Northumberland*. In their Way towards *Lancashire* this Army increased; but being surrounded at *Preston* by the King's Troops under General *Wills* they surrendered at Discretion: And the Lords *Derwentwater* and *Mackintosh* with about 1500 Men, amongst whom were above 200 Lords and Gentlemen, were made Prisoners. In the mean Time a Battle had been fought at *Dundee* betwixt the Troops under the Earl of *Marr* and the King's Forces commanded by the Duke of *Argyle*. In this the left Wing of the rebel Army was routed; and notwithstanding that the Duke's left Wing suffered a good deal the King's Troops had upon the whole the Advantage.

This

The PRETENDER lands in SCOTLAND.

This being however not thought decisive the *Chevalier*, who was now arrived, made his publick Entry into *Dundee*; and had he not refused to take the usual Oath his Coronation would have been solemnized at *Perth*. As some were hereby disgusted, and it appeared plainly that his Irresolution joined to the prudent Measures of *George* made it impossible to establish him, the Lords *Seaforth* and *Huntly* left him and went

He reimbarks for FRANCE.

home with their Clans. At length finding himself at the Head of no more than 500 Men, and that the Duke of *Argyle* advanced towards him, he embarked with the Earl of *Marr* and some others of his Followers and landed at *Graveline*. The Chiefs of the Rebel Prisoners were tried in *London*; and the Lords *Derwentwater* and *Kenmure* were beheaded. The Earl of *Nithsdale* made his Escape the Night before he was to have been executed; and the Lords *Widrington*, *Carnwath* and *Nairn* were reprieved.

The Lords DERWENTWATER and KENMURE beheaded.

Treaty with FRANCE and HOLLAND, 1717.

This Rebellion, which as few Counties had been free from Tumults gave the Court a great deal of Uneasiness, being suppressed, to prevent the rekindling of it a Treaty was entered into with *France* and the *States General*. The Substance of this signed at the *Hague* in *January 1717* was: That the *Chevalier* then at *Avignon* should pass the *Alps* and not return into *France* upon any Pretence, nor have directly or indirectly any Assistance from his most Christian Majesty; that neither of the contracting Powers should shelter the Rebel Subjects of the others; that if the Dominions of either of those should be disturbed by intestine Commotions, the others should assist it at their own Expence within two Months after the Requisition of Succours; that no new Port should be made at *Mardyke* or *Dunkirk* nor at any other Place with two Miles of either of these Places; and that the Succession to the Crowns of GREAT BRITAIN and FRANCE, as settled by the Treaty of *Utrecht*, should be guarantied by the three Powers.

Intrigues of SWEDEN, in Favour of the PRETENDER.

All the Precautions which could be taken did not however prevent the Intrigues of *Sweden* in Favour of the Pretender. *Charles XII.* had engaged to land 20,000 Men in *Great Britain*, and his Ambassador at the *British* Court Count *Gyllenburg* took great Pains to dispose the

the People for receiving and joining them: But the *British* Court being informed in Time of it that Minister was seized, and on examining his Papers the whole Scheme of this Enterprize came out. At the same Time *Baron Gortz* who had put his Master upon it was arrested in *Holland*: And so this Expedition for defraying the Expence of which it appeared that large Sums had been advanced by the Disaffected in *Great Britain* came to nothing.

The Attack of the Island of *Sardinia* by the *Spaniards* being considered as an Infraction of the Treaty of *Utrecht*, Negotiations were entered into at *London* for checking their ambitious Designs: Who after conquering *Sardinia* had attacked and almost subdued *Sicily*. In Pursuance of these a Treaty, called the *Quadruple Alliance* because it was supposed the *Dutch* would have entered into it, was signed on the 2d of *August* in the Year 1718 by the Ministers of their *Imperial, most Christian* and *Britannick* Majesties. Its principal Conditions were, that the Emperor should keep *Naples*, the *Milanese* and the *Netherlands*; that if *Sicily*, now looked upon as lost to its new King the Duke of *Savoy*, should be subdued for the Emperor he should give up all Pretensions to the rest of the *Spanish* Monarchy; and that *Sardinia* with the Title of King should be given to the Duke of *Savoy* in lieu of *Sicily*. To prevent the Disputes which might arise concerning the Succession to *Tuscany*, *Parma* and *Placentia*, and their Union with the *Spanish* Crown in Case the present Dukes should die without Heirs, it was agreed that these Dutchies should devolve upon the eldest Son of the King of *Spain* by his second Wife Daughter to the late Duke of *Parma*; and that in order to secure the Possession of them *Leghorn*, *Parma* and *Placentia* should be garrisoned by *Swiss* Troops, the whole of which were not to exceed 6000 Men. Three Months being given for the Kings of *Spain* and *Sicily* to accede to this Alliance the latter did it on the eighth of *November*.

The QUADRUPLE ALLIANCE,
1718.

The Duke of SAVOY accedes to it.

As the *Spaniards* continued to push Things in *Sicily*, where only *Syracusa* and *Melazzo* remained to the *Imperialists* whom the *Piedmontese* had called to their Assistance, their Fleet in the *Mediterranean* was destroyed by

The SPANISH FLEET destroyed.

The Duke of SAVOY becomes King of SARDINIA.

by the *British* Fleet. The *Imperialists* by this Stroke and the Assistance of the same Fleet soon gained the Superiority in *Sicily*: And *Sardinia* being reconquered was given to the Duke of *Savoy*, who has ever since taken the Title of King of this Island.

War with SPAIN.

The Action in the *Mediterranean* being followed with an open Rupture betwixt *Great Britain* and *Spain*, *France* declared against the latter. The Pretender and his Adherents hoping to reap some Advantage from this Quarrel repaired to *Madrid*, and prevailed on his Catholick Majesty to attempt a Descent upon *Scotland*: But as the Ships fitted out in the Year 1719 for this Purpose were separated in a Storm, only two of them arrived at *Kinsale* in *Scotland*. The Troops they landed were joined by some discontented Lords; But the Court of *London* had taken such Measures that the Army formed at this Time was soon dispersed.

Treaty with SWEDEN.

By the Death of *Charles XII.* the *Chevalier's* Hopes of Assistance from *Sweden* were lost; for his Sister who succeeded entered into a strict Alliance with the *British* Court. In Consequence thereof the Dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden* were ceded to his *Britannick* Majesty as Elector of *Hanover*; and *Great Britain* engaged to pay a Subsidy of 72,000 Pounds Sterling to *Sweden*. That he might also have in case of Need their Assistance, *George* entered about the same Time into Treaties of defensive Alliance with the Emperor and his *Polish* Majesty.

Treaties with the EMPEROR and POLAND.

SPAIN accedes to the QUADRUPLE ALLIANCE, 1720.

The Face of Affairs in *Spain* being quite changed by the Disgrace of that enterprizing Minister *Alberoni* in the Year 1720, his *Catholick* Majesty acceded to the *Quadruple Alliance*. In order to bring *Spain* into this the Regent of *France* engaged for the Restitution of *Gibraltar*, and when the Evacuation of *Sicily* was insisted upon the *Spanish* Ministry demanded that of *Gibraltar*; but as the *British* Nation would hear nothing thereof *Sicily* and *Sardinia* were ceded to the Emperor and King of *Sardinia*; and other Things were referred to a future Congress.

A Fleet sent into the BALTICK.

As the *Czar's* Terms appeared to his *British* Majesty, who offered his Mediation to accommodate the Difference betwixt *Russia* and *Sweden* unreasonable, a Fleet of

of *English* Men of War was sent in the same Year to join that of *Sweden* in the *Baltick*: But this did not prevent the *Russian* Fleet from ravaging the *Swedish* Coast.

This Year was also remarkable for the *South-Sea* The SOUTH-
Scheme: By which many Families deluded with the SEA
Imagination of getting great Fortunes in a little Time SCHEME.
were ruined; and the Government was forced to interpose to prevent the ill Consequences of the People's Despair on this Occasion. Upon Enquiring into this Affair it appeared, that besides Stockjobbers and Directors some Persons of great Distinction were concerned in working the People up to this Pitch of Madness. It ended in an entire Change of the *South-Sea* Directors: Some of whose Estates were confiscated for the Benefit of the Sufferers. This fatal Stroke to the *British* Trade was in some Measure remedied by the *Assiento* Contract concluded at *Madrid* in *June* 1721. In the same Year Death of the
the Funeral of that brave General and able Statesman Duke of
the Duke of *Marlborough*, who since the Accession of MARLBOROUGH,
George had been restored to the Honours he justly deserved, was solemnized with great Funeral Pomp. 1721.

A Conspiracy for exciting an Insurrection being discovered in the Year 1723, the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Lord ATTERBURY'S Plot,
North and Grey, the Bishop of *Rocheſter*, Counsellor *Layer* 1723.
and some others were taken into Custody. The Bishop was after a long Trial banished; *Layer* was hanged. As *France* and *Spain* were now reconciled both Courts pressed his *Britanick* Majesty in the Year 1724 to give up *Gibraltar*: But he could not be prevailed upon to part with this important Place.

An *East India* Company, projected by some *English*-The OSTEND
men who preferred their own to the Interest of their COMPANY
Country, being in this Year established at *Ostend*, Great established,
Britain, *France* and *Holland* complained of it at the 1724.
Court of *Vienna* and endeavoured to stop its Progress.

For the sake of counterpoising the Treaty of *Vienna* Treaty of
a defensive Treaty betwixt *Great Britain* and *France*, HANOVER,
to which *Holland* afterwards acceded, was entered into 1725.
at *Hanover* in the Year 1725. As great Advantages were by the Treaty of *Vienna* granted to the Emperor, it was feared he had engaged to assist *Spain* in attacking *Gibraltar*. A Fleet was immediately sent to the *Spanish*
Coast,

GIBRAL-
TAR besieged.

Preliminaries
of PARIS,
1727.

Coast, and another into the *West Indies*: Which by blocking up the Gallies distressed the *Spaniards* a good deal. The Siege of *Gibraltar* was hereupon undertaken by the *Spaniards*; but as the Place was well provided and the *English* were Masters of the Bay it came to nothing.

The *British* Court had moreover for some Time complained of the Depredations of the *Spanish Guard da Costas* in the *West Indies*; and the two Courts were further embroiled by the forcibly dragging of the Baron *de Ripperda* from the House of Mr. *Stanhope* the *British* Minister at *Madrid*, for which his Master demanded Satisfaction: Yet by the Mediation of *France* Preliminaries for a general Peace were signed at *Paris* in *May* 1727. By these the Charter granted to the *Ostend Company* was suspended for seven Years; and the Rights which either of the contracting Powers had acquired by the Treaties of *Utrecht*, *Baden*, the *Quadruple Alliance* or any other Treaty concluded before the Year 1725 were confirmed. Every Thing which concerned Trade was also to be regulated by the Treaties which preceded the Year 1725; and other Matters were to be settled by a Congress to be forthwith held at *Cambray*. On the 11th of the ensuing *June* *George* died at *Osnaburg* in the same Chamber where he was born aged 67 Years.

Death of
GEORGE I.

GEORGE II.
1727.

The News being carried to *London* *George* II. his Son was proclaimed; and his Coronation was solemnized in the *October* following. Although the Preliminaries of *Paris* had removed some Difficulties; yet the Reparation demanded by the *English* Merchants, and the Objections started by the Emperor concerning the Introduction of *Don Carlos* rendered the Negotiations at *Cambray* for a general Peace fruitless.

Treaty of
SEVILLE,
1729.

The Congress held at *Soissons* in the Year 1728 succeeded no better than that at *Cambray*: but in the following Year a Treaty was concluded at *Seville*. By this the *Spaniards* agreed to make the *South-Sea Company* Satisfaction for the *Prince Frederick* seized at *La Vera Cruz*; and that the Losses sustained from the *Spanish Guard da Costas* should be adjusted by Commissioners. The Commissioners met forthwith; but as the Introduction of *Spanish* Troops instead of *Swiss* into *Italy*, which *Great Britain*

Britain and *France* had by this Treaty taken upon themselves to procure was neglected, the *Spanish* Minister declared at *Paris* in *January* 1731 that his Master looked upon himself as free from the Engagements of the Treaty of *Seville*. Upon this the *British* Ministry by engaging to answer for the ill Consequences which might arise from the Introduction of *Spanish* Troops instead of those of *Switzerland*, of which Nation they pursuant to the *Quadruple Alliance* ought to have been, prevailed on the Emperor to consent to it: And a *British* Fleet was sent in the Year 1731 to carry *Don Carlos* into *Italy*.

The Court of *Vienna* however under various Pre-
tences put off for some Time his Investiture, which was demanded upon the Death of Duke *Anthony Farnese*: And it cost the *British* Ministry great Pains to prevent a Rupture betwixt the Empire and *Spain*. When this Point was gained, the *Spaniards* became more and more untractable as to the Satisfaction required by the *English* Merchants.

DON CAR-
LOS carried
into ITALY,
1731.

During the Reign of *Charles II.* of *Spain*, as he had frequent Occasion for their Assistance against *France*, the illicit Trade carried on by the *English* in the *West Indies* was connived at. To put a Stop to this, which had greatly encreased during the War on the Account of the *Spanish* Succession, armed Vessels were stationed by *Philip* upon the *Spanish* Coasts. Many Ships were seized by these: but as some *Spaniards* found their Account in a contraband Trade as well as the *English*, and the *Spanish* Coast was very extensive, it was not easy to prevent it entirely while they only seized such Ships as were taken in the Fact. Orders were hereupon sent to the Commanders of the *Spanish Guard da Costas*, to visit all Ships found near the Coast and to seize such as had any Thing of the Produce of *Old Spain* on Board. Complaint being afterward made to the Court of *Madrid*, that many Ships of the *British* Merchants had been unjustly condemned and confiscated, it was agreed that Restitution should be made for all such. While the Conferences for settling the Value of these unlawful Seisures were held, the War on the Account of the *Polish* Election broke out. The Court of *London* took great Pains to form an Alliance in Fa-
your

The SPANISH
GUARD DA
COSTAS con-
tinue to seize
the ENGLISH
Merchant
Ships.

vour of the Emperor, but as the *Dutch* refused to enter into it it was thought proper not to engage in this War. The Plan offered in concert with the *States General* for an Accommodation was rejected by *France*; nor were the Maritime Powers acquainted with the Contents of the Preliminaries of *Vienna* till some Time after these were signed.

A BRITISH
Fleet sent to
LISBON,
1735.

A Difference arising betwixt *Spain* and *Portugal* in the Year 1735, a *British* Fleet was sent to *Lisbon* and continued for some Time in the *Tagus*.

A CONVEN-
TION with
SPAIN, 1738.

The Value of the Losses sustained by the Depredations of the *Spaniards* being at length settled by the Commissaries at 200,000 Pounds Sterling, it was agreed by a *Convention* signed in *January* 1738 that 60,000 Pounds of this should be allowed as a Recompence for the Destruction of the *Spanish* Fleet in 1718; and that 45,000 Pounds more should be abated for prompt Payment. The Balance of 95,000 Pounds was to be paid within four Months; but a Claim of 68,000 Pounds was set up on the *South-Sea* Company, and by a Protest entered some Days before the signing of the *Convention* his *Catholick* Majesty reserved to himself the Right of suspending the *Assiento Contract* if it was not paid in a short Time. The Court of *Madrid* offered to give a Draught on the *South-Sea* Company for this Sum, and to pay 27,000 Pounds to make up the 95,000: But as the Right of visiting their Ships was not given up by *Spain* the *Convention* was far from being satisfactory to the People of *Great Britain*.

War with
SPAIN.

The *British* Plenipotentiaries, sent pursuant to the *Convention* to treat at *Madrid*, had Orders to insist upon it as a Condition *sine qua non*, that the Merchant Ships of *Great Britain* should not on any Pretence whatever be searched upon the open Sea. As the *Spanish* Court refused to give up this Point, an Order for making Reprisals on the *Spaniards* was published in *June* 1739, and it came soon after to an open Rupture. The Attempt made upon *St. Augustine* by General *Oglethorpe* failed; but Admiral *Vernon* made himself Master of *Porto-Bello*. This being followed with the Reduction of *Fort St. Laurence* on the River *Chagre*, an Expedition against *Carthagena* which Place the Admiral had

PORTO-
BELLO taken.

had endeavoured before the taking *Porto-Bello* to surprize was resolved upon. It was undertaken and the *Spaniards* were driven from the Forts at the Entrance of the Bay and the Troops were landed; but these being repulsed with some Loss at the Attack of Fort *St. Lazarre*, and many of them being lost by a Distemper which broke out in the Army the Fleet returned to *Jamaica*.

The *English* are a brave warlike People; but being *Manners of the* accustomed to live plentifully they cannot well bear scarcity and the other Inconveniencies of War. Hence it was a Maxim of *Maurice* Prince of *Orange*, who knew their Intrepidity, to employ them when they first came from home on some desperate Service; whilst as he used to say the roast Beef was in their Stomachs. They are very ingenious in all handicraft Trades and good Manufacturers; but as they love to eat and drink well and are fond of amusing themselves some Hours every Day in walking or otherwise, they cannot bring their Goods to foreign Markets so cheap as some other Nations. To this it may be added, that the heavy Taxes on most of the Necessaries of Life make Labour in *England* very dear. Amongst the *English* who are naturally grave there are many Men of fine Sense and solid Understanding. The extravagant and absurd religious Notions in *England*, more of which are to be met with there than in any other Country, are partly owing to the Toleration of all Religions that are not destructive to its established Government, and partly to the melancholick Temper of its Inhabitants. The lower Sort of People in *England* are much addicted to Drunkenness and Theft. The *English* have always been fond of Novelties; and their own History shews sufficiently that they are prone to Sedition.

The Inhabitants of *Scotland* are proud and envious; *Manners of the* but they are excellent Soldiers, and being used to fare hardly at home they can easily undergo the Hardships of War. Being naturally implacable family Quarrels are sometimes continued from Generation to Generation. Every Clan in *Scotland* pays as much Homage to its Head as to a King; and formerly has not stuck to carry Fire and Sword at his Command into the Estate of a neighbouring

bouring Chief. *James VI.* took great Pains to abolish this cruel Way of revenging Injuries. The *Scotch* are remarkably obstinate in their Opinions; and easily stirred up to rebel. As all the immoveable Estate descends by the Law of *Scotland* to the eldest Son, younger Brothers who are for the most Part above Trade apply themselves to Books or the Art of War, and they frequently go into foreign Service. The *Scotch* do in the general understand the *Latin* Tongue; and many of eminent Parts and Learning are to be found amongst them. When all *Europe* was over-run with Barbarism the Sciences were preserved in *Scotland*; and the Revival of Literature was principally owing to some of this Nation. The Inhabitants of the Southern Parts are very polite and courteous; but in the *Orkneys* and *Western Islands*, and in the *Highlands*, they are quite a rude and uncivilized sort of People.

Manners of the
IRISH.

The *Irish* who are generally esteemed crafty and resolute are very lazy: Yet will they endure the Fatigues of War tolerably well. Their invincible Bigotry to the *Romish* Religion and Obstinacy was such that *Cromwell* had once determined to extirpate the whole Race; and some thousands were actually given to the King of *Spain* on Condition that they should never be suffered to return home again.

Soil and Com-
modities of
GREAT BRI-
TAIN and
IRELAND.

ENGLAND is a populous pleasant Country abounding with all the Necessaries of Life. It is plentifully stocked with Horses and Oxen. The Mutton in *England* is well flavoured, and no other Sheep in *Europe* bear Wool in such Quantities or so valuable to the Manufacturer. As the Riches of the Nation arise in a great Measure from the manufacturing of this, so many and such large Flocks are to be seen no where as in *England*; nor are they in any Danger from Wolves. There are in *England* several Mines of Lead and of Tin: The last of which is of an incomparably good Sort. A considerable Profit arises to the *English* from Fishing, the whole Coast being well stocked with Fish, and that much more Profit might be made appears plainly from the incredible Gain drawn by their industrious Neighbours from the *Herring* and *Cod* Fishery. As only a trifling Acknowledgment is paid for the Liberty to fish by the *Dutch*,
and

and that only when they have Occasion to dry their Nets on Shore, it has been frequently the Foundation of War betwixt the two Nations. The Situation of *England* almost in the Middle of *Europe* is very convenient for Trade, and it has on all Sides commodious and safe Ports: Yet the *Dutch* vie with the *English* in Trade, because they are more industrious, live more frugally and content themselves with a smaller Profit. The silken is next to the woollen Manufacture the most considerable in *England*, and this is doubly advantageous; since it not only finds Employment for many Hands, but the Raw Silk is for the most part imported in Exchange for woollen and other *English* Goods. The Prohibition of Exporting Gold or Silver Coin, except to the Value of ten Pounds for the Conveniency of a Traveller, tends very much to the Encrease of Wealth in *England*. The principal Commodities exported from *Scotland* are Salt, salted Fish, Lead and Coals. *Ireland* abounds with Cattle and Sheep, but the Wool of these is not so good as the *English* Wool. This Country is in the general pleasanter and more fruitful than *Scotland*.

Hudson's Bay, New England, Virginia, Carolina, the BRITISH Summer Islands, Jamaica, Newfoundland and most of the Colonies. Caribbe Islands belong to *Great Britain*: And besides all these Colonies in *America* the Inhabitants of *Great Britain* have some Factories upon the Coast of *Africa* and very considerable Settlements in the *East Indies*.

By the Constitution of the *British* Monarchy the Govern-
King cannot do many Things without the Consent of ^{ment of} Parliament. This is divided into the Upper House com-
posed of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal; and the Lower ^{GREAT} ^{BRITAIN.} which is made up of Representatives for *Counties, Cities* and some Towns chosen by the People. Besides the Privilege enjoyed by these in common with the Lords, namely that no Law can be made or repealed without their Consent, the Commons have this additional one, that all Bills for the granting of Supplies must begin in their House. As it is a Maxim in the *English* Constitution that the King can do no Wrong, Ministers have been frequently questioned and punished by Parliament for Male Administration. This last cannot indeed be done without the King's Consent, and it is in his Power

to dissolve a Parliament whenever he dislikes its Proceedings: But as the screening of a Minister who is grown detestable to the People, or the hasty Dissolution of a Parliament, may have very bad Consequences a wise King is extremely cautious of exercising these Acts of the Prerogative. For the Sake of preventing the Disorders and Misfortunes an elective Kingdom is often exposed to the *British* Crown is hereditary: Yet the Succession has been altered by the People upon some extraordinary Occasions. Although this may seem strange to Foreigners on whom the Chains of despotick Power are fast rivetted, a true *Englishman* reflects with infinite Delight on the brave Stands made by his Ancestors, without which his Country had long ere this Time been deprived even of the Shadow of Liberty. Upon the Whole the *British* Constitution, which lodges as much Power in the Sovereign as a good Prince can desire, is so admirably contrived for securing the Liberty and Property of the Subject, that such as have the Happiness to be born under it need not to desire any Change thereof: And the thought of transmitting it inviolated down to Posterity ought to fire the Heart in every honest Breast.

Its Strength.

The Situation of *Great Britain* environed by the Sea gives it unspeakable Advantages. While her Superiority at Sea is maintained all the Powers of *Europe* can never hurt *Great Britain*; and it is in her Power greatly to annoy any one of them that is accessible by Sea. If by defeating or slipping by any Part of the *British* Fleet a Body of Troops could be landed in this *Island*, except they were sufficient to make an intire Conquest, which if the Inhabitants were well united would require a vast Number, as retreating or being reinforced are scarce possible they must in all Probability be quite destroyed.

*Interest of
GREAT
BRITAIN in
the general.*

If it be true that the Safety of *Great Britain* depends chiefly on her being Mistress of the Seas, and that the Trade of *England* has never flourished so much, nor her Glory been so far extended, as in those Reigns when her Naval Strength was principally attended to, it follows that this ought at all Times to be the Point in View. To give some Assistance on the Continent
when

when the Liberties of *Europe* are threatned is undoubtedly right, provided there be such an Alliance formed as is likely to frustrate the Designs of an ambitious Power: But it has been the Opinion of many considerate Men, that the going into Land Wars ought as much as possible to be avoided by *Great Britain*; because as her Strength is thereby divided her naval Power must be diminished. As it has moreover been found by dear bought Experience, that Dominions on the Continent cost more either to get or to keep than they are worth, nothing but the Preservation of the Ballance of Power can induce *Great Britain* to meddle at any Time upon the Continent. When this is really in Danger and strong Confederacies are formed for its Support, the Weight of *Great Britain* thrown into the Scale may have glorious Consequences; but if other Powers cannot see or will not heartily oppose this Danger which concerns them more immediately, it seems her wisest Way to save her Blood and Treasure, and to provide by augmenting her natural Strength against the worst. Supposing that by the Supineness or Infatuation of other Powers upon the Continent some one Prince should vastly extend his Dominions on the Continent, it is probable he would have Business enough upon his Hands to support himself in his new Conquests. If this was not the Case and he should have a Design upon this Island, it would require many Years to get such a Fleet together as could look that of *Great Britain* in the Face: And in the mean Time by his Death, or by many other Accidents, the Face of Affairs upon the Continent might be entirely changed. To suppose further, which can scarce ever happen but by her own ill Conduct, that the Superiority of *Great Britain* at Sea should be lost, as the invading of so populous an *Island* whose Inhabitants are naturally brave would be dangerous and expensive, and there is no Instance in History of its ever having been conquered except the Inhabitants were at Variance amongst themselves, it may justly be presumed that the Conquest of *Great Britain* would even then be very difficult.

With Regard
to GER-
MANY, and
POLAND.

Great Britain has nothing to fear from *Germany*, *Poland* and such other States as have no Maritime Force. On the contrary it is for their Interest to be upon good Terms with her, who may by causing a Diversion on some Occasions in their Favour be of great Service to them.

PORTUGAL.

It is of Importance for the *Portuguese* to be on good Terms with *Great Britain*; because she is capable of assisting them greatly in Case of a War with *Spain*. On the other Side as her Trade thither is very advantageous it would be very imprudent for *Great Britain* to break with *Portugal*.

SPAIN.

The naval Force of *Spain* bears no Proportion to that of *Great Britain*; yet as the Consumption of *British* Commodities is great both in *New* and *Old Spain* it is for her Interest to be in Amity with *Spain*. No Ports are besides more convenient for annoying the *English* Trade by Privateers than those of *Spain*.

FRANCE.

Notwithstanding that *France* is near three Times as large as *Great Britain* her Maritime Force could never yet come in Competition with that of *England*: Which is perhaps in a great Measure owing to the Number of Troops kept up in *France* for supporting arbitrary Power and garrisoning an extensive Frontier. As while so many Hands are thus employed she can make no great Figure at Sea, it is of great Consequence for *Great Britain* to keep up a Jealousy of the Designs of *France* in the neighbouring Powers, and to prevent if it can with Safety to herself be done all further Acquisitions of the *French* in the *Low Countries*; for if *France* should apply herself to the improving of her Marine some Ports there would be very serviceable for this Purpose: And if this was not done, *Great Britain* might by her being in Possession of these lose the Trade carried on in and through the *Netherlands*.

The NORTH-
ERN POWERS.

Although the Northern Powers are not to be feared by *Great Britain*, it is for her Interest to support the Ballance of Power betwixt them; because if any one of these was Master of the *Baltick*, he might obstruct her Trade there and in the End vie with the naval Force of *Great Britain*.

The Land Forces of *Holland* being vastly inferior and HOLLAND. the Naval not equal to those of *Great Britain*, it is not likely that the *Dutch* should break with her. On the other Hand as the *Hollanders* are the Rivals of *Great Britain* both at Sea and in Trade, the Conduct of *Queen Elizabeth*, who constantly supported them and yet always took Care to prevent their becoming formidable at Sea, seems the wisest that can be pursued: For the falling of the *United Provinces* into other Hands would be a terrible Blow to the *Protestant* Religion, and might in the End prove very prejudicial to *Great Britain*.

C H A P. V.

Of F R A N C E.

Of ancient
GAUL.

BY the Accounts now extant it appears that *Gaul* anciently bounded by the *Mediterranean*, the *Pyrenees*, the *Ocean* and the *Rhine* was always well peopled; and that the Inhabitants if united under one Head would have been able to have resisted the whole *Roman Power*. In the Beginning of the *Roman Republic* the *Gauls* passed the *Alps* and occupied a considerable Part of *Italy*; which was afterwards called by the *Romans* *Cisalpine Gaul*. They likewise spread themselves on both Sides the *Po*; whence came the Distinction of *Cispadane* and *Transpadane Gaul*: And a Colony of them being established in *Asia* the Country they possessed was from them called *Galatia*. Others of them passed the *Rhine*; and *Bohemia* took its Name from the *Boiens* a People of *Gaul* who fixed themselves in this Part of *Germany*.

ROMANS established in
GAUL.

The Conquest of *Gaul* was attempted by the *Romans* under *Julius Cæsar*: Who by making a proper Use of the Quarrels betwixt the different Nations gradually subdued them all. The *Romans* continued Masters here above five Hundred Years, and introduced amongst the *Gauls* that Corruption of Manners which Luxury had occasioned amongst themselves: But the Weakness of the *Roman Power* in the Time of *Honorius* made Way for the Irruption of the barbarous Nations both into *Italy* and *Gaul*.

Irruption of
the NORTH-
ERN NA-
TIONS.

After ravaging *Italy* the *Visgoths* threw themselves into the *Gallia Narbemensis*; the *Burgundians* fixed themselves in another Part of *Gaul* since called *Burgundy*; and the *Franks* a People of *Germany* about the same Time passed the *Rhine*. These last, who were composed of the *Chamavi*, *Cherusci*, *Sicambri*, *Sali*, *Bruchteri* and

and other Nations that heretofore dwelt on the Borders of the *Rhine*, the *Main* and the *Elbe*, did about the Time of *Theodosius* enter into a League for defending their Liberties against the *Romans*, and took upon themselves the Name of *Franks*. Notwithstanding this Name was common to them all every Nation retained its own Laws, Customs and Independence, and was governed by its proper Chief: But when the Opportunity of invading *Belgick Gaul* * presented itself, they united under one Head who was usually chosen from the most illustrious Family amongst them; and they afterwards as was the Custom of other Nations gave him the Title of King.

Pharamond the first who had this Title was as it is generally believed raised to it about the Year of CHRIST 420. This Prince took great Pains to bring the different Nations under Obedience to the same Laws, and had Success in it. The Time and Place of his Death are not known. He left two Sons *Clenus* whose Fortune we are ignorant of and *Clodion* his Successor.

Clodion from his long Hair at that Time esteemed the greatest Mark of Royalty was surnamed the *Hairy*. In his Reign and about the Year 431 *Ætius* the Roman General drove the *Franks* from their Possessions in *Gaul*; but upon his being soon after called away to quell an Insurrection amongst the *Futungi* and *Norici* the *Franks* re-entered *Gaul*. *Ætius* at his Return again defeated and forced them to pass the *Rhine*.

About this Time some *Britons* being no longer able to bear the Tyranny of the *Saxons* came over into *Gaul*; and having by Degrees spread themselves over *Armorica* it took from them the Name of *Bretagne*. Thus was *Gaul* divided betwixt the *Romans*, *Visgoths*, *Burgundians* and *Britons*.

Clodion after this again passed the *Rhine* with a large Body of Troops, and not contenting himself with that Country on the Borders of the *Rhine* which had been before occupied by the *Franks* advanced as far as *Tournay*. The Roman General *Ætius* marched against and attacked him: But although he had the Advantage in the Action it cost him so dear that he resolved to turn his

* *The Netherlands*:

HUNS called
to the As-
sistance of the
ROMANS.

his Arms for the future against other less powerful Nations, and to leave the *Franks* in Possession of *Hainault* and the Country about *Tournay* and *Cambray*. The *Huns* being called in to assist the *Romans* in driving the other Nations out of *Gaul*, they were at first successful against the *Burgundians*; but their Troops being shortly after cut to Pieces the *Romans* gave over this Design. In the Year 447 *Clodion* died.

MEROVIUS,
447.

It is not known in what Degree *Merovius* his Successor was related to *Clodion*. As the *Huns* meditated another Invasion of *Gaul*, and a Son of *Clodion* disputed his right to the Crown, *Merovius* sent his Son *Childerick* to conclude an Alliance with the *Romans*: Which being taken well he was acknowledged as an Ally and Friend of the People of *Rome*.

Progress of
ATTEILA the
HUN, 451.

Attila Master of all the Nations of the *Huns* at the Instance of the Son of *Clodion* passed the *Rhine* at *Cologne*; and burnt this City. In the Year 451 he pillaged *Triers*, and after burning *Metz* put the Inhabitants thereof to the Sword. *Rheims* had the same Fate; and *Cambray*, *Besançon* and other Places were afterwards plundered by him. *Merovius* hereupon joined his Forces to those of the *Romans*; and his Example being followed by *Theodored* King of the *Visgoths*, *Attila* notwithstanding his Army consisted of 500,000 Men was defeated near *Orleans*. The *Roman* General would not push this Victory, fearing that if *Attila* was quite ruined the Kings who assisted him would turn their Arms against the *Romans*. Instead of this he persuaded *Torrismond* the Son of *Theodored* who fell in the Battle to go and secure to himself the Kingdom of the *Visgoths*; and found out a Pretence for sending home *Merovius*. This prudent Conduct of *Ætius* was ill requited by his ungrateful Master *Valentinian*, who having first disgraced him slew him with his own Hands. That which *Ætius* the last great General of the *Romans* did foresee came to pass. *Theodorick* who had caused his elder Brother *Torrismond* to be assassinated became King of *Visgoths*; and afterwards made himself Master of *Aquitain* *. *Gondiochus* King of *Burgundy* possessed himself of Part of the Country of the *Helvetii*, *Edui* and

Battle of
ORLEANS.

* Now called GASCONY and GUIENNE.

and *Sequani*: And *Merovius* having first subdued the Country near *Mentz*, *Worms* and *Spire* greatly extended his Dominions in the *Netherlands*. He afterwards added to these Conquests a good Part of *Normandy* and the Isle of *France*.

To *Merovius* who died in the Year 457 his Son *Chil-* CHILDER-
RICK, 457.
derick succeeded. He was a brave Prince: But rendered himself so odious by his unbridled Lust that not thinking himself safe he retired to *Thuringia* *.

His Friend *Wiomade* whom he left to manage for GILON, the
ROMAN Go-
vernour chosen
King.
him, knowing that the *Franks* were intent on choosing a new King, recommended to them *Gilon* Governor of all in *Gaul* which remained to the *Romans*. The Arguments he prevailed by were, that all the Provinces under him would by this Means be united to the Dominions of the *Franks*; and that if he abused the Authority committed to him they might at any Time depose him. *Wiomade* in order to ruin *Gilon* encouraged him in the Prosecution of a Design to make himself arbitrary. After bearing the Tyranny of *Gilon* for some Time the *Franks* complained to *Wiomade*: Who having represented to them their Fault, in preferring a covetous and cruel Foreigner to a valiant and generous Prince of their own Nation, the most virulent Enemies of *Chil-*
derick agreed with the rest of the *Franks* to recall him.

With the Forces brought by *Childerick* out of Ger- CHILDERICK
is recalled.
many and the *Franks* who joined him he defeated *Gilon*; and having driven him from *Cologne* and *Triers*, which last place he burnt, *Childerick* easily made himself Master of what is now called *Lorrain*.

A Body of *Saxons* having about this Time fixed Defeat of the
SAXONS.
themselves in the Neighbourhood of *Anjou*, *Childerick* who did not like his new neighbours marched against and obtained a compleat Victory over them near *Orleans*. The *Saxons* unable to retrieve this Loss submitted to him; and they afterwards assisted him in subduing the *Alans* whose Country lay on both Sides of the *Loire*. ALANS sub-
dued.
Upon his Return from this Expedition in the Year 481 he died of a Fever, and was buried at *Tournay*.

Clovis since called *Lewis I*, who was at *Childerick* CLOVIS or
LEWIS I.
spent 481.
his Father's Death no more than fifteen Years of age,

* That Part of GERMANY from whence the FRANKS came.

spent the first five Years of his Reign in learning the Exercises of the Field, and in disciplining his Soldiers.

*An End put to
the ROMAN
Power.*

Clovis having afterwards attacked *Siagrius* the Roman General, the latter after various Defeats fled for Safety to the *Visgoths*; but being demanded he was delivered up and put to Death. All the *Romans* hereupon submitted to *Clovis*; and as he made no change either in their Religion or Laws, they were very easy under his Government. *Gondiochus* King of *Burgundy* at his Death divided his Kingdom between his four Sons *Gondebaud*, *Childerick*, *Gondemar* and *Godegisilus*. The Second and Third of these conspired against the eldest and drove him from his Capital; but after he was supposed to be dead he assembled his Friends, and when his Brothers did not in the least expect it surprised and put them both to Death. He however took Care of the two Daughters of *Childerick*, the youngest of whom *Clotilda*

492.

a beautiful Lady was in the Year 492 married to *Clovis*. Being educated in the *Christian* Religion she prevailed on her husband to let his Sons be baptized.

FRANCE first
so called.

About the same Time the Name of *France*, by which was meant what the *Franks* had conquered in *Gaul*, was first known.

Regulations in
Government.

A Division was now made by *Clovis* of his Dominions into three Parts. The *Franks* possessed one of these; and the ancient Inhabitants who from having been so long accustomed to the Laws and Language of the *Romans* were called *Romans* had the other two. All Resolutions of great Importance were taken in an Assembly annually held on the first of *March*, which was composed of the King, of Dukes who had the Command of Armies, of Counts to whom the Administration of Justice was committed and of the whole People. Their Custom was to meet in a Field called the Field of *Mars*; and as War was usually the Subject of Deliberation they came armed, that they might be ready to march if there was an Occasion for it upon the breaking up of the Assembly.

GAUL in-
vaded by the
GERMANS.

In this Reign the People called *Germans*, who possessed but a small Part of what now passes under the Name of *Germany*, joined with the *Suevi* who inhabited *Suabia* in an Invasion of *Gaul*. *Clovis* being informed thereof by *Sigisbert* King of *Cologne* he marched
against

against and gave them Battle near *Zulpich*. In this Engagement *Clovis* who had been always used to conquer saw his Ally *Sigisbert* fall; and his own Army began to give Way. In vain he invoked all his own Gods; but being put in Mind of JESUS CHRIST by one of his Generals he called upon him and promised if successful to be baptized. The *Germans* being hereupon defeated and forced to repass the *Rhine* *Clovis* followed them, and after ravaging their Country obliged them together with the *Suevi* their Allies to submit to him. By this Success he became Master of *Bavaria* and of all *Germany* between *Bavaria* and the *Main*. Many of the Inhabitants of these Countries fled into *Italy*. To those who staid he allowed the free Exercise of Paganism, and he gave the *Bavarians* leave to choose a Governor from amongst themselves, who was not to have the Title of King but that of Duke.

Having settled these Things he fulfilled his Vow, and *CLOVIS* *em-* after being instructed in *Christianity* was together with *braces* *CHRIS-* three thousand of the Heads of the Nation baptized in *TIANITY*, the Year 496 by *St. Rhemi* Bishop of *Rheims*, in the 496. same Church at *Rheims* which he had about ten Years before plundered. This King obtained from the Pope for himself and Successors the Title of eldest Son of the Church; because he was the only Prince who professed that which to distinguish it from the other Sects of *Christianity* was called the *Catholick Faith*.

After the Success of *Gondebaud* against two of his *GONDEBAUD* Brothers he was preparing to attack *Godegisilus* the *becomes Master* other. This last secretly requested the Assistance of *of all BUR-* *Clovis*: Who being glad of an Opportunity to revenge *GUNDY*, 499. the Death of *Childerick* his Wife's Father readily granted it. *Gondebaud* being apprized of the March of *Clovis* so little suspected it to be at his Brother's Solicitation, that he sent to this last for Succours. *Godegisilus* joined him with his Troops; but as he upon the Approach of *Clovis* went over to the *French* the Army of *Gondebaud* was soon routed, and his Flight was so precipitate that he never stopped till he came to *Avignon*. While *Clovis* pursued him *Godegisilus* went to take Possession of *Vienne* his Capital. *Gondebaud* having afterwards by submitting to pay a Tribute reconciled himself to *Clovis* he

he soon recovered his Dominions; and putting his Brother to Death became sole Master of *Burgundy*.

SALIQUE
Law reform-
ed, 501.

As there were some Things in the *Salique* Law, which was made while the *Franks* were Heathens, contrary to *Christianity* *Clovis* about the Year 501 reformed it. He soon after subdued the Kingdom which the *Britons* had erected in *Armorica*.

War with
BURGUNDY,
503.

In Imitation of *Clovis Gondelaud* set about the re-forming of the Laws of his Kingdom: Yet he did not neglect to put himself in a Posture of Defence against *Clovis*, well knowing that as it was for his interest to do it the Pretence of revenging his Wife's Father's Death would at any Time be an Excuse for attacking *Burgundy*. All this Precaution was ineffectual; for his whole Kingdom was about the Year 503 conquered by *Clovis*: But upon humbling himself and giving Security for his good Behaviour for the Time to come he was restored to it.

War with the
GOTHS.

The *Catholicks* who were persecuted by *Alarick* King of the *Visgoths* an *Arian* desired the Protection of *Clovis*: Which being told to *Alarick* he fearing *Clovis* sought his Friendship. The two Kings had afterwards an Interview in the Island of *St. John* near *Amboise*, and some Things which concerned the mutual Good of their Dominions were agreed upon: But at his Return he used the *Catholicks* worse than before, and banished the Bishop of *Roses* whom he suspected to be principally concerned in begging the Protection of *Clovis*. This last was determined to succour the *Catholicks*; yet being unwilling to break with *Alarick* till all other Methods were tried he sent Ambassadors to him. The Answer he received not being satisfactory, it was resolved in a general Assembly convened by *Clovis* to declare War against *Alarick*. *Theodorick* King of the *Ostrogoths*, who was in Alliance with *Clovis*, did all he could to avert the impending Danger from *Alarick* his Son-in-Law: But all would not do; for *Clovis*, having first made a Vow to build a Church in *Paris* and dedicate it to *St. Peter* and *Paul* if he returned victorious, marched with all speed towards *Aquitain*. Upon his Approach *Alarick* retired first to *Auvergne* and afterwards towards *Poitiers*. *Clovis* came up with him and a Battle

Battle ensued: In which the *Goth* was defeated and slain *Battle of*
 by the Hands of *Clovis*. This Victory was followed *POITIERS*;
 with the Conquest of great Part of *Guienne* and *Langue-*
doc by *Clovis* and *Thieri* his Son. Having left an Army
 in *Aquitain* to act against *Gesalick* a natural Son of *Ala-*
rick, whom the *Visgoths* had preferred to *Amaralick* the
 right Heir, *Clovis* set out for *Paris*: But he was pre-
 vailed upon by the Ambassadors of *Anastasius* Emperor
 of the *East*, who over took him near *Tours*, to go back and
 oppose the Army of *Theodorick* King of the *Ostrogths*;
 which was coming to the Assistance of *Amalarick* his Grand-
 son against *Gesalick*. These Ambassadors presented to him
 a Mantle, a purple Robe, a Crown of Gold set with
 precious Stones and the consular Dignity: Which was
 quite agreeable to the *Gauls*, who from being long ac-
 customed to the *Roman* Government had the greatest
 Veneration for those Ornaments and this Dignity. Be-
 ing defeated by *Ilba Theodorick's* Lieutenant *Clovis* ac-
 commodated Matters with him, and on his Return to
Paris laid the Foundation of a Church which was dedi-
 cated to *St. Peter* and *Paul* and is at this Day called
St. Genevieve.

This pious Act of *Clovis* was soon followed by a *CLOVIS sub-*
 wicked Resolution to subdue all the small States that *dues many petty*
 belonged to Princes of his own Nation: Which by open *Princes.*
 Violence and privately setting these against each other
 he as none of them were very powerful compleated in
 a few Months. He died in the Year 511 leaving six *His Death,*
 Children: Two of which *Thieri* a Son and *Theudigilde* *511.*
 a Daughter were by a Concubine. The other four *Clo-*
domir, *Childebert*, *Clothair* and a Daughter called after
 her Mother *Clotilda* he had by his Wife.

The four Sons of *Clovis* shared his Dominions; but *His Dominions*
 in order to understand what Share each had it is fit to *divided.*
 remark that a little before *Clovis's* Death *France* was
 divided into two Parts. One of these which compre-
 hended all that lay betwixt the *Rhine* and the *Maes*
 was called *Austrasia*; the rest of the Kingdom was cal-
 led by the Name *Neustria*. *Thieri* had besides that
 Part of *Guienne* which he lately conquered from the
Visgoths *Austrasia*, and he resided at *Metz*. *Neustria*
 being divided betwixt the other three the Capital of *Clo-*
domir was *Orleans*; that of *Childebert* *Paris*; and *Clo-*
thaire had his Residence at *Soissons*. By this Division
France

France was thrown into great Confusion and much weakened; nay the Infatuation of dividing went further; for the Dominions of these Princes were afterwards sub-divided amongst their Children.

*Civil Wars
and Assassina-
tions.*

The Kingdom remained in this unhappy State above a Century: And besides suffering all the Miseries of Civil War was the Theatre of most shocking Assassinations. Amongst the rest two Queens *Brunechild* and *Fredigonda* are mentioned with the greatest Infamy for their monstrous Crimes.

CLOTHAIRE
II. 614.

In the Year 614 most of these petty States were again united under *Clothaire* II. and the Kingdom was in some Measure restored to its ancient State.

DAGOBERT,
628.

Dagobert his Son who succeeded in the Year 628 gave up a good Part of the Kingdom to his Brothert *Aribert*: And divided what remained amongst his Sons. From this Time the Kings of *France* gave themselves entirely up to Indolence and Pleasure, and the Reins of Government came into the Hands of an Officer called *Mayor*

PEPIN *Mayor
of the Palace.*

of the Palace. One of these Officers named *Pepin*, who was descended from the royal Family of *Austrasia*, had the sole Administration of Affairs under several Kings for the Space of twenty-eight Years.

CHARLES
MARTEL
*Mayor of the
Palace, 714.*
*He repulses the
MOORS, 732.*

Charles Martel who in the Year 714 succeeded *Pepin* his father as *Mayor* of the Palace greatly extended both the Authority and Power of this Office. Besides many other signal Actions he obtained in the Year 732 a compleat Victory over the *Moors* in *Languedoc*; who after conquering *Spain* had penetrated into *France*. From this Time he took upon himself the Title of Duke of *France*, and nothing but an empty Name remained to the King: Who being generally kept in the Country was once a Year carried by Way of Shew for the People through the Streets of *Paris*. *Charles Martel* died in the Year 741.

PEPIN *the
younger de-
posed* **CHILDE-
RICK III.** *and
becomes King,
751.*

Pepin the younger his Son and Successor having gained over the Heads of the Kingdom to his Interest deposed *Childerick* III. and caused himself in the Year 751 to be proclaimed King. Pope *Zachary* who was consulted on this Occasion came easily into the Views of *Pepin*, because he much wanted his Assistance against the *Lombards* at this Time become formidable in *Italy*.

Thus

Thus an End was put to the Line of *Merovingian* Kings in *France*, who were so called from *Merovius*.

Pepin had before the Deposition of *Childerick* subdued *Exploits of* almost all *Germany* which bordered upon the *Rhine*: *PEPIN*.

And being now in Possession of the Throne, he by his Behaviour in an Expedition against the *Saxons* soon shewed that he was worthy of it. Not long after an Opportunity presented itself of signalizing himself in *Italy*. *Atulph* King of *Lombardy* being after conquering great Part of *Italy* upon the Point of besieging *Rome*, *Pepin* at the Sollicitation of Pope *Stephen III*. marched against and soon compelled him to quit his Conquests. By giving the Revenues of the Places recovered from *Atulph* to the Pope, and taking the Church under his Protection, *Pepin* had an Opportunity of shewing his Zeal for Religion and of getting at the same Time a footing in *Italy*. He afterwards reduced *Tassillon* Duke of *Bavaria* to a State of Vassalage, and forced the Duke of *Aquitaine* to submit to him. At his Death in the Year 768 the Kingdom was divided betwixt *Charles* and *Carloman* his two Sons; but by the Death of the younger the whole soon came to *Charles*.

This Prince justly called *Charlemain*, that is *Charles* CHARLE-¹ *the Great*, carried the Glory of the *French* Monarchy MAIN, 768. to such a Pitch as it never had before nor has ever since arrived at. The *Lombards* having renewed their Attempts in *Italy* *Charlemain* marched against them, and obliged *Didier* their King to surrender himself with his Wife and Family Prisoners. *Adalgisus* his eldest Son did indeed save himself by Flight; but being in no Condition to recover the Dominions of his Father, who was sent into *France* and died a Prisoner there, the States of *Lombardy* submitted to *Charles* and he was solemnly crowned King of *Lombardy* at *Pavia*. *Tassillon* He is crowned Duke of *Bavaria*, who had married *Luitperge* a Daugh- King of LOM, ter of *Didier*, having notwithstanding his Oath of Al- BARDY. legiance to *Pepin* assisted the *Lombards* against the *Franks* his Dominions were subdued by *Charlemain*; but his Son with eleven others being delivered as Hostages he was suffered to keep *Bavaria*. This Prince afterwards at the Instigation of his Wife joined with *Arichisus* Duke of *Benevent*, who had also married one of *Didier's* Daugh-

Daughters, in secretly calling the *Huns* and *Irene* Empress of the *East* to their Assistance against *Charlemain*: Which being discovered he and his Son were both shut up in a Monastery.

**HUNS and
GRECIANS**
defeated, 788.

The *Huns* were twice defeated about the Year 788: And *Adalgisus* who succeeded *Arichisus* in the Command of the *Grecian* Succours being also vanquished near *Naples* *Charlemain* became Master of all *Italy*.

**CHARLE-
MAIN'S Ex-
peditions to
SPAIN and
GERMANY.**

He went soon after into *Spain* and made himself Master of good Part of this Kingdom; but in repassing the *Pyrenees* his Rear-Guard was fallen upon in the Defiles and part of his Baggage was taken. As they who took this dispersed themselves immediately amongst the Mountains it was impossible to punish them. After a War of thirty Years Continuance the *Saxons*, who had been often brought to Terms and as often rebelled, were entirely subdued by *Charlemain* and embraced Christianity. This was followed with the Conquest of all *Germany*; so that being now in Possession of *France*, *Germany*, *Italy* and Part of *Spain* he wanted nothing but the Title of Emperor.

*He is pro-
claimed Em-
peror, 800.*

With a View to this he in the Year 800 went to *Rome* to celebrate the Nativity of CHRIST; and was while there with the unanimous Consent of the Pope and People proclaimed Emperor of the *Romans*. Having thus by his Valour got Possession of the western Empire, a Proposal of Marriage was made to him by *Irene* Empress of the *East*: But whilst the Negotiations for this were carrying on she was arrested in her Palace at *Constantinople*, and *Nicephorus* was declared Emperor of the *East*. He found Ways to reconcile himself to *Charlemain*, and was left in the peaceable Possession of the Eastern Empire.

*He disposes of
his Dominions
by Will, 806.*

In the Year 806 *Charlemain* being old made a Will which was signed by the Pope; and an Oath was taken by the Nobility of *France* to observe it. By this *Pepin* his second Son was to have *Italy*; and *Lewis* his youngest Son *Aquitaine*. The rest of his Dominions with the Title of Emperor were to go to *Charles* his eldest Son: But by the Deaths of *Charles* and *Pepin* before that of *Charlemain* the whole came to *Lewis*. *Charlemain* died in the Year 814.

After

After the Death of *Charlemain* the *French* Monarchy LEWIS I. declined; for his Son *Lewis* surnamed the *Pious* had 814. more of the Priest than Soldier in him: Whereas so extensive an Empire, which was in a great Measure composed of new Conquests, required a Prince of Spirit and of great military Experience. He moreover fell into two Mistakes; one of which was the disposing of his Dominions too soon, the other was the dividing of them betwixt his Sons. The first of these made him unhappy in himself; the second contributed much to the Ruin of the Empire.

His ungrateful Sons as soon as the Will was made, not *He is very* having Patience to wait for his Death, rebelled against *unhappy.* him, and being joined by the Bishops whom his severe Discipline had disgusted they forced him to resign the Government; but upon reflecting on the Unjustness of this Action they repented and restored him to the Throne. Having afterwards forgiven them and by a new Settlement confirmed his former Disposition he died in the Year 840.

The fatal Effects of dividing the Empire were soon *Civil War.* felt. *Lothaire* the eldest, who retained the Title of Emperor, wanted to deprive his Brothers of their Shares; but they united against him, and after a bloody Battle *Battle of* near *Auxerre* in which 100,000 Men of the Flower of *AUXERRE.* *France* were left upon the Field compelled him to do them Justice. Pursuant to their Father's Will *Lothaire* had *Italy* with a considerable Part of *France* that lay along the *Rhine*; *Lewis* had *Germany*, which has been ever since separated from *France*; the rest of *France* was given to *Charles* the youngest Son.

In the Reign of *Charles* surnamed the *Bald* the Nor- CHARLES II: *mans* made a Descent and committed great Havock 840. upon the Coasts of *France*. As the Kingdom weakened by the late fatal Battle and its Division could not get rid of these Robbers, it was in the Reign of *Charles* the NORMANS *Simple* agreed that they should have a Part of *Neustria*; settle in which was afterwards called *Normandy*. Upon the Death FRANCE. of the Emperor *Lothaire* without Issue *Charles* the *Bald* and the Son of *Lewis* King of *Germany* divided his Dominions. That Part of these which lay in *France* fell to the Share of *Charles*, and he afterwards obtained the Imperial Dignity. He died in the Year 877.

LEWIS II. 877. *Lewis II.* surnamed the *Stammerer* succeeded his Father; but he after a short Reign divided the Kingdom betwixt his two Sons *Lewis* and *Carloman*.

LEWIS III. 882. CARLOMAN, 882. The first of these died in the Year 882; the other from whom *Lewis* King of *Germany* took *Lorraine* died in the Year 884.

CHARLES III. 884. To *Carloman* succeeded *Charles the Simple* his Brother by his Father's Side: But as he was only five Years of Age the Regency was in the Hands of the Emperor *Charles the Fat* his Uncle. The Death of the latter which happened during the Minority of *Charles the Simple* gave an Opportunity to the Governours of Provinces, who had for a long Time been encreasing their Power, to throw off all Dependence on their Sovereign: And it cost some Centuries to remedy the Disorders thereby occasioned. One of these *Eude* Count of *Paris* caused himself to be proclaimed King and declared War against *Charles*.

RODOLPH, 891. At the Death of *Eude* in the Year 891 *Charles* had another Competitor *Rodolph* Duke of *Burgundy*: Who after being crowned King of *France* confined *Charles* in Prison till the Time of his Death in the Year 929.

LEWIS IV. 936. To *Rodolph* who died in the Year 936 succeeded *Lewis* surnamed *From beyond Sea*, because he had sheltered himself in *England* during the Sufferings of his Father *Charles the Simple*. The Reign of this Prince was all along disturbed by Intestine Commotions. He died in the Year 954.

LOTHAIRE, 954. His Son and Successor *Lothaire* after a disturbed Reign of thirty-one Years was succeeded by *Lewis* surnamed the *Slothful* his Son; of whom Historians only say that he did nothing.

LEWIS V. 985. At his Death a Son of *Lewis IV.* laid Claim to the Crown; but he was opposed vigorously by *Hugh Capet*; in whom the entire Administration of Affairs had been during the Reign of *Lewis the Slothful*. As he would not desist he was shut up in Prison; and the Crown of *France* was conferred on *Hugh Capet*. Thus the *Carlovingian* Line, in which it had been 236 Years, lost the Crown by falling into the same Mistake of dividing the Kingdom as the *Merovingian* Family had before done. By this Means together with the Indolence of some

The Line of
CHARLE-
MAIN lose the
FRENCH
Crown.

some Kings the Government became contemptible abroad ; which being the Case it is not in the least surprising that it should be trampled upon at home.

As *Hugh Capet* from whom the present reigning Family is descended was raised by the Nobility to the Throne, these were confirmed by him in the Possession of the Provinces which they had in the late confused Times acquired. He annexed to the Crown, to which scarce any Thing before belonged, the County of *Paris*, the Dutchy of *France* which included all the Country between the *Seine* and *Loire*, and the County of *Orleans*. Amongst the Nobility who shared the rest of the Kingdom the chief were the Dukes of *Normandy*, *Burgundy* and *Aquitaine*; the Counts of *Flanders*, *Champaign*, *Tboluse*, *Vienne*, *Provence*, *Dauphiny* and *Savoy*: But the Successors of *Hugh Capet* had the Pleasure to see by Degrees the Territories of all these petty Sovereigns united to the Crown. He died in the Year 996.

Robert the Son and Successor of *Hugh Capet* became by the Death of his Uncle Master of the Dutchy of *Burgundy*. He afterwards married *Bertha* of the House of *Burgundy*; but as she was within the Degrees of Consanguinity prohibited by the Canon Law he first obtained the Consent of his Bishops. Being for this excommunicated by the Pope, it had such an Effect that he was abandoned by all his Servants except two or three, and no Body would taste any Thing which came from his Table. He died after a long and peaceable Reign in the Year 1033.

Henry his Son, who had some inconsiderable Wars with his Vassals, gave the Dutchy of *Burgundy* to his Brother *Robert*; from whom the first Line of Dukes of *Burgundy* of the Blood royal sprang.

At the Death of *Henry* in the Year 1060 his Son *Philip* a Prince of no great Reputation succeeded. He as his Grandfather had before been was excommunicated on the Account of his Marriage; but he at last obtained a Dispensation from the Pope. In this Reign *William* Duke of *Normandy* conquered *England*; which laid the Foundation of unspeakable Mischiefs to *France*, the two Kingdoms being for many Years after perpetually at War.

CRUSADES,
set on foot.

About the same Time *Crusades*, for which the Madness lasted above two hundred Years, were first thought of. These Expeditions were very profitable to Popes, who not only took upon themselves to appoint and protect the Commanders in them, but had also an Opportunity of selling many Indulgencies. Another great Advantage to Popes was, that all Donations towards the carrying of them on were collected and distributed by their Nuncio's.

Reflections on
them.

The Kings of *France* and other Princes concerned in these Expeditions, besides that many turbulent Spirits were thereby employed, had the Benefit of succeeding to the Estates of such of the Nobility as died without Heirs: Which as many of them were carried off was frequently the Case. The Number of People at that Time too great in *France* being also hereby lessened it became easier for Kings to keep the Residue in Subjection: But whenever any sovereign Prince did either at the Sollicitation of the Pope or from his own Inclination go to *Palestine* in Person, the fatal Effects of leaving his Dominions were soon felt. Upon the whole this War although called a holy one was a mere Slaughterhouse for the *Christians*: It being scarce possible for them in the Way it was carried to retain any Conquests. If it was at all proper to have engaged in it the first Step should have been to have made themselves Masters of *Egypt*; for if this could have been effected, *Egypt* would have made a very convenient Place of Arms for carrying on the War against the *Infidels*.

LEWIS VI.
1108.

Philip was in the Year 1108 succeeded by his Son *Lewis the Fat*. This Prince besides being at War with *Henry I. of England* was greatly disturbed by some Barons at Home. These appeared in open Arms against him, and by the Strength of their Castles gave him a good deal of Trouble; But he in the End got the Better of them.

LEWIS VII.
1137.

His unfortunate Expedition to the

HOLY LAND.

After his Death in the Year 1137 his Son *Lewis* surnamed the *Younger* at the Sollicitation of *St. Bernard* undertook an Expedition to the *Holy Land*. This cost him dear: For by the Rout at *Pamphilia*, the successful Siege of *Damascus* and long Marches in an Enemy's Country the fine Army he carried was so ruined, that he

he had much ado to bring back a few shattered Troops to *France*. He committed another great Mistake in divorcing *Eleanor* his Wife Heiress of *Guyenne* and *Poitou*: But it is not known whether this was the Effect of Jealousy or Conscience she being his third or fourth Cousin. This Princess was immediately married to *Henry* Duke of *Normandy* afterwards King of *England* by the Name of *Henry II.* and thereby those fine Provinces were annexed to the *English* Crown. The rest of his long Reign was spent in Quarrels with his own Barons and with *Henry II.* of *England*. He died in the Year 1180.

His Son *Philip II.* surnamed the *Conqueror* took PHILIP II.
many Places which belonged to *Henry II.* of *England* in 1180.
France; but restored them to his Son *Richard* with
whom he set out for the *Holy Land*. They agreed so ill
that after taking *Ptolemais* *Philip* feigning Illness re-
turned home: And the Troops he left under *Henry War with the*
Duke of *Burgundy* instead of assisting *Richard* frustrated ENGLISH.
his Attempts upon *Jerusalem*. Upon the Return of
Philip he attacked the Dominions of *Richard* in *France*:
And not content with taking from him *Normandy*,
Anjou, *Maine*, *Tourrain*, *Berry* and *Poitou* he seconded
the Endeavours of his Brother *John* to supplant him
in *England*. *Philip* ruined the Count of *Tholouse*
whom the Pope had excommunicated for assisting the
Albigenses: And after this obtained a signal Victory Battle of
over the united Forces of the Emperor *Otho IV.* and LISLE.
the Count of *Flanders* amounting to 150,000 Men
near *Lisle*. Notwithstanding an Invasion was at the
same Time made in *Aquitaine* by the *English* *Philip* re-
pulsed them; and the War was carried into *England* by
Lewis his Son with some Success. He died in the Year
1223.

The Reign of *Lewis VIII.* his Son was very short. LEWIS VIII.
He took however from the *English* *Rochelle* and some 1223.
other Places in *France*.

This Prince was succeeded in the Year 1226 by LEWIS IX.
Lewis surnamed *St. Lewis* his Son: During whose Minori- 1226.
ty the Nobility conspired, but it was without Success,
against *Blanche* of *Castile* his Mother who had the Ad-
ministration of Affairs. The Town of *Jerusalem* being

in the Year 1244 sacked by the *Chorasmians* a People of *Persia*, *Lewis* at that Time dangerously ill vowed that if he recovered he would in Person undertake an Expedition against the *Infidels*.

He goes to
the HOLY
LAND,

Before setting out he gave publick Notice that he was ready to make Satisfaction to any of his Subjects whom he had wronged or injured; and it was done. In this Expedition he took *Damieta*, and after the Waters of the *Nile* which for some Time stopped his Progress were down he gained two Victories over the *Infidels*; but as these were considerably re-inforced and Provisions failed in the *French Army*, amongst whom the Scurvy at the same Time raged, he thought proper to retreat. In returning to *Damieta* his Army was defeated; and being himself made Prisoner he was for his Ransom forced to give up *Damieta* and pay 400,000 Livres. With the Remains of his Army reduced from thirty to six thousand Men he made the best of his Way to *Ptolemais*; and after giving all the Assistance he could to the *Christians* there returned home.

The Duke of
ANJOU suc-
ceeds to NA-
PLES,

Conrade King of *Naples* and *Sicily* being assassinated in this Reign by *Mainfroy* a natural Son of the Emperor *Frederick II.* his Dominions were offered by the Pope, of whom they were held as a Fief, to *Charles* Duke of *Anjou* Brother of *Lewis*. He accepted of these; and was crowned at *Rome* in the Year 1261. The Terms were that he should pay the Pope 8000 Ounces of Gold; and that these Dominions should never be annexed to the Empire: The Pope being unwilling there should be any Power in *Italy* greater than himself. *Charles* soon vanquished *Mainfroy*; and having put him and his Children to Death he took Possession of the Kingdom. An Attempt was afterwards made by *Conradin* Son of *Conrade* to recover these Dominions; but being defeated by *Charles* in the Year 1268 near the Lake of *Celano* and taken Prisoner, he was in the following Year by the Pope's Advice beheaded at *Naples*. With him ended the illustrious Race of Dukes of *Suabia*. When *Charles* asked the Pope what he should do with his Prisoner? The Answer was *Vita Conradini Mors Caroli*; *Mors Conradini Vita Caroli*: That is the Life of *Conradin* is the Death of *Charles*; the Death of *Conradin*

Conradin is the Life of Charles. Hence came the Pretensions of France upon Naples; she has however never got any Thing by meddling in Italy.

Notwithstanding his former unfortunate Expedition Expedition of Lewis determined to attempt the Conquest of Tunis. LEWIS He flattered himself, that besides the convenient Situation of this Kingdom for his Brother Charles a Way TUNIS, 1270. would be thereby opened for conquering Egypt; without which he found nothing was to be done in the Holy Land: But while he was before Tunis in the Year 1270 a Sickness broke out which carried off himself and a great Part of his Army. From Robert a younger Son of this King sprang the Line of Bourbon which at this Day reigns in France.

His Son Philip III. surnamed the Hardy succeeded. PHILIP III. By him the County of Thoulouse which descended to him 1270. by the Death of his Brother Alphonso without Issue, who had married the Heiress of the Thoulouse Family, was annexed to the Crown. In this Reign the Sicilian Massacre was perpetrated: By which the French were at once rooted out of Sicily. It was thus occasioned.

Some Frenchmen having ravished the Wife of John The SICILIAN Prochyta of Salernum, he begged the Assistance of Peter Massacre, King of Arragon to drive the French whose many 1282. Outrages had rendered them detestable out of Sicily. A Conspiracy being hereupon set on Foot, it was countenanced by Pope Nicholas V. and by the Emperor of Constantinople, who were both jealous of Charles's Power. The injured John disguised himself in the Habit of a Monk, and went incessantly from one Place to another till the People were sufficiently spirited up for his Purpose: Which notwithstanding it had been above three Years in Agitation and so many were privy to it was never discovered. It was at last agreed, that on Easter Monday in the Year 1282 at the Toll of the Bell for Evening-Service there should be a general Massacre of the French; and the Signal was so punctually and universally observed that in about two Hours Time a most horrible Slaughter was made scarce any escaping. This being over Peter King of Arragon took Possession of Sicily. The Pope hereat enraged excommunicated Peter, and gave his Kingdom of Arragon to Charles the

the second Son of *Philip*. This last set out with a powerful Army; but he was not able to establish his Son in *Arragon*.

PHILIP IV.
1285.

Philip IV. surnamed the *Handsome*, who in the Year 1285 succeeded his Father, upon some frivolous Pretences commenced a War with the *English* and took from them a great Part of *Guyenne*; it was however by a Treaty of Peace soon after restored.

He attacks the
Count of
FLANDERS.

Being angry with the Count of *Flanders*, who at the Instigation of the *English* had united with some other Lords against him, *Philip* invaded his Country and took many Towns from him: But the *Flemmings* who were soon tired of their ill Treatment cut the *French* Gar-
risons to pieces. An Army was hereupon sent against them by *Philip* under the Command of *Robert* Count

Battle of
COURTRAY,
1302.

of *Artois*; which was defeated with the Loss of 20,000 Men in the Year 1302 near *Courtray*. This Defeat was a good deal owing to the inconsiderate Haste of the *French* Cavalry, who rode into a Ditch. The *French* had the Advantage in an Action about two Years after and cut off 25,000 of the Enemy; yet as the *Flemmings* soon brought into the Field an Army of 60,000 Men, the King of *France* was glad to make Peace with and leave them in their ancient State. *Philip* after this with the Pope's Consent suppressed the rich and powerful Order of *Knights Templars*. He died in the Year 1314.

LEWIS X.
1314.

Lewis X. his eldest Son, surnamed *Hutin*, after a short Reign in which nothing remarkable happened died in the Year 1316.

PHILIP V.
1316.

His Daughter supported by her maternal Uncle the Duke of *Burgundy* laid Claim to the Crown; but it was by Virtue of the *Salique* Law determined in Favour of *Philip* the *Long* his Brother. In this Reign the *Jews* were banished on a Suspicion of their having poisoned the Waters.

CHARLES IV.
1322.

At the Death of this Prince in the Year 1322 *Charles IV.* surnamed the *Handsome*, third Son of *Philip IV.* succeeded. The *Lombards* and *Italians* were on the Account of their Extortions from the People in his Time expelled the Kingdom. He commenced a War with *England*; but the two Nations were soon reconciled by
the

the Interposition of *Isabella* his Sister Wife to *Edward* King of *England*. He died in the Year 1328.

As neither of the Sons of *Philip IV.* left Issue Male PHILIP VI.
1328.
France was almost ruined by the long Continuance of a Civil War on Account of the Succession, the Right to which was contested by *Philip* of *Valois* a Brother's Son of *Philip IV.* and by *Edward III.* King of *England* Son EDWARD of
ENGLAND of *Isabella* Daughter of *Philip IV.* It was pretended claims the
Crown. that this last was excluded by the *Salique Law*: But he insisted that although the Succession was by this Law barred to Females, it could not be supposed to extend to the Sons of the Daughters of *France*; and that no Instance could be produced where a King's Brother's Son had been preferred to his Daughter's Son. Notwithstanding this the States of *France*, who were unwilling to be dependent on *England* and strongly solicited so to do by *Robert Count of Artois*, declared for *Philip*.

At first *Edward* stifled his Resentment, and went War declared
by him. in Person to do Homage to *Philip* for the Provinces which belonged to him in *France*: But being irritated to the last Degree at the Treatment of *Philip*, who obliged him at taking the Oath of Fealty to lay aside his Crown, Scepter and Spurs, and being pressed by his *English* Subjects not to give up tamely so well grounded a Right, he soon declared War against *France*. He was besides secretly encouraged in this by *Robert Count of Artois* Brother-in-Law to *Philip*, whom the latter had disgusted by not allowing his Pretensions to the County of *Artois*.

In the Year 1328 the *Flemmings* who had taken up Battle of
MONT-CASS-
SEL, 1328. Arms against *Philip* received such a fatal Overthrow in the Battle of *Mont-Cassel*, that of sixteen Thousand Men very few escaped.

The War with *England* was carried on, a Truce or Battle of
CRESSY,
1347. two intervening, without much Advantage on either Side until *Edward* landed in *Normandy*. After taking many Places and braving the *French* at the Gates of *Paris* he was marching through *Picardy* for *Flanders*; but being overtaken by *Philip* a Battle was fought at *Cressy* near *Abbeville* in the Year 1347. Some Circumstances were favourable to the *English*: Namely The *French* Troops were fatigued by a long March on the Day

Day of Battle; some *Genoese* Foot retreating immediately their Bows being rendered useleſs by the Rain the Duke of *Alençon* ſuſpected Treachery, and by riding in amongſt them with his Horſe cauſed the firſt Confuſion; the *English* had four or five large Pieces of Cannon which as they had not heard the like before ſtruck Terror into the *French*; and it may be added that many *French* Lords being diſſatisfied with their King were indifferent about his Succeſs. It was however a moſt glorious Victory: For although the *English* according to the Account of the *French* Hiſtorians had no more than 24,000 Men, whereas the *French* Army conſiſted of above 100,000 Men, above thirty Thouſand of the latter were left upon the Field. Amongſt the Slain was *John* King of *Bohemia*, who being blind had tied his Horſe between the Horſes of two Friends; and being in this Manner conducted into the Thickeſt of the Battle they were all found dead together. A great Slaughter was the next Day made amongſt ſome Troops; who ignorant of what had happened were coming to join the *French* Army. After this the *English* took *Calais*, notwithſtanding that *Philip* had with an Army of 150,000 Men attempted to relieve it.

DAUPHINY
annexed to the
Crown,

1349.

Amidſt theſe Miſfortunes *Philip* had the Satisfaction of ſeeing the County of *Dauphiny* annexed by *Humbert* its laſt Count to the Crown, upon Condition that the eldeſt Son of *France* ſhould be for the Time to come called DAUPHIN. This Count, who had before put himſelf under the Protection of *France* againſt the Duke of *Savoy*, upon the Death of his Son accidentally killed by his own Hands retired into a Monastery, and *Philip* took Poſſeſſion of his County in the Year 1349.

The GABEL
impoſed.

In this Reign the Tax on Salt called the *Gabel* was impoſed: Which as it made the Subjects pay dear for the Water of the Sea and Rays of the Sun gave univerſal Diſguſt in *France*; and was the Occaſion of *Edward's* calling *Phillip* ironically the Author of the *Salique* Law.

JOHN, 1350. *Philip* V. was in the Year 1350 ſucceeded by *John* his Son, who was ſtill more unfortunate in his Wars with *England* than his Father. Prince *Edward* who commanded in *Guyenne* having penetrated with only 12,000 Men a great

great Way into *France* and destroyed the Country, he was met by *John* near *Poitiers* in the Year 1356. He *Battle of* offered to make all reasonable Satisfaction for the Da- *POITIERS,* mage he had done; but *John* imagining he was in his *1359.* Power would listen to no Terms: And Orders were instantly given to fall upon the *English*, without regarding their advantageous Situation amongst the Hedges and Vineyards. By the Bravery however of the Prince and the Intrepidity of his Men the *French* Army consisting of 50,000 Men was entirely routed, 6000 being according to their own Historians killed upon the Spot; of which twelve Hundred were Gentlemen, and fifty of them were Noblemen. The King and his youngest Son were taken Prisoners. The three eldest saved themselves by flying with their Governour before the Action was over.

During the Imprisonment of *John* who was carried *Great Confu-* into *England* *France* was reduced to a miserable Condi- *sion in* tion. The People having been a long Time oppressed *FRANCE.* would not submit to the *Dauphin* who took upon him the Administration of Affairs; the Peasants paid no Regard to the Authority of the Nobility; and the Soldiers being ill payed lived by Plunder. *Charles* King of *Navarre* took the Advantage of this confused State of Things to lay Claim to the Crown; Matters were however accommodated with him.

At the same Time, as the States of *France* refused *Treaty of* to accept the Terms offered, the King of *England* at *BRETIGNI,* the Head of a powerful Army ravaged great Part of *1360.* *France*: But a Treaty was at length concluded at *Bretigni* in the Year 1360. By this it was agreed, that to what already belonged to the *English* in *France* *Poitou*, *Saintongue*, *Rochelle*, *Le pais D'Aulnis*, *Perigord*, *L'Angoumois*, *Quercy*, *Limosin*, *Bigorre* and *L'Agenois* with their Sovereignities should be added; that *Edward* should keep *Calais* and the Counties of *Oye*, *Guisnes* and *Ponthieu*; and that three Millions of Livres should be paid for the King's Ransom. *John* being in Want of Money did after this a very dishonourable Thing to his Daughter: Whom he sold in Marriage to the Duke of *Milan* for 600,000 Crowns. The Dutchy of *Burgundy* becoming vacant in his Time he gave it to his Son *Philip* the Bold: From whom descended those famous

famous Dukes of *Burgundy*, whose Territories came at last to the House of *Austria*. He died in *England* in the Year 1364: Whither he as some say had given his Word to return, having left his Son as an Hostage. Others say that he only went thither to see a Lady he was in Love with.

CHARLES
V. 1364.

Charles his Son and Successor, surnamed the *Wise*, having nothing in him of his Grandfather's or Father's Rashness always avoided coming to a Battle with the *English*; and endeavoured by gaining Time to tire them out. He sent a Number of Soldiers who being disbanded could not be easily kept in order into *Spain*; where *Peter the Cruel* and *Henry I.* were at War about the Crown of *Castile*. These Soldiers in their March committed such Havock, that the Pope to prevent their passing through *Avignon* sent them 200,000 Livres with a good Store of Indulgencies.

War with
ENGLAND.

Prince *Edward* of *England*, who also took Part in that War, having thereby hurt his Constitution and drained his Purse, he laid some Taxes on his Subjects in *Guyenne*. Complaint being hereupon made to the *French* Court *Charles*, who was prepared for a War and well knew the Prince's ill State of Health, summoned him to appear at *Paris*; pretending that as Hostilities had been committed by the *English* contrary to the Treaty of *Bretigny* the Sovereignty of *Guyenne* was forfeited. Upon receiving a disdainful Answer from the Prince *Charles* declared War; and having ordered many Fasts and Processions, he recommended it to the Priests to preach up in the most pathetick Terms the Justice of his Cause and the Injustice of the *English*. This had a good Effect: For his own Subjects not only contributed freely towards carrying on the War, but it so recommended him to the *French* under the Dominion of the *English*, that fifty Cities and Castles were by the Influence of the Archbishop of *Thoulouse* alone brought over to his Interest.

The Affairs of The *English* Fleet being moreover destroyed by that the ENGLISH of *Spain* off *Rochelle*, great Part of what the *English* in FRANCE, had gained by the last Treaty was lost before the Successors for Prince *Edward*, which were detained by contrary Winds, could arrive in *France*. Thirty Thousand Men

Men being afterwards landed at *Calais*, these marched from thence ravaging the Country as they went towards *Guyenne*; yet *Charles* would not hazard a Battle but contented himself with annoying them in their March. Whilst the Pope was endeavouring a Reconciliation, Prince *Edward* his Illness increasing left the Army, and shortly after died in *England*. *Charles* took the Advantage of his Death to attack the *English* with five different Armies; and was so successful, that in a short Time nothing remained to *England* in *France* but *Calais*, *Bordeaux*, *Bayonne* and *Cherburg*. In gaining these Advantages over the *English* *Bertrand du Guesclin* Constable of *France* had a great Share. *Charles* some Time after took the Opportunity of *England's* being weakned by a Plague and engaged with the *Scotch* to make a Descent upon *England*; but he got nothing thereby.

In the Year 1378 the Emperor paid a Visit to *Charles* ^{The Emperor} at *Paris*, and made the *Dauphin* irrevocable *Vicar* of ^{visits} the *Empire* in *Dauphiny*: Which as the *French* say was ^{CHARLES.} giving up all the Right of the Emperors of *Germany* to this Province and the Kingdom of *Arles*.

After the Death of *Charles* in the Year 1380 the Affairs of *France* went on ill: For his Son and Successor ^{CHARLES VI.} *Charles* exhausted his Treasury in maintaining the Right of *Lewis* Duke of *Anjou*, whom *Jane* Queen of *Naples* had adopted, to this Kingdom. 1380.

The Duke of *Anjou* after taking Possession of *Pro-* ^{Expedition} *vence* which belonged to *Jane*, notwithstanding that ^{to NAPLES.} *Charles de Duras* who had put her to Death was in Possession of this Kingdom, set out with an Army of 30,000 Horse for *Naples*: But after great Fatigue without gaining any Advantage against *Duras* he in the Year 1384 died in a miserable Condition, and very few of this fine Army ever returned to *France*.

In the Beginning of this Reign the Ministry pro- ^{Insurrection in} mised to take off some heavy Taxes: But instead of ^{FRANCE.} this new ones were laid on and swallowed up by Favourites; which so enraged the People that in *Paris* and many other Places the Inhabitants took up Arms. A Stop was put to these Insurrections by cutting off 40,000 of the Rebels in *Flanders* together with *Artevelle* their General: The ill Success however of the War against

against *England*, which cost great Sums, encreased the Discontent of the People.

Origin of the
Claim of
FRANCE to
MILAN,
1389.

In the Year 1389 *Lewis* Duke of *Orleans* Brother to the King married *Valentina* Daughter of the Duke of *Milan*; and was to have with her besides Money and Jewels to a great Amount the County of *Asti*. It was also agreed, that in Case her Father should die without Issue Male the Dutchy of *Milan* should descend to *Valentina* and her Heirs.

CHARLES
becomes mad.

The King, whose Brain was much hurt by the Debaucheries of his Youth, as he was going on Horseback into *Bretany* fell quite mad. This was said to be occasioned in the following Manner. In the Way a tall black Man appeared to him and said *Stop King! whither would you go? You are betrayed!* Presently one of his Attendants overcome with Sleep let his Lance fall upon the Helmet of another who rode next before him: At which the King imagining it to be a Signal was exceedingly frightened. Whether it was owing to this or to the Heat of the Weather, it being in *August*, he lost his Senses; and although he had some Intervals never came rightly to himself.

FRANCE split
into Parties.

Charles being hereby rendered incapable to govern, great Disputes arose concerning the Regency betwixt his Brother the Duke of *Orleans* and *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy* his Uncle. As the latter had had more Experience he was declared Regent; yet although the Duke of *Orleans* failed in his Attempt to get Possession of the Capital he had a large Party. At the Death of his Father in the Year 1404 *John* Duke of *Burgundy* took Possession of the Regency. The Hatred between *John* and the Duke of *Orleans* being hereby increased, the former notwithstanding a pretended Reconciliation caused the latter to be assassinated in the Year 1407 as he was walking the Streets of *Paris* by Night. This Piece of Villany instead of strengthening his Party increased that of the Sons left by his Rival; and the whole Kingdom being divided into two Parties Murders, Devastations and all the Miseries of Civil War ensued.

Duke of OR-
LEANS as-
sassinated,
1407.

The ENGLISH
land in
FRANCE,
1415.

These intestine Troubles, which at last ended in the Ruin of the *Burgundian* Party, gave the King of *England* an Opportunity of landing an Army in *Normandy*: But after

after taking *Harfleur* in the Year 1415, the *English* their Army being much weakened by Sickness were retiring to *Calais*.

In the Way they were met near *Azincourt* by a *Battle of French Army*: Which, their own Historians allow to *AZINCOURT*. be at least four Times the Number of the *English*. Notwithstanding this great Inequality and the Sickness which reigned amongst them, the *English* fought so desperately, that 6000 of the *French* were killed on the Spot and a great Number were taken Prisoners: Amongst whom were many of the First Rank. The *English* Historians make the Loss of the *French* much greater; and indeed it seldom happens that the Historians of two Nations at War agree in their Relation of Things of this Sort: But however that was, the *English* were not in a Condition to push the Advantage they had gained. This Defeat was so far from composing the intestine Divisions amongst the *French*, that notwithstanding the Danger from a foreign Enemy they grew worse; and the Duke of *Burgundy* finding his Party decline went over to the *English*: Who in another Campaign made great Progress in *Normandy*.

The Government had been for some Time shared by *The Queen is* the Queen and the Constable of *France*; but her imprudent Conduct having excited the King's Jealousy she was by the Advice of the *Dauphin* banished from Court: Which so exasperated her that she joined with the Duke of *Burgundy* against the *Dauphin* her own Son, and Civil War raged again with fresh Fury. An Accommodation was afterwards proposed with the Duke of *Burgundy*; but in the second Meeting had for this Purpose the *Dauphin* caused him to be assassinated. *The Duke of BURGUNDY is assassinated.* This instead of putting a Stop at once, as the *Dauphin* hoped it would, to the Disorders of the State had a quite contrary Effect; for it rendred him so detestable to the People in general as to give the Queen an Opportunity of excluding him from the Succession.

To do this effectually a Peace was concluded with *The DAU-* Henry V. of *England*; and it was agreed that *Henry PHIN is ex-* should marry *Catherine* Daughter of *Charles VI.* that he *cludea.* should have the Regency of *France* during the Life of

Charles; and that after his Death the Crown of *France* should be united to that of *England*: Each Kingdom was however to be governed by its own Laws. A Day was also fixed for the *Dauphin* to appear at *Paris* and answer for the Murder of the Duke of *Burgundy*: In Default of which he was declared incapable of succeeding to the Crown and banished the Kingdom. From this Sentence he appealed to God and his Sword, and set up his Standard at *Poitiers*; but only the Provinces of *Anjou*, *Poitou*, *Berry*, *Tours*, *Auvergne* and *Languedock* sided with him. It happened however luckily for him that *Henry* died shortly after in the Meridian of his Glory; and the Death of *Charles* his Father, whose Life had long been an Expence and of no Use to *France*, followed in the same Year 1422.

CHARLES
VII.

1422.

HENRY VI.
of ENGLAND
is proclaimed.

The *Dauphin* was immediately proclaimed by the Name of *Charles VII*. He had however great Difficulties to surmount; for the Duke of *Bedford* appointed Regent of *France*, having caused *Henry VI*. King of *England* to be proclaimed at *Paris*, endeavoured in Conjunction with the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bretany* to drive *Charles* out of the Kingdom. His Forces were several Times beat, and being abandoned by many Cities at once he was in Derision, from its being his usual Residence, called King of *Bourges*. He was at last reduced to the greatest Necessity being scarce able to keep an open Table; and had it not been for the Misunderstanding which at this Time arose betwixt the *English* and the Duke of *Burgundy* his Affairs must have been entirely ruined.

Misunder-
standing be-
twixt the

ENGLISH and
the Duke of
BURGUNDY.

The Occasion was this. *Jaquiline* Countess of *Hainault* after being divorced from *John* Duke of *Brabant* Cousin to the Duke of *Burgundy* had married to the Duke of *Gloucester* Brother to *Henry V*. whereupon the Duke of *Burgundy* joined with *John* in his Resentment against the Duke of *Gloucester*. Great Pains were taken by the Duke of *Bedford* to reconcile these two: But it was in vain; for the *Burgundian* had at the Bottom an Aversion to the *English*; and this was lately encreased by their refusing to let the Town of *Orleans* be put into his Hands. While the *English* were before this Place, which

which was reduced to the last Extremity, the *French* attacked a Convoy going to their Camp. Being worsted in this Engagement, which has always been called, perhaps from some Herrings carried by the Convoy, *the Battle of the Herrings*, *Charles* despairing of Success was about to retire into *Dauphiny*, when an unlooked for Blessing happened to him.

A Damsel of *Arc* in *Lorraine* named *Joan* being introduced to him, she told *Charles* she had a Commission from God to relieve *Orleans* and to see him crowned at *Rheims*. As both these predictions came to pass, the *English* were dismayed and the *French* began to take Courage. This Maid who afterwards did Wonders was taken Prisoner at the Siege of *Compeigne*; and being delivered to the *English* was to their great Disgrace burnt as a Witch at *Roan* in the Year 1431. *Exploits of JOAN of ARC: She is burnt at ROAN.*

For the Sake of re-establishing their Affairs the *English* caused *Henry VI.* to come over to *France*, and he was crowned at *Paris*. They also to keep him fast to their Interest gave the Counties of *Brie* and *Champagne* to the Duke of *Burgundy*; but all would not do. After the War had continued some Time longer without any thing considerable being done on either Side, Negotiations for a Peace were at the Solicitation of the Pope set on Foot at *Arras*: But as the *English* would abate nothing of their Pretensions, a Treaty was concluded in the Year 1435 betwixt *Charles* and the Duke of *Burgundy*, which was very much to the Advantage of the latter. Soon after the *English* had the Misfortune to lose the Duke of *Bedford*, who had all along conducted their Affairs with great Prudence and Bravery: Which was followed with the Submission of many Cities and amongst the rest of *Paris* to *Charles*. *HENRY is crowned at PARIS: Death of the Duke of BEDFORD.*

France already quite exhausted by War was afterwards visited with Famine; and to this succeeded a Plague: Which caused so great Desolation, that Wolves came into the Suburbs of *Paris* and devoured young Children. *Famine and Plague in FRANCE.*

A Truce being at length concluded with *England*, *Charles* for the sake of busying his Soldiers sent a large Body of them to disturb the Council of *Basil*: But after

The ENGLISH
driven out of
FRANCE,
1449.

an Engagement with the *Swiss* in which eight Thousand of them were killed the rest returned home.

1451.

The ancient Valour of the *English* being lessened their Troops in *France* were but few; and these being ill payed lived by Plunder. *England* was besides much disturbed by intestine Troubles; and it had suffered greatly in two Battles with the *Scotch*. *Charles* judging this Conjunction favourable under a Pretence that the *English* had broke the Truce attacked them in the Year 1449 with great Vigour: And in about three Month's Time drove them quite out of *Normandy*. In the next Year he became Master of all *Guyenne* except *Bayonne*; which being taken in the Year 1451 nothing remained to the *English* in *France* except *Calais* and the County of *Guisnes*. Thus the Kingdom of *France*, great part of which had been above 300 Years subject to *England*, was almost all united under *Charles*. The Joy hereby occasioned was however lessened by the Quarrel betwixt *Charles* and his Son: Who kept away from Court for the Space of thirteen Years. *Charles* being at last perswaded that a Design was formed against his Life, he laid it so much to Heart that he died of Grief in the Year 1461.

LEWIS XI.

Lewis XI. his Son and Successor, who was a cunning, resolute and cruel Prince, laid the Foundation of that absolute Power which the *French* Kings have since enjoyed. His first Step was to remove all the Ministry who would not come into his Measures: The Consequence of which being foreseen, a League was entered into by many of the principal Nobility for preserving the Liberties of the People against the Encroachments of the Prerogative. Into this, which was called the *League for the publick Good*, the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bretany* entered: And the former having entered *France* with a powerful Army came to an Engagement with *Lewis* near *Mont-l'heri*. No great Advantage was gained on either Side; yet as the King retired with his Troops in the Night following the Duke claimed the Victory; and he was thereby encouraged to form too great Designs, which in the End cost him his Life.

Battle of
MONT-
L'HERI.

Intrigues of
LEWIS

To extricate himself from these Difficulties *Lewis* took off some Taxes and amused the People with fair Promises;

Promises; all which as soon as the Danger was over he forgot. Having bought off some of the Heads of League he found Means to sow Discord amongst the rest; and at last to dissolve it quite. Still the Duke of *Burgundy* held it out, and having in the Year 1468 surrounded him at *Peronne* Lewis was very near being taken Prisoner. BURGUNDY annexed to the FRENCH Crown, 1477. This troublesome Enemy being in the Year 1477 killed by the *Swiss* before *Nancy* Lewis seized his Dominions; and it was thought he would by Marriage have annexed them to the *French* Crown: His Enmity however to the *Burgundian* Family was such that he rather chose to ruin it entirely.

Two Years before the Duke of *Burgundy's* Death EDWARD of ENGLAND *Edward* IV. of *England* landed in *France* with a large Army: But he was prevailed on by the Presents and Promises of *Lewis* to return home. *Provence*, *Anjou* FRENCE. and *Maine* were afterwards annexed to the Crown of *France*: *Charles* the last male Heir of the Family these belonged to having bequeathed them by Will to *Lewis*; nor was any Regard paid to the Claim put in by *Rene* Duke of *Lorraine* in the Right of his Mother. It was the Practice of *Lewis* to borrow Money of his Officers, and whoever refused to lend was discharged. Hence that vile Custom in *France* of selling Offices took its Rise. The latter Part of his Life was quite miserable; for he was continually tormented with the fear of Death. He died in the Year 1483.

His Son *Charles* VIII. had in the Beginning of his CHARLES VIII. Reign a Quarrel with the Duke of *Bretany*, and took the Field with a Design to subdue this Province: But understanding that a Match was agreed upon betwixt *Maximillian* of *Austria* and *Anne* Heiress of *Bretany*, and being unwilling that a Right to this Dutchy should pass to the House of *Austria*, he by Persuasion and Threatning prevailed upon the Lady to break with *Maximillian* and marry him. By this which happened in the Year 1491 *Bretany* was annexed to the BRETANY annexed to the FRENCH Crown, 1491. Crown of *France*.

Henry VII. of *England* having shortly after laid Siege of *Bouloign*, he was prevailed upon by a Sum of Money to give it over. *Henry* was the more willing

to do this; because *Maximillian*, whom *Charles* had affronted not only in robbing him of his Mistress but also in sending back his Sister *Margaret* to whom he was engaged, did not join him as he had promised. After this separate Peace with *Henry Maximillian*, who had already taken *Arras* and *St. Omers*, consented that his Son *Philip* Governor of the *Netherlands* should come to an Agreement with *Charles*.

The ROUSILLON and CERDAGNE ceded to SPAIN.

The *Roussillon* and *Cerdagne* were soon after ceded by *Charles* to *Ferdinand* of *Castille*. Some think this was done to prevent *Ferdinand's* opposing his Enterprize against *Naples*; others that his Confessor bribed by *Ferdinand* persuaded him to restore these Provinces to their lawful Sovereign. As *France* was now in a flourishing Condition *Charles*, under a Pretence that the Right of the House of *Anjou* to *Naples*, which was by the Will of the last Duke given to *Lewis XI.* devolved upon him, resolved to attack this Kingdom. He was encouraged to do this by *Lewis Sforça* surnamed the *Moor* Duke of *Milan*, which Dutchy he had unjustly taken from his Nephew *John Galeace* to whom he was Governour. The *Moor* hoped thereby to divert the Resentment of *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*, for this ill Treatment of *John Galeace*, who was by Marriage nearly allied to *Ferdinand*.

NAPLES conquered, 1494.

In the Year 1494 *Charles* set out for *Italy*; and being arrived at *Rome* was declared by the Pope who durst not refuse it King of *Naples*. As *Ferdinand* and his Son were both universally detested for their Cruelty he easily became Master of the Capital; and the whole Kingdom except the Isle of *Ischia* and the Cities of *Brundisi* and *Gallipoli* submitted to him. The Conquest of so fine a Kingdom and within five Months alarmed the *Sultan*, who well knew the Disposition of the *Greeks* to revolt upon the least Assistance from the *French*; and Instead of taking Pains to secure himself in his new Kingdom *Charles* minded only his Pleasures: By which and other ill Conduct he soon lost the Affections of the *Neapolitans*.

Alliance against CHARLES.

This Acquisition being also looked upon with jealous Eyes by the other Powers of *Europe*, an Alliance was entered

entered into by the Emperor, the Pope, *Ferdinand* King of *Castile*, the Duke of *Milan* and the Republic of *Venice* for driving the *French* out of *Italy*: Upon which *Charles* fearing his Retreat might be cut off made the best of his Way for *France* without leaving a sufficient Number of Troops for the Defence of *Naples*. In their Way the *French* had an Engagement with and defeated the allied Army near the *Taro*; they however continued their Rout with great Diligence.

As *Charles* had taken so little Care for the Preservation of *Naples*, this Kingdom was to his great Dis-NAPLES re-conquered. grace re-conquered within the Space of a Year: And very few of the *French* left there had the Happiness to return home. In the Year 1498 *Charles* died without leaving any Issue.

Lewis XII. Duke of *Orleans* who succeeded for LEWIS XII. the sake of keeping *Bretany* married the late King's 1498. Widow. He soon after his Accession set up a Claim to *Milan*, founded on the Right of *Valentine* his Grand-mother; and took Possession of it without shedding a MILAN con- Drop of Blood, *Lewis* the Moor fleeing with his Family into *Germany*. He however returned with an Army of *Swiss*, and as his Subjects irritated at the Liberties taken with their Wives and Daughters by the *French* received him with great Joy, he soon recovered all except the Castle of *Milan* and City of *Novara*. Upon the Arrival of fresh Troops from *France* the *Swiss* Troops refused to fight; and the Duke endeavouring to escape in the Habit of a common Soldier was discovered and put into a Prison; where he died ten Years after.

Flushed with this Success *Lewis* resolved to attempt the NAPLES con- Conquest of *Naples*; and the better to succeed entered quered in Con- into an Agreement with *Ferdinand* the Catholic for cert with the dividing this Kingdom betwixt them. This Conquest SPANIARDS. cost very little Trouble: For in the Year 1501 *Fredrick* 1501. King of *Naples* submitted to *Lewis*, and was supported in *France* afterwards with a Pension of 30,000 Crowns.

As the two Nations could not agree about settling The FRENCH their respective Shares it came to Blows: In which the driven from *French* NAPLES.

French had at first the Advantage; but by the brave Conduct of *Gonsalvo* of *Corduba* the *Spanish* General they were in a short Time driven out of the Kingdom. To make Amends for this Loss *Lewis* in the next Campaign set five Armies on Foot; yet finding he could gain no Advantage he was glad to make Peace with *Ferdinand*.

Revolt of
GENOA,
1507.

In the Year 1507 the City of *Genoa* at that Time belonging to the Dutchy of *Milan* revolted: But it was soon reduced to Obedience.

War with
VENICE.

A War was not long after commenced against the *Venetians*; whose Encroachments on all their Neighbours could no longer be born. To humble this proud State an Alliance was entered into at *Cambray* betwixt the Emperor, the Pope, and the Kings of *France* and *Spain*. Being hurried into this Confederacy with his natural Enemies, and against a State whose Friendship he ought to have cultivated by a Notion that the *Venetians* had contributed to his Loss of *Naples*, *Lewis* was the first who took the Field against them. The total Rout of their Army near *Giera* in the Year 1509 struck such Terror into the *Venetians* that they abandoned all on the *Continent*: And if *Lewis* had pushed his Success they must have been quite ruined. Instead of this he by returning to *Milan* gave the *Venetians* Time to recover themselves; especially as they saw the other Allies of *Cambray* were not in earnest.

Alliance
against
FRANCE,
1510.

In the Year 1510 the Pope, *Ferdinand*, *Henry VIII.* of *England* and the *Swiss* united with *Venice* against *France*. The two first were grown jealous of *Lewis's* Power in *Italy*; *Henry* being just come to the Throne had a Mind to distinguish himself; and the *Swiss* were angry because their Subsidy was not paid. In this War the *French* General *Gaston de Foix* behaved extremely well. Having relieved *Bologna* he obtained a Victory over the *Venetians* in the *Bressan*, and cut in Pieces above 8000 of them. He afterwards routed the Confederate Army near *Ravenna*: But by pursuing too far he was slain. The Death of this Hero was a fatal Stroke to the *French*, who soon lost all in *Italy*; and *Maximillian* Son of *Lewis* the Moor was restored by

by the *Swiss* to *Milan*. During this War *John D'Albert* an Ally of the *French* lost his Kingdom of *Navarre*: Nor could the *French* recover it for him from *Ferdinand King of Spain*.

As *Lewis* set his Heart much on *Milan* he made Peace MILAN re- with the *Venetians*, and had in the Year 1512 regained covered and most of it: But by the coming up of some *Swiss* Succours lost again, the Siege of *Novara* where *Maximillian* had shut him- 1512. self up was raised, and the *French* were once more forced to evacuate this Dutchy. In the mean Time *France* was attacked by the Emperor, *England* and the *Swiss*; and if *Henry* of *England* had joined the *Swiss* *Lewis* would in all Probability have been ruined: But instead of advancing into the Heart of the Kingdom *Henry* amused himself with the Siege of *Terouane*. The *French* endeavouring to relieve it were defeated near *Guine-Battle of* the SPURS. *gaft*. This Battle, in which the *French* used their the SPURS. Spurs more than their Swords, has been always called *the Battle of the Spurs*. *Henry* having afterwards taken *Tournay* he went back to *England*: And the Duke of *Tremouille* by promising that their Arrears should be paid; that the Council of *Pisa* should be broke up; and that all Pretensions to the *Milanese* should be waved prevailed on the *Swiss* to raise the Siege of *Dijon*. The Excuse for not fulfilling these Engagements was that they were made without the King's Order; it would however have cost the Hostages left by the Duke dear, if the *Swiss* had not preferred the large Sums offered by them to their Blood. In the next Year *Lewis* conclud- Treaty with ed a Treaty with *England*; and married *Mary Henry's* ENGLAND. Sister. *Lewis* who was so beloved by his Subjects as to be called the Father of his People died in the Year 1515.

Francis I. his Kinsman and Successor, having con- FRANCIS I. firmed the Alliance with the *English* and Republick of 1515. *Venice* and entered into one with *Charles King of Spain*, made an Irruption into *Italy*; and meeting with little Resistance became Master of *Genoa* and a great Part of *Milan*. Being soon after unexpectedly attacked Battle of in his Camp at *Marignan* by the *Swiss* both Sides MARIGNAN fought desperately; yet the *Swiss* were repulsed with the Loss of 10,000 Men. This Victory was followed with the

the Surrender of *Maximillian* and his whole Dutchy to *Francis*, who allowed him a yearly Pension of 30,000 Ducats: And the *Swiss* finding that *Francis* was willing to pay their Subsidy shortly after entered into an Alliance with him. By an Agreement with Pope *Leo X.* *Francis* was to have the Right of Presentation to all Ecclesiastical Benifices in *Milan*; but the Pope was to have the first Fruits of the most considerable. In the Year 1518 the *English* for a Sum of Money delivered up *Tournay*.

He is a Candidate for the
IMPERIAL
CROWN,
1519.
War with
SPAIN.

Upon the Death of the Emperor *Maximillian* in the next Year *Francis* used his utmost Endeavours to obtain the Imperial Dignity. The Archduke *Charles* being preferred to him his next Care was to guard against the Designs of this enterprising Prince: And his Jealousy of *Charles* soon showed itself by declaring War. As *Spain* was disturbed by domestick Feuds he found no great Difficulty in conquering *Navarre*; but in the Year 1521 the *Spaniards* drove the *French* out of *Navarre*, and Hostilities were commenced in the *Low Countries*: Where *Robert* Baron of *Sedan* after putting himself under the Protection of *Francis* had attacked *Luxemburg*. *Charles* soon reduced him to Obedience, and concluding his Revolt was spirited up by the *French* took from them *St. Amand* and *Tournay*.

FRENCH
abandon MI-
LAN, 1521.

In *Italy* the *French* were defeated by the *Germans* near *Bicoca*: And having abandoned *Milan* *Francis Sforça* was by the Emperor and the Pope established there. *Fontarabia* in *Flanders* was retaken likewise in this Campaign, for the delivering up of which *Charles* had before offered to make Peace: But this ill Success of the *French* was in a great Measure owing to the going of *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon* into the Emperor's Service.

CHARLES
Duke of
BOURBON
goes into the
EMPEROR'S
Service.

His Reason was supposed to be the ill Usage he met with from the Queen-Mother; by whom a Suit was commenced for taking away his Dutchy of *Bourbon*: which as he had no Hopes of succeeding against so powerful a Rival determined him to enter into an Alliance with the Emperor and King of *England*. It was agreed by them that *France* should be divided betwixt

betwixt the two last; and that the Duke of *Bourbon* who was to marry the Emperor's Sister should have the Kingdom of *Arles*. While a Descent was made on *Picardy* by the *English*, the Duke of *Bourbon* in the Year 1524 repulsed with great Loss a *French* Army in the *Milanese*, which was commanded by the Admiral *Bonnivet*. *Francis* being in the next Campaign persuaded by *Bonnivet* to take the Command on the Side of *Italy* in Person, he was the more willing to do it because *Charles* had already entered *Provence* and laid Siege to *Marseilles*. Being arrived in *Italy* *Francis* sat down before *Pavia*: But after his Troops had for two Months been fatigued with the Siege of this Place, the Duke of *Bourbon*, who at first retired, having received a considerable Reinforcement fell upon him in his Camp, and after routing his Army made him Prisoner.

FRANCIS is
taken Prisoner.
1525.

As the close Confinement of *Francis*, who was carried into *Spain*, threw him into a dangerous Distemper, his Ministers fearing he would die a Prisoner consented at last to the Terms of Ransom proposed by *Spain*.

He is set at
Liberty.

About this Time a Confederacy was entered into by *England* and the States of *Italy* for checking the Power of *Charles*, which seemed to threaten the Liberty of *Europe*. The Conditions of his Release being very dishonourable *Francis*, notwithstanding he had given his Word to return if they were not performed, declared them not binding because they were extorted from him while he was a Prisoner; and that as they were moreover contrary to his Coronation Oath it was out of his Power to perform them. The same was asserted by the States of *France*, and the *Burgundians* insisted, that he could not separate *Burgundy* to which he had only a Right for Life from the *French* Crown. *Francis* soon after allied himself to *England* and the States of *Italy*, and as Terms of Peace could not be agreed upon War was declared by all these against the Emperor. Being hereupon taxed by *Charles* with having broke his Word *Francis* gave him the Lie in plain Terms and sent him a Challenge; this Behaviour was however looked upon as quite unbecoming a Prince.

He joins in a
Confederacy
against
CHARLES.

The

Siege of
NAPLES.

The Army of *France*, which was commanded by *Odet de Foix* Baron of *Lautrec*, after making great Progress in the *Milanese*, penetrated into *Naples* and laid Siege to the Capital: But a Stop was put to this Success by the Imprudence of *Francis*, who refused to bestow the Government of *Genoa* on Admiral *Andrea Doria* a Native, and to restore the Town of *Savona* to this Republick. Hereupon *Doria* went over to the Party of *Charles*, and had a great Share in preserving the Communication with *Naples* by Sea. During the long Siege of this Town a Plague broke out in the *French* Army; which having carried off great Numbers with their General the rest were made Prisoners.

Brave and dis-
intrested Con-
duct of Do-
RIA.

This was followed with the Loss of all in *Milan*; and that great Man *Doria* acquired immortal Glory by preserving the Liberty of his Country, when it was in his Power to take upon himself the sovereign Authority.

Treaty of
CAMBRAY,
1529.

At length, *Francis* being desirous that his Children left as Hostages should have their Liberty, a Treaty was in the Year 1529 concluded at *Cambray*: By which he agreed to pay a large Sum for the Ransom of his Sons; to give up the Sovereignty of *Artois* and *Flanders* to *Charles*; and to renounce all Pretensions to *Italy*.

Renewal of
the War with
SPAIN, 1535.

The War being renewed in the Year 1535 *Francis* had a Mind to open himself a Way to *Milan* through *Savoy*; and having set up Pretensions to this Dutchy in the Right of his Mother he soon became Master of most of it. On the Death of *Sforça*, which happened about the same Time, it was resolved by the Emperor to annex the Dutchy of *Milan* to the Dominions of the House of *Austria*. Having after making sure of this Dutchy thrown himself into *Provence* with an Army of 50,000 Men, he pillaged *Aix* and laid Siege to *Marseilles*; but his Army falling sick he thought proper to retire. Another Army from the *Netherlands*, which penetrated at the same Time into *Picardy*, was after taking *Guise*, *St. Pol* and *Montreuil* defeated before *Peronne*. Upon this Success *Francis* pretending that the Sovereignties of *Artois* and *Flanders* were inseparable

separable from the *French Crown* summoned *Charles* to appear as his Vassal for these Counties; and he likewise entered into an Alliance with the *Turks*. The first of these appeared to all Mankind ridiculous, and the second was thought extraordinary in a Christian Prince; but *Francis* endeavoured to excuse it by saying that the Emperor had endeavoured to do the same.

By the Mediation of the Pope the Truce concluded the Year before at *Nice* was in the Year 1538 prolonged at *Nice*, for the Term of nine Years; and these two Princes, who had been so long deadly Enemies, in an Interview at *Aigues-Mortes* gave each other the strongest Assurances of being heartily reconciled. In the following Year *Charles*, such was his Confidence in *Francis*, went through *France* to quiet a Commotion in *Ghent*. He however for his greater Security made the *French King* believe he would give up the *Milanese* to him. This being afterwards refused, the Constable *Montmorency* was disgraced for advising *Francis* not to insist on a Promise in writing from *Charles* when he was at *Paris*. 1537.

In the Year 1542 the Truce was broke by *Francis*, whose Ambassadors *Cæsar Fregosa* and *Anthony Rincon* were in their Way through *Milan* to *Venice* murdered, and as it was supposed by Order of the Governor: And as *Charles* had lately suffered some Loss before *Algiers*, he thinking the Opportunity favourable resolved to attack him with five Armies at the same Time. One of these took many Places in *Luxemburg*; and a Diversion being made in *Hungary* by *Solyman* Emperor of the *Turks* *Gran* and some other Towns on that Side were taken. The Pyrate *Barbarossa* came also to the Assistance of the *French*; but his *Corjairs* did them more Hurt than Good. *Charles* on his Part concluded an Alliance with *Henry VIII.* of *England*, whom *Francis* had disgusted by assisting the *Scotch*; and after chastising the Duke of *Cleves* for his Attachment to *France* sat down before *Landrecy*. His Attempt on this Place failed; and the *French* in the mean Time obtained a Victory over the *Imperialists* near *Cerisoles* in *Piedmont*; but they could not push it, because many of their Troops were recalled to oppose the Emperor and *Henry*, who 1542.

Battle of
CERISOLES.
had

Treaty of
CRESPIY.
1547.

had agreed to enter *France* with an Army of 100,000 Men. The Emperor had after taking *Luxemburg* advanced as far as *Chatteau Thierry*, and the City of *Paris* was in the greatest Consternation. If *Henry* had at this Time made the best of his Way through *Picardy*, according to the Agreement betwixt him and *Charles*, that Metropolis must have fallen into their Hands, and they might have penetrated into the Heart of the Kingdom. As he did not *Charles* concluded a Treaty with *Francis* at *Crespy* in the Year 1547; by which it was agreed that all Places taken should be restored on both Sides. *Charles* moreover promised to the Duke of *Orleans*, second Son of *Francis*, his Daughter in Marriage, with either the Dutchy of *Milan* or the *Netherlands* as a Portion; but this Match was prevented from taking Effect by the Duke's Death.

HENRY II.
1547.

Francis I. who died in the Year 1547 was succeeded by *Henry* II. his Son. This Prince soon after his Accession took Possession of the Marquisate of *Salucca*, which fell to him by the Death of *Gabriel* the last Marquis without Heirs. In the Year 1549 he severely punished the Inhabitants of *Bourdeaux* who had revolted; and in the next Year *Bouloign* was bought of the *English* for a Sum of Money.

War with
CHARLES
1552.

As the Emperor was engaged with the *Turks* and with his Protestant Subjects in *Germany*, *Henry* in the Year 1551 resolved to break with him. Having concluded an Alliance with *Maurice* Elector of *Saxony*, he in the Year 1552 marched an Army towards the *Rhine*, which in its Way surprized *Metz*, *Toul* and *Verdun*, and was very near doing the same to *Strasbourg*: But a separate Peace being made by *Maurice* with the Emperor, and *Henry* being requested by some *German* Princes to go no farther into the Empire he retired. *Henry* in his Return took several Places in *Luxemburg*. *Metz* being after this besieged by *Charles* with an Army of 100,000 Men, the Duke of *Guise* defended it so bravely that after great Loss he gave over the Siege. In Revenge for this Disappointment he threw himself into the County *Artois*; and having taken *Terouanne* entirely demolished it. *Hesden* had the same Fate; and the Garrisons of both Places were

were put to the Sword. In *Italy* the *French* took *Sienna* Battle of and some Places in the Island of *Corfica*; but being de-MARCIANO, feated in the Year 1555 near *Marciano* they abandoned 1555. the former.

Charles who in the Year 1556 resigned the *Spanish* Suspension of Crown, being desirous that the Beginning of his Son's Arms. Reign should be peaceable, had agreed upon a Suspension of Arms: But this was scarce signed before Hostilities were at the Instigation of Pope *Paul VI.* recommenced.

The Duke of *Guise* was hereupon sent into *Italy* Hostilities renewed. with a powerful Army; but he did nothing remarkable. *Philip* having engaged *England* on his Side besieged *St. Quintin* with an Army of 50,000 Men. The Constable Battle of *St. Montmorency* attempted to relieve this Place: But he was QUINTIN. entirely defeated. If this victorious Army had marched directly towards *Paris* France would have been in a bad Condition: But *Philip*, suspecting that the Duke of *Savoy* his Ally might for the Sake of obtaining good Terms reconcile himself to *France*, would not suffer it to advance into the Country. After taking *St. Quintin* by Storm the rest of the Campaign was wasted in taking *Han*, *Chatelet* and *Noyon*. The *French* having by this Means Time to re-establish their Affairs, *Thionville*, *Calais* and some other Places were afterwards taken from the *English* by the Duke of *Guise*. In the Year 1559 the *French* Army under *Mareschal De Termes* was beat near *Gravelines*; and with a View Battle of to the annexing of *Scotland* to the Crown of *France* the GRAVE-Dauphin was married to *Mary* Queen of *Scots*; but LINES. there being no Issue of this Marriage the Scheme failed. A Treaty being in the same Year concluded at *Chateau* Treaty of *Cambresis*, the Conditions were that *Chatelet*, *Han*, *St. CHATEAU Quintin* and 198 other Towns should be given up to CAMBRESIS. *Spain* and other Powers; and that the Duke of *Savoy* 1559. should be fully restored to his Dominions. After the making of this Peace, which was indeed very prejudicial to *France*, it was resolved by the States to meddle no more in *Italy*; and to break the Alliance with the *Turks*.

Shortly

Death of
HENRY.

Shortly after *Henry* in Tilting with the Earl of *Montgomery* received a Wound in his Eye, which instantly took away his Senses and Speech, and carried him off at the End of eleven Days. This unhappy Accident entirely spoiled the Mirth at the Marriage which had before been concluded betwixt his Sister *Margaret* and *Philibert* Duke of *Savoy*.

FRANCIS II.
1559.

Soon after the Accession of *Francis* II. his Son the cruel civil Wars, by which *France* has been so long ravaged, were commenced. In order to understand the Origin of these aright it is necessary to look back.

Origin of the
civil Wars

The House of *Bourbon*, which next to the present reigning Family of *Valois* had the best Right to the Crown, had for a long Time encreased so much in Riches and Power as to make some former Kings jealous. *Francis* I. did indeed in the Beginning of his Reign make *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon* Constable of *France* and Prime Minister: But the Maxim of keeping this House under, which his Predecessors had followed, soon prevailed. This being perceived *Charles* went into the Emperor's Service; and he it was who commanded the Imperial Army at the Battle of *Pavia* where *Francis* was made Prisoner. After many signal Services he was slain at the storming of *Rome* in the Year 1527. The rest of the *Bourbon* Family were from that Time looked upon with an evil Eye, and the Houses of *Guise* and *Montmorency* were caressed by *Francis*. The first of these which had for its Chief *Claude* Duke of *Guise* was a Branch of the House of *Lorraine*; the other one of the most ancient Families of *France* was headed by *Annas* *Montmorency* Constable of *France*. Towards the Close of that Reign both these falling into Disgrace were banished the Court; and it is said that *Francis* upon his Death-Bed advised his Son to employ neither of them; representing to him that it was dangerous to have Ministers of such Abilities and Interest. Notwithstanding this Advice *Annas* of *Montmorency* and *Francis* Duke of *Guise* were both received into Favour: But a Jealousy soon arose betwixt them; for the former valued himself upon his political Capacity, and the latter piqued himself on his military Abilities. The
Duke

Duke of *Guise*, who had always been popular, grew more so by defending *Metz* against *Charles* and taking *Calais* from the *English*. On the contrary *Montmorency* was much blamed for losing the Battle of *St. Quintin*, and he was looked upon to be principally concerned in advising the dishonourable Peace.

The *Guises* grew more considerable by the Mar-^{The} *Guises* riage of *Francis* to *Mary* Queen of *Scot*; their Sister's ^{direct every} Daughter; and at length every Thing in *France* was ^{Thing in} directed by the Duke and the Cardinal his Brother. ^{FRANCE.}

This not only mortified *Montmorency*: But the two Brothers of the *Bourbon* Family *Anthony* King of *Navarre* and the Prince of *Conde* could not brook it. *Anthony* indeed being of an easy Disposition had nothing more in View than to recover his Kingdom of *Navarre*, and in the mean Time was contented with the Revenue he received from *Bearn*; but the Prince of *Conde* was ambitious, and so poor withal that he could not live up to his high Rank without some considerable Employment. Besides this, the *Admiral Coligny* an artful proud Man and his Brother *D' Andelot*, who was of a bold enterprising Temper, were continually inciting the Prince of *Conde* to assert the Superiority of his Family. This was the Situation of Affairs when *Francis* II, who was only sixteen Years of Age and by Reason of his Incapacity and ill State of Health wholly unfit to govern, came to the Crown.

While the Heads of the *Bourbon* and *Guise* Family ^{The Queen} contended for the Regency, the Queen Mother ^{Mother ob-} *Catherine de Medicis* by craftily fomenting their Quarrel ^{contains the} contrived to get it into her own Hands. As the *Guises* were ^{Regency.} her Favourites she gave the Command of the Army to the Duke; and the Cardinal had the Direction of the Finances. The Constable *Montmorency* under the Pretence that his great Age wanted Repose was desired to retire from Court; and to get him out of the Way the Prince of *Conde* was sent Ambassador to the *Spanish* Court. Seeing themselves thus excluded from all Share of the Government, it was resolved at a Meeting held to deliberate on what Measures were fittest to be taken, that the King of *Navarre* should by cajoling the Court endea-

vour to procure their Advancement. This was tried; but after being many Times deceived with vain Hopes he gave it over.

The Prince of CONDE joins with the Huguenots. Still the Prince of *Conde* was determined to push his Fortune; and having no great Interest he by the Advice of *Coligny* joined himself with the *Huguenots*: by which Name all of the Reformed Religion in *France* were called. These People at this Time under a severe Persecution mortally hated the *Guises*, whom they looked upon to be the Authors of it, and readily embraced him for a Leader. It was agreed that the *Huguenots* being assembled secretly some of them should demand at Court the free Exercise of their Religion; which being refused the rest were to go instantly in a Body, and after murdering the *Guises* force the King to confer the Regency on the Prince of *Conde*. A Gentleman named *Renaudie* took upon himself the Execution of this Design: but as it was deferred on the Account of the Court's Removal to *Blois* and from thence to *Amboise*, it took Air; and above 1200 *Huguenots* were seized and put to Death. The Prince of *Conde* was confined and sentenced to die; but luckily for him the sudden Death of *Francis* in the Year 1560 entirely changed the Face of Affairs.

CHARLES
IX. 1560.

His Brother and Successor *Charles IX.* being only eleven Years old the Queen Mother thought herself secure of the Regency, and especially so long as she could keep the Houses of *Bourbon* and *Guise* embroiled. In order therefore to prevent the Ruin of the Prince of *Conde's* Party she pretended to have no Dislike to the Reformed Religion, and rather encouraged it at Court; but *Montmorency*, *Guise* and the Marshal *St. André* adhered to their Purpose of exterminating it, and the King of *Navarre* was brought over to their Party.

Conference at
POISSY.

There was afterwards a Conference at *Poissy* betwixt Divines of both Religions; and an Edict was in *January* 1562 published for the Preservation of the Reformed Religion, which was called the *Edict of January*. This so incensed the *Guise* Party that some of them entered the Village of *Vassy*, and having first disturbed the Pro-

testants

testants in the Exercise of their Religion put thréescore of them to Death. From this Time Hostilities were committed on both Sides; but as it does not suit with our Purpose to give a circumstantial Detail of the many Battles and Skirmishes, or of the Rage and Cruelty exercised on both Sides, we shall only give a brief Account of the principal Events in these civil Wars.

In the first War the King of *Navarre* died of a Wound *First Civil* received at the Siege of *Roan*. A Battle being fought *War, 1562.* near *Dreux* the Prince of *Conde* had at first the Advantage; but his Men falling to plundering too soon they were repulsed, and he was taken Prisoner. In this Action the Marshal *St. André* was killed upon the Spot; and about 4000 of each Party were left upon the Field. The Duke of *Guise* was soon after treacherously murdered at the Siege of *Orleans* by one *Peltrot*, at the Instigation as it was supposed of *Coligny*.

In the next Year a Peace was made: Yet notwithstanding the short Continuance of this War it is computed that at least 50,000 of the *Huguenots* were killed; and both Parties had suffered so much that the Queen could now manage either. After the Peace the *English* were obliged to quit *Havre de Grace*: which the *Huguenots* in Recompence for their Assistance had put into their Hands. As the *Huguenots* made no Scruple of taking Plate out of the Churches and coining it, Silver was after this War more plentiful in *France* than it had ever been before.

In the Year 1567 the Queen Regent had an Interview *Second Civil* with the Duke *D'Alva* at *Bayonne*: in which the De- *War, 1567.* struction of the *Huguenots* was supposed to be resolved upon. This Apprehension with the Persecution immediately set on Foot with great Warmth against them determined the *Huguenots* to renew Hostilities. *Annas* of *Montmorency* being in this second War mortally wounded at the Battle of *St. Dennis*, he said to a Monk who was impertinent in his last Moments: *Let me alone; I have not lived fourscore Years without learning to die a Quarter of an Hour.* The Protestants who were vastly inferior in Number got great Reputation by this Victory;

and the City of *Rochelle* which for sixty Years afterwards served for a Retreat declared for them.

*Third civil
War, 1568.*

In the Year 1568 a Peace was signed; but as neither Party were satisfied with the Conditions the War broke out again in the same Year. The Prince of *Conde* being killed by a Musket Shot at the Battle of *Jarnac* in the Year 1569, *Henry* King of *Navarre* the Son of *Anthony*, who succeeded afterwards to the *French* Crown, was pitched upon by the Protestants for their Chief: But the *Admiral Coligny* had in Fact the whole Direction of their Affairs. This last failed in his Attempt against *Poitiers*, in Defence of which the young Duke of *Guise* gave the first Proofs of his Bravery; and lost 9000 Men in the Action near *Moncouthour*. His Reputation did not however suffer by these Miscarriages; and being supplied with Money from the Queen of *England* and Troops from the *Electors Palatine* he soon after assembled a great Army.

*A Peace very
advantageous
to the Hugue-
nots, 1570.*

Upon his advancing in the Year 1570 towards *Paris* a very advantageous Peace for the *Huguenots* was concluded; the Towns of *Rochelle*, *Montauban*, *Cognac* and *la Charite* being given up to them: But the Design of the Court in this was, that as the *Protestants* could not be subdued by Force they might be thereby lulled into a dangerous Security.

*Massacre of
PARIS. 1571.*

With a View to this they were flattered with vast Hopes; and the *Admiral Coligny* now much carested at Court was often consulted concerning an intended Expedition against the *Spaniards* in the *Netherlands*. A Marriage was next Year concluded betwixt *Henry* of *Navarre* and the *French* King's Sister; to the Celebration of which all the most considerable Persons amongst the Protestants were invited, that their Throats might more conveniently be cut altogether at *Paris*. As the *Admiral* was going home one Night from Court, he was wounded in the Arm by some *Russians* hired by the Duke of *Guise* to shoot him. This was followed with an Agreement, that on the twenty-fourth of *August* at the Ringing of Bells for the first Prayers in the Morning the *Huguenots* should be all massacred; and the Duke of *Guise* took upon himself the Execution of it. The *Admiral* confined

to

to his Bed by his Wounds was the first who fell a Sacrifice; and the Slaughter continued for seven Days with most unheard of Cruelty. The Example set at *Paris* being followed in many other Cities above 30,000 *Protestants* were massacred; and the King of *Navarre* with the young Prince of *Conde* were compelled to abjure the Reformed Religion. This horrid Business, which is commonly called the Wedding at *Paris*, has been scandalously represented by *Gabriel Naude* as a Master-Piece of Policy.

Their Consternation being a little over the War was *Fourth Civil* recommenced with great Animosity by the *Huguenots*. *War, 1571.* In this fourth War the Royal Army besieged *Rochelle*; but, after being eight Months and losing 12000 Men before it, the Duke of *Anjou* who commanded took the Opportunity of his being elected King of *Poland* to raise the Siege with Honour; and Peace was in the Year 1573 again concluded.

In the next Year the War was re-kindled; and a *Fifth Civil* third Faction being formed in *France* who called them- *War, 1574.* selves the Political Party, these protested that without any Regard to Religion they only meant the good of the Publick, the Exclusion of the Queen from the Regency, and the Banishment of the *Guises* and all *Italians* from the Kingdom. At the Head of this party was the House of *Montmorency*: which tho' it at first proposed nothing but its own Aggrandisement had afterwards a great Share in the Advancement of *Henry* to the Throne. In the same Year while all these Divisions were at the Height *Charles IX.* died without Heirs.

His Successor *Henry III.* at that Time in *Poland* set *HENRY III.* out immediately; and went *incognito* by the Way of *1574.* *Vienna* and *Venice* to *France*. Having taken Possession of the Crown he by no Means answered the Expectations of the People; for abandoning himself to Idleness and Sensuality the Administration was still in the Hands of the Queen Mother and some Favourites. In the mean Time the Strength of the *Huguenots* was greatly encreased by an Army from *Germany* under the Prince of *Conde* and *John Casimir* Count *Palatine*. The Duke of *Alençon* Brother to the King came also over to them;

and the King of *Navarre* made his Escape from Prison. All these Considerations made it necessary for the other Party to clap up a Peace with them upon more advantageous Terms than any of the former.

The LEAGUE
or HOLY
UNION.

About the same Time another Party called the *Holy Union* or *League* was set on Foot by the Duke of *Guise*; who finding himself hated by the King but in great Esteem amongst the Priests and People had a Mind to set up for himself. He was besides encouraged by the Contempt the King's Management had brought him into: And pretending to be descended from *Charlemain* he insisted on having a better Right to the Crown than *Henry*, whose Predecessor *Hugh Capet* had unjustly excluded his Family. These were the real Reasons for this League: But the pretended ones were the Defence of the Catholick Religion, the Establishment of *Henry* on the Throne, and the Maintenance of publick Liberty; and all who entered into it took a solemn Oath to be in all Things obedient to the Heads of it. The King moreover, who did not at first see to the Bottom thereof hoping that the *Huguenots* might be thereby more easily ruined signed it at the Assembly of *Blois* in the Year 1577; and declared himself its Head.

Sixth Civil
War, 1577.

A sixth War was immediately commenced against the *Huguenots*; but notwithstanding their Affairs were in a bad Posture nothing considerable happened, and Peace was concluded in the same Year. After this Peace the King returned to his luxurious Way of Living, to support the Expence of which new Taxes were laid on the Subjects; which with the Insolence of his Favourites increased the People's Hatred to him, and heightened their Esteem for the Duke of *Guise*. The Duke of *Alençon* Brother to the King having about the same Time taken upon himself the Title of Lord of the *Netherlands*, *Philip* of *Spain* in Revenge entered into the League.

SPAIN comes
into the
LEAGUE.

Seventh Civil
War, 1579.

In the Year 1579 War was for the seventh Time commenced against the *Huguenots*: in which they had ill Success; but the King fearing that if they were ruined quite the League would become too powerful made Peace with them in the next Year. This pleased the

the Duke of *Alençon* who wanted the Troops of *France* in *Flanders*: Where he expected an Attack from *Philip*. Still the exorbitant Demands of the King's Favourites on the People encreased; which with his Hypocrisy in affecting the Severity of a Monk rendred him universally despised. The Power of *France* was moreover much diminished by the Duke of *Alençon's* bad Success in *Flanders*, and by the Ruin of a Fleet near the Island of *Tercera* which *Henry* had sent to the Assistance of *Anthony* of *Portugal*.

After the Duke of *Alençon's* Death as there was no *Intrigues* of Prospect of the King's having Issue, the Duke of *Guise* the Duke of now vastly powerful conceived great Hopes of coming to the Crown: For the sake however of concealing his Views and effectually excluding *Henry* of *Navarre* he pretended to be in the Cardinal of *Bourbon's* Interest. It being suspected that *Henry* was not averse to the King of *Navarre*, the Cry of the Catholick Religion being in Danger was rung in the Peoples Ears from the Pulpits; and *Spain* promised to furnish a large Sum of Money in Support of the *League*. The Cause of Religion and the raising of the Cardinal of *Bourbon* to the Throne were plausible enough Pretences for this; but the main Thing intended by *Spain* was to keep *France* low by fomenting its Divisions. Hostilities being soon after committed by the *Leaguers* they became Masters of many Cities; and obliged the King to forbid the Exercise of the Reformed Religion.

In this eighth War the Duke of *Joyeuse* was worsted in an Engagement with the King of *Navarre* near *Coutras* in the Year 1587. This Victory was not however pushed; and an Army of *Swiss* and *Germans* under *Fabian de Dona*, which came to the Assistance of the *Huguenots*, was for want of a good General routed by the Duke of *Guise* and forced after great Loss to return home. After this Success no Regard was shewn to the King who was supposed to be at the bottom a Well-wisher to the *Huguenots*; and Priests had the Impudence to call him Tyrant in their publick Sermons. This determined him to punish some of the most busy: But as the People in *Paris* flew to Arms and begged of the Duke of *Guise*

Eighth Civil War, 1585.

to protect them, he thought proper to retire from this City by Night.

Duke of
GUISE assassinated.

HENRY is
stabbed, 1589.

HENRY IV.
1589.

Finding he could not withstand the growing Power of the *League* he submitted to the Duke of *Guise's* own Terms; and pretending to forgive all Injuries prevailed upon him to come to an assembly of the State at *Blois*. The Members of this most of them his Creatures insisted on the Duke's being made Constable, and that the King of *Navarre* should be declared incapable of reigning: But *Henry* caused him and his Brother the Cardinal to be both assassinated. The Citizens of *Paris* hereby exasperated declared that *Henry* had forfeited the Crown. Most of the great Cities did the same; and the Duke of *Maine* Brother to the *Guises* was made Lieutenant-General of the Kingdom and Head of the *League*. Being besides excommunicated by the Pope *Henry* was for his Security compelled to join with the King of *Navarre* and the *Huguenots*; and having assembled a large Army laid Siege to *Paris*. In the Evening before the Assault was to be made a Monk from the City named *James Clement* brought a Letter directed to the King; and pretending moreover to whisper something privately in his Ear stabbed him in the Belly with a Knife. On the next Day the 12th of *August* 1589 *Henry* died of the Wound, and with him ended the Line of *Valois*.

Henry IV. whom we have hitherto known by the Name of King of *Navarre*, notwithstanding that the Crown of right belonged to him as Head of the *Bourbon* Line had many Difficulties to encounter with at his Accession. He well knew that so long as he continued in the Reformed Religion the *League*, the Pope and *Spain* would never let him be quiet; yet, besides that it would have been unbecoming to have all at once sacrificed his Religion to his Interest, he did not care to deprive himself of the Support of his faithful *Huguenots*. All the great Men in the Army promised to obey him, provided he would in six Months be instructed in the Catholick Religion: But he would not be confined to any Time, and only gave them general Hopes. It was afterwards agreed that the *Huguenots* should be tolerated in the free Exercise of their Religion; but that the *Catholick* Religion should

should be established; and that the Revenues of the Church should in all Places be restored to the *Catholicks*.

In the mean Time the Duke of *Maine*, who had not *The Cardinal* Confidence enough in the *League* to take upon himself of *BOURBON* the Title of King, caused the Cardinal of *Bourbon* Uncle *is proclaimed.* to *Henry*, an old decrepit Man at that Time in Prison, to be proclaimed; and contented himself with the Title of Lieutenant General of the Crown. The Partisans of the *League*, who were the common People, most of the large Cities, all the Parliaments except those of *Bordeaux* and *Rennes*, near all the Clergy, the Pope and all Catholick States except *Venice* and *Florence*, were indeed vastly powerful: But as the Heads of it disagreed the Duke of *Maine's* Authority was not sufficient to unite them. In the King's Party were most of the Nobility, the Ministry of the late King, all the Protestant States and the *Huguenots*: Which last did him great Services, and they would have done more for him if they had not mistrusted his Design of changing his Religion.

The Duke of *Maine* made an Attempt to surprize *Duke of* the King near *Dieppe*: But he was repulsed with great *MAINE is* Loss. This was thought to forbode Ill to the *League*; *repulsed at* yet as *Henry* could not make himself Master of *Paris* *DIEPPE.* the Want of Money to pay his Troops made it difficult to keep them together: And the *Spaniards* hoping either to conquer the Kingdom, or at least to ruin it by keeping up the Divisions, began openly to meddle in the Affairs of *France*. Their Design was seen through and secretly opposed by the Duke of *Maine*: Who if he could not get the Crown for himself was by no Means willing the Kingdom should be subject to *Spain*. In the Year 1590 *Henry* obtained a Victory over the Duke near *Ivry*: And having blocked up *Paris* it must have *Battle of* fallen into his Hands, if the Duke of *Parma* Governour *IVRY, 1590,* of the *Netherlands* had not come to its Relief. In the Year 1591 a third Party formed in favour of the young Cardinal of *Bourbon* was soon ruined by the King: But he was soon after anathematized by Pope *Gregory XIV.* and his Subjects were enjoined to withdraw their Allegiance from him. The Consequences of this had like to have been very bad to *Henry*.

The

*Intrigues of
the SPANISH
Court.*

The Design of the *Spaniards* now appeared plainly in *Philip's* offering his Daughter *Isabella-Clara Eugenia* for Queen of *France*. This was approved of by the young Duke of *Guise*, whose Escape from Prison was as some think connived at by *Henry*; who presumed he would oppose the Designs of his Uncle the Duke of *Maine*, and thereby sow Discord in the *League*. After the Duke of *Parma* had raised the Siege of *Roan* *Spain* was more urgent for having the Princess *Isabella*, whose Mother was of *France*, chosen Queen; and it was proposed to the States then assembled at *Paris* that she should marry *Ernest* Archduke of *Austria*. As the *French* would hear nothing of a Foreigner for their King the Court of *Madrid* offered to marry her to *Charles* Duke of *Guise*: But the Duke of *Maine*, highly affronted that any Person should be preferred to himself, used all his Influence and Artifice to prevent the Assembly from closing with this Proposal.

HENRY embraces the
CATHOLICK
RELIGION,
1593.

As *Henry* saw he could never carry his Point without changing his Religion, and was threatened with Desertion by the Catholicks in his Interest if he any longer deferred it, he sent for some Bishops to instruct him in the Catholick Religion; and after receiving Absolution went to Mass at *St. Dennis's* in the Year 1593. That the People might taste the Sweets of Quiet a Suspension of Arms was declared by him for three Months: Which had a good Effect; for it gave them Time to consider, that the principal Reason for continuing the *League* namely the Heresy of the King was now at an End.

Many Cities
submit to him.

Toward the End of the same Year *Vitri* and *Meaux* surrendered to *Henry*; and the Cities of *Aix*, *Lyons*, *Orleans* and *Bourges* having followed this Example, he to induce others to do the same caused himself to be anointed and crowned at *Chartres*: *Rheims* being still in the Hands of the *League*. Shortly after *Brissac* its Governour put *Paris* into his Hands; and the *Spanish* Garrison being hissed out of this City he was received with the greatest Demonstrations of Joy. As he granted favourable Conditions to the Towns which submitted he was soon

soon acknowledged by many others: And the Duke of *Guise* being reconciled to him was made Governour of *Provence*.

Being now in Possession of near all the Kingdom, he *War with* in Order to revenge the Injuries done to himself and to *SPAIN*, 1594, please the *Huguenots* in the Year 1594. declared War against the *Spaniards*; and this was all that *Philip* got for the many Millions he had spent in supporting the *League*.

In the Beginning of this War a Knife, which was *Attempt of* thrust into *Henry's* Mouth by a desperate Ruffian called *CASTEL*. *John Castel*, beat out one of his Teeth: And if he had not, for the Villain aimed at his Throat, luckily stooped in the very Instant it must have done his Business. It being afterwards found out that the *Jesuits* who stick at nothing had been tampering with this Wretch, they were banished the Kingdom and not suffered to return for some Years.

The Pope, finding that *Henry* would in Spite of all *HENRY re-* he could do keep the Crown, at last granted him Abso-*ceives Absolu-* lution, which he had for some Time obstinately refused: *tion from the* And the Dukes of *Maine* and *D'Epernon* having submit-*Pope*. ted to him *Marseilles* was put into his Hands.

The War with *Spain* did not succeed to his Wish. In the Year 1595 the *French* made some Progress in the *1595.* *Franche Comte*, and drove the *Spaniards* from *Han* in *Picardy*: But on the other Hand the *Spaniards* took *Dourlens* and *Cambrai*. In the next Year the *French* lost *1596.* *Calais* and *Ardres*; and took from the *Spaniards* only *la Fere*. In the Year 1597 *Amiens* was surprized by *1597.* the *Spaniards*; and it cost much trouble to retake this Place.

In the following Year the Duke of *Mercœur* who had *Edict of* till then held out in *Bretany* submitted to *Henry*; and to *NANTZ*, quiet the Minds of the *Huguenots* an *Edict* was published *1598.* at *Nantz* for securing the free Exercise of their Religion. A Treaty was at length concluded with *Spain* at *Ver-* *Treaty of* *Yvins*; by which all Places taken on both Sides since the *VERVINS.* Year 1559 were to be restored.

Henry now resolved to chastise the Duke of *Savoy*, *War with* who in the preceding Reign had made himself Master *SAVOY.* of

of the Marquisite of *Saluzzo*; and had during the civil Wars stirred up some Commotions in *Provence* and *Dauphiny*. The Duke came into *France* and offered to make Satisfaction to *Henry*; but as he did this only to gain Time till *Spain* could assist him, or untill Marshal *Biron* with whom he corresponded had again embroiled *France*, the King attacked him. Having taken from him all on this Side the *Alps*, a Treaty was by the Mediation of the Pope concluded in the Year 1600. By this it was agreed that *France* should have in Exchange for *Saluzzo* the *Bresse*, *Bugey*, *Valromay* and *Gex*. The *Italian* Princes were uneasy at this Treaty: Whereby *France* being shut quite out of *Italy* they were left exposed to the Insults of *Spain*; but *Henry* tired with the Misfortunes and Fatigues of War had a Mind to taste the Comforts of Peace. Not long after a dangerous Conspiracy formed by Marshal *Biron* was discovered: Who in Concert with the *Spanish* Court had laid a Scheme for dethroning *Henry* and dividing the Kingdom into many States; of which he was to have for his own Share *Burgundy*. Refusing to accept the King's Mercy, which in consideration of his past Services was offered, he was beheaded, 1602.

Marshal BIRON is beheaded, 1602.

The Silken Manufacture established.

Henry after this set about the rectifying of the Disorders which during the Civil Wars had gained Ground in *France*, and the augmenting of his Revenues. He also established divers Manufactures; and among others that of Silk: Which has since been so profitable to the Kingdom.

An Alliance against the House of AUSTRIA.

As he still met with much Uneasiness from the Queen's Jealousy of him, and the *Spaniards* were constantly plotting against him, he at last formed a Design effectually to reduce the excessive Power of the House of *Austria*, and to confine it for the future to *Spain* and its hereditary Country *Austria*. With a View to this he allied himself with the northern Powers, the States of *Holland*, the Protestant Princes in *Germany*, *Bavaria*, *Switzerland*, *Savoy* and the Pope. The Quarrel that happened on the Account of the Succession to the Duchy of *Fuliers* was an Excuse for breaking with the House of *Austria*, who would have seized this Duchy; but it must be allowed that

his Preparations were more than sufficient to prevent this. Notwithstanding the Armies of *Henry* and his Allies amounted to above 120,000 Men, the House of *Austria* seemed as unconcerned as if it had certainly known what would shortly after happen.

The *French Army* was on its March for *Flanders*, and *HENRY is* the King, having caused the Queen to be crowned and *stabbed in his* appointed her Regent, set out with Design to follow it *Coach, 1610.* a few Days after: But his Coach being stopped by the Crowd in passing a Street of *Paris*, a Villain named *Francis Ravillac* took this Opportunity to stab him in the Belly with a Knife, and he died without speaking a Word. It was generally believed that the Wretch was hired to do this desperate Deed; and that the Queen as well as the House of *Austria* was privy to it. Thus this Hero, after having surmounted innumerable Difficulties in his Way to the Crown, and stifled above fifty Conspiracies against his Life, most of which were formed by *Churchmen*, died by the Hands of a pitiful Scoundrel. His Death which happened *May the 14th 1610* was the greater Misfortune to the Kingdom; because the Minority of his Successor gave the Nobility Time to encrease their Power, and the *Huguenots* an Opportunity of hatching up another Rebellion.

Lewis XIII. at his Father's Death but nine Years of *LEWIS XIII.* Age being under the Care of his Mother *Mary de Me-* 1610.
dicis, she endeavoured by contracting Alliances to preserve Peace abroad, and by Acts of Clemency and Generosity to remove all Uneasiness at home: Insurrections were however raised by some of the *Grandeess*; and not being in a Condition to quell them she was obliged to give Way to their Encroachments. The King having in the Year 1617 taken his Affairs into his own Hands, he caused the Marshal *D'Ancre* a *Florentine* by Birth to be put to Death. As this *Italian* had by taking too much upon him during the Regency rendered himself obnoxious to the *French*, it was hoped that his Death would help to put a Stop to the Murmurings of the People. The Queen was moreover confined at *Blais*: But she was carried from thence by the Duke of *Epernon* in the Year 1619. The Uneasinesses were however
at

at last happily removed by making Presents to the great Men.

First Appearance of CAR-
DINAL RI-
CHELIEU.

About this Time *Richelieu* afterwards a Cardinal began to make a Figure at Court. He it was who advised the King to root out the Seeds of Rebellion in *France*; for he laid it down as a Maxim, that it ought to be put entirely out of the Power of the *Huguenots* to disturb him, since they were always ready to join with the Disaffected. With a View to this *Lewis* began to introduce the Catholick Religion in *Bearn*; which so enraged the *Huguenots* that they flew to Arms. Upon this he took several Places from them; but he lost many Men in his Attempt upon *Montaubon*. A Peace was afterwards made; the Conditions of which were, that the new Fortifications in all the Towns of the *Huguenots* except *Montaubon* and *Rochelle* should be demolished.

Hostilities with the HUGUENOTS
re-commenced,
1625.

ROCHELLE
surrenders.

Ravages during the Civil Wars.

Cardinal *Richelieu* being in the Year 1625 made Prime Minister the War with the *Huguenots* was renewed; because the Citizens of *Rochelle* would not suffer Fort *Lewis* to be built just under their Walls. It being hereupon resolved to take *Rochelle* from them, the Place was so closely blocked up both by Sea and Land that although the *English* landed on the Isle of *Rhe* they could not relieve it. The Obstinacy of the Besieged being overcome by Famine, which reduced them from eighteen to five thousand, they after wanting Bread thirteen Weeks surrendered: And as the Strength of the *Huguenots* was now entirely broke the Inhabitants of *Montaubon* upon a Summons from the Cardinal destroyed their Fortifications. The Duke of *Rohan*, who had given the King so much Trouble in *Languedoc*, agreed also that the Works of *Montpelier* and *Nismes* should be demolished: But no Change was to be made in Religion. Thus an End was put to the Wars on a Religious Account which had so long ravaged *France*. Historians say that in these Wars above a Million of Men lost their Lives; that 150,000,000 Livres were spent in carrying them on; and that 9 Cities, 400 Villages, 20,000 Churches, 2,000 Monasteries and 10,000 Houses were burnt or otherwise destroyed during their Continuance.

Lewis

Lewis in the Year 1628 assisted *Charles* Duke of *War in Nevers*: Whom the *Spaniards* would have excluded ITALY, 1628. from succeeding to the Duke of *Mantua* because he was a *Frenchman*. One of the most remarkable Events in this War was the Siege of *Casal*: Which the *French* defended with great Bravery. This Difference was however accommodated by the Prudence of *Mazarin* the Pope's Nuncio, who thereby laid the Foundation of that Greatness he was afterwards raised to in *France*: And by the Treaty of *Chiarasco* which ensued the Duke of *Nevers* was left in Possession of *Mantua* and *Montferrat*. *Lewis* afterwards bought *Pignerol* of the Duke of *Savoy*; to the End that he might have a Communication with *Italy*.

The *Grisons* were about this Time supported by GRISONS *France* against the Inhabitants of the *Valteline*: Who supported. being assisted by *Spain* had revolted; and thereby this Country was prevented from falling into the Hands of the *Spaniards*.

A Treaty of Subsidy being in the Year 1631 entered Treaty with into with *Sweden* for reducing the Power of the House SWEDEN, of *Austria* *Gustavus Adolphus* entered *Germany*; and after 1631. distinguishing himself upon the *Rhine* took the Elector of *Triers* under his Protection: The Garrison however which he put into *Hermanstein* was in the Year 1636 forced to surrender.

In the mean Time Commotions had been raised by Intrigues of the the Queen Mother and her Son the Duke of *Orleans*: Queen Mother. Who envied the Greatness of *Richelieu*. *Montmorency* was beheaded for being concerned therein; and so this ancient Family, which had the Glory of being the first amongst the Nobility in *France* that embraced Christianity, ended ignominiously. The Queen Mother was pardoned and received into Favour; but as her ambitious Spirit could not be easy without governing she retired into *Flanders* and from thence to *England*. Afterwards she went to *Cologne*, and died there miserably in the Year 1642.

In the Year 1633 *Lewis* made himself Master of *Lor-War* with the rain, because its Duke had sided with the Emperor; Emperor, and after the ill Success of the *Swedes* at the Battle of 1633. *Nordlinguen*

- Nordlinguen* he came to an open Rupture with the House of *Austria* which began to recover itself. The Pretence for this was that the *Spaniards* had surprized *Triers*, and taken the Elector who was under the Protection of *France* Prisoner. War was now commenced in *Italy*, *Germany*, *Flanders* and the *Roussillon*: In which after various Success the *French* had in the End the Advantage.
1635. The first Campaign in *Flanders* in the Year 1635 was unfortunate; the *French* being obliged after great Loss to give over the Siege of *Louvain*. In the Year 1636 *Piccolomini* entered *Picardy*, as did *Gallas* *Burgundy*; but no great Progress was made by either. On the other Side the *French* raised the Siege of *Leucate* in the *Roussillon*; and the brave Duke of *Weimar* carried *Brisac*. As this Duke was supplied with Money from *France*, the King at his Death shortly after took Possession of *Brisac* and continued his Troops in Pay. The *French* in the Year 1638 failed in their Attempts upon *St. Omers* and *Fontarabie*; before which last the Prince of *Conde* sustained great Loss. On the 5th of *September* in the
1638. Birth of LEWIS XIV. same Year *Lewis* XIV. was to the Surprize of every Body born, his Mother having had no Children for twenty Years. In the Year 1639 the *French* were defeated before *Thionville*: But in the following Year they took *Arras*; and *Catalonia* having revolted from *Spain* begged the Protection of *Lewis*. A dangerous Rebellion was in the Year 1641 raised by the Count of *Soissons*: But being himself killed in an Action it served greatly to establish the Authority of *Richelieu*. In the Year 1642 *Perpignan* at the Siege of which the King and Cardinal were both present was taken. At this Siege it was that Monsieur *Cinq-Mars* who endeavoured afterwards to supplant *Richelieu* was first taken Notice of by *Lewis*.
1641. Rebellion in FRANCE. For the Sake of this he entered privately into a Conspiracy with *Spain*: But it being discovered by the Cardinal *Cinq-Mars* was beheaded, and the younger *Thou* suffered with him notwithstanding he had advised his Friend against it; because he did not declare what he knew of it. The Duke of *Bouillon* being also concerned in this Plot he was deprived of his Castle of

Sedan.

Sedan. In the same Year luckily for himself the Cardinal died: For although he had so well laid a Foundation for the Aggrandisement of the French Monarchy the King was grown quite weary of him. On the 14th of May in the next Year *Lewis* died also: And was succeeded by his Son *Lewis* then but five Years of age.

During the Minority of *Lewis XIV.* surnamed the Great his Mother had the Name of Regent; but Cardinal *Mazarine* managed every Thing. For the sake of reconciling the Nobility to his Administration he was forced to be very liberal; which as it necessarily exhausted the Finances put him under a Necessity of imposing new Taxes. The People were hereat much dissatisfied: But he contrived so as to preserve Peace pretty well at home for some Time; and at the same Time carried on the War with Success.

In the Year 1643 the Duke of *Enguien* obtained a compleat Victory over the Spaniards near *Rocroy*. *Thionville* was afterwards taken by him; as was *Graveline* by *Gaston* Uncle to the King. In the following Campaign the Duke revenged the Loss of the Year before near *Dutlingen*, by defeating the near *Friburgh*; and made himself Master of *Philipsburg*.

In the Year 1646 he again beat the Troops of *Bavaria* near *Nordlinguen* and took *Dunkirk*; but he was forced in the next Campaign to abandon the Siege of *Lerida*.

In the Year 1648 a Treaty was concluded with the Emperor at *Munster* in *Westphalia*; by which *Brisac*, *Philipsburg*, together with the *Sundgau* and great Part of *Alsace* were ceded to France.

After this a strong Cabal was formed for the excluding of *Mazarine* from the Administration; nor as was young would the Nobility pay any Regard to his Mother who was a foreign Princess. The Prince of

Conde being remarkably violent, the Cardinal endeavoured to win him over by proposing a Match for him: But when he saw that *Mazarine* was bent on maintaining his Superiority in the Ministry, which was the thing aimed at by the Prince himself, he rejected the Proposal with Disdain. Some Women of a restless Spirit were also

concerned in these Disturbances: The chief of whom were *Madame de Longueville* Sister to the Prince of *Conde*, *Madame de Chevreuse* and *Madame de Mombazm*. After many Libels had been scattered about *Paris* a new Party arose: Who called themselves *Slingers*; and threatened to knock down the Cardinal as *David* did *Goliath* by a Stone from a Sling. The Heads of this were the Duke of *Beaufort*, *Gondi* Archbishop of *Paris* afterwards known by the Name of Cardinal *Retz*; and the Parliament of *Paris* which pretended to have great Authority joined with them. The first Insurrection, which began because *Broussel* a Member of Parliament was imprisoned, being appeased by complying in Part with the Demands of the People the King who had left *Paris* returned: But upon the Insurrection in the Year 1649 he retired again from *Paris*, and the Cardinal was formally condemned by the Parliament. This Party encreasing greatly *Turenne* who commanded in *Germany* declared for it. All Differences were a second Time accommodated at *St. Germain*; yet the Intrigues against the Cardinal were continued at the Instigation of the Prince of *Conde* who had brought the *Slingers* into his Interest. As the Prince was however only for humbling the Cardinal and nothing but his Ruin would serve the *Slingers*, the latter worked up a Difference betwixt them; and by exciting the Prince against the *Slingers* found Means in the End to reconcile himself to these. The Cardinal laid hold of this Opportunity to confine the Prince and his Brother the Prince of *Conti*, and the Duke *De Longueville* their Brother-in-law: Yet Fuel was only hereby added to Fire; for all the People murmured at it and the City of *Bordeaux* took up Arms. The *Spaniards* made use of this Conjunction to take from *France* *Piombino* and *Porto Longone* in *Italy*; and the Archduke *Leopold* made such Progress on the Side of *Flanders* as to alarm the City of *Paris* itself. The Cardinal did indeed defeat *Turenne* who was gone over to the *Spaniards* near *Rethel*; yet the Hatred against him encreased; and the Liberty of the Princes was loudly cried out for by the *Slingers*, the Parliament and the Duke of *Orleans*. Finding it must be so the Cardinal in the Year 1561 released

leased the Princes; and to avoid the fury of the Populace retired to the Elector of *Cologne's* Court. Being hereupon banished the Kingdom for ever by an Order of Parliament, the Prince of *Conde* took greater Liberty to insult the Government; and having entered into Engagements with *Spain* set up his Standard at *Bordeaux*. As the *Spaniards* had thereby an Opportunity of recovering *Barcelona* and the whole Province of *Catalonia* the Cardinal was re-called by the Queen: And having united the Troops he could raise to the royal Army he had the better in two Engagements with the Prince of *Conde*. The Aversion however of the Parliament and Slingers to him still continuing he declared publicly, that he would for the sake of the Publick Quiet retire from Court and leave the Kingdom; hoping hereby to throw all the Blame of continuing the Disturbances on the Prince of *Conde*. This answered his Purpose; for the People began now to believe that he meant nothing but the Interest of the Kingdom; and on the contrary that the Prince aimed wholly at his own Aggrandisement. Reflecting also that *Dunkirk* and *Graveline* had been lost during this Contest the Prince lost their Favour entirely: Which being perceived he retired with his Troops into the *Netherlands*, and the Cardinal, who in the Year 1653 returned to Court, had till his Death the sole Management of all Affairs of Consequence. Soon after the Town of *Paris* sided with him; the Faction of the Slingers was ruined; the Duke of *Orleans* retired from Court; Cardinal *Retz* was taken into Custody and *Bordeaux* submitted to the King.

Hostilities being in the next Year commenced against *Spain* the *French* took *Montmedi* and raised the Siege of *Arras*; but they were repulsed with great Loss from *Valenciennes* and *Cambray*. In the Year 1658 an Alliance was concluded with *Cromwell*; and *Dunkirk* was besieged by a *French* Army under Marshal *Turenne* in Conjunction with the *English*. Don *John* of *Austria* and the Prince of *Conde* who endeavoured to relieve it were forced to retire with great Loss, and the Place being taken and delivered to the *English*, it was bought of them by the King for four Millions. *Graveline* was likewise retaken.

Treaty of
PYRENEES,
1659.

This War was at length ended by the Treaty of *Pyrenees* concluded in the Year 1659 by the Cardinal and *Don Lewis Haro* Prime Minister of *Spain*. The Conditions were, that *France* should keep the *Rouffillon* and most of the Towns conquered in *Flanders*; that *Maria Theresa* Infanta of *Spain* should be married to the King; and that the Prince of *Conde* should be received into Favour: But this last Article was not with-

Death of MA-
ZARINE,
1660.

out great Difficulty consented to. In the next Year the Cardinal died; and it is said that he amongst other Things advised the King a little before his Death to exert his own Authority and not trust entirely to any Favourite.

Mismanage-
ments in the
Revenue en-
quired into.

Lewis being in the first Place determined to bring his Finances into good Order arrested the Superintendant *Fouquet*; and by inquiring into the Conduct of those who had been concerned in managing the Revenue, he found Means to squeeze enough from such as had enriched themselves at the Publick Expence to fill his Coffers. In the Year 1661 a Treaty was concluded with the Duke of *Lorrain*: By which he exchanged *Lorrain* for some Dominions in *France*; and his Family was on Failure of the Princes of the Blood to succeed to the *French* Crown. The Duke repented afterwards and would have annulled the Treaty; but the King would not consent thereto, and obliged him to give up *Marsal* as a Security for his adhering to it.

Dispute be-
twixt the
SPANISH and
FRENCH Am-
bassadors,
1661.

Upon a Dispute for Precedence betwixt the *French* and *Spanish* Ambassadors in the Year 1661 at *London*, when Count *Nils Brabe* Ambassador from *Sweden* made his publick Entry, the Coach of the *French* Ambassador was forcibly pushed back. It is likely this would have rekindled the War if the King of *Spain* had not given his most Christian Majesty Satisfaction, by agreeing that his Ministers in foreign Courts should never appear on publick Occasions if the Ministers of *France* were present: Which has been since understood by the *French* to imply that a *Spanish* Minister is always to give Place to a *French* one of the same Character.

Quarrel with
the POPE.

About the same Time Monsieur *Crequi* Ambassador at *Rome* was insulted by the Pope's *Corfican* Guards; which

which so enraged the King that he seized *Avignon*: But by the Interposition of the Grand Duke of *Tuscany* the Difference was composed at *Pisa*, and a magnificent Embassage was sent by the Pope to make the King Satisfaction at *Paris*. Not long after the *French*, who had possessed themselves of *Gigeri* on the Coast of *Africa*, were driven from thence by the *Moors* with great Loss.

In the Year 1664 some *French* Troops were sent to ^{The Emperor} the Assistance of the Emperor against the *Turks*; and ^{succoured by} had a considerable Share in the signal Victory gained over ^{FRANCE,} the Infidels near *St. Godart*: But notwithstanding this ^{1664.} Advantage the Emperor apprehensive of an Attack from *France* in the *Low Countries* clapped up a Peace with the *Turks*. The *French* Forces sent into *Candia* in Concert with the *Venetians* by beginning the Attack too hastily were defeated; and the Duke of *Beaufort* who commanded them fell in the Action.

In the Year 1665 *Lewis* found Means to stir up War ^{The NE-} betwixt *England* and *Holland*: Which besides that he ^{THRLANDS} hoped hereby to ruin the naval Force of both Nations ^{attacked.} enabled him the more easily to accomplish his Designs on the *Netherlands*. In the next Year he entered *Flanders* with a powerful Army and took *Lisle*, *Tournay*, *Charleroy*, *Douay*, *Courtray*, *Oudenarde* and many other Places; which as he pretended belonged to him in the Right of his Wife by a Custom in *Flanders* called the *Right of* * *Devolution*, notwithstanding she had before her Marriage renounced all Claim to the *Spanish* Succession. Having afterwards conquered the *Franche Comte*, it was restored the Fortifications in all the strong Places being first demolished by the Treaty of *Aix la Chapelle* in the ^{Treaty of AIX} Year 1668: But all that he had taken in *Flanders* was ^{LA CHA-} ceded to him. ^{PELLE, 1668.}

This Progress of the *French* gave Rise to the *Triple* ^{TRIPLE AL-} Alliance betwixt *Sweden*, *England* and *Holland*, for ^{LIANCE,} the Preservation of the *Spanish Netherlands*: But *Lewis* contrived to detach *England* from this Alliance; nay further she joined with *France* against *Holland*. *France* had been in Amity with *Holland* ever since

* By this Custom the real Estate passes to the Children of the first Marriage.

the Union of the seven Provinces; but the separate Peace made by the *Dutch* at *Munster*, and their Opposition in the Year 1667 to his Conquests in *Flanders*, had determined *Louis* to break with them. It was thought by some Persons that the *English* Court, which could not forget the Affair at *Chatham* and was by no Means satisfied with the Treaty of *Breda*, meant no more by entering into the *Triple Alliance* than to bring in the *Dutch*, and consequently to expose them the more to the Resentment of *France*.

War in Con-
cert with
ENGLAND
against HOL-
LAND, 1672.

However this was, in the Year 1672 War was declared by *England* and *France* against *Holland*; and in a short Time the whole Provinces of *Urecht*, *Guelderland*, and *Overyssel* together with great Part of *Holland* were over-run. The Bishop of *Munster* however one of their Allies failed in his Attempt upon *Groningen*; and he lost *Coeverden* which he had before taken. At Sea the *Dutch* behaved bravely, and had the better in four Engagements: Which was by the *English* imputed to the Want of their being properly supported by the Fleet of *France*. The Suspicion that *France* intended to play the *Maritime Powers* off against each other and ruin the naval Strength of both, together with the great Progress of the *French*, had such an Effect on the *English* Parliament that the King was obliged to make a separate Peace with *Holland*.

ENGLAND
makes a sepa-
rate Peace.

1673.

In the beginning of this War the Emperor and the Elector of *Brandenburg* endeavoured to make a Diversion on the Side of *Germany*; but it served only to ruin some Provinces in the Empire, and gave *Turenne* a Handle for ravaging the Circle of *Westphalia*. In the Year 1673 the Elector of *Brandenburg* concluded a Treaty with *France* at *Vossem*; but being in Consequence of it put into Possession of the strong Places in his Dutchy of *Cleves* he afterwards payed no Regard to it. In the next Campaign *Maestricht* was taken by the *French*; who during the Siege gave great Proofs of Valour as well as Skill in carrying it on. In *Franconia* however the *Imperialists* gained some Advantage over *Turenne*; nor could he prevent their joining the *Spanish* and *Dutch* Troops on the lower *Rhine*. This was followed with the taking of *Bonn* and *Nardin*; and the *French* were forced to abandon

1674.

don all their Conquests in the United Provinces except *Grave* and *Maastricht*.

War being at the same Time declared by the Empire *The EMPIRE* and *Spain*, it was looked upon as a thing certain that *and SPAIN*, the Power of *France* would soon be curbed; but it fell *declare against* out otherways. The *Imperialists* did indeed take *Philips- FRANCE*. *burg* and defeat Marshal *Cregui* near *Triers*: Yet the *Germans* were on the other Side worsted near *Sintshiem*, and meeting with the same ill Fortune in *Alsace* they were glad to repass the *Rhine*.

Turenne in the Year 1675 passed the *Rhine* and attack- *Death of* ed the *Germans*; but this illustrious General being killed *TURENNE*, by a random Shot his Troops after a warm Engage- 1675. ment retreated into *Alsace*. The *French* afterwards made themselves Masters of the *Franche Comte*, and of *Limburg*, *Conde*, *Valenciennes*, *Cambrai*, *Ipres*, *St. Omers*, *Aire* and many other Places in *Flanders*. *Messina* having voluntarily received a *French* Garrison a *Dutch* Fleet was sent upon the Coast of *Sicily*: Which got nothing but Blows and their famous Admiral *Ruyter* was slain. The *French* however soon abandoned *Messina*. In the mean Time the Prince of *Orange* re-took *Grave*: But he was defeated at the Battle of *Senef* and sustained great Loss at the Siege of *Maastricht*.

By the Treaty of *Nimeguen* in the Year 1678 all that *Treaty of NI-* belonged to *Holland* was restored; but the *Franche Comte* *MEGUEN*, and all the fine Towns in the *Netherlands* which had 1678. been taken from *Spain* were ceded to *France*. As to what concerned *Germany* the Treaties of *Westphalia* and *Copenhagen* were renewed: Saving that *France* exchanged *Philipsburg* for *Friburg*.

The Repose of *Europe* was soon again disturbed by *Hostilities re-* *Lewis*: Who, pretending that they belonged to that Part *commenced in* of *Alsace* which had been ceded to him by the Treaty of *ALSACE*. *Westphalia*, seized ten free Imperial Towns and several Lordships dependent on the Landgraviate of *Alsace*. In the Year 1681 he made himself Master of *Casal*, and the 1681. important Town of *Straßburg* was treacherously delivered up to his Troops.

In the Year 1682 a Treaty of Commerce was con- *Treaty with* cluded with the King of *Morocco*: Which being observed *MOROCCO*, T 4. but 1682.

but a short Time, the Insults of the *Algerine Corsairs* on the Ships of *France* were sufficiently chastised by *du Quesne* the *French* Admiral, who having bombarded *Algiers* obliged the Inhabitants to sue for Peace. The same Admiral had the Year before brought *Tripoli* to Terms; and *Lewis XIV.* might now be justly said to be in the Meridian of his Glory.

War with

SPAIN, 1683.

In the Year 1683 *Spain* being no longer able to bear the Encroachments which *France* was continually making rekindled the War. The *French* took *Dixmunde*, *Courtray* and *Luxemburg*; but they were repulsed with great Loss from *Gironne*. Being soon sensible that nothing could be got by this War, into which they had entered alone, the *Spaniards* proposed a Truce for twenty Years: Which was signed at *Paris* in *October* 1684.

Bombardment
of GENOA,
1684.

As the *Genoese* had shown great Partiality to the *Spaniards*, a Fleet was sent in the Year 1684 under the *Marquis de Segneilai* to propose an Alliance with this Republick; which being refused he bombarded *Genoa* and laid many fine Palaces in Ashes. Attempting to make a Descent the *Genoese* defended themselves so bravely, that after the Loss of great Numbers amongst whom were the Chevalier *Leri* and other Officers of Distinction he was forced to retire: But it being impossible for this Republick to support itself against so great a Power the Pope interposed and an Accommodation was brought about. The principal Condition was, that the *Doge* with four of the chief Senators should go and ask *Lewis's* Pardon at *Paris*: Which was complied with.

Ambassadors
from SIAM
arrive at PA-
RIE, 1685.

In the next Year Ambassadors arrived at *Paris* from *Siam*, with Compliments from their King to *Lewis* and Orders to conclude an Alliance betwixt the two Nations. The Occasion of this Embassy, which made such a Noise in the World and with which *France* was so much puffed up, was as follows. The Missionaries sent into the *East-Indies* to preach the Gospel having wrote Word that the People were well disposed, but that although the Harvest was ready the Labourers were too few, some Ecclesiastics of great Merit in *France* set out with recommendatory Letters
from

from the Pope and other Catholick Powers. Being well received by the *Sieur Constance* Prime Minister to the King of *Siam*, they soon built a Church and erected many Schools in the Capital. *Siam* by this Means became the Center of all the Missionaries in that Part of the World, and Accounts were constantly sent to *France* of their Proceedings; from whence they were in Return supplied with Money and Priests for carrying the Design on. This was the Situation of Things when the King of *Siam*, fearing the *Dutch East-India* Company should attempt something against his as they had done against the Dominions of other Princes his Neighbours, determined to send Ambassadors to *Lewis*: Who was represented to him by the Missionaries as the greatest Prince in *Europe*. A Vessel being for this Purpose fitted out, on board of which the Ambassadors with rich Presents for the *French* King embarked, it was lost between *Madagascar* and *Mascareigne*. The *French* surmised that the *Dutch* sunk this Ship on Purpose to prevent an Alliance from taking Effect; which they apprehended would be prejudicial to their Commerce. However this was, the King of *Siam* upon hearing the News immediately sent two Persons to enquire into it, with Orders if the Ambassadors were not saved to proceed to *Paris* in their Stead. These two Persons being arrived at *Paris* the Chevalier *de Clairmont* set out by Order of *Lewis* for *Siam* in the *October* following; and with him went six *Jesuits* Mathematicians bound for *China*: Who have since given us a much better Account of that Country than any before extant. The Work of Conversion went on successfully in *Siam*; and the Commerce there which began to flourish must have been very advantageous to *France*, if their Affairs had not been thrown into great Confusion by a Persecution at home.

While the *French* were busy in planting Christianity in the East the King at the Solicitation of the Clergy endeavoured to ruin the Protestant Religion at home; and notwithstanding the Remonstrances of the Duke of *Montausier* and others the Edict of *Nantz* published by his

Edict of
NANTZ re-
voked.

his Grandfather *Henry the Great* was revoked. The Exercise of the Reformed Religion being hereupon prohibited; the Churches of the Protestants being demolished and their Ministers being banished; most of them fled into Protestant Countries: By which means *France* was deprived of many industrious Subjects. As all who staid were supposed to embrace the Catholick Religion, such as were found in the Exercise of the other were treated with great Rigour. Others who would not declare themselves Catholicks had Dragoons quartered upon them and were most cruelly used; all which the Catholicks pretended to be authorized by that Passage of Scripture *Compel them to come in.*

Difference

with the Pope.

This Zeal of *Lewis* was quite pleasing to the See of *Rome*; yet *Innocent XI.* would not grant him the Liberty of presenting to Bishopricks in the Countries acquired by the Treaty of *Nimeguen*. This Pope moreover, who was of a very positive Temper, took it into his Head to deny the Privilege of free Quarters to the Foreign Ambassadors at *Rome*; and all the Foreign Ministers except the Marquis de *Lavardin* Envoy from *France* consented to this Innovation. His Remonstrances to *Innocent* were so far from having any Effect, that his Chapel was put under an Interdict and he was forced to leave *Rome* without having an Audience; which so enraged *Lewis* that he seized *Avignon*, and would not restore it till this obstinate Pope was dead.

War with the
ALLIES,
1688.

In the Year 1688 the Emperor was again attacked by *France*. The *French* Historians say there had been for some Time good Reason for this; but that *France* would not attack the Emperor till he had pretty well got rid of the *Turks* lest the common Interest of Christianity should have suffered. However this War was in *September* declared; and the Trenches being opened by the Dauphin before *Philipsburg* it was taken in twenty Days. The *Dutch* having about this Time furnished the Prince of *Orange* with Troops for his Expedition to *England* *France* declared War against them. This Prince being crowned King of *Eng-*
land

land he prevailed on the Parliament to enter into the War against *Lewis*, who endeavoured the Restoration of *James II.* and soon after almost all *Europe* was allied against *France*. The Beginning of this War was unfortunate to the *Germans*, the Towns of *Keyserlautern*, *Spire*, *Worms*, *Heidelberg*, *Franckendale*, *Manheim*, *Mentz* and *Hailbron* being taken, and the Circles of *Suabia*, the *Upper-Rhine* and *Franconia* being laid under Contribution: But in the next Year *Mentz* and some other Places were retaken.

1689.

In the Year 1690 the Army of the Allies under Prince *Waldeck* was defeated by Marshal *Luxemburg* near *Fleurus*, with the Loss of 6000 Men killed, 7000 taken and fifty Pieces of Cannon; and eight Days after this Victory the *Dutch Fleet* was beat upon the *English Coast* by the *French Fleet* commanded by Count *Tourville*, because the *English Admiral Torrington* would not fight. *Lewis*, suspecting that the Duke of *Savoy* was going over to the *Emperor*, insisted on having *Verrue* and the Citadel of *Turin* put into his Hands as a Security for his Neutrality: Which being refused the *French General Catinat* entered *Piedmont*; and having defeated the Duke's Army near *Staffarde* took *Susa* and some other Places, while *St. Ruth* on the other Side made himself Master of all *Savoy* except *Montmelian*. In the next Campaign the King put himself at the Head of his Troops and took *Mons*. In *Italy* *Catinat* took *Nice* and *Villa Franca*; but the *French* were afterwards worsted in an Engagement with Prince *Eugene* near *Coni*, and they lost *Carmagnole*. This Campaign was finished with the Surrender of the Citadel of *Montmelian* to *Catinat*.

1690.

Battle of FLEURUS.

Battle of STAFFARDE.

1691.

In June 1692 *Namure* surrendered to the *French King* after having held out a Month; and a Victory was gained by Marshal *Luxemburg* over the Allies commanded by the King of *England* at *Steenkirk*. These Advantages were however in some Measure paid for by the Battle of *La Hogue*: In which the *French Fleet* under Admiral *Tourville* was worsted and seventeen Ships were lost. Besides this the Duke of

Siege of NAMURE.

1692.

Battle of LA HOGUE.

Savoy,

- Savoy* who had penetrated into *Dauphiny* took *Guilestre*, *Ambrun* and *Gap*; but his retiring into *Savoy* towards the End of *September* made some think that a Reconciliation betwixt him and *France* was upon the *Tapis*.
1693. In the Beginning of the following Year *Furnes* surrendered to the *French Army* in *Flanders*: Whilst that in *Germany* under *Marshal de Lorge* took *Heidelberg* and *Chateau*. *Huy* was carried on the third Day after opening the Trenches by *Luxemburg*; and he obtained another Victory over the Allies near *Nervinde*, who were under the joint Command of the King of *England* and the Elector of *Bavaria*. In this Battle the Allies lost 12,000 Men, Seventy-six Pieces of Cannon, Twenty-two Pair of Colours and Seventy-seven Standards. *Roses* in *Catalonia* and *Charleroy* in *Flanders* were also taken after an obstinate Defence. In the same Campaign *Tourville* fell in with the *English Smyrna Fleet* between *Cadiz* and *Lagos*; and besides four Men of War their Convoy took, burnt or sunk eighty Merchant Ships. The whole Loss was computed at upwards of thirty Millions. The Duke of *Savoy* being before Fort St. *Brigitte* was surprised with the News of *Catinat's* having entered the Plain of *Marsaille*. He immediately marched towards him; and a Battle ensued. The Action was sharp and the Victory a good while doubtful; but the *Savoyards* were at last routed with the Loss of 9000 Men killed and 2000 taken Prisoners. The Duke of *Schomberg* was amongst the slain.
1694. In the following Year *Diepe* was bombarded and reduced to Ashes by the allied Fleet; but its Attempts to do the same at *Havre de Grace* and some other Places did not succeed. The Duke of *Noailles*, who commanded in *Catalonia*, gained a compleat Victory upon the Banks of the *Tor* over the *Spaniards*: Of whom 7000 were killed and 2000 taken Prisoners; and it was followed with the taking of *Palamos* and *Gironne*.
- Battle of the TOR. As that able General *Luxemburg* was now dead the next Campaign did by no Means answer the Expectations of the *French Court*. *Namur* surrendered to the Allies, and *Casal* in *Montferrat* was taken. These Advantages
- 1695.

Advantages of the Allies were however paid for by the Loss of *Dixmunde* and *Deinse*: Of both which the Garrisons were made Prisoners of War. *Brussels* likewise suffered greatly by a Bombardment from the Duke of *Villeroy*: But the Affairs of the Allies were more disconcerted by the separate Peace which the Duke of *Savoy* made with *France* in 1696. By this *Pignerol* with *SAVOY*, after demolishing the Works was to be restored; and 1696.
a Marriage was concluded betwixt the Duke's eldest Daughter and the Duke of *Burgundy* presumptive Heir to the *French* Crown. Having hereupon joined his Troops to those of *France* *Valentia* was invested; but a Neutrality being agreed upon for *Italy* Hostilities on that Side ceased.

In *February* 1697 the Plenipotentiaries from the Powers at War assembled at *Ryswick*: Yet the Operations of the Campaign being carried on *Ath* in *Hainault* and *Barcelona* in *Catalonia* were taken by the *French*. A Treaty being concluded in *September* all in *Catalonia* and *Flanders* was restored to *Spain*. By this the Emperor regained *Brisac*, *Philipsburg*, *Friburg* and *Fort Kehl*; and *Dinant*, *Trarback*, *Bitsch*, *Homburg*, *Kirn* and *Mont Royal* were after destroying the Fortifications also restored to him. The Duke of *Lorraine* was put into Possession of his whole Dutchy except *Sarlouis* and *Longui*; which together with all *Alsace* were ceded to *France*. Treaty of
RYSWICK,
1697.

The Surprize which the Moderation shewn by the Court of *Versailles* towards *Spain* in this Treaty had occasioned soon vanished when the Reasons for it were known. *Charles II.* of *Spain*, who had no Children, being very infirm and not determined upon a Successor, it was of great Consequence to *France* that he did not die at Enmity with the House of *Bourbon*. To prevent a Contest between the Emperor and the Dauphin, who both avowed their Claim to his Dominions, it was proposed that the Electoral Prince of *Bavaria* by the Arch-Duchess *Mary* Daughter of the Emperor should succeed to them. As the House of *Austria* was thereby excluded *France* seemed satisfied with this Expedient; and since it had a Tendency to preserve the Balance of Power A Proposal
for raising the
ELECTORAL
Prince of BA-
VARIA to the
SPANISH
Throne.

Power the other Powers of *Europe* fell in with it; and as the Emperor was the only one who opposed it it would probably if the Death of that young Prince had not happened have been carried into Execution.

*Partition
Treaty.*

After his Death *England* and *Holland* to prevent the Recommencement of War upon the Account of the *Spanish* Succession entered in Concert with *France* into another Treaty; whereby it was agreed, that the Dauphin should have *Naples* and *Sicily*, the State *Del Presidii*, that Part of *Spain* which lay beyond the *Pyrenees* and *Lorrain*; that the Duke of *Lorrain* should have *Milan*; and that the rest of the *Spanish* Monarchy should go to the Archduke *Charles*. This disposition was afterwards agreed to by the Court of *Lisbon*: But in the mean Time the King of *Spain* by the Advice of Pope *Innocent XII.* appointed *Philip* Duke of *Anjou* second Son to the Dauphin his Successor.

*The Duke of
ANJOU is ap-
pointed Succes-
sor to the SPA-
NISH Monar-
chy.*

According to the ordinary Course of Succession it should have been the Dauphin himself: This was however broke into by *Charles* left the *Spanish* Monarchy should be annexed to and so become a Province of *France*. *Philip* having in pursuance of *Charles* the Second's Will which was confirmed by a Codicil taken Possession of the *Spanish* Dominions, he was after some Deliberation acknowledged by *England*, *Holland* and *Portugal*; and, the Dukes of *Savoy*, *Tuscany* and *Mantua* declared for him. Pope *Clement XI.* out of his great Zeal for the new King prevailed upon the Circles of *Suabia* and *Francia* to enter into a Confederacy for preserving a Neutrality in the War which he foresaw impending; yet these Circles afterwards joined with the Emperor. The Electors of *Saxony*, *Brandenburg* and *Hanover* did the same: And the Electors of *Cologne* and *Bavaria* having declared for a Neutrality they were by the *Aulick* Council, whose Authority they however refused to acknowledge, put under the Ban of the *Empire*.

*War on Ac-
count of the
SPANISH Suc-
cession.*

Hostilities being commenced Prince *Eugene* cut to Pieces a Detachment of 1500 *French*. The Marquis of *Cambout*, and the Duke of *Cieuvreuse's* Son were among the Slain. Soon after the Duke of *Savoy*, whose second Daughter the Prince of *Carignan* had Orders to espouse in

in the Name of *Phllip*, took the Command as *Genera-
lissimo* of the *French* and *Spanish* Armies.

England and *Holland*, who were quite averse to the ENGLAND
Enjoyment of the two Crowns by the House of *Bourbon*, and HOL-
LAND declare
entered into an Alliance with the Emperor: And the first against
of these Courts was moreover provoked at the Conduct FRANCE.
of *Lewis*; who, notwithstanding he had by the Treaty
of *Ryswick* acknowledged the Prince of *Orange* as King
of *England*, upon the Death of *James II.* acknowledged
his Son the pretended Prince of *Wales* as King of *Eng-
land* by the Name of *James III.* It was indeed insisted
upon by him in circular Letters to all the Powers of *Eu-
rope*, that being determined to observe the Treaty of *Rys-
wick* he had no Intention of disturbing *William* in the
Enjoyment of the *English* Crown: But that having before
acknowledged the Son of *James II.* as Prince of *Wales*,
he was obliged to acknowledge him as King of *England*.
Upon the Death of *William* the Principality of *Orange*
was seized by the *French*; and all the Protestants were
driven out of it.

The *French* Troops, which the Elector of *Cologne* had 1702.
received under the Denomination of Troops of the Circle
of *Burgundy*, could not hinder the taking of *Kayserworth*,
Venlo, *Ruremonde*, *Liege*, *Stevensworth* and *Landau* in the
Year 1702 by the allied Army. These Losses were how- Battle of
ever made good by the Defeat of Prince *Lewis* of *Baden* FRIDLIN-
near Fridlinguen, for which Victory the Marquis of *Vil-
lars* who commanded the *French* Troops was made a GUEN.
Marshal of *France*; and by the Advantage gained over
Prince *Eugene* in the Action at *Luzara*.

In the Year 1703 *Bonn* and *Limburg* were taken by the 1703.
Allies: But their Army under the Baron *D'Obdam* was Battle of
worsted by Marshal *Boufflers* with the Loss of 4000 Men EKEREEN.
at *Ekereen*; and the Prince of *Hesse-Cassel* who attempt-
ed to relieve *Landau* was defeated by Count *Tallard* Battle of
near *Spire*. In this Action five thousand of the *Imperia-
lists* were killed and four thousand were taken Prisoners:
But the *French* lost the Marquis of *Pracontal*. *Landau*
soon after fell into *Tallard's* Hands, and *Brisac* was in
this Campaign taken by the Duke of *Burgundy*. The
Elector of *Bavaria* on his Side made himself Master of
Augf-

Augsburg: But the Attempt of the Duke of *Vendosme* to penetrate thro' the *Tyrolese* and join the *Bavarians* failed. His Presence was moreover wanted in *Italy* the Duke of *Savoy* being gone over to the Emperor. The *French* suspecting his Defection had disarmed the Troops of this Prince; but luckily for him Count *Stahrenberg* came by forced Marches through the *Mantuan* to his Assistance.

1704.

Battle of
HOCKSTET.

In the next Campaign the Elector of *Bavaria* being joined by a large Body of *French* Troops under Count *Tallard*, it was expected some considerable Blow would be struck on that Side. To prevent this some *English* and *Dutch* forces joined the Troops of the Emperor, and a Battle was fought near *Hockstet* upon the *Danube*. Marshal *Marcin*, who commanded on the left, broke the right Wing of the Confederate Army where Prince *Eugene* commanded several Times; but the left Wing commanded by the Duke of *Marlborough* having passed a Morass which was thought impassable, the right Wing of the *French* and *Bavarians* under Count *Tallard* was attacked in Flank and entirely routed. In this Action *France* suffered more than in any for some Centuries past. 12,000 Men were killed or drowned; and near that Number with Count *Tallard* and many general Officers were made Prisoners. Their Colours, Baggage and Artillery were all lost; and this important Victory was followed with the Reduction of *Landau*, *Triers* and *Traerback*.

Insurrection
in the CE-
VENNES.

Encouraged by this fatal Stroke to *France* the Protestants in the *Cevennes* took up Arms, in order to deliver themselves from the Hardships they underwent on the Account of Religion. Being joined by all who from the Fear of Dragooning had embraced the *Catholic* Religion, and by many whose desperate Circumstances rendered them fit for any thing, they in Revenge for the Sufferings of their Friends committed great Excesses. These Disorders were increased by the violent Measures of *Montrevelt*, who caused all he could catch to be put to Death; but by the milder Treatment of the Marquis of *Villars* they were in some Measure appeased. At length the Chief of the Insurgents, considering he must pay dear if taken for the Blood of the many Priests

Priests whose Throats his Party had cut, accepted the King's Pardon; and an End was quickly put to this Rebellion.

In the same Year the *French* overran *Savoy* and made themselves Masters of *Vercell* and *Iury*. In the Year ^{SAVOY} 1705 *Verrue* in *Piedmont* was taken by the *French*; and ^{overran.} the Duke of *Vendosme* gained a Victory over Prince *Eugene* at *Cassano*. Nothing remarkable happened in this ^{Battle of} Campaign on the Side of *Germany* or of *Flanders*. ^{CASSANO.}

The following Year was full of Events. The Duke ^{1706.} of *Berwick* took *Nice* after a Siege of twenty Days; and ^{VILLARS} Marshal *Villars* forced the Lines of the *Imperialists* near *Hagenau*. These good Beginnings encouraged the Court ^{forces the} of *Versailles* to attempt three Things of great Consequence this Campaign: Namely the Siege of *Turin*, a decisive Battle in *Flanders* and the Siege of *Barcelona*. ^{Lines of the} Success in the first would have made every Thing sure in *Italy*; a Victory in *Flanders* would have obliged the *Dutch* to have made Peace for their own Safety: And if *Barcelona* had been taken, *Charles* called by the *French* Archduke, by the Allies King of *Spain*, who must have been made a Prisoner, would it is likely for the sake of Liberty have renounced his Pretensions to *Spain*. The ^{IMPERI-} Siege of *Barcelona* was first undertaken; but ^{ALISTS.} Succours ^{BARCELONA.} being sent to this Place by Sea it was raised with Precipitation. In a Battle fought near *Ramilles* on the 23d ^{Battle of} of May the *French* and *Bavarians* commanded by the ^{RAMILIES.} Duke of *Bavaria* and Marshal *Villeroy* were defeated by the Duke of *Marlbrough* with the Loss of 20,000 Men. All their Baggage and Artillery fell into the Enemy's Hands; nor were they in a Condition to take the Field again in less than two Months. The Consequence of this Victory, besides the Reduction of all *Brabant* and good Part of *Flanders* properly so called, was the taking of *Antwerp*, *Malines*, *Ostend*, *Menin*, *Dendermonde* and *Ath* by the Allies. The Siege of *Turin* next engaged the ^{Siege of} Attention of *Europe*; before which the Trenches were ^{TURIN.} opened by the Duke of *Feillade* on the 2d of June. The Duke of *Orleans* appointed to succeed the Duke of *Vendosme*, to whom the Command in *Flanders* which had been taken from Marshal *Villeroy* was given, in Concert

with Marshal *Marcin* pushed the Siege; but the *German* General Count *Daun* defended the Place with great Bravery. Upon the unexpected coming up of Prince *Eugene* the *French* Army was attacked in its Trenches; and after a Resistance of two Hours, during which the Duke of *Orleans* was wounded and Marshal *Marcin* was killed, it retreated towards *Pignerol*. All *Piedmont* beyond this Place was hereby abandoned; and the *French* were forced in the next Campaign to evacuate *Italy* entirely. As these three Schemes failed, Success in either of which would have much mended the Affairs of *France*, Proposals for a Peace were made in *November* to *England* and *Holland* by the Elector of *Bavaria*; which being refused the utmost Efforts were made for carrying on the War in the following Year.

1707.
Battle of
ALMANZA.

In the Year 1707 a Victory was gained over Lord *Galway* in the Plains of *Almanza* by the Duke of *Berwick*; the Duke of *Orleans* made himself Master of *Valencia* and *Saragossa*; the *French* Admiral *Fourbin* fell in with the *English* Convoy bound to *Portugal* and took two Men of War and twenty Merchant Ships: And the Lines of *Stoloffen* being forced by Marshal *Villars* all the Artillery, Ammunition, Tents and Baggage of the *Germans* fell into the Hands of the *French*. The same *French* Admiral was again successful against the *English* Fleet in the *White Sea*; of which he burnt twenty-two Sail: But the Joy these Events gave to the People of *France*, for some Time before accustomed only to Disappointments, was in some Measure lessened by the Revolt of *Naples* which followed the Evacuation of *Italy*. The Attempt however of the Duke of *Savoy* upon *Toulon* was the Thing which in this Campaign principally commanded the Attention of *Europe*. This Prince in order to vindicate himself from the Reproach thrown upon him in *Germany* of not acting vigorously against *France*, and being animated by Prince *Eugene*, surprized the Passage of the *Var* with a Flying Camp of 2500 Men. The Governours of *Nismes* and *Baucaire*, who afterwards paid for their Treachery with their Lives, delivered up both these Places to the two Princes and they in five Days reached *Toulon*. The Attempt upon *Toulon* which

NAPLES
revolts.

Attempt upon
TOULON.

was favoured by the *English* fleet was begun on the 29th of July; but the Allies were in a few Days driven by Marshal *Tesse* from some Posts they had taken: And on hearing that the Duke of *Burgundy* was coming up with a Reinforcement all their heavy Baggage and Artillery together with their Sick and Wounded were put on board the *British* Fleet, and they decamped in the Night of the 21st of *August*. About twenty Houses were destroyed by some Bombs thrown into the Town by Admiral *Shovel*; and two Vessels in the Harbour were burnt. Thus ended this Project; which cost the Allies the Lives of the Princes of *Anhalt* and *Saxe-Gotha* and above 10,000 Men. Although Prince *Eugene* was with him still the *Germans* suspected the Heartiness of the Duke of *Savoy*; and that he delayed making the Assault upon *Toulon* on purpose to give Marshal *Tesse* Time to prevent it. The *French* afterwards became Masters of *Nice*; but *Susa* notwithstanding its being well supplied with Ammunition and Provision surrendered to the Allies.

Early in the following Year the King for the sake of 1708.
 busying the Troops of *Great-Britain* at home furnished *An Embarka-*
 the *Chevalier de St. George* with some Troops for making *tion in Favour*
 a Descent on *North-Britain*: Yet although he was at *of the CHE-*
 the same Time supplied with large Sums of Money from *VALIER DE*
Rome, where Prayers of forty Hours had been put up for *ST. GEORGE.*
 his Success, this Expedition came to nothing; and being re-
 turned into *France* he made the Campaign as a Volunteer
 under the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Berry*. At the Com-
 mencement of this Campaign Brigadier *de Faille*, who
 had been heretofore Grand Bailiff of *Ghent*, entered
 this Town with five Soldiers in Disguise, in an Even-
 ing. Having the next Morning at the opening of the
 Gate seized it he was seconded by some *French* Troops
 which lay in wait for this Purpose, and easily became
 Master of the Place. *Bruges* surrendered soon after to
 the *French*; but this favourable Scene was changed by
 the Battle of *Oudenarde*. In this which lasted from four
 in the Afternoon till nine the *French* did indeed keep the *Battle of*
 Field; but the Consequence which is much the best Rule *OUDE-*
 to judge by plainly shewed that the Allies had the Ad- *NARDE.*
 vantage. The Troops of *France* retired to *Ghent*; whilst

Prince *Eugene* who had joined the Duke of *Marlborough* just before the Battle and acted a great Part in it advanced towards *Lisle*.

Siege of
LISLE.

This Place, the Siege whereof is one of the most remarkable in History, was invested on the 12th of *August*; and the Trenches notwithstanding the utmost Endeavours of the besieged to prevent it were opened on the 22d. The Elector of *Bavaria* in order to make a Diversion attacked *Brussels*; but after repeated Assaults in which the Loss was pretty equal on both Sides he desisted. Many Motions were made by the Army under the Duke of *Burgundy* to fatigue the Allies; and the Access of Convoys was rendered so difficult that Prince *Eugene* advanced to meet one with a large Detachment. By this Precaution a Convoy was for want of having been attacked soon enough by General *De la Moite* after a bloody Action conducted to the Camp. On the 22d of *October* in the Evening Marshal *Beufflers* who it is allowed on all Hands had defended the Town with great Bravery beat the *Chamade*; and the Capitulation was signed next Day. The Castle which held out till the 8th of *December* being also taken, the Allies notwithstanding the Sharpness of the Weather retook *Ghent* towards the End of this Month.

FRANCE,
reduced to
great Distress.

Lisle which was thought impregnable being taken and a Famine prevailing at the same Time in the Heart of the Kingdom, the People of *France* could not be kept within any Bounds. In order to appease them *Lewis* used all his Efforts to bring about a Peace; and it was supposed that Counsellor *Pitkum* Minister at the *Hague* from the Duke of *Holstein-Gottorp* had disposed every Thing for a general Accommodation. The Marquis *de Torcy* and the President *Rouille* repaired to the *Hague*; and after several Conferences returned with Preliminaries signed by the Ministers of the Allies: But the Conditions of them, which were the absolute Renunciation of the *Spanish* Monarchy; the Restoration of *Strasbourg*, *Brisac* and *Landau* to the *Empire*; and the Demolition of all the Fortresses upon the *Rhine* from *Basil* to *Philippsbourg*; were such as the King could by no Means submit to. The Publication however of these had a good Effect: For

notwith-

notwithstanding the exhausted Condition of *France* no Person desired Peace on such hard Terms; and new Efforts were made for continuing the War.

Count *Mercy* having in the Year 1709 entered *Alsace* 1709. with a Body of *Imperialists* he was entirely defeated by IMPERIA- Count *du Bourg*. Of the *Germans* 1800 were left on the LISTS Field, 900 were drowned, and 2500 were made Prison- defeated in ers; and besides their Colours and Artillery all Count ALSACE. *Mercy's* Papers fell into the Hands of the *French*. On the 7th of *July* the *Allies* sat down before *Tournay*. The Town surrendered at the End of this Month; and the Citadel in the beginning of *September*. The Duke of *Marlborough* and Prince *Eugene* having next undertaken the Siege of *Mons*, the Marshals *Boufflers* and *Villars* determined to hazard a Battle. In this which was fought near *Mal- Battle of* plaquet, and a very bloody one it was, Victory for some MALPLA- Time doubtful at length inclined to the *Allies*; it cost QUET. them however very dear. As the *French* Army were not able to attempt again the Relief of *Mons* it surrendered on the 21st of *October*.

In *January* 1710 Conferences were again opened 1710. at *Gertrudenburg*, and these were continued until *July*. Conferences at The Marshal *D'Uxelles* and the Abbe *de Polignac* offered GERTRU- on the Part of *France* to acknowledge *Charles* as King DENBURG. of *Spain* and to give no Assistance to *Philip*; to restore *Landau* and *Straßburg*; and to demolish the Forts built on the *Rhine*; But as the *Allies* would abate nothing of their Demands at the Conferences at the *Hague* the *French* Plenipotentiaries returned home. In this Campaign the *French* were surprized in their Lines; and *Duay*, DOUAY, *Bethune*, *Aire* and *St. Venant* submitted to the allied Army. and other A Descent was also made by some *British* Troops in *Pro-Places taken*. *vence*; but after a smart Attack from the Duke of *Noailles* they were glad to reimbarc with some Loss.

Upon the Death of the Emperor *Joseph* in *April* 1711 1711. his Brother the Archduke was raised to the Imperial Dig- Death of the nity. As this Prince was besides in Possession of *Hungary* Emperor and *Bohemia* and of all the hereditary Dominions of the JOSEPH. House of *Austria*, it was looked upon by some of the *Allies* as dangerous to the Liberty of *Europe*, for the Preservation of which the War had been so long continued,

that he should have also the whole *Spanish* Monarchy. *England* particularly where the *Tory* Party had now the Ascendant grew cool to his Interest; and the more so in pure Opposition to the *Whigs* who were for continuing the War. After taking *Bouchain* the allied Army did nothing in this Campaign; Prince *Eugene* being called from *Flanders* to guard against the Attempts of the Elector of *Bavaria*, who as well as the Elector of *Cologne* had refused to acknowledge *Charles VI.* as Emperor. *Lewis* saw with Pleasure this Disposition of the new *British* Ministry: Who were determined if a general Peace could not be had to make a separate one. In the Month of *April* this Year the Dauphin died.

Death of the
DAUPHIN.

1712.

Two other
DAUPHINS
die.

In the beginning of the next Year *Lewis* had the Misfortune to lose the new Dauphin the Duke of *Burgundy*; whose promising Virtues had endeared him to the whole Nation. To add to this Misfortune the Duke of *Bretany* eldest Son of the Duke of *Burgundy* survived him but a Month; and there were but small hopes of the Life of his other Son the Duke of *Anjou*. The Inactivity of the *British* Troops commanded in this Campaign by the Duke of *Ormond* entirely changed the Face of Affairs in *Flanders*. *Landrecy* being invested by the *Prussian* General the Prince of *Anhalt Dessau* the Siege was covered by Prince *Eugene*; and Lord *Albermarle* with eighteen Battalions and some Squadrons had the Care of the Convoys from *Marciennes* and the other Magazines on the *Scarpe*. Marshal *Villars* having caused a Body of Troops to advance within Sight of this Lord's Intrenchments at *Dennain*, Prince *Eugene* for the sake of enabling him to keep this Post reinforced him with six Battalions. The Intrenchments were however forced and a Convoy was taken. A great Number were in this Action killed or drowned in the *Scheldt*, and Lord *Albermarle* with many others were made Prisoners. *Marciennes* surrendered afterwards to the *French*; and they made themselves Master of divers Magazines at *St. Amand*, *Anchin* and *Hafnon*. Prince *Eugene* was also forced to give over the Siege of *Quesnoi*; nor could he prevent *Douay* from falling into the Hands of the Enemy.

Battle of
DENNAIN.

Matters being soon after accommodated with *Great-Britain* the *Dutch* unable to bear alone the Expence of the

the War came also into Terms, and a Treaty was signed ^{1713.} at *Utrecht* in the Year 1713. By this it was agreed, ^{Treaty of U.} that the Princes of *France* should renounce all Pretensions ^{TRECHT,} to the *Spanish* Crown; that his Catholic Majesty should do the same to the *French* Crown; that the *Spanish Netherlands* as left to *Charles II.* by the Treaty of *Ryswick* should be left in the Hands of the *Spaniards* till Things were settled with the Emperor and Empire; with the Reserve however of the Upper Quarter of *Guelderland* for the King of *Prussia*, and as much of *Limburg* as the Revenue thereof was worth 30,000 Crowns, which was to be erected into a Principality for the Princess of *Ursins*. It was also stipulated, that the Duke of *Bavaria* should receive the Revenues of the Dutchy of *Luxemburg* and of the Counties of *Namure* and *Charleroy*, until he should be put into the full Possession of his own Dominions. *Lisle*, *Bethune*, *Aire* and *St. Venant* were to be restored to *France*; and a Treaty of Commerce very advantageous to *Holland* was agreed upon.

The King of *Prussia* who had some Matters to settle ^{Treaty with} in which the Emperor and Empire had no Concern, ^{PRUSSIA.} made Peace at the same Time. Being acknowledged as King of *Prussia* and Sovereign of *Neufchatel* he gave up to *France* the Principality of *Orange* in the *Franche Compte*; and took upon himself to satisfy the Claims of the House of *Nassau* on this Principality. As to what related to *Savoy* and *Portugal* an Account has been and shall be elsewhere given.

The Emperor and Empire still held out and protested ^{The War is} against every Thing which was concluded to their Disad- ^{continued with} vantage: But although the Terms offered by *France* were ^{the EMPIRE.} refused no great Preparation was made for continuing the War with Advantage. In this Campaign Marshal *Villars* took *Worms*, *Spire*, *Kayserlautern*, *Wolfstein*, *Kirn* and *Landau*; and having afterwards passed the *Rhine* forced the Lines of the *Germans* at *Fribourg*; laid the Circle of *Suabia* and Dutchy of *Werttemberg* under Contributions; and made himself Master of *Fribourg*. Notwithstanding all this Success, as *France* was much exhausted and the Heir to the Crown quite young, *Lewis* was very desirous of seeing before his Death a general Peace.

Peace. The Generals Prince *Eugene* and *Villars* held a Conference at *Radstadt*; but as the Emperor expected the same Terms as when victorious; and *France* on the contrary insisted upon the Fortifications of *Brisac* and *Fribourg* being demolished; upon keeping *Landau*; and that the two Electors should be re-established and indemnified for what they had suffered during the War; it was impossible any Thing could be agreed upon.

Treaties of
RADSTADT
and BADEN,
1714.

At another Conference held in *March* 1714 at the same Place a provisional Treaty was agreed upon by these two Generals: Whereby every Thing in Dispute betwixt *France* and the Empire was left to be decided in a Congress to be immediately held at *Baden*. The Plenipotentiaries repaired thither; and it was agreed, that the new Treaty should be founded on those of *Westphalia*, *Nimeguen* and *Ryswick*; that all taken from the Empire in this War should be restored; that the Duke of *Hanover* should be acknowledged as an Elector; that the two Electors should be re-established in their Dominions; that his Electoral Highness of *Cologne* should in Case of War receive an Imperial Garrison into his Town of *Bonn*; that the Emperor should have the *Spanish Netherlands*, but with the Reserve of *Namure*, *Charleroi*, *Nieuport*, *Menin*, *Tournay*, *Dismunde*, *Ipres* and some other Places as a Barrier for the *Dutch*; that every thing in *Italy* should remain in *Statu quo*; that no Consequence should follow from the Titles made use of by his Imperial Majesty on this Occasion; and that no Protest should be received from any Power against this Treaty.

Natural Sons
of LEWIS de-
clared Princes
of the Blood.

The Death of the Duke of *Berry* together with the Renunciation of *Philip* his Brother, after the Loss of so many Princes of the Blood in a short Time, put *Lewis* upon a Project in Favour of the two Sons he had by *Made-moiselle de Montespan*. Not satisfied with legitimating these he declared them Princes of the Blood and capable of succeeding; and took Care to have this Edict registered with all the Formalites necessary for passing it into a Law.

Disputes be-
twixt the Je-
suits and JAN-
SENISTS.

About this Time the Differences, which had for a long Time subsisted betwixt the Divines, concerning Grace and Free will came to such a Heighth as to throw the King-

Kingdom into great Disorders. They began thus. A Doctor of *Louvain* afterwards Bishop of *Ipres* having as he believed given in a Book he published the true Sense of *St. Austin* as to these Matters, it was wrote against by a Jesuit; and the Pope being appealed to five Propositions in the Bishop's Book were condemned. His Followers called from *Jansenius* his Name *Jansenists*, who took upon them his Defence, were divided into two Parties. Some agreed with his Holiness that the Propositions condemned were heterodox: But that they were not fairly deducible from the Book. Others went so far as to say, that if they had been contained in it there was nothing in them heterodox. The former insisted, that although the Pope was an infallible Judge of the Orthodoxy of an Opinion he might be mistaken as to the Matter of Fact whether an Opinion was contained in a Book or not. It being on the other Hand strenuously maintained by the Jesuits that he was an equally good Judge in both Cases, Pope *Clement XI.* for the Sake of compromising the Matter waved the Right of judging as to the Fact: But as worldly Interest and Passion had a great Share in the Dispute this would not do. The *Jansenists* decryed the Chicanery of the Jesuits and exposed their wicked Practices in Casuistry. On the contrary they were reproached by the Jesuits with the Name of *Molinists*, and with being governed by Principles of Ambition and Covetousness only. The Cardinal *Noailles* at one Time so zealous against the *Jansenists* as to ruin the Abby of *Port Royal* came at last over to their Opinion. The Breach occasioned by this Dispute was further widened by an artful Book wrote by Father *Quesnel* of the Oratory, called moral Reflections on the New Testament. The Bishop of *Chalons* having seen this Book in the Manuscript recommended it to his Clergy; many other Bishops did the same; and it had the Approbation of Cardinal *Noailles*. In every new Edition of this Book it grew more and more severe; and its Author, who had voluntarily accompanied Mr. *Arnaud* a noted *Jansenist* in his Exile, went after his Death into *Holland*. The reading of it being at last forbid by three Bishops the Cardinal, who was

was also Bishop of *Paris*, complained to the King. The latter not being able to reconcile the Parties referred the Matter to the Pope; by whom the Book was condemned as containing a Hundred and One heretical Propositions. From this Sentence of the Pope, called from its Beginning with the Word *unigenitus* the *Constitution Unigenitus*, many of the Clergy and some Parliaments appealed to a general Council: But the most forward of the Appellants were banished and the King seemed determined to have it universally received. A Stop was however put to these violent Proceedings against the *Jansenists* by the Death of *Lewis*, who died on the 1st of *September* 1715 in the 73d Year of his Reign.

LEWIS XV.

1715.

Duke of OR-

LEANS ap-

pointed Regent.

His prudent

Conduct.

Lewis XV. being a Minor the Duke of *Orleans* was appointed by his Grandfather's Will Regent, and some others were associated with him: But the Diversity of Opinion which ensued soon gave him an Opportunity of assuming the whole Power which of Right belonged to him. He took great Pains to reconcile the *Jesuits* and *Jansenists*: And not being able to do this he wisely resolved that one Party should not persecute the other. All in Prison for refusing to submit to the *Constitutional Unigenitus* were set at Liberty; he recalled such as were banished on the Account thereof; and he restored their Right of Election to the *Sorbonne*. Enquiring next into the Abuses of the Revenue, he by making the Farmers thereof refund what they had unjustly taken from the Publick, and by abolishing all unnecessary Offices, brought great Sums into the Treasury. A Publick Bank was established under the Direction of *Law* an *Englishman* who was a very good Accomptant; the Trade of the *India*, *African* and *American* Companies before almost ruined began to revive; and a rich Settlement being projected on the River *Mississippi* in *North America* many Families were carried thither: But this came to nothing. In the Year 1716 a Sort of Paper Money was issued to the Amount of the whole National Debt; and after the Publick Creditors had been forced to receive this in lieu of their Actions, the Value thereof was to the great Loss of many of these much reduced: And such of them as had converted their Actions into real Estates were obliged to pay heavy Fines.

The

The Princes of the Blood, who had connived at the *Settlement of* Settlement of *Lewis XIV.* in favour of his illegitimate *LEWIS XIV.* Sons, now took great Pains to annul it; and after Pro-*as to his natu-*ceedings had been carried on with much Warmth for *ral Sons an-*some Time they were by an Edict in the Year 1717 *null'd, 1717.* deprived of the Honor of being Princes of the Blood.

A strict Union was entered into by the Regent with *Intrigues of* the *British* Court; and in Consequence of it the Triple *Cardinal AL-*and Quadruple Alliances were formed. The Cardinal *BERONI.* *Alberoni* chief Manager in *Spain*, having a Mind to recover what this Kingdom had lost, laid a Scheme for removing the Duke of *Orleans* who he was satisfied would oppose such an Attempt from the Regency and for getting it into the Hands of the King his Master. A general Insurrection was for this Purpose projected by Prince *Cellamare* the *Spanish* Ambassador; which being discovered in Time he was sent home guarded and War was declared against *Spain*. After taking *Fontarabia*, *St. Sebastians* and the whole Province of *Guipuscoa* from the *Spaniards* a Negociation was set on Foot; but the Encrease of Domestick Disorders prevented the conclusion of a Peace. Besides the Disputes amongst the Clergy, which grew every Day warmer, the People were so exasperated at *Law* the Contriver of the Paper Money now sunk to half its original Value, that had not the Regent interposed he must have fallen a Sacrifice to the Fury of the Populace.

The Tumults being in some Measure quelled by re-*A Match* storing the Seals to Mr. *Daguesseau* the late Chancellor, *betwixt* a Match was propos'd by the Regent who was intent on *LEWIS and* making Peace betwixt *Lewis XV.* and the Infanta of *the Infanta of* *Spain* scarce out of her leading Strings: Which being *SPAIN.* agreed to by the Court of *Madrid* the Infanta was sent into *France*. The Regent also married one of his own Daughters to the Prince of *Asturias*; and a Treaty of Marriage was concluded betwixt *Don Carlos* and another of them: But this was never consummated.

The King being in the Year 1722 crowned at *Rheims* *The King is* he was in the next Spring declared Major by Parlia-*declared Ma-*ment: Yet the Authority of the Regent continued; for *jor, 1723.* the Cardinal *du Bois* rais'd by his Interest to the Dignity

nity of Prime Minister was governed entirely by him. Upon the Death of this Prelate in the *August* following, the Duke of *Orleans* fearing his Successor would not be so subservient to him procured the Office of first Minister for himself; he however enjoyed it but a short Time, being carried off by an Apoplexy on the 2d of *December* in the same Year.

Congress of
CAMBRAY.

The Cardinal *du Bois* took Care to have *Cambrai*, of which he was Archbishop, appointed for the holding of a Congress to adjust the Matters in Dispute between several Powers: But *Paris* became the Center of Negotiations; and great Pains were taken by the Marshal *Tessé* and the Duke of *Richelieu*, Ambassadors from *France* at *Madrid* and *Vienna*, to remove the Difficulties which obstructed an Accommodation. In the Year 1724 the Dissatisfaction of the People shewed itself by the assassinating of several Persons, who had taken the Advantage of the Fondness at first shewn for the Paper Money to raise large Fortunes. The Nation being greatly alarmed in the Spring following on Account of the King's ill State of Health, it was easy for the Duke of *Bourbon*, sole Manager since the Duke of *Orleans*'s Death, to shew the Necessity of his having a Wife capable of bearing Children.

Infanta of
SPAIN sent
home.

The Infanta was hereupon sent home, and the King in the same Year married *Mary* Daughter of *Stanislaus* King of *Poland*; by whom he soon had Children. The King of *Spain* enraged at the sending back of his Daughter insisted, that some exemplary Punishment should be inflicted on the Duke of *Bourbon* to whom he imputed it; which being refused, he recalled his Ambassadors from *Cambrai* and made a separate Peace with the Emperor. Not long after the Duke of *Bourbon* rendered himself so odious to the People, and especially to the Clergy who pretending an Exemption refused to pay it, by laying on the Tax of the fiftieth Penny, that Insurrections being spirited up in many Places and Remonstrances being made against it by divers Parliaments he was disgraced.

Mr. DE

FLUERY is
made a Cardinal
and Prime
Minister.

Mr. *De Fleury* Preceptor to the King heretofore Bishop of *Frejus* being upon this raised to the Purple and Office of Prime Minister, he immediately suppressed the Edict for levying the fiftieth Penny; and thereby ingratiated himself vastly with the People.

The

The Treaty of *Vienna* concluded in the Year 1726 FRANCE accedes to the Treaty of HANOVER. betwixt *Spain* and the Empire was soon followed by a Counter Alliance at *Hanover*; into which the Cardinal whose Delight was Peace entered. 'The Suddenness of that Treaty with the large Sums to be furnished in Pursuance of it to the Empire greatly disgusted the *French* Court; and the maritime Powers looked with jealous Eyes upon the Advantages granted by *Spain* to the *Ostend* Company: Yet notwithstanding the great Preparation for War, as the Cardinal chose rather to detach if possible *Spain* from the Empire, Hostilities were not commenced. In the Mean Time the Differences betwixt *Great-Britain* and *Spain* grew wider, and coming at length to a Rupture *Gibraltar* was besieged: But the Unsuccessfulness of the Attempt against this Place paved the Way for an Accommodation, and Preliminaries were by the Interposition of the Cardinal signed at *Paris* in *May* 1727.

That the Cardinal might be able to assist at it without *Congress of Soissons* being too far distant from Court *Soissons* was the Place fixed upon for the holding of a Congress. The Conferences were opened, and after getting over some Difficulties as to the making Restitution by *Spain* to *Great-Britain* the Introduction of *Don Carlos* into *Italy* came upon the Carpet. *Spain* by Virtue of a secret Article in the Quadruple Alliance expected, that instead of 6000 *Swiss* Troops the same Number of *Spanish* should be introduced: But the Imperial Ministers would hear nothing of this. It was however hoped that the Emperor, who had consented to suppress the *Ostend* Company, would not oppose in this the general Inclination of the Powers of *Europe*: And if he did the principal View of *France*, which was to break the close Union betwixt the Courts of *Vienna* and *Madrid*, would be thereby answered.

At length *France*, *England* and *Holland* engaged by the Treaty of *Seville* in the Year 1729 for this Change of *SEVILLE*, Troops, and to assist his Catholick Majesty in Case of Need against the Emperor. The Birth of a Dauphin which happened in the same Year gave great Joy to the People of *France*: And from this Time the Cardinal avoided as much as possible without failing in his Engagements to *Spain* the coming to a Rupture with the Emperor

peror. *Great-Britain* having by the Treaty of *Vienna* in *March 1731* engaged to guaranty the *Pragmatic Sanction* she took great Pains to prevail upon *France* to do the same: But the Answer was that the King would not accede to any Treaty made without his Participation. After the Death of the Duke of *Parma* in *January 1732* the Emperor, who much against his Inclination had consented to his Introduction into *Italy*, found various Pretences for putting off the Investiture of *Don Carlos* to this Dutchy: And the Court of *Vienna* was equally slow in finishing the Negotiations which had been long carried on for ceding Part of *Montferrat* to the King of *Sardinia*; hoping by thus delaying to secure this Prince in her Interest.

War on Account of the Polish Election.

When *Augustus II.* King of *Poland* died *Lewis* determined to support the Election of *Stanislaus* his Father-in-law to the *Polish* Crown: Which he had before worn. The Opposition made to this by the Emperor in Concert with *Russia* gave Rise to War betwixt *France* and the Emperor; in which *Spain* and *Sardinia* both dissatisfied with the Conduct of the Court of *Vienna* joined: And as *Holland* contented herself with obtaining a Neutrality for the *Netherlands* *Great Britain* did not engage in it. *Fort Kehl* and *Philipsburg* were taken by the *French*; but the Scene of Action was principally in *Italy*. The King of *Sardinia* with the Assistance of the *French* Succours under Marshal *Villars* made himself Master of the *Milanese*: While the new Duke of *Parma* Generalissimo of the *Spaniards* was busied in subduing *Naples*. After endeavouring in vain to defend it the Imperialists quitted this Kingdom; and *Sicily* soon submitted to the Conqueror. The *Austrians* were moreover defeated in two bloody Actions: And *Mantua* the only Place which remained to them in *Italy* was incapable of holding out long.

The Marriage of the Arch-dutchess is deferred.

This ill Success determined the Emperor to defer the Marriage of his Daughter with the Duke of *Lorrain*; who had been brought up at his Court and was looked upon as his Heir: Nay some Politicians imagined that there was no Way so likely for him to get out of his Difficulties

facilities as to give this Princess to *Don Carlos* the new King of *Naples*.

Many Plans of Peace were offered: but one from *Preliminaries France* was accepted; and *Preliminaries* were signed of *VIENNA*, so suddenly and secretly at *Vienna* in *October 1735*, 1735. that her own Allies for whose Consent she engaged knew nothing of them. The Conditions were, That *Don Carlos* who had upon the Cession of his Father been proclaimed King of the two *Sicilies* should keep these Kingdoms, and in Lieu thereof give up the Dutchies of *Tuscany*, *Parma* and *Placentia* to the Emperor; that *Stanislaus* who was to wave all Pretensions to the *Polish* Crown should have the Dutchies of *Lorrain* and *Barr*; that *Mantua* and *Milan*, a Part of this last Dutchy being reserved for the King of *Sardinia*, should be restored to the Emperor; and that *France* should guaranty the *Pragmatic Sanction*. *Spain* was quite unwilling to give up three Dutchies which belonged to *Don Carlos*; and *Tuscany* one of them was not evacuated till the Beginning of the Year 1737. The eventual Succession to this Dutchy having been by a Diploma from the Emperor granted to the Duke of *Lorrain* he took Possession of it in *July* the same Year: His own Dutchy of *Lorrain* having been taken Possession of three Months before in the Name of *Stanislaus* and his Son in Law the most Christian King; to whom after his Death it was to descend and to be annexed to the Crown of *France*. The other Articles of these *Preliminaries* were after some Explanations in their Favour acceded to by the Kings of *Spain*, *Sardinia* and the two *Sicilies*; and a definitive Treaty was signed at *Vienna*.

For the Share the *French* had in the Business of *Cor-Two FRENCH* *sica* the Reader is referred to the Chapter of *Genoa*. *Squadrons sent* Having in vain endeavoured to prevent the Rupture into the *WEST* betwixt *Spain* and *Great-Britain* and her Mediation *INDIES*. having been refused *France* declared for a Neutrality; but the formidable Armament sent by the latter into *America* determined the Court of *Versailles* to send two Squadrons thither; both of which upon the Failure of the

the Expedition against *Carthagera* returned without doing any thing.

FRANCE joins
against the
Archduchess.

Upon the Death of the Emperor *Charles VI.* his Daughter the Archduchess was attacked immediately by the King of *Prussia* in *Silesia*; and Claims on the *Austrian* Succession were put in by *Bavaria* and *Spain*. *France* also declared against her; and to guard against the Designs of *Great-Britain*, by whom vigorous Resolutions were come to in Support of the *Pragmatic Sanction*, Batteries were erected for the Security of *Dunkirk*.

The Inha-
bitants and
Strength of
FRANCE.

France abounds with Towns and Villages and is so well peopled, that in the Time of *Charles IX.* above 20,000,000 of Persons paid the Poll-Tax. According to the Computation of Cardinal *Richelieu* this Nation can raise 600,000 Foot and 150,000 Horse: But it has been often remarked, that although the *French* attack with great Vigour their Courage sinks if they meet with an obstinate Resistance. They are better at making than keeping Conquests: For their insolent Treatment of the vanquished makes their Dominion intolerable. The Nobility very numerous in this Kingdom are in the general Soldiers; nor do they stick at the greatest Dangers which lie in the Way to glory. The *French* Infantry being formerly of no Repute many *Swiss* and *Scotch* Troops were taken into the Pay of *France*: They are however at this Time very good and remarkably so at the Siege of a Place. Their Love and Veneration for their King is such, that while he supports his Authority they do with the greatest Willingness hazard their Lives and Fortunes in his Service. The Inhabitants are of a gay and sprightly Temper; of an easy, free and affable Behaviour; and they have a good Taste for Dress. Whenever other Nations of a more serious Turn endeavour to imitate the *French* the Affectation plainly discovers itself; and justly exposes them to Ridicule. The *French* are very capable of Learning and expert in all Trades and Manufactures; but they distinguish themselves in such of the last as require more Ingenuity than Labour. On the other Hand the *French* are blamed for their Levity, Inconstancy and Fondness for Intrigue; and the Freedom in Behaviour they so much value themselves upon frequently

quently, and especially among the younger Sort, degenerates into Licentiousness and the utmost Dissoluteness of Manners.

The Situation of this Kingdom is quite convenient *Its Situation.* for corresponding with all Parts of *Europe* and interposing in the Quarrels thereof. Besides its many fine Ports upon the Ocean and *Mediterranean*, *France* abounds with navigable Rivers. Two of these the *Garonne* and *Aude* were in the Reign of *Lewis XIV.* united by a spacious Canal; by which a Communication very beneficial to Trade is opened betwixt the Ocean and the *Mediterranean*. As *France* is almost round one Part thereof can easily succour another; and the *Alps* and *Pyrenees* are a Sort of natural Ramparts to it on the Side of *Italy* and *Spain*. It does indeed lye exposed on the Sides of *Germany* and the *Netherlands*: For which Reason the *French* have been long endeavouring to secure their Frontier by getting the strong Places on both these Sides into their Hands. The late Acquisition of *Lorraine* is a great Addition to the Strength of *France* on the Side of *Germany*.

France situate in a pleasant Climate is in the general *Its Commodities.* very fertile, being productive of all the Necessaries of Life and of many Delicacies. The principal Commodities exported from thence are Wine, Brandy, Salt, Silk, Woolen and Linen Goods, Hemp, Paper, Glass, Saffron, Almonds, Capers, Olives and Soap. As Vines will not grow either in *Picardy* or *Normandy* the common People there drink Cyder or Perry. Scarce any Metals are found in *France*, nor are there any Gold or Silver Mines; but the want of these is made amends for by the Industry of the *French* and the Folly of other Nations: For their Manufactures, and especially since the Establishment of that for Silk by *Henry IV.* have brought a vast Quantity of Money into *France*. It has been computed that *France* receives annually from Foreigners for Silks 40,000,000 Livres; for Wines 15,000,000; for Salt 10,000,000; and for Brandy 5,000,000. Mr. *Forcy* an *Englishman* who wrote about the Year 1660 says, that the yearly Exports from *France* to *England* exceed in Value those from *England* to *France* above a Million Sterling: And it is notorious that great Part of

the Treasure from the *Spanish West Indies* comes into *France*. Maritime Affairs are so neglected in *France*, that notwithstanding the Seamen are all registred, and obliged to serve in the King's Ships when called upon, no Fleet can be fitted out equal either to the Fleet of *Great Britain* or that of *Holland*.

*The FRENCH
Settlements.*

The *French* have made some Settlements in the *East-Indies*; but no considerable Profit has been as yet drawn from Trading thereto. In *America* the Country on one Side of the River *Mississipi*, Part of the Island of *St. Domingo*, the Islands of *Martinico*, *Guadaloup*, *St. Lucia* and some other of the *Carribbee Islands* belong to the *French*; and the Right of fishing on the Banks of *Newfoundland* is very advantageous to them.

*The Govern-
ment of
FRANCE.*

Formerly some Dukes and Counts held large Parts of *France* as Fiefs of the Crown; over which they maintained an Authority independent of the King: But all these petty Sovereignities are now annexed to the Crown; and the Person honoured at this Time with one of these Titles has sometimes not an Inch of Land in the Place from which his Title is taken. The Assembly of the States which is composed of the Nobility, Clergy and Commons had once a great share in the Government, and the Power of the King was much limited; but by the Management of those artful Ministers *Richelieu* and *Mazarine* the *French* Monarchy became an absolute one. The Protestants heretofore formidable to the Kings of *France* have since the Loss of *Rockelle* been incapable of giving them any Disturbance. Many of these still live in the trading Towns; nor are they whilst they behave quietly molested. The Parliament of *Paris* used to insist upon it as a particular Privilege, that nothing of Consequence to the State could be done without its Consent; but since the Reign of *Lewis XIV.* it has been only a Court of Justice, and dares not to give Advice unless it is asked by the King. The *Gallican Church* always claimed some Exemptions from the Pope's Authority: And in Consequence thereof the King has the Nomination of all Bishops and Abbots. Upon the whole this Kingdom is by the Introduction of arbitrary Power much
more

more powerful, provided the Reins of Government be in the Hands of a * wise and good King.

There was a Time when *France* was conquered and brought into a very low Condition by the *English*: But as their Infantry is now better, the *French* must by Reason of their great Superiority in Number be an over-match upon the Continent for *Great-Britain*. The Power of *France* at Sea is not indeed to be compared with that of *Great-Britain*. It is not however in the Power of *Great-Britain* to subdue *France*; for if the Navy of *France* was quite ruined, as *Great-Britain* is not in the Possession of any strong Place in *France* a Descent there would be dangerous and answer no Purpose. On the other Hand if *Great-Britain* should once lose her Superiority at Sea, she would as the *French* can spare a great many Troops be in Danger of becoming a Province to *France*: And having no inland Places of Strength her Fate might perhaps depend upon the Issue of a single Battle. Besides in the Case of a War with *Great-Britain* it would be in the Power of *France* to stir up Insurrections there in favour of the *Stuart* Family; and *France* has moreover many Ports whence its Privateers could conveniently annoy the *British* Trade.

In former Times *Spain* was an Over-match for *France*; but besides that the Art of War is much neglected in the former and as much improved in the latter, the two Courts are since the Accession of a Prince of the House of *Bourbon* to the *Spanish* Throne so united by the Tyes of Interest as well as Blood that nothing is to be feared from *Spain*. The *Netherlands* also from whence the *Spaniards* used to attack *France* are now in other Hands.

France has nothing to fear from *Naples*: It being vastly for the Interest of the King thereof, who is also Master of *Sicily*, to be upon good Terms with the Court of *Versailles*, for the Sake of having a powerful Ally in the case of a War the *Turks* or the Maritime Powers. The present reigning Prince is moreover descended from the House of *Bourbon*.

* But as a King may want one or both of these Qualities, it had been undoubtedly for the Benefit of the People to have preserved their Share in the Government.

ITALY.

The other States of *Italy* have neither Power nor Inclination to break with *France*; and are afraid of nothing so much as that the *French* should pass the *Alps* and disturb the Peace of *Italy*.

HOLLAND.

War with *France* can do the *Dutch* no good. Their Fleet is indeed superior: But their Trade on which they principally depend must suffer greatly from the *French* Privateers. The Land Forces of *Holland*, which are for the most Part Mercenaries and inferior in Number, are not able to cope with those of *France*: So that it is not likely that *Holland* will without some very cogent Reason for so doing come to a Rupture with this Nation.

SWISSER-
LAND.

France is in no Danger from the *Swiss Cantons*: For besides that the large Sums received from thence for the Hire of Troops make it their Interest to be in Amity with her, they are incapable of making a stand against the Power of *France*.

GERMANY.

Germany is certainly an Overmatch by itself for the Power of *France*: Since it could, if its Princes were well united, bring into the Field more numerous Armies and of full as good Troops as the *French*. The Constitution however of the Empire being such that the Interests of its various Members are often different and sometimes contrary, it is almost impossible that they should either unite or long agree in carrying on a War with *France* vigorously. It may be added, that although the Empire is upon the whole successful some of its Members must be ruined by a *French* War. On the contrary if *France* should get the better in such War divers of them would unavoidably be Losers by it.

Danger to

FRANCE from
a Confederacy.

The only Way then for *France* to suffer much is from a Confederacy; and it is not likely that any very powerful one should be formed against her. For Instance *Portugal* will scarce ever join with *Spain* against her; *Sweden* with *Denmark*; or *Poland* with the House of *Austria*: Such is the natural Jealousy betwixt these Powers. If the *Italian* Princes have not a Mind to be ruined themselves they will never join either with the Emperor or *Spain* in conquering *France*. The Advantages in Trade which one of the maritime Powers would reap while the other is engaged in a War with *France* are so great,
that

that if they consult their separate Interests one of them will for the most Part be very averse to the joining heartily with the other against her. It is not probable, that the Protestant Princes of *Germany* should ever desire to see the House of *Austria* add *France* to its Dominions; since such an over-grown Power in that House would render both their Religion and Possessions precarious. The Enmity betwixt the *Swiss* and the House of *Austria* is such as to make it very unlikely for them to join with this House against *France*. It has however been seen, that contrary to these Conjectures all the Powers of *Europe* except *Sweden* have united against the House of *Bourbon*. The *French* will not it may be reasonably supposed, except they are in the most imminent Danger, desire the Assistance of the *Turks*; and if they did the latter would be cautious of meddling: Having been often convinced, that the Christian Princes will clap up a Peace amongst themselves without regarding their Interest. Upon the whole *France* appears to be a very powerful Kingdom, and some small States which lie convenient for it are in Danger of being subdued: But if the *French* Nation should aim at universal Monarchy the Attempt would be vain; and by extending its Conquests too far it would become weak at home,

C H A P. VI.
OF THE
UNITED PROVINCES.

*Ancient State
of the NE-
THERLANDS.*

THE Country commonly called the *Netherlands* was formerly a Part of *Gaul* or *Germany*, as it happened to be situate on the one or the other Side of the *Rhine*: Which was then the Boundary of these vast Countries. That Part thereof which belonged to *Gaul* being subdued by *Julius Cæsar* it became with the rest of *Gaul* a *Roman Province*. The Inhabitants of *Holland* and *Zealand* submitted afterwards to the *Romans*; but it was rather as Allies than Subjects.

*The FRANKS
over-ran this
Country, 500.*

About the Year of CHRIST 500 the *Franks*, who had established themselves in *Gaul*, made themselves Masters of this Country: But on the Division of the Empire by *Charlemain* the greatest Part thereof was annexed to *Germany*.

*It is divided
into 17 Pro-
vinces.*

The Governors of this Country, which was divided into seventeen Provinces namely the Dutchies of *Brabant*, *Limburg*, *Luxemburg* and *Guelderland*; the Earldoms of *Flanders*, *Artois*, *Hainault*, *Holland*, *Zealand*, *Namure* and *Zutphen*; the Lordships of *Friesland*, *Malines*, *Utrecht*, *Over-Iffel* and *Groninguen*, and the Marquisate of *Antwerp*; did in process of Time throw off their Dependence upon the Emperors; and became so many independent Sovereigns. Several of these were afterwards united by Marriage or otherways under the same Prince; and by Degrees they all fell under the Dominion of the House of *Burgundy*.

Being by the Marriage of *Maximillian I.* to *Mary* only Daughter of *Charles* the last Duke of *Burgundy* annexed

to

to the Dominions of the House of *Austria*, *Charles Grand*. These are an-
 son of this Emperor took great Pains to form all these Pro-^{nexed to the}
 vinces into one Kingdom; but as their Laws and Pri-^{Dominions of}
 vileges were for the most Part different, and every one^{the House of}
 was unwilling to admit of any Change in its own, this^{AUSTRIA.}
 was found to be impracticable. His Government over
 them was however undisturbed and prosperous; for
 being born at *Ghent* and educated amongst them he
 knew how to conform to the Humours of the *Netherland-*
ers, and they were in return very affectionate and faith-
 ful. After his Death they were rent into Pieces by a long
 and cruel civil War; of which as it gave Rise to a Re-
 publick since very powerful some Account ought to be
 given.

Instead of carrying it with Respect to and residing ^{Causes of the}
 sometimes amongst them as his Father had done, in ^{Civil War in}
 whose Time the *Netherlanders* were frequently employed^{the NETHER-}
 in Affairs of Consequence, *Philip* treated them with the^{LANDS.}
 utmost Contempt and lived altogether in *Spain*. The
 Alienation of Minds hereby occasioned was greatly en-
 creased by the Artifices of *William* Prince of *Orange*.
 Being of an ambitious and artful Disposition he wanted
 to have the Administration of Affairs committed to
Christiana Dutches of *Lorraine*; and hoped by marrying
 her Daughter to have the principal Management him-
 self. As his hopes were baulked by *Philip*, who con-
 ferred the Government upon *Margaret* of *Parma* a na-
 tural Daughter of *Charles*, the Prince of *Orange* secretly
 promoted the Discontent. The Counts *D'Egmont* and
Horn with others of the Nobility were likewise dis-
 gusted at the Partiality of *Philip* to *Spaniards*; and the
 Clergy disliked the erecting of new Bishopricks because
 he would have appropriated the Revenues of some Abbies
 to their Support: For besides that this was a Prejudice
 to the present Possessors of these, the Power of Monks
 who choose Abbots for their respective Monasteries was
 thereby lessened. All of a turbulent Spirit, and all who
 hoped to mend their desperate Fortune in a Time of
 civil Confusion, joined as they always will with the
 disaffected Party: But nothing encreased it so much
 as the Persecution of the *Protestants* set on Foot by

Philip. In his Father's Time the Exercise of any except the *Catholick* Religion was indeed forbid; and in order to deter others some were punished severely: But as *Mary* Sister of *Charles* then Governess of the *Netherlands* perceived that this only served to enrage and encrease their Number, which was before of different Denominations of *Protestants* very large, she in a great Measure suspended the Execution of the rigorous Edicts published against them.

*Establishment
of an ECCLE-
SIASTICAL
COURT.*

Since nothing less than an entire Extirpation of what he called *Heresy* would satisfy the blind, imprudent and intemperate Zeal of *Philip* it was resolved to enforce these; and a Tribunal of the same Kind as the Inquisition in *Spain* was established. By this Court, invented by *Satan* or by his never-failing Tools designing Churchmen, the Life, Reputation and Fortune of every Man, who refused to pay an implicit Obedience to what was imposed upon the Laity for the Commandment of God, was rendered insecure. From it there was no Appeal; nor could any Intercession even that of crowned Heads avail; for Priests notwithstanding the Tidings of the Gospel they profess are Peace on Earth and Goodwill towards Men, wherever Cruelty is necessary to the Gratification of their Pride, Resentment or Avarice, are always inexorable and will not stick at the shedding of Rivers of Blood. As the *Netherlanders* were naturally jealous of their Privileges, and from their great Commerce with Foreigners had been used to think and speak freely in religious Matters, they conceived the utmost Horror of this Court. To make it go down the better, for they detested the Name of Inquisition, it was called an Ecclesiastical Court; but as the Proceedings were to be in the same Manner and Priests were to be the Judges this Distinction, because these are known to be always the same when in Possession of an incontrollable Power, did not lessen the Aversion of the People to it. It has moreover been thought that the *Spaniards*, who foresaw a Storm gathering, instead of trying to dispel it intended to make a Handle thereof for oppressing and enslaving the Country, that it might afterwards serve as a Place of Arms for carrying on their Wars against
England.

England and other Nations. However this was it is certain the *Netherlanders* were secretly encouraged by some foreign Princes; and particularly by *Elizabeth* of *England* to whom the Power of *Spain* was grown formidable.

By the Disposition of *Philip*, who after settling the *Violent Pro-Regency* set out for *Spain* in the Year 1559, the *successions of* preme Power was to be in the Hands of the Regent and *Cardinal* Council of State. Of this the Prince of *Orange* with *GRANVILLE*, the Counts *D'Egmont* and *Horn* were appointed Mem- 1559-bers; but he had privately left Orders with the Governess *Margaret* to follow the Advice of *Cardinal Granville*. It being soon perceived that the Cardinal managed every thing divers Members of the Council were determined to oppose his Measures, and especially such of them as were concerted for the Persecution of the *Protestants*. As these Members were for Moderation and the Cardinal's Advice, which was followed, was for complying punctually with the King's Orders the People were greatly incensed against him. The Prince of *Orange* and some other Lords hereupon wrote to the King, that if he was not removed from the Council it would be impossible to keep the Populace quiet; and this Matter being pressed the King consented to it in the Year 1564. The Joy hereby occasioned was very short lived; for as the same Measures were pursued, it soon began to be said publickly that although the Cardinal's Body was removed his Spirit still influenced the Council. As the People now grew outrageous and would not suffer the King's Orders to be executed, the Count *D'Egmont* was sent by the Council to inform *Philip* how Things stood. He was received at *Madrid* with all Marks of Respect; but instead of gaining any Relaxation of the Edicts concerning religious Matters he was told that the Moderation of the Regent had only made Things worse; and Obedience to them was again enjoined upon more severe Penalties than before.

A Report being at the same Time spread that at an Interview betwixt *Philip* and *Charles* of *France* the entire Ruin of the *Protestants* was resolved upon, some of

Some of the Nobility enter into an Association.

of the Nobility entered into an Association, called the *Compromise*, for mutually defending each other in case they should be molested on the Account of Religion. This being signed by above 400 Persons of Quality, who all protested that they meant nothing but the Honour of God, the Glory of the King and the Good of their Country, they met at *Brussels* in the Year 1566, and petitioned the Regent to revoke the Proclamation concerning Religion. She gave them for Answer in very civil Terms that she should as soon as possible know the King's Pleasure: But it is said that Count *Barlement*, by whom she had been guided since the Dismission of the Cardinal, told her, *that they were only a parcel of Gueusen*, which word means Beggars, and that it was not worth her while to give herself any Trouble about them. From this insolent Expression the Word *Gueusen* became famous in the *Low-Countries*; and the Nobility of the Association took for their Arms a *Beggar's Pouch*. As the Deputies sent afterwards to *Madrid* were ill-treated, and *Philip* would consent to no Relaxation of the Edicts concerning Religion the Fury of the People encreased; and not content to resort publicly where the prohibited Religions were exercised they broke into and pulled down the Images in the Churches. By the Prudence however and Mildness of the Regent, only a few of the Ringleaders being put to Death, the Insurrection would have been soon quelled, had not the People been exasperated by a Report spread that a large Army was coming from *Spain*. The Council gave the King good Advice upon this Occasion, which was instead of sending an Army to come in Person; and it is thought if he had come and used the People gently Peace would have been quite restored: But the Duke *D'Alvas's* violent Counsel who proposed the entire Abolition of the Liberties of the *Netherlanders* was followed.

Duke D'Alva sent into the Low-Countries.
1568.

In the Year 1568 this Duke marched at the Head of a powerful Army into the *Low-Countries*. The Counts *D'Egmont* and *Horn* were immediately seized, under a Pretence that they had secretly spirited up the People to Disaffection;

Disaffection: And all who had signed either the *Compromise* or Petition were declared guilty of High Treason and answerable for what had happened. A Council consisting of twelve Persons, called from its cruel Proceedings the *bloody Council*, being instituted for trying the accused, from which there was no Appeal, the Prince of *Orange* with some other Lords who had fled upon the Approach of the *Spanish* Army were summoned to appear before it; and in Default thereof they were condemned and their Estates were confiscated. These Proceedings struck such Terror that the Inhabitants of the open Country retired in large Bodies; and in many Places particularly in *Antwerp* Citadels were built. In the mean Time a considerable Army was formed in *Germany* by the Prince of *Orange*: Part of which under the Command of *Lewis* his Brother having defeated the Duke *D'Arenberg* Governor of *Friseland*, the Duke *D'Alva*, after causing the Counts *D'Egmont* and *Horn* to be beheaded, marched in Person against the Prince of *Orange* who had made an Irruption to *Brabant*. The Prince *Prince of* being repulsed and his Forces being dispersed the Duke *ORANGE re-* caused a magnificent Statue to be erected in *Antwerp*; *pulsed.* and thinking to enslave the *Netherlanders* at their own Expence a Tax of the hundredth Penny on all real Estates, the twentieth on all Moveables and the Tenth on all Goods sold was imposed.

While he was in the Year 1571 squeezing these Taxes *BRILL taken* out of the People News came that some of the *Nether-* *by some NE-*
landers, who had since leaving their Country on Account *THERLAND.*
of the Persecution fitted out twenty-four Vessels and lived *ERS, 1571.*
by Piracy, had under the Conduct of Count *De la Mark*
made themselves Masters of *Brill*. Upon this, which
was owing to the Duke's Imprudence in not securing the
Coast, the People of all the Towns in *Holland* except *Am-*
sterdam and *Scornhoven* flew to Arms: And the Prince
of *Orange* being declared their Governor, they, that
it might be thought the Revolt was only against the
Duke *D'Alva*, took the same Oath to him as if he had
been appointed by their Sovereign. Those Vessels being
joined by many *English* and *French* Ships there was in
about four Months time at *Fushing* the Place of Ren-
dezvous

deztvous a Fleet of 150 Sail; which afterwards annoyed the *Spaniards* greatly. About the same Time many Places in *Guelderland*, *Friseland* and *Overyffel* were taken; and Prince *Lewis* of *Nassau* with the Assistance of some *French* Troops had made himself Master of *Mons*. The retaking of this last Place being resolved upon by the *Spaniards*, the Prince of *Orange* who with another Army collected in *Germany* had made great Progress in *Brabant* endeavoured to raise the Siege; but failing therein he retired into *Holland* and the Town capitulated. In order to frighten the other revolted Towns into Obedience *Malines* and *Zutphen* were plundered; *Naerden* was destroyed; and the Inhabitants of *Harlem* which held out nine Months were put to the Sword. The Affairs of *Spain* being however almost ruined by these Violences and by the monstrous Cruelties of the Duke *D'Alva*, who used to boast that he had in six Years Time caused 18,000 to die by the Hands of Executioners, he was recalled in the Year 1573.

LEWIS RE-
QUESENES
Governor,

1573.

Battle of
GRAVE.

1574.

His Successor *Lewis Requesenes* had the Misfortune in the Beginning of his Administration to be an Eye-Witness of the Ruin of a Fleet sent to the Relief of *Middleburg*: But the Loss of this Place, which surrendered soon after, was sufficiently made good by a Victory gained in the Year 1574 near *Grave* over some Reinforcements coming from *Germany*. After this Battle in which the Counts *Lewis* and *Henry* Brothers of the Prince of *Orange* both fell, the *Spanish* Soldiers who mutinied for Want of Pay lived by Plunder.

Siege of LEY-
DEN.

The next Thing undertaken being the Siege of *Leyden* the Inhabitants after holding out as long as Famine would permit them broke down the Wall of a Dyke: By which Means as the Wind proved favourable and it was at the Time of Spring-Tide the whole Country was laid under Water; and the *Spaniards* after sustaining a considerable Loss were forced to retire.

1575.

In the next Year the Emperor endeavoured to accommodate Matters; but the Conferences opened at *Breda* for this Purpose came to nothing. In the Year

1576

1576 *Zirickzee* in *Zealand* was after a Siege of nine Months taken by the *Spaniards*. As *Requesenes* died during this Siege the Council of State took the Direction of Affairs into their Hands, and they were confirmed therein by the King. Regency in the Council of State, 1576.

The Mutiny amongst the Soldiers who had committed great Outrages in *Antwerp* and other Places being continued, they were declared Enemies by the Council; and Leave was given for the Inhabitants to defend themselves. Negotiations being also entered into betwixt the Council and the Prince of *Orange* at *Ghent*, it was agreed that Hostilities should cease; that all the Edicts of the Duke *D'Alva* should be revoked; and that the Natives should unite in driving away the *Spaniards*. This Treaty was ratified by *Philip*; but the Event shewed that he had no Design to observe it.

His natural Brother *Don John* of *Austria* being appointed Governor the Prince of *Orange* warned the *Netherlanders* against trusting him; yet on his agreeing to send home the *Spanish* Soldiers he was received by a Plurality of Voices. This Mistake was soon seen; for under the Pretence of securing his own Person he seized the Citadel of *Namur*; which so enraged the People that they not only drove him from thence, but obliged the *German* Garrisons to evacuate all Places of Strength; and the Prince of *Orange* being invited to *Brussels* was made Grand Bailiff of *Brabant*. As this Aggrandisement drew upon him the Envy of other Lords, a considerable Party headed by the Duke *D'Arslot* agreed in calling *Matthias* Archduke of *Austria* to the Government of the *Netherlands*. To this which was done in the Year 1577 the Friends of the Prince of *Orange* consented: On Condition that he should be his Lieutenant; and that nothing of Consequence should be done without the Consent of the States. Don JOHN of AUSTRIA Governor. The Prince of ORANGE Bailiff of BRABANT.

While these Things were doing *Alexander* Duke of *Parma* had joined *Don John* with a large Body of Veterans; who having not long after defeated the Army of the States near *Gemblours*, he made himself Master of *Louvain*, *Phillipville*, *Limburg* and several other Places. In this Distress the States offered to put themselves under The Army of the States defeated at GEMBLOURS.

der the Protection of *Henry III. of France*; and on his Refusal the same Offer was made to the Duke of *Alençon* his Brother.

The States submit to the Duke of ALENÇON.

He accepted it; but found on his coming into the *Netherlands* the principal People so divided amongst themselves that nothing of Moment could be done. There happened moreover about this Time a Difference amongst the People on Account of the free Exercise of Religion granted to the Protestants; which so disgusted the Inhabitants of *Artois, Hainault* and *Walloon Flanders*, all zealous Catholics, that they formed themselves into a separate Party called the *Malecontents*. In the midst of these Disorders *Don John of Austria* died, and *Alexander Duke of Parma* to whom he left the Care of Things till the King's Pleasure could be known was appointed to succeed him.

ALEXANDER Duke of PARMA Gover-
nor.

As the *Malecontents* were soon after his being confirmed brought over to the King's Party, the Prince of *Orange* finding it almost impossible to unite Provinces in which different Religions prevailed began to think of providing for his own Security and that of the Protestant Religion. Having with a View to this prevailed on the States of the Provinces of *Holland, Zealand, Guelderland, Friseland* and *Utrecht* to meet at *Utrecht* in the Year 1579, they agreed to unite themselves into one Body for their mutual Defence and the Maintainance of the Protestant Religion; and that nothing which concerned Peace or War or the levying of Taxes should be resolved upon but by common Consent.

Foundation of the Republic of the UNITED PROVINCES, 1579.

This Union, into which the Provinces of *Overyssel* and *Groningen* afterwards entered, was the Foundation of the REPUBLIC OF THE UNITED PROVINCES OF THE NETHERLANDS. The Prospect however of this new State was then so dark, that a Medal was struck on which was a Ship without Sail or Rudder exposed to the Mercy of the Waves, and underneath this Inscription *Incertum quò Fata ferant*. As the *Spaniards* who had already taken *Tournay, Valenciennes, Mecklin* and other Places continued to gain Ground, the Prince of *Orange* fearing they might at some Time be able to revenge themselves on him and his Friends prevailed on

the rest of the *Netherlanders* to renounce all Allegiance to *Philip*; who had contrary to his Oath violated their Privileges.

The Sovereignty of the other Provinces being in the Year 1581 by the Prince's Advice conferred on the Duke of *Alençon*, he raised the Siege of *Cambray* and was in the next Year proclaimed Duke of *Brabant* and Earl of *Flanders*: But not being content with the Power vested in him by the States he resolved at all Events to make himself absolute. In order to this a Scheme was laid for surprizing *Antwerp* and many other Towns; which being discovered the *French* Soldiers who should have done it were driven out of divers Towns with great Loss; nor did their Design succeed except at *Dendermonde*, *Dunkirk* and *Dixmunde*. By this Attempt the *French* lost all Credit in the *Netherlands*; and the Duke chagrined at the Disappointment made the best of his Way into *France*. This meddling of the *French* in the Affairs of the *Netherlands* was moreover productive of another bad Consequence; for it gave Occasion to the Duke of *Parma* of recalling the foreign Troops, which pursuant to the Agreement with some Provinces had evacuated the *Netherlands*. In the Year 1583 this last made himself Master of *Dunkirk*, *Menin* and several other Places in *Flanders*; and in the next Campaign *Ypres* and *Bruges* fell into his Hands.

The Prince of *Orange* being in the same Year stabbed in his Palace at *Deft* by *Balthasar Gerard* his Son *Maurice* was chosen Stadtholder; but being only eighteen Years of Age the Count de *Hohenloe* was appointed his Lieutenant. The Duke of *Parma* taking Advantage of the Confusion occasioned by this Accident to besiege *Antwerp*, it was after holding out a twelve Month forced to surrender for Want of Provisions; and he soon made himself Master of *Dendermonde*, *Ghent*, *Brussels*, *Malines* and *Nimeguen*. As the *French* King was in no Condition having a civil War upon his Hands to accept the Sovereignty of the *United Provinces*, the People choosing to be subject to any Power rather than *Spain* offered it to *Elizabeth* of *England*. She likewise refused it: But she resolved to assist the *United Provinces* which were

were now on the Brink of Ruin. Having engaged to furnish and support a Body of Troops in the *Netherlands*, who together with the Forces of the States were to be commanded by an *English* General, the Towns of *Flushing*, *Brill* and *Zeeburg*, which were afterwards restored to the States on the Payment of 1,000,000 Crowns, were put into her Hands as a Security for the Expence she should be at.

Earl of LEI-
CESTER
commands in
HOLLAND,
1586.

The Earl of *Leicester*, whom the Queen sent in the Year 1586 to command in *Holland*, was trusted by the States with more Power than his Mistress desired; but as he did nothing of Consequence, and the Duke of *Parma* after taking *Grave* and *Venlo* drove him from before *Zutphen*, the States began to grow suspicious of his Abilities or Honesty. Their Suspicions encreased when they saw *Deventer* scandalously given up by *William Stanly* whom he had appointed Governor; and failing afterwards in his Attempt to relieve *Sluys* such a Coolness arose betwixt him and the States, that his Mistress ordered him to resign the Command and return home.

The Affairs of
HOLLAND
begin to mend.

The Affairs of the *United Provinces*, which we shall from this Time call *Holland*, began now to put on a better Face. To this the Reduction of *Brabant* and *Flanders* by *Philip* contributed a good deal; for as all who would not profess the Catholick Religion were forced to quit these Provinces within a certain Time Multitudes flocked into *Holland*; and the Trade of *Antwerp* was in a great Measure removed to *Amsterdam*. It moreover happened to *Philip* as it will always to a Man who has too many Irons in the Fire. Instead of following the Duke of *Parma's* wholesome Advice, which was to engage in nothing else till the *Hollanders* were subdued, he in the Year 1588 attempted to invade *England*; and in the next Year ordered the Duke to march into *France* and assist the *League*. By these Expeditions neither of which succeeded he wasted much Blood and Treasure; and the *Hollanders* had besides an opportunity to strengthen themselves.

In

In the Year 1590 Count *Maurice of Orange*, whom *Success of the States of Holland* had on the Resignation of *Leicester Count MAURICE of Orange* made Generalissimo, began to give Proof of his Abilities in the taking of *Breda* by a Stratagem. In the following Year he became Master of *Zutphen, Deventer, Hulst* and *Nimeguen*; and in the Year 1592 of *Steenwick* and *Loeverden*. The *Spaniards* had besides in the same Year the Misfortune to lose that brave General the Duke of *Parma*. In the Year 1593 *Gertrudenberg* was taken in Sight of the *Spanish Army*; and *Groningen* being taken in the ensuing Year the Republick had as it were a Barrier on the other Side of the *Rhine*. 1590. 1592. 1593.

Albert of Austria who in the Year 1596 succeeded the Duke of *Parma* retook *Hulst*; but being ill supplied by *AUSTRIA Philip* whose Coffers were drained, he instead of being able to undertake any Thing was in the next Year defeated with great Loss near *Turnholt*. *ALBERT of AUSTRIA Governor.*

Encouraged by this Success at home the *Hollanders* resolved to undertake the Voyage to the *East-Indies*, hoping thereby to make good the Loss they sustained from not being suffered to Trade in *Spain* or *Portugal*; and failing in their Attempt to go North about they went the usual Way by the Coast of *Africa*. Having after incredible Pains, and not without great Opposition from the *Portuguese*, established a Trade in the *East-Indies*, many monied Men formed themselves into Societies for the carrying of it on. All these were by a Charter from the States formed into one Body called the *East-India-Company*: Which by Degrees almost dispossessed the *Portuguese* of their Settlements; and has since by extending its Trade brought immense Riches into *Holland*. *Trade opened to the EAST-INDIES, 1596.*

In the Year 1598 *Maurice* became Master of *Rhineburg*, *Mews* and all the other Places which belonged to the *Spaniards* in *Overysse*. It being now plainly perceived that the *Hollanders* would never submit directly to the *Spanish Yoke*, *Philip* in the next Year made use of the following Artifice. He married his Daughter *Isabella Clara Eugenia* to *Albert Archduke of Austria*, and gave him the *Netherlands* and *Burgundy* for a Portion; on Condition that if he had no Issue by this Princess, to prevent

prevent which Medicines had been given her, these should revert to the Crown of *Spain*. This at first Sight seemed to be making the *Netherlands* independent; and it was hoped the *Hollanders* would have come into it, especially as they must now, a Treaty having been concluded betwixt the *French King* and *Philip* at *Verbins*, lose a powerful Ally: But the Bait did not take; for they continued stedfast to their Purpose, and would not consent to dissolve their *Republick*, although very advantageous Terms were offered them both by the Emperor and the Archduke his Son.

Battle of
NIEUPORT,
1600.

Maurice having in the Year 1600 entered *Flanders* with a Design to besiege *Nieuport*, *Albert* came up with him before he expected it and a Battle ensued. In this Action *Maurice* who had the Advantage gained great Glory; but as it had been a constant Maxim with him to avoid a general Engagement, and a Defeat at this Time might have proved fatal to the Republick, he did not think proper to follow the Enemy.

Siege of
OSTEND.

The Siege of *Ostend* being undertaken in the next Campaign, this Place was defended by the *Hollanders* with great Obstinacy until the Year 1604: At which Time *Ambrose Spinola* carried it by Storm. It is said that the *Hollanders* lost during this Siege 70,000 Men, and the *Spaniards* a much larger Number: Nor will this appear very improbable if it be considered that the Place could be supplied by Sea; that it held out more than three Years; and that it was not at last taken till there was no more Ground left for the Garrison to intrench themselves in. In the mean Time the *Spanish Fleet* commanded by *Frederick Spinola* was entirely defeated by that of the *United Provinces*; and *Sluys* in *Flanders* was taken by *Maurice*. In the Year 1605 *Lingen*, *Grol* and *Rhinburg* were taken from the *Hollanders*; and *Maurice* had the worst of it in an Engagement near *Antwerp*. The last Action of Importance in this War was the burning of the *Spanish Fleet* in the Bay of *Gibraltar* by *James Heemskerk*; who lost his Life in the Action.

Battle of
ANTWERP,
1605.

At

At length the *Spaniards* saw there was no Likeli-^{SPANIARDS}hood of reducing the *Dutch* to Obedience; and being ^{tired of the} apprehensive of an Attack from *Henry IV. of France,* ^{War.} they resolved to put an End at any Rate to a War which had greatly impoverished and weakened them. *Spinola* himself being sent to treat at the *Hague*, the *States* strenuously insisted upon the declaring of the *Hollanders* a free People. As the *Spaniards* could not brook the doing of this absolutely, they in order to get over the Difficulty consented to treat with the *Hollanders* as with a free People. This Manner of Expression was at first objected to; but at the Persuasion of *Janin* the *French* Minister, who said that the Word as neither lessened their Power nor increased that of *Spain*, and that however clearly their Independency was acknowledged by Words they ought always to be upon their Guard, a Truce for twelve ^{Truce for} Years was made in the Year 1609. By this both Par-^{twelve Years,}ties were to keep what they were in Possession of; 1609. and the *Hollanders* much against the Inclination of the *Spaniards* retained the Liberty of trading to the *East-Indies*. The *Hollanders* came the more readily into this Truce because they began to dread the Designs of *France* upon the *Netherlands*. They were moreover jealous, that the great Authority which the War had made it necessary to vest in *Maurice* might prove dangerous to their Liberties.

Not long after the *Dutch* had a Contest concerning ^{Quarrel about} the Dutchy of *Juliers*; which the Emperor wanted to ^{the Succession} annex to the Dominions of the House of *Austria.* ^{to JULIERS,} With the Assistance of some *French* Troops they drove the Archduke *Leopold* from the Capital, which he had upon the Death of the last Duke taken Possession of; but a Difference arising betwixt the Houses of *Brandenburg* and *Neuburg* about the Succession to this Dutchy, the latter called in the *Spanish* General *Spinola* to his Assistance. Upon his seizing *Wesel* the *Dutch* took Possession of *Rees* and *Emerick* for the Elector; and hence it was that the County of *Cleves* became afterwards involved in the Wars of the *Low-Countries*.

Disputes be-
twixt the AR-
MINIANS and
GOMARISTS.

In the mean Time the *Dutch* were rent in Pieces at home by the Disputes of the *Arminians* and *Remonstrants*; which were partly owing to a political Jealousy and partly to some hot-headed Divines. *William* Prince of *Orange* had before his Death taken a great deal of Pains to obtain the Sovereignty of the *United Provinces*; and it was feared he would have succeeded if his untimely Death had not prevented it. As his Son *Maurice* discovered the same Design the chief Men opposed it; and said their Labour was ill bestowed, if at last they had no other Advantage than to change a powerful Master for one less powerful. Amongst those who counteracted the ambitious Design of *Maurice*, no one distinguished himself more than the Pensionary *John Barnevelt*: And with a View to this he forwarded the Negotiations for a Truce with *Spain*, because it would diminish the Authority of the Captain-General. *Maurice* did all he could to prevent the Conclusion of this Truce; and could never forgive *Barnevelt's* Conduct. *James Arminius* Professor of Divinity in the University of *Leyden* did about this Time publish his Sentiments concerning Grace; in which he differed from the Opinions of the *Calvinists*. An Answer thereto was after his Death wrote by *Francis Gomarus*. The Disputes which arose upon this Subject being in the End carried to a great Height the Clergy sided with *Gomarus*; but the Heads of the Government fell in with the Notions of *Arminius*. The common People who as is their usual Custom followed the Example of the Clergy grew tumultuous in many Places. Upon this *Maurice* become by his Brother's Death Prince of *Orange*, who had declared for the *Gomarists*, deposed some Magistrates he did not like under the Pretence that they were of *Arminian* Principles. *Barnevelt* and *Hugo Grotius* being hereupon taken into Custody, the former was without shewing any Regard to his former Services, or to his being in the seventy-second Year of his Age, beheaded by an Order of the States, and the latter was condemned to perpetual Imprisonment; from whence he by the Help of his Wife who conveyed him away in a Chest made

JOHN BAR-
NEVELT be-
headed.

made his Escape. The Doctrines of *Arminius* were also condemned in the Synod of *Dort*: Yet many sensible Men in *Holland* still adhered to them; and all moderate Persons cried out against the Prince's Conduct, to whose Influence *Barnevelt's* Death was supposed to be principally owing.

This domestick Quarrel gave Way to the Danger *War with* which threatned the Republick from *Spain*: By whom *SPAIN, 1621.* upon the Expiration of the Truce in the Year 1621 Hostilities were commenced. *Spinola* being driven by Count *Mansfield* and the Duke of *Brunswick*, who after the Battle of *Fleury* came to the Assistance of the *Hollanders*, from before *Bergen-op-zoom* he in Revenge laid Siege to *Breda*. *Maurice* attempted to relieve it; but failing therein and in his Design upon *Antwerp* he fell into *Death of* a melancholy Way, which carried him off in the Year *MAURICE. 1625.*

Frederick Henry Prince of *Orange* who succeeded his *FREDERICK* Brother in all his Offices made himself in the Year *HENRY suc-* 1627 Master of *Groll*; and in the same Year the *Spa-*ceeds him, *nish* Plate-Fleet was taken by *Peter Heyn*. During the 1625. Siege of *Bois-le-duc* which *Henry* undertook in the Year 1628, the *Spaniards* for the Sake of making a Diversion penetrated into the *Velaw*. This caused great Consternation all over *Holland*; but upon the Surprizal of *Wesel* by the *Dutch* the *Spaniards* repassed the *Iffel* in great Haste.

In the Year 1630 the *Hollanders* began to establish *The DUTCH* themselves in *Brazil*: And in the next Year some thou-establiſh them- sands of *Spaniards* going upon a secret Expedition were *ſelves at BRA-* surprized near *Bergen-op-zoom*. *ZIL, 1630.*

In the Year 1632 *Henry* took *Ruremond, Venlo, Lim-* Battle of *burg* and *Maestricht*; and *Papenheim* who attempted to *MAEST-* relieve the last of these Places was defeated. In the *RICHT, 1632.* next Campaign he made himself Master of *Rhineburg*; but the *Spaniards* on the other Side retook *Limburg*. In the Year 1635 by a Treaty made betwixt the Re- 1635. publick and *France* it was agreed to share the *Spanish Netherlands*. As the *Hollanders* however did not care to have the *French* for so near Neighbours this Agreement came to nothing. *Fort Schenk* surprized this Year by the *Spa-* niards

Battle of
CALLO,
1638.

niards was retaken but not without great Difficulty in the Year following. *Breda* was retaken in 1637; but the *Hollanders* lost *Venlo* and *Ruremond*. They in the next Campaign were defeated near *Callo*; but this Loss was made good by their Admiral *Tromp*: Who entirely destroyed in the *Downs* a *Spanish* Fleet intended to attack *Sweden* in Conjunction with the *Danes*.

WILLIAM II.

Treaty of
MUNSTER,
1648.

In the Year 1644 *Ghent* and in the Year following *Huſt* was taken by *William II.* Prince of *Orange*, who had succeeded *Henry* his Father; and it was thought he would have taken *Antwerp*, had not the City of *Amſterdam* grown great by its Ruin opposed this. At length by a Treaty concluded at *Munſter* in the Year 1648 a glorious End was put to this War; the *Hollanders* being thereby acknowledged to be a free Republick and entirely independent of *Spain*. *France* and the Prince of *Orange* endeavoured to render the Negotiations at *Munſter* fruitless: But as the very Thing they had ſo long contended for was acknowledged, the States were glad to put an End to a War which although the *Spaniards* were moſt diſtreſſed by it had run them greatly into Debt. From this Time *France* and *England*, who had all along ſupported the *Hollanders*, began to grow jealous of their Power.

Revolt of
BRAZIL.

Not long after *Brazil* to the great Loſs of the *West-India* Company revolted to the *Portugueſe*: But the *Portugueſe* paid dear for it; for a War being kindled on this Occaſion they loſt near all which belonged to them in the *East-Indies*.

Diviſion in
the State,
1650.

In the Year 1650 a Diviſion which might have had very bad Conſequences happened amongſt the States. Some of theſe and eſpecially thoſe of *Holland* having propoſed a Reduction of the Army the Prince of *Orange* opposed it; and he was perſuaded by his Friends as the Matter could not be ſettled to viſit the Cities which were for ſo doing in Perſon and to repreſent to them the Impropriety of taking this Step whiſt *France* and *Spain* were at War. As ſome Cities particularly *Amſterdam*, fearing he would change their Magiſtrates or do ſome other Thing inconfiſtent with their Liberties, petitioned againſt this, the Prince inſiſted it was done to affront

front him; but the Cities instead of making him any Satisfaction insisted that their Petitioner was quite agreeable to the Constitution of the Republick. Six Members of the Counsel of State, amongst whom was *De Wit* Burgo-master of *Dordrecht*, were hereupon committed to the Castle of *Louveslein*; and some Troops were assembled with an Intent to surprize *Amsterdam*. Mistaking their Way in the Night the Inhabitants apprized of the Design by the *Hamburg* Post boy opened their Sluices; and by laying the Country round them under Water hindered the Execution thereof. The Matter being afterwards accommodated the People of *Amsterdam* were forced to consent that *Bicker* their Burgo-master should be deposed; and the six Prisoners were on Condition of their being removed from their Offices set at Liberty: But it is thought that if the Prince's Death had not happened soon after the Affair would not have ended here. Seven Days after his Death, which happened on the 13th of *November* 1650, the Princess his Spouse was delivered of a Son afterwards King of *England*. In the next Spring the *United Provinces* now without a Stadtholder in a general Assembly confirmed their Union; and came to some Resolutions for regulating the Government.

Death of the
Prince of
ORANGE,
1650.

Doriflaw Ambassador from the *English* Parliament to the States being about this Time assassinated by some *Scotchmen* before he had had his publick Audience, and no Satisfaction being made for this it was taken very ill; but as *Cromwell* was then busy in subduing *Scotland* the Parliament thought proper to conceal its Resentment. As the Ambassadors sent afterwards to the *Hague* were trifled with and insulted several Times by the Mob, the Parliament at length prohibited the Importation of foreign Goods except in *English* Bottoms; and Letters of Marque and Reprisal were granted against the *Dutch*. Their Trade being hereby greatly distressed the *Hollanders*, who saw their Mistake in being so stiff, sent Ambassadors to *England*; but as it was proper to be upon their Guard a Fleet was fitted out. The *English* Admiral *Blake* meeting with their Admiral *Tromp*, upon his refusing to strike a desperate Action ensued

War with
ENGLAND.

in which the Loss was great on both Sides. As Negotiations were all the while carrying on at *London* the *Dutch* pretended that this was accidental: Preparations however were made on both Sides and it came soon after to an open Rupture. After several Engagements in which the *Hollanders* had generally the worst of it, they lost in one Action twenty-seven Ships of War; and their Admiral being killed they were glad to sue for Peace. By a Treaty concluded with *Cromwell* in the Year 1654 they amongst other Concessions agreed, that no Prince of the House of *Orange* should ever after be Stadtholder. It being observed in the Course of this War that their Ships of War were too small the *Hollanders* took Care to build all new ones larger.

Treaty with
CROMWELL,
1654.

War with
SWEDEN.

Battle of the
SOUND.

In the following Year the *Dutch* jealous of his Progress in *Poland* and *Prussia* prevailed on the *Danes* to break with the *Swede*. The King of *Denmark* being after a Series of ill Success besieged in his Capital they sent a Fleet to his Assistance; and a sharp Engagement ensued betwixt the Fleets of *Holland* and *Sweden* in the *Sound*, in which the *Dutch* lost two Admirals: But which was the Thing chiefly intended the *Swedes* were driven from before *Copenhagen*. In the Year 1660 the *Dane*, who did not in this War meet with the Assistance he expected and ought to have had from the *Dutch*, was glad to make Peace. The Apprehension that *England* and *France* would declare in Favour of *Sweden* and jointly fall upon them was it is probable the Reason for this disingenuous Behaviour of the *Dutch*; who certainly did not act vigorously.

War with
ENGLAND,
1665.

Hostilities being in the Year 1665 committed by the *English*, who looked with jealous Eyes on the Trade and naval Power of the Republick, the *French* for the Sake of weakening both Nations fomented the Animosity betwixt them as much as possible. In the Beginning of this War the *English* had the Advantage; but on the burning of their Ships in *Chatham* Harbour, which was indeed a bold Undertaking in the *Dutch* Admiral, they grew weary of it; and a Treaty was by the Mediation of *Sweden* concluded at *Breda*.

Treaty of
BRED A.

In the Year 1672 the Republick was again attacked *War with* by the *English* at Sea; and her Provinces being at the ^{ENGLAND} same Time invaded by *France* she seemed to be on the ^{and FRANCE,} Brink of Ruin. The Rapid Progress of the *French*, who ^{1672.} in a few Days became Masters of the Provinces of *Guelderland*, *Utrecht* and *Overyssel*, threw the People into such a Consternation, that had they made the best of their Way to *Amsterdam* it would in all Probability have surrendered: But the Delay of General *Rochefort*, who tarried two Days to receive Compliments at *Utrecht*, gave the Inhabitants Time to pluck up their Courage and prepare for a Defence. The *Hollanders* in the next Campaign lost *Maestricht*; but in several Engagements at Sea they gave Proofs of extraordinary Conduct and Bravery. At length the *English* Parliament, who could not bear to see the Success of *France*, prevailed on *Charles II.* to make a separate Peace. As the *Emperor* *Separate* and *Spain* under whose Mediation this was concluded *Peace with* declared afterwards openly for the *Dutch*, the *French* ^{ENGLAND.} having first raised heavy Contributions thought proper to evacuate all the conquered Towns except *Naerden*, *Grave* and *Maestricht*; and the two former of these were retaken.

By this War the Prince of *Orange* was raised to a *Great Power* higher Pitch of Power than any of his Ancestors had ever *of the Prince* enjoyed: For the common People, who imputed the sur-^{of} *ORANGE.* prizing Success of the *French* to the Treachery of some that had the Direction of Affairs, and looked upon him as the only Person who could restore the Affairs of the Republick, grew tumultuous in many Places; and would not be satisfied till he was declared Stadtholder and all Places were filled with his Friends. In one of these Tumults *Cornelius* and *John de Wit* two Brothers were rent in Pieces by the Populace at the *Hague*; yet many were of Opinion that both of them, and particularly the latter who had long sat at the Helm, deserved better of their Countrymen.

The Prince soon restored Quiet amongst the People; but his Success against the *French* did not answer their Expectation. He sustained great Loss in the Battle
of

of *Senef* in the Year 1674; and was repulsed two Years after from before *Maestricht*. Attempting to relieve *St. Omers* in the Year 1677 his Army was defeated; and the Fleet sent in the same Year to the Assistance of *Sicily* was worsted. It being at length feared that the Prince's Authority might by continuing the War become fatal to their Liberties the *Hollanders* made a separate Peace with *France*; by which *Maestricht* was restored to them.

The States enter into the GRAND ALLIANCE. Umbrage being taken at the strict Alliance entered into betwixt *Lewis XIV.* and *James II.* of which one Article was supposed to be the humbling of the *Dutch*, the *States General* came readily into the Views of the Prince of *Orange*. The Revolution in *England*, which was in a great Measure brought about by the Assistance of the *Dutch*, drew upon them the Resentment of *Lewis*: But by the Conclusion of the *Grand Alliance* their Country was happily delivered from being the Seat of War.

Battle of FLEURY, 1690. In the Year 1690 whilst *William*, who notwithstanding his Advancement to the Throne of *England* never would give up the Office of Stadtholder, was busy in subduing *Ireland*, the Troops of *Holland* and the other Allies commanded by Prince *Waldeck* were defeated near *Fleury* by Marshal *Luxemburg*. In this Action the Allies, who lost fifty Pieces of Cannon, had six thousand killed upon the Spot, and more than that Number were made Prisoners. In the same Year the combined Fleet of *England* and *Holland* was worsted by the *French Admiral Turville*.

Battle of LEUSE, 1691. The Battle of *Leuse* fought in the next Campaign was still more glorious to *Luxemburg*; for notwithstanding his Army was greatly inferior he defeated the Allies with considerable Loss. In the Month of

Battles of LA HOGUE, and STEENKIRK, 1692. *May* following the *French Fleet* was ruined off *la Hogue*: But the Joy hereby occasioned was soon interrupted by the Account received, that *Luxemburg* had obtained a Victory over the King of *England* who had taken upon himself the Command in *Flanders* near *Steenkirk*.

In the Year 1693 the *French* Marshal took *Huy*; and the allied Army commanded by the King of *England* and the Elector of *Bavaria* being defeated at *Nervinde* *Battle of* with the Loss of fifteen thousand Men *Charleroy* sub-*NERVINDE,* mitted to him. A Diversion being made by a Descent 1693. in the Year 1694 on the Coast of *France* the Allies retook *Huy*; and they in the next Year made themselves Masters of *Namur*. The separate Peace concluded by the Duke of *Savoy* which disconcerted the Allies; the many Captures made by *French* Privateers; and the Distrust which some say began to reign amongst the Allies; paved the Way for a general Treaty at *Ryswick* in the Year 1697: And the *French* Court for the sake of facilitating its Designs on the *Spanish* Monarchy was not averse thereto.

A sufficient Barrier being obtained for the *Dutch* by *PARTITION* the Cession of all the *French* had conquered in the *Spa-Treaties.* *nish Netherlands*, they in order to prevent a new War on Account of the *Spanish* Succession acceded to the Partition Treaty. As the Execution of this was prevented by the Death of the Elector of *Bavaria* a second Partition Treaty was agreed upon; but the Measures therein concerted were quite broke by the Will of *Charles* who appointed the Duke of *Anjou* his Heir. It being judged improper for the States to break immediately with *France* they acknowledged *Philip V.* as King of *Spain*; yet they came readily into the Designs of some Powers, who were determined to prevent if possible the Union of the *Spanish* and *French* Monarchies in the House of *Bourbon*.

By the second *Grand Alliance* concluded at the *Hague* *Second* in *September* 1701 it was agreed: That the contracting *GRAND AL-* Powers should apply themselves principally to the reco-*LIANCE.* vering of the *Spanish Netherlands*, which the *French* had 1701. seized and obliged the *Dutch* Garrisons to evacuate the Barrier Towns thereof; that the *Milanese* should be recovered for the Emperor; that the Maritime Powers should keep any Thing they could conquer from *Spain* in the *West-Indies*; that no separate Peace should be made; and that none should be made until the Demands of the House of *Austria* upon the *Spanish* Succession should be satisf-

Death of
WILLIAM.

satisfied and the Trade and Navigation of *England* and *Holland* sufficiently secured. While Preparations were making for acting conformably to this Alliance, *William III.* of *England* who had taken great Pains to form it and was considered as the Head thereof died. The *French* Court hereupon conceived Hopes of cajoling the *Dutch* to alter their Conduct; and it was said in a Memorial presented that his most Christian Majesty had for some Time considered their Behaviour as influenced by foreign Counsels: But this Insinuation displeased the States; and they gave him to understand, that although they had the highest Esteem for *William*, they had always been Master of their own Resolutions and were determined at all Events to pursue them. Whether it was that there was no Person proper for it, or that the Power belonging to the Office was thought to be inconsistent with the Liberty of the Republick, no Stadtholder was upon the Death of *William* chosen.

Dispute concerning the
Succession to
the Estates of
ORANGE.

Upon the Death of this Prince a Dispute arose, concerning the Right of succeeding to the Estates of *Orange*, betwixt the King of *Prussia* and the Prince of *Nassau Dietz* hereditary Stadtholder of *Frise-land*: But as the discussing of this would have taken a good deal of Time and it was not proper to disoblige either Party in the present Conjuncture, the *States General*, who were to decide it, agreed that for the present the Profits of the whole should be received by themselves and paid Part to the one and Part to the other.

War with
FRANCE,
1702.

War being declared in the Year 1702 against *France*, the Troops of the *Allies* by taking *Kayferswerth*, *Bonn* and other Places soon put it out of the Elector of *Cologne's* Power to make good the Engagements, which his Attachment to the Interest of his Nephew *Philip V.* had drawn him into. As the Heat of the War, in which the *Dutch* bore all along a glorious Part, was for some Time in *Italy*, on the *Rhine* or on the *Danube*, we shall having in other Chapters already given an Account of what happened there at once come to the Battle of *Ramilies*. By this important Victory obtained in the Year 1706 the Conquest of all *Brabant*, and of *Mechlin*, *Ant-*

Battle of
RAMILIES,
1706.

werp

werp and many other Places in *Flanders* was made easy to the Allies; and the *French* began to tremble for their own Towns.

In the Year 1707 the Attention of all *Europe* was fixed upon the Attack of *Toulon*: Which although it did not succeed drew off the *French* Forces from *Flanders*; so that nothing considerable happened there. In the Battle of *Oudenarde*, which was fought next Year, the Loss was so nearly equal that the *French* claimed the Victory: But the Reduction of *Ghent* and *Bruges* soon after plainly shewed that the Allies had the Advantage.

As *France* had more than once made Overtures for a Peace the *States General*, whose principal View in this War was to have a lasting Barrier, in the Year 1709 concluded with *Great-Britain* the *Barrier-Treaty*. By this it was stipulated that *Furnes*, *Fort-Knock*, *Ipres*, *Menin*, *Tournay*, *Charleroy*, *Namur* and *Ghent*, and the Forts *Penel*, *Philip*, *Damm* and *Donaas* should be the Barrier Towns; and should have *Dutch* Garrisons to be augmented or lessened as the *States* should judge proper. On the other hand the Republick obliged herself to maintain the Protestant Succession in the House of *Hanover* against all Opposers. The Consequence of this strict Union betwixt the Maritime Powers would it is probable have been fatal to *France*, if the *British* Ministers had not departed from it by treating separately. Pursuant to their Negotiations some Alteration was to be made in the Barrier: and it plainly appeared in the Course of them that the Disposition of the *British* Ministers, of whom there was an entire Change, was much altered with Regard to the Pretender.

Whatever were the Motives, or whether there was any Reason for the Complaint that the Republick had not duly furnished her Quotas, as the *British* Ministers were determined upon Peace the *States General* did not think it prudent to bear the Burthen of the War alone; and notwithstanding the reiterated Remonstrances from the Court of *Vienna* a Treaty with *France* was signed by them at *Utrecht*, at the same Time that the Treaty betwixt *Great Britain* and *France* was signed.

By

Treaty with
ALGIERS,
1713.

By a Treaty concluded a little before with the *Algerines*, who had for some Time greatly disturbed the Commerce of the *Hollanders*, it was stipulated amongst other Things, that the *Dutch* Merchants should pay only five *per Cent.* for Trading at *Algiers*; whereas they before used to pay ten. In treating with *Spain*, whose Ministers were not admitted to the Congress of *Utrecht*, the *Dutch* hoping to please the Emperor by this Distinction insisted, that during the Conferences the *Spanish* Ministers should be only called the Ministers of King *Philip*: Because the acknowledging of him as King of *Spain* was the principal Point in Question. This and some other Difficulties being got over a Treaty, by which the same Advantages were granted to the *Hollanders* as had been to the *English*, and they were confirmed in all Privileges enjoyed in the Reign of *Charles II.* was signed with *Spain* in *June* 1714.

Treaty with
SPAIN,
1714.

Second BAR-
RIER TREA-
TY, 1715.

It being upon the Cession of the *Spanish Netherlands* to the Emperor by the Treaty of *Baden* provided that the *Dutch* should have a Barrier, Negotiations were entered into at *Antwerp* under the Mediation of *Great-Britain*. The settling of this, which may be considered as the Conclusion of the grand Work of the Peace, cost the *British* Ministers great Pains: But at length a Treaty was signed in *November* 1715. By this second Barrier Treaty it was agreed: That a Body of Troops to the Number of 30,000, or in Time of War of 40,000 Men, of which three fifths were to be maintained by the Emperor the remainder by the Republick, should be kept up in the *Netherlands*; that *Namur*, *Tournay*, *Menin*, *Furnes*, *Warneton*, *Ipres* and *Fort-Knock* should be garrisoned by the Troops of the Republick; that the Garrison of *Dendermond* should consist partly of *Imperial* Troops and partly of *Dutch*; that the Governours of all these Places, who were to be appointed by the *States General* and approved of by the Emperor, should take an Oath to preserve them for the House of *Austria*; that the Garrisons should be allowed the free Exercise of their Religion and have convenient Places appointed for this Purpose; that all Ammunition and Provision for the *Dutch* Garrisons, for these

were to be no Charge to his *Imperial* Majesty or the Country, should be exempted from paying any Custom or Toll; and that the Citadel of *Liege* and the Fortifications of *Huy* should be demolished. The Bailiwicks of *Venlo*, *Fort St. Michael*, *Stevens-Waert* and *Montfort*, subject however to the Debts contracted upon them by *Charles II.* were moreover ceded to the *States General*; all that had been done by *Great-Britain* and *Holland*, whilst they had the Administration of the Sovereignty of the *Low-Countries*, was confirmed by the Emperor; and *Great-Britain* took upon herself the Guaranty of this Treaty.

The Republick was a contracting Party to the defensive TRIPLE ALLIANCE concluded soon after betwixt *France* and *Great-Britain*. By this *Lewis XV.* engaged that the Pretender should quit *France* and not come into this Kingdom again: But the Article of most Importance to the *Dutch* was that *Mardyke*, which would have been full as dangerous to the Maritime Powers as *Dunkirk*, should not be fortified.

The Treaty of Alliance, signed in the Year 1718 at *The States London* by the Ministers of their *Imperial*, most *Christian* refuse to accede and *Britannick* Majesties, was called because their Accession was taken for granted the *Quadruple Alliance*: DRUPLE ALLIANCE. But the *States General* instead of acceding thereto rather acted as Mediators; and by their prudent and moderate Conduct on this Occasion the Renewal of War was in all Probability prevented.

An *East-India* Company having been erected by a OSTEND Charter from the Emperor in the Year 1722 at *Ostend*, it COMPANY by the Assistance of Foreigners, and especially of some Eng- erected, lishmen who preferred their own Interest to that of their 1722. Country, soon came into a flourishing Condition. As this would have been very prejudicial to the Trade of the *Dutch East-India* Company, the *States General* insisted that the Charter which was, as they said, contrary to Treaties ought to be revoked: And the Courts of *Paris* and *London*, whose Subjects were allowed by Treaties to import *India* Silks into *Germany* and the Emperor's hereditary Dominions, backed the Remonstrances of the Republick. The Emperor denied that his Subjects

jects in the *Austrian Netherlands* were by any Treaty excluded from trading to the *East-Indies*; and instead of listening to the Powers who solicited its Destruction he obtained many Privileges for this new Company by a Treaty concluded with *Spain*. The Treaty of *Hanover* was hereupon concluded; and Hostilities were commenced against *Spain* by *Great-Britain* in the *West-Indies*: But the Emperor being prevailed upon by the *Dutch*, who acted as Mediators, to consent that the Charter should be suspended for seven Years, Preliminaries for a general Peace were signed at *Paris* in May 1727.

It is suspended
1727.

The Congresses of *Cambray* and *Soissons* which followed having been ineffectual Negotiations were entered into at *Seville*; and by a Treaty signed there the *States General*, *Great-Britain* and *France* engaged to guaranty the Succession to *Parma*, *Placentia* and *Tuscany* to *Don Carlos*: But as the States foresaw this Treaty would give Umbrage to the Court of *Vienna*, their Ministers did not sign it till some Days after it was signed by the Ministers of the other Powers, nor were they forward to carry it into Execution. By a Treaty in the Year 1731 *Great-Britain*, for the Sake of obtaining the Emperor's Consent to the Introduction of *Don Carlos*, took upon herself the Guaranty of the *Pragmatick Sanction*. The Republick was supposed to be a contracting Party to this Treaty; but she did not accede formally thereto until the next Year.

Treaty of
SEVILLE.

The STATES
refuse to enter
into the War,
on Account
of the POLISH
Election.

On the Prospect of a War concerning the *Polish Election* the *States General*, who took great Pains to prevent it, told the Emperor in express Terms that they would not take Part in it; nor could the *British* Ministers, notwithstanding their Representations that the Balance of Power was in Danger, prevail on them to depart from this Resolution. Instead thereof they concluded a Treaty of Neutrality with *France*: By which their Barrier and the *Austrian Netherlands* were secured from Hostilities. The great Care taken to keep the Preliminaries of *Vienna* secret for some Months gave Rise to a Suspicion that something in the *Netherlands* was ceded to *France*: But the *Dutch* were soon made easy by Assurances

surances that nothing prejudicial to the Interest of the Republick was therein contained.

For some Time before the breaking out of the War *The War be-*
betwixt *Great-Britain* and *Spain* the former had solli- *twixt*
cited the *States General* to make it a common Cause; *GREAT-*
and to induce them thereto a Handle was made of the *BRITAIN and*
taking of some *Dutch* Vessels by the *Spanish Guard de* *SPAIN proves*
Costas; but they chose to compromise this Matter. *advantageous*
They moreover thought it high Time that the illicit *to HOLLAND.*
Trade carried on by the *English* Merchants in the
West-Indies should be stopped: It being for the Interest
of every trading Nation to confine the *American* Trade
to the *Spaniards*, by whom the Profits thereof are spread
all over *Europe*. Instead of joining in this War the
Hollanders made vast Advantage by supplying *Spain*
with such Commodities as she used to have from *Eng-*
land.

The Answer given by the *States General* to the *Conduct of the*
Archdutchess, upon her causing the Emperor's Death *STATES, on*
to be notified, plainly shewed that they would not come *the Emperor's*
into her Views: Nor would they interpose further than *Death.*
by good Offices when the King of *Prussia* attacked
Silesia.

The Populoufness of the *United Provinces* makes *The UNITED*
Trade absolutely necessary; for the Produce of these is *PROVINCES.*
not near sufficient to support the great Number of In- *well peopled.*
habitants. Many of these came from other Countries;
as from *France* during the civil Wars; from *England*
to avoid the Cruelties exercised in *Queen Mary's* Reign;
from *Germany* during the Wars on Account of Religion;
and particularly from the other Provinces of the *Nether-*
lands which after the Revolt were reduced by *Spain* to
Obedience. Nor is it strange that Foreigners when
weary of their native Country should choose to settle
here, if the Equity and Freedom of the Government
together with the Toleration granted to all Religions be
considered.

The *Hollanders* who are in the general of an honest *Genius of the*
and faithful Disposition are remarkable for Frankness in *HOLLAN-*
their Conversation. They are not soon provoked; but *TERS.*
when angry it is not easy to pacify them. By falling

in with their Humour they may be led to any Thing : But they will not be drove. Hence it was a common Saying with *Chariequint*, That although no People abhorred the Thoughts of Slavery so much none if they were artfully managed submitted to it with more Patience. The *Dutch* and especially the lower Sort, which is sometimes a Consequence of Liberty, are apt to take too great Freedom in reflecting on the Conduct of their Governours. The *Guelderlanders* and all that inhabit near *Westphalia* are tolerable good Soldiers; but at Sea which is their Element they are equal, and particularly the *Zelanders*, to any Nation both in Courage and Conduct. Being temperate, frugal and industrious they can undersell their Neighbours in foreign Markets and at the same time grow rich; and *Dutch* Merchants are in all Parts of the World esteemed for their Punctuality and Fairness in Trade. From the prudent Conduct of this Nation, amongst whom few of fine Sense are to be found, it has been inferred that a cool Head and a moderate Understanding are sufficient to make a good Statesman.

Situation and
Soil of HOL-
LAND.

The *United Provinces* make no great Figure in a Map; but the Smallness of their Extent is well made Amends for by the great Number of large, strong and populous Cities. As the Soil of *Holland* which is very rich turns out to much more Advantage for Pasture the *Hollanders* sow very little Corn. The Want however of this as well as of some other Necessaries and Delicacies of Life is well supplied by its convenient Situation for Trade. *Holland* is liable to one Inconvenience which *England* its Rival in Trade is free from. This is that some of its Ports are in the Winter Time froze up for three Months or more. Great Part of it being overflowed in Winter it must be subject to Fogs; but these are a good deal dispelled by the East Wind which providentially for the Inhabitants generally blows. Its Situation in almost the Middle of *Europe* is vastly commodious for Trade; and to the Encrease of this the large Rivers of the *Rhine*, the *Maes*, the *Scheld*, the *Elbe*, the *Embs* and others contribute a great deal.

It

It has been computed that the *Hollanders*, so ex-Trade and
tensive is their Trade, have more Ships than all Eu-Settlements of
rope; and if what has been said by some *Englishmen* be HOLLAND.
true, these industrious People make yearly without
reckoning their Home Consumption 1,372,000 Pound HERRING-
Sterling of the Herring-Fishery. They trade consider-Fishery.
ably to most Parts of the World; but the present rich
and flourishing State of the Republick is principally
owing to the immense Profit drawn from the East-
India Trade. The Company carrying this on trades EAST-INDIA
all along that vast and rich Coast from *Bassaro* in the Company.
Persian Gulph to *Japan*: But the principal Places
which belong to it are the Island of *Java*; the *Mo-*
lucca and *Banda* Islands; *Malacca*; some Places on
the Coasts of *Sumatra* and *Ceylan*; *Paliacata*, *Musu-*
lapatam and *Negrapatam* on the Coast of *Coromandel*;
and *Cochin*, *Cranganor* and *Cananor* on the *Malabar*
Coast. Besides these and many other Places, to some
of which the *Chinese* trade largely, the *Dutch East-*
India Company has an exclusive Right of trading to
Japan. Of all these Settlements the Governor-general,
who resides and keeps a magnificent Court at *Batavia*
the Capital of *Java*, has the Direction; nor is he ac-
countable for his Conduct to any but the Company.
Upon the whole this Company is so very rich and
powerful, that it can alone fit out fifty Sail of Men of
War and keep up an Army of 30,000 Men. The West-WEST-INDIA
India Company which set out with a larger Capital than Company.
that of the *East-Indies* was very successful at first: But
by making too large Dividends and extending its Con-
quests too far it hurt itself greatly, and the Revolt of
Brazil was a fatal Stroke. At present it is in Possession
of *St George de la Mina* and some other Places on the
Guinea Coast; of *Curacao* and *Bonaire* two of the *So-*
tovento Islands: And it has some Settlements betwixt
the Rivers *Cayenne* and *Oronoquo* in *Guiana*. It has been
observed by considerate Men, that several Things which
are not all to be found in any other Country conspire
to advance the Trade of *Holland*; as its Populousness;
its secure as well as commodious Situation; the Low-
ness of Interest and Duties paid here; its naval Strength

for protecting Trade; the Carefulness and Exactness of its Merchants; the Bank of *Amsterdam*; its Superiority in the *East-Indies*; and the exemplary Punishments inflicted on Robbers, Cheats and Bankrupts. To these it may be added, that the Members of the Regency being generally concerned in Trade have an Interest in encouraging it; but the main Thing is the Frugality which runs through all Ranks of People. They are Masters of the Spice Trade yet very little thereof is consumed amongst themselves; and they are so far from wearing the rich Silks imported from *Persia* and other Countries, that they export the fine woollen Cloths made at home and cloath themselves with a cheaper Sort from *England*. Upon the same frugal Principle they export their own Butter; and content themselves with a more ordinary Sort from *Ireland* and the North of *England*. They do indeed spend a good deal in *French* Wines and Brandies, of which last they are very fond; yet even in their Entertainments and Debauches they are not over-lavish. It is however said by some that the Trade of the *Hollanders* begins to decline, and the following Reasons are given for it; that the Profits of their *East-India* Trade are much lessened by the vast Quantities of *India* Goods of late Years brought into *Europe*, which has greatly reduced their Price; that their Sale of Corn which they have from the *Baltick* in Exchange for Spices has decreased ever since the Lands in *England*, *France*, *Spain* and *Italy* have been so much improved; that great Sums of ready Money which might have been employed in Trade to Advantage have been expended in sumptuous Buildings at *Amsterdam*; and which is worse than all the rest if true that Luxury daily gains Ground amongst them.

Strength of
HOLLAND.

From what has been said it appears that the natural Strength of the Republick is naval. This ought always to be attended to; for without being able to protect their Trade the *Hollanders* must, as they do not grow the fourth Part of the Corn they eat, be starved. As the common People are employed at Sea the *Dutch* cannot keep up large Armies; for which Reason that

Part

Part of their Country which is not to be laid under Water by opening Sluices must be exposed to the Insults of the neighbouring Powers. They have indeed Money enough to hire foreign Troops; but as Mercenaries cannot be depended upon and may under the Conduct of an artful and ambitious General be dangerous to their Liberties, it is for their Interest to avoid Land Wars as much as possible.

By the Constitution of *Holland* each Province has *Government of* its Deputies, of all which are composed *the States General*, *HOLLAND*. constantly residing at the *Hague* to take Care of what concerns the common Good: But when any Thing of Consequence is to be determined upon, these consult their respective Provinces and conduct themselves according to their Advice. Further in every Province each Member treats with the rest as with Confederates; and in many Cases a Plurality of Voices in a Provincial Assembly is not sufficient the Consent of every one being necessary. Hence it appears that the *Seven Provinces* are in effect so many Commonwealths; and that the several Towns in the same Province are no further united than it is for their mutual Interest so to be. As this form of Government must necessarily be subject to all the Inconveniencies of slow and divided Counsels, it has been conjectured that by lodging the supreme Power in a single Hand the Affairs of Government might be carried on with more Secrecy and Dispatch; and that Tumults in which the Rabble, who in all the large Towns are thereto prone, are quite outrageous might be more easily suppressed. It is not our Business to determine as to this Point; but from the Jealousy always entertained of the House of *Orange* while its Power and Influence was great, and the Opposition made to some Princes of this House when suspected of aiming at the Sovereignty, it is plain the *Hollanders* will never willingly change their present Constitution for a Monarchy. It is moreover not probable, that the obtaining of the supreme Power in *Holland* by Force would answer the Purpose of any Prince who has no other Dominions; for as so many Towns could not be kept in Subjection without large Gar-
risons,

risons, and military Power is destructive to Trade, the *United Provinces* would soon be ruined and of Course his Power could not last long. Notwithstanding it has been thought a wrong Maxim to tolerate all Religions in *Holland*, this has without doubt contributed vastly to the Populousness, Strength and Riches of the Republick: For what stronger Inducement can there be for Strangers, when it becomes on any account necessary for them to leave their native Country, to fix here than that they may without any Molestation profess that Religion which seems best to them. The restraining of all Persecution here has given Occasion for a Saying, that Religion has in some Countries done more Good but nowhere so little Mischief as in *Holland*. The Revenues of the States do in the general arise from Taxes on Provisions. Before a Dish of Fish is brought upon Table it has perhaps paid thirty different Taxes. Such Taxes must of Course as most of them are brought from abroad make the Necessaries of Life very dear. The Republick if the Wealth of private Persons be considered is very rich; but as a Body the Load of Debts which have for some Time been contracted lies heavy upon her.

*Interest of
HOLLAND
with regard
to GREAT-
BRITAIN.*

It is for the Interest of the Republick to be in Amity with *Great-Britain*, because the latter may be a good Ally; nor can the Republick propose any Advantage by a War with this Power. Instead thereof while the *Maritime Powers* were weakening each other it is not unlikely that the Republick would be attacked from some other Quarter; and if this did not happen her Trade which is her chief Support must be greatly interrupted. It is however of great Consequence for her to keep up a good Fleet, that if any Difference, which as they are both trading Nations may happen from a Jarring of Interests, should arise she may be able to make Head against the Fleets of *Great Britain*. On the contrary, whilst the Republick does not dispute the Sovereignty of the Seas it is not likely that *Great-Britain* should be fond of breaking with her; it being for the Interest of this Kingdom to support the *United Provinces* least they should

should fall under the Dominion of some neighbouring powerful Prince.

As the Forces of this Republick bear no Proportion to those of *France* she could get nothing by a War with this Nation; but it greatly concerns her that the *Austrian Netherlands* which serve as a Barrier to her be not subdued by *France*. On the other hand, if *France* was to attack the Republick it is for the Interest of the *German Princes* to assist her; and *Great-Britain* would without doubt join with them.

Although the *Hollanders* have nothing to fear from *Spain*. *Spain*, it is for their Interest else they would lose a very valuable Trade to be upon good Terms with this Nation: Nor could they except something could be conquered and kept in the *West-Indies*, which would not fail to give Umbrage to other Powers, reap any Advantage from a War with it. As on the other hand nothing in the *Netherlands* now remains to *Spain*, and the naval Strength of *Spain* is greatly inferior to that of the Republick, there is no Danger of her being attacked by this Kingdom.

The *Portuguese* owe the *Dutch* a Grudge for supplanting them in the *East-Indies*; yet it would be imprudent in *Portugal* to break with *Holland*, because as the latter is superior at Sea *Brazil* might be thereby endangered. If on the contrary the *Dutch* were without Provocation to attack the *Portuguese*, *Great-Britain* and other Nations concerned in preserving the Balance of Trade would in all Probability declare against them.

As *Holland* is able to cope with any one of the Northern Powers she has no Concern with Respect to these, but that no one of them becomes Master of the *Baltick*; yet as her Trade into this Sea is very considerable she ought to cultivate a good Understanding with them all

It is for the Interest of the Republick to be in Alliance with the *German Princes*, that she may have their Assistance in case of a Land-War; but it most of all concerns her to preserve the King of *Prussia's* Friendship:

Friendship : For as his Dominions border on the *United-Provinces* he may being very powerful prove a dangerous Enemy.

OTHER
POWERS.

The Republick has nothing to fear from any other Power ; yet as her principal Dependence is upon Trade, it is for her Interest to be in Amity with every Power.

CHAP.

C H A P. VII.

O F T H E

G E R M A N E M P I R E.

ANCIENTLY *Germany* was divided into many States independent of each other. *Democracy* was the Form of Government which generally prevailed among them; and wherever there was a regal Government the Authority of the King was much limited. *The ancient State of GER-MANY.*

Some of these were subdued by the Predecessors of *Charlemain*: But he it was who entirely subdued *Germany* and annexed it to the Empire of the *Franks*; which before consisted of *France*, *Italy* and Part of *Spain*. He committed the Care of the *German* Provinces to Governors who were called *Graves*, and the better to keep the *Saxons* a savage rebellious People in Awe he established some Bishops amongst them: Hoping that the preaching of the Gospel would soften their Manners. *CHARLEMAIN.*

Lewis the Pious Son and Successor of *Charlemain* left three Sons, *Lothario*, *Lewis* and *Charles*: Who divided the Empire of the *Franks* betwixt them. *LEWIS the PIOUS.*

To *Lewis* his second Son he gave all *Germany* and some Places beyond the *Rhine*: Over which he reigned independently of his two Brothers, betwixt whom the rest of the Empire was divided. *LEWIS King of GERMAN-Y.*

After the Death of *Charles* the Bald King of *France*, who had also the Imperial Dignity, *Carloman* the Son and Successor of *Lewis* King of *Germany* having made himself Master of *Italy* took upon himself the Title of Emperor: Notwithstanding that *Lewis* Son of *Charles* the *CARLOMAN takes the Title of Emperor.*

the *Bald* still retained the same Title with the Pope's Consent.

CHARLES the FAT. *Charles the Fat* younger Brother and Successor of *Carloman* kept Possession of *Italy* and the Imperial Dignity; but in the Year 887 the Princes and States of *Germany* deposed him and elected in his Stead *Arnolph* Son of *Carloman*.

ARNOLPH, 888. *Arnolph* died in the Year 888; and was succeeded by his Son *Lewis* surnamed the *Infant*.

LEWIS, II. 899. In this Reign the Affairs of *Germany* went on ill. His Father had in his Life-time called the *Huns* a barbarous Nation to his Assistance against *Zuentebold* King of *Bohemia* and *Moravia*, who had revolted. By their Help *Zuentebold* was indeed brought to Obedience; but the Consequence was fatal: For these Savages having once tasted the Sweets of *Germany* again invaded and ravaged it with great Cruelty. They at length insulted *Lewis* at *Augsburg* and forced him in the Year 905 to pay them an annual Tribute; and notwithstanding this was submitted to they continued to make great Havock in *Germany*. To these Misfortunes the Youth of this Prince, the Division amongst the *German* Chiefs and the Desire of every one to increase his own Power, contributed a good deal. At the Death of *Lewis* in the Year 911 *Conrade* Duke of *Franconia* succeeded.

CONRADE, 911. During this Reign the Dukes of *Lorrain*, *Suabia*, *Bavaria* and *Saxony*, maugre all the Endeavours of *Conrade* to prevent it, made themselves independent and their Dominions hereditary: But amongst the rest *Henry* Duke of *Saxony* was grown so formidable, that *Conrade* on his Death-bed in the Year 919, advised the other Princes to choose him Emperor. His Council was followed; and thereby the Imperial Dignity passed from the Descendants of *Charlemain* to the House of *Saxony*.

HENRY, 919. *Henry the Bird-catcher*, so called because the Messengers sent to acquaint him of his Election found him catching Birds, when the *Huns* entered *Germany* with a numerous Army to demand their Tribute sent them in Disdain a mangy Dog; and he shortly after at the Battle

Battle of *Merseburg* cut in Pieces fourscore Thousand *Battle of*
of them. In his Reign most of the Towns on the ^{MERSE-}
other Side of the *Rhine* were built and fortified. He more-^{BURGH.}
over subdued the *Sorabes* and *Vandals*; drove the *Sarmatians*
and *Sclavonians* from their Possessions in *Misnia*,
Lusatia and *Brandenburg*; and having established Peace
in the Empire died in the Year 936.

To him succeeded his Son *Otho* surnamed the Great. ^{OTHO, 936.}
In the Beginning of his Reign a Rebellion was raised by
some Princes descended from *Charlemain*, who could not
bear to see the Imperial Dignity in the House of *Saxony*.
He was successful in quelling this as he was also in his
Wars with the *Danes* and *Sclavonians*; and so entirely
defeated the *Huns* near *Augsburg* that they never after
dared to attempt any thing against *Germany*. *Italy*
having been a long Time disturbed by the Quarrels of
its different Princes *Otho* was appealed to. Putting *Conquest of*
himself at the Head of his Army he easily made him-^{ITALY.}
self Master of *Italy*; and was crowned Emperor at
Rome. The *Italian* States were afterwards brought
into an Agreement, that for the future the Titles of
King of *Italy* and Emperor of *Rome* should be enjoyed
by the Person who was in Possession of the *German* Em-
pire; and that no Pope should be ever chosen without
the Consent of the Emperor. This Acquisition of
Dominions in *Italy* was very mischievous to *Germany*:
For as the Popes were perpetually stirring up Insur-
rections it was frequently necessary to march Armies
out of *Germany*; by which Means the Blood and Treas-
ure of the Empire were exhausted without any real Ad-
vantage.

Otho II. succeeded his Father in the Year 974. His ^{OTHO II.}
Reign was at first disturbed by Contests with some 974.
German Princes. Afterwards *Lothario* King of *France*
made himself Master of *Lorrain*; and was very near
taking *Otho* himself Prisoner at *Aix-la-Chapelle*. The
Emperor however in his Turn entered *France* with a
powerful Army, and advanced almost to *Paris*. He
was obliged to retire from *France* with great Loss: But
by the Treaty of *Rheims* *Lorrain* was restored him.
Some Time after *Otho* made a Campaign in *Italy* against
the

the *Greeks* and was at first successful; but being defeated by the infamous Flight of the *Roman* and *Beneventine* Troops, of which his Army was partly composed, during the Battle he was taken Prisoner. Finding Means to obtain his Liberty he severely punished their Treachery who deserted him; and not long after died of melancholy in the Year 983.

OTHO III. To him succeeded *Otho* III. his Son. Great Part of this Reign was spent in appeasing some Troubles at *Rome*; where the Consul *Crescence*, had usurped the sovereign Authority. *Otho* caused *Crescence* to be seized and executed upon a Gibbet; but he was afterwards poisoned by some Gloves which the Consul's Widow made him a Present of, and died without Issue in the Year 1001.

HENRY II. *Henry* Duke of *Bavaria* surnamed the *Cripple* who was descended from the House of *Saxony* succeeded. *Egbert* Landgrave of *Thuring* disputed the Succession with him; but it cost *Egbert* his Life. This Emperor after many Victories brought *Boleslaus* King of *Poland* to his own Terms. He died in the Year 1024: And was for his great Liberality to the Church canonized.

CONRADE II. *Henry* dying likewise without Issue *Conrade* Duke of *Franconia* was elected: But as his Election gave Umbrage to the House of *Saxony* it occasioned a civil War in *Germany*. This was by the Emperor's good Conduct happily ended; and he annexed the Kingdoms of *Burgundy* and *Arles*, which *Redolph* the late King dying without Heirs had left to him, to the Empire. *Eude* Count of *Champaign* laid claim to these Kingdoms: But he was compelled by *Conrade* to quit his Pretensions. Having afterwards carried on War successfully against the *Poles* and *Sclavonians* he died in the Year 1039: And was succeeded by *Henry* his Son surnamed the *Black*.

HENRY III. The *Hungarians* gave this Prince a good deal of Trouble: But he strenuously maintained his Authority over them.

HENRY IV. *Henry* IV. succeeded his Father in the Year 1056. His Governours took the Advantage of this Prince's Youth,

Youth, who was only six Years of Age when his Father died, to enrich themselves by the Sale of Ecclesiastical Benefices. Perceiving when he came of Age that the Wealth of the Empire was chiefly got into the Hands of Ecclesiasticks he resolved to plunder them: But this Step drew the Hatred of the whole Clergy upon him; and laid the Foundation of the Misfortunes which afterwards befell him. He moreover lost the Affections of his Subjects by governing tyrannically and by choosing for his Counsellors Persons of low Degree. The Saxons particularly were so disgusted by his building Castles to awe them, that they revolted and maintained a long and bloody War against him.

He was at length successful: But Pope Gregory VII. *The POPE* took the Opportunity of his being at War with the Saxons and hated by his other Subjects to revenge what the Church had suffered in the Beginning of his Reign; and to throw off that Obedience to the Emperor which the Popes and Clergy had so long most unwillingly submitted to. He first published a Bull: By which he deprived the Emperor of the Right of Collating to Benefices; and summoned him to appear and answer for his Crimes at Rome on pain of being excommunicated. On the other Hand Henry declared the Pope unworthy of the holy Chair and threatened to depose him: But as Henry was soon after excommunicated the German Princes, who assembled in the Year 1076 at Triers, came to a Resolution of deposing him.

Upon this Henry set out in the midst of Winter with very few Attendants for Rome: And being arrived at Canuse he waited in a coarse woollen Habit and barefooted three Days to crave in the humblest Manner Absolution from the Pope. This he at length obtained: But by this mean Behaviour he lost all Authority in Italy; and the German Princes at the Instigation of the Pope elected Rodolph Duke of Suabia Emperor in the Year 1077.

Hence arose a civil War: In which Rodolph was defeated in three Battles and was himself slain in the last.

last. After this Success *Henry* deposed *Gregory*, and caused the Archbishop of *Ravenna* to be elected Pope. Still the Inhabitants of *Suabia* persisted in their Rebellion against *Henry* who had been once more excommunicated by the Pope, and elected *Herman* Duke of *Luxemburg* Emperor; and at his Death shortly after they elected *Egbert* of *Saxony*. *Henry* marched against this last with a powerful Army; but being met by his Sons who had joined his Enemies, they so deceived him by feigning Sorrow for their past Behaviour and asking Pardon, that he was persuaded to send away his Troops and go with a small Retinue to a Diet then held at *Mentz*. In the Way he was made Prisoner; and he was in the Year 1106 deposed. Soon after this Emperor who had fought sixty-two Battles, and had been in almost all victorious, died old as he was in a most miserable Condition.

*He is himself
deposed and
dies miserably.*

HENRY V.
1106.

Henry V. who was upon the Deposition of his Father advanced to the Imperial Dignity, having settled Matters in *Germany* marched at the Head of an Army to *Rome*, to be crowned there and to assert his Right of presenting to Benefices. Pope *Paschal* being apprized of his Design stirred up a Tumult in *Rome*: But this being quelled by the Emperor he seized the Pope and forced him to consent by a Treaty to all he desired. He had scarce left *Italy* before the Pope declared this Treaty although confirmed by the most solemn Oaths to be void; and spirited up the *Saxons* and the Ecclesiasticks of *Germany* against *Henry*. To put an End to the War hereby occasioned, he resolved to make up Matters with the Pope by giving up the Right of presenting to Benefices; which Cession very much lessened the Power of the Emperors and augmented that of the Popes.

*He gives up
the Right of
presenting to
Benefices.*

LOTHARIO,
1125.

To *Henry* who died without Issue in the Year 1125 succeeded *Lothario* Duke of *Saxony*. This Emperor happily appeased the Troubles in *Italy*; and by being on good Terms with the Pope gained the Affections of the Clergy. He died in the Year 1138.

CONRADE
III. 1138.

After him *Conrade* III. Duke of *Franconia* was raised to the Throne: But *Henry* Duke of *Saxony* and *Bavaria* disliking his Promotion engaged in a War against him.

This

This being ended *Conrade* undertook an Expedition to *His Expedition*
the *Holy Land*: But he was forced to return after losing *to the HOLY*
great Part of his Troops without having done any thing *LAND.*
remarkable. He died in the Year 1152.

Frederick Duke of *Suabia* whom the *Italians* called *FREDERICK*
Barberossa succeeded him. He reduced *Italy* to Obedi- 1152.
ence; and because the *Milanese* revolted again he pu-
nished them severely and razed their City of *Milan*.
This Emperor had a War with the Pope in which
he had the Advantage; but growing weary thereof,
and his Son *Otho* being taken Prisoner by the *Venetians*,
he made Peace with the Pope. Whilst this Peace lasted *He is trampled*
it is reported, but it passes with many for a Fable, that *on by the*
Pope *Alexander III.* set his Foot upon the Emperor's *POPE.*
Neck. However this was, it is certain that all Autho-
rity was in this Reign lost in *Italy*. He made after-
wards a Descent on the *Holy Land* against *Saladin* Sultan
of *Egypt*, who had seized *Jerusalem*; and defeated the
Saracens several Times: But he was drowned in passing
a River there on Horseback in the Year 1189. After his
Death his Son *Frederick* took many Towns in *Syria*:
Yet the Expedition was upon the whole unfortunate;
a Plague breaking out which carried off *Frederick* and
great Part of his Army.

To *Frederick Barberossa* succeeded *Henry VI.* his Son. *HENRY VI.*
This Prince submitted to be crowned kneeling by the *crowned kneel-*
Pope; who being seated in a magnificent Chair as soon *ing by the*
as he had crowned him kicked the Crown from his Head *POPE.*
again, to show his Right of taking away as well as con-
ferring Empire. He died in the Year 1198, just as he
had embarked an Army for the *Holy Land* and was
about to follow it.

In Conformity to the Will of this Prince *Philip* his *PHILLIP,*
Brother took upon himself the Government of the 1198.
Empire, during the Minority of *Frederick Henry's* Son
then only six Years of Age: But the Pope put some
German Princes upon choosing *Otho* Duke of *Saxony*.
By this Election the Empire was miserably divided:
Some joining with *Philip* others with *Otho*. Af-
ter a long War it was agreed that *Otho* should mar-
ry *Philip's* Daughter and succeed to the Empire at the
Death

Death of his Father-in-law. In the Year 1208 *Philip* was assassinated at *Bamberg* by *Otho* of *Wittelsbach* Count *Palatine*.

OTHO IV. Hereupon *Otho* took Possession of the Empire and was crowned at *Rome*: But attempting to reunite to the Empire what the Popes had robbed it of he was excommunicated; and the *German* Princes at the Instigation of the Pope chose *Frederick* Son of *Henry VI.* *Otho* made some Resistance: He was however forced to give up the Empire to *Frederick* in the Year 1212; who was in the Right of his Mother *Constance* likewise King of *Naples*.

FREDERICK
II. 1212.

Frederick after staying a little to settle some Things in *Germany* went to be crowned at *Rome*. In the Year 1228 he made a Descent upon *Palestine* and recovered *Jerusalem* from the *Saracens*. He was several Times excommunicated; because he vigorously opposed the Popes in their Attempts to make themselves absolute in *Italy*. *Italy* being hereupon divided into two Factions; they who sided with the Pope were called *Guelphs*, the Emperor's Party were called *Gibelines*. A long and cruel War ensued in which the Emperor bravely defended his Party: But being excommunicated and deposed by the Pope at the Council of *Lyons* some *German* Princes elected *Henry Landgrave* of *Thuring*; who was in Derision called the Pope's Emperor.

HENRY VII. On the Death of *Henry* in the following Year *William* Count of *Holland* was elected.

WILLIAM. In his Reign nothing was done worth Notice. He was killed in a Battle with the *Frisons* in the Year 1256.

CONRADIN Upon the Death of *Frederick II.* in the Year 1250 *Conrade* his Son left *Germany* to go and take Possession of his hereditary Kingdom of *Naples*: Where he died in the Year 1254. As the Authority of the Emperors in *Italy* had been entirely lost in *Frederick's* Time, the Pope on the Death of *Conrade*, with a View to prevent its Revival, invited *Charles* Duke of *Anjou* to the Crown of *Naples*. This Prince subdued *Naples* and caused *Conradin* the Son of *Conrade* to be beheaded. With him the ancient Race of Dukes of *Suabia* ended.

The

The German Princes being upon the Death of *William Interregnum*. divided, some chose *Richard* Duke of *Cornwall* Son of *John* King of *England*; others made choice of *Alphonso X.* King of *Castile*. *Richard* went as far as the *Rhine* with an Intent to take Possession of the Imperial Dignity; but was not able to accomplish his Design. *Alphonso* never attempted to make his Election good. The Confusion and Disorders, which prevailed in the Empire during the Interregnum that followed, were encreased by the Extinction of three of the most considerable Families, namely the Dukes of *Suabia*, the *Margraves* of *Austria* and the *Landgraves* of *Thuring*. Many Great Disclaimed their Possessions; but the most powerful suc- orders in the ceeded to them. To put an End to the Calamities of Empire. the Time, in which as no Right was acknowledged but that which Force gave, Plunderers and Thieves abounded, most of the Towns on the *Rhine* and some Princes entered into a League in the Year 1255: And the strong Holds of many of these Villains were demolished.

At length *Rodolph* Count *Hapsburg* and Landgrave RODOLPH, of *Alsace*, from whom the present House of *Austria* is 1273. descended, was unanimously chose Emperor in the Year 1273. For the sake of strengthening his Government he married his Daughters to three of the most considerable Princes of the Empire: namely *Lewis* Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, *Albert* Duke of *Saxony* and *Otho* Margrave of *Brandenburg*. *Ottocare* King of *Bohemia* after the Death of *Frederick* Margrave of *Austria*, who was beheaded with *Conradin* at *Naples*, had made himself Master of *Austria*, *Stiria*, *Carinthia* and *Carniola*. *Rodolph* in return deposed him; and invested his Son *Albert* with all his Dominions. He gave to his other Son *Rodolph* the Dutchy of *Suabia*: And thus the Family of *Hapsburg* before inconsiderable became very powerful. He declined going into *Italy* which had been so fatal to his Predecessors, and sold many Cities their Liberties: By which means the Kingdom of *Italy* * being divided

* The Kingdom of ITALY although possessed by the Emperor was always considered as distinct from the Empire; and hence it is that the Person intended for Emperor is before crowned King of the ROMANS.

fell into Decay: But he took great Care to settle the Affairs of *Germany*; and demolished several Castles where Robbers and other Villains had been used to shelter themselves. He also introduced the use of the *German* Language into all publick Acts; which were before wrote in *Latin*.

ADOLPH,
1291.

After the Death of *Rodolph* in the Year 1291 *Albert* his Son endeavoured to get Possession of the Empire; but by the Contrivances of the Elector of *Mentz* *Adolph* Count *Nassau* his Cousin was elected. This Emperor concluded an Alliance with the King of *England*; by which the latter engaged to assist him in recovering the Kingdom of *Arles*, whereof the *French* King had taken Possession during the Troubles in *Germany*. *Albert* of *Austria* marched with an Army to the Assistance of the *French*. Being advanced as far as the *Rhine* the Elector of *Mentz*, who was disappointed in his Expectation of making *Adolph* dependent upon him, prevailed on the other Electors to depose him and choose in his Room *Albert*. A Battle was afterwards in the Year 1298 fought near *Spire*: In which *Adolph* was killed.

*He is deposed
and slain in
the Battle of
SPIRE.*

ALBERT,
1298.

Albert was never beloved because his whole Care was to enrich himself; and he was at last murdered by his Nephew *John* Duke of *Suabia* whose Dominions he unjustly detained. After his Death *Philip* King of *France* was a Candidate for the Imperial Dignity: But the Electors at the Solicitation of the Pope chose *Henry* Count of *Luxemburg*.

HENRY VIII. This Emperor marched with an Army into *Italy* to appease some Troubles and establish his Authority there. His Success was at first such that he had Hopes of accomplishing his Design: But he was poisoned in the Year 1313 by a Monk, whom the *Florentines* had hired for this Purpose.

*He is poisoned
in ITALY.*

LEWIS,
1313.

The Electors now disagreeing some chose *Lewis* Duke of *Bavaria*; Others *Frederick* Duke of *Austria*. The former was crowned at *Aix la Chapelle*; the latter at *Bonn*. These two Rivals carried on a doubtful War for the Space of nine Years; at which Time *Frederick* being made Prisoner *Lewis* was established as Emperor. He afterwards,

wards attempted an Expedition into *Italy* for the Support of the *Gibelines*.

Hereupon the Pope excommunicated him and carried *He is deposed.* Matters so far by his Partisans in *Germany*, that *Lewis* was deposed and *Charles* Margrave of *Moravia* Son of the King of *Bohemia* was chosen. His Authority was however very small till the Death of *Lewis* in the Year 1347. It is proper to remark here, that the preceeding Emperors spent most of their Time in travelling through the Empire and levying Money for their Support: *Lewis* being the first who had his Residence and Court fixed in his own hereditary Dominions, and whose Revenue was entirely drawn from thence.

After the Death of *Lewis* some of the Electors declared *Charles's* Election void and chose *Edward* King of *England*; who thanked them for the Honour but declined the accepting of it. As *Frederick* Margrave of *Misnia* also refused the Imperial Dignity *Gonthier* Count of *Schwartzenburg* was elected: But *Charles* caused him to be poisoned and afterwards established his Authority in the Empire. This Emperor alienated many of the Estates of the Empire; and amongst the rest ceded to *France* the perpetual Vicarship of the King of *Arles*. He moreover sold all that remained to the Empire in *Italy*: And annexed the Dutchy of *Silesia* to his own hereditary Kingdom of *Bohemia*. *CHARLES IV. 1347.* *He alienates the States of the EMPIRE.*

The best thing he did was the publishing of the *Golden Bull*; by which the Election of Emperors was regulated, and the Foundation of Divisions on this Account was as much as possible removed. Such was his Influence upon the Electors, that his Son *Wenceslaus* was during his Life chosen King of the *Romans* and succeeded him in the Empire. *The GOLDEN BULL published.*

Wenceslaus being naturally of very dissolute Manners was so regardless of the Affairs of Government that the Electors deposed him in the Year 1400. This gave him but little Uneasiness; and he enjoyed his own hereditary Kingdom of *Bohemia* many Years after. *WENCESLAUS.*

Upon the Deposition of *Wenceslaus* *Joseph* Margrave of *Moravia* was elected; but he died within a few Months. *JOSEPH.*

FREDERICK. *Frederick Duke of Brunswick* the next Successor was, as he was going to *Frankfort* to be crowned, assassinated by Count *Waldeck* at the Instigation of the Elector of *Mentz*.

ROBERT. After this *Robert Count Palatine* of the *Rhine* was chosen and reigned happily in *Germany*; but he failed in an Expedition into *Italy*. He died in the Year 1410.

SIGISMOND, To him succeeded *Sigismund King* of *Hungary* Brother of *Wenceslaus*. Before he came to the Imperial Dignity he was defeated by the *Turks* near *Nicopolis*. The Rashness however of the *French* his Auxiliaries He puts JOHN was the Cause of this Defeat. In the Year 1393 he caused *John Huss* to be burnt at the Council of *Constance*, contrary to his Promise and the safe Conduct he had granted him. The Followers of *Huss* in Revenge for his Death caused great Disorders in *Germany*: And the Wars of *Sigismund* with these lasted the greatest Part of his Reign.

ALBERT II. *Albert Duke of Austria*, King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia* was upon the Death of *Sigismund* in the Year 1437 elected: But he died within two Years, whilst he was making Preparation for a War against the *Turks*. From this Time the Imperial Crown continued in the House of *Austria*.

FREDERICK III. 1439. *Frederick III. Duke of Austria*, who succeeded his Cousin *Albert*, had a War with *Ladislaus Albert's Son* concerning the Succession to *Austria*. He had also a War with *Matthew Hunniade King* of *Hungary*; in which he shewed a deal of Conduct as well as Courage.

MAXIMILIAN, 1493. *Maximillian* succeeded *Frederick* his Father in the Year 1493; and by his Marriage with *Mary Daughter* of *Charles the Bold* the last Duke of *Burgundy* annexed the *Netherlands* to the Dominions of the House of *Austria*. The Inconstancy of his Temper was the Occasion of his little Success in his Wars with the *Swiss* and *Venetians*. That which of all his Actions redounded most to his Glory was the Abolition of a Custom in *Germany* of determining all Disputes by Force.

Under

Charles King of *Spain* succeeded to the Empire in the Year 1519. In his Reign *Germany* suffered much by a civil War on the Account of Religion. CHARLES V. 1519.

About the Year 1517 *Martin Luther* Professor of *Wittenburg* had entered into a Dispute against the Custom of selling Indulgences by the Pope. The Pope being appealed to *Luther* was condemned and the Practice continued: But he appealed to a general Council and went on to write against the Errors of the Church of *Rome*; and such was his Success that some Princes and *Hans Towns* began to expel the Monks and seize their Estates. In the Year 1521 *Charles* caused *Luther* to be outlawed by the Diet of *Worms*; and endeavoured by Edicts to stop the Progress of his Innovations. The Party however of *Luther* encreased, and the more because the Emperor was at this Time engaged in a War with *France*. In the Year 1529 an Edict was published by the Diet of *Spire*: Against which some Members of the Diet protested. From hence came the Name of Protestant. In the following Year these Members presented to the Emperor at the Diet of *Augsburg* their Confession of Faith; and for their common Security they entered into a defensive League at *Smalkald*. The Reformation began by LUTHER.

This League was renewed in the Year 1535, and strengthened by the Accession of divers Princes and States. As it gave the Emperor much Uneasiness he endeavoured to break it by sowing Discord amongst the Confederates: But his Attempts were vain. It came at last to an open Rupture, and the Protestants took the Field in the Year 1546 with an Army of one hundred Thousand Men; which were under the joint Command of *John Frederick* Elector of *Saxony* and *Philip* Landgrave of *Hesse*. This Campaign was however inglorious, because they neglected to attack the Emperor before he had assembled all his Forces; and the Consequence was that most of the *Hans Towns* were obliged to implore the Emperor's Mercy and furnish him with large Sums. League of SMALKALD, 1530.

In the next Year *Charles* defeated the Protestant Army near *Mulberg*; and having taken the Elector Prisoner condemned him to be beheaded: But he afterwards changed the Sentence to Imprisonment. The Landgrave, who here-

upon entered into a Negotiation with the Emperor, was contrary to all Expectation and the Emperor's Word seized and clapped into Prison. *Frederick* being soon after degraded his Dominions were given to *Maurice* of Saxony. Thus were the Protestants on the Brink of being ruined and having their Religion suppressed: But at length *Maurice*, who had before assisted the Emperor, being exasperated at the Confinement of *Philip* his Father-in-law marched so expeditiously against the Emperor, that he was very near making him Prisoner at *Inspruck*. The French King took the Advantage of this War in Germany to put himself at the Head of an Army; and made himself Master of *Metz*, *Toul* and *Verdun* without any Opposition. By the Mediation of *Ferdinand* King of the Romans the Emperor's Brother a Treaty was soon after concluded at *Passau*, for securing the Protestants till things could be settled by the Diet; and the Landgrave of *Hesse* and the Elector of Saxony were both set at Liberty.

MAURICE
surprises the
Emperor near
INSBRUCK.

Treaty of
PASSAU.

1555:
Diet of AUGS-
BURG.

At the Diet of *Augsburg* in the Year 1555 it was agreed that no Person should be disturbed on the Account of Religion; and that the Protestants should enjoy all the ecclesiastical Benefices of which they were in Possession before the Treaty of *Passau*.

Insurrections
of the Pea-
sants.

In the Beginning of this Reign the Peasants caused great Troubles by their repeated Insurrections in Germany: But they were entirely suppressed in the Year 1525 after a hundred Thousand of them had been at times cut to Pieces. Four Years after this *Solyman* Emperor of the Turks laid Siege to *Vienna*: But he was repulsed with great Loss and the formidable Army he brought with him was forced to retire.

Anabaptists in
WESTPHALIA suppressed.

In the Year 1534 the Anabaptists headed by *John* of *Leyden* a Taylor, and by one named *Knipperdolling*, endeavoured to erect a new Kingdom at *Munster* in *Westphalia*; but being dispersed they received a Reward suitable to their Rashness.

FERDINAND
I.

At length *Charles* resigned the Empire to *Ferdinand* King of Hungary and *Bohemia*. This Prince annexed both these Kingdoms, which came to him by marrying *Anne* Sister of *Lewis* King of Hungary and *Bohemia*, who was

was killed in a Battle with the *Turks* near *Mohatz*, to the *Austrian* Dominions. After reigning peaceably he died in the Year 1564.

The Reign of *Maximillian* his Son and Successor MAXIMILIAN II. would also have been undisturbed, had it not been for *Grumbach* and his Accomplices: Who after murdering 1564. *Melchier Zoebel* Archbishop of *Wurtzburg* had plundered this City and stirred up Commotions in several Places. These being all happily suppressed *Grumbach* was outlawed; and the Elector of *Saxony* who still continued to harbour *Grumbach* was himself made a Prisoner.

Rodolph who in the Year 1576 succeeded his Fa- RODOLPH II. ther had divers Wars with the *Hungarians*: And *Matthias* his Brother gave him much Uneasiness. Having through Impatience to be in Possession of Power left the Court in Disgust, *Rodolph* to satisfy him ceded *Hungary* and *Austria* to him in his Life Time: And he at his Death in the Year 1612 succeeded to the Empire. 1576.

The Disturbances which had long subsisted in the Em- MATTHIAS, pire came towards the End of the Reign of *Matthias* to 1612. an open Rupture: Which lasted thirty Years. These were at first owing to the Catholics: Who as none were included in the Treaty of *Passau* but Catholics and those of the *Augsburg* Confession wanted to exclude the followers of *Calvin*, whose Doctrine was now embraced by the Count *Palatine* the Landgrave of *Hesse* and some others, from the Benefit of this Treaty.

The *Lutherans* who adhered literally to the Confession *Religious Dis-* of *Augsburg* would not acknowledge the Reformed, by *putes come in* which Name *Calvin's* followers were called, to be Mem- *the End to a* bers of their Church; and the Disputes betwixt their *War.* Doctors upon the Points in which they differed came in the End to such a Pitch, that some Protestants, by which Name the *Lutherans* were distinguished, had as great an Aversion to the Reformed as to the Papists. Hereupon the Catholics represented the Reformed to the Protestants, and particularly to the Elector of *Saxony*, as their common Enemy. By this Means they hoped first to ruin the Reformed when abandoned by the Protestants; and afterwards with more Ease the Protestants themselves.

The EVANGELICK
LEAGUE.

In order to prevent this the Reformed entered into a League called the *Evangelick League* for their common Security; and many Protestants joined with them. On the other Hand the Catholicks entered into a League which was called the *Catholick League*; and had for the Head the Elector of *Bavaria* the ancient Rival of their Elector *Palatine*. Such was the Virulence and Animosity which at this Time prevailed in the Empire, that Preparations for War were made on all Sides: But the *Bohemians* complaining that the Emperor had invaded their Privileges took up Arms first at *Prague* in the Year 1618; and after throwing three Lords of the Emperor's Party out of the Castle Windows they made an Irruption into *Austria*. During these Transactions *Matthias* died.

FERDINAND. The *Bohemians* had in the Time of his Life elected
II. 1618. *Ferdinand* his Cousin who succeeded him in the Empire for their King: But pretending he had broke through the Engagements entered into with the States of the Kingdom at his Coronation, they now refused to acknowledge him and offered the Crown to *Frederick* Elector *Palatine*; who without considering the Consequences of so important a Step resolved to accept it.

Electoꝛ PA-
LATINE ac-
cept's the
Crown of
BOHEMIA.

He was in this ill advised: For he ought to have weighed well the natural Inconstancy and Perfidiousness of the *Bohemians*; that *Betlem Gabor* Prince of *Transylvania* was of a most unsteady Temper; that the King of *England* his Father-in-law would not choose to embarrass himself with this Affair; that the *Dutch* would be unwilling to meddle in it; and that the League on which he so much depended was a Body with many Heads, without Resolution, without Vigour. The *French* King amongst others used all his Endeavours to break the League; being apprehensive that if the Reformed were successful they would come to the Assistance of the *Huguenots* in his Kingdom, whom he was at the same Time labouring to suppress. At first *Betlem Gabor* Prince of *Transylvania* gained Ground in *Hungary*; which with the Disposition of the *Austrians* to revolt threw the Emperor's Affairs into a bad Situation; But being re-inforced by Succours from
Maximilian

Maximillian Elector of *Bavaria* he shortly after obtain- Battle of
ed a compleat Victory near *Prague*; and easily reduc- PRAGUE.
ed *Moravia*, *Bohemia* and *Silesia* to Obedience. *Am-*
brose Spinola having also made an Irruption into and ra-
vaged the lower *Palatinate*, the Elector of *Palatine* found The PALATI-
all his Affairs at once ruined and himself abandoned on NATE ravag-
all Sides. The Emperor rewarded the Duke of *Bavaria* ed.
with the upper *Palatinate*; and to the Elector of *Saxony*
who had also assisted him he gave *Lusatia*, on Condition
that it was always to be held as a Fief of the Kingdom
of *Bohemia*.

As the Margrave of *Baden Durlach*, *Christian* Duke The War car-
of *Brunswick*, Count *Mansfield* and other Princes of the ried into the
Electors *Palatine's* Party had still Armies on foot in dif- Empire.
ferent Parts of the Empire, the Emperor's Forces under
the Pretence of causing these Troops to quit the Field
advanced into the Empire. Hereupon the Princes and
States of lower *Saxony* united their Forces, in order
to drive the Enemy from their Frontiers: But *Christian*
IV. King of *Denmark*, who commanded them, was in Battle of
the Year 1626 attacked and defeated by *Tilly* the Em- KONINGS-
peror's General near *Konings-Lutter* in the Dutchy of LUTTER,
Brunswick. The Imperialists having afterwards con- 1626.
quered all the lower *Saxony* the King of *Denmark* was
forced to make Peace. *Ferdinand* was so lifted up
with this Success, that he by an Edict in the Year
1629 ordered every Thing belonging to the Church,
which had been seized by the Protestants since the
Treaty of *Passau*, to be restored to the Catholics.

It being now plainly perceived that the Emperor's De- Alliance of the
sign was to ruin the Protestants, and afterwards to make Protestants at
himself absolute in *Germany*, these concluded an Alliance LEIPSICK.
for their mutual Defence at *Leipsick*: Into which *Gusta-*
vus Adolphus King of *Sweden* afterwards entered. The
Motives inducing him so to do were the Danger of losing
Part of his own Dominions in case the Emperor should
once establish himself in his Conquests in *Lower Saxony*;
the urgent Intreaties of many Princes and States of
Germany; together with the Desire he had of being
revenged upon the Emperor for sending Succours to the
Poles whilst he was at War with them in *Prussia*. He
was

was also persuaded to enter into this Alliance by *France* and *Holland*: Who looked with jealous Eyes upon the Aggrandisement of the House of *Austria*.

GUSTAVUS ADOLPHUS enters GER-
MANY, 1630. Having entered *Germany* with an Army in the Year 1630 he drove the *Imperialists* from *Pomerania* and the neighbouring Provinces. In the following Year, after *Tilly* had cruelly sacked *Magdeburg* and seemed bent upon

Battle of
LEIPSICK.

ruining *Saxony*, he joined his Forces to those of the Elector and defeated *Tilly* in the memorable Battle of *Leipsick*. By this one Defeat the Emperor was robbed of the Fruit of those Conquests he had been ten Years in making. *Gustavus* marched afterwards to the *Rhine*; where his Progress and Actions were almost incredible: But as the Elector of *Saxony* was not so successful against the Emperor's hereditary Dominions, the Emperor had Time to bring into the Field a great Army under the Command of *Wallstein*. Being informed thereof *Gustavus* decamped from *Naumburg*, and marching towards *Wallstein* attacked him in the Year 1632 near *Lutzen*. In this Battle, which was a very bloody one, the illustrious *Gustavus* although victorious lost his Life.

Death of
GUSTAVUS
in the Battle
of LUTZEN.

Battle of
NORDLIN-
GUEN, 1634.

After his Death the War was continued with some Success under the Command of *Oxenstiern* Chancellor of *Sweden*: But being entirely defeated in the Year 1634 at the Battle of *Nordlinguen* in *Suabia*, which he unnecessarily engaged in, the Elector of *Saxony* dreading the Desolation of his Country made a separate Peace at *Prague* with the Emperor.

Separate Peace
with SAX-
ONY.

This Peace which was very disagreeable to the Protestants gave the Emperor great Hopes of being able to drive the *Swedes* out of *Germany*: Their Affairs however were so recovered by the Courage and Conduct of their Generals that the War was carried into the Emperor's hereditary Dominions. At length, the Emperor being tired of the War; *France* being disturbed at home; *Holland* having made a separate Peace with *Spain*; the *Swedes* being apprehensive that the *Germans* who made a great Part of the Army would soon be weary of ravaging their own Country, or that all the Advantages of their late Conquests might be lost by a single Battle; a Peace was concluded with *Sweden* at

Ojna-

Osnabrug and with *France* at *Munster* in *Westphalia* in the Year 1648.

By these Treaties the *Swedes* got Part of *Pomerania*, *Treaties of Bremen* and *Wismar*, and five Millions of Crowns for *WESTPHALIA* the Payment of their Troops; *France* kept Possession of *LIA* and *Brisac*, *Philipsburg* and *Alsace*; the Authority of the *OSNABRUG*, *German Princes* and the Protestant Religion were very 1648. much strengthened; and Limits were set to the Emperor's Power in *Germany*.

Ferdinand who died during this War in the Year *FERDINAND* 1637 was succeeded by *Ferdinand* his Son; at whose *III.* 1637. Death in the Year 1657 *Leopold* his Son was elected Emperor.

After the Treaty of *Westphalia* *Germany* enjoyed *LEOPOLD*, Peace till the Year 1659, at which Time the Emperor 1657. and the Elector of *Brandenburg* attacked the *Swedes* in *Pomerania* whilst they were at War with *Denmark*; but a Treaty of Treaty was in the Year 1660 concluded at *Oliva* near *OLIVA*, 1660. *Dantzick*, betwixt the Emperor, the Kings of *Sweden*, *Denmark* and *Poland*, and the Elector of *Brandenburg*.

In the Year 1663 a War was kindled between the *War with* Emperor and the *Turks*: In which the latter notwithstanding they had taken *Neubausel* a strong Town of *the TURKS*, 1663. upper *Hungary* were several Times beat, and especially in the Year 1664 near *St. Godards* in lower *Hungary*. It is probable that if the Emperor had pushed this Success vigorously the *Turks* would have been driven quite out of *Hungary*; because these were at the same Time engaged with the *Persians* and *Venetians*, and with some *Bashaws* who had revolted: But being apprehensive of an Attack from *France* he was glad to clap up a Peace with them.

Notwithstanding the Alliance entered into by the Em- *War with* peror the Year before with the *French* King, by which *FRANCE*, he engaged if the latter attacked any Member of the 1672. Triple Alliance not to meddle therein; yet on the breaking out of a War with *Holland* in the Year 1672 he caused some Troops to march towards the *Rhine*. The Pretence for this was, that his Dignity obliged him to take Care that *Germany* was no way injured by the War amongst neighbouring Powers; and the King of *Prussia*

The PALATINATE
sacked.

Prussia had moreover complained of the ravaging of his Dutchy of *Cleves* by some *French* Troops. The King of *France* immediately sent a numerous Army into *Germany*: But instead of forcing the Emperor into a Neutrality, the Ravages committed by it in the *Palatinate* induced the States of the Empire to declare War against *France*, and the *Suedes* came afterwards into it. By the Treaty of *Nimeguen* in the Year 1679, which put an End to this War, *France* exchanged *Phillipsburg* for *Friburg* in the *Brisgaw*: And all that had been taken from *Sweden* was restored.

Treaty of NIMEGUEN,
1679.

The EMPIRE
sustains great
Losses.

The *Empire* enjoyed but a short Time the Blessings of Peace; for the *French* King soon attempted to make himself Master of some Places; which as he pretended belonged to *Alsace* and were consequently ceded to him by the Treaty of *Munster*. Not content with making himself Master of *Strasburg*, the ten Imperial Towns in *Alsace*, and some Lordships which had always been esteemed Fiefs of the Empire, he seized several considerable Places belonging to the Electors *Palatine* and *Triers* that lay convenient for him. The Emperor saw plainly enough that *Germany* had in about three Years since the Peace lost more than during the War; yet having a War in *Hungary* upon his Hands which required all his Forces he was forced to conclude a Truce with *France* for twenty Years. The *French*, who were hereby left in Possession of all they had taken, immediately set about the fortifying of *Hunniguen*, *Fort-Lewis*, *Landau*, *Sar-Lewis*, *Mont-Royal* and some other Places.

Truce with
FRANCE.

War with the
TURKS,
1683.

The Truce for *twenty Years* concluded in the Year 1664 with the *Turks* being almost expired, the *Turks* after having a long Time espoused secretly the Cause of *Tekeli* and the Malecontents of *Hungary* declared openly for these; and refused to treat with the Emperor's Ambassadors at *Constantinople* for a Prolongation thereof unless *Raab* and *Comorra* were both ceded to them. Hostilities being commenced in the Year 1683 the Imperial Army laid Siege to *Neubausel*; but after losing many Men before the Place they were obliged upon the coming up of the *Turkish* Army to retire. The *Turks* cut many

many Regiments to Pieces in their Retreat; and having pursued them to the Gates of *Vienna* the Consternation was so great in this Capital, that the Emperor fled with the Empress and his Court to *Passau* leaving General *Stahrenburg* to defend it. The Ottoman Army, in which the *Grand Vizier* and *Cham* of *Tartary* were personally present, immediately invested the *Siege of* Place and carried on the Siege with great Vigour: VIENNA.

But when it was reduced to the last Extremity, *John Sobieski* King of *Poland*, with the Electors of *Saxony* and *Bavaria*, and the Duke of *Lorrain* fell upon the *Turks* so unexpectedly and vigorously, that after great Slaughter they fled leaving their Baggage, Artillery and Ammunition behind them. The King of *Poland* pursued the *Turks*; but attacking them at too great a Disadvantage his Army was defeated, and he was very near losing his own Life in the Action. This Loss was however soon repaired by a Victory obtained by the *Ger-* Battle of mans near *Barcan*: Which was followed with the tak- BARCAN. ing of *Gran*.

In the next Year they made themselves Masters of *Waitzen* and *Vicegrad*, and had laid Siege to *Buda*; IMPERIA- but they were obliged on Account of the Failure of Pro- LISTS, 1684. vision to retreat with some Loss. In the Campaign of the Year 1685 they took *Neuhausel* by Storm; and 1685. Count *Tekeli* having been arrested by the *Turks* his Troops were so discouraged, that after a slight Resistance they gave up *Coskau*, *Eperie* and some other Places. The *Turks* soon saw their Mistake and set *Tekeli* at Liberty; the Towns however which had been given up by his Troops could not be thereby recovered.

In the next Year the *Germans* after a very bloody 1686. Siege took the important Town of *Buda* by Storm: And the Victory gained in the following Year near 1687. *Mohatz* so weakened the *Turks*, that they could not prevent the Submission of the Principality of *Transilvania* to the Emperor. In the Year 1688 the Em- 1688. peror's Forces took *Stul-weissenburg* and *Belgrade*. In the Year 1689 they took *Sigeth*. In the next Year 1689. they made themselves Masters of *Canischa*. The ill 1690. Suc-

Success however of the *Christians* under General *Heusler* in *Transilvania*, and under Colonel *Strasser* in *Albania*, gave the *Turks* an Opportunity of recovering *Belgrad*: and besieging *Esseck*: But they were forced to raise this Siege. In the Year 1691 Prince *Lewis* of *Baden* defeated the *Turks* near *Salankemen*. In the next Year *Great-Waradin* surrendered to the *Germans*. *Guila* did the same in the Year 1695: Yet this Year was fatal to the *Germans*; a Body of seven or eight Thousand of them commanded by *Veterani* being attacked by the *Turks* near *Lugos* and entirely cut to Pieces. The General himself a brave Officer was killed. In an Engagement next Year near *Ollasch* the Presence of the Sultan *Achmet* so animated the *Turks*, that they fought desperately and the Loss was great on both Sides. The *Turks* finding this Success did not stop the Progress of the *Christians* resolved to assemble all their Forces, and make in the Year 1697 one grand Effort. Part of their Troops had already passed the *Teifs*, and the rest were advancing to pass and join them: But Prince *Eugene* of *Savoy* attacked them so briskly, that above thirty Thousand were put to the Sword or drowned in the *Teifs*, and their Baggage, Artillery and Provisions all fell into the Hands of the *Germans*. This Defeat in which the Sultan lost the choicest of his Troops obliged him to sue for Peace; which was in the Year 1699 concluded by the Mediation of the King of *England* and the *States General* at *Carlowitz*. By this Treaty the Emperor was to keep Possession of *Transilvania*, *Gran*, *Neuhausel*, *Buda*, *Stul-weissenburg*, *Sigeth*, *Canischa*, *Esseck*, *Peterwaradin*, *Guila*, *Great-waradin* and some other Places. *Lippa*, *Lugos*, *Carranseba*, *Little-Canischa*, *Chonad*, *Sablia*, *Botsa* and *Beitzkereck* were after the Demolition of their Fortifications to be restored to the *Turks*; and the Navigation of the three Rivers *Maros*, *Teifs* and *Save* was to be common to both Empires. It was also agreed that neither of the two Empires should give Succour or Protection to the Rebels of the other.

We shall now return back, to give some Account of *War with* the War which was commenced against the Emperor ^{FRANCE.} by *France* in the Year 1668. As *Charles Elector Palatine* 1688. died in the Year 1685 without Issue, the Dutcheſs of *Orleans* his Sister, pretending that the Renunciation at her Marriage was only in Favour of the Descendants of *Charles Lewis* her Father, demanded to be put into Poſſeſſion of the Principality of *Simmeren* and that Part of the County of *Sponheim* which belonged to her Family: Becauſe theſe were both Fiefs* Feminine. She was prevented from appealing in this Caſe to the Pope by the following Incident. Upon the Death of *Maximilian Henry* Elector of *Cologne* the *French* King had cauſed Cardinal *Furſtenburg* to be choſen: The Pope however was ſo far from approving his Election, that he declared it void and confirmed that of Prince *Joſeph Clement* of *Bavaria*. *Lewis XIV.* diſſatisfied with this Partiality of the Pope to the Houſe of *Austria* reſuſed to ſubmit to his Deciſion; and reſolved to ſupport by Force of Arms both the Cardinal's Right to the Archbiſhoprick of *Cologne*, and the Claim of the Dutcheſs of *Orleans* upon the *Palatinate*. It was nevertheleſs thought by ſome Politicians, that *France* jealous of the Progreſs of the Emperor againſt the *Turks* was glad of this Pretence to break with him. However this was, the *French* in the Year 1688 ſurprized *Kayſer-Slautern*, 1688. *Spire* and *Worms*; laid Siege to *Philipsburg*; made themſelves Maſters of *Mentz*, *Frankendal*, *Manheim*, *Heidelberg* and *Hailbron*; and meeting with no Oppoſition over-ran *Suabia* and *Franconia*. Hereupon the Electors of *Bavaria* and *Saxony* united their Forces in order to ſtop the Progreſs of the *French*; and after retaking *Hailbron* forced them to quit both *Franconia* and *Suabia*. In the Year 1689 they were defeated 1689. by the Elector of *Brandenburg* near *Nuys*. He afterwards took that Town, *Kayſerſwert*, *Bonn* and *Rhinberg*; and obliged the *French* entirely to evacuate the Electorate of *Cologne*. The Electors of *Bavaria* and

* *Theſe Fiefs are ſo called to which a Woman may on Failure of Iſſue Male ſucceed.*

1690.

Saxony assisted by the Duke of *Lorrain* re-took *Mentz*, which the *French* had fortified, after a long and vigorous Resistance: And *Spire*, *Worms*, *Heidelberg*, *Frankendal* and *Manheim* were after being set on fire abandoned by them. In the Year 1690 *Joseph* the Emperor's eldest Son was chosen King of the *Romans*.

Treaty of
RYSWICK,
1697.

The War was continued against *France* without any remarkable Event till the Year 1697; when all Parties being weary thereof a Treaty was by the Mediation of *Sweden* concluded at *Ryswick*. By this Treaty *France* kept all that had been taken in *Alsace*; the Dutchies of *Lorrain* and *Barr*, *Longway* and *Sarlouis* excepted, were restored to the Duke of *Lorrain*; *Philipsburg*, *Fort Kehl*, *Homburg* and *Bitsch*, but the Fortifications of the two last were first demolished, to the Empire; *Old Brisack* and *Friburg* to the House of *Austria*; his Capital and *Fort St. Martin* to the Elector of *Triers*; *Dinant* to the Elector of *Cologne*; *Germerstein* and the County of *Veldentz* to the Elector *Palatine*; the Dutchy of *Deux-Ponts* to the King of *Sweden*; and the County of *Montbeliard* with all in the *Franche Compte* thereto belonging to the House of *Wurtemberg*: And *France* engaged moreover to dismantle *Mont-royal*, *Newstat*, *New-Brisack* and the Forts near *Straßburg* and *Hunningen*.

Disturbances
on the Account
of Religion.

France took Care to have it inserted, that Religion in the Places restored should remain as it was at the Time of signing this Treaty. As great Changes had been made in Religion while these were in her Power, which were contrary to the Decree of the Year 1624 and by no Means conformable to the Treaty of *Westphalia*, which had been always considered as a fundamental Law of the Empire, this Article disgusted many Princes and States: And the *German* Minister who negociated the Treaty was accused of having consented thereto with a View of being recompensed by a Cardinal's Hat. However this was, it was the Source of Discords in the Diets of the Empire and exposed the *Palatinate* to great Disorders: Which ended in disturbing the Protestants in the Exercise of their Religion and keeping them out of some of their Churches. A Deputation was hereupon sent from the *Protestant* Princes

to

to the Elector *Palatine*, to insist that as *France* herself had by committing Hostilities in the *Palatinate* broke the Treaty of *Ryswick* the Empire was not bound to observe this Article thereof; but that for the Time to come what had been settled by the Treaty of *Westphalia* ought to be adhered to.

The King of *Prussia* was more earnest than the rest, ^{An Agreement} and resolved to make Reprizals on the *Catholicks* in his ^{in Favour of} Dominions: But it was at last agreed in the Year ^{the PROTESTANTS.} 1705, that every Person in the *Palatinate* arrived at Years of Discretion should have Liberty to profess either of the three Religions; that the *Protestants* should not be obliged to observe the Holidays of the *Catholicks*; that pulling off their Hats without kneeling before the Host should be sufficient; that the Custom of using the Churches in common which had been lately introduced should be discontinued; that the Revenues of the Church should till the Diet had settled this Matter be divided according to the Establishment in the Year 1685 into seven equal Parts, of which the *Catholicks* were to have two the *Reformed* five; and that the *Lutherans* should enjoy what belonged to them in the Year 1624. These last, whose Number had vastly encreased since that Time, were not satisfied with their Share and desired the *Reformed* to give them some of their larger Part; but the Answer of the *Reformed* was that they had nothing to spare. The Claim of the *Dutchess* of *Orleans* upon the *Palatinate* being at length referred to the Pope, he adjudged that the whole thereof should go to the Elector *Palatine*; but he ordered three hundred thousand *Roman* Crowns to be paid to the *Dutchess*.

In the Year 1701 a War was commenced betwixt *War with* the *Emperor*, *England* and *Holland* on one Part, and *FRANCE*, *France* on the other, concerning the Succession to the *Spanish* Monarchy. The Circles of the *Upper-Rhine*, *Franconia* and *Suabia* being most exposed at first entered into a defensive League, and the Duke of *Bavaria* would have joined therein; but as he had already acknowledged the Duke of *Anjou* for King of *Spain* they would not admit him. These three Circles afterwards came

into the Alliance against *France*; and their Example being followed by the rest of the Circles it was resolved to levy an Army of one hundred and twenty thousand Men. The Dukes of *Bavaria* and *Wolfenbuttel* declared themselves neuter. The former had been before appointed by the Duke of *Anjou* his Nephew Governor of the *Spanish Netherlands*. The latter in Consequence of a Pension from *France* raised some Troops; but these were compelled by the Troops of *Hanover* to serve in the Army of the Empire.

Dukes of SAVOY and MANTUA side with FRANCE.

Thundering Declarations were published by the Emperor against the Dukes of *Savoy* and *Mantua*, who sided with *France*; these were not however generally approved of by the States of the *Empire*, because the Colleges had not been consulted concerning them.

The Electors of COLOGN and BAVARIA declare for FRANCE.

The Elector of *Cologne* having received into some Towns *French* Garrisons under the Name of Troops of the Circle of *Burgundy*, the *Dutch* Forces commanded by Prince *Nassau-Usingen* who went to dislodge them soon made themselves Masters of *Keiserswert*, *Rhineburg* and *Bonn*, and forced the *French* to retire from *Liege*. The Elector of *Bavaria* notwithstanding the Neutrality he had declared for did early in the Year 1702 seize *Ulm*, *Biberack* and *Memmingen*. After this he detached twelve thousand Men towards the *Rhine*, which being advanced as far as *Waldshut* a Body of *French* Troops passed the *Rhine* near *Hunningen* and took *Newburg*. Prince *Lewis* of *Baden* had an Engagement with these near *Fridlinguen*, in which he lost three thousand Men. Being reinforced he resolved to attack them a second Time; in the mean Time however the *French* re-passed the *Rhine* complaining loudly that the *Bavarians* had not joined them. Notwithstanding all the Elector of *Bavaria*'s Endeavours to prevent it *Landau* fell into the Hands of the *Germans*: But the *French* before the End of this Campaign obliged the Duke of *Lorraine* to leave his Country; overran the Dutchy of *Fuliers*; were in Possession of all the Country bordering upon the *Moselle*; and made themselves Masters of *Triers* and *Traerbach*.

Battle of FRIDLINGUEN.

1702.

In

In the Beginning of the Year 1703 the *French* took ^{1703.}
Fort Kehl. The *Bavarians* defeated a Body of *Austrian* ^{Success of the}
Troops under Count *Schlick*, and they had the better in ^{BAVARIANS}
an Engagement with a Detachment of the Army of the
Empire in which the Prince of *Anspach* was slain. They
afterwards took *Ratisbon*, although this had been declared
neuter on the Account of its being the Place appointed
for the Meeting of the Diet. The Commissary of the
Emperor saved himself by Flight; the other Members
of the Diet were detained and obliged to admit the
Bavarian Minister at their Deliberations. The *Bava-*
rians next invaded the *Tirolese* and by a forced March
surprized *Inspruck*; but the Peasants took up Arms and
obliged them to quit this Country as hastily as they
had entred it. They nevertheless kept *Kufstein*; and
after being joined by some *French* Succours which came
from *Alsace* through the *Black Forrest* under Marshal
Villars they defeated the Army of the Empire com-
manded by Count *Stirum*, Prince *Lewis* of *Baden* and the
Duke of *Marlborough* near *Hockstet*. The first of these
Generals died of his Wounds within eight Hours. They
afterwards took *Augsburg* which was laid under heavy
Contributions; and the *Germans* lost about the same
Time *Brisac* and *Landau*. Besides all this ill Suc-
cess the Malecontents of *Hungary* were to the last ^{Troubles in}
Degree irritated, and inspired with a most implacable ^{HUNGARY.}
Hatred against the *Emperor* and the House of *Austria*:
Because *Ragotzki* their Chief had the Year before been
seized and put to Death.

In the following Campaign the *Empire* was extri- ^{1704.}
cated from the great Difficulties it was in. *England* ^{The EMPIRE,}
and *Holland*, moved by the earnest Sollicitations of ^{is succoured by}
the Elector *Palatine* and the Duke of *Marlborough*, ^{the MARI-}
came to a Resolution of sending a powerful Succour ^{TIME}
into *Germany*; which was so pressed that nothing else ^{POWERS.}
could save it. It is said Prince *Lewis* of *Baden* was
the first that demonstrated the Necessity of this Step,
contrary to the customary Jealousy of Generals, who
had rather lose the Towns and Provinces of the Prince
they serve than share their Command with a Partner.
The utmost Care was taken to keep this Design Secret;

and great Preparations were made upon the *Moselle* as if the Intention was to attack *France* on that Side. Nay the Troops of *England* and *Holland* had filed off towards the *Rhine* and many of them were advanced thither, before the Enemy had the least Suspicion of their March. From thence they threw themselves into *Suabia*, wherein to the Elector of *Bavaria* after having made himself Master of *Passau* was come to receive a Reinforcement of *French* Troops sent through the *Black Forrest*. As soon as he was apprized of the Approach of the allied Forces, he sent a Detachment of his best Troops to take Post at *Schel'enberg* near *Donawert*; and the Place was as well fortified as the Time would permit. Prince *Lewis* of *Baden* and the Duke of *Marlborough* attacked this Post, and the Action was sharp; but the Allies being victorious it was abandoned by the *Bavarians*, and the Bridge being broken down a great Number of them were drowned in the *Danube*. They also abandoned *Donawert*; and the Allies having passed the *Danube* put the whole Country to Fire and Sword even to the Gates of *Munich*. It was now thought the Elector of *Bavaria* had a Mind to save his Country by changing Sides; but it was a Mistake: For having retired to *Augsburg* he resolved, whatever might happen, to wait there the coming of the Succours which Count *Tallard* had Orders to bring him. The Duke of *Marlborough* made Propositions to him by Count *Wratislaw*, and a Negotiation was carried on till the Arrival of Count *Tallard*: Upon which he openly declared that he would persist in his Attachment to *France*. Prince *Eugene* being now come up with a considerable Body of Troops the Duke of *Marlborough* had an Interview with him; and they joined their Forces.

Battle of
HOCKSTET.

Soon after the Allies came up with the *French* and *Bavarians* near *Hockstet*; where a Battle fatal to *France* but much more so to *Bavaria* was fought upon the thirteenth of *August*. The Army of the *French* and *Bavarians* was so weakened by the Loss of more than twenty thousand Men, that they immediately abandoned most of their Conquests in *Bavaria* and *Suabia*: And the Elector fled into the *Netherlands* leaving the Government of his

his Country to the Electress. This Princess in *Novem-Treaty with*
ber concluded a Treaty with the King of the Romans, *the Electress*
 who was then before *Landau*: By which it was agreed *of BAVARIA.*
 that *Kuffstein*, *Passau* and all the strong Places in *Bava-*
ria should be delivered up to his *Imperial Majesty*; that
 the new Fortifications at *Munich* should be demolished;
 that the Regency of the Electorate should be in the
 Hands of the Emperor; that the Electress might con-
 tinue as long as she pleased at *Munich*; and that the Re-
 venue of the Bailiwick of *Munich* should be assigned her
 for her Support. After the Battle of *Hockstet* the Army
 of the Allies was divided. One Body of this under Ge-
 neral *Thungen* retook *Ulm* from the *Bavarians*: Whilst
 another commanded by the King of the Romans took
Landau. *Triers* *Traerbach* and some other Places were
 also retaken before this Campaign was finished.

The Emperor's Arms were not so successful on the *The Affairs of*
 Side of *Hungary*. Instead thereof the Troops of *the Emperor*
 the Malecontents ravaged the Frontiers of *Mora-go on ill in*
via, and all *Transilvania* and *Austria*. The Suburbs of *HUNGARY.*
Vienna were not spared by them: Nay they entered
 even into the Emperor's Park and set one of his Pleasure-
 Houses on Fire. *England* and *Holland* employed their
 good Offices to accommodate Matters betwixt the Em-
 peror and the Male-contents; and the Elector *Palatine*
 then at *Vienna* took a great deal of Pains in it: But their
 Demands were so wide of what the Emperor was willing
 to grant that nothing could be done. They demanded
 amongst other Things to proceed to a new Election; to
 have all their ancient Privileges confirmed and especially
 those which had been granted by their King *Andrew II.*
 in his Declaration in the Year 1222; and to have all
Jesuits expelled the Kingdom. These Demands being
 refused Hostilities were recommenced; and the Male-
 contents were worsted in two Battles fought towards the
 End of the Campaign: But they suffered most in that *Battle of*
 of *Tirnaw.* *TIRNAW.*

The Emperor *Leopold* dying in *May* 1705 he was *JOSEPH,*
 succeeded by *Joseph* his eldest Son: Of whose Reign the *1705.*
Germans had conceived great Hopes. It having been agreed
 to begin the Campaign on the *Moselle*, and to endeavour the

recovery of *Lorrain* and that Way to penetrate into the *French* Provinces, the Duke of *Marlborough* took the Field early; but this Design miscarried because he was not joined in Time by Prince *Lewis* of *Baden*. His not coming up sooner was by some thought to be owing to the Impracticability of the Thing; by others to the Prince's Jealousy of the Duke. However this was, the Citadel of *Liege* being in Danger from the Enemy the Duke of *Marlborough* returned thither with his Army. The *French* soon made themselves Masters of *Triers*: Their Lines were however afterwards forced by the Imperial Army; and this Action was followed with the retaking of *Druſenheim* and *Hagenau*. The new Emperor endeavoured an Accommodation with the Malecontents of *Hungary*; but as they would abate nothing of their Demands the War was continued. The Imperial General *Heister* gained a compleat Victory over *Caroli* one of their Chiefs near *Buda*; and *Herbeville* was very successful against *Ragotzki* another of them in *Transilvania*.

Battle of
BUDA.

Revolt in
BAVARIA.

Towards the End of this Year the Peasants in *Bavaria*, exasperated by the rigorous Treatment of the Imperial Commissaries, dug up those Arms which at the Time of disarming the Country had been buried, and assembled themselves. As the *Austrians* bestirred themselves some thousands of the *Bavarians* were slain; and divers of the Ringleaders being executed the Confusion this Insurrection might have occasioned was prevented.

1706.

The Electors
of COLOGN
and BAVARIA
put under the
Bann of the
Empire.

On the first of *May* 1706 the Electors of *Colagn* and *Bavaria* were put under the Ban of the Empire by the Emperor at *Vienna* with the usual Ceremonies; the Decrees of their Proscription, by which they were both deprived of their Electoral Titles, bore Date *April* 29th. The Imperialists opened this Campaign with the Siege of *Fort Lewis*; but the *French* raised this Siege and again made themselves Masters of *Druſenheim* and *Hagenau*. The latter Place although not well fortified cost them above two Thousand Men; but this Loss was well recompensed by the taking of all the Artillery of the Empire, which was of great Service in driving the Imperialists back over the *Rhine*. Many Princes murmured thereat; and complained that the lodging of the Artillery in so weak a Place looked as if it was
done

done with a Design of delivering it up to the *French*. The Conduct of Prince *Lewis of Baden*, Count *Friesen*, and the Grand Master of the Artillery were moreover by some violently suspected; but the Prince dying soon after and the Affairs of the Empire being worse managed after his Death, they who had blamed him were most forward to justify his Conduct and lament the Loss of him.

The Invasion of *Saxony* by the King of *Sweden* in Sep- SAXONY invaded by the King of SWEDEN. *tember* the same Year alarmed the Empire. Before he quitted *Germany* he concluded a Treaty with the Emperor: By which the latter agreed that all Churches should be restored to the Protestants; that all other Grievances on the Account of Religion which these had suffered contrary to the Treaty of *Westphalia* should be redressed; and that they should have Liberty to build six new Churches. The Emperor promised also, that whenever it was properly required he would confirm to the House of *Holstein Gottorp* the Right of *Primogeniture* *; pursuant to an Agreement between this House and the Bishop of *Lubeck*. The King of *Sweden* on his Part engaged to march through *Silesia* into *Poland*, which he did in the following Spring, without injuring this Province. It was in this March that notwithstanding all the Intreaties used to soften him the King of *Sweden* caused the unhappy *Patkul* to be broke upon the Wheel and quartered.

The Affairs of the Emperor on the *Rhine* succeeded in the next Year very ill. The *French* having forced the Lines of the *Imperialists* drove the small Garrisons which were left in the Towns before them, and raised large Contributions. They afterwards penetrated so far into *Suabia* and *Wirtemberg*, that it was feared they would throw themselves into *Bavaria*; and by joining the Inhabitants thereof once more bring the Empire into the same Difficulties it was in before the Battle of *Hockstet*. This was without Doubt their Intention; but they were forced to return home to the Relief of *Toulon* which was attacked by the Allies. Thus an Enterprize, which

1707.

* This is a Right by which in many Houses the eldest Son succeeds to the whole Dominions, the younger Sons having only a fixed Pension.

was by the *French* thought very rash, did by the Diversion it caused save the Empire. Upon the Death of Prince *Louis of Baden* the Margrave of *Barreut* had been appointed to command the Imperial Army; but having very ill Success the Command was given to the Elector of *Hanover*. This Change of Generals however signified nothing; for as the greater Part of the Emperor's Troops were employed in *Hungary* nothing considerable could be done on the *Rhine*. *Ragotzki* was by his Party proclaimed Prince of *Transylvania*; and the Throne of *Hungary* was declared by him to be vacant. The Emperor in vain flattered himself with the Hopes of an Accommodation with the Malecontents; for when he would in the beginning of the next Year have assembled a Diet at *Presburg* *Ragotzki* forbid the *Hungarians* on pain of Death to be present at it.

RAGOTZKI.
proclaimed
in TRANSIL-
VANIA.

1708.
Quarrel with
the Pope.

The Emperor was moreover the next year embarrassed with another Affair. Having observed that Pope *Clement XI.* was extremely partial to *France* he seized *Comaschio* under a Pretence that it was a Fief of the Empire. On the other Hand the Pope insisting that it belonged to the State of the Church resolved to do himself Justice by Force of Arms; and expected the Assistance of *France* and the Catholick Cantons of *Switzerland*. Being thereof disappointed he raised Troops in the Papal State; and to defray the Expence made use of the Treasure of Pope *Sixtus Quintus*, which is kept in the Castle of *St. Angelo* and never used except on the most urgent Necessities of the Church: But when he came to consider that the Expence of prosecuting this War could only ruin himself he made a Treaty with the Emperor. By this he agreed to disband his Troops; to acknowledge *Charles* the Emperor's Brother as King of *Spain*; to bestow upon him as King of *Spain* the Investiture of the Kingdom of *Naples*; to grant the Imperial Troops a free Passage to this Kingdom; to furnish fifteen Thousand *Germans* with Winter Quarters in the State of the Church: and to pay ten Thousand Crowns. In this Year several memorable Events happened. The Duke of *Mantua* was put under the Ban of the Empire; but his Death which happened soon after

Duke of
MANTUA
put under the
Ban of the
Empire.

delivered him from the Uneasiness this must have given him. *Ragotzki* was beat by General *Heister* at *Trenschin*. *Charles* King of *Spain* was married to the Princess *Elizabeth Christina* of *Wolfenbuttel*, who after abjuring *Lutheranism* before the Archbishop of *Mentz* was conducted to *Vienna* and from thence to *Barcelona*, where her Spouse impatiently expected her. The King of *Portugal*, who had deserted the Interest of *Philip* and espoused that of *Charles*, was married to the Archduchess *Marianne* the Emperor's Sister. And it was in the same Year agreed, that the King of *Bohemia* should for the future have at all Times a Voice in the Diet of the Empire as an Elector, whereas he had before enjoyed this Privilege only at the Election of an Emperor.

The Differences which happened about this Time be- *Disturbance*
twixt the Senate and Burgeses of *Hamburg* threw the at HAM-
whole City into such Confusion, that a strong Garrison BURG.
was put into it by the Directors of the Circle; and
Commissaries were appointed to determine the Matters
in Dispute. The Insurrection on this Occasion was
quelled by punishing some of the Ringleaders, and by con-
demning *Krumholtz* a *Lutheran* Priest who had by his Ser-
mons greatly promoted it to perpetual Imprisonment.

The Emperor renewed his Endeavours in the Year
1709 to appease the Troubles in *Hungary*; but these were
rendered fruitless by *Ragotzki*. The Imperial Army was
assembled upon the *Rhine* under the Elector of *Hanover*;
and this Prince had a mind to attack the *French* who
were in the Neighbourhood of *Lauterburg*: But the
Detachment he sent under General *Merci* to make a *Defeat of Ge-*
Diversions on the Side of *Friburg* being defeated, the neral MERCI.
Army which had advanced as far as *Muckensturm* was
after continuing some Time there separated, and the
Troops went into Winter Quarters.

In the Year 1710 the Emperor promised to re-inforce
the Army on the upper *Rhine* with eleven Thousand *The Elector of*
Men; and to contribute for his own Share a Million of HANOVER
Crowns to the military Chest. Notwithstanding these quits his Com-
Promises the Elector of *Hanover* found the Army to mand.
little in a Condition to act, that he quitted the Command
under the Pretence that the Disorders in lower Germany
required

LOWER
SAXONY
greatly a-
larmed.

required his Presence in his own Dominions. Baron *Krassaw* having marched a large Body of *Swedish* Troops from *Poland* through *Prussia* into *Pomerania*, it was feared he would either penetrate into *Saxony* or return into *Poland*, either of which as these Troops carried neither Provisions nor Money must have greatly injured the Country they passed through. Hereupon the neighbouring States addressed the Emperor to use his Endeavours, that a Neutrality might be obtained for those Provinces in *Germany* which belonged to the Powers at War with *Sweden*. As it was moreover likely that the King of *Poland* would send an Army against Baron *Krassaw* the War must have spread itself in the neighbouring Provinces; which would have obliged some Princes to recall their Troops in the Pay of *England* and *Holland* from *Flanders* and *Italy* for the security of their own Country. A Treaty of Neutrality being in spite of the Protest of *Sweden* concluded it was resolved to assemble an Army to maintain it, and some Regiments of the Emperor and the Elector *Palatine* began to march for *Silesia*: But no Army was assembled, and some other Resolutions which had cost much Pains to form came in the End to nothing.

1711.
HUNGARY
reduced to O-
bedience.
Death of
JOSEPH.

The Malecontents of *Hungary* had been worsted in divers Actions and their Affairs were in a very bad State; the Death however of the Emperor which happened on the 17th of *April* 1711 deprived him of the Satisfaction of reducing them entirely to Obedience. Soon after the Imperial Troops obliged a great Number of them to lay down their Arms near *Caschau*. As the Malecontents did now in the general accept the Amnesty offered *Ragotzki* and some few, who would listen to no Terms of Accommodation, retired into *Poland*. The Diet for the Election of a new Emperor being met on the 20th of *August*, the Electors of *Mentz*, *Triers* and *Palatine* assisted in Person; the other Electors by their Ministers: But the Ministers of *Bavaria* and *Cologne* were refused Admittance. The Abbot of *Albany* Nephew of the Pope demanded also Admittance, and to take Place as Nuncio Extraordinary to the Electors; but this was refused,

At

At length the Electors on the 12th of *October* gave ^{CHARLES} their Voices in favour of *Charles* the late Emperor's VI. 1711. Brother: But there was some Difficulty in settling the Capitulation to be sworn to by him at his Coronation; for he expressed a Dislike to those of his Father *Leopold* and Brother *Joseph*, and declared that he would rather renounce the Imperial Crown than accept it on such Conditions.

Every thing being settled to his Satisfaction he parted ^{He is crowned} from *Catalonia* to go into *Germany* and receive the Imperial Dignity; and being arrived at *Frankfort* on the ^{at FRANK-} 19th of *December* was crowned with the usual Solemnities upon the 22d. It being probable that *France* would endeavour to make some Advantage of the Interregnum in *Germany*, Prince *Eugene* caused the Troops in the Lines of *Etlingen* to take an Oath of Fidelity; and earnestly pressed the Princes of the Empire to send their Quotas to the Army. Having afterwards posted the Army in the Camp of *Muckensturm* he left it there under the Command of the Duke of *Wirtemberg*. By these wise Precautions *France* was prevented from carrying some Menaces into Execution while the Empire was without Head. The Circles of the Empire soon after renewed their Treaties with *England* and *Holland*; and these two Powers entered into fresh Engagements mutually to assist each other, and that they would not lay down their Arms till Satisfaction was obtained for all the Allies. They likewise obliged themselves to employ all their Forces for procuring a real Barrier to the Empire, which was to be *Alsace*, the *Sundgaw*, the *Brisgaw* and the three Bishopricks of *Metz*, *Toul* and *Verdun*; and never to make a separate Peace.

It was expected that the Congress which was held in ^{1712.} the following Year at *Utrecht* would have given Peace ^{Congress of} to *Europe*; for although some Troubles had broke out ^{UTRECHT.} in the Northern Parts of *Germany*, there was no Reason to doubt that if the Western and Southern were once at Peace the Northern Parts would soon be so: But the Emperor who was by no Means satisfied with the Terms *Great-Britain* had procured for him refused to sign the Treaty, and chose rather than quit his Pretensions to bear

*Demand of
the Emperor
and Empire.*

bear alone the whole Burden of the War. The Demand made in his and the Empires Name consisted of the four following Articles. I. That *France* should restore to the Empire and the House of *Austria* all that had been ceded to that Crown by the Treaties of *Westphalia*, *Nimeguen*, *Ryswick* or otherwise; and particularly that the Duke of *Lorrain* should be put into Possession of his whole Country, and be for ever free from Homage and Vassalage to *France*. II. That *Spain* and all in *Italy*, in the *Netherlands* and every where else that belonged to the *Spanish* Monarchy in the Time of *Charles II.* should be ceded to the Emperor. III. That a full Satisfaction should be made to all the Allies. IV. That all the Damage done to the Friends, States, Vassals or Subjects of the Empire should be repaired.

*The War is
continued by
the Emperor
and Empire,
1712.*

Whilst the Negotiations were carrying on at *Utrecht* the Diet, which seemed determined to carry on the War vigorously unless these Demands were complied with, came to a Resolution of furnishing a Million of Florins to the Military Chest; but these were never advanced. The Emperor desirous of reenforcing the Army upon the *Rhine* considerably pressed the States to send their Contingents of Troops early and compleat; and as Prince *Eugene* was then in the *Netherlands* the Duke of *Wirtemberg*, who commanded upon the *Rhine*, passed this River near *Philipsburg*. At his Approach the *French* retired into the Lines of *Lauterburg*, where it was very difficult to attack them; and the Imperial Army was moreover weakened by the detaching of some Regiments to reenforce the Army in *Flanders*.

*An Attempt to
surprise the
FRENCH in
their Lines.*

The Imperialists being advanced near the *French* Army they made an Attempt so surprize the *French* in their Lines: But some Regiments of Infantry taking some of their Friends for the Enemy without waiting for the Generals Orders fired upon them. This unhappy Mistake not only alarmed the *French*, but threw the *German* Infantry into such Confusion that neither the Orders of the Duke nor the Efforts of Cavalry were sufficient to rally them again. Hereupon the *Germans* repassed the

the *Rhine*; and as the *French* continued in their Lines nothing more was done in this Campaign. Some Difficulties arose at this Time concerning the Command of the Army of the Empire: Which had been usually divided betwixt Generals of both Religions; and notwithstanding the Duke of *Wirtemberg* then General of the Empire was a Catholick the Protestants insisted that this should be no Precedent for the future. About the same Time the Emperor, to prevent the Disputes which might on his dying without Issue arise concerning the Succession, declared the Archduchess's eldest Daughter of the late Emperor his Heir; but having afterwards Children this Disposition did not take Effect.

After going to *Presburg*, where he received the Ho-^{CHARLES is}mage of the *Hungarians* and was crowned on the 22d of ^{crowned at}
May, the Emperor applied himself diligently to the ^{PRESBURG.} carrying on of the War against *France*; in which it is probable he would have been successful if he had been better supported by the States of the Empire.

These were so far from sending the Supplies of ^{1713.}
Troops and Money they had given him Reason to ex-^{The Troops ex-}pect, that most of them did not send their ordinary ^{pected from}
Quotas: Insomuch that when Prince *Eugene* would in ^{CATALONIA} the beginning of the next Campaign have taken the ^{detained.} Field he found nothing ready. The Troops expected from *Catalonia* would in some Measure have made good these Deficiencies, if they had not been so long detained by the *English* Vessels which ought to have brought them. It was said that they were thus retarded on Purpose to put the Emperor under a Necessity of making a Peace with *France* on her own Terms. *France* made good Advantage of this Conjunction; for her Troops having took *Landau* passed the *Rhine*; and after ^{Success of the} making themselves Masters of *Friburg* fixed their ^{FRENCH.} Winter Quarters in its Neighbourhood. The Marshal *Villars* their General had several Interviews with Prince *Eugene*, who from Time to Time gave an Account of their Conferences to the Diet; and he constantly represented that the continuing of the War with Vigour was the only Way to obtain an advantageous Peace.

The

*Preliminaries
of RAD-
STADT.*

All the Efforts however of the *Empire* not being sufficient to stop the Progress of the *French* these two Generals were appointed Plenipotentiaries: And being met in the next Spring at *Radstadt* they settled the Preliminaries of a Treaty; of which the Treaties of *Westphalia*, *Nimeguen* and *Ryswick* were to be the Basis.

*Treaty of
BADEN.*

The Emperor acquainted the Diet with these Preliminaries; and desired that such Princes of the Empire as had any Thing to settle with *France* would either send Plenipotentiaries to *Baden*, which was the Place appointed for finishing the great Work of Peace, or empower him to settle for them. It was hereupon resolved in the Diet that the Emperor should have full Power to treat for the Empire: But the Protestants declared, that the fourth Article of the Treaty of *Ryswick* concerning Religion ought to be so explained in the new Treaty as not to derogate from the Treaty of *Westphalia*. This Declaration was opposed by the Catholics and but little attended to by the Emperor; so that notwithstanding the united Efforts of all the Protestant Powers the desired Explication was not inserted in the Treaty of *Baden*.

*War with the
TURKS,
1715.*

In the Year 1715 Advice was received from the Imperial Minister at *Constantinople* that great Preparations for War were making by the *Turks*. A *Turkish* Aga being in the same Year sent to *Vienna* Prince *Eugene* in an Audience he gave him declared plainly, that unless the Differences betwixt the Sultan and the Republick of *Venice* were amicably determined his Imperial Majesty would be under a Necessity of joining the *Venetians*. The *Turks*, who were intent upon conquering the *Morea* and unwilling that the Emperor should intermeddle, had sent this Aga to *Vienna* on Purpose to prevent a Rupture: But the Emperor finding they wanted only to amuse him prepared for War. Some other Propositions joined with Threatnings were made by the *Vizier* to the Imperial Minister: Yet notwithstanding these a defensive League was signed with the *Venetians* against the *Turks*, and Troops were sent to the Frontiers of *Hungary*.

Shortly

Shortly after the *Turks* were driven by General *Lef-Turks*
fenholtz from *Mistravitz* upon the *Save*: Which being driven from
 looked upon as a Declaration of War the *Turkish* Army *MISTRAVIT-*
 advanced into the Emperor's Dominions between *Peter-*
waradin and *Carlowitz*. Prince *Eugene* came up with

this on the fifth of *July*; and after a most bloody
 Action, in which the Grand Vizier and ten *Bashaws* *Battle of*
 were slain, the Christians took 170 Pieces of Cannon, *PETERWA-*
 the military Chest and all the Baggage of the *Turks*. *RADIN.*

The victorious Army having afterwards besieged *Temes-*
swaer, of which the Capitulation was signed the 13th
 of *October*, Prince *Eugene* repaired the Fortifications of
 this Place and then put his Troops into Winter Quarters.
 They did not however continue quite inactive; for
 Count *Stenville* Governor of *Transilvania* had his Quar-
 ters in the Capital of this Province beat up by a Party
 of the famous *Mauro Cordato* *Hospodar* of *Walachia*, and
 several other Skirmishes happened: But no great Ad-
 vantage was gained. This Year was remarkable for
 the Birth of an Archduke: But the Joy thereby occasi-
 oned was very short; for he died within a few Months.

The Operations of the next Campaign commenced 1717.
 with the Siege of *Belgrade*; which was invested on the *Battle of*
 20th of *June*. The *Turks* attempted the Relief of this *BELGRADE.*
 Place by attacking the Imperial Army on the 15th of
August; but being after an Engagement of five Hours
 again defeated, they lost 131 Pieces of Cannon, 37 Mor-
 tars, 52 Colours and nine Horse-tails; and the Town
 capitulated two Days after.

After this signal Victory the Sultan made Propo- 1718.
 sals of Peace at the Court of *Vienna*; and a Congress *Treaty of*
 being next Year held at *Passarowitz* a Treaty was *PASSARO-*
 by the Mediation of *England* and *Holland* concluded *WITZ.*
 on the following Terms: That the River *Aluta* from
 its coming out of *Transilvania* to its falling into the
Danube should be on that Side the Boundary of the
 two Empires; that *Temeswaer*, *Belgrade* and all the
 other Towns and Countries conquered in this War
 should be ceded to the Emperor; that Prisoners on both
 Sides should be delivered up; that *Ragotzki*, *Berezini*
 and the other Refugees should not be suffered to stay in
Turkey;

Turkey; and that this Treaty should last twenty-five Years. Although this Treaty was so disadvantageous to the *Turks*, and the Emperor's being at War with *Spain* soon offered a favourable Opportunity of breaking it; yet it was observed by them.

CHARLES
changes SAR-
DINIA for
SICILY.

The Accession of *Spain* to the Treaty of *Quadruple Alliance* served only to pave the Way for Peace; for some Things remained to be settled before a good Understanding could be established betwixt the Emperor and *Spain*. It was agreed by the other contracting Parties, that the King of *Sicily* should have the Kingdom of *Sardinia* and give up that of *Sicily* to the Emperor; but it was insisted upon by *Philip*, that *Sicily* should in case the Emperor died without Issue revert to *Spain*. The Emperor refused to consent thereto; and the Form of the Investiture of *Don Carlos* to the Dutchies of *Parma*, *Placentia* and *Tuscany*, was another Thing which at that Time could not be agreed upon. *France* likewise being reconciled to *Spain* grew cool to the Interest of the Emperor; but those two Courts being again embroiled by the Death of the Duke of *Orleans* and the sending back of the Infanta, a Treaty was in the Year 1725 concluded at *Vienna* betwixt the Emperor and *Spain*.

Treaty of
VIENNA,
1725.

By this Treaty the Emperor made a Cession of the whole *Spanish* Monarchy except the *Netherlands*, the *Milanese*, *Naples* and *Sicily* to *Philip*; who in Return besides the large Subsidies he engaged to pay the Emperor granted considerable Advantages to the *Ostend* Company. As this Company, at first set on Foot by some *Englishmen* who preferred their private Interest to that of their Country and afterwards countenanced by a Charter from the Emperor, was already got into a flourishing Condition, it gave great Uneasiness to *Holland*, *France* and *Great Britain* who all united in endeavouring to suppress it. *Philip* depending upon the Emperor's Assistance, which he thought himself sufficiently entitled to by the Subsidy he had already paid, undertook soon after the Siege of *Gibraltar*: But not being able to carry this Place he laid hold of the Opportunity of the signing of the Preliminaries of *Paris* to raise the Siege. The

Siege of GIB-
RALTAR.

The Emperor, who was unwilling to break with *Great-Britain*, foreseeing that the Peace must be general or that all *Europe* would be involved in a War agreed at last to suspend the Charter of the *Ostend* Company. An entire Suppression of this Company was desired; but his

OSTEND

Company suf-

pendended. Imperial Majesty would by no Means consent to deprive his Subjects for ever of a Commerce they had found so profitable. Every thing seemed now to be settled, and nothing but the Meeting of the Congress at *Soissons* to be wanted; but *Philip*, fearing the six thousand *Swiss* Troops who were to be put into *Parma*, *Placentia* and *Tuscany* would not be sufficient to secure the Succession of these Dutchies to *Don Carlos*, desired that the six Thousand Troops might be *Spanish*. This was consented to by the Allies of the Treaty of *Hanover*; but the Emperor insisted that it would be a Departure from the Treaty of *Quadruple Alliance*. The Allies of the Treaty of *Hanover* did afterwards oblige themselves by the Treaty of *Seville* to assist the King of *Spain* in introducing *Don Carlos* with six Thousand *Spanish* Troops into *Italy*; but the Emperor taking Advantage of the Delay in doing this sent Troops into *Italy*; by which those of *Spain* were for some Time kept out of the Dutchy of *Parma*.

Charles who was in Possession of the Empire, the Kingdoms of *Hungary*, *Bohemia* and *Naples*, and had not given over all Thoughts of the *Spanish* Monarchy, the Titles of which he still retained, appointed by a perpetual and irrevocable Decree, that if he left no Male Issue the *Austrian* Succession should pass entire to the Archdutchesses his Daughters in the first Place; to the Archdutchesses his Neices in the second Place; next to the Archdutchesses his Sisters; and that it should forever after go entire to the next right Heir whether Male or Female. The better to effectuate this Decree, which was called the *Pragmatic Sanction*, the two Archdutchesses his Neices were obliged, before their respective Marriages with the Prince Royal of *Poland* and the electoral Prince of *Bavaria* both afterwards Electors, to renounce their Pretensions to the *Austrian* Succession with all the Oaths that mistrustful Policy could suggest. This

The PRAGMA-
TIC SAN-
TION.

Disposition was applauded by some Powers; who thought it of vast Consequence to the Tranquility of *Europe* to have the Possessions of the House of *Austria* remain undivided, that the Power of this House might be always a Ballance against that of the House of *Bourbon*: But it was apprehended by others and by some Princes of the Empire, that thereby was laid the Foundation of a very formidable House, which might in Time entirely destroy the Liberties of the Empire and of all *Europe*. Amongst other Inconveniencies it was observed, that an Heiress of this House would by marrying into another Family always annex the Dominions of that Family to the *Austrian* Dominions; and as nothing thus annexed could be ever after separated again, the Dominions of all the Families, which the *Austrian* Heiresses might from Time to Time marry into, would in the End be swallowed up by the House of *Austria*. The *Pragmatick Sanction* was however confirmed by the Empire, the Emperor having first declared that he did not thereby mean to prejudice the Right of any third Person; and *Spain* engaged to guaranty it by the Treaty of *Vienna*. The same was afterwards done by *Great Britain* and *Holland*, for the sake of obtaining the Emperor's Consent that *Spanish* Troops should be introduced instead of *Swiss* into *Italy*: Yet the Emperor as long as possible retarded the Introduction of *Don Carlos* into *Italy*; and notwithstanding the repeated Sollicitations of *Great Britain* would not consent thereto, until he perceived that *Spain* having lost all Patience was determined to break with him.

War on Account of the
POLISH Election.

Sometime before the Death of *Augustus* King of *Poland* this Prince, who was quite dissatisfied with the *Pragmatick Sanction*, grew cool to the Court of *Vienna* and sent Ministers both to *Paris* and *Munich*; but the Business they went about was never made publick. The Court of *Vienna* perceived plainly enough the good Understanding betwixt the three Courts, and took it for granted that the common Interest of the Courts of *Saxony* and *Bavaria* had united them against the *Pragmatick Sanction*; which *France* had all along refused to guaranty. The *Poles* on the other Hand, suspecting that the Design of *Augustus* was to make the Crown

Crown of *Poland* hereditary in his Family, opposed him in all the Diets which he in the latter Part of his Reign assembled; and formally addressed the Emperor and the *Czarina* to protect their Liberties. The Emperor pleased with this Opportunity of shewing his Resentment to *Augustus* marched a body of Troops into *Silesia*; and the Empress of *Russia* had an Army ready to march to the Assistance of the *Poles*. The Crown of *Poland* becoming vacant at this Juncture the young Elector of *Saxony*, being disposed to re-establish the ancient Harmony with the Court of *Vienna*, came into the Emperor's Scheme as to the *Austrian* Succession and broke off all Negotiations with *France*: Upon which it was resolved by the Court of *Vienna* to support the Election of this Prince to the *Polish* Throne. *Stanislaus* who had been once in Possession thereof was again elected by one Party: But another Party countenanced by a *Russian* Army chose the Elector of *Saxony* Son of their deceased King. The Emperor relying upon the Assistance of his Allies carried it in this Affair with a very remarkable Animosity to *France*: But these Allies did not think proper to join with him in the War that ensued. The *Dutch* told him plainly before the Commencement thereof that they would not, and endeavoured by their good Offices to prevent it: But these were rendered useless by the Hopes which the *British* Ministry gave the Emperor of bringing in the united Provinces. He was in this deceived; for they concluded a Neutrality with *France* for *Flanders* which was religiously observed, and *Great-Britain* did not chuse to engage without the *Dutch* in a War against both *France* and *Spain*. In the Empire the King of *Prussia* would supply only his Quota; the Elector of *Bavaria* continued Neuter and put himself into a Posture of Defence to prevent his being forced into the War; and the Elector of *Palatine* excused himself from giving any Assistance, because as he said his Country had suffered sufficiently by the Neighbourhood of the two Armies. As to the King of *Sardinia* he engaged against the Emperor; and contributed very much by his personal Valour to the Loss of the *Milanese*. Almost all in *Italy* was in this War lost by the Em-

Preliminaries peror : But by the Preliminaries signed at *Vienna* in Oc-
of VIENNA, tober 1735 the *Mantuan* and *Milaneſe* were reſtored to
 1735. him, except two Cantons which were reſerved for the
 King of *Sardinia*.

War with the Charles was no ſooner diſengaged from this War than
TURKS. he entered into another which coſt him very dear. The
Czarina having complained at *Conſtantinople* of ſome
 Breaches of Treaty by the *Tartars* the Emperor at
 firſt offered his Mediation : But he ſoon declared, that
 unleſs the *Turks* gave Satisfaction immediately to this
 Princeſs he ſhould be obliged to aſſiſt her with all his
 Forces. The *Turks* took great Pains to prevent the
 Emperor's engaging in this Quarrel ; nay they went ſo
 far as to tell him, that if he was obliged by Treaty to
 furniſh Troops to *Ruſſia* this might be done without
 coming to a Rupture with them. They moreover re-
 preſented that although he was in Alliance with the
Czarina he was no leſs ſo with them : But the ſame
 bad Council which had led *Charles* into a War on Ac-
 count of the Succeſſion to *Poland* did, notwithstanding the
 Endeavours of the Powers well affected to him to prevent
 it, hurry him into this againſt the *Turks*. The Impe-
 rial Miniſtry ſeeing that *France* had not diſarmed thought
 it convenient to keep up their Forces : And as *Italy* had
 been ravaged by numerous Armies for three Years ſuc-
 ceſſively, and *Bohemia* and moſt of the hereditary Pro-
 vinces were exhausted by the Subſidies they had furniſh-
 ed, they imagined that a Rupture with the *Turks* would
 put it into their Power to ſuſſiſt their Troops in an En-
 emy's Country. They had moreover Hopes that their
 Conqueſts on the *Turks* would make good the Loſs of
Naples and *Sicily* : Which had been ceded to *Don Carlos*.
 The Event did not answer their Expectation ; for their
 Troops which took the Field in very good Condition
 were by Fatigue, Sickneſs and Loſſes in Skirmiſhes, in
 a great meaſure deſtroyed. The Generals were blamed
 and changed ; yet the *Turks* maintained their Superiority :
 And *Belgrade* which they afterwards beſieged being re-
 duced to the laſt Extremity the *Imperialiſts* were forced
 to make a Peace. The Negotiators were called to an
 Account for concluding this Treaty, which was indeed
 very

very disadvantageous; but as the ill Success of the Imperialists had made it necessary they were obliged to submit thereto. *France* was during this War faithful to her Engagements with the Emperor; and had by her good Offices a great Share in bringing about the Peace.

The War which broke out betwixt *Spain* and Great-^{CHARLES}
Britain put the latter upon renewing the ancient System; ^{joins with}
according to which the House of *Austria* and its Allies ^{GREAT-BRI-}
were always ready to unite against that of *Bourbon*. The ^{TAIN against}
British Ministry amused the Emperor with the Hopes of ^{SPAIN.}
conquering *Naples*, and with a View to this broke the
Neutrality that the King of the two *Sicilies* had declared
for during the War with *Spain*; but the Death of the ^{His Death,}
Emperor which happened on the 20th of *October* 1740 1704.
entirely changed the Face of Affairs.

The Archduchess his eldest Daughter and according ^{His Daughter}
to the *Pragmatick Sanction* universal Heiress of the *Au-* ^{is attacked on}
strian Succession, who had married the Duke of *Lorraine* ^{all Sides.}
now become Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, found herself im-
mediately attacked on all Sides. The King of *Prussia*
entered *Silesia* with a large Army to recover a part
thereof, which as he said had been unjustly taken from
his Ancestors; the Elector of *Bavaria* and King of
Spain disputed her right to the whole *Austrian* Succession,
and insisted that their just Claims could not be set
aside by the *Pragmatic Sanction*; and it was resolved in
the electoral College to suspend the Vote of *Bohemia*.
The Archduchess in vain endeavoured to surmount these
Difficulties; and such was the Confusion in *Germany* that
the Election of an Emperor was for some Time deferred.

The Inhabitants of *Germany* are a brave and warlike ^{Manners of the}
People, nor is there any Country in *Europe* where if ^{GERMANS.}
Money be not wanting such numerous Armies of Horse
as well as Foot can be raised. The *Germans* are not
only good Troops in a Battle; but they can also en-
dure well the Fatigue and other Inconveniencies of
War. The Custom of letting out Troops for Hire does
not any where prevail so much as in this Nation.
The *Germans* are fond of Trade and dextrous in all han-
dicraft Employments. They are generally of an open
undesigning Disposition; and value themselves much

upon their Faithfulness. They are not prone to Sedition; but on the contrary do most willingly submit to the Form of Government they have been accustomed to.

Situation and Germany is bounded on the East by *Poland* and *Hungary*; on the South by *Italy*; on the West by *France*
Commodities of and *Holland*; and on the North by the *Ocean* and *Baltick*. This Country which is of large Extent is full of
 GERMANY. Towns; and it is in the general fruitful and well stocked with Cattle of all Sorts. It abounds with Mines of Silver, Copper, Tin, Lead, Iron and Quicksilver; has many Salt Springs; and is well watered with fine navigable Rivers; as the *Danube*, the *Rhine*, the *Elb*, the *Wefer*, the *Oder*, the *Main*, the *Moselle*, the *Drave*, the *Inn*, the *Saltz*, the *Lech*, the *Necker* and some others. Its principal Commodities are Iron and all Sorts of Iron Instruments, Lead, Quicksilver, Wine, Corn, Wool, divers Sort of Linnen and Woolen Cloths, Horses and Sheep: So that if the Inhabitants would either apply themselves to the Manufacturing of those Goods which are imported by Foreigners, or be content with their own Manufactures, the Exports from *Germany* would vastly exceed the Imports; and as it is so well stocked with Silver Mines it must necessarily grow rich.

Of the GER- The Titles which at present distinguish the *German*
 MAN *Princes*. Princes were at first so far from being hereditary, that the Person honoured with one of them was not sure of enjoying it until his Death. Duke is derived from the *Latin* Word *Dux* which signifies a Conductor or Leader; and the *Germans*, to shew that it was at first the Office of a Duke to lead their Troops to Battle, gave him the Name of *Hertzog* that is a Leader of Armies. Sovereigns had formerly no fixed Residence but spent most of their Time in passing from one Province to another, to hear the Appeals of their Subjects from the Provincial Judges. In these Tours they were accompanied and assisted with the Advice of some discreet Persons, who were called Counts from *Comites* Companions. As it was however impossible for a Prince whose Dominions were extensive to visit them often, and dangerous to leave large Provinces entirely in the Power of Judges, *Graves* a *German* Word signifying aged Persons were appointed to govern them,

T A B L E

OF THE

D I E T of the E M P I R E.

The E M P E R O R. (a)

The I M P E R I A L C O M M I S S A R Y.

E L E C T O R S.

E L E C T O R S.

PALATINE. SAXONY. BOHEMIA. MENTZ. TRIERS. COLOGN. BAVARIA. BRANDENBURG. HANOVER.

Bench of Ecclesiastical Princes.

Bench of Secular Princes.

Archduke of Austria.
Archbishop of Salzburg.
Duke of Burgundy.
Grand Master of the Teutonic Order.
Bishops of Bamberg.

{ Wurtzburg. A

{ Worms.

{ Eichstadt.

{ Spire.

{ Constance.

{ Augsburg.

{ Hildesheim.

{ Paderborn.

{ Freisingen.

{ Ratibon.

{ Passau.

{ Trent.

{ Brixen. A

{ Basil.

{ Liege.

{ Osnabrug. C

{ Munster.

{ Lubeck.

{ Straßburg. (c)

{ Fulde.

{ Kempten.

{ Elwangen. C

{ Murbach.

{ Luderen.

{ Grand Prior of Heiderheim.

{ Abbot of Bergtollsgaden.

{ Provost of Weiffenburg. (d)

{ Prum. (e)

{ Stavlo.

{ Corvey.

{ Suabia. A

{ Prelates of the Rhine

Osnabrug.
Lubeck.

A cross Bench.

Count
PAPENHEIM.

*who collects the
Votes of the
Diet.*

DIRECTORIAL TABLE.

Duke of
The K. of Prussia for

The Elect. Palatine for

The K. of Gr. Brit. for
The Duke of

The Elect. Palatine for

The D. of Saxe-Gotha for

The Duke of Saxe—

The Duke of Saxe—

The Duke of Saxe—

The Margrave of

The Margrave of

The Duke of Brunswick—

The K. of Gr. Brit. for

The King of Prussia for

The K. of Gr. Brit. for

The Duke of

The King of Sweden for

The Landgrave of

The Margrave of

The Margrave of

The Margrave of

The D. of Mecklenburg for

The King of Sweden for

The King of Prussia for

The Duke of

The K. of Denmark for

The Duke of

The Duke of

The Duke of Bavaria for

The Prince of

The Principality of

The Duke of Mecklenburg for the Principality of Swerin.

The King of Prussia for the Principality of Camin.

The Duke of Mecklenburg-Strelitz for Ratzburg.

The King of Sweden for the Principality of Hirschfield.

The Duke of Lorraine for the Marquisate of Nomeni.

Brandenburg-Bareuth.

_____ Anspach.

_____ Brunswic-Wolfenbittel.

_____ Hanover.

_____ Grubenhagen.

_____ Verden.

_____ Halberstadt.

_____ Pomerania Ulterior.

_____ Citerior.

_____ Mecklenburg-Swerin.

_____ Gustrow.

Bavaria.

Magdeburg.

{ Lauteren.

{ Simmeren.

{ Neuburg.

Bremen.

Deux-Pont.

{ Weldents.

{ Lautrecht.

{ Altenburg.

{ Coburg.

Weimar.

Gotha.

Eisenach.

Bareuth.

Anspach.

Wolfenbittel.

{ Zell.

{ Grubenhagen.

{ Calenberg.

Halberstadt.

Verden.

Wurtenburg.

Hesse-Cassel.

Hesse-Darmstadt.

Baden-Baden.

Baden-Durlach.

Baden-Hochberg.

{ Swerin County.

{ Gustrow Dutchy

Pomerania Citerior

Pomerania Ulterior.

Saxe-Lawenburg.

Gluckstadt.

Holstein-Gottorp.

Savoy.

Leuchtenberg.

Anhalt.

Henneburg. (b)

The Duke of Mecklenburg for the Principality of Swerin.

The King of Prussia for the Principality of Camin.

The Duke of Mecklenburg-Strelitz for Ratzburg.

The King of Sweden for the Principality of Hirschfield.

The Duke of Lorraine for the Marquisate of Nomeni.

Brandenburg-Bareuth.

_____ Anspach.

_____ Brunswic-Wolfenbittel.

_____ Hanover.

_____ Grubenhagen.

_____ Verden.

_____ Halberstadt.

_____ Pomerania Ulterior.

_____ Citerior.

_____ Mecklenburg-Swerin.

_____ Gustrow.

Benches of IMPERIAL TOWNS.

Towns on the Rhine.

Towns in Suabia, &c.

Cologn.
Aix-la-Chapelle.
Lubeck.
Worms.
Spire.
Francfort.
Wetzlar.
Gelhausen.
Dormont.
Friedberg.

Ratibon.
Augsburg.
Nurenburg.
Ulm.
Memmingen.
Kaufbeuren.
Eßlingen.
Revelingen.
Nordlingen.
Dunkelfspiel.
Biberac.
Alen.
Bopfingen.
Gingen.
Rottenburg.
Hall in Suabia.
Rotweil.
Uberlingen.

Pfulendorff.
Weil.
Hailbron.
Buchorn.
Wangen.
Gemund.
Lindau.
Ravensburg.
Winheim.
Wempfen.
Offenburg.
Zell.
Buchaw.
Leutkirch.
Sweinfort.
Kempten.
Weiffenburg.
Gegenbach.

(c) The Bishop of Straßburg has a Voice in the Diet on the Account of his Possessions in Suabia.

(d) Annexed to the Bishop of Spire.

Annexed to the Archbishop of Triers.

(a) The Emperor's Throne is always empty except he is personally present.

(b) This Principality being divided amongst the Branches of the House of Saxé in the Year 1660, it was resolved, That the Duke of Saxe-Naumberg, with the other Co-heirs, namely, the Dukes of Saxe-Weimar, Saxe-Eisenach and Saxe-Gotha should by Turns have a Seat in the Diet for it.

them. Some of these who governed whole Provinces were called Landgraves; others who governed Frontier Parts were called Margraves; others to whom the Charge of important Places were committed were called Burgraves; and there were some who took their Names from the Places they presided over, as Rhinegrave from governing upon the *Rhine*. Counts were also frequently appointed to Governments; but being by their Attendance on the Prince prevented from discharging their Duty as Governors personally, they were allowed to send Deputies who were called Viscounts. The long Continuance of Governments in the same Families, together with the Inactivity and declining Power of some of *Charlemain's* Descendants, gave many Governors an Opportunity to shake off the Dominion of their Masters; so that in process of Time *Germany* was divided into a Multitude of Sovereignities. As the Emperors have never been able to regain this lost Power, the *German* Princes both ecclesiastical and secular, although they have as Vassals of the Empire some Dependence upon the Emperor, are by no Means to be considered as Subjects; for they have all the Prerogatives of Sovereign Princes, such as to make Laws, coin Money, raise Forces, make Peace and War; and they have an absolute Power over the Lives of their Subjects.

Of these Princes is composed the *Germanick* Body the *Of the GER-* Head of which is called Emperor of the *Romans*; for he *MANICK BO-* still retains this Title, although the Sovereignty of *Rome* *EDY.* which was by *Otho I.* annexed to that of *Germany* has been for a long Time ceded to the Pope. The supreme Power in *Germany* is in the Diet: Which is composed of the Emperor or in his Absence of his Commissary, and of the three Colleges of the Empire. The first of these is the electoral College; the second is the College of Princes; the third is the College of Imperial Towns. The Members of these Colleges and their Rank may be easiest known by the Table of the Diet hereto annexed: In which A. signifies alternately or that some Families have Precedence by turns; C. Concurrence or the Families which dispute for Precedence. Although the Emperor is by the Constitution of *Germany* Sovereign only in his

own hereditary Dominions, it has yet been always observed that Diets have been more or less influenced by him as he has been more or less powerful by his own Dominions. The Power and Privileges of the States of the Empire, except so far as these were settled by the *Golden Bull*, formerly depended entirely upon Custom and Tradition; but by the Treaty of *Westphalia* they were clearly and precisely determined.

Division of the Empire.

The German Empire is divided into ten Circles; but as that of *Burgundy* has never been properly a Circle, and was only taken into the Number by the Emperor *Maximillian* for the sake of drawing the other Circles in to defend it when attacked by any foreign Power, their Number is in Reality no more than Nine. Every Circle has one or more Directors; whose Province it is to maintain the Tranquility of that Circle in particular, and to take Care that nothing be done contrary to the Interest of the Empire in general. If any German State invades the Territories of a neighbouring State, or disturbs the Publick Peace, the other States of the same Circle unite in making War against this, untill it submits to the Decrees of the Imperial Chamber or Aulick Council: Both which Tribunals equally claim Jurisdiction over the Members of the Empire. The former is sometimes called the Chamber of *Spire*; because after it had been many Times removed it was at last fixed at *Spire* by *Charles V.* In the late Wars between *France* and *Germany* it was removed to *Wetzlar*, and has been since continued there. The *Aulick Council* was at first instituted to take Cognisance of those Affairs only which concerned the Subjects of the Emperor's hereditary Dominions; but it has by Degrees meddled much in the Affairs of the Empire contrary to the Inclination of the German Princes.

Effects of the GERMANICK Constitution.

Germany when the different States thereof are united will be always formidable to its Neighbours: But by its Constitution, which is neither Monarchical nor Republican, it is vastly liable to Divisions. As many of the Princes of the Empire were powerful as well as independent they were often spirited up by the Popes against the Emperors, so that at last having enough on their Hands

to maintain their Authority in *Germany* the latter were forced to give up *Italy*. The Kingdom of *Arles* was also lost for the same Reason. We have no Account that any of the ancient Emperors attempted to make themselves absolute. The *Spaniards*, or as others say *Nicholas Perrenot*, were the first who put *Charles V.* upon this ambitious Project. The Electors had as much Reason to exclude *Charles* as *Francis* of *France*; it being evident that an elective Kingdom ought never to choose a Prince whose own hereditary Dominions are very considerable: For such a Prince will either make the Interest of his Elective give way to that of his Hereditary Dominions, and employ the Strength of the former to make the latter more powerful; or which is still worse he will endeavour to make himself Master of the elective Kingdom and annex it to his hereditary Dominions. Both these Inconveniencies *Germany* felt under *Charles*, who never regarded the Interest of the Empire further than it was subservient to the aggrandizing of his own Family; and at last under the Pretence of Religion endeavoured to destroy its Liberties. If on the contrary the Electors had at that Time chose an Emperor who had not any considerable Dominions out of the Empire, he must have seen, that it was for the true Interest of *Germany* to be as little as possible connected with either of the two powerful Nations *France* or *Spain*; and to assist either the one or the other so as to preserve the Balance of Power betwixt them. By this Means one would have been prevented from subduing the other, or from becoming considerable enough to attempt any Thing against *Germany*; and it is likely the Emperor would on all Occasions have been Arbitrator betwixt the two Nations. Instead of this *Charles* assembled a Diet at *Augsburg* in the Year 1548, at a Time when the Protestants were oppressed and nobody dared to contradict him, and ordered Matters so that the States of the Empire took upon themselves the Guaranty of the Circle of *Burgundy*. After this *Germany* was forced to engage with *Spain* in all her Wars with *France*; and to assist at the Expence of her Blood and Treasure in preserving the *Netherlands*. It must be allowed to be of great Consequence

sequence to the Empire that *France* is not Mistress of the *Netherlands*; but as this is of as much Consequence to other Nations, who are more able to bear the Expence of preventing it, there is no Necessity that the *German* Princes should alone ruin themselves on this Account. In pursuance of the Maxim he had laid down of promoting the Interest of *Spain* *Charles* endeavoured to suppress the Protestant Religion in *Germany*: For without mentioning the Impositions of the *Romish* Religion any Emperor, who meant only the Prosperity of *Germany*, would have been glad of this favourable Opportunity to have freed himself from the Tyranny of Popes; and to have seized for his own and the publick Service the superfluous Revenues of the Church. If he had set about these Things in good Earnest it is likely the Reformation would have had the same Consequences in *Germany* as it had in *Sweden*, *England* and *Denmark*. The *Spanish* Maxims which were laid aside upon the Death of *Charles* were again very warmly pursued by *Ferdinand II.* and amongst other Mischiefs were the Cause that many States of *Germany* did for the Preservation of their Liberties enter into Treaties with Foreigners. By this Conduct their Liberties were indeed preserved: But it would have been better for the *German* States never to have had such Allies, who afterwards too well knew how to avail themselves of their Divisions. As there are still in *Germany* some Remains of the *Spanish* Maxims it is reasonably to be presumed, that Jealousies and Discords will continue to prevail among the Members of the *Germanick* Body. If the Emperor and the *German* Princes were heartily united a Remedy might be found for all these Evils; but there are so many Difficulties which lie in the Way to such an Union that it is hardly to be expected. The first Difficulty that presents itself is the Difference betwixt the Catholics and Protestants: Which does not consist only in a Diversity of Opinions as to Articles of Faith but also in an Opposition of temporal Interests. The Catholics would be glad at any rate to be possessed of what is at present in the Hands of the Protestants; and for this Reason they are sometimes more governed by the Interests and Passions of their Clergy than the publick

lick Good. For this Reason it may perhaps at some-time happen, that if *Germany* be vigorously attacked the Catholicks will make but a faint Resistance, and submit willingly to a good deal themselves for the sake of ruining the Protestants. Besides this the Protestants are very much divided amongst themselves concerning some Articles of Faith; and the Disputes on the controverted Points have been by the Warmth of their Preachers carried to such Lengths that they have all been on the Brink of Ruin. The Number of Members which makes up the *Germanick* Body is another great Hindrance to their Union; it being very probable that some amongst so many will on all Occasions ignorantly or wilfully differ from the rest: And indeed it would be next to a Miracle if such a Number should agree in any Thing. The Members of the Empire besides being numerous are unequal amongst themselves; and some of the more powerful ones, who aim more at their own Aggrandisement than the Good of the Whole, would make no Scruple to oppress or even to subdue the neighbouring weaker States. On the other hand these last finding no Security in the Laws attend more to their own Preservation than to the good of the Empire; and if they must be oppressed are quite indifferent by whom it is done. I am unwilling to mention the Jealousy which subsists between the three Colleges in the general or the Quarrels betwixt the particular Members thereof; and should be glad if it was as easy to find a practicable Remedy for these Distempers in the *German* Constitution as it is to shew the fatal Effects thereof.

Although *Croatia* and *Hungary* do not properly belong to the Empire but to the House of *Austria*, it very much concerns the *German* States to preserve these as a Barrier against the *Turks*. As the *Grand Signior's* Empire is vastly extensive, and his Revenue very large, he can consequently raise and support more numerous Armies than the Empire: Yet the latter has not much to fear on that Side; because the *Port* must to bring a War into *Hungary* transport his Troops together with their Ammunition and Provision at a great Expence from *Asia*, and these cannot easily be subsisted there in

Interest of the
Empire with
regard to
TURKEY.
the

the Winter by reason of the Coldness of the Country, to which they are not inured, and the Barrenness of the neighbouring Provinces. Besides whenever the *Port* employs the chief of his Forces in *Hungary* he is under a continual Dread of an Invasion from *Persia*, or of a Revolt of some *Bashaws*: And it may be added that all other Things being equal the *Germans* are much better Soldiers than the *Turks*.

ITALY.

The Power of *Italy* is not to be compared with that of the Empire; and being divided into many States it is not likely that it should attack any foreign Power, and especially the Emperor; because he is Master of all the Passes into *Italy*, and it is probable that he would in such a Case revive his Pretensions as Emperor upon this Country.

SWISS-
LAND.

The *Swiss* are good Neighbours to the Empire; because they have no Thought of invading it nor sufficient Strength if they were inclined to it.

POLAND.

The Power of *Poland* is by no means to be compared with that of the Empire. The Cavalry of the *Poles* although very numerous is not so good as the *German*; and their Infantry is vastly inferior and not good at besieging Towns: So that if the *Poles* had a Mind to attack the Empire they could gain no Ground therein; because it has so many strong Frontier Towns. On the contrary as the Frontiers of *Poland* are open it would be easy for the *Germans* to carry the War into the Heart of this Kingdom. It is of great Consequence to the Empire to prevent *Poland's* falling into the Hands of any other Power; because it is in the Power of these two Nations, by acting in Consort, to be of great Service to each other in their Wars with the *Turks*.

DENMARK.

The Empire has nothing to fear from *Denmark*; for as the greatest Part of the King of *Denmark's* Troops are drawn out of the Empire, the recalling of these from his Service would so lessen his Army as to prevent his attempting any Thing against the Empire: Nor could *Denmark* get any Thing by attacking the Empire; for it is not to be supposed that the *Germans*, and more especially the Inhabitants of the Circles of *Upper* and *Lower-*

Lower-Saxony, would so far neglect their own Interest as to suffer either *Hamburg* or *Lubec* to fall into the Hands of the *Danes*.

It is not in the Power of *Great-Britain* to hurt the GREAT Empire except it be by obstructing the Commerce of BRITAIN. *Hamburg*. Instead of doing so, it seems to be for the Advantage of the Subjects of this Nation to cultivate a Trade with the *Hamburgers*. And besides this as the Empire can give vast Assistance to *Great-Britain* in her Wars with any Power on the Continent, it is for her Interest to be on good Terms with the Empire.

It is not for the Interest of the *Hollanders* nor have they HOLLAND.] Power to attempt any Thing against the Empire; because the recalling of the *German* Troops in their Pay would almost ruin their Armies. It moreover much concerns this *Republick* to be upon good Terms with the Empire that she may have its Assistance in case of an attack from her other Neighbours.

Spain can never hurt the Empire except the Emperor SPAIN. should unite with the *Spaniards* against the States of the Empire. In this Case something might by the Help of *Spanish* Gold be done: But whenever it happens other Powers will undoubtedly join in opposing the Designs of *Spain*.

Sweden is by no means a Match for the Empire, nor SWEDEN. is it for the Interest of the *Swedes* to make any new Conquests in *Germany*; because these could not be maintained without a great Expence of both Blood and Treasure. It is however of great Importance to *Sweden*, that the Affairs of Religion and Government in *Germany* do continue as they were settled by the Treaty of *Westphalia*.

France is the most formidable Neighbour of the Em- FRANCE. pire. The latter if it was united can indeed raise and maintain more numerous Armies and recruit them longer than *France*, and the Troops thereof are better than those of *France*; but as the Troops and Finances of *France* are absolutely at the King's Disposal, and it commonly happens that some *German* Princes do in Case of a War

War with *France* either remain neuter or side with the *French*, this Nation has greatly the Advantage of the Empire. Notwithstanding all this, as it is very probable that the other Powers of *Europe* would join against *France* in case of her invading the Empire, the Consequences of such an Invasion might be very fatal to *France*.

C H A P. VII.

Of SWISSERLAND.

AS the *Swiss* Cantons were formerly dependent on the *German* Empire, we shall begin our History of *Swisserland* with shewing on what Occasion they formed themselves into a Republick. The three Cantons of *Uri*, *Switz* and *Underwald*, called also the three *Forest Towns*, did indeed always enjoy great Privileges, founded as they insisted upon a Grant from the Emperor *Lewis* the *Pious*; but these as well as the rest had an Imperial Governor who had the supreme Jurisdiction in all criminal Cases. There were moreover in *Swisserland* some Monasteries which had their particular Privileges. During the Wars betwixt the *Emperors* and the *Popes* the Nobility of *Swisserland*, who usually sided with the latter, encroached upon the Liberties of the People, who for the most Part adhered to the former. The Animosity hereby occasioned came at length to such a Pitch, that during the *Interregnum* in *Germany* a Civil War broke out and the Nobility were driven out of the Country: But by the Interposition of *Rudolph* I. *mat-* ters were accommodated and they returned home.

In the Reign of *Albert* I. who first prevailed upon the Monasteries and Nobility to consent thereto, all *Swisserland* except the three before mentioned Cantons submitted to the Dominion of the House of *Austria*. Directions being, in order to force these Cantons to do the same, given to the *Austrian* Governors to treat them rigorously, *Grifler* the Governor of *Underwald* had the Insolence to fix his Hat upon a Pole in the Market-place

place at *Altorf*, and to ordain that all who passed by should pay the same Marks of Respect thereto as to his own Person.

*Brave Con-
duct of WIL-
LIAM TELL.*

A Citizen named *William Tell* being observed to pass by often without doing this, he was sentenced to beat an Apple from his only Son's Head with a single Arrow, and if he missed it to be hanged. He begged earnestly to die without risking his Son's Life: But his Entreaties were all in vain; for the inhuman Governor threatned if he refused to put them both to Death. Having luckily hit off the Apple without wounding his Son, *Grisler* who perceived he had another Arrow asked what that was for; and promised that if he would tell the Truth his Life whatever was his Intent should be spared. *Tell* answered boldly, that it was to have shot him with if he had had the Misfortune to have killed his Son with the first. Having passed his Word not to put him to Death he sentenced *Tell* to perpetual Imprisonment: But as they were carrying him to Goal *Tell* made his Escape.

*First Union of
the CAN-
TONS,
1308.*

Soon after three of the principal People, namely *Werner Stouffacher* of the *Canton of Switz*, *Walter Furst* of the *Canton of Uri*, and *Arnold Melchtales* of the *Canton of Underwald* entered privately into an Association for delivering their Country from such tyrannical Proceedings. As many other Persons came into this it was agreed to surprize the three Governors in their Castles, which contrary to ancient Custom they now resided in, on the 1st of *January* 1308. This Design which was resolved upon the 17th of *September* 1307 being happily executed on the Day fixed, the three *Cantons* bound themselves to stand by each other in Defence of their Liberties for the Space of ten Years. From the Oath which was taken upon this Occasion the Confederates used to call themselves *Eidgenotten*, which in the *German Language* signifies *Allies by Oath*; but as *Switz* was the Name of the principal *Canton* they have been commonly called by Foreigners *Swissers*. In the Year 1315 *Leopold* Archduke of *Austria* Son of *Albert* undertook to reduce them to Obedience; and marched against them with 20,000 Men. As the *Austrians* were

were passing betwixt a Lake and a Mountain some of the *Swiss*, who were in all no more than 1300, rolled down vast Quantities of Stones upon them; and being attacked by the rest in Front before they had recovered the Confusion this threw them into they were entirely routed near *Morgarten*. Battle of MORGARTEN, 1315.

This glorious Victory encouraged the united *Cantons* to renew their *League* with the most solemn Oaths; and by an Act signed at *Brun* in the Year 1320 it was made perpetual. As the Design however was only to maintain their own Liberties and not to disunite themselves from the *Germanick* Body, they on his confirming the *League* consented to receive Governors from the Emperor *Lewis IV.* Having obtained from succeeding Emperors the Liberty of choosing Governors from amongst themselves, they by Degrees got the entire Administration of Affairs into their own Hands; and at length on their not sending Deputies to the Diets as they had been accustomed to do it was declared by the Treaty of *Westphalia* in the Year 1648, that the united *Cantons* should forever be excluded from the *Germanick* Body. League of BRUN, 1320. The united CANTONS excluded from the GERMANICK BODY.

In the Year 1333 the *Canton* of *Lucerne* having revolted from the House of *Austria* united itself to the three *Cantons*. *Zurich* another *Canton* did the same in the Year 1351. Not long after *Glaris* entered into the Confederacy, and its Example was followed by the *Cantons* of *Zug* and *Bern*. These *Cantons* had afterwards several Wars with the *Austrians*; but the most remarkable Battle, in which the Archduke was defeated and with many of the principal Nobility slain, was the Battle of *Sempach* in the Year 1396. The Dauphin of *France* afterwards *Lewis XI.* being come with a large Army in the Year 1444 to disturb the Council of *Basil*, a Body of 1600 *Swiss* fell upon him with such Fury, that although they were after fighting with the utmost Intrepidity to the last Man all cut to Pieces he thought proper to retire. Other CANTONS come into the LEAGUE 1351. Battle of SEMPACH, 1396. Battle of BASIL, 1444.

In the Year 1476 the united *Cantons* in Concert with *Rene* Duke of *Lorrain*, and the Bishops of *Strasburg* and *Basil* were engaged in a War against *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*; the latter being stirred up by *Lewis XI.* War with BURGUNDY. 1476.

who always was contriving that this Prince should have some War upon his Hands to attack them. The Emperor *Frederick III.* at the same Time at War with the *Burgundian*, encouraged the *Swiss* to act vigorously; But hoping to gratify the implacable Hatred of his Family by leaving the *Swiss* to fall a Sacrifice to that brave Prince, he in a short Time clapped up a separate Peace.

*Three Victories
gained by the
SWISS.*

The Event did not however turn out as he expected; for they defeated the Duke in three successive Battles. The first was fought near *Granson*; the second near *Morat*; and the last in which he was slain near *Nancy*. By these three Victories the *Swiss* who were vastly inferior in Number gained great Glory, and made themselves respectable all over *Europe*.

*The other
CANTONS
come into the
Confederacy.*

In the Year 1481 the *Cantons* of *Friburg* and *Soleure* united themselves to the confederate *Cantons*. *Basil* and *Scafhausen* did the same in the Year 1501; and their Example was followed by *Appenzel* which was the only remaining *Canton*.

*War with the
Emperor.*

In the Year 1499 the Emperor *Maximillian* assisted by the Circle of *Suabia* attacked the *Swiss*; but as the latter had generally the Advantage a Treaty was concluded with this Emperor under the Mediation of *Lewis Duke of Milan*: Nor have any Attempts been since made by the House of *Austria* to bring them again under Subjection.

*Treaty with
FRANCE.*

The *Swiss* not long after entered into a Treaty with *France*; by which they agreed in Consideration of an annual Subsidy to keep up a Body of Troops for the Service of *Lewis XI.* of *France*; who had ever since the Proofs they gave of their Valour in the Battle of *Basil* been soliciting it. These Troops were of great Use to his Son *Charles VIII.* in his Expedition against *Naples*: For they made such Havock with their broad Swords and Battle-Axes that the *Italians*, who declared that all former Wars were in Comparison with this no more than Childrens Play, durst not look them in the Face. They also signalized themselves in the *Italian Wars* of *Lewis XII.* but the Honour of the *Swiss* was tarnished by the Behaviour of some, who after entering into the Service of *Lewis Duke of Milan* did scandalously desert him,

*The SWISS sig-
nalize them-
selves in ITA-
LY.*

him, because as they pretended they could not fight against their own Countrymen in the *French Army*, and suffer him to be taken Prisoner.

Their Treaty with *France* being expired in the Year *1510* they entered into the Service of Pope *Julius II.* *the Pope's Ser-* because *Lewis XII.* who thought it unbecoming his *vice, 1510.* Dignity to comply with the Demands of a few Highland Peasants, for so he called them, would not encrease their Pension: But it cost *France* dear; for being employed against her by this Pontiff, they after defeating the *French* with great Loss near *Novara* in the Year *1513* *Battle of* obliged them to evacuate *Italy.* Falling afterwards into *NOVARA,* *Burgundy* they obliged the Duke of *Trimouille*, who had *1513.* shut himself up in *Dijon* to consent to their own Terms; nor would they retire from before the Place till he had distributed large Sums of Money amongst them. As the King of *England* had at the same Time made a Descent upon *France*, it might have proved fatal to this Kingdom if the *Swiss* had not been made easy at any rate.

In the Year *1515* they fell upon *Francis I.* who re- *Battle of* fused to make good the Engagements of *Trimouille*, in *MARIGNAN.* his Camp near *Marignan*; and although they were for- *1515.* ced after great Loss on both Sides, the Action lasting two Days, to retire he thought proper to purchase their Friendship with a round Sum of Money.

By a Treaty concluded in the ensuing Year at *Fri-Treaty with* *burg* it was among other Things agreed: "That there *FRANCE.*

" should be a general Amnesty; that the Prisoners on
 " both Sides should be set at Liberty without Ran-
 " som; that the *Swiss* should enjoy all the Privileges
 " granted them by the Predecessors of *Francis*; that they
 " should be re-imbursed the Money which the Siege
 " of *Dijon* and the War in *Italy* had cost them; and
 " that neither Power should give Passage through its
 " Dominions to or assist the Enemies of the other.
 " The Subsidy to be paid for the future was more-
 " over fixed; and in order to prevent Disputes from
 " arising each Power mentioned certain Allies against
 " which in case of a Rupture betwixt any of these
 " and the other it would not assist." As *Francis* who

wanted something further spared for neither Pains nor Money another Treaty was concluded in the Year 1521; by which after confirming the last he was at Liberty, in case of an Attack upon his own Kingdom or the Dutchy of *Milan*, to levy any Number betwixt 6 and 16000 of the *Swiss* without asking the Magistrates Consent. The Day of these was settled; and it was further stipulated, that if the *Swiss* should be attacked the *French King* should upon Demand send home their own Troops, and furnish them with two hundred Engineers and twelve Pieces of Cannon; or if they liked it better should pay them two thousand Florins once in three Months as long as the War lasted. The *Canton* of *Zurich* refused to enter into this Treaty, because *Zuinglius* who was in great Esteem there represented, that the suffering of a foreign Prince to raise Troops in this Manner was in effect selling the Blood of themselves and their Children.

The Reforma-
tion begun by
ZUINGLIUS.

The same *Zuinglius*, who began soon after *Luther* to preach publicly against the Corruptions of the *Romish* Church having been remarkably active in propagating his Opinions, it was about the Year 1523 agreed that Disputes upon the controverted Points should be publicly held at *Baden*. In this the two Champions *Eckius* a Catholick and *Oecolampadius* of the reformed Religion did their utmost; but neither as it commonly happens in Controversies would allow himself to be confuted. The Reformation however gained Ground; and a General Assembly being, notwithstanding the Remonstrances of the Emperor, the Bishops of *Constance*, *Basil*, *Lausanne* and *Sion*, and the Cantons of *Lucern*, *Uri*, *Switz*, *Underwald*, *Zug*, *Glaris*, *Friburg* and *Soleure*, convened by *Zuinglius* in the Year 1528 the Doctrines of the Church of *Rome* were condemned. The Opinions of *Zuinglius* being hereupon introduced all over *Bern*, Notice was given for its Bishops to renounce all Obedience to the See of *Rome*; and this Example was followed by the Cantons of *Basil* and *Schaffhausen*. This as it might be expected made ill Blood; but the Imprudence of the Inhabitants of *Underwald* who protected the Revolters from *Bern* conduced most to the embroiling of the Cantons.

Upon

Upon the Refusal of the Deputies of *Zurich* and *Bern* Preparations to meet those of *Underwald*, whom they looked upon as for a civil Enemies, the other *Cantons* prevailed on the *Canton* of *War*.

Underwald to acknowledge its Fault and promise not to do the like again. The People of *Bern* who were the Parties more particularly concerned seemed satisfied therewith; yet the *Zuriquese* armed themselves and were on the Point of attacking the *Cantons* of *Lucern*, *Uri*, *Switz*, *Zug* and *Underwald*. Whether it was because these five

Cantons foreseeing the Storm which threatned them had besought the Emperor's Assistance, or whatever was the Reason, the Inhabitants of *Zurich* did not push Things:

And by an Agreement made shortly after at *Cassel* it was settled, "That there should be Liberty of Consci-

"ence throughout *Swisserland*; and that the five *Can-* Agreement of
CASSEL.

"tons should renounce their Alliance with *Perdi-*

"*nand*. and pay something towards defraying the Ex-

"pence which the others had been at in preparing for

"War."

When the League of *Smalkald* upon the Success of *The domestick* which the Protestant Religion was said to depend was *Quarrel re-* concluded in the Year 1531, the Inhabitants of *Berne* *newed, 1531.*

and *Zurich* being resolved to shew their Zeal for its Suc-

cess armed themselves. The former Quarrel being here-

upon renewed by the five *Cantons* it soon came to Blows;

and the *Zuriquese* were defeated with the Loss of 400

Men. *Zuinglius*, who had a Mind to let the World *Death of* see he could use a Sword as well as a Pen, being killed *ZUINGLIUS,*

in this Action at the Head of a Battalion of his Follow-

ers, who are always fond of attributing something mi-

raculous to their Head, gave out that some Persons at-

tempted to burn his Body but that the Fire would not

lay hold of it. After this Battle Matters were accommo-

dated: And it was agreed that the *Cantons* should not

for the Time to come molest each other on the account

of Religion.

The City of *Geneva* which had embraced the Pro-*War with* testant Religion being attacked in the Year 1534 by the *SAVOY con-* Duke of *Savoy*, the *Bernese* and *Friburge* with whom *cerning GE-* this City was in Alliance resolved to assist it; and the *NEVA, 1534.*

French King joined with them. While the latter fell upon the Duke on one Side the *Bernese* took *Geix*, *Thonon*, *Terniere* and other Places; and the Inhabitants of the *Canton of Friburg* made themselves Masters of Part of *Savoy*. Some time after in the Year 1564 the *Canton of Bern* gave up by Treaty all betwixt the Lake of *Geneva* and the *Rhone* which had been taken from the Duke of *Savoy*: On Condition however that he should not disturb the Inhabitants in the Exercise of Religion, and that he should submit his Pretensions upon *Geneva* to an amicable Discussion.

League be-
twixt the
Duke of SA-
VOY and the
Catholick
CANTONS,

The great Power of the *Protestant Cantons* and their Zeal for the reformed Religion being looked upon with jealous Eyes by the *Catholick Cantons*, five of them namely *Lucern*, *Uri*, *Switz*, *Underwald* and *Zug* entered in the Year 1577 into a League with the Duke of *Savoy* for the Support of the *Catholick Religion*; and the *Cantons of Friburg* and *Soleure* being desirous thereof were shortly after admitted into it.

War with the
Duke of SA-
VOY.

The City of *Geneva* having about the Year 1579 entered into a defensive Alliance with the *Canton of Bern* against the Duke of *Savoy*, to which *France* acceded, this Duke made a Handle thereof to surprize *Lausanne*, which he had by the Treaty of the Year 1564 ceded to the *Canton of Bern*. War being hereupon declared against him by the *French King* and the *Canton of Bern* the latter took from him all the *Chablese*: But Matters were accommodated with this *Canton*, and he made a full and formal Renunciation of all Claim upon *Geneva* and acknowledged it to be a free State. This City being not however named expressly in the Treaty made afterwards betwixt the Duke of *Savoy* and *Henry IV.* at *Vervins*, which included the *Swiss Cantons* and their Allies, the Duke pretending it was excepted attempted to make himself Master of it by the famous *Escalade* in the Year 1602. Failing in this he was forced, as *France* and other Powers interfered, to give Security by a Treaty next Year that he would not for the future disturb the Repose of the *Genevese*.

The

The Alliance with the *Swiss Cantons* entered into by *Francis I.* was from Time to Time continued by his Successors. The *Swiss* did not take any Part in the Wars which during the last Century arose in *Europe*.

The Emperor solicited them strongly on the Com-^{The CANTONS}mencement of the War concerning the *Spanish* Monarchy to recal their Troops in the Service of *France*; but ^{are solicited}by the Emper-
the Money received for the Hire of these weighed more ^{or to re-call}than his Remonstrances that it was inconsistent with ^{their Troops in}the Treaties subsisting betwixt him and the *Swiss* ^{FRENCH Ser-}
Cantons. Nay, notwithstanding the Endeavours of the ^{vice.}
Protestant Cantons and the *Maritime Powers* to prevent it, the *Catholick Canton* not only suffered *Philip V.* to raise Men in their Country but acknowledged him as Sovereign of the *Milanese*; and engaged to assist in maintaining his Right to this Dutchy against all Persons whatsoever. In Resentment of this Partiality the House of *Austria* forbid to the Subjects of its hereditary Dominions all Commerce with *Switzerland*, and prevailed on some *German* States to do the same. When the Duke of *Savoy* quitted the Party of *France* for that of the *Allies* the *Swiss Cantons*, and especially *Bern*, took great Pains to procure a Neutrality for his Dominions: For they did not like that the King of *France* already in Possession of the southern Part of *Suabia* should become Master of *Savoy* also. As their good Offices were ineffectual they, finding themselves almost surrounded by the Armies of *France*, upon the Change made in the Face of Affairs by the Battle of *Hockstet* departed from their Neutrality, and sent a Body of Troops to the Assistance of the *Allies*. The ill Success of the House of *Bourbon* both in *Italy* and *Suabia* induced the *Catholick Cantons* to offer their Mediation: But the *Allies* unwilling to part with the Advantages they had got would hear nothing of it; and the Affair betwixt the Abbot of *St. Gall* and the Inhabitants of *Togenburg*, which happened shortly after, so embroiled the *Swiss Cantons* that they themselves wanted a Mediator.

Quarrel be-
twixt the Ab-
bot of ST.
GALL and the
Inhabitants of
TOGEN-
BURG.

The Abbots of *St. Gall*, one of whom about the End of the fourteenth Century bought the County of *Togenburg*, had been ever since making Encroachments upon the Liberties of the Inhabitants notwithstanding an expresse Condition in the Bargain to the contrary; but the present Abbot pushed his Authority further than any of them had done. A Difference hereby occasioned arising in the Year 1701 the People offered to refer it to some of the *Swiss Cantons*. Their Endeavours being insufficient to reconcile Matters the *Canton of Bern*, as there were many Protestants in that County, told the Abbot plainly by Letter, that if he did not re-instate the *Togenburgese* in their ancient Privileges and allow them in the free Exercise of the Protestant Religion, he must not take it ill if she endeavoured to see Justice done to his Subjects. Some Castles belonging to the Abbot being soon after seized by the *Togenburgese*, whom the Hopes of Assistance from *Bern* had encouraged, the Catholics took it ill; but as the Abbot knew the Protestant Party to be much the stronger in *Swisserland*, he upon a Pretence of having received the Investiture of this County from the Emperor appealed to him. This Prince glad of an Occasion to meddle in the Affairs of the *Swiss Cantons* remonstrated against the Conduct of the *Berneſe*: But they desired him to recollect that by the Treaty of *Westphalia*, *Swisserland* was excluded from the *Germanick* Body; and insisted that he had nothing to do in this Business. Nevertheless, as the Abbot although he had neither Seat nor Voice in the Diet of the Empire was a titular Prince thereof, an Imperial Commission was granted; but as the *Swiss Cantons* would not receive it the Emperor, not caring to come to a Rupture with them while he was engaged in a War with *France*, thought proper to drop the Affair.

H-ſtill-ries com-
men-ed, 1712.

In the Year 1712 the Abbot having put his Troops into Motion for reducing the *Togenburgese*, the Negotiations for an Accommodation, to forward which all the *Cantons* and especially *Friburg* which had expended 100,000 Crowns on the Occasion had taken great Pains, were broke off; and the Inhabitants of *Bern* caused Troops to march towards *Togenburg*. As Religion

gion had been for some Time involved in this Quarrel the *Catholick Cantons*, who were not satisfied with the Declarations of the others that they meant nothing but to deliver the People of *Togenburg* from Oppression, armed themselves; yet they could not hinder the Junction of the Troops of *Bern*, which had been reinforced by some chosen Men from *Geneva*, with those of *Zurich*. After they had seized *Weil*, *Milinguen*, *Bremgarten* and *Baden* Conferences were opened at *Arau* with the Deputies of *Lucern* and *Uri*: But in the mean Time the other *Catholick Cantons* had taken *Seissen* in *Bern* and cut to Pieces the Protestant Garrison there. They however paid dear for this; for the Protestant Army coming up with theirs near *Wilmerguen* fell upon it, and without *Battle of* losing above 100 Men slew 2000 on the Spot. The *WILMER-CONFERENCES* at *Arau* being not long after renewed a *GUEN*. Suspension of Arms was agreed upon betwixt the *Cantons*; and some few Persons being hanged in *Lucern* for endeavouring to excite fresh Troubles every Thing remained quiet. Negotiations were now entered into with the Abbot; but as he insisted upon being treated with as a Member of the Empire they came to nothing. Hereupon the finishing Hand was put to a Treaty amongst the Members of the *Helvetick Body* at *Roschau* in the Year 1714; and the Abbot who by endeavouring at arbitrary Power had justly lost his Dominions retired into the *Milanese*.

Treaty of
ROSCHAU,
1714.

Being not satisfied with the Treaty at that Time subsisting with the *Cantons* of *Switzerland*, *Lewis XIV.* did in the Year 1715 enter into a new Treaty with the *Catholick Cantons* and the People of *Valais*; the fifth Article of which surprized all *Europe*. The Contents of this were, "That if the *Helvetick Body* or any Member thereof should be attacked by any Power his *Christian Majesty* should assist the same with such a Body of Troops as the Case might require; that if any Difference should arise betwixt any of the *Cantons* his Majesty and his Successors should as the common Friend and Ally of all the *Cantons* and their Allies by his good Offices endeavour to reconcile the Parties; and if these should be found insufficient that he should use the Forces God " had

“ had put into his Hands, in order to compel the Ag-
 “ gressor to do such Justice as the Treaties which the
 “ *Cantons* and their Allies had made amongst them-
 “ selves might require. His Majesty moreover en-
 “ gaged for himself and Successors to guaranty all fu-
 “ ture Treaties which should be made betwixt the Mem-
 “ bers of the *Helvetick* Body.” The *Protestant Can-*
tons who had no Hand in this Treaty were greatly con-
 cerned to see, that the Authority and Influence of *France*
 in *Swisserland* were thereby carried much further than
 they had ever been before.

Some of the

CANTONS *as-* which broke out upon Account of the *Polish* Election :
sist in quelling But some of them by joining their Mediation to that
an Insurrection of *France* had a great Share in quelling the Insurrection
 at **GENEVA**, which happened in the Year 1737 in *Geneva*.

1737.

Members of
 the **HELVE-**
TICK BODY.

The *Helvetick Body* is a Republick composed of the
 thirteen *Cantons* of *Swisserland*; namely *Zurich, Bern,*
Lucern, Uri, Switz, Underwald, Zug, Glaris, Basil,
Friburg, Soleure, Schaffhausen and *Appenzel*; of Allies
 as the Town and Abby of *St. Gall*, the *Grisons*, the
Valois, Geneva, Mulhausen and some other Towns ;
 and of divers Provinces and Bailiwicks subject to the
Cantons or their Allies.

Nature and
 Produce of
SWISSER-
LAND.

The Vallies in *Swisserland* are fruitful of Wine and
 Corn ; yet as the mountainous Parts yield only Pasture,
 as the Inhabitants are numerous, and as it is very dif-
 ficult to import Corn, they seldom have enough for their
 support. Hence they look upon it as a great Misfor-
 tune, if they have not once in a few Years a general
 Sickness to carry off the *Bread-eaters* : By which Name
 all their superfluous People are called. The Moun-
 tainousness of their Country has however this Advantage,
 that Access to them is in most Places and particularly
 on the Side of *Italy* very difficult.

Genius of the
SWISS.

The *Swiss* are in the general a sincere, undefigning and
 open People ; and they value themselves upon adhering
 faithfully to their Engagements. They are very good
 Soldiers ; but as the Infantry of other Nations is now
 much improved, and the Back Sword with which they
 made great Slaughter is not now used in *Europe*, they
 are

are not now so formidable as heretofore. As they are remarkable for Bravery and Integrity, and are for the most Part tall strong Men, many Princes make Use of them as Guards. No Troops behave better on a Day of Action; but they do not like to bear the Inconveniencies of War, because as they say themselves they suffer enough from Hunger and Hardship at home. If their Pay when they let themselves out to any Power is not fully and duly paid they return home immediately; and hence came the Proverb *No Money no Swiss*. By their Treaty with *France* it is stipulated that the King shall never keep less than 6000 of them in his Pay, and the *Swiss* Troops are not to be dispersed to the End that if there be any Infraction of the Treaty they may be able to assist each other.

If what is commonly said, that the *Canton of Bern* Strength of alone which is indeed much the largest can in the Space SWISSER- of three Days set on Foot an Army of 100,000 Men, be LAND. true the Strength of *Switzerland* must be very considerable; and the *Swiss* might without Doubt when their Glory was at the highest Pitch have made themselves Masters of the *Franche Compté* and good Part of *Lombardy*. The not attempting of this was perhaps partly owing to their natural Disposition to be content with what they have; but if they had attempted it their Government, which in most of the *Cantons* lodges the supreme Power in the Hands of Men of little Understanding and small Experience, is calculated entirely for mutual Defence and is by no Means equal to any great Undertaking. The Difference of Religion amongst the *Swiss* is another Obstacle to the extending of their Dominions; for as both Parties are greatly bigotted they will be always jealous of each other: So that it is not likely they should agree in any Thing except some common Danger forces them thereto. As every Canton and Ally is moreover by their Constitution in some Sort an independent State, it is obvious that the Councils of this Republick must be weak, slow and divided; and to this it may be imputed that, although the *Swiss* are numerous and brave, they have for many Years made no other Use of their Valour than to let it out to foreign Princes.

Interest of
SWISSER-
LAND, with
Regard to the
ITALIAN
POWERS.

The *Swiss* have nothing to fear on the Side of *Italy*; because they are more than a Match for any one of the *Italian Powers*. On the other Hand it is not for the Interest of *Swisserland* to attack any *Italian State*; because as the other *Italian States* would in such Case be ready to join against her, she instead of gaining would perhaps be in the End a Loser thereby.

GERMANY.

It can never be for their Interest to attack *Swisserland*; but if the whole *Germanick Body* should agree to do this, the *Swiss* are able without mentioning that they would in such a Case be assisted by *France*, to make a brave Defence.

FRANCE.

France seems to be the only Power which can hurt *Swisserland*; and some have thought that she was to blame in suffering the *Franche Compté*, which opens a Passage into her Dominions and enables the *French King* to levy Soldiers on her Frontiers, to be conquered by the *French*. However this was, it is as Things are now circumstanced for the Interest of the *Swiss* to be upon good Terms with *France*; yet they ought to be watchful that she does not become Mistress of the Towns which are a Sort of Barrier to them; namely *Geneva*, *Newburg on the Lake*, *Constance* and the four *Forest Towns*. The *Swiss* ought also to take Care that they do not exhaust their Strength by sending too many Men into the Service of *France*; and such as are sent ought not to be suffered to continue long in this Service, lest they should grow forgetful of their native Country. Whilst the *Swiss* do not thwart the Designs of *France* the latter is not likely to attack them, it being more for her Interest to make Use of them as Allies than to subdue them: For besides that the Conquest of *Swisserland* would cost much Trouble the Inhabitants could not be kept under without numerous Garrisons; which as the Revenues of the Country are inconsiderable must be a constant Expence to *France*.

End of the FIRST VOLUME.

A N

INTRODUCTION

TO THE

HISTORY

OF THE

Principal STATES of EUROPE.

Begun by BARON PUFFENDORF:

Continued by Mr. DE LA MARTINIERE.

I M P R O V E D

By JOSEPH SAYER Serjeant at Law.

Nescire quid antequam natus sis acciderit id est semper esse Puerum.

Cic. de Orat.

In Two VOLUMES.

V O L. II.

A NEW EDITION revised and corrected.

L O N D O N:

Printed for A. WILDE, A. MILLAR, B. DOD, J. HINTON, J. RIVINGTON,
L. HAWES, W. CLARKE and R. COLLINS, W. JOHNSTON,
T. LONGMAN, and B. LAW. M.DCC.LXIV.

INTERNATIONAL

WORLD

YOUTH

THE YOUTH OF THE WORLD

THE YOUTH OF THE WORLD

THE YOUTH OF THE WORLD

31/12.

D

103

797

C O N T E N T S

O F T H E

S E C O N D V O L U M E.

C HAP. I. Of <i>Sardinia</i> ,	Page 1
II. Of <i>Genoa</i> ,	17
III. Of the <i>Grand Dutchy of Tuscany</i> ,	38
IV. Of the <i>Pope's Dominions</i> ,	48
V. Of the <i>Pope's Spiritual Monarchy</i> ,	72
VI. Of <i>Naples and Sicily</i> ,	120
VII. Of <i>Venice</i> ,	144
VIII. Of <i>Denmark</i> ,	178
IX. Of <i>Sweden</i> ,	197
X. Of <i>Prussia</i> ,	268
XI. Of <i>Poland</i> ,	288
XII. Of the <i>Russian Empire</i> ,	327
XIII. Of <i>Turky</i> ,	351

A N

CONTENTS

OF THE

SECOND VOLUME

1	OF THE
2	OF THE
3	OF THE
4	OF THE
5	OF THE
6	OF THE
7	OF THE
8	OF THE
9	OF THE
10	OF THE
11	OF THE
12	OF THE
13	OF THE
14	OF THE
15	OF THE
16	OF THE
17	OF THE
18	OF THE
19	OF THE
20	OF THE
21	OF THE
22	OF THE
23	OF THE
24	OF THE
25	OF THE
26	OF THE
27	OF THE
28	OF THE
29	OF THE
30	OF THE
31	OF THE
32	OF THE
33	OF THE
34	OF THE
35	OF THE
36	OF THE
37	OF THE
38	OF THE
39	OF THE
40	OF THE
41	OF THE
42	OF THE
43	OF THE
44	OF THE
45	OF THE
46	OF THE
47	OF THE
48	OF THE
49	OF THE
50	OF THE
51	OF THE
52	OF THE
53	OF THE
54	OF THE
55	OF THE
56	OF THE
57	OF THE
58	OF THE
59	OF THE
60	OF THE
61	OF THE
62	OF THE
63	OF THE
64	OF THE
65	OF THE
66	OF THE
67	OF THE
68	OF THE
69	OF THE
70	OF THE
71	OF THE
72	OF THE
73	OF THE
74	OF THE
75	OF THE
76	OF THE
77	OF THE
78	OF THE
79	OF THE
80	OF THE
81	OF THE
82	OF THE
83	OF THE
84	OF THE
85	OF THE
86	OF THE
87	OF THE
88	OF THE
89	OF THE
90	OF THE
91	OF THE
92	OF THE
93	OF THE
94	OF THE
95	OF THE
96	OF THE
97	OF THE
98	OF THE
99	OF THE
100	OF THE

A N

INTRODUCTION

T O T H E

HISTORY of the principal Kingdoms and
States of *Europe*.

C H A P. I.

Of SARDINIA.

IT is the received Opinion that the House of *Savoy* *Origin of the*
is descended from *Witiking* the *Saxon* a cotem-*SAVOY Fa-*
porary Prince with *Charlemain*: But without exam-*family.*
ining whether this was so or not we shall begin
our Account of the *Savoy* Family with *Berauld*, who *BERAULD.*
bought *Savoy* and the Valley of *Maurienne* of *Rodolph*
King of *Burgundy*.

Humbert the Son of this Prince surnamed *White Hands* *HUMBERT.*
was for the Services he did to the Emperor *Conrade II.*
against *Eude* Count of *Champagne*, rewarded with the
Valley of *Aoust* and the *Chablese*.

Amadeus his eldest Son succeeded about the Year *AMADEUS I.*
1050; but dying shortly after without Issue *Otton* ano-1050.
ther Son of *Humbert's* succeeded.

This Prince by marrying *Adelaide* Daughter of *Ulrick* *OTTON.*
Marquis of *Susa* annexed this Marquisate and Part of
Piedmont to the Dominions of his House. He died in
the Year 1060.

In the Reign of *Amadeus* his Son and Successor the Em- *AMADEUS II.*
peror *Henry VI.* was under a Necessity of passing through 1060.
Savoy: But in Order to obtain his Consent he was forced
to give *Amadeus* some Bishopricks in the *Pais de Bugie.*

HUMBERT II. *Humbert* his Son and Successor after adding the *Tarentese* to his Dominions died about the Year 1103, and was succeeded by *Amadeus* his Son.

AMADEUS III. 1103. This Prince slew the Count of *Geneva* with whom he was at War in a single Combat. Having afterwards distinguished himself in two Campaigns in the *Holy Land* he died in the Year 1149 at *Nicosia* in the Island of *Cyprus*.

HUMBERT III. 1149. *Humbert* his Son surnamed the *Saint*, who succeeded next, sided with the Pope against the Emperor *Ferdinand I.* This cost him dear; for the Emperor having taken *Turin* gave it to its own Bishop who had been faithful to his Interest: And it was many Years before the Descendants of *Humbert* could get this important Place into their Hands again.

THOMAS I. 1188. At his Death in the Year 1188 *Thomas* his Son succeeded: Who being warned by the Misfortunes of his Father adhered constantly to the Emperors *Philip* and *Frederick* in their Quarrels with the Popes. By this Conduct he obtained from one of these *Quiers* and *Tes-tona* in *Piedmont*; and he was honoured by the other with the Title of Vicar General of the *Empire* in *Piedmont* and *Lombardy*. He died in the Year 1233.

AMADEUS IV. 1233. By pursuing the same Measures his Son *Amadeus* recommended himself so to the Emperor *Frederick*, that the *Chablese* and *Aoust* were erected into Dutchies for him. In his Reign the principality of *Carignan* was bought of the *Provane* Family by his Brother *Thomas*.

BONIFACE 1253. At the death of *Amadeus* in the Year 1253 his Son *Boniface* surnamed *Roland* succeeded: Who after a Series of Misfortunes was carried Prisoner to *Turin* by the Marquis of *Montferrat*, and died miserably there. He left no Children.

PETER. *Peter* the next Successor revenged the ill Treatment of *Boniface* his Nephew upon the Marquis of *Montferrat*. He married *Agnes* of *Fossigni* and thereby annexed this Lordship to the Dominions of *Savoy*: And the City of *Bern* that it might avoid the Misfortunes it was likely to suffer by the Quarrels of its Neighbours submitted to him.

PHILLIP 1268. Dying without Issue in the Year 1268 *Philip* Archbishop of *Lyons* his Brother succeeded. He quitted the Ecclesiastick State and married *Alice* of *Burgundy*. Leaving

ing no Children his Dominions fell in the Year 1279 to *Amadeus* Son of *Thomas* Prince of *Carignan*. This Prince ought to have succeeded before either *Peter* or *Philip*; who were both Brothers of *Amadeus* IV. and his Father's Younger Brothers.

Amadeus for his marvellous Actions surnamed the AMADEUS V. 1279. *Great* by marrying *Sibila* Heiress of *Bresse*, *Bugie* and *Coligni*, became Master of these three Estates. He also bought *Revermont* of *Robert* Duke of *Burgundy*; and had the County of *Asti* given him by the Emperor *Henry* VII. By his Assistance the Knights of *St. John* of *Jerusalem* were enabled to prevent the Island of *Rhodes* from falling into the Hands of the *Turks*. For this Service the Grand Master of their Order made him a present of the House at *Lyons*, which these Knights had been in Possession of ever since the Destruction of the *Knights Templars*: And the Glory he gained upon the Occasion gave Rise to the following Motto of his Successors, F. E. R. T. that is FORTITUDO EJUS RHODEM TENUIT; in other Words his Courage saved *Rhodes*.

In this Reign *Turin* was reunited to the Dominions TURIN is reunited to of *Savoy*. *Amadeus* was so admired for his Wisdom in the Principal Courts of *Europe* as to be usually made Arbitrator betwixt them. After a happy Reign of 45 his Dominions. Years he died in the Year 1323.

Edward his Son had before his Accession to the EDWARD Throne distinguished himself at the Battle of *Mont-en-puelle*. He afterwards followed the Fortune of *Philip* of *Valois*; and was at the Battle of *Mont-Cassel*. In Reward for the Services done him by the Inhabitants thereof he restored the City of *Bern* to its ancient State of Independency. He died in the Year 1329 leaving only one Daughter, who was married to *John* Duke of *Bretany*.

Aymon his Brother and Successor, surnamed from his AYMON great Love of Peace the *Pacifick*, having reigned 14 1328. Years was succeeded by his Son *Amadeus*.

This Prince was called the *Green Count*, because he AMADEUS appeared at a Tournament in green Armour with his VI. Horse caparisoned of the same Colour. He bought the 1343. *Pais de Vaux* of *Catherine* Wife of *Ason* Visconti, and added *Coni* and some other Places to the Dominions of his House. He forced the King of *Bulgaria* to set *John*

Of S A R D I N I A.

Palæologue Emperor of *Greece* at Liberty; and was successful in his Wars against the Dauphin of *Viennois* and other neighbouring Princes. The Order of *Annunciade* was instituted by him in the Year 1355. As he was going to assist *Lewis* of *Arjou* in an Expedition against *Naples* he died of the Plague near *San Stephano* in the Year 1383.

AMADEUS VII. 1383. *Amadeus* his Son who inherited all his Father's Virtues made himself Master of the County of *Nice*. He was to the great Grief of his People killed in the 7th Year of his Reign by a Fall from his Horse, whilst he was in the pursuit of a Wild Boar.

AMADEUS VIII. 1391. His Son and Successor *Amadeus* bought the County of *Geneva* of *Humbert VIII.* for 45,000 Florins of Gold: And hence arose the Claim of the House of *Savoy* to the Sovereignty of *Geneva*. This Prince was in the Year 1401 created Duke of *Savoy* by the Emperor *Sigismund*. In the Year 1434 he resigned the Government to his Son, and retiring into the Priory of *Ripaille*

The Order of St. MAURICE instituted the Order of *St. Maurice*. Upon the Deposition of Pope *Eugene IV.* by the Council of *Basil* he was raised to the Triple Crown and took the Name of *Felix V.* Having afterwards to prevent a Schism in the Church resigned the Pontificate to *Nicholas V.* who was chosen by another Faction, he was made by him a Cardinal, Dean of the Sacred College and Legate of Part of *Germany*. He died in the Year 1451, having all along supported the Character of a wise and good Prince.

LEWIS 1434. *Lewis*, who at his Father's Resignation assumed the Government, took Care to preserve the Reputation which he had by his Bravery before acquired. By his Assistance *Francis Sforza* Son in Law to *Philip Maria Visconti* the late Duke was established in the Possession of the Dutchy of *Milan*, notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by the Duke of *Orleans* and *Alphonso V.* of *Arragon*, who both claimed this Dutchy. He died at *Lyons* in the Year 1465, whither he went to pay a Visit to *Lewis XI.* of *France* who had married one of his Daughters. *Lewis* the second Son of this Prince married *Charlotte* Heiress of *Cyprus*, and thence came the Claim of the *Savoy* Family to this Kingdom.

His Son marries CHARLOTTE of CYPRUS.

AMADEUS IX. 1465. *Amadeus* the eldest Son and Successor of *Lewis* being wholly devoted to religious Matters every Thing was managed by *Isabella* of *France* his Wife. After an inglorious

inglorious Reign of Seven Years he died and was succeeded by *Philibert* his Son.

This Prince surnamed the *Hunter* being but Six Years PHILIBERT of Age at his Father's Death, his Country suffered much 1472. by the Disputes of his Mother and *Lewis XI.* her Brother concerning the Regency.

Dying without Issue in the Year 1482 *Charles* his Bro- CHARLES I. ther succeeded. He married the Heiress of the Marquis 1482. of *Saluzzo*; and although there was no Issue of the Marriage the Dukes of *Savoy* have ever since claimed this Marquisate. He died in the Year 1489.

As *Charles-John Amadeus*, who was quite an Infant CHARLES II. at his Father's Death, survived him but seven Years the 1489. Right of succeeding devolved on *Philip* his great Uncle.

This Prince the fifth Son of *Amadeus IX.* surnamed PHILIP II. from having no Inheritance *Sans Terre*, being 58 Years 1496. of Age when the Crown fell to him reigned but one Year. He spent the former Part of his Life in *France*: And being for his Services to *Charles VIII.* in conquering *Naples* made Governor of *Dauphiny* he continued in this Post until his Accession to *Savoy*.

Philibert his Son by *Margarit* Daughter of *Charles* PHILIBERT Duke of *Bourbon* succeeded. This Prince assisted II. 1497. *Lewis XII.* of *France* when he conquered the *Milanese*: But he afterwards notwithstanding that *Italy* was involved in divers Wars took care to preserve Peace in his own Dominions. Dying in the Year 1504 without Issue his Brother *Charles* Son of *Philip* by a second Wife succeeded him.

This Prince married *Beatrix* of *Portugal* Sister to *Isa-* CHARLES bella Wife of *Charles V.* Being engaged by this Alliance III. 1504. and by some Favours he received from *Charles* to side with him against *Francis* of *France*, the latter in Revenge laid Claim to his Dominions in the Right of his Mother *His Domi-* *Louisa* Daughter by the first Wife to *Philip II.* and made niens. invaded himself Master of the greatest Part of them. At the by FRANCE. same Time the City of *Bern* seized the *Pais de Vaux*; as did the City of *Geneva* Part of his Country which lay convenient for it. The unhappy *Charles* finding himself thus robbed of his Dominions retired to *Verceil*; where he died in the Year 1553 of Grief.

Emanuel Philibert Son of *Charles* was brought up at EMANUEL the Court of *Charles V.* and distinguished himself in PHILIBERT the 1553.

the Service of this Prince and his Son *Philip*, and especially at the Battle of *St. Quintin* in which he had a great Command. By the Treaty of *Cambray* most of his Dominions were restored to him; but the *French* kept *Turin*, *Pignerol* and some other Places, in order to secure a Satisfaction for the Pretensions of *Louisa* Mother of *Francis* upon the *Savoy* Succession. *Henry III.* of *France* in passing afterwards through *Turin*, in his Way from *Poland* to *Paris*, was prevailed upon by *Emanuel* to give up the Towns kept by *France*. Being induced by the Pope to disturb the *Vaudois* in the Exercise of the Protestant Religion, they after suffering a great deal flew to Arms: And he was at last glad to submit to their reasonable Request of Liberty of Conscience. He died in the 27th Year of his Reign, leaving behind him the Character of a prudent, brave and pious Prince, and of being a great Patron to learned Men.

TURIN and
other Places
restored by
FRANCE.

Persecution
of the
VAUDOIS.

CHARLES
EMANUEL I.
1580.

To him succeeded *Charles Emanuel* his Son, a Prince of great Capacity and Courage but of an unbounded Ambition. He took the Opportunity of the Wars betwixt *Henry III.* and the *Huguenots* to seize the Marquisate of *Saluzzo*: And on this Occasion an insulting Medal was struck with the Effigy of himself on one Side and on the Reverse a Centaur trampling upon a Crown, and underneath the Word *Opportune*, that is *Opportunely*. During the long Continuance of the Civil Wars in *France* he took several Places in *Provence* and *Dauphiny*; but an End being put to those Wars by the Treaty of *Vervins* *Henry IV.* recovered all these and conquered the Dutchy of *Savoy*. In Return for the Affront put upon *France* by *Charles* he also caused a Medal to be struck, having on one Side the Effigy of *Henry* and on the other *Hercules* vanquishing a *Centaur*, with the Word *Opportunus* underneath, that is *more Opportunely*. A Peace being made in the Year 1601 by the Mediation of the Pope at *Lyons*, the Provinces of *Bresse*, *Bugie* and *Gex*, and some Places on the *Rhine* were ceded to *France* in Exchange for the Marquisate of *Saluzzo*. This Treaty was vastly advantageous to *France*; yet as the Marquisate of *Saluzzo* served to cover *Turin* from the Insults of the *French* *Charles* had no Reason to be dissatisfied therewith.

SAVOY con-
quered.

Treaty of LY-
ONS, 1601.

He attacks
GENEVA,
1603.

His restless Humour not suffering him to be quiet he attempted in the Year 1603 to take the City of *Geneva* by

Surprize. As the Attack was quite unexpected some of his Troops did scale the Walls without Opposition; but the Burghers being alarmed before they could open any Gate most of them perished in attempting to repass the Walls, and the rest were seized and put to Death immediately. *France* and *Swisserland* interposing he was forced to come to Terms; and to agree amongst other Things that no Fort should be built by him within Four Miles of *Geneva*.

The Death of *Francis III.* Duke of *Mantua* without He attacks Heirs furnished *Charles* with the Pretence for asserting the MONT-Claim of his House to *Montferrat*; but as *Spain* and di-FERRAT. vers *Italian* Powers determined to assist Don *Ferdinand* Brother to the late Duke, he was soon obliged to evacuate some Places he had seized and to give up his Right thereto formally.

In the Year 1621 *Charles* in Concert with *France* attack- He attacks the ed the *Genoese*. The Pretence for this was that the *Genoese* GENOESE. had bought of the Emperor the Marquisate of *Zuccarel*, 1621. which the last Possessor had ceded to him before it came into the Emperor's Hands. Whilst *Lesdiguires* Constable of *France* made himself Master of *Gavi*, *Charles* defeated the *Genoese* Troops near *Ottavio* and took several Places on that Side: And if they had at this Time pushed their Success *Genoa* must have fallen into their Hands; but the Constable being bribed to retard the Operations the *Spaniards* had Time to come to the Assistance of the *Genoese*. The *Spanish* Troops did not indeed carry the Town of *Verue* in *Piedmont*: But the *Savoyards* being drawn off to raise the Siege of this Place the *Genoese* after recovering what they lost carried the War into *Charles's* own Dominions. By the Treaty of *Monson* made in the next Treaty of Year it was agreed that the *Genoese* should pay the Duke MONSON. of *Savoy* 160,000 Crowns, and keep *Zuccarel*. 1622.

Upon the Death of *Vincent II.* Duke of *Mantua* with- He revives out Heirs *Charles* revived his Pretensions to *Montferrat*, his Preten- and refused the *French* who supported the Duke of *Ne- sions on vers's* Right to this Duchy a Passage through his Do-MONT- minions. It cost him however dear; for the *French* under FERRAT. Cardinal *Richelieu* having opened themselves a Way by taking *Pignerol* laid his Country waste. An *Austrian* Army commanded by *Spinola* did indeed come to his Assistance; but his Country suffered so much by the

committed by both Sides that it broke his Heart. He died in the Year 1630. The many Misfortunes and unhappy End of this Prince shew plainly, that the greatest Talents are of no Advantage where cursed Ambition is the ruling Principle.

VICTOR
AMADEUS.
1630.
Treaty of
CHIARASCO.
1631.

Victor Amadeus his Son immediately upon his Accession set about the accommodating of Matters with his Father's Enemies. By the Treaty of *Chiarasco* concluded a Year after it was agreed, that the Duke of *Savoy* in Consideration of the Sum of 494,000 Crowns should yield up *Montferrat* to the Duke of *Mantua* and his Successors; but that some Places should remain in his Hands till the Money was paid. By another Treaty signed the same Day *Pignerol* was ceded to *France*. As this Prince took upon himself two Years after the Title of King of *Cyprus*, it gave Occasion to a Misunderstanding betwixt him and the Republick of *Venice*.

VICTOR
joins the Mar-
quis of
CREQUI.

The Marquis of *Crequi* being sent in the Year 1635 with a *French* Army to assist the Duke of *Parma* *Victor* joined him. They failed in the Siege of *Valentia*: But the Duke of *Savoy* threw the Blame upon the Marquis and sufficiently recovered his own Reputation next Year at the Battle of *Tournavento*; in which the *Spaniards* who had entred the *French* Entrenchments were by his Bravery repulsed with great Loss. Being appointed in the Year 1637 Generalissimo of the *French* Troops, he obtained a compleat Victory over the *Spaniards* under Don *Martin* of *Arragon* near *Spigno*. He died in the same Year.

Battle of
TOURNA-
VENTO.
1636.
Battle of
SPIGNO.

FRANCIS,
1637.

Savoy did not only lose in him a good and brave Prince; but it was rent in Pieces by the Quarrels, betwixt the Dutchess Dowager and his two Brothers *Maurice* and *Thomas*, for the Guardianship of *Francis Hyacinth* his Son only six Years of Age. She was supported by her Brother *Lewis XIII.* of *France*; they by the Court of *Spain*, with which it was agreed that all Places taken after Resistance should belong to *Spain*.

CHARLES
EMANUEL II.
1638.

By the Death of this Prince on the 4th of *October* 1638 the Succession devolved upon his Brother *Charles Emanuel* three Years younger than himself; but as this Event did not alter the Views of the contending Parties Hostilities were continued. The *Spaniards* had made themselves Masters of *Chivas* and *Trino*; and *Chieri*,
Moncalier,

Moncalier, Pondestum, Asti, Verue, Nice, Villa Franca and some other Towns had submitted to the two Brothers.

The Town of *Turin* being in the Year 1639 surprized by *TURIN* *sur-* Prince *Thomas* the Dutchess retired with her Son into the *prised*, 1639. Citadel. Whilst the Siege of this was carrying on a Dis-agreement arose betwixt the two Brothers and the *Spanish* General; and as they insisted that this Capital the ordinary Residence of the Royal Family could never be supposed to be included in their Agreement with *Spain* the latter would not assist therein. This gave Count *Harcourt* the *French* General Time to come up; and Prince *Thomas* being blocked up in *Turin* he was after expecting in vain to be relieved by the *Spaniards* forced to surrender. The *French* having in the next Campaign taken *Coni* the two Brothers were glad to come to an Agreement with the Dutchess Dowager; and they afterwards joined with the *French* in driving the *Spaniards* out of *Savoy*.

In the Year 1649 *Charles Emanuel* being arrived at the Age of fifteen Years he was declared Major. The *CHARLES* *declared Ma-* War against the *Spaniards*, who kept Possession of several Places in his Dominions, was continued without any remarkable Event till the Treaty of *Pyrenees* in the Year *Treaty with* 1658. Tranquillity being thereby restored he kept upon *SPAIN*. good Terms with the neighbouring Powers until the Year 1674: At which Time a Quarrel was spirited up by one named *La Tour* against his Country-men the *Genseje*; but by the Interposition of *France* it was soon made up.

Savoy and *Piedmont* were by this Prince adorned *A Passage cut* with many stately Buildings; but his most considerable *through Mount* Work was the famous Passage which he caused to be cut *Viso*. through a Rock on Mount *Viso*. By this, which is an arched Passage high and broad enough for a loaded Mule to go through, the carrying of Merchandize from *Italy* to *France* which was heretofore done by a round about dangerous Way is made easy. His Death in the Year 1675 was owing to a Fright occasioned by the Fall of his only Son from a Horse.

Victor Amadeus being at his Father's Death only *VICTOR* nine Years of Age the Administration of Affairs came *AMADEUS II.* into the Hands of *Mary-Jane Baptista* of the House of 1675. *Nemours* his Mother. As soon as he came to a proper Age a Treaty of Marriage was agreed upon betwixt him and

and the *Infanta* of *Portugal*: But instead of going with the *Portuguese* Fleet sent for him he broke it off abruptly, and about two Years after married *Anne-Mary* youngest Daughter of *Philip* Duke of *Orleans*.

The Protestants persecuted. In Imitation of *Lewis XIV.* who had revoked the Edict of *Nantz* and forbidden the Exercise of the Protestant Religion in his Dominions, *Victor* set on Foot a cruel Persecution of the *Vaudois* his Protestant Subjects. After a great Expence however of Blood and Treasure, he

He enters into the Grand Alliance. upon entering into the Grand Alliance in the Year 1690 consented by a separate Article that they should enjoy all their ancient Privileges.

The Supply of Money and Troops received by *Victor* from the *Allies* did not prevent the *French* General *St. Ruth* from overrunning *Savoy* in the Year 1690; and Marshal *Catinat* after defeating his Army at *Staffarde*,

1690.

1691.

1692.

Staffarde took *Carmagnole* and *Susa*. In the next Campaign the Marshal made himself Master of *Nice* and *Villafranca*; but being repulsed by Prince *Eugene* from before *Coni* with great Loss *Carmagnole* was retaken. In the Year 1692 the Duke of *Savoy* penetrated into *Dauphiny* and took *Gap* and *Ambrun*; but quitting these Conquests in *September* without visible Reason the *Allies* suspected him of having been tampered with by *France*. However this was, his Army was in the following Year entirely ruined by the compleat Victory which *Catinat* obtained over him near *Marsaille*. By a separate Peace made with *France* in the Year 1696 *Nice*, *Susa*, *Villafranca*, *Montmelian* and *Pignerol*, after demolishing its Fortifications, were restored to him; and it was agreed that *Lewis* Duke of *Burgundy* the Dauphin's eldest Son should marry *Mary* his eldest Daughter. He after this Treaty joined with the *French* in besieging *Valencia*; but a Neutrality being agreed upon for *Italy* the Siege was raised and all Hostilities ceased on that Side.

Battle of MARSAILLE,
1693.

Separate Treaty with FRANCE,
1696.

He sides with the Duke of ANJOU,
1701.

1703:

In the War which broke out after the Death of *Charles II.* of *Spain* he sided at first with the Duke of *Anjou*, who had married his second Daughter; and was made Generalissimo of the *French* and *Spanish* Troops in *Italy*. Being suspected afterwards of some underhand Dealings with the Court of *Vienna*, his Troops were in the Year 1703 disarmed by the Order of *Lewis XIV.* and his Dominions becoming the Seat of War all *Savoy*

with

great Part of *Piedmont* fell in the two next Campaigns into the Hands of the *French*. In the Year 1706 *Turin* Siege of *Tu-* was besieged and pressed so hard, that had not Prince *RIN*, 1706. *Eugene* come by forced Marches to its Relief it must have surrendered to the Duke of *Orleans*; who succeeded to the Command in *Italy* in the room of the Duke of *Vendosme*. The *French* being attacked by Prince *Eugene* in their Trenches they were after a Resistance of two Hours forced to abandon these; and leave their Artillery and Baggage behind them. Their precipitate Retreat, together with the Loss they sustained about the same Time at the Battle of *Ramilies*, made the Recovery of most of his Dominions easy to the Duke of *Savoy*. In the next Year being assisted by Prince *Eugene* he made an Irruption into *Provence* and attacked *Attempt upon* *Toulon*. The Allied Fleet at the same Time blocked it *TOULON*, up by Sea; but after throwing some Bombs into the 1707. Town and losing a great Number of Men, amongst whom was the Marquis of *Sales*, he retreated into his own Dominions. Nothing remarkable happened afterwards on the Side of *Savoy* during this War.

By the Treaty of *Utrecht* in the Year 1713 the Coun- Treaty of ty of *Nice* and all in *Savoy* which was in the Pos- *UTRECHT*, session of the *French* were restored to the Duke of *Savoy*; 1713. and his Most Christian Majesty ceded to him the Valley of *Pragelas*, the Forts of *Exiles* and *Fenestrelles*, and the Valleys of *Oux Sezane*, *Bardonnache* and *Chateau-Dauphin*. The Duke on his Side ceded the Valley of *Barcelonetta* to *France*. By these Cessions the Tops of the *Alps* became the Boundaries betwixt these two Powers. The Kingdom of *Sicily* was also ceded to *Victor* by the King of *Spain*: and as it had been the principal View of the Allies in this War to prevent *France* and *Spain* from being united under the same Sovereign, it was stipulated that on Failure of Descendants from *Philip V.* the House of *Savoy* should succeed to the *Spanish* Crown. He was moreover confirmed in the Possession of what the Emperor *Leopold* had by a Treaty ceded to him; namely that Part of *Montferrat* which formerly belonged to the Dutchy of *Mantua*, the Provinces of *Valencia* and *Alexandria*, all the Country betwixt the *Po* and the *Tanaro*, *Lomeline*, the Valley of *Sessia* and *Vigevano*.

As

*He takes
Possession of
SICILY.*

As *Charles* Archduke of *Austria*, who after the Death of his Brother *Joseph* became Emperor, did not either by the Treaty of *Rastadt* or that of *Baden* give up his Pretensions to the *Spanish* Succession, he insisted that the Allies had no Power to dispose of *Sicily* which belonged thereto. This Island was however evacuated by the *Austrians*, and the Duke of *Savoy* took Possession of it. The Inhabitants, at first quite averse to the being detached from the Monarchy of *Spain*, were by Degrees so well reconciled to their new King that they voluntarily made him a Present of 100,000 Crowns; but the Peace of the Island was soon disturbed by the Clergy's Demands of Immunities. Hereupon the Bishop of *Catania* one of the most factious was ordered by the Magistrates to quit the Kingdom. Having at his going away put his own Diocese under an Interdict he made the best of his Way to *Rome*; and the whole Kingdom of *Sicily* was afterwards excommunicated by the Pope. As all Ecclesiasticks were forbid by the Council of State, on pain of Death and Confiscation of Estate, to pay any Regard to this Excommunication great numbers of them left the Kingdom and went to *Rome*.

*Quarrel with
the Clergy.*

*SICILY in-
vaded by the
SPANIARDS.*

While this Quarrel lasted a *Spanish* Fleet made a Descent upon the Island, and conquered the greatest Part thereof. This Invasion of *Sicily* by the *Spaniards*, who had but a little before taken *Sardinia* from the Emperor, alarmed some Powers and gave Rise to the Treaty of *Quadruple Alliance* concluded at *London*; by which it was agreed that the Emperor should have *Sicily* and cede his Right to *Sardinia* to the Duke of *Savoy*. This last did not like the Exchange; but as the *Spaniards* were in Possession of all *Sicily* except *Messina* he consented to it.

*He becomes
King of
SARDINIA,*

1718.

*He reforms the
Laws.*

The two Islands were by the Assistance of a *British* Fleet taken from the *Spaniards*; and *Sardinia* with the Title of King has ever since belonged to the House of *Savoy*. *Victor* now set about reforming the Laws; and he was so much in Earnest that in the Year 1723 they were all reduced into a single Volume containing about 644 Leaves. By this Code, which began to be observed immediately, the Dispensation of Justice was to his great Glory made more expeditious and less expensive to his Subjects. As the Princess of *Pied-*

mont

mont died in the same Year in Child-bed of a Prince, who *The Prince of* was honoured with the Title of Duke of *Aoust*, it was ^{PIEDMONT} thought of great Consequence that the Prince should ^{marries a se-} marry again. *Polyxena* of *Hesse Rhinels* being the Per-^{cond time.} son pitched upon for his second Wife he was married to her in the Year 1724. The Death of the Duke of *Aoust*, which happened soon after, in whom all the Hopes of this illustrious Family were centered, shewed sufficiently the Propriety of this Precaution.

The Friendship of *Victor*, esteemed the best Politician ^{Prudent Con-} of the Time, being on the account of his Strength and Si-^{duct of VIC-} tuation of great Consequence it was courted by all the ^{TOR.} Powers of *Europe*: But he took Care to keep upon good Terms with all his Neighbours without engaging too closely with any one of them; and applied himself diligently to the introducing of *Œconomy* and a regard for Religion in his Court. These Virtues, as will always be the Case when an Example is set by the Great, by Degrees spread themselves, and both Prince and People became happy as well as rich. In *September* 1730, having assembled the Bishops and the Principal Officers of State, he declared his Resolution of abdicating the Crown in *He abdicates* Favour of the Prince of *Piedmont*; and that he intended *the Crown,* to marry the Countess Dowager of *St. Sebastian*, and ^{1730.} live privately in *Chambery* upon a Pension of 50,000 Livres. After taking Leave in the most affectionate Manner he quitted his Crown and Capital to *Charles Emanuel* his Son; but the Repose he promised himself was disturbed by a Misunderstanding which soon arose betwixt him and *Charles*. He died at *Montcalier* in *October* 1732 aged sixty-six Years.

The Complaints of the Court of *Turin* at the Court ^{CHARLES} of *Vienna*, which had been made for some Time before ^{EMANUEL} the Accession of this Prince, for not fulfilling its Engage-^{III. 1730.} ments became every Day more and more serious; and the keeping back of some Records, looked upon by the King of *Sardinia* as essentially necessary to make his Title good to the Part of *Montferrat* ceded to him, rendered the Sincerity of the Emperor in this Cession suspected. It having been besides insisted upon by the Emperor's Minister at *Turin* that divers of the Territories ceded to *Victor* were Fiefs of the Dutchy of *Milan*, a Negotiation was set on Foot for adjusting these Matters, and

and great Pains were taken by the Earl of *Essex* Ambassador from *Great-Britain* to his *Sardinian* Majesty that it might be effectual: But the Court of *Vienna* held out with its usual Obstinacy.

He joins in a War against the Emperor.

As *Charles* looked upon this Treatment to be very injurious he upon the breaking out of the War on account of the *Polish* Election came the more easily into the Views of *France*, and a Treaty of Alliance Offensive and Defensive betwixt *France*, *Spain* and *Sardinia*, was signed in *September* 1733. In a Manifesto soon after published he declared, that he entered into this War for the Sake of reducing the exorbitant Power of the House of *Austria* and doing himself Justice. The *French* General *Villars* being joined in the Year 1734 by his *Sardinian* Majesty they soon made themselves Master of the *Milanese*; and marching into the Territories of *Modena* they seized some *Magazines* prepared by its Duke, who fled on their Approach to *Bologna*, for the *Austrians*.

The MILANESE conquered, 1734.

After this Success the King returned to his Capital where some Business of Importance demanded his Presence; which being dispatched he rejoined the Army: But he was again called Home by the Queen's Illness, and could not get back to the Army till the 30th of *June* the Day after the Battle of *Parma*. Count *Merci* being killed in this Battle, wherein the Loss was great on both Sides, Prince *Lewis* of *Wirtemberg* took the Command of the *Imperial* Army until the Arrival of Count *Koningsegg*. This last having somewhat retrieved the Affairs of the *Austrians* he upon the 15th of *September* at break of Day beat up Marshal *Broglie's* Quarters, and was very near taking him Prisoner. His Baggage and some Prisoners fell into the Enemy's Hands.

Battle of PARMA.

On the 19th a general Action ensued near *Guastalla*; in which the King of *Sardinia* who commanded gave signal Proofs of Bravery and Prudence. The *Imperialists* resisted with the greatest Obstinacy for some time; but they were in the End forced to give Way.

Battle of GUASTALLA.

The Death of the Queen in *January* 1735 obliged the King to leave the Army again: But after indulging his Grief a decent Time he returned thereto. Count *Koningsegg* having since the bloody Battle of *Guastalla* lost all Hopes of recovering any Thing for the Emperor, he was now wholly intent upon saving the

1735.
The IMPERIALISTS retire before the ALIENS.

Mantuan:

Mantuan: But as the Duke of *Montemar* had after conquering the two *Sicilies* joined the *French* and *Sardinians*, the *Imperialists* were forced to retire before the *Allies* so fast that scarce any Thing was left in the *Mantuan* but the Capital; and this being blocked up by the *Spaniards* could not have held out long.

Several Plans of Peace, and amongst the rest one concerted by the Courts of *Vienna* and *London* and presented of *VIENNA*. by the *States General*, having been rejected a Negotiation was secretly entered into by *France* at *Vienna*; and the Preliminaries of *Vienna* being signed in *October* *France* took upon herself to answer for the Accession of her Allies thereto. By these the King of *Sardinia* was to have the Choice of two of the three Provinces of *Tortona*, *Novara* and *Vigevano*. As he preferred the two former his Imperial Majesty by an Act dated the Sixth of *July* 1736 gave up all his Right to those Provinces: And by an Act dated the next Day he ceded the Territory of *Languages*, to specify which particular Care had been taken in the Preliminaries. On the 16th of *August* *Charles* by an Act signed at *Turin* acceded to the Preliminaries.

Not long after a Proposal of Marriage was made by *He marries* *Charles* to the Princess *Elizabeth Theresa* Sister to again, 1737. the new Grand Duke of *Tuscany*: And the Prince of *Carignan* espoused her as his Proxy in *March* 1737. On the 6th of the next Month the King met her at *Chamberry*; and they made their publick Entry into *Turin* upon the 22d. She died in *July* 1741.

The Dominions of his *Sardinian* Majesty comprehend *The* *Dominions and Com-* the Island of *Sardinia*, the Dutchy of *Savoy*, the *modities of his* Principality of *Piedmont*, *Oneglia* and its Dependencies, the County of *Nice* and the Dutchy of *Montferrat*. *Savoy* ^{SARDINIAN} is mountainous; but the Vallies thereof, which are ex-^{Majesty.} ceedingly fruitful, abound with Wine, all Sorts of Grain, Hemp and Flax. *Chamberry* is its Capital; and the Place where its Parliament meets. No Countries are more fruitful than *Piedmont* and *Montferrat* in Wine, Rice, Corn and Silk: And the *Po* which waters these most delightful Countries might be made very serviceable to Trade, if the Inhabitants were more industrious and less addicted to Pleasure. *Turin* the Capital of *Piedmont*, which is the ordinary Residence of the King, is well fortified and defended by one of the best Castles in

in *Europe*. Although the King of *Sardinia* is neither so powerful nor so rich as some of the neighbouring States: Yet as the *Alps*, the Passes of which are in his Hands, are the Boundaries thereof his Dominions are well secured against Invasions.

*His Interest
with Regard
to the Houses
of BOUR-
BON and
AUSTRIA.*

The Territories of this Prince, which are almost surrounded by those of the Houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon*, are in great Danger of being insulted in the Case of a Rupture between these two Houses; for which Reason, as it is scarce possible for him to be Neuter in such a Case, it seems his wisest Way to join if it can safely be done with the weaker, that the Balance of Power may be preserved betwixt them.

SWISSER-
LAND.

The *Swiss* Cantons will not be fond of quarrelling with the King of *Sardinia*, nor is it for his Interest to differ with them; because they may be vrey serviceable Allies to him on many Occasions.

GENEVA.

As *Geneva* is no Match for the King of *Sardinia* he is in no Danger from thence. On the other Hand it would be a fruitless Attempt in him to attack *Geneva*, since neither *France* nor *Swisserland* would willingly see this *Republick* conquered by him.

GENOA.

His Situation with regard to the *Republick* of *Genoa* makes it for their mutual Interest to be upon good Terms.

The POPE.

He has nothing to fear from the Pope; but as a superstitious Regard for the latter prevails in *Italy* it would be imprudent in the King of *Sardinia* to break with him.

VENICE.

The assuming of the Title of King of *Cyprus* by the House of *Savoy* has given great Disgust to the *Republick* of *Venice*. It is however of great Consequence both to *Venice* and to the Liberties of *Italy*, that his *Sardinian* Majesty be not deprived of any Part of his Dominions either by the House of *Bourbon* or that of *Austria*.

EMPIRE.

Being a Member of the Germanick Body the King of *Sardinia* is under the same Obligations to the Head of this Body as the other Members are.

The MARI-
TIME POW-
ERS.

It is vastly for his Interest to be in Amity with the *Maritime Powers*; for their Fleets and especially that of *Great Britain* could greatly annoy him. Besides as he is indebted to them for *Sardinia*, which will be always remembred to have been a Part of the *Spanish* Monarchy, so their Assistance may be sometime or other absolutely necessary to his keeping thereof.

C H A P. II.

Of G E N O A.

IN the Time of the second *Punic* War the City of *Ancient State* *Genoa* was destroyed by *Magon* Brother of the cele- of *GENOA*. brated *Hannibal*. It was rebuilt soon after by *Spurius Lucretius*, and continued from this Time under Subjection to the *Romans*. On the Declension of the western Empire it came into the Hands of the *Goths*; who were afterwards drove from it by *Narses*, and it made Part of the Kingdom of *Lombardy*. This last change cost the *Genoesse* dear; for *Rotharis* King of the *Lombards* after sacking it destroyed the City of *Genoa*; but it was again rebuilt by *Charlemain*, and being annexed to the Empire of the *Franks* was governed by a Count.

Audemar the first Count, who was a Relation of *Char-* It is governed *lemain's*, being an expert Warrior he defeated the *Saracens* by COUNTS. in a naval Engagement, and took from them *Corsica*.

When the *Saracens* invaded *Italy* about the Year 931 It is taken by they took *Genoa* after a vigorous Resistance; and the *SARA-* having put the Men to the Sword most of the Women CENS. and Children were carried into *Africa*.

Genoa by Degrees recovered itself; and the *Genoesse* It becomes a by applying themselves to Navigation grew so power- Republick, ful as to kick against their Counts. About the Year 1096 1096. they threw off their Authority entirely, and were afterwards governed by a Council composed of the principal People. Under this form of Government the naval Force of the *Genoesse* encreased so much, that in the beginning of the eleventh Century they sent a powerful Fleet to the Assistance of *Baldwin* King of *Jerusalem*; which had a considerable Share in recovering *Cæsarea* and *Tripoli* from the Infidels. At the taking of the former a *Genoesse* named *William Embriaco*, who first scaled the Walls, had for his Share of the Plunder the famous Emerald Dish at this Day to be seen in *Genoa*; which is reported to be the very same that the *Paschal Lamb* was at the last Supper served up in.

War with the
PISANS,
1125.

In the Year 1125 a War was kindled betwixt the *Genoese* and *Pisans*, because these last laid Claim to Part of *Corfica*: But after a Series of Losses the *Pisans*, their Capital being besieged both by Sea and Land, were reduced to the Necessity of submitting to an ignominious Treaty; by which amongst other Things they agreed that no House in *Pisa* should be built above one Story high. In the Year 1144 Pope *Lucius II.* discharged the *Genoese* of the Tribute annually paid to the See of *Rome* for *Corfica*.

The GENOESE
submit to the
Emperor.

The Emperor *Frederick I.* after conquering the *Milaneze* obliged both the *Genoese* and *Pisans* to take an Oath of Allegiance to him; and demolished the Fortifications which the former were building round their Town.

War with the
PISANS,
1175.

The *Pisans* as soon as they had recovered themselves broke the Treaty with the *Genoese*: And endeavour'd about the Year 1175 to drive them from *Corfica*. The War was hereupon recommenced; but the Emperor interposing he ordered that it should be shared betwixt them as it had for a long Time been. Instead of Consuls annually chosen to preside over the Council, which was the Method observed on forming themselves into a Republick, the *Genoese* did now place at the head of the Council an Officer called a *Podestate*; yet to say the Truth the form of Government was often changed, for sometimes *Consuls* at other Times a *Podestate* presided in the Council.

Another War
with the PISANS, 1195.

In the Year 1195 the *Pisans* renewed their Claim to the whole of *Corfica*, and a bloody War of seven Years Continuance ensued: In which both States suffered so much that they were glad to clap up a Truce. During this War the Marquis of *Gavi* sold his Right to this Marquisate to the Republick for 400,000 Livres.

The GENOESE
side with the
Pope.

As it was impossible for the *Genoese* to be neuter in the Quarrel betwixt the Emperor *Frederick II.* and Pope *Gregory IX.* they sided with the latter. The War which ensued was in the Beginning fatal to them; for the Emperor made himself Master of *Savona*, and *Henry King of Sardinia* his natural Son defeated their Fleet with great Loss: But by their Steadiness they got the better of these Misfortunes, and contributed much to the Ruin of the Emperor's Affairs in *Italy*.

After the Death of *Frederick* some neighbouring States *The PISAN* took great Pains to put an End to the Differences which *Fleet is ruined,* had so long subsisted betwixt the *Genoese* and *Pisans*. 1256.
The principal Matter in Dispute was which State should have *Lerica* and *Trebianò*. This being left to the *Florentines* to decide, they adjudged both of them to the former; nevertheless, for the latter would not acquiesce, the War was renewed with great Vigour. Hereupon the *Florentines* and the *Lucquese* assisted the *Genoese*; and the *Pisan* Fleet being entirely ruined in the Year 1256 *Lerica* fell into their Hands.

In the next Year the *Pod'state* was deposed: And all *BOCCANE-* Authority, heretofore in the Council, was lodged *GRA is made* in the Hands of *William Boccanegra* with the Title of *Captain*.
Captain.

As the *Venetians*, *Genoese* and *Pisans*, had been prin- *War with*
cipally concerned in the taking of *Ptolemais* from the In- *VENICE*.
fidels it was divided amongst them; and to prevent Jealousies the Church of *St. Saba*, much the most commodious in the Town, was to be enjoyed in common. The *Genoese* not content with this insinuated themselves into Count *Montfort* the Governor's Favour; and with the Assistance of some Soldiers kept the others out of the Church. News of this being received at *Venice* a Fleet was sent out under the Command of *Laurentio Tiepolo*; who having first defeated their Fleet made the best of his Way for *Ptolemais* and sacked the *Genoese* Quarter. A Truce was by the Pope's Mediation clapped up; but it did not last long, for the *Genoese* about the Year 1255 assisted *Michael Paleologas* in driving *Baldwin* from *Constantinople*. As the *Venetians* sided with the latter Hostilities were recommenced; but the *Genoese* being defeated in two Engagements at Sea the Truce was renewed. In the mean Time the Captain *Boccanegra* had *BOCCANEGR* been deposed; and the Government was again got into *is deposed*.
the Hands of a Council.

In the Year 1280 another War broke out with the *War with the*
Venetians; with whom the *Pisans* had allied them- *PISANS*,
selves. The *Genoese* however found Means to make up 1280.
Matters with the former, and turned their whole Strength against the latter. Their two Fleets met in the Year 1248 and a bloody Action ensued; in which the *Genoese*
sunk

The PISANS received a total Overthrow. sunk seven Vessels and took twenty-eight. In this Battle 5000 *Pisans* were killed or lost, and about 11,000 of them being made Prisoners it was said in Raillery, *That there were more Pisans at Genoa than at Pisa itself.* This total Overthrow was followed with the Loss of the Island of *Elba* and *Leghorn*: And the *Pisans*, who could not afterwards look the *Genoese* in the Face, for the sake of Peace quitted all Claim to *Corsica*; paid a large Sum for defraying the Expence of this War; and agreed not to send an armed Vessel to Sea for the space of fifteen Years.

War with
VENICE.

Hostilities with *Venice* having been some Time before the Conclusion of the Treaty with *Pisa* renewed, the *Venetian* Fleet was defeated with the loss of fourscore and five Vessels and seven thousand Men. Their Admiral fell into the Hands of the *Genoese*: But he robbed them of the Pleasure of leading him in Triumph by dashing his Brains out against his Prison Wall. By the Mediation of *Padua* the two Republicks were reconciled.

UGOTIN
made Governor.

The Contests, which had upon the first Division of *Italy* into *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* distracted the Republick, being again renewed the Family of *Spinola* a Favourer of the latter was banished: But the Emperor *Henry VII.* soon after made himself Master of *Genoa* and appointed *Ugotin* Governor thereof.

The Sovereignty
is conferred
on the King of
NAPLES,
1313.

The *Guelphs*, who afterwards got the Upper-hand, transferred the Sovereignty of *Genoa* in the Year 1313 to *Robert King of Naples.* It continued to be dependent upon *Naples* till the Year 1329, when the Party of the *Gibelines* being prevalent *Simon Boccanegra* was chosen Doge of *Genoa*: But by excluding the Nobility from the Government and oppressing the *Guelphs* he soon became so odious to the People, that they deposed him and took the Government into their own Hands.

The GENCESE
submit to the
Duke of MI-
LAN.

After this the Government was sometimes Aristocratical at other Times Democratical; but the People who suffered a great deal from this unsettled state of Things at last submitted to the Duke of *Milan.*

War with
VENICE,
1351.
1352.

Another War breaking out betwixt *Genoa* and *Venice* the Fleet of the former was in the Year 1351 defeated off *Negropont.* The *Genese* lost their Admiral and 4000 Men; but his Successor *Doria* took ample Revenge upon the

the combined Fleet of *Venice* and *Arragen* in the following Year. In the Year 1353 the Chance of War turned again in Favour of the *Venetians*, who their Enemy being worsted took thirty Galleys and near 5000 Men Prisoners: But this Success was dearly paid for, the *Venetian* Fleet being in the next Year entirely destroyed. Five thousand Men were killed in the Action; and *Pisani* who commanded with as many more were made Prisoners. Upon the whole this War was so ruinous that both States being tired of it readily consented to a Peace. About the same Time *Calo-John* Emperor of *Greece* in Reward for their Services gave the *Genoese* the Island of *Lesbos*.

1353.

1354.

Acquisition of
LEBOS.

In the Year 1360 the *Genoese* being weary of their Subjection to *Milan* expelled the Governor set over them and chose themselves a Doge. In order however to divert the Resentment naturally to be expected they agreed to pay the Duke of *Milan* an annual Tribute of 4000 Ducats, and to keep up 400 Men for his Service.

They GENO-
ESE recover
their Indepen-
dency, 1360.

A Dispute which arose betwixt the Ambassadors of *Genoa* and *Venice*, concerning Precedence at the Coronation of a King of *Cyprus*, being determined in favour of the *Venetian*, the *Genoese* resolved to do himself Justice by force of Arms: But the *Venetian* Minister having discovered the Design informed the Court of *Cyprus* thereof, and the *Genoese* Minister with all his Attendants were put to Death. The *Genoese* no sooner heard this than a Fleet was fitted out; which after taking *Nicosia* and *Famagosta* obliged the King of *Cyprus* to comply with their own Terms. These were that he should put himself under the Protection of the *Genoese*; reimburse them their Expenses upon the Occasion; and pay them an annual Tribute.

War with
CYPRUS.

Calo-John Emperor of *Greece* having given *Tenedos* to the *Venetians*, the *Genoese* their natural rivals, who were chagrined at their Acquisition of so fine an Island, endeavoured to take it from them. The War which ensued cost both the *Genoese* and *Venetians* so very dear, that it might have been justly said of them as it was heretofore of the rival States of *Carthage* and *Rome*, that the Conquerors themselves did but just escape Ruin. The Fleet of *Venice* having been destroyed and several Islands having been taken this Republick was

War with
VENICE.

Treaty with
VENICE,
1379.

brought into the utmost Danger: But being made desperate by the haughty Carriage of *Doria* the *Genoese* Admiral, who would listen to no Terms, the *Venetians* exerted themselves in such a Manner that in the End the *Genoese* were almost as great Sufferers as themselves. By a Treaty concluded in the Year 1379 the Conquests were on both Sides given up; and the *Venetians* were left in Possession of *Tenedis*.

The GENO-
ESE submit to
FRANCE.

After this the Republick was so miserably divided by the Factions of the *Adorni* and *Fregosa* Families, each of which being powerful wanted the sole Management of Affairs, that the Body of the People in the Year 1396 chose rather to submit to *Charles VI.* of *France* than bear the Inconveniencies of their Intrigues any longer. The Terms were, that the Doge to be chosen by the People should be approved of by *Charles* and take an Oath of Allegiance to him; that a Governor of *Genoa* should be appointed by *Charles*; and that the Republick should pay him annually 4000 Florins. In Return *Charles* was to assist the *Genoese* upon all Occasions.

They revolt
and submit to
MONTFER-
RAT, 1408.

As the prudent Conduct of the Marquis of *Boucicaut*, who was appointed Governor, did not although he acquired for them *Leghorn* make the *Genoese* easy, they in the Year 1408 whilst he was at War with the Duke of *Milan* massacred all the *French*: And put themselves under the Marquis of *Montferrat's* Protection. In Revenge *Porto Venero*, *Lerica* and *Sarzanello*, which the *French* were in Possession of, were ceded by the King of *France* to the *Florentines*. The *Genoese* being still dissatisfied, the Marquis of *Montferrat* about four Years after for the sum of 26,000 Ducats quitted all Pretensions to Dominion over them; and prevailed on the *Florentines* to restore the above-named Places.

They purchase
their Independ-
ency.

Upon the Revival of the *Guelph* and *Gibeline* Factions the publick Treasury was so exhausted by intestine Jars, that *Corsica* being attacked by *Alphonso* of *Arragon* the *Genoese* were forced to sell *Leghorn*. This Prince had made himself Master of *Calvi* and was before *St. Boniface*; but being repulsed from thence with Loss he returned home.

They submit to
MILAN, 1442.

Finding that their Independency served only to make them a Prey to some Families, the *Genoese* in the Year 1442 submitted to the Duke of *Milan* on the same Terms they

they had before done to *France*: But this new Master, who well knew their Inconstancy, determined to make the best use he could for himself of their Submission. He would not suffer them to fortify *Borda*, *Pieva* or some other Places; and upon a Quarrel of his own plunged the *Genoese* into a War with *Venice*. Being provoked at these Things and more especially at the Duke's Conduct in a War with the King of *Arragon*, who being made Prisoner by their Fleet was carried to *Milan* and not a Shilling of his Ransom came into their Coffers, the *Genoese* in the Year 1456 threw off all Allegiance to him.

They had however scarce regained their Independency *They submit* when the Contests betwixt the *Fregosa* and *Adorni* Fa- *again to* milies again threw Things into Confusion: And finding *FRANCE*. their Independency and Tranquillity incompatible they within two Years submitted again to *France*. They afterwards put themselves under the Dominion of *John* Duke of *Anjou*: But they revolted from *Rene* his Son and cut the Throats of 2500 *French*. *Lewis* XI. of *France* transferred his Pretensions to *Genoa* and *Savona* to *Francis Sforca* Duke of *Milan*, upon Condition however that they should be both held as Fiefs of the *French* Crown.

Sforca soon made himself Master of *Genoa* and the *They recover* People were tolerably easy under his Government: *their Liberty*, But his Son *Galeace* being unsuccessful against *Mahomet* II. who took all the Places belonging to the *Genoese* 1475. in the *Black Sea*, they in the Year 1475 revolted from *Milan*.

They soon after came to a Rupture with the *Floren-War with the* times and took from them *Pietra-santa*, *Sarzana* and *Sarza-FLOREN-* *nello*: But an Accommodation being brought about the *TINES*. former was restored, upon Condition that the *Florentines* should renounce all Claim to the two latter. *Sarzana*, which was soon after seized by the *Florentines*, came again in the Year 1496 by the Treachery of its Governor into the Hands of the *Genoese*.

In the Year 1498 the Republick again submitted to *Genoa subdued* *Milan*; but *Lewis Sforca* being in the next Year de- *FRANCE*, prived of the Duchy of *Milan* by *Lewis* XII. *Genoa* 1498. came by this Means again under the Dominion of *France*. Eight Years after there was an Insurrection amongst the Populace, who after cutting the *French* Garrison to Pieces

chose *Paul Novi* a Silk-Dyer for their Doge. *Lewis* marched against the *Genoese* with a powerful Army; and having defeated the Troops gathered together to oppose him they soon submitted. The new Doge together with his principal Accomplices were beheaded: And their ancient Privileges being abolished *Lewis* the better to keep the *Genoese* under Subjection reserved to himself the Nomination of a Governour; the Disposal of all Fines and Confiscations for Treason or other Crimes; and the Presentation to all Benefices. He ordered also that the Coin should bear his Arms in conjunction with those of *Genoa*; and that the *Genoese* Gallies should carry *French* Colours

FRANCIS
FREGOSA is
chosen Doge,
1514.

Notwithstanding all this they in the Year 1514 drove out the *French* Garrison: And *Fregosa* who was chosen Doge found Ways to reconcile himself to *Francis I.* *Fregosa* was hereupon was confirmed in his new Dignity, and declared Administrator of the Dominions of *Genoa* for the *French* Crown to which he swore Allegiance; and he also gave up a strong Place as a Security for his Obedience.

GENOA taken
by the SPA-
NIARDS.

In the Year 1521 the *Spanish* General *Prospero Colonna* sat down before *Genoa*, which being unable to hold out proposed a Capitulation: But before the Articles of this were settled the *Spaniards* took the Advantage of the Negligence of the Inhabitants to seize and pillage the City; and *Fregosa* with some others were made Prisoners. *Genoa* was retaken by *Andrea Doria* a *Genese* in the *French* Service; and would it is probable have continued faithful to the *French* Crown, had it not been for the ill Conduct of *Francis I.* He endeavoured to enlarge the Commerce of *Savona* and established Magazines for Salt there; which as it must have been prejudicial to *Genoa* disgusted *Doria* and all good Patriots. He besides broke his Promise with *Doria* in obliging him to restore the Prisoners taken in an Engagement off *Naples*. As the King contrary to the Advice of his true Friends was obstinate as to these Points *Doria* went over with his Gallies to the *Imperialists*; and in the Year 1527 had the Command in an Attack upon *Genoa*.

Its Independen-
cy is restored,
1527.

Doria had no more than 500 regular Troops on board his Fleet; yet as the *French* Admiral fled before him he soon

soon became Master of the Port. The *French* Marshal *Trivulco* Governour of the City held out for some Time in the Castle; but Provisions failing he was forced to surrender. Although the Sovereignty was now offered to *Doria* he declined it; choosing as every honest Man ought rather to be the DELIVERER than the Master of his Country. By a new Regulation the Nobility were reduced to twenty-eight Families; and the Distinction of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* which had caused so many Disorders was entirely laid aside. As *Savona* soon after submitted to them the *Genoese* demolished the Fortifications of this Town and destroyed the Port. They afterwards made themselves Masters of *Ovada*, *Novi* and *Gavi*; and have ever since preserved their Independency.

About the Year 1547 a dangerous Conspiracy was set on foot by *John Lewis* Count of *Lavagno*, who could not bear to see the great Power of the House of *Doria*: And his Measures were conducted so Secretly that he was Master of the Gallies before the *Dorias* suspected any thing. One of the *Dorias* named *Janetin* hearing a Noise, which he imagined to be only a Quarrel amongst some Sailors, came out of his House and was killed, and *John Lewis* was upon the Brink of triumphing over them; but passing in the Dark from one Gally to another he fell into the Sea and the Weight of his Arms sunk him immediately. Thus the *Dorias* were delivered from an implacable Rival; and the State got rid of a turbulent Citizen, whom nothing less than the Sovereign Power would ever have satisfied.

The Emperor *Charles V.* took Occasion from hence of advising *Doria* to build a Citadel for his Security; but this brave Man answered, that his Life was not of Consequence enough to warrant the doing of any Thing for its Preservation which might endanger the Liberty of his Country. *Charles* afterwards in order to engage the *Genoese* in his Interest borrowed of them a large Sum of Money, and as a Security therefore mortgaged to them some Estates and Revenues in *Naples*; which the Money having never been repaid are to this Day enjoyed by the *Genoese* under the Mortgage. As the *Genoese* sided with the Emperor in his War with *Henry II.* the latter caused a Descent to be made upon *Corfica*.

Corfica. The Attempts made to drive the *French* from thence did not succeed; all however which the *Genoese* lost of this Island was restored by the Treaty of *Chateau Cambresis* in the Year 1559.

The GENOESE
seize FINAL,
1563.

As *Final* which belonged to the *Caretto* Family lay very convenient for them the *Genoese* about the Year 1563 seized it. Complaint being hereupon made by this Family to the Emperor he ordered them to restore it. This was refused at first: Notwithstanding however all the Arts used they were in the End forced to do it. Whilst this was upon the Tapis new Troubles arose in *Corfica*; but *San Pietro Bastelica* a *Genoese* the Contriver of these, who had been for some Time in the Service of *France*, being defeated they were soon appeased.

Divisions a-
mongst the
Nobility,
1573.

Since *Doria's* Regulation concerning the Nobility twentyfour Families had been added thereto: Which being held in great Contempt by the others, who engrossed all the considerable Offices, it came in the Year 1573 to a downright Quarrel. By the Mediation however of the *Pope*, the Emperor and *Spain*, this was made up; and it was agreed, that all Marks of Distinction being laid aside the new Nobility should be equally with the old capable of all Offices.

War with SA-
VOY, 1621.

In the Year 1621 the Tranquillity which had been long enjoyed by the Republick was disturbed on the following Account. The Marquis of *Zuccarel* having been deprived of his Marquisate by the Imperial Chamber for Rebellion, it was sold to the *Genoese*; but their Right was protested against by the Duke of *Savoy*, who pretended that this Marquisate was granted to him before the Deprivation of its late Master: And by a Treaty entered into with *France* it was agreed to conquer and divide the Dominions of the *Genoese*. All as far as *Savona* was by this Agreement to belong to *France*; and the Marquisate of *Zuccarel* with the rest of the *Genoese* Dominions were to be annexed to *Savoy*. Their joint Forces soon became Masters of *Ottagio*, *Albenga*, *Nevi*, *Vintimiglia*, *Gavi* and other Places; and the Republick must in all Probability have been quite ruined, had not Ways been found to gain over the Constable *Lefdiguire* who commanded the *French* Troops. By his delaying the Operations of the Campaign the Governour of *Milan* had

had Time to come to the Assistance of the *Genoese*; so that they not only recovered all they had lost, but after taking *Oneglia* and some other Places from him the Duke of *Savoy* was glad to consent to a Truce.

A *Genoese* named *Vacher* of low Birth, yet so rich that *VACHER's* the Nobility could not vye with him in Magnificence, *Plot.* became on this Account the Butt of their Envy; and they determined to affront him so as to keep him for the future out of their Company. In an Assembly at *St. Cyr* many rude Things were said to him; and his Wife was reflected upon in a most scandalous Manner. *Vacher* complained to the Magistrates: Which not being attended to he grew desperate and a Plot was laid for destroying all the Nobility. Measures were for this purpose concerted with the Duke of *Savoy*: but the Plot when quite ripe for Execution was discovered; and *Vacher* with three of his Accomplices being seized they were, notwithstanding the Intercession of *Spain* and the Duke of *Savoy* who took the whole upon himself, all beheaded. The latter threatned to serve four *Genoese* Chiefs his Prisoners in the same Manner: but his Wrath was assuaged; and by a Peace concluded in the Year 1622 at *Monson* it was agreed, that all Prisoners and *Treaty of* Places taken should be mutually given up; and that the *MONSON,* *Genoese* who were to pay the Duke 160,000 Crowns 1622. should keep *Zuccarel*.

Hostilities were recommenced in the Year 1672 by *War with* the Duke of *Savoy* against *Genoa* at the Instigation of *la SAVOY, 1672.* *Tour* a *Genoese* Exile. As this Attack was quite unexpected he easily became Master of *Pieva* and some other Places; but these were soon recovered, and his Army under the Marquis of *Catalan* was worsted near *Vecchio.* *Battle of* After some other inconsiderable Actions a Treaty was *VECCHIO.* concluded under the Mediation of *France*; by which the Conquests made on both Sides were to be restored.

The Republick having in the Year 1684 entered into *Bombardments* an Alliance with *Spain*, and built four Gallies for the *of GENOA,* Service of this Crown, *Lewis XIV.* then in the Meri- 1684. dian of his Power expostulated with them about it. Receiving from them a scornful Answer the Marquis of *Segnelai* came with a Fleet before *Genoa*: And after good Part of it was by Bombarding laid in Ashes, the *French* presuming

presuming upon the Strength of a Party in the Town landed: But this Party being unable to support them they were repulsed and lost the Chevalier *Leri* one of their best Sea Officers. The *Genoese* being however unable to cope with *France* they submitted to *Lewis's* own Terms. These were that the Count of *Lavagno* should have Satisfaction for what had been taken from his ancestor *John Lewis*, and as it would take some Time to settle the Account a hundred thousand Crowns were to be immediately paid to him; and that the Doge with four of the principal Senators should go and ask Pardon of *Lewis* at *Paris*.

GENOESE
Ships seized.

Notwithstanding the strict Neutrality observed by the Republick in the War on Account of the *Spanish* Succession, some Vessels of the *Genoese* were seized in coming out of *Cadiz* by *English* Ships and carried into *Portmahon*. It being suspected that their Lading which was very rich belonged to *French* Merchants these were declared good Prizes; but upon Representations to the Court of *London* they were restored in the Year 1711, and Satisfaction was made for so much of their Cargo as had been disposed of.

Acquisition of
FINAL, 1713.

After the Treaty of *Utrecht* the Republick was put into the Possession of *Final*, which she had bought of the Emperor; and the Duke of *Savoy* having withdrawn his Troops three hundred *Corficans* entered thereinto.

Insurrection
in CORSICA,
1729.

In the Year 1729 the *Corficans* flew to Arms, in order to free themselves from the insupportable Burthen of Taxes and other Grievances which they had long groaned under, and having taken *Aleria* by Storm, the Garrison of which they put to the Sword, they marched towards *Bastia*. The Bishop of *Aleria* had there a Conference with *Pompiliari* the Chief of the Malecontents; and upon his promising to write to *Genoa* concerning their Demands a Truce for three Weeks was agreed upon. The Governor of *Bastia* would fain have drawn *Pompiliari* into the Town, to adjust as he pretended some Matters; but the latter suspecting some Mischief sent his Lieutenant, who being immediately put to Death all Hopes of an Accommodation were at an End.

VENEROSO
sent thither.

The Senate hereupon sent *Veneroso*, whose mild Government had formerly recommended him to the *Corficans*,

tans, as the most proper Person to put a Stop to this Insurrection: Who in an Interview with *Pompiliari* exhorted him to give over his rash Enterprize. Being treated by the latter with Contempt he set a Time for the *Corficans* to lay down their Arms, and promised that their Grievances should be redressed; but he declared that after the Expiration of the prefixed Time no Mercy should be shewn to any found in Arms. As no Regard was paid thereto he acquainted the Senate that nothing but rigorous Methods would do; and soon after returned to *Genoa* accompanied by *Pinelli* the present Governour whose Time was expired.

It was hoped that the Departure of *Pine'li* would have FRANCIS satisfied the *Corfican* a little; but as the Taxes were not GROPELO is lessened every thing grew worse and worse under his Suc- sent thither. cessor *Francis Gropelo*. As the Conduct of the Chiefs of the Malecontents, who maintained good Discipline among their Followers, seemed quite disinterested, and pretended to be animated by *publick Spirit* only, was infinitely preferable to the rapacious and oppressive Behaviour of the *Genese* Magistrates, their Party encreased so that the *Genoese* Party not daring to keep the Field shut themselves up in *Bastia*, *Ajazzo* and *Calvi*. The Malecontents divided themselves into three Bodies, one of which consisted of at least 8000 Men; and they were well supplied with Ammunition by foreign Vessels. The Difficulties which had delayed the Investiture of *Don Carlos* being got over, the Senate of *Genoa* begged of the Emperor to assist them with 4000 Men of the Army he had assembled in the *Milanese* to oppose the Introduction of this Prince. Hereupon the Malecontents, who dreaded more the Emperor's Displeasure than this Number of Men, endeavoured to convince him of the Justness of their Demands: Which were a Redress of Grievances and Liberty to erect an Academy and make Salt upon the Island; but he would hear nothing thereof. As many Ships under *French* Colours continued to carry Ammunition to the Malecontents some of these were visited by the Gallies of the Republick: But this was complained of by the *French* Consul.

The Siege of *Bastia* was given over upon the Arrival of Some Imperial the Emperor's Troops; yet the Malecontents often fell Troops sent upon Parties of these Troops, and after striking their thither.

Stroke

Stroke retired behind the Mountains. The *Germans* being by this Sort of War greatly diminished a reinforcement of 2000 Men was sent under Prince *Lewis* of *Wirtemberg*. The Malecontents, who had chosen *Don Lewis de Giafferi* for their Governour, once more offered to lay down their Arms upon Condition that they were established in their ancient Priviledges. General *Wachtendonck*, to whom Prince *Lewis* succeeded in commanding the Imperial Troops, had all along acted with great Moderation, being sensible that the Complaints were in some Measure well grounded; but the *Genoese* were so puffed up with the Arrival of the new Succours, that nothing less than an absolute Submission to their Pleasure would satisfy. Hostilities being hereupon commenced seriously the *Germans* gained some Advantages: But these cost them dear; and not long after a Difference arising betwixt the *Genoese* Officers and Prince *Lewis* Overtures of Peace were made. Hostages being now given on both Sides that there should be a general Amnesty, the Plenipotentiaries met and a Treaty was concluded; of which the Emperor took upon himself the Guaranty. One of the principal Things agreed upon was the Establishment of an Imperial Chamber of Appeal at *Bastia* under the Direction of the Emperor. The Treaty was scarce signed before the Marquis *Raffaeli*, Secretary to the *Corſican* Chiefs, not thinking it safe to trust to the Amnesty disappeared.

Treaty with
the Malecon-
tents.

Four CORSI-
CAN Chiefs
seized, 1732.

This gave the *Genoese* a Pretence for saying, that the Papers he carried with him would have been sufficient to prove a Correspondence between some People of Consequence in *Genoa* and his Masters; and by Order of the Senate *Lewis Giafferi* and *Jerome Ciaccaldi* the two Plenipotentiaries of the Malecontents, together with *Simon Astelli* and *Simon Raffaeli* Brother to the Marquis, were arrested and carried to *Genoa*. The *German* Officers protested against this Step, and declared that it would not only be disagreeable to their Master but would certainly create new Troubles. In a letter to General *Wachtendonck* dated *July 26, 1732* the Malecontents told him, that if the four Chiefs were not set at liberty within a Month they knew how to revenge themselves upon a Republick: Who by this Infraction

of

of the Treaty plainly shewed herself unworthy to be Mistress of *Corfica*.

The Senate endeavoured to justify their Conduct; but *Matters are* as the Emperor whose Honour was concerned insisted *accommodated* upon it the four Chiefs were set at Liberty in April 1733. *with the* and many new Regulations concerning *Corfica* were *CORSICANS,* made. Some of these were, that the *Corficans* in common with the other Subjects of the Republick should be admitted to all Ecclesiastical and Civil Preferments; that the Post of Warden in the Ports of *Bastia* and *Ajazzo* should be filled up with *Corficans* only; that the *Corficans* should have an Advocate-General at *Genoa* to take Care of their Interest in the Senate; and that the Nobility of *Corfica* should for the Time to come be upon an equal Footing with the Nobility of the Republick in general. The Emperor moreover promised, that whilst the *Corficans* paid due Obedience to their Masters they should be better used than formerly; and that if contrary to all Expectation any Thing should be done, either by the Republick or its Governours, in Violation of this Agreement he would see Justice done them. An Act importing thus much being published all over the Island it was evacuated by the *Imperialists* in June. 1733.

In the beginning of the next Year a new Insurrection *A new Insur-* broke out, which was occasioned by the imprudent *Se-rection in* verity of the *Genoese* Commissary; and the Malecontents *CORSICA,* made such Progress that the Senate proposed an Accom- 1734. modation before the Year was expired. Instead of listening to this the Malecontents offered the Sovereignty of the Island to *Spain* and to some other Powers. As no Power would accept thereof they determined to form themselves into a *Republick*.

Pinelli under whose Government the Troubles first *PINELLI sent* began was now sent into *Corfica*; but his Son being taken *thither.* Prisoner he consented to an Armistice; which being looked upon as sacrificing the Interest of the *Genoese* to the obtaining of his Son's Liberty he was recalled, and the Chevalier *Rivarole* was appointed to succeed him. The Malecontents now offered to lay down their Arms on the following Conditions, that the Republick should have nothing to do in the Island but receive the Taxes and determine in military and criminal Affairs; that all civil Matters

Matters should be decided in a Senate to be established at *Bastia* composed of Natives only ; and that the Number of Troops to be kept in *Corfica* by the Republick together with the Places they were to be quartered in should be ascertained.

RIVAROLE
sent thither
1736.

These being refused by the Senate new Levies were made, and the new Commissary *Rivarole* arrived at *Bastia* in *February* 1736. During the Rejoicings of the Inhabitants, which lasted three Days on the Account of his Arrival, *Giafferi* endeavoured to surprize this Town ; but he failed therein. The Bishop of *Aleria* who had published an Excommunication against all that opposed the Republick was forced to fly for Safety to *Genoa*. His Palace was in Revenge burnt to the Ground by *Giafferi* : And *Aleria* with some other Places fell into his Hands. As the Malecontents were well supplied, it gave Occasion to a Suspicion of their being privately encouraged by divers Powers, and particularly by *Spain* ; but these Supplies were really negociated by their Agents at *Leghorn* and other Ports, nor were they without Friends even in *Genoa* itself. *Orticone* a Monk, whom they principally confided in at *Leghorn*, by Accident became acquainted with the Baron *de Newhoff* of a German Family, who after running all over *Europe* was come there. Being of an enterprizing and ambitious Temper, and not only a Man of Sense but one who had seen a good deal of Action, the Monk who understood Mankind well thought him a fit Person to preside over the Malecontents ; whose Chiefs frequently disagreed. Hereupon the Baron went to *Tunis* ; and after obtaining, by Representations to the Inhabitants of this Place that an Alliance with the *Corficans* would lay the Foundation of an advantageous Trade, ten Pieces of Cannon, Arms for 4000 Men, and a large Sum of Money, he was conveyed by a *British* Man of War to *Aleria*.

THEODORE
becomes King
of CORSICA,
1736.

Upon his Arrival there he took upon himself the Title of Lord *Theodore* ; planted two Pieces of Cannon before the Palace he lodged in ; was attended by a Guard of 400 Men ; and gave it out that he expected very powerful Succours. The Malecontents flocked in to him ; for he was looked upon as a Person sent by Heaven to be their Deliverer. On the fifteenth of *April* 1736

he

He was after swearing to a Capitulation of eighteen Articles proclaimed King at the Head of the Army ; and a Crown of Laurel being set upon his Head the Malecontents swore Allegiance to him. In a Manifesto published by the Republick the Poverty of *Theodore* and every Action of his Life that could have a Tendency to render him contemptible, were mentioned : But one was published by him in answer, in which the *Genoese* were treated with great Freedom, and all Persons were ordered to repair to his Standard on Pain of Death and Confiscation of their Goods. The Inhabitants of *Bastia*, which *Theodore* had blocked up, were pressed in the strongest Terms to throw off the Yoke of the *Genoese* ; and he ordered their Commissary *Rivarole* to leave the Island within fourteen Days. Several of his principal Courtiers were created Counts and Marquisses, and an Order of Knighthood was instituted which he called *the Order of Deliverance*. He permitted the Inhabitants to make Salt, which the *Genoese* never would permit them to do ; and by indulging Liberty of Conscience he hoped to bring some *Greek* and *Jewish* Merchants to settle there. In short only *Bastia*, *San Fiorenzo*, *Calvi*, *San Bonifacio* and two other Fortresses remained to the Republick on the whole Island, and these were so closely blocked up that they were forced to have Provisions, Wood and Water, from *Genoa* : but still the Succours he talked of did not arrive. In *November* *Theodore* assembled the Chiefs ; and having declared his Intention of going in Person to hasten their coming appointed with their Approbation a Regency during his Absence. On the 14th of the same Month he set out in the Habit of an Abbot for *Leghorn* and soon after disappeared. *The Genoese* now began to talk big in their Manifestos ; but these were answered by the Malecontents who persisted in their Attachment to their new King, and they moreover declared that his Absence did not prevent their gaining Ground upon their Enemies. In the next Year a Price was set on *Theodore's* Head, who went as it appeared afterwards from *Leghorn* to *Turin*, from thence to *Paris*, and from thence into *Holland*. He was discovered there in the Disguise of a *Jew* and taken into Custody : But he found Means to obtain his

Liberty and laid the Foundation of a Company to trade in his Kingdom.

*A Body of
FRENCH
Troops sent
into CORSICA,
1738.*

The *French* Court being applied to by the Republick Count *Bossieux* was sent in the Year 1738 into *Corfica* with 3000 Men. Upon his Arrival at *Bastia* he in a Conference with the *Corfican* Chiefs told them his Master was determined to restore Tranquillity to the *Island*, and desired to have a List of their Grievances: Which being given in a Treaty was soon concluded by the *French* General and the *Corfican* Plenipotentiaries *Giafferi* and *Orticone*. Just before the signing of this, which was negotiated with the utmost Secrefy, the Baron *de Droft* Nephew of *Theodore* arrived in *Corfica*; but at the Request of Count *Bossieux* he withdrew immediately.

*THEODORE
comes again
into COR-
SICA.*

In September *Theodore* himself landed with Arms and Ammunition; but as the Malecontents were prevented, by the Hostages they had sent into *France*, and by the Threats of the *French* General that if they stirred in his Favour it would draw upon them the Resentment of his Court, from joining him his Measures were all broke. He went afterwards to *Naples*; but the Government did not think proper to shelter him there.

*Terms offered
by FRANCE.*

Count *Bossieux* having obtained from the Malecontents a Declaration that they submitted their Lives and Fortunes to the Disposition of his most Christian Majesty, and that *Theodore* was not in the *Island*, he put into their Hands an Act signed by Prince *Lichtenstein* on the Part of the Emperor, and by Mr. *Amelot* on that of the *French* King. The Substance of it was that there should be a general Amnesty; that all the Malecontents should lay down their Arms within a Time mentioned on pain of Death; that the Imposts and Taxes which had not been paid during the Rebellion should never be demanded by the Republick; that the Commissary-General in *Corfica* should not as had been the Practice send any Man to the Gallies on a bare Information, but that every Man should have a fair Trial before any Punishment was inflicted upon him; that the supreme Court of the *Island*, whose three Judges were to be neither *Genoese* nor *Corficans*, should determine finally in all Causes where the Value in Dispute did not exceed five hundred Livres; that several Colleges should be erected in

the Island for the Education of Youth ; that the Natives should have the Preference of being promoted to vacant Bishopricks and other Benefices in the Island ; that for five successive Years four *Corfican* Families should be annually ennobled and enjoy all the Privileges of the Nobility ; and that the Senate should not for the time to come have the Power to pardon a Murderer. Fifteen Days being granted for them to consider of these Terms the Province of *Balagna* submitted ; but when he attempted to disarm the inhabitants of the *Pieves* some Resistance was made. They were hereupon declared Rebels and threatned with Fire and Sword ; and Hostilities were again commenced on both Sides. In the beginning of the Year 1739 Count *Bassieux* died at *Bastia*.

His Successor Marshal *Mallebois* reduced the Male-Marshal contents all over the *Island* to the Necessity of submitting MALLEBOIS to what had been settled by the *French Court* : But such *entirely reduces* is their Aversion to the *Genoeses*, that it is scarce possible *the Male-* they will submit to their Dominion any longer than they *contents.* are kept in Awe by a Body of foreign Troops This being well known to the *Republick* she seems disposed, if it could be done advantageously, to get rid of an Island which cannot be kept without a vast Expence ; and it is confidently said that some Measures have been already taken for this Purpose ; but these are not yet made publick.

The Dominions of the Republick of *Genoa* upon the *Of the Repub-* Continent reach a great way along the Coast, but they *lick's Domi-* are very narrow. Those which are generally mountainous produce very little Corn : But they abound with *nions.* Silk, Oil and Fruit. *Corfica* besides being fruitful in Corn and Wine has great Plenty of Oxen, sheep, Goats, Game and Fish of all sorts. This Island has some Iron Mines ; it is well situated for making Salt, and notwithstanding its many large Woods is free from Wolves ; but there are in it Foxes of a much larger and more voracious kind than common.

All the Vices of all the *Italians* are so remarkably possessed by the *Genoeses* as to give Rise to the following *Manners of* Observation : That *Genoa* has *Mountains without Wood, a* and *CORSE-* *Sea without Fish, Men without Integrity, and Women without* *CANS.*

Modesty. They are a subtle People and understand Trade well; but they are fickle in their Tempers and prone to Sedition. The *Corficans* are in general very ignorant and indolent. Hence it is that notwithstanding their Island is naturally fruitful Robberies are so frequent amongst them. They are accused of being implacable when once provoked; and being much given to Superstition they still retain some *Pagan* Customs.

Government of the Republic. The Government of the Republic is quite Aristocratical; for the Power of the Doge which is very trifling lasts only two Years, at the End of which Time he quits the Palace of the Republic to his Successor. The Supreme Power is lodged in the *Great Council* which is composed of the Nobility, and consists in the whole of about four hundred Members; and to prevent Intrigues which may be prejudicial to the Liberties of the Republic no Person can be elected Doge a second time, until his Dogeship has been expired twelve Years.

Its Revenue and Trade.

The Revenue of the Republic is not very considerable, and the chief Part thereof is appropriated to the Knights of the Order of *St. George*; yet as the Nobility and Merchants are immensely rich a large Sum can be borrowed upon any publick Emergency at a low Interest. The Smallness of her Territories is sufficiently made amends for by the extensive Trade of the Republic; and her Bank is esteemed so safe and advantageous that all the rich Families in the neighbouring States crowd their Money into it. Besides the Advantage which hereby accrues to the Republic this is a great Security to her; for as many Families in most of the *Italian* States would be ruined by the Failure of her Bank they are of Course interested in the Preservation of the Republic.

Interest thereof with Regard to the House of AUSTRIA. As the House of *Austria* is in Possession of the *Milanese*, and *Tuscany* by the Marriage of its Duke to the Heiress of this House may be considered as annexed to the Dominions thereof, it greatly concerns the Republic to be on good Terms with the House of *Austria* since she may be greatly annoyed from either of these States.

SPAIN.

It is for her Interest to prevent any further Extension of the Power of *Spain* in *Italy*; for as the Balance of Power in this Country would be thereby lost the Republic could not long be safe.

The

The King of *Sardinia* a near and powerful Neigh-^{SARDINIA.}bour has long sought for an Opportunity to assert the Pretensions of his House to the Marquisate of *Zuccarel*, and to some other Parts of the Territories of the Republick : For which Reason the *Genoese* ought constantly to be upon their Guard against him.

As *France* is in Possession of the two Ports of *Mar-*^{FRANCE.}*feilles* and *Toulon*, which are so convenient for attacking the *Genoese*, they ought if possible to avoid a Quarrel with her ; yet they should be very cautious of temporising too long with this Court, lest the Ballance of Power betwixt the Houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon* should be quite destroyed in *Italy*.

The Reasons for the Republick's being upon good^{The POPE.} Terms with the Pope are stronger than those for some other *Italian* States to be so ; because she is by her Form of Government more exposed to the Intrigues of the Court of *Rome*.

The ancient Animosity and Jealousy betwixt this Re-^{VENICE.}publick and her Sister of *Venice*, who still insists upon the Superiority, still continue ; it is however for their mutual Interest to support each other and to preserve the Liberties of *Italy*.

The Possessions obtained first by way of Mortgage^{NAPLES.} from *Charles V.* which some of the principal *Genoese* Families have in *Naples*, will always make the Republick careful how it breaks with the King of the *Two Sicilies*.

Although the two Maritime Powers are at a Distance ; *The MARI-*yet as the Trade of the Republick would be liable to great^{TIME} Obstructions and her Coast to be insulted in case of a^{POWERS.} Rupture with either of them, it is of great Importance for her to cultivate a good Understanding with them both.

As the Northern Powers carry on but little Trade in *The NORTH-*the *Mediterranean* and are at a great Distance, it is not^{ERN POWERS.} likely that any Quarrel should arise betwixt either of these and the *Genoese*.

C H A P. III.

Of the Grand Dutchy of TUSCANY.

Ancient State
of FLO-
RENCE,

FLORENCE anciently subject to the German Empire shared the unhappy Fate of all the Italian States in being rent in Pieces by the Factions of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines*; but passing over this together with some Wars it was concerned in, we shall at once come to shew how this City and some other Territories, which compose what is now called the Grand Dutchy of *Tuscany*, became subject to the House of *Medicis*.

COSMO DE

MEDICIS Lord
of FLORENCE

1419.

About the Year 1419 *Cosmo de Medicis* Lord of *Flo-*
rence, whose Family had been long powerful, by his Generosity won the Hearts of the People. It being however suspected that his Popularity would endanger the Liberties of the City a strong Party was formed against him; and as soon as the Term of his Governing expired he was by the Intrigues of *Renaud Albizi* and some other Families thrown into Prison.

He is banished
but soon recal-
led.

Their Intention was to put him to death; but as he found Ways to bring *Bernaud Guadagni* his Successor as Lord of *Florence* over to his Interest, they contented themselves with banishing him. Within a Year the Citizens growing weary of the Management of his Enemies recalled *Cosmo*; who being received with all possible Demonstrations of Joy was called Father of the People and Deliverer of his Country. The Families of *Albizi*, *Penezzi*, *Strozzi*, and some others who had been most violent against him were hereupon banished: And he to his Death in the Year 1464. enjoyed the supreme Power without Disturbance. He was however so tender of using his Power as never to engage in any Thing of Importance without consulting the other Magistrates. He adorned the City with many stately Building at his own Expence; and was very charitable to all that were in Necessity. By these Acts of Liberality and his steady
Adherence

Adherence to the publick Good he so endeared himself to his Fellow-Citizens, that the Republick caused a handsome Inscription in which he was called FATHER OF HIS COUNTRY to be engraved upon his Tomb.

Although *Peter* his Son was quite infirm and inherited none of his Father's Virtues, the People in regard to *Cosmo's* Memory continued him in the Direction of Affairs: And the Families of *Acciaivoli* and *Soderini* were banished for their Opposition to him. He died in the Year 1742 leaving two Sons *Laurentio* his Successor and *Julian*. PETER, 1464.

A Conspiracy headed by the *Pazzi* and *Salviati* Families was soon formed against these Princes, and Pope *Sextus* IV. secretly encouraged it. This Pontiff, besides being disgusted with *Laurentio* for assisting *Nicholas Vitelli* whom he had a Mind to oppress, wanted to put one of his own Nephews into Possession of *Florence*; which he knew could never be done without ruining the House of *Medicis*. LAURENTIO, 1472.

The two Brothers being set upon whilst they were at Mass of a Sunday *Julian* was killed upon the Spot, and the other being much wounded with great Difficulty made his Escape. Many of the Conspirators were put to Death; and the Archbishop of *Pisa* who at the Pope's Instigation had been very active was hanged in his Pontifical Habit. JULIAN is assassinated.

The Pope who was mortified at the baulking of his Design, and enraged at the Insult done to the Church by hanging the Archbishop in his Habit, immediately excommunicated the *Florentines*; and prevailed upon *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* to join in a War against them. In a Manifesto published it was declared that these Powers had no Quarrel with the Republick, and that they desired nothing more than to have *Laurentio* banished; which being unanimously refused Hostilities were commenced. After a Series of ill Success *Laurentio* having lost all Hopes of recovering his Affairs went in Person to *Naples* to deprecate the King's Anger; and to the Surprize of every Body obtained an honourable Peace with the Restitution of all the *Neapolitans* had conquered. The Pope coming soon after to Terms the *Florentines* recovered *Serezana* from the *Genoese*, who had also entered into the Alliance against them, and by a Peace shortly after made *Pietra Santa* was restored to them. The POPE and NAPLES unite against LAURENTIO.

LAURENTIO
encourages
Arts and Sci-
ences.

Laurentio spent the rest of his Days in Peace and took great Pains to maintain the Tranquillity of *Italy*; but at the same Time he did not neglect to put his Frontier Towns into a Posture of Defence. Being a great Lover of Arts and Sciences he collected a large Library of Books, and sent *John Lascares* twice to *Constantinople* on purpose to pick up *Greek Manuscripts*. He was poisoned by the Direction of his Son as it was supposed in the Year 1492, to the great Regret of his Subjects and of all learned Men.

PETER II.
1492.

Peter his Successor, instead of being as his Predecessors had been content with the Authority without a Title, for the Sake of procuring the Name of Sovereign of *Florence* entered into an Alliance with the King of *Naples* against *Francis Sforca* Duke of *Milan*; betwixt which two Princes his Father had prudently observed a strict Neutrality. In Return *Sforca* prevailed upon *Charles VIII.* of *France* to march against *Naples*. *Peter* endeavoured to oppose his Passage: But *Peter* was in the Year 1503 forced to renounce his new Alliance, and besides paying *Charles* 200,000 Ducats consented to put *Leghorn* and some other Places into his Hands as a Security for his good Behaviour whilst the War with *Naples* lasted. This very mean Submission made him so contemptible that he was next Day refused Admittance into the Council; and being looked upon as an Enemy to his Country he not thinking himself safe fled with his Brothers from *Florence*, and the Estates of the Family were confiscated. Thus what his Father had several Times told his Intimates, that *Peter* would by his ill Conduct destroy the Foundation laid by his Ancestors, came to pass. He was afterwards drowned in the River *Gariglan* in *Naples*.

He flies from
FLORENCE.

CHARLES
VIII. demands
the Sovereign-
ty, 1503.

The *Florentines* had Reason to curse his Memory: For *Charles* not content with the Places he was in Possession of caused his Army to march towards *Florence*, and insisted upon the absolute Sovereignty of the State. After deliberating some Time on his Demands, which encreased every Day, one of the Republick's Deputies named *Peter Caponi* gave *Charles* to understand, that as his Majesty's Conditions were such as it was impossible for the Republick to comply with, he might beat his Drum

as soon as he pleased and they would ring their Alarm-Bell.

The King was thunder-struck with this honest Boldness, and upon reflecting a little consented to more reasonable Terms. These were however not observed; for instead of all the Places in Charles's Hands being restored as it was agreed they should, Sarzana and Sarzanello were sold by their Governours to the Genoeſe and Pietra Santa submitted to the Lucqueſe. Piſa alſo having bought its Liberty formed itſelf into an independent State; and it coſt the Florentines a long War to bring it under their Subjection again.

After ſeveral Attempts to reeſtabliſh the Family of Medicis had failed, the Cardinal de Medicis in the Year 1511 with the Aſſiſtance of a Spaniſh Army obliged the Florentines to baniſh Soderini the moſt inveterate Enemy to his Family; who had obtained the Lordſhip of the Republick for Life which never uſed to be enjoyed above two Months by the ſame Perſon. The Eſtates of his Family were hereupon reſtored to the Cardinal, and Satisfaction was made to him for all that his Family had ſuffered by the Confiſcation. He beſides paid his Soldiers out of the publick Treafury; and the People were forced to put the Regency into the Hands of fifty Perſons nominated by himſelf. This was going a great Way; yet it took up ſome Time longer for this Family to regain their Authority entirely.

Pope Clement VII. who was of this Family being at Variance with the Emperor Charles V. Peter Salviati at the Inſtigati-
 on of the latter ſtirred up in the Year 1527 an Inſurrec-
 tion againſt the Houſe of Medicis: And Hypo-
 litus with his Brother Alexander, who were the Heads of it,
 being declared Enemies to their Country the whole Houſe
 was proſcribed. One of the Council having aſked if the
 Pope ought to be comprehended in the Decree proſcribing
 his Family? It was immediately replied by another that
 there was the higheſt Reaſon for it. Upon the coming
 up of the Venetian and French Generals to the Aid of
 Hypolitus the Florentines offered to annul the Decree of Pro-
 ſcription; but upon receiving Advice that the Pope was
 ſhut up in the Caſtle of St. Angelo they grew more vio-
 lent than ever. The Statues of Pope Leon and Pope
 Clement

Clement were defaced; the Arms of *Medicis* every where pulled down; the Inscription on the Tomb of *Cosmo* calling him Father of his Country was erased; and the two Brothers were forced to fly. Pope *Clement* having however afterwards pacified the Emperor, the latter was prevailed upon to send an Army under the Prince of *Orange* to reduce *Florence* to Obedience to his Family.

ALEXANDER DE MEDICIS As the Emperor had upon all Occasions found the *Flo-*
made Duke of now thought it the best Way to give them a Master of
FLORENCE, his own choosing; who from being obliged to the House
1530. of *Austria* for his Authority would as he hoped come into

its Views. The Inhabitants of *Florence* held out a great while; but seeing no Hopes of Relief and Provisions beginning to fail they also submitted to *Charles*; and *Alexander de Medicis* who had married *Margaret* his natural Daughter was in the Year 1530 made Duke of *Florence*.

This new Duke having by his Cruelty and unbridled Lust, to which Women of the greatest Distinction and even Nuns became Sacrifices, rendered himself quite odious, his Kinsman *Laurentio de Medicis* and *Philip Strozzi* determined to rid the World of him. The better to accomplish their Design they insinuated themselves into his Confidence, by assisting him in his Amours and procuring for him the finest of Women. Having one Day made him believe that a certain Lady, whom he had long wished for, had consented to give him a Meeting the Night following at *Laurentio's* House, the Duke transported with the News went at the Time appointed; but instead of receiving the Lady as he expected every Moment into his Arms, he was assassinated as he lay in Bed.

He is assassinated.

LAURENTIO and STROZZI However glad the People might be of their Deliverance from the Tyrant they cried out against the Treachery of the Assassins who had all along been Panders to his Lust, and *Laurentio* instead of succeeding as he intended was forced to flee: But Justice overtook him; for he was shortly after put to Death by *Cosmo* Nephew to the late Duke. As they were carrying *Strozzi* who was immediately seized to a Dungeon he begged to take Leave of his Family: Which being permitted he, after requesting of his Friends that although he

the two Assassins are punished.

he

he could not have the Happiness of living in a Land of Liberty they would see his Body interred at *Venice* a free Country, plunged a Dagger into his Breast, repeating at the same Time this Verse from *Virgil*,

Exoriare aliquis nostris ex ossibus ultor.

Cosmo, who was at his Uncle's Death in the Year COSMO, 1538. 1538 invested with the Ducal Dignity, for the sake of securing the Emperor's Friendship would have married the Dutchess Dowager *Margaret*. He failed in this; but the Principality of *Piombino* and the Island of *Elbe* were, under the Pretence that he was more able to defend the former against the *French* and the latter against the *Turks*, taken from the House of *Appiani* who held them as Fiefs of the Empire and given to him by *Charles*. Siding afterwards with *Philip II.* of *Spain* in the War He acquires the which broke out betwixt him and *France* concern- Lordships of ing the Lordship of *Sienna*, *Philip* in reward for his SIENNE and Services, and as a Satisfaction for the large Sum of institutes an Money furnished by the *Florentines* to himself and his Order of Father, ceded to him all this Lordship, except what is now Knighthood. called the *State del Presidii*, to be held as a Fief of the *Spanish* Crown. In Commemoration of the Battle of *Marciano*, which was fought upon the second of *August* a Day consecrated to *St. Stephen* Pope and Martyr, *Cosmo* instituted the Order of *St. Stephen*: Whose Knights were amongst other Privileges indulged by Pope *Pius IV.* in the Liberty of marrying.

After all this Success, by which he was become one He loses both of the most illustrious Princes of his Time, he had in his Sons in one the Year 1561 the Misfortune to lose both his Sons in Day. one Day. A Quarrel arising as they were hunting, *Garcias* the elder stabbed his Brother *John* and he died instantly. *Cosmo* being informed thereof in his Passion plunged the same Poignard he had made use of into the Breast of *Garcias*; but it gave him a great deal of Uneasiness, and his Wife never outgrew the Affliction brought upon her by this untimely End of both her Sons.

A Dispute for Precedence arising betwixt the Dukes FLORENCE of *Ferrara* and *Florence*, the latter in order to put an erected into a End to it was erected by Pope *Pius V.* in the Year Grand Dutchy. 1570 into a Grand Dutchy. The Emperor *Maximilian* 1570. being hereupon appealed to *Cosmo* was cited as a Vassal
of

of the Empire to appear before him. He did appear by his Plenipotentiaries; but he at the same time protested against every thing that might be done to the Prejudice of the Liberties of *Florence*. This Affair being spun out to a great Length the Death of *Cosmo* in the Year 1574 prevented his seeing the End of it.

FRANCIS,
1574.

Francis his eldest Son was confirmed by the Emperor in the Title of Grand Duke of *Tuscany*. His Regency was remarkable for nothing else but buying the Principality of *Capistran* in *Naples*, which has since been annexed to *Tuscany*, for his Son *Anthony*. He died in the Year 1587 by eating of a poisoned Pye: Which *Blanche Capel* his Wife had prepared for the Cardinal *Ferdinand* his Brother.

FERDINAND,
1587.
His Conduct
brave and
prudent.

Ferdinand, who upon his Brother's Death renounced the Purple in order to take upon himself the Title of Grand Duke, by his prudent Conduct gained the Esteem of all *Europe*. In the beginning of his Regency he rid-ded the Country of the Banditti it abounded with; and demolished the strong Holds they had in many Places built for themselves. He not only scoured the *Italian* Seas of the *Turkish* Corsairs but also worsted the *Turks* at *Hippona* and *Previsa*; and he was within a little of taking from them *Famagosta* the Capital of *Cyprus*. It having been formerly agreed that several strong Places in *Tuscany* should be garrisoned by *Spaniards*, he it was who defied the *Spaniards* and threw off their Yoke entirely. During the civil Wars in *France* he secretly supplied *Henry IV.* even while he professed the Protestant Religion with Money; and although he afterwards put Garrisons into the Islands of *If* and *Pomegue*, this was only done to prevent their falling into the Hands of the *Spaniards*: For he after being reimbursed his Expences restored them to *Henry*. He died greatly regretted in the Year 1609 and was succeeded by *Cosmo II.* his Son.

COSMO II.
1609.
He assists the
Duke of MAN-
TUA and the
Emperor.

The Weakness of this Prince's Constitution was sufficiently made amends for by the Strength of his Genius and by his universal Knowledge. He in the Year 1613 assisted *Ferdinand* Duke of *Mantua* with an Army of 23,000 Men against the Duke of *Savoy*, who attempted to rob him of *Montferrat*. The Succours he sent to the Emperor *Ferdinand II.* during the Troubles in *Bohemia*,

hemia, by passing under false Colours through the midst of the *Bohemian* Army which was before *Vienna* got into this City; and had a great Share in keeping it out of the Rebels Hands, for the Inhabitants thereof were ripe for a Revolt.

In the Year 1620 *Cosmo* was succeeded by *Ferdinando* his Son. This Prince by marrying *Victoria* Granddaughter of *Francis Maria* the last Duke of *Urbino* became entitled to the Estates of this Family; whose Moveables only were worth an immense Sum. He was persuaded by some to seize this Dutchy; but as it was a Fief of the State of the Church he thought it better to let it revert peaceably to the See of *Rome*. He had a great Share in the War by which Pope *Urban VIII.* was obliged to restore the Dutchy of *Castro* to *Edward* Duke of *Parma*; and assisted the *Venetians* against the *Turks* in the *Candian* War. After a long and happy Reign he died in the Year 1688, and had for a Successor *Cosmo* his eldest Son. FERDINAND II. 1620.

Cosmo III. who had just finished the Tour of *Europe* when his Father died, married *Margaret Louisa* Daughter of the Duke of *Orleans*: But an unhappy Difference arising she returned into *France* and continued there to her Death in the Year 1721. The Issue of this Match were two Sons *Ferdinand* and *John Gaston*, and a Daughter named *Mary-Ann Louisa*. As two of these were dead without Issue, and *John* although married thirteen Years had no Children, *Francis Maria* Brother to the Grand Duke to prevent the Extinction of his Family quitted the Cardinalship, and in the Year 1709 married *Eleanor* the Duke of *Guastalla's* Daughter; but he died shortly after of a Dropsy. *Cosmo* during whose Reign of 54 Years nothing remarkable happened died in the Year 1723. COSMO III. 1668.

John Gaston, his Son and Successor, was in the Year 1697 married to *Anna-Maria-Francis* Daughter of *Julius Francis* Duke of *Saxe-Lawenburg* and Relict of *Philip William* Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*: But there being no Issue of this Match the Right of succeeding to *Tuscany* devolved upon the House of *Parma*. As *Anthony Farnese* Duke of *Parma* had likewise no Issue, *Don Carlos* of *Spain* was in Right of his Mother, JOHN, 1723.

ther *Elizabeth Farnese* acknowledged Heir to *Parma* and *Placentia*, and upon his Death took Possession of these Dutchies. Great Objections were indeed made thereto by the Court of *Vienna*, and his Investiture was as long as possible delayed.

Don CARLOS
is declared
hereditary
Grand Prince.

John Gaston being in an ill State of Health the same Prince was, the better to secure to him the eventual Succession thereto, declared hereditary Grand Prince of *Tuscany*; but the Face of Affairs in *Italy* being quite changed by the War which broke out upon Account of the *Polish* Election, the Right of succeeding to *Tuscany* was by the Preliminaries of *Vienna* in the Year 1735 transferred to Duke of *Lorrain* in Lieu of his own Dutchy ceded to *Stanislaus*. The House of *Lorrain* was far from liking this Exchange; but as its Head was about marrying into the *Austrian* Family, to which all in *Italy* except *Mantua* being lost a Peace was quite necessary, it was consented to.

FRANCIS
STEPHEN of
LORRAIN suc-
ceeds to TUS-
CANY,

1737.
Dominions of
the Grand
Duke.

After thus seeing his Dominions transferred into a strange Family *John Gaston* died on the 9th of *July* 1737 aged 67, and was succeeded by *Francis Stephen* of *Lorrain*.

It has been always insisted by the *Florentines* that the Cities of *Florence* and *Pisa* are quite independent of the Empire; but in the Remonstrances of the Imperial Ministers upon several Occasions, and particularly upon *Don Carlos's* being declared hereditary Grand Prince, it was asserted that the Sovereignty of the Empire over all *Tuscany* had been acknowledged. The Lordship of *Sienna* is held as a Fief of *Spain*; and the Grand Duke holds *Radicozano* and *Borgo san Sepolcro* as Fiefs of the State of the Church: The Pope however says that these last were only mortgaged to the *Florentines* by Pope *Eugene* for 12,000 *Florins*, and that they must upon Payment of this Sum be restored to the State of the Church. Good Part of the Island of *Elbe* belongs also to *Tuscany*.

Soil, Inhabi-
tants and
Trade of TUS-
CANY.

The Inhabitants of *Tuscany*, who like the other *Italians* are very artful, and prone to Jealousy, speak the *Italian* Language in its greatest Purity. Their principal Commodities are fine woollen Cloth, brocaded Silks, Gold Tissues and Oil. The Soil of *Tuscany* is in the general

general fertile : But for want of People a good Part thereof lies uncultivated. *Pisa* was heretofore a rich and populous Town ; but as *Leghorn* is a better Port and a free one *Pisa* has lost all Trade, and is of Course now almost ruined.

As the Revenue of the Grand Duke, besides the Pro-*Revenue of* fits arising from a large Sum constantly employed by him *the GRAND* in Trade, amounts to above 300,000 Crowns, and his *DUKE.* Expence in Time of Peace is not half this Sum, scarce any *Italian* Prince has it in his Power to save more Money.

He keeps in Time of Peace as well as War 30,000 *His Forces.* Men on foot ; and has in his Magazines at *Pisa* and in the Island of *Elbe* every thing necessary for fitting out a large Fleet : So that if the natural Strength of his Dominions almost surrounded with high Mountains be considered, he will appear to be one of the most considerable Potentates in *Italy*.

The Interest of *Tuscany* with regard to other Powers *Interest of* does in the general differ very little from that of *Venice*, *TUSCANY* *Genoa* and other *Italian* States ; but as the present Grand *with respect to* Duke has married the Heiress of the *Austrian* Succession, *the neighbour-* its Interest must at this Time be considered as inseparable *ing Powers.* from that of the House of *Austria*.

C H A P. IV.

Of the P O P E's Dominions.

LEAVING the Spiritual Authority of the *Pope* to be treated of in another Chapter, we shall in this give some Account of the States which acknowledged him for their Sovereign, and shew how the Holy See became possessed of these.

The first Bishops of ROME suffered much from the Heathens.

As *Rome* was the Metropolis of the Empire, it is easy to be conceived that its Bishops were much exposed to the Cruelties which the Christian Church suffered during the three first Centuries. Of thirty-two Bishops who had filled this See *St. Eusebius* its Possessor in the Year 312, when the Edict of *Constantine* for stopping the Persecution of the Christians was published, and *St. Zephirin* were the only two that did not fall Sacrifices to the Rage of Heathenism. This Emperor, who had been a most bitter Enemy to the Church, after his Conversion thought he could never do enough for it. He from that Time constantly followed the Advice of the Bishops of *Rome*: And employed his Authority on all Occasions to procure them Respect.

Divisions of the Empire,
337.

At his Death in the Year 337 the Empire was divided. *Constantine* the eldest of his Sons had *Spain* and all *Transalpine Gaul*; *Constantius* the second had the eastern Part of *Asia* and *Egypt*; and the other Son *Constant* had *Italy*, *Africa*, *Sicily* and Part of *Illyricum*: Nor were his two Nephews forgot, to *Dalmacius* he gave *Thrace*, *Macedonia* and *Greece*, with the Title of *Cæsar*; and *Hannibalien* had for his Share *Cappadocia*, *Pontus* and *Armenia*. The two last being shortly after put to Death by the Army, who declared that only the Sons of *Constantine* should reign over them, their Dominions were divided between *Constantius* and *Constant*.

A Difference arising concerning Boundaries betwixt *Constantine* and *Constant* the latter dissembled so well, TINE is slain that having made great Levies under the Pretence of assisting *Constantius* against the *Persians* *Constantine* was by CON- surprized in the Year 340 near *Aquileia* and slain. STANT, 340.

The Share of *Constantine* was now annexed by *Constant* to his own; but *Magnencius* not long after deprived him of the whole and caused him to be put to Death. *Julius* Brother of *Constantine*, had besides *Dalmacius* and *Hannibalien* who were both slain by the Soldiers two other MAGNEN- Sons *Gallus* and *Julian*. The first of these being so ill CIUS sup'lants that his Life was despaired of, and the other being only CONSTANT. eight Years of Age, they were looked upon as not at all to be feared and their Lives were spared by *Magnencius*. A Bishop in *Cappadocia* having afterwards taken great Care of their Education *Constantius* appointed *Gallus* to govern in the East, whilst he went in the Year 350 to revenge his Brother's Death upon *Magnencius*.

Gallus then about twenty-five Years of Age at the GALLUS Desire of *Constantius* took his Name and being honoured reigns at An- by him with the Title of *Cæsar* kept his Court at *Antioch*. TIOCH, 350. The *Jews* in *Palestine* rebelled against him; but he reduced them to Reason and was successful in his Wars with the *Persians*. This good Fortune made him cruel and insolent, and being besides suspected of a Design to usurp the Imperial Dignity *Constantius* caused him to be arrested, and he was condemned to lose his He is deposed. Head about the Year 354.

Julian his Brother and Successor displeased some People by going into *Greece*: But having justified his Conduct JULIAN suc- to *Constantius* he was permitted to finish his Studies at ceeds GAL- *Athens*. Having for some Time grown cool to Christianity he by living there was confirmed in his liking to *Paganism*; yet he dissembled so well that nobody suspected it. LUS.

Constantius obtained a signal Victory over *Magnencius* CONSTANTI- in September 351, and a second Battle being lost by him US defeats the latter laid violent Hands upon himself, and thereby MAGNEN- an End was put to his own Usurpation which had lasted CIUS, 351. four Years. An Irruption being made by the barbarous Nations into *Gaul* about the Year 355 *Julian* was sent against them; during which Expedition he openly renounced Christianity.

JULIAN be- Upon the Death of *Constantius* in the Year 361 he
comes Emperor, was declared Emperor: But the Shortness of his Reign
361. happily for the *Christians* prevented the putting in Execution his Design of re-establishing Paganism.

JOVIAN. *Jovian* the next Emperor reigning but seven Months
Valentinian was in the Year 364 raised to the Imperial Dignity.

VALENTINI- He made *Milan* as *Constantius* had before done his
AN, 364. Residence; and *Valens* his Brother to whom he gave the eastern Part of the Empire kept his Court at *Constantinople*. The Example of *Constantine the Great* in being liberal to the Church was followed by his Successors; but as the Seat of neither the eastern nor western Empire was at *Rome* the Grandeur thereof declined. The Authority of the See of *Rome* was indeed acknowledged in spiritual Matters; but this City like others in *Italy* was governed by a Person accountable to the Exarch of *Ravenna*, to whom the Government of that Part of *Italy* which belonged to the eastern Empire was committed. By the Encroachments of the northern Nations the Power of the eastern Emperors in *Italy* was by Degrees brought quite low: Nor could they being attacked by the *Saracens* on another Side spare sufficient Forces to reestablish it.

LEO ISAU- Such was the Situation of Things when *Leon Isaurus* sur-
RUS, 717. named the *Image-breaker* succeeded to the eastern Empire. This Man who was of the lowest Birth being told when young by two *Jews* that he should some Day be Emperor, he bound himself with a solemn Oath to grant them whatsoever they desired when this came to pass. Having distinguished himself by his Bravery in the Army he was gradually raised to the highest Posts therein: And upon the Death of *Theodosius* in the Year 717 became Emperor.

He causes the Images to be p^ld down in
CONSTAN- It being requested of him by the two *Jews*, he as
TINOPLE. soon as he thought himself well settled upon the Throne began to pull down the Images in the *Christian Churches* in *Constantinople*; and ordered *Paul* his Exarch to see the same thing done in *Italy* and especially at *Rome*. As his Power there bore no Proportion to the lordly Stile of the Edict commanding this, *Gregory II.* who then filled the holy Chair would not suffer it to be published in *Rome*.

This

This Pope dying soon after he was succeeded by *Gregory III*. To one of these Popes, Historians are not agreed which, *Leon* wrote a severe Letter threatening to treat him as a Rebel if the Edict was not complied with: But the Pontiff in his Answer wrote with great Spirit seemed surprized, that he who had for so many Years believed with the Church should all at once alter his Opinion; and took great Pains to shew the Usefulness of setting up Images. A Council being hereupon demanded by *Leon* who insisted that it was an idolatrous Custom, the Pope told him in a Letter there was no need of any; for that as the Church had enjoyed the profoundest Tranquillity until he disturbed it, if he would but give over his Outrages at *Constantinople* every thing would soon be quiet again. He in the same Letter reproached him with the Progress made by the *Lombards* in *Italy*: And said it would become him much better to oppose these, who were already advanced almost as far as *Rome*, than to scandalize the greatest Part of the Christian World by his imprudent Zeal against Images. Whilst the Exarch of *Ravenna* was endeavouring to put the Emperor's Edict in Execution, an Insurrection broke out which gave *Luitprand* King of *Lombardy* an Opportunity of easily becoming Master of *Ravenna*. The Behaviour of *Gregory* upon this Occasion was very serviceable to the Emperor; for by his engaging the *Venetians* to assist the Exarch *Ravenna* was retaken from the *Lombards*, and some other Places were kept out of their Hands: But all would not atone for his having opposed the Edict.

As his Predecessors had by their exemplary Piety and *Assassins hired* great Charity procured vast Respect to the See of *Rome* to kill *GRE-* all over *Italy*, and the utmost Aversion was conceived *GORY*. to *Leon*, he found it impracticable to do any thing openly against *Gregory*; whose Personal Virtues had endeared him to the People. Three Men were hereupon hired to kill him and *Marino* Governor of *Rome* had Orders to protect them; but their Design being discovered two of them were seized and put to Death. Orders being afterwards given to the Exarch for deposing *Gregory* he took great Pains to procure the Assistance of *Luitprand*: But this Prince notwithstanding his Loss of

Ravenna, which was principally owing to the Stand made by the Pope, knew very well it could not be for his true Interest to restore the Emperor's Power in *Italy*; and instead of assisting the Exarch he supported the Pope.

The Exarch
murdered at
RAVENNA.

The Exarch being hereby disappointed in his Attempt upon *Rome* he soon lost all his Authority and was murdered at *Ravenna*. The Governor of *Naples* shared the same Fate for being in the Emperor's Interest; and Things were carried so far as to propose the Election of a new Emperor. The *Greeks* blamed the Pope for all this; but to say the Truth, although he did not think it right for the People to obey the Edict, he was far from encouraging this general Revolt and exhorted them to continue their Allegiance to their rightful Sovereign. The Revenues drawn from *Italy* by the eastern Emperors being for the most Part employed in paying the Troops kept up there, the People who now looked upon *Leon* to be an heretical Prince refused to pay those Taxes any longer, which they found to be employed by him in oppressing themselves. As the Soldiers, who were thereby deprived of their Pay and reduced to the greatest Misery, conceived the utmost Detestation of the new Opinions as being the Cause thereof, a great many of them deserted: And the rest engaged to serve against the Emperor. It being highly probable that *Leon* would make one grand Effort to recover his Affairs in *Italy*, and the *Lombards* being now grown very powerful in *Italy*, an Association headed by the Pope was entered into by several Cities for their mutual Defence.

An Association
headed by the
Pope.

ROME besieged
by the LOM-
BARDS is re-
lieved by
CHARLES
MARTEL.

The Dukes of *Benevento* and *Spoleto* endeavouring to throw off their Dependance upon *Luitprand* the King of *Lombardy* he marched against them. The former was drowned in going over to *Greece*; the other saved himself by flying to *Rome*. On the Pope's refusing to give him up *Luitprand*, who in his Way had plundered all the Estates of the Church, came and encamp'd near this City. In this Distress *Gregory* wrote a pressing Letter to *Charles Martel*, in whom although he was not King all the Power of *France* centered; and by Virtue of the Authority lodged in him by the associated Towns offered him the Dignity of Consul. As *Charles Martel*.

Of the POPE's Dominions.

53

Martel was allied to *Luitprand*, and had received great Assistance from him in his Wars with the *Mors*, he would not engage against him: But he interested himself so far by his good Offices that *Rome* was spared. In the Year 741 the *Pope*, the Emperor *Leon*, and *Charles Martel* all three died.

Pepin the Son of *Charles Martel* took the Advantage ZACHARY
of the Weakness of *Childerick* the last King of *France* comes into the
of the *Merovingian* Line to get himself proclaimed Views of PE-
King. Although the Way to this was sufficiently well PIN, 741.
paved by his Predecessors, in whom for several Reigns
the Management of every thing in *France* had been, he
did not think it proper to depose *Childerick* without
consulting the *Pope*; for whose Authority the People be-
gan to have a great Regard. Ambassadors being here-
upon sent to *Zachary* Successor of *Gregory III.* the fol-
lowing Question was proposed: Which is more worthy
to reign he who without the Title faithfully discharges
the Duty of a King; or he who having that Title is
quite incapable of governing? The *Pope*, who knew that
Pepin could and that *Childerick* was by no Means capable
of assisting him against the *Lombards*, not only gave such
an Answer as he concluded would best serve his own In-
terest; but to give the greater Sanction to the Thing he
sent a Legate to assist in the crowning of *Pepin*. As *Bo-*
nisface an *Englishman* by Birth the Person sent on this Er-
rand took it very much upon him, some superstitious
Authors have not scrupled to assert that the second Race
of *French* Kings might thank the *Pope* for their Crown.
The Assistance of *France* was hereby secured to *Zachary*;
but as it could not come time enough to relieve *Rome*,
which was a second time attacked, he in an Interview
with *Luitprand* made the best Peace he could. In this
Treaty the Empire of *Greece* was concluded; for al-
though the *Pope* who liked being at the Head of the
Association was resolved to support his Authority;
yet he was willing to be if possible upon good Terms with
the Emperor, that he might as the latter had still some-
thing left in *Italy* have his Assistance against the *Lombards*. 744.

Upon the Death of *Luitprand* in the Year 744 *Hil-*
debrand his Nephew succeeded; but he was deposed The King of
within a few Months and *Rachis* Duke of *Friuli* was the LOM-
BARDS con-
verted by
ZACHARY.
raised

raised to the Throne of *Lombardy*. This Prince in order to confirm the *Lombards* in their good Opinion of his Courage. made himself Master of and ravaged some of the associated Cities. *Zachary* found Means however not only to soften him but to convert him; and in order to atone for the Injuries done by him to the Church he embraced the monastick State.

RAVENNA
taken by
ASTOLPH.

Astolph who in the Year 750 succeeded his Brother *Rachis* renewed the Treaty with the Empire and the Association for forty Years; but finding afterwards that the Exarch was in no Condition to defend it he fell suddenly upon and took *Ravenna*. As this Attack was without any Declaration of War and consequently unprovided against by the Emperor, all the Towns which still remained to the Exarchate opened their Gates to the Conqueror.

STEPHEN,
752.

STEPHEN raised in the Year 752 to the holy Chair being alarmed at these rapid Conquests, he for the Security of *Rome* drew thither the Garrisons from some other Towns which acknowledged his Authority. *Astolph* displeased at this Precaution immediately demanded of the Inhabitants of this City to acknowledge him for Sovereign, and pay the same Tribute that had been paid when it was subject to the Exarch of *Ravenna*.

ROME besieged
by the LOM-
BARDS.

In order to fright them into a Compliance he marched towards *Rome*, and put all the Country round it to Fire and Sword without sparing even the Estates of the Pope himself: Which had for some Time, with a View perhaps to secure them from Violences of this sort, been called *St. Peter's Patrimony*. The *Romans* expected Succours from *Constantinople*; but instead of these there only came an Ambassador to complain of the Infraction of Treaties and to demand the Restoration of the Exarchate. As these Representations were not as they should have been to make them effectual backed with a powerful Army, no Regard was paid thereto by *Astolph*. For the sake of amusing the Emperor Ambassadors were indeed sent by him to *Constantinople*; but he hoped in the mean time to reduce *Rome* which was closely blocked up on all Sides by Famine. Publick Prayers were now put up and Processions were made by the Pope's Order: And being seated in the Pontifical Chair he in a pathetick Discourse represented to the People the Weakness and Distance

Distance of the *Grecian* Empire; the Ambition and Cruelty of the *Lombards*; and the terrible Consequences of the City's falling into their Hands. When he saw the Assembly sufficiently wrought upon he stopped short, as he was describing the dreadful Calamities of its being taken by Storm; and all at once cried out it was the Will of Heaven that they should apply for Aid to *Pepin*, whose illustrious Father had by his good Offices only heretofore saved the City.

The Proposal being applauded and approved of a Dea-^{The Assistance} con was immediately sent with a Letter to *Pepin*: In ^{of PEPIN is} which *Stephen* conjured him by every thing sacred to come ^{implored.} and deliver *Italy* from the Tyranny of the *Lombards*; and in another Letter addressed to the Grandees of the Nation he begged of them to join with the King in assisting him.

On *Pepin's* dispatching the Bishop of *Metz* and the ^{The Siege of} Duke of *Austuaire* to desire of *Astolph* that Hostilities ^{ROME raised.} might cease, and that a Conference might be held for terminating all the Matters in Difference, the *Lombard* unwilling to draw so powerful an Enemy upon his Back raised the Siege and consented to enter into a Negotiation at *Pavia*; but he insisted that nothing should be mentioned of restoring any thing to the eastern Empire. Pressing Instances were however made for this Purpose by the Imperial Envoy; and the Pope told him with great Boldness that he ought to restore to every one their Due. As *Pepin's* Ambassadors could not settle Matters they contented themselves with demanding a Passport for the Pope to go into *France*. *Astolph* dreading the ill Consequences of this Journey endeavoured to divert *Stephen* from it; but as a Passport was although much against the Will of *Astolph* granted *Stephen* made the best of his Way for *France*.

Stephen arrived at the *French* Court on the 6th of *January* 754; and was received with the greatest Marks ^{STEPHEN goes} of Respect. In a publick Audience had on the next ^{into FRANCE,} Day he with all his Clergy fell upon their Knees, and refused to rise until the King and the principal Persons present had assured them of their Protections. As the Pope had great Need of *Pepin's* Assistance, *Pepin* had in return something to ask of him. Notwithstanding his

being crowned and that the Crown used to be hereditary; yet as the Succession had been broke into by the deposing of *Childerick*, and no Declaration was made at his Coronation concerning his Sons, he feared some other Person might be preferred to them. As the People had the greatest Veneration for the Pope *Pepin* imagined they would be easily prevailed upon by him to settle the Succession on his Family; and he judged right; for at the Recommendation of *Stephen Charles* and *Carloman* his two Sons were declared Heirs to the Crown. In return *Pepin* promised to endeavour the Recovery of the *Exercate* from the *Lombards*, and to give it to the Pope.

CARLOMAN
Brother of PE-
PIN *proposes the*
Designs of
STEPHEN.

These Things were scarce settled when *Carloman* *Pepin's* elder Brother, who had entered into the monastic State, to the Surprise of every body arrived at the French Court. When the *Lombards* made themselves Masters of the Monastery of *Mount-Cassin*, to which he belonged, *Astolph* prevailed on him to go into France and use his Interest in opposing the Schemes of *Stephen*. He represented to his Brother and the Ministry the certainly great Expence and the Uncertainty of Success in carrying on a War at such a Distance; and being ignorant of what had passed betwixt his Brother and the Pope said, that as the Emperor of Greece was the chief Sufferer it concerned him to put a Stop to the Progress of the *Lombards*. His Advice being in some measure listened to it was agreed to send Ambassadors to *Astolph*, and try what could be done by fair Means. The *Lombard* gave these a Meeting at *Pavia*: And for the sake of Peace consented to desist from his Claim to Rome as Part of the *Exercate*, and promised to demand no more Tribute from the *Romans*. These Terms not being satisfactory *Carloman* was by the Advice of the Pope shut up in a Monastery. As this Prince died shortly after it was thought he did not come fairly by his Death.

He dies in a
Monastery.

PEPIN and his
Sons declared
Patrons of the
Church.

To remove all Scruples of *Pepin* as to the Succession to the French Crown he and his Sons were with great Ceremony consecrated by *Stephen*; a thundering Excommunication was pronounced against such as should at any time propose the setting aside of any of his Descendants; and for the sake of amusing and bringing the Na-

tion

tion into the Pope's Views *Pepin* and his Sons were declared Patrons of the Church. Ambassadors were twice more sent to *Astolph*: But he persisted in his Resolution to keep the *Exercate*; and although he did not imagine the *French* would really attack him some Troops were sent to secure the Passes of the *Alps*.

Pepin in the Year 755 put himself at the Head of an Army; and having forced the Passes met with no Opposition till he came to *Pavia*, where *Astolph* had shut himself up with the best of his Troops. This Place the Metropolis of *Lombardy* being well fortified and obstinately defended the Siege was long and bloody; but as *Astolph* knew he must in the End submit, he consented to put the *Exercate* into the Hands of *Pepin* and to restore all he had taken from the Association. Forty of his principal Lords being given as Hostages for his Performance of these Terms *Pepin* thought it best to repass the *Alps* before the Snows fell; and the Pope went to *Rome*.

As *Astolph* knew the *French* could not come again during the Winter into *Italy*, he instead of making the Restitution agreed upon assembled his Forces; and having invested *Rome* summoned the Inhabitants to deliver the Pope into his Hands. He imagined they durst not have refused it: But he found himself mistaken; for they adhered firmly to *Stephen* and defended the Town till Succours could arrive from *Pepin*; who upon receiving the News by the Pope's Letter thought himself in Honour bound to revenge this Infraction of the Treaty of *Pavia*.

As soon as the Season would permit *Pepin* passed the *Alps*; and having defeated the Army of *Astolph* forced him to give over the Siege and fly with the utmost Precipitation to *Pavia*: But he was soon obliged to surrender at Discretion. It being now made publick that the Pope was to have the *Exercate*, some Ambassadors from *Constantinople* to *Pepin* represented it as a most unjust thing to bestow upon the Pope, who was himself a Subject to the Emperor, what the *Lombards* had taken from his Sovereign whilst he was engaged in a most necessary War against the *Saracens* Enemies to Christianity. *Pepin* in answer said that his Design in coming into *Italy* was to free the Church from the Oppressions of the *Lombards*; and as it had pleased God to prosper his Arms he thought

thought himself bound to fulfil the Vow made by him of dedicating all his Conquests to *St. Peter*.

DIDIER King of LOMBAR- Least *Astolph* should a second time break his Word
BY enters into an Alliance with the Em- *Pepin* insisted upon the immediate Execution of the
peror. Treaty of *Pavia*, and upon having the Expences of the War defrayed. *Astolph* was forced to comply and the Keys of twenty-two Places being delivered to *Pepin's* Commissary they were offered up by him at *St. Peter's Tomb*. Some time after whilst *Pepin* was engaged with the *Saxons* *Didier* Successor of *Astolph* seized some of the restored Places, and entered into an Alliance with the Court of *Constantinople* against the Pope.

PAUL, 757.

Paul raised on the Death of *Stephen* in the Year 757 to the Popedom was greatly alarmed thereat: But upon the Arrival of the News that *Pepin* had finished the Conquest of *Saxony* and was returned home *Didier* proposed the making up of Matters. In order thereto he declared himself ready to give up all the Places he had taken, and some which should have been restored pursuant to the Treaty of *Pavia*, provided the Hostages in *Pepin's* Custody were sent home. The Pope who believed him sincere wrote a Letter in their Favour to *Pepin*: But instead of giving the Pope's Officers Possession of the promised Towns he pillaged the Suburbs of *Rome*, and endeavoured to busy *Pepin* by stirring up his Son-in-law *Tassilon* Duke of *Bavaria* to revolt.

CONSTANTINE, 768.

Toten Duke of *Nepi* having on the Death of *Paul* in the Year 768 caused his Brother *Constantine* a Layman to be installed Pope. *Christophlus* and his Son *Sergius* two Citizens of *Rome* prevailed upon *Didier* to interpose. By the Help of the *Lombards* the Duke was killed: And *Constantine* being made Prisoner had his Eyes put out. A Priest named *Philip* was hereupon installed Pope and took Possession of the *Palace*; but upon the Approach of *Christophlus* at the Head of the Troops lent him by *Didier* he consented to quit his new Dignity.

STEPHEN III.

Stephen III. being afterwards unanimously elected, the Antipope *Constantine* was condemned in a general Council; and all the Bishops, Priests and Deacons he had made were degraded.

CHRISTOPHLUS and his Son are disgraced.

A Difference arising betwixt *Charles* and *Carloman* Sons of *Pepin Didier* joined with the latter, and fomented

mented it as much as possible: But a Treaty of Marriage being agreed upon betwixt *Charles* and *Hermengilde* his Daughter all Parties were reconciled. As *Didier* imagined himself to be now upon good Terms with *France* he under the Pretence of paying a Visit to *St. Peter's* Tomb appeared before *Rome* at the Head of an Army; and demanded an Interview with the Pope. *Christophlus*, who for his great Services in extinguishing the Faction of *Constantine* stood high in the Confidence of *Stephen*, opposed this and represented the Necessity reviving the ancient Alliance with *France*: But as the Advice of *Paul Astart* his Chamberlain another Favourite was quite contrary, and which weighed more with *Stephen* he was in no Condition to repel the Force of *Didier* he consented thereto. A strict Union being now entered into with the *Lombard* the Party of *Paul* cried out loudly for Vengeance upon *Christophlus*; who by his Attachment to *France* had for some Time retarded it and exposed the People to the Ravages of *Didier's* Army. *Stephen* in regard to his former Services contented himself with ordering *Christophlus* and his Son into a Monastery: But the Chamberlain to make his Triumph the surer caused both their Eyes to be put out and all their Relations and Friends to be banished. The Pope cajoled by *Didier's* fair Promises in a Letter to the *French* King seemed quite pleased with his new Ally: And said he doubted not but that his dear Son the most excellent King of *Lombardy* whom God preserve would do him ample Justice. He spoke also in the strongest Terms of his Chamberlain's Faithfulness, being ignorant that he had all the Time been tampered with by *Didier*; and attributed to the singular Providence of God his being delivered from the Perils he had been thrown into by following the wicked Council of *Christophlus* and his Son so long. The *Lombard*, who took it for granted that his principal Design the embroiling of the Courts of *France* and *Rome* was now fully answered, soon threw off the Mask; and the Pope when it was too late saw his Folly in trusting to him.

Adrian Successor in the Year 772 to *Stephen* recalled the ADRIAN,
Friends of *Christophlus*; and prudently set about the re- 772.
storing

The Chamber-
lain ASIART
put to Death.

floring of Harmony with *France*, which was by the Death of *Carloman* all come into the Hands of *Charles* on Account of his Bravery called *Charlemain*. Hereupon the Chamberlain finding his Intrigues with *Didier* to be discovered fled; but he was seized at *Ravenna*, and forced to atone with his Death for the Sufferings of *Christophlus* and his Son.

Intrigues of
DIDIER.

Didier being soon after irritated at *Charlemain's* divorcing his Daughter, he endeavoured to stir up an Insurrection in *France* in Favour of *Carloman's* Children: And openly abetted *Hunald* Duke of *Aquitain*, in his Revolt against him. In order to keep fair with the Pope at the same Time offered to restore all the Exercate, provided he would crown one of *Carloman's* Sons; but Pope *Adrian* grown wise by the Mistakes of his Predecessor would hear nothing thereof. His thus refusing to crown *Charlemain's* Nephew was a good Pretence for imploring his Assistance against *Didier* their common Enemy: Who as the Pope represented to *Charlemain* still contrary to the most solemn and repeated Engagements kept back Part of what his Father had out of his great Piety given to the Church.

CHARLEMMAIN
comes to the
Assistance of
the Pope.

Charlemain early in the next Spring put himself at the Head of a powerful Army: And having entered *Lombardy* laid Siege at the same Time both to *Pavia* and *Verona*. The latter being taken he left the Command of the other Siege to *Bernard* his Uncle; and went to keep his *Easter* at *Rome*. Having afterwards confirmed to the Holy See the Donation of *Pepin*, and bound himself by the most sacred Oaths at the *Altar* and *St. Peter's* Tomb to put *Adrian* into the full Possession thereof, he returned to the Army. It will not be amiss to observe here that, although the Authority of the eastern Emperor in *Italy* had been substantially lost ever since the Quarrel betwixt *Leon Isaurus* and Pope *Gregory II.* concerning Images, some Shadow of it was still kept up; and amongst other things in dating publick Acts the Year of the Emperor's Reign was mentioned. Hence the Donation of *Pepin* being while *Constantine Copronymus* was Emperor of the East some Records say that the Exercate of *Ravenna* was given to the Church in the Reign of *Constantine*. For

want

want of attending to this Custom and distinguishing betwixt the Date and the Donor, some Historians have fallen into the Mistake of asserting that it was given by *Constantine* the Great. In the Act of *Charlemain* confirming his Father's Gift the Right of the eastern Emperor was looked upon to be superseded by the long Possession the *Lombards* had been in of the Exercate: And no Mention was made of him therein.

Soon after the Return of *Charlemain* to his Army, *PAVIA* *sur-* which had all the Time kept *Pavia* closely blocked up, *renders.* the Inhabitants whom Famine had made desperate fell upon and slew the Duke of *Aquitaine*: Because they looked upon him to be the Cause of the War and consequently of their Sufferings. Hereupon *Didier* fearing their Rage would next fall upon himself threw open the Gates and submitted to the Conqueror's Mercy.

Didier being sent Prisoner into *France* *Charlemain* caused *The Pope* is himself to be crowned King of *Lombardy*; and put the *put into Possession* of all the *Exercate*, the *Pentapole*, *session of the* the Dutchy of *Rome* and some other States. Historians *Exercate.* are not agreed that the absolute Sovereignty of these Dominions was given either by *Charlemain* or his Father to the Pope; for some think that the Revenue only was given for the Support of the Church, the Sovereignty and Protectorship being reserved to the Crown of *France*. As the original Grants are lost no Certainty can be come at as to this Matter; but this is certain, that some succeeding Popes did send the Holy Keys and the Standard of *Rome* with rich Presents to *Charlemain*, and amongst other Acts of Homage took at their Consecration an Oath of Fidelity to him as had before been the Custom with Regard to the eastern Emperors.

In the Year 796 *Adrian* died and was succeeded *LEON III.* by *Leon III.* But a Conspiracy was soon set on Foot 796. against him by *Pascal* Dean of the Sacred College a Nephew of the late Pope his Rival for the papal Dignity, and *Campulius* his Treasurer another Relation of *Adrian's*. By their Intrigues in Concert with *Maurice* Bishop of *Nepi* a strong Party was raised against *Leon*, and *Grimoald* Duke of *Benevento* at the Instigation of his Wife a Daughter of *Didier* promised to assist

He is seized. assist them. Riding in a publick Procession *Leon* was seized, and after suffering many Insults from *Pascal* and *Campulus* was shut up in a Monastery. By the Assistance however of *Albin* his Chamberlain he made his Escape: And having obtained a Passport from *Pepin* whom *Charlemain* his Father had made King of *Lombardy* he went into *France*. A Label being sent after him containing the Heads of the Accusation against him he returned to *Rome*; and *Hildebolde* Arch bishop of *Cocon*, another Archbishop, with four Bishops and three Counts, were appointed by *Charlemain* to examine into the Affair.

He is tried and acquitted. He was received at *Rome* with great Acclamations: But this did not deter *Pascal* and *Campulus* from persisting in their Charge of his being guilty of the most enormous Crimes. After a Trial which lasted a Week *Leon* was declared innocent, and his Accusers were sent under a strong Guard to answer before *Charlemain* for their Attempts upon his Person: As their Party however still continued to be strong in *Rome* and *Grinould* began to disturb the Repose of *Italy*, it was resolved by *Charlemain* to go thither in Person.

CHARLE- The Duke of *Benevento* being first brought to Reason
MAIN goes to *Charlemain* made a publick Entry into *Rome* in No-
ROME, 800. vember 800. One principal Reason of his coming being to finish the Affair of *Leon*, of whose Innocence many still doubted, he resolved to hear it again himself in an Assembly of the *Archbishops*, *Bishops*, *Abbots* and of all the temporal Lords. The Pope was in this again acquitted of the Charge; but *Charlemain* thought it proper for him to purge himself by swearing solemnly to his Innocence.

He is proclaimed Emperor. During these Transactions the Death of *Constantine*, notwithstanding the Endeavours of his Empress *Irene* to conceal it, was known at *Rome*. As the Pope and *Romans* pretended to a Right of nominating an Emperor no Conjunction seemed so proper to exert it in as this: When by the sudden Death of *Constantine* all the Power fell into the Hands of a Woman by her Crimes unworthy and by her Sex incapable of reigning. In a general Assembly of the Clergy and People it was determined that *Charlemain*, who had distinguished himself so much in the Service of the Church and by his Zeal

for propagating the Christian Faith, was most worthy of the Imperial Dignity: And being on the *Christmas* Day following crowned Emperor by the Pope, he was amidst the Acclamations of the People declared Emperor of the *Romans*.

As the Pope had done so much for him *Charlemain* PASCAL and could do no less than set on Foot an Enquiry concerning CAMPULUS the Insults offered to his Person, in the Course of which *are banished*. it appeared that many of the principal Citizens were privy to it: But *Pascal* and *Campulus* were the only two condemned for it. Their Lives being at the Solicitation as it was pretended of *Leon* himself spared, they were by the Emperor's Order sent into *France*, and continued Prisoners there during the Remainder of their Lives.

The Descendants of *Charlemain* enjoyed the Imperial Dignity near a hundred Years. Afterwards *Lambert* Duke of *Spiletto*, *Berenger* Duke of *Friuli*, *Lewis* King of *Provence*, *Raoul* King of *Burgundy* and *Hugues* Count of *Provence* were successively crowned Emperors. The last of these left a Son named *Lothaire*; but as the Design of the *Romans* in conferring the Imperial Dignity upon *Charlemain* was to have a powerful Protector they refused to crown *Lothaire*: And having suffered a great deal by the Oppressions of some late Emperors they formed themselves into a Republick and chose Consuls. *Berenger* Marquis of *Ivry* having on the Death of *Lothaire* caused himself to be proclaimed King of *Lombardy* and Emperor, *Alix* Widow of *Lothaire* implored the Assistance of *Otho* the Great Emperor of *Germany*. *Otho* raised the Siege of *Pavia* where *Alix* was shut up: And marrying her took upon himself the Title of King of *Lombardy* about the Year 951.

Italy being afterwards thrown into the utmost Confusion by the Contentions of different Princes for Superiority, the Pope who could not bear to see any one greater than himself appealed to *Otho*: Who came in Person and having subdued all *Italy* caused himself to be crowned in the Year 962 Emperor at *Rome*. Pope *John XII.* who then filled the Holy Chair, hoped to find such a Protector in him as *Leon* had in *Charlemain*: But he

he was greatly mistaken ; for although he restored to the Holy See all that *Charlemain* had confirmed to it, the Restoration was upon such Conditions as made the Pope little better than his Vassal. One thing reserved to himself and Successors was, that no Pope should for the Time to come be installed without the Consent of the Emperor for the Time being. The Clergy did not like this ; but he would abate nothing thereof ; and because *John* did not please him he deposed him and by Force of Arms caused another to be installed.

Great Confusion at ROME.

The Storm which had been long gathering now fell heavy upon the Holy See. It must be confessed that, notwithstanding the Design of these Princes might be very good, the large Revenue and Power annexed to the Pontificate by *Pepin* and *Charlemain* were a great Temptation to ambitious and covetous Minds. When therefore the Descendants of *Charlemain* were no longer able to maintain their Superiority in *Italy* *Rome* became the Prey of that Prince who was uppermost. In these calamitous Times he who could recommend himself thereto by any Services however infamous, or pay a round Price for it, was sure of being raised to any Benefice or to the papal Chair itself. As Things were thus circumstanced it is not to be wondered that some Popes were notoriously profane, and that others were guilty of the grossest Immoralities : So that it was high Time for some such powerful Prince as *Otho* to interpose. He did what he could and things were in some Measure set right ; but the Reformation made by him lasted not long.

BENEDICT IX. 1044.

Benedict IX. whose Rapine and Cruelty were intolerable, was driven from *Rome* at *Christmas* in the Year 1044 : But notwithstanding *Sylvester III.* was thereupon raised to the papal Chair, *Benedict* found Ways being of a powerful Family to get Possession of it again about three Months after. Pursuing his former wicked Courses the People, who were determined at any Rate to get rid of him, gave him a large Sum of Money to resign ; and *Gregory VI.* succeeded.

GREGORY VI.

Being a well disposed Man this Pope endeavoured to rectify the Disorder he found every Thing in. The Revenue of the Holy See had been so exhausted or alienated that scarce enough was left to subsist him. The large Sums which

which Pilgrims used to offer were greatly diminished; because all the Roads of *Italy* being infested with Robbers few would venture upon a Pilgrimage to *Rome*: And if some by going in large Companies did get safe thither their Offerings seldom came into the Pope's Coffers; for the Desperadoes with which even *Rome* itself was full did not stick at taking these by Force from the holy Altars and Tombs. *Gregory* exhorted the People by representing their Heinousness to desist from these wicked Practices, and promised to provide for all such as were really necessitous. He moreover admonished all those who had appropriated to themselves any Part of *St. Peter's* Patrimony to restore the same, or to shew their Right to keep it. Finding that his Exhortations, his Admonitions and even his Excommunications, were slighted he proceeded to more violent Methods. As the *Romans* had been long used to live by Plunder he was hereupon represented as cruel and blood-thirsty: And as both *Benedict IX.* and *Sylvester III.* still retained the Title of Pope, each of these endeavoured to raise himself a Party amongst the People to whom *Gregory* was become odious.

In a Council held at *Sutri* by the Emperor *Henry III.* *Three Popes set* who thought proper to come into *Italy* for the sake of *asile by the* putting a Stop to this Schism, it appeared that *Benedict* *Council of* and *Sylvester* had actually been guilty of *Simony*: And *SUTRI.* as the giving of Money to *Benedict* for resigning in Favour of *Gregory* was also looked upon as a simoniacal Contract they were all three set aside; and *Suidger* Bishop of *Bamberg* known by the Name of *Clement II.* was at *Christmas* in the Year 1406 installed.

A Dispute arising at his Death in the next Year be- *CLEMENT II.* twixt the Emperor and the Clergy of *Rome* *Benedict IX.* 1046. once more took Possession of the holy Chair; but he was soon forced to resign, and *Poppon* Bishop of *Brixen* whom the Emperor had chosen in *Germany* was in July 1048 installed.

This Pontiff who took upon himself the Name of *DAMASUS II.* *Damasus II.* enjoyed his Dignity only twenty-three Days. 1048.

In a Diet held at *Worms* in the Autumn following *LEO IX.* *Bruno* Bishop of *Toul* was unanimously elected: But 1049. some Difficulties being raised by the *Roman* Clergy, who were not at all consulted, the holy See continued

some Time vacant. They were however forced to submit; and taking upon himself the Name of *Leo IX.*

He endeavours he was installed at *Rome* in *February* 1049. The Character of this Pope which was truly apostolick drew great Numbers of Pilgrims to *Rome*: All whose Offerings, notwithstanding he found the papal Treasury quite empty, he applied to pious and charitable Uses. He declared all such Orders as appeared to have been obtained by Simony void; and held two Councils on Purpose to root out this cursed Evil which had brought so many Misfortunes upon the Church.

VICTOR II.
1054.

At the Death of *Leo* in the Year 1054 the *Roman* Clergy sent *Hildebrand* a Sub-deacon to choose some Person in *Germany* who was worthy to fill the holy Chair. As they found *Henry III.* would abate nothing of the Power reserved to the Emperors and always nominated a *German*, this was done for the sake of preserving the Appearance of a Right in them to choose a Pope which they never had formally given up: And as Churchmen make all Things give way to their Lust of Power, they did not scruple to give amongst other Reasons for their Conduct upon this Occasion one which reflected great Dishonour upon themselves; namely that there was not one amongst all the *Italian* Clergy fit to be a Pope. In an Assembly at *Mentz* the Election fell upon *Gebherdt* Bishop of *Eichtstedt* a near Relation of the Emperor's; and he was installed at *Rome* by the Name of *Victor II.*

STEPHEN IX.
1057.

Taking the Advantage of the Infancy of the Emperor *Henry IV.* the *Roman* Clergy ventured upon the Death of *Victor* in the Year 1057 to choose a Pope: And *Frederick* Abbot of *Mount Cassin* known afterwards by the Name of *Stephen IX.* was the Person fixed upon. This Pope being of the House of *Lorrain*, at that Time very powerful, was suspected of a Design to get the Imperial Dignity into his Family; and *Hildebrand*, whom we spoke of before, his Legate in *Germany* an artful Man had as it was supposed a secret Commission for managing this Affair: But the Shortness of his Life would not admit this or another Design he had of reconciling the *Greek* and *Latin* Churches to be carried into Execution.

Notwith-

Notwithstanding an Order left by *Stephen*, that if he NICHOLAS died during the Absence of his Favourite Legate no II. 1059. Pope should be chosen till his Return to *Rome*, *John* Bishop of *Velletri* who took the Name of *Benedict* was soon after his Death in the Year 1058 elected. *Hildebrand* being on his Way to *Rome* when the News of this Election reached him he stopped at *Florence*: And having whilst there obtained full Power for the Purpose from *Cardinal Damien* and others, he caused *Gerard* Bishop of *Florence* called afterwards *Nicholas II.* to be elected. The Approbation of the Imperial Court being obtained in his Favour he was conducted to *Rome* by *Godfrey* Duke of *Lorraine* in *January* 1059: And *Benedict*, who soon submitted, not only lost his new Dignity but was deprived of his Bishoprick and degraded. In the Time of *Nicholas* the *Normans*, who had established themselves in *Naples*, were upon consenting to pay an annual Tribute and swear Fealty to the Holy See confirmed in their Possessions there.

Upon the Death of this Pope in the Year 1061 the ALEXANDER II. 1061. Roman Clergy disagreed about choosing a Successor for him; but at Length the Party of *Hildebrand* now Archdeacon prevailed, and *Anselm* Bishop of *Lucca* was the Person fixed upon. He was installed under the Name of *Alexander II.* But as his Election had not been approved of by the Emperor *Henry IV.* it was in a Diet held by him at *Basil* declared void. *Cadalus* Bishop of *Parma* being at the same Time elected Pope, the Emperor in order to put him into Possession of the holy Chair marched in *April* 1062 at the Head of a powerful Army towards *Rome*: But after a Battle, in which many of the *Romans* were slain, *Godfrey* Duke of *Lorraine* and *Robert Guiscard* Duke of *Pouille* declared in Favour of *Alexander*. It being hereupon agreed to refer the Matter to a general Council forthwith to be held at *Mantua*, and the Election of *Cadulus* was unanimously condemned: He however to the Time of his Death insisted upon being the true Pope, and that the Title of Anti-Pope belonged to his Competitor. Although most of the Clergy who had opposed *Alexander* submitted to the Decision of the Council of *Mantua*, it was several Years after the Death of *Cadalus* before *Henry*

Archbishop of *Ravenna* and some others would acknowledge him.

GREGORY
VII. 1073.

*He extends the
papal Power.*

At the Death of *Alexander* in the Year 1073 the Election fell upon *Hildebrand*, who had so long engrossed the chief Management of the *Roman Church*. Some Bishops well acquainted with his intemperate Zeal and daring Temper represented to *Henry* the Necessity of setting it aside; but the civil Diffensions in *Germany* put this out of his Power. His Predecessors had for above 200 Years been meddling in the Affairs of Princes; but this Pope who took the Name of *Gregory VII.* was as some say the first who went so far as to depose them. Having first openly avowed that he had as Pope an inherent and absolute Power over all Sovereigns, he took it upon him to cite the Emperor to appear and answer for his Conduct at *Rome*. After several Citations all justly despised he proceeded to Excommunicate *Henry*; discharged his Subjects from their Allegiance; and declaring the Crown to be forfeited ordered them to choose a new Emperor. Some *Germans* were so weak as to obey him and *Rodolph* Duke of *Suabia* was elected Emperor; but *Henry* paid *Gregory* in his own Coin; for he deposed him and caused the Archbishop of *Ravenna* to be installed in the Year 1084 by the Name of *Clement III.* In a second Bull *Gregory* denounced the severest Vengeance against *Henry* both in this World and that to come, and appealed to God and *St. Peter* for the Justice of his Cause. He also by circular Letters exhorted the Rebels in *Germany* to be faithful to *Rodolph*, whom he assured of Success: And for some time kept up his Party in *Italy* by asserting that as his Cause was that of Heaven it must succeed. The Event shewed *Gregory* to be a lying Prophet; for notwithstanding the Assistance he had from *Naples* and *Tuscany* his Troops were defeated in *Lombardy*, and *Rodolph* was slain in a bloody Battle near *Naumburg*. In the Year 1084 the Emperor laid siege to the Castle *St. Angelo*, in which *Gregory* had shut himself up; but hearing that *Robert Guiscard* had at the earnest Solicitation of the Pope left his Son to carry on the War against *Alexis* Emperor of the East and was landed in *Naples*, he thought proper to retire. *Robert* finding upon his Arrival at *Rome* great Part of the Town in the Emperor's Interest he pillaged

pillaged it; and not only set the Pope at Liberty but reduced many Towns which had revolted from him to Obedience. Gregory after staying a little in Rome went to *Salernum*; and continued there with Robert his Protector untill his Death in the Year 1085.

In this War Godfrey Duke of *Lorrain* sided with the Emperor; but *Matilda* his Wife Countess of *Tuscany* gave Gregory all the Assistance in her Power. After the Death of her Husband having no Children she annexed the Dominions of her Family to the See of Rome. These were enjoyed by different Popes above twenty Years; all which Time the War with the Emperor continued, whereby *Italy* as well as *Germany* was exposed to infinite Calamities, but at length *Frederick Barberossa* made himself Master of all that belonged to the holy See. Pope *Adrian IV.* cried out against this as a most impious Usurpation; but the Emperor paid no Regard to his Complaints: And when by a Treaty concluded under the Mediation of *Venice* he consented to restore all that was included in *Charlemain's* Grant, he would hear nothing of parting with the Estates that belonged to *Matilda*.

Otho, whose Advancement to the Imperial Dignity was in a great Measure owing to the Intrigues of Pope *Innocent III.* promised to put him into the Possession of all the Estates which belonged to *Matilda*: But instead thereof he endeavoured to rob the holy See of its other Dominions. After calling upon him in vain to make good his Promise *Innocent* put *Frederick* King of *Sicily* Son of *Frederick Barberossa* upon asserting his Right to the Empire. As he knew the Countenance of *Innocent* would be of great Service to him this young Prince engaged to do every thing he desired: But being settled upon the Imperial Throne he followed the Example of *Otho* in taking from instead of restoring to the Church. In Revenge for this his Reign was all along disturbed with Insurrections, which the Popes *Honorius III.* and *Gregory IX.* stirred up against him. *Frederick* died in the Year 1250; and *Conrade* his Son and Successor whom he had associated with him in the Government died four Years after. Some German Princes had at the Instigation of the Pope crowned *William* Count of *Hol-*

land as Emperor during the Life of *Frederick*. Upon his being slain in the Year 1256 *Richard* Duke of *Cornwall* and *Alphonso* King of *Castile* were by different Parties elected Emperors: But neither of these made his Election good, and *Germany* was for some time a Scene of the utmost Confusion.

*The Emperor
RODOLPH is
reconciled to
the Holy See.*

Rodolph Count *Hapsburg* being at length elected Emperor he judged it proper to put an end to the Quarrel with the holy See; from which his Predecessors and the whole Empire had suffered so much. He fulfilled all the Promises of his Predecessors, and by several publick Acts disclaimed for himself and Successors in the most solemn Manner all Jurisdiction over the Territories belonging to the State of the Church. His Son *Albert* did the same; and the Example set by these two was followed by several succeeding Emperors.

*Some States re-
united to the
Holy See.*

Italy having been during these Troubles divided into the Factions of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines*, divers of the latter who adhered firmly to the Emperors made themselves Masters of divers Towns, and erected them into independent States: But as the Families who ruled over these petty States became extinct the Dutchies of *Urbino* *Ferrara* and some others were reunited to the State of the Church.

Having thus shewn how the Pope came into Possession of the Dominions he now rules over as Sovereign, we shall conclude this Chapter with describing them and mentioning the Interest of the holy See with Regard to other Powers.

*Of the Domi-
nions of the
Holy See.*

The Dominions of the holy See, which are comprised under the Name of the State of the Church, consist of the *Campagna* of *Rome*; *St. Peter's* Patrimony; the Dutchies of *Castro*, *Spoletto* and *Urbino*; the Marquisate of *Ancona*; the *Sabinese*; the *Romagnia* which comprehends the *Bolognese* and the Dutchy of *Ferrara*; the *Perrugin* and the *Orvietan*. The Dutchy of *Benevento* in *Naples*, and the County of *Avignon* in *France* do also belong to the Pope.

*Interest of the
POPE with
regard to the
other Powers
of ITALY.*

It in the general greatly concerns the Pope, who as his Forces are inconsiderable can gain nothing and may lose much by a War there, to preserve the Peace of *Italy*. If this cannot be done he should be very cautious of

being partial to one Power, lest he should thereby expose his Dominions to the Resentment of the other. With regard to *Naples*, *Venice* and *Tuscany*, his nearest Neighbours it would be absurd in him, whose Forces bear no Proportion to either of theirs, to break with any one of them. On the contrary as a superstitious Regard both for the Person and Dominions of the Pope prevails in all Catholick Countries, it is not probable that he should without some great Provocation be attacked by either of them.

It would be of dangerous Consequence to the holy *The TURKS*. See for the *Turks* to get footing in *Italy*: But as the Christian Powers in the general would in all Probability be for the hindering of this it is not much to be feared.

As the Emperors if they could make themselves absolute in *Germany* would it is likely renew their ancient Pretensions upon *Italy*, it is of great Importance to the See of *Rome* that the Constitution of the *German* Empire be preserved. *GERMANY*.

His Interest with Regard to *France* and *Spain* is that *FRANCE and* the Balance of Power be maintained betwixt them, and *SPAIN*. especially that neither of these becomes too powerful in *Italy*: For if either of them should become Master there his Power would undoubtedly be reduced to a mere Shadow.

C H A P. V.

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

THE Pope besides being possessed of considerable Dominions in *Italy* pretends as Successor of *St. Peter* to be the supreme Head of *Christendom*, and is so acknowledged at least in spiritual Matters by all the Powers of *Europe* of the *Romish* Communion. As this spiritual Power produces strange Effects in many Courts, it is of Consequence to all who would form a right Judgment of Politicks to understand well its Origin, and by what Means it did arrive at so great a Pitch and is still preserved. An Enquiry into this Matter will at the same Time open to us a clear View of the Controversies which at this Time distract the Christian World; and enable us to judge how far it is probable that these will ever be ended.

State of Religion amongst
the HEATHENS.

Before the Birth of JESUS CHRIST all the World except the *Jews* were under the grossest Ignorance as to divine Things. Some amongst the *Heathens* did indeed reason well concerning the nature of the human Soul and the Probability of a future State; but as what was commonly taught about these Things was mixed with much Fable and Absurdity, it could serve only to keep the Vulgar in Awe: And although the Practice of Virtue was inculcated; yet as the wisest amongst the *Heathens* had their Doubts as to the Certainty of a future State the Sanction of Rewards and Punishments was wanted. The Love of Virtue for its own Sake was and will always be sufficient to influence considerate Minds: But as much the greater Part of the *Heathens* could not see the Beauty thereof, they contented themselves with the Observation of insignificant or barbarous Ceremonies.

Amongst the
Jews.

The *Jews* were favoured with the Knowledge of the one true God, and had peculiar Revelations of his Will;

Will; but since the Divine Being did not see it fit to send Apostles endued with suitable Gifts to propagate the *Jewish* Religion this was confined to a Handful of People.

Leaving it to Divines to shew the Preference of Christianity to Judaism, we shall just mention some *Reasons for the* *Universality of* Reasons why without ascribing it entirely to Provi-CHRISTI-
dence one should spread rather than the other. THEANITY.

Jews imagining themselves the only Favourites of Heaven despised all Mankind; whereas Christianity teaches universal Benevolence and that GOD is no Respector of this or that Nation. The many burthensome and expensive Ceremonies of Judaism gave the neighbouring Nations a Disgust thereto, nor could they bear the Thought of going to *Jerusalem*, at which Place only GOD was publickly to be worshiped, because they well knew the Incivility of the *Jews* to Strangers. Neither of these Objections lies against the spreading of Christianity; for although the publick Exercise of Religion cannot be without some Ceremonies none are insisted upon in the Gospel as absolutely necessary to Salvation: And so far from teaching that any particular Place of Worship is more acceptable to GOD it is therein promised, *That wherever two or three are gathered together in his Name he will grant their Requests.* The Doctrines of Christianity have no Tendency to disturb the Peace of Society but on the Contrary do promote this; nor do they contradict any Civil Laws except these are repugnant to the eternal and immutable ones of right Reason. As the Christian Religion does moreover teach a Man whether his Station be publick or private to act upon a conscientious Principle, it goes farther than any System of Religion or Philosophy ever did; for it lays him under an Obligation to Faithfulness in many Cases, which are not cognizable and consequently cannot be punishable by human Laws. For these and many other Reasons that might be given, it is of the utmost Consequence to every Sovereign who understands the Genius of Christianity and consults his own temporal Interest, although Motives of a higher Nature were out of the Question, to introduce and support it in his Dominions.

If

No Necessity
for any supreme
Head in religi-
ous Matters
except the Civil
Magistrate.

If this be true that all States would find it for their Interest to have Christianity established in them, it is next to be considered, whether it be necessary that the Supreme Power in religious Matters should in every State be in the Hands of the whole Body of the Clergy or of some of them independently of the Sovereign: Or that all States should in these Matters submit to one Supreme Head. Such a Necessity, if it does not exist, must arise from the Religion of Nature or from the particular Genius of a revealed Religion. It cannot arise from the Religion of Nature: Because it would be introducing a second independent Power in every State. As the Consequence of such a double Power must be perpetual Feuds betwixt Civil Magistrates and Church Governors, which would never end but in the Ruin of the one or the other, it cannot be founded in Reason, and of Course can be no Part of the Religion of Nature: For if Civil Government be reasonable, it is absurd to suppose that any other Power absolutely incompatible therewith is also reasonable. As to the Christian Religion in particular, since it does in every other Instance exalt the Doctrines of natural Religion, it would be strange that it should be in this essential Point contradictory thereto; and it is incumbent upon those, who contend for the Necessity of depriving the Civil Magistrate of the supreme Power in religious Matters, to shew a positive Command for this in the *New Testament*. Having premised thus much, we shall proceed to shew by what Means and Degrees a spiritual Monarchy has been established in the western Church.

CHRISTI-
ANITY em-
braced at first
by the lower
Sort of People.

The Apostles, who in pursuance of their Master's Order began immediately after his Ascension to preach the Gospel, being themselves of mean Estate found easiest Access to the lower Sort of People, and their first Converts must consequently have been amongst these. Although this may at first View seem a Reflexion upon Christianity, it does upon considering prove the internal Excellence thereof; which could without the Assistance of either powerful or learned Men make its Way in the World. It at the same Time delivers it from all Suspicion of having been a State Trick, and by comparing the disadvantageous Appearance of Christianity in the Hands of a few poor illiterate Fishermen with its vast
and

and sudden Encrease, notwithstanding the great Opposition made thereto, we cannot but see the Hand of Providence accompanying it.

Christianity, which was first published in the *Roman* ^{*Its Progress*} Empire, having made a considerable Progress amongst ^{*amongst the*} the common People the *Pharisees* amongst the *Jews* and *ROMANS*. the Priests amongst the *Heathens* soon discovered their Enmity thereto; because it struck at their Ambition and Interest: And as none amongst the Christians were capable or could have an Opportunity of representing their Doctrines fairly to those in Power, it is no wonder that the Emperors should be prejudiced by their Enemies against them. Some *Romans* of Eminence had no Aversion to Christianity, yet they thought it wrong to change the Religion under which the Empire had so long flourished. Others of a superstitious Turn imagined that the Declension of the Empire then visible was owing to the Resentment of the Gods; because their Altars were deserted by the Numbers who embraced Christianity. By the major Part the Christians were looked upon as Atheists, and being moreover suspected of a Design to overturn the established Religion a most cruel Persecution was set on Foot against them: And as they thought it their Duty to suffer any Punishment rather than renounce Christianity, their Adversaries who mistook this Constancy for Obstinacy tortured them as much as possible. *No Consequence*

In this Distress the Christians formed themselves into ^{*to be drawn*} Societies for defending themselves; and instituted a ^{*from the independent Power*} Form of Church Government. Although the first ^{*exercised by the first Christians.*} of these was contrary to civil Policy and the latter was interfering in a Province which properly belonged to the civil Magistrate, both were at that Time since all Things must give way in some extreme Cases excusable; nor indeed could the Christians without sacrificing Conscience to temporary Quiet have acted otherways. As the civil Magistrate failed in his Duty, for had he examined fairly into the Truths of Christianity he would undoubtedly have embraced and made the necessary Regulations for the Exercise thereof, the Christians were under a Necessity of doing a Thing in the general unjustifiable: Yet it cannot be from thence fairly inferred, as it has by many been, that the civil Magistrate has no Right

Right to interpose in Ecclesiastical Affairs. It may be said that the civil Magistrate wants the necessary Qualifications for so doing; but what hinders him from delegating his Power to or acting by the Advice of such as are good Judges in this as well as in other Things? A Sovereign does not perhaps so well know how to pen an Act of Parliament as a Lawyer; but will any one say that he has not therefore a Power to make Laws? In short the Influence of Churchmen is always very great; and although many or perhaps the major Part of them would make no ill use of this, there will always be amongst them some of a busy, factious Spirit, and these will if possible engross all the Authority of their Body. It is therefore absolutely necessary for the Peace and Security of every State that they be kept under; nor can there be a single Instance produced from History, where a Power independent of the civil Magistrate has been long exercised by Churchmen without producing infinite Mischiefs.

*Reasons for
the Continu-
ance and En-
crease of this
Power.*

As it was some Time before any Emperor embraced Christianity, Bishops and other Ecclesiasticks had taken Care to encrease the Power which the Circumstances of the Times had made it necessary to lodge in them; and instead of taking this away *Constantine* and some of his Successors found it necessary for their own Security to keep fair with the Clergy, because these were held in great Veneration by the People now generally become Christians. To this it may be added, that as the first Christian Emperors had some Heathen Officers of State it was not fit to trust the Decision of Church Affairs to a Council whereof they were Members. For these Reasons the Manner of nominating to Bishopricks and other Benefices was not altered; and not only Matters of Faith but all Things which concerned the Government of the Church were left to the Decision of an Assembly composed of Churchmen only. This Neglect or Want of Power in the first Christian Emperors, to exercise that Right which is inherent in every Christian Prince of convening and presiding in General Councils, gave the Clergy an Opportunity of excluding them entirely from meddling in Church Affairs. As no Bishops had suffered so much in the three first Centuries from the Heathens as those of *Rome*, none in return were so much consulted or received so many Favours from the Emperors after
their

their Conversion. Having by Degrees raised themselves above other Bishops, to which their being looked upon as Successors to *St. Peter* contributed not a little, they at last by the Connivance or Inattention of Emperors arrogated to themselves the Right of presiding in General Councils; and of determining concerning all Matters of Faith and Discipline: And they likewise assumed the supreme Jurisdiction in all spiritual Matters at least throughout Christendom.

The first Christians pursuant to *St. Paul's* prudent Advice, instead of carrying their Causes into a Heathen Court and thereby scandalizing their Religion which taught them to despise Riches, referred all Disputes to the Decision of Bishops. As this Custom was not abrogated a formal Jurisdiction, notwithstanding it became unnecessary when the secular Judges became Christians and interfered with the Pastoral Office, was still kept up by Bishops; and amongst other Powers this at length centered in the Bishop of *Rome*. If any Scruple arose concerning Proximity of Blood in such as intended to marry, or if any Difference happened betwixt married Persons, it was usual for the primitive Christians to submit in these Things to the Determination of their Priests; and when Nuptials were celebrated it was customary to have their Prayers and Benediction. Hence the Pope took the Pretence of bringing all Questions concerning Marriages and Divorces into his Courts; and to make the Usurpation go down the better with the People Marriage was reckoned amongst the Sacraments. Further the first Christians endeavoured to recommend their Religion to the Pagans by extraordinary Sanctity and Purity of Life, and made it a Matter of Conscience to abstain from some Vices not punishable by their Laws. Whenever the Life of a Christian was become notoriously scandalous he was enjoined Penitence or mulcted; and if he continued incorrigible the Church excommunicated him, after which no Person would keep him company. As they professed a new Religion this Punishment was then quite necessary, and it might still be of great Use under the Direction of the civil Magistrate: Provided it be confined to Immoralities, and Care be taken that it is not abused by the Clergy to the Gratification of their Resentment, Ambition or Avarice. The Power of Ex-

The Pope's Power was as if it built upon Abuses of the Practices of the primitive Christians.

com-

communication at first lodged in the Body of the Christian Clergy came also in the Hands of the Bishop of *Rome*. How it has been perverted, even to the excommunicating and deposing of crowned Heads; to the absolving of Subjects from their Allegiance; and to the stirring of them up to fly in the Faces of their lawful Sovereigns; no one that is in the least acquainted with History can be ignorant. In the Eastern Church it was quite otherwise, the Clergy being there kept under a proper Subjection to the Emperors: Nor had the Bishop of *Constantinople* any Jurisdiction out of his own Diocese. Having thus traced the Origin of this unreasonable and quite new sort of Monarchy, we shall next give some Account by what Arts and Accidents it has been carried to so great a Height and is still supported.

*It was much
increased by
the Ignorance
of the Times.*

The Ignorance which overspread the Western World upon the Declension of the western Empire contributed, for Ignorance does always serve the Cause of Superstition, to the Encrease of the Pope's spiritual Monarchy. These were a good deal owing to the Irruption of the Northern Nations; nor could it be expected that the Sciences, who are the Daughters of Peace, should flourish whilst this Part of the World groaned for two Ages under all the Misfortunes of War and Anarchy. It has too been affirmed and not without Reason that the Clergy were accessory to this Prevalence of Ignorance. As the Philosophers had whilst the Emperors were *Pagans* wrote and did still continue to write against Christianity; the Clergy instead of answering the Objections of these conceived an Aversion to Philosophy. The Study thereof was discouraged; and under an ill-grounded Apprehension that the Christian Church might be endangered by infecting young Minds with their Errors the reading of Pagan Authors in the Schools was prohibited. A Story was likewise trumped up that *St. Jerome* dreamed of being whipped by the Devil for reading the Works of *Cicero* too often: and about the Year 400 it was formally resolved in the Council of *Carthage*, that even a Bishop should not read any Book wrote by a Heathen. As the other Parts of Learning were moreover in these unhappy Times neglected by all except such as were intended for the Priesthood, it is not to be wondered at that it should end in almost universal Ignorance. Another and the principal Cause

Cause of the Encrease of the Pope's Power was the false System of Policy at that Time prevailing: For if the Foundation, Nature and Excellency, of civil Government had been well understood, it must have been seen that the dividing of the supreme Power is always ruinous to any State. Out of too great a Fondness for Liberty it had been inadvertently asserted by some *Greek* and *Roman* Authors that the supreme Power could never be enough restrained. This Notion, to which the tyrannical Proceedings of some *Roman* Emperors had given rise, was industriously propagated by the Pope's Emissaries; and by a strange Sort of Reasoning it was inferred, without considering the pernicious Consequences of such Inference, that the exalting of the Pope's Authority would by lessening that of crowned Heads be serviceable to Subjects. There cannot be a stronger Proof of such Doctrine's having been then taught, than that even in this enlightened Age the Principles of true Policy are entirely suppressed or greatly disguised, for the sake of hiding their Inconsistency with the Pope's Authority, in all Catholick Schools.

It is likely that *Rome* was fixed upon for the Pope's *How ROME* Residence; because it was the Metropolis of the *Roman became the Seat* Empire and the Place where *Christianity* first spread itself. *thereof.* The Pretence of its being because *St. Peter* was Bishop there will appear frivolous to such as know, that when *Constantinople* or *New Rome* became the Seat of Empire and had eclipsed *Old Rome* the Bishops thereof claimed Precedency of the Bishops of *Rome*.

The Clergy instead of laying aside their Hierarchy, *No just Ground* which as Persecution ceased upon *Constantine's* embracing *for the Power* Christianity became unnecessary, took the Advantage of *claimed by the* the Repose the Church enjoyed under him, who was *Pope.* changed from a most violent Enemy to a great Bigot to Christianity; and under the Pretence of preserving wholesome Order in the Church new modelled it. Bishops, who exercised a Power over the inferior Clergy in their respective Dioceses, were for the most Part subordinate to the Bishop of the Capital in every Province. The latter were at first called Metropolitans; but about the End of the eight Century they took the Name of Archbishops. Four of these were on the account of their Residence in the four principal Cities of the *Roman* Empire, namely

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

namely *Rome, Constantinople, Antioch and Alexandria*, distinguished by the Name of *Patriarchs*; and the Archbishop of *Jerusalem* was afterwards by Reason of the ancient Holiness of this City added to their Number. The Emperor *Phocas* being displeased with the Patriarch of *Constantinople*, because as it is said he had reproved him for the Murder of the Emperor *Mauritius*, did indeed give the Pre-eminence to the See of *Rome*, and there-upon *Boniface III.* took the Title of *Oecumenical Bishop*; but this Pre-eminence could imply no more than bare Precedence, and the other Patriarchs were far from submitting to his Jurisdiction. Long before this, for the Bishops of *Rome* had been for a great while aiming at universal Power, one of them founding his Right on a strained Sense of a Canon made by the Council of *Nice* did pretend to lay Injunctions upon the *African* Bishops; but the latter refused to obey these and sent him back a very smart Answer. Upon the whole there does not appear to be the least Mark of divine Appointment in the Power claimed by the Pope; nor is there any stronger Reason for the Bishop of *Rome* to stand first in the List of Patriarchs than for him of *Antioch* to stand third. Admitting that any Emperor had ever so clearly granted an independent spiritual Jurisdiction in the Empire to the See of *Rome*, as this was a sort of Treaty made by a particular State, perhaps for the Sake of having the Pope's Advice in Church Matters, it might whenever it became prejudicial to this State be annulled; and there is no Pretence that it should be binding upon any other. Admitting also that some Christian Princes have been deceived by Misrepresentations thereof, or have been influenced by blind Zeal, to suffer such a Jurisdiction to be exercised in their Dominions, they have an undoubted Right to shake it off again as soon as ever it is found to be inconsistent with the publick Good.

Arts and Accidents by which the Pope's Power has been extended.

The Extension of the Bishop of *Rome's* Power through the Western World was by Degrees; no Arts having been untried nor Accidents unimproved that could be serviceable thereto: But as it is unnecessary and would be tedious to mention all these we shall confine ourselves to some of the principal ones. Changing the Imperial Residence may be reckoned one favourable Accident for the Extension thereof. Had this continued at *Rome* its Bishops would

would probably have been kept under, for the Bishops of *Constantinople* who were without doubt equally ambitious could never throw off their Dependence upon the Eastern Emperors. Another Accident was the Declension of the Western Empire: For as the Bishops of *Rome* had had the chief Hand in converting the barbarous Nations who overran this Empire to the Christian Faith, these Nations thought themselves obliged to pay a more than ordinary Regard to the See of *Rome*. About the Beginning of the fifth Century it was common for all new Bishops to visit the Tombs of *St. Peter* and *Paul* at *Rome*. This at first a voluntary Compliance with the Superstition of the Times was afterwards looked upon as necessary, and paved the Way for its being insisted upon by the Bishop of *Rome*, that all other Bishops ought to receive Confirmation from him. As Christianity spread itself the Bishops of new erected Sees frequently consulted the Head *Roman* Church; and as this was the most ancient Christian Church his Explications of Canons and Customs were generally approved of. The Bishops of *Rome* perceiving this soon took upon them to send Decrees unasked all over the *Christian* World; and pretended to a Right of making and enforcing Obedience to Ecclesiastical Laws. Under the same Pretence they set themselves up for Judges of the Quarrels and Crimes of other Bishops; and they frequently deposed such whose Ordination was in their Opinion uncanonical, except they could pay for a Dispensation. If a Person had lost his Cause in the Court of his own Sovereign he would frequently appeal to the Pope, and was sure of meeting with Favour in his Court; because his Authority was not only thereby acknowledged but Money was brought into his Coffers. Historians say, that when *Arles* was made an Archbishoprick by the Emperor *Honorius* the Pope, for fear the Emperor should erect a Patriarchate in *France*, made its Archbishop Vicar General of this Kingdom; and that he foolishly preferred this subordinate Authority over the seventeen Provinces of which *France* was then composed to the being an independent Master of seven.

In the eighth Century, the Behaviour of the Monks and other Clergy being grown notoriously infamous, an Eng-
lish Friar named *Winifred* called afterwards *Boniface* out
VOL. II. G

BONIFACE
contributes

much to the In-
crease thereof.

of his great Zeal set about the reforming of their Manners. This Man, who was entirely devoted to the Interest of *Rome*, having been instrumental in establishing Christianity in several Parts, he was made Vicar-General of these Parts by *Gregory III.* and in order to procure him all possible Authority he was recommended in a particular Manner by the same Pope to *Charles Martel* Mayor of the Palace in *France*. In several Councils held by *Boniface* in *Germany* and *France* he prevailed upon the Clergy not only to declare their Assent to the Catholick Faith, but to acknowledge themselves subject to the Bishop of *Rome* as Successor of *St. Peter*. Some *German* and *French* Bishops being also persuaded by him to go and receive the Episcopal Pall from *Gregory*, he by Degrees insisted upon the Necessity of all Bishops having this Ornament; and they were forbid to exercise any Function of a Bishop untill they had received it. Popes did afterwards take upon them to allow Bishops to change their Sees; and established the Custom for Bishops on their Confirmation to pay Sums of Money to the See of *Rome* under the Denomination of First fruits. It being found that the Sentences of Provincial Synods were frequently and without giving any Reason for it annulled by Popes, the Custom of holding them was by Degrees dropt; and at last Pope *Gregory VII.* compelled all Bishops to take an Oath of Allegiance to the See of *Rome*. A Decree was also published by him, which forbid all sorts of Persons to give Judgment in any Case where any Party had appealed to *Rome*: And Nuncios or Legates were sent all over the Western Part of the *Christian* World, to exercise in the Pope's Name that Authority which formerly belonged to Bishops, Metropolitans and Provincial Synods.

*Arts by which
the Revenue of
the Church and
the Number of
Churchmen
were increas-
ed.*

The alluring Prospect of living easily and plentifully had so multiplied the Number of Ecclesiasticks, that the large Revenue of the Church, notwithstanding the vast Increase thereof by the Liberality of Princes and other well disposed Christians, was insufficient for their Maintenance. Instead of wholesome Laws to prevent so many who might in some other Way have served the Publick from entering into the Church, all Ways were contrived by the Pope to empty the Purses of the Laity for

for their Support; because he well knew that as their Number did his Power would encrease. With a View to this a Custom of selling Masses, Dispensations, Indulgences and other Things of this kind was introduced; and as dying Men are generally indifferent about worldly Goods Ecclesiastical Harpies frequently prevailed upon them, by insinuating that GOD would be thereby well-pleased, to rob their Families for the sake of giving to the Church. As they never neglect any thing that can make for their Interest Popes reaped vast Advantages from the superstitious Fondness for Crusades, which prevailed in the eleventh and twelfth Centuries. Under the Pretence of taking them under the Protection of the Pope all who engaged in these Expeditions were exempted upon paying a round Sum from all civil Jurisdiction. The Nuncios of the Pope did likewise pretend to an exclusive Right of collecting and disposing of the Alms given for the carrying on of these; and under the Pretence of applying them to this Use the Estates of such as he was pleased to call Hereticks or Schismaticks were confiscated by the Pope's Order, without so much as asking the Sovereign's Consent under whom they lived. The Wealth of the Church being by these and other Artifices vastly encreased, the Number of such as desired Preferments increased also; nor as it put them into a Condition of living well without taking any Pains were any deterred by the Injunction of Celibacy, which was laid upon the Clergy in the eleventh Century, from entering into the Ecclesiastick State. The Number of Monks was likewise encreased by the Superstition, Avarice or Ambition, of many Parents: Who thinking to do GOD Service or hoping thereby to provide for them, and so to prevent the Decline of their Families by dividing their Estates, forced their younger Sons into Convents. In order to make room for Churchmen Cathedrals had besides proper Priests for performing divine Service each a Chapter of Canons, and many new Convents were founded. Thus Monasteries, at first erected in Times of Persecution for the Reception of such as devoted themselves to religious Exercises, and in which the Members who observed a very severe Discipline contented themselves with the most ordinary

Fare, were filled with Persons drawn thither by the Prospect of faring well and living idly. The Religious Houses, numerous as they were now become, being insufficient to contain all who offered themselves, a new Order called *Mendicants* was instituted about the thirteenth Century. Two Purposes were hereby answered: It was capable being confined to no Number of receiving all; and as the Persons of this Order pretended to a more than ordinary Sanctity, and to depend entirely for Subsistence on the Charity of well disposed Christians, many bestowed Alms upon these who being scandalized at the luxurious and riotous Lives of Monks would never have given any Thing to a religious House. Some without Doubt and such were to be pitied entered into this Order with a Design of rendering themselves by the Austerity it enjoined more acceptable to GOD: But the vast Increase thereof was owing to Pride; for although it may at first Sight appear strange, there is as much Pride in affecting to be distinguished by a poor, sordid, begging Condition as by an Affluence of Fortune.

MONKS contribute greatly to the Advancement of the Power of ROME.

Monks being as submissive to their Superior as private Soldiers are to their Colonel, the Pope had nothing to do but bring its Head into his Views and every Convent was a sort of Regiment at his Call. It having been found by playing them off, if the Interest of *Rome* required it, against the secular Clergy as well as against the Laity that they were of great Service to the Holy See, Monks were towards the End of the thirteenth Century encouraged by the Pope to throw off all Obedience to their Diocesans, and to put themselves under his immediate Protection. This Point being gained Popes in the Quarrels which from Time to Time arose between different Orders, as for Instance between the *Dominicans* and *Franciscans*, always took Care to carry it with so even a Hand that one could not oppress the other; and as neither could complain of Partiality both were thereby kept firm in their Interest. By Degrees Monks engrossed Alms and Legacies and interfered in other Things to the great Prejudice of the secular Clergy. This of course drew upon them the Envy and Hatred of Bishops, whose Interest was strongly connected with that of the secular Clergy; but being assured of the Pope's Countenance these

these were not regarded. Whenever any Bishop disputed the Authority of a Pope, Monks like so many Bull-dogs were set upon him : and the People deluded by their Hypocrisy commonly sided with them. They besides kept a watchful Eye over the Behaviour of Bishops, and constantly informed the Generals of their respective Orders who resided at *Rome* thereof; so that before any Scheme to throw off his Authority could be brought to Maturity the Pope had Time to take his Measures. At length, and especially as some Bishops from corrupt Views preferred the Jurisdiction of one of their own Order to that of the Civil Magistrate, it was found impracticable to stem the Torrent : And all Thoughts of reviving their Independency on the See of *Rome* were laid aside by Bishops. It however ought to be remembered that many, and particularly of those on this Side the *Alps*, were all along very impatient under the Pope's Yoke ; and the *French* and *Spanish* Bishops took great Pains to have it decreed in the Council of *Trent*, that Bishops are by divine Appointment obliged to reside constantly upon their Sees. As the Consequence of this would have been, that is not only unnecessary but contrary to the Command of GOD for them to go to *Rome* upon any Pretence, no such Decree was made : But it is not probable that any more General Councils will be held ; for as it cost great Pains to get over this Difficulty, no Pope will choose to run the Hazard of having his Authority limited in such another Assembly. They are besides unnecessary, if a Doctrine first broached by the Jesuits that the Pope is infallible be true ; and whether it be or not, as it prevails so generally, no Bishop will think it prudent, without being assured of Support from some powerful Prince, to attempt the freeing of himself from Subjection to the See of *Rome*.

The vast Encrease of Ecclesiasticks and the immense Riches of the Church would however have never been sufficient of themselves to have established such a spiritual Monarchy as was aimed at. To do this effectually, it was necessary that the Pope should possess Dominions whose Revenue should be sufficient to support his Grandeur ; and which being exempt from the Jurisdiction of all temporal Princes might serve as a Sanctuary for his

By what Means the Pope became independent of the Eastern Empire.

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

Adherents upon all Occasions. Whilst the Western Empire lasted or the *Goths* were Masters in *Italy* the Pope could not acquire any Dominions. The Power of the latter being ruined by *Justinian* all *Italy* became a Province to the Emperors of the *East*: But by the ill Conduct of the Exarchs of *Ravenna*, to whom the Government of *Italy* was committed, their Authority soon began to decline. An Irruption being not long after made by the *Lombards* these, as the Emperors such was the Confusion and Division in the Empire could send no considerable Force against them, easily became Masters of great Part of *Italy*; which together with the Quarrel betwixt Pope *Gregory* and the Emperor *Leon Isaurus* furnished the Popes with the Opportunity they had long wished for of throwing off all Subjection to the Eastern Empire. The Veneration for Images having by Degrees degenerated into Idolatry this Emperor caused them to be pulled down in *Constantinople*, and ordered the same to be done in *Rome* and other Parts of *Italy*: But as all Superstition is serviceable to the Cause of Priestcraft, and this was besides profitable to the *Roman Chair*, *Gregory* who then filled it would hear nothing of demolishing Images. Things were in the End carried so far that the Pope for his own Safety found it necessary to stir up a Rebellion against *Leon* in *Italy*; and the Exarch of *Ravenna* being slain in a Tumult an End was put to the Power of the *Eastern Emperors* in *Italy*.

The POPE
in great Dan-
ger from the
LOMBARDS.

By this Means *Gregory* got rid of the Emperor's Jurisdiction; which whatever he might give out of the Usefulness of Images in order to amuse and work up the Populace to his Purpose was without Doubt his principal View: But a Storm soon threatened him from another Quarter. The King of *Lombardy*, who endeavoured to subdue all that had revolted from the Empire, had after taking *Ravenna* and other Places laid Siege to *Rome*. In this Distress *Gregory* implored the Aid of *France*; and by the Interposition of this Court the *Lombard* was prevailed upon to desist. *Rome* being afterwards again attacked and reduced to the greatest Extremity by the *Lombards*, *Zachary* Successor to *Gregory* besought a second time the Assistance of the *French*; and in order to obtain it approved of the deposing of *Chil-*
derick

derick in favour of *Pepin*, whose Ancestors had for several Reigns engrossed all Authority in *France*.

After several Defeats the Kingdom of *Lombardy* was entirely conquered by *Pepin*; and that Part which formerly composed the Exercate was given to the See of *Rome*. By this Liberality *Pepin* not only rewarded *Zachary* for his Services in bringing the *French* Crown into his Family, but he had at the same Time an Opportunity of shewing without any Expence to himself his Zeal for the Church; and all Ecclesiasticks the most proper Instruments for the carrying on of his ambitious Designs were hereby secured to his Interest. These extravagant Grants put the Pope, who feared that the Successors of *Pepin* would some time or other resume them, upon endeavouring to make himself independent; and it is said by some learned and impartial Historians that he soon began to play the Sovereign. This Conduct being quite new and looked upon as inconsistent with the Character of a Bishop the People refused to submit to him; but upon the coming of *Charlemain* to his Assistance they were forced to do it. *Charlemain* was whilst at *Rome* proclaimed Emperor by Pope *Leo III.* and the People of *Rome*; and he was besides honoured with the Title of *Patron* or *Protector* of the Church. He soon after made himself Master of all *Italy*; but his Father's Donation of that Part which formerly belonged to the Exercate was confirmed to the Pope.

As the supreme Jurisdiction was however reserved to the Emperor and his Successors, and the Consent of the reigning Emperor was necessary to make the Election of a Pope valid, the Pope repented of having put themselves under his Protection. To get rid of this Subjection no Arts were left untried, nor did Popes stick at exciting Insurrections sometimes in *Germany* at other Times in *Italy*: Hoping by lessening the Emperor's Power to pave the Way for it, and the *German* Bishops for the most Part came into their Schemes. The Reign of *Henry IV.* whose Debaucheries and imprudent Management had irritated and embroiled him with the States of *Germany*, being thought a proper Time for compleating this long projected Design, *Gregory VII.* alias *Hildebrand* at that Time in Possession of the Holy

Chair, a cunning, proud and enterprizing Man began with declaring, that the Emperor by selling some Bishoprick to such as were unqualified or of infamous Characters had forfeited his Right of Collating to Bishopricks. The Emperor refused to give up this Right; but being excommunicated and a strong Party being raised against him by the Intrigues of *Hildebrand*, he was in the End forced to do it. After gaining this Point he was not content with exempting Bishops and other Ecclesiasticks from the Emperor's Jurisdiction, but he immediately set about the erecting of a Sovereignty in *Italy*: And it has been thought that, considering the Superstition of the Times and the divided State *Europe* was then in, it would have been, if *Gregory* had been succeeded by three or four such Popes as himself, no hard Matter for them to have established an absolute and universal Sovereignty in Temporals as well as Spirituals. Having thrown off all Subjection to the Emperor *Gregory* soon wanted to be his Master; and pretending to a Power of judging betwixt him and his Subjects summoned him to appear and answer to their Complaints at *Rome*. No Regard being paid to this Summons he dared to excommunicate *Henry*; and declaring him unworthy of the Imperial Dignity encouraged his Subjects to rebel against and depose him. The next Emperor *Henry V.* used all his Endeavours to regain the Power his Father had lost, and having seized Pope *Pascal* forced him to come to Terms: But an Outcry being hereupon raised against him by the Clergy all over *Europe* his Subjects flew in his Face, and he found it necessary for the sake of restoring Tranquility in his Dominions to give up formally in the Year 1122 the Right of Collating to Bishopricks.

Disputes with Much about the same Time a Dispute arose on the
 ENGLAND same Subject with the King of *England*; which ended in
 and FRANCE, this Prince's renouncing the Right of Collating to Bishopricks; yet the Bishops were to do him Homage. As the Pope's Aim was to have Bishops quite exempt from Submission to temporal Princes this did not satisfy, and the *French* Bishops were expressly forbid to do Homage to the King of *France*: But as he insisted that they should, the Pope did not care to have upon his Hands at the same
 Time

Time a Quarrel with the Emperor and the King of France. It was also more for his Interest to weaken the Power of the Emperor than that of the King of France; for while the former continued to be powerful in Italy it was impossible for the Pope to establish the intended independent Sovereignty there. The Empire being moreover divided into many Principalities, its Members for ever jealous of the Emperor's becoming too powerful, were easily brought into the Pope's Views; and the specious Pretence of protecting the Holy See was always sufficient to captivate vulgar Minds.

The Emperors *Frederick I.* and *Frederick II.* did in-ITALY divided deed attempt to re-establish the Imperial Authority over into GUELPHS the Popes; but it was all in vain, and Italy divided on and GIBEL- this Occasion into the Factions of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* LINES. suffered for a long Time great Ravages. As Germany was after the Death of *Frederick II.* thrown into the utmost Confusion and a long Interregnum followed, the Pope had a fair Opportunity to exercise sovereign Power over the State of the Church; and the succeeding Emperors, besides being warned by what their Predecessors had suffered in quarreling with Popes, had Business enough upon their Hands to support themselves in Germany without meddling with the Affairs of Italy.

A Doctrine of a most dangerous Nature and extensive The POPE assumes the Superiority over in its Consequences was soon after advanced; namely, that all temporal Powers were subject to the See of Rome. It was not indeed said in express Terms that Princes all temporal were subject to the Pope in Civil Matters; but that as Princes. supreme Head of the Church he had a Power to judge of their Actions, and in Consequence thereof to admonish, reprove, command or forbid, as he saw it necessary. When any of them were at War the Pope would take upon him to order a Suspension of Arms, and that the Matter should be referred to him; threatening at the same Time to excommunicate that Prince who would not abide by his Determination, and to put his Dominions under an * Interdict. Under the Pretence moreover of its being his Duty to redress Grievances and see Justice done throughout Christendom, Subjects were encouraged to ap-

* By this the Exercise of divine Service and the Administration of the Sacraments were forbid.

peal to him when they imagined themselves injured by their Sovereigns; and the latter were sometimes forbid to levy any Tax on Pain of Excommunication. By the Fear of this, which commonly declared their Dominions forfeited and absolved their Subjects from all Oaths of Allegiance, many crowned Heads were kept in Awe: And some who would not submit to the Pope's Usurpation were after seeing their Country laid waste by civil War actually deposed or assassinated. In order to support so monstrous a Power the Ignorant were deceived with forged Decretals: Upon which a new Canon Law was built. By this an unlimited Power was given to the Pope as universal Father over all Christians; and it was insisted that, although some of the Predecessors of *Gregory* had not exercised it, such a Power was always inherent in and inseparable from the See of *Rome*. Amongst other Instances of the Exercise of this unlimited Power, the Deposing of *Wamba* by the Bishops of *Spain* and that of *Lewis the Good* by the *French* Bishops were mentioned: And as the Deposing of Kings had never been expressly forbid by Canons, Councils or Decretals, it was by a strange kind of Logick inferred that it did extend so far. As some Princes had either upon Principles of Ambition or Superstition demeaned themselves so far as to beg of or accept from the Pope the Title of King, it was imagined that he had a Right to give and take away Crowns. It being moreover forbid to marry within the fourth Degree of Affinity and the seventh of Consanguinity Princes, who generally were within these Degrees, had frequent Need of Dispensations from the Pope: And he knew how to make his Advantage in every such Case. To add one thing more, as *Rome* was now become the Theatre of Business the greatest Genius's of all Nations resorted thither to study Politics; and as their Advancement in their own Courts depended in a great Measure upon the Pope's Recommendation they commonly adhered firmly to his Interest, and were sure of being backed by the Clergy. The Way thereto being sufficiently cleared by these and such like Arts and Accidents, Pope *Boniface VIII.* made no Scruple to let the World see, by shewing himself to the People at the Jubilee in the Year 1300 sometimes in the

Habit of an Emperor and sometimes in that of a Pope, that nothing short of Supremacy in civil as well as spiritual Matters would satisfy the See of *Rome*.

This intolerable Power of Popes was however often *The Authority* called in Question, and they were sometimes prevented *of the POPE* from exercising it. They did as it has been observed *declines*. entirely get the upper Hand of the Emperors; but when *Boniface VIII.* would have played the same Game in *France* he found himself mistaken. In order to satisfy the common People, who would have been scandalized thereat, *Philip the Handsome* declared that his severe Proceedings against this Pontiff were not against the Vicar of JESUS CHRIST, but against a wicked Fellow who had by unjust Means thrust himself into the Holy Chair: And he insisted upon the Necessity of calling a general Council to deliver the Church from his Oppressions. The Schisms which followed hurt the Pope's Authority still more. As the Cardinals did not always agree there was sometimes a double Election: Which not only shewed that the Holy Spirit had no Hand in choosing Popes: But the two Persons chosen after reciprocally abusing and excommunicating each other were for the most Part glad to implore the Aid of temporal Princes, whose Power had been before trampled upon.

About the Year 1130 *Innocent II.* and *Anaclete* were *Schisms in the* both chosen at the same Time. The first was indeed *Church*. more generally acknowledged; but the last was supported by the King of *Sicily* and the Duke of *Aquitaine*: And after his Death *Victor*, who accommodated Matters with and abdicated in Favour of *Innocent*, was elected by the Party of *Anaclete*. After the Death of *Adrian IV.* two Popes were again chosen *Alexander III.* and *Victor IV.* *France, England* and *Sicily*, joined with the former: The latter was supported by the Emperor and approved of by the Clergy of *Rome*. After the Death of *Victor* his Friends elected three others successively: But *Alexander* survived them all. All these Popes, who never ceased to revile and excommunicate each other, were forced to carry it very submissively to the Princes who protected them. Another Schism, and the greatest that ever happened, was occasioned by a double Election upon the Death of *Gregory IX.* During this which lasted

lasted near forty Years one Pope supported by *France, Scotland, Spain, Savoy and Naples*, held his Court at *Avignon*; the other, to whom all the rest of Christendom adhered, resided at *Rome*. As both Sides boasted of the Number of Saints which had by Revelations or Miracles declared their Approbation of any new Election, and nothing was to be seen but the reviling and excommunicating of each other by the two Competitors, some cool-headed People proposed in a general Council held at *Constance* for terminating this Affair the deposing of the two Rivals; and a new Pope was chosen. The last Schism in the Year 1433 arose because *Eugene IV.* deposed by the Council of *Basil* would not give Place to *Felix V.* appointed to succeed him. *Nicholas V.* being chosen after the Death of *Eugene* in the Year 1438, *Felix* for the sake of Peace and the advantageous Terms offered him desisted from his Pretensions.

*The Power of
ROME hurt by
the Removal
of the papal
Residence.*

By these Schisms Popes were exposed to Contempt, and as the Authority of General Councils was made Use of to bridle that of Popes it suffered much; but the removing of the papal Residence from *Rome* to *Avignon* by *Clement V.* gave the greatest Shock thereto. This, which was done at the Instance of *Philip the Handsome King of France*, being looked upon by him as the most proper Expedient to render the Excommunication of himself by *Boniface VIII.* ineffectual: And it was judged that as *Frenchmen* would generally be raised to the Cardinalship whilst the Pope resided in *France*, there would be no Likelihood of any Excommunication of a King of *France* for the future. The *French* at that Time thought this which lasted above seventy Years a vast Thing; because the Pope was all this Time very little more than their Tool: But it has been since confessed that it was a great Expence to their Court, and that it served only to introduce amongst them Simony, and a certain unnatural Vice which is not fit to be named. However this was it very much hurt the papal Power: For as this was in a great Measure founded upon an Excellency and particular Sanctity supposed to be conveyed to the See of *Rome* by *St. Peter*, it became a Doubt with many how these could be transferred to *Avignon*. As *Frenchmen* were besides more curious to pry

pry into, and forward to expose the Failings of Popes than *Italians*, their Reputation and consequently their Authority suffered by this Removal of their Residence. The Revenue of the Church suffered likewise thereby: For as the Factions of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* still continued, and every *Italian* State had been since the Imperial Power was ruined in *Italy* endeavouring to make itself as independent and powerful as possible, the Advantage of the Pope's Absence was taken by some to seize such Parts of the State of the Church as lay convenient for them. At the Persuasion of the *Florentines* many Cities banished the Legates of the Pope, and withdrawing their Submission from him were governed by petty Sovereigns of their own. Some Parts thereof being also granted by the Emperor *Lewis* the *Bavarian*, who claimed the whole as a Fief of the Empire, to such as sided with him in his War with the Pope the State of the Church was much lessened: And it cost many Years to reannex all that was lost in these confused Times to the Dominions of the Holy See.

The City of *Rome* being reduced to the Pope's Obedience *Boniface IX.* caused the Castle of *St. Angelo*, by which it has been since kept in Awe, to be built about the Year 1393: And great Part of the State of the Church came again under Subjection to the See of *Rome* during the Popedom of *Julius II.* Being ambitious of making him the greatest Prince in *Italy*, *Alexander VI.* put his natural Son *Cæsar Borgia* upon subduing those Princes who had made themselves Masters of any Part of the State of the Church; and promised to confirm his Conquests to himself and Descendants. By Force and Treachery this was in a great Measure effected; for he stuck at nothing, alledging that whatever he did must be right since he had his Father's Orders for it, who being under the Direction of the HOLY GHOST could not err. Upon the Failure of Money to pay his Troops it was agreed by the Pope and him to poison some of the richest Cardinals at an Entertainment; but the Servant having by Mistake given them the poisoned Liquor intended for the others *Alexander* died in a few Hours, and although *Borgia* did by the Help of sudorifick Medicines survive it his Constitution was much hurt.

As *Borgia* could not get a Pope favourable to his Project chosen it was at an End: And *Julius II.* who in a few Weeks succeeded *Pius III.* the immediate Successor of *Alexander* being his deadly Enemy, all he had conquered was taken from him and he was forced to save himself by Flight. In the Time of *Julius* all the rest that formerly belonged to the See of *Rome*, except the Dutchy of *Ferrara* which became subject to the Pope upon the Failure of the House of *Este* about the End of the sixteenth Century, was likewise restored thereto: And he had a great Hand in preventing the *French* from making themselves Masters of *Italy*.

LUTHER

gives a great
Blow to the
papal Power.

The papal Power was now not only reestablished but carried further than ever, all the western World except the *Waldenses* in *France* and a few *Hussites* in *Bohemia* having submitted to the Authority of *Rome*: When all of a sudden and from a most inconsiderable Accident an Opposition thereto arose, which ended in the Revolt of great Part of *Europe*; and the Pope, who was just before in the Meridian of his Power, did in a short Time lose a great Part thereof, and was in Danger of losing it all. We shall consider only how far human Means were therein concerned, for the Wisdom and Providence of God are rather in our Opinion to be adored with all Humility and Admiration than to be curiously pried into; nor can the Saying of *Tacitus* be ever more aptly applied than here: *Abditos Numinis Sensus exquirere illicitum, anceps, nec ideo Assequare*; in other Words, *It is unlawful to search into the secret Designs of God, and as these are inscrutable they ought not even to be guessed at.* *Leo X.* was of a courteous Disposition, very generous to Men of Learning and Integrity, and would if he had been tolerably well skilled in Divinity, or had shewn the least Regard for Piety, have passed for a pretty good Pope. Having by Acts of Liberality and Magnificence drained his Coffers he was advised by *Cardinal Pucci* to raise Money by selling Indulgences. These, by which the Dead as well as the Living were absolved, and the People were allowed to eat Flesh on Days of Abstinence and indulged in many other Things, were sent all over *Europe* in great Quantities: And a Price was fixed upon them. As all the Money raised by the Sale thereof in

Saxony

Saxony was granted to *Magdalen* Sister to the Pope, she in order to make the most thereof appointed *Archimbald* a Bishop by Habit and Title, but as well versed in the tricking Part of Trade as a *Genocse*, to manage for her. It had formerly been the Custom in Saxony for the *Augustines* to publish all Indulgences; but the Agents of *Archimbald*, who as they paid him large Sums for being employed were resolved to get what they could by it, suspecting that these being versed in the thing might over-reach them chose to make use of the *Dominicans*: Who for the Sake of recommending themselves to the Agents never ceased to preach up the vast Benefits of Indulgences. As the *Augustines* were disgusted at losing what had been very profitable to their Order, and all considerate People were scandalized at this monstrous Traffick, one of them named *Luther* determined to write against it. Having after mature Deliberation published ninety-five Positions concerning this Matter at *Wittemberg*, these were answered by *John Tezel* a *Dominican* at *Frankfort*. *Luther* defended his Propositions and *John* replied; but as the former besides having both Reason and Scripture of his Side was the more able Disputant, the *Dominican* appealed to the Authority of the Pope and the Church. This made it necessary for *Luther* to examine into the Foundation of the Pope's Authority, and in what State the Church then was. In the Course of this Examination great Errors and Abuses were discovered; the Tricks and scandalous Lives of Monks and Priests were brought to Light; and in order to secure to himself the Assistance of temporal Princes he took Care to explain the Nature and Extensiveness of civil Power, and to shew in what Manner it had been encroached upon by Churchmen. A very considerable Party was immediately formed in Favour of *Luther*: But in order to conceive how so great a Blow could be given to the See of *Rome* by a poor Friar, it will be proper to consider the Circumstances of the Times.

As it was not expected that he would fall off from the Pope, nor perhaps he did not think at first of so doing, many Divines, some Cardinals, and *George Duke of Saxony*, pleased with the Justice of his Cause and his Manner of defending it, sided with him; and the Emperor *Maximillian*

as it is reported said he ought to be protected, for that he might be very useful : Nor had he whilst he confined himself to the writing against the Abuse of Indulgences any Enemies, except those Monks whose Interest was at Stake. These did indeed raise a great Clamour against him : But their Malice unsupported by Argument encreased instead of lessening his Party. The Christian World was moreover at this Time in a miserable Condition. What was called Divinity was meer Chicanery or Sophistry, new and absurd Propositions being every Day advanced in the Schools ; and the Clergy of all Degrees had by lording it over Mens Consciences rendered themselves hated and despised. The turbulent Humour, Infidelity and Ambition, of the two last Popes were not forgot. Bishops were in the general without either Integrity or Learning ; and the inferior Clergy besides being grossly ignorant and most notoriously immoral were on the Account of their insatiable Avarice become intolerable.

ERASMUS
and other
learned Men
pave the Way
for the Reformation.

The Clergy had it is true been for a long Time in the general vicious and illiterate ; but as Learning began to revive in *Europe* these Things were now taken Notice of. Priests and Monks whose Actions would not bear the Light were highly incensed against the Restorers of Literature ; and having no Share with them in Argument did not scruple to accuse them of Heresy. Some Monks had not long before in a Dispute with *John Reuchlin* accused him of Heresy ; but the Matter ended in their Confusion, and gave the Learned *Ulrick van Hutten* a fine Handle to expose them in a Book called *Epistolæ obscurorum Virorum*. It ought likewise never to be forgot that the learned *Erasmus* ; by shewing the Absurdity and Usefulness of School Divinity ; by recommending the Study of the Bible and the Fathers ; by discovering the Errors and Abuses which had crept into the Church ; and by ridiculing the barbarous Ignorance of Monks and Priests ; had a great Hand in paving the Way for the Reformation. As the Disputes betwixt the Admirers and Decryers of Learning were carried on with great Warmth when *Luther's* Doctrines appeared in the World most of the former sided with him : And *Erasmus* who was universally allowed to be the greatest Divine of the Age espoused his Cause. He did indeed dislike his virulent Manner of Writing ; and he afterwards
in

in a Treatise *de Libero Arbitrio* started some Objections to *Luther's* Opinions: But besides its being obvious that *Erasmus* wrote this rather at the Sollicitation of others than of his own Inclination, the main Point was not affected by these Objections and they were likewise fully refuted by *Luther*.

Some are of Opinion that *Charles V.* connived at the spreading of *Luther's* Doctrines in *Germany*, hoping by the Means of the Division thereby occasioned to make himself absolute in the Empire; else he might as they say easily have suppressed them by putting *Luther* to Death when he had him in his Power at *Worms*. It is however far from being clear, that if *Luther* had been contrary to the safe Conduct promised murdered his Opinions would have died with him; And it would have been very imprudent in the Emperor to have thereby disoblinded the Elector of *Saxony*, whose Authority in *Germany* was very great, whilst he had a War upon his Hands both with the *Turks* and with *France*. He did afterwards under the Pretence of Religion attack the Protestants but his real Design was to enslave *Germany*, and he was successful against the League of *Smalkald*: Yet as he found it would be difficult to accomplish this Design, and he wanted the Assistance of all the *German* Princes against the *French* and *Turks* and to secure the *Imperial* Crown for his Son *Philip*, he thought proper to drop it. Nay further Pope *Paul III.* jealous of *Charles's* Power, and suspicious of his intending to reform the Court of *Rome*, encouraged *Francis I.* of *France* to prevent the entire Ruin of the Protestants in *Germany*; and prevailed upon this Prince to enter into an Alliance with the *Turks* against *Charles*.

It was also a great Mistake in *Leo* to decide in Favour of the Indulgence Merchants by a Bull in November 1518, since thereby all Hopes of an Accommodation were cut off: For it would have been much more politic in him to have enjoined Silence to both Parties, and to have contrived some Way to satisfy *Luther*. The Conduct of Cardinal *Cajetan* at *Augsburg* was equally imprudent. *Luther* offered to drop the Affair provided his Adversaries were forced to do the same; but nothing less than a Recantation would satisfy the Cardinal. Here-

upon as the Elector of *Saxony* was constantly pressed to give him up *Luther* was in Vindication of himself and Doctrine compelled to fall upon the Pope. It being now come to an open Rupture with the Pope himself *Luther* appealed to a general Council; the calling of which being upon various Pretences delayed the Cause of *Rome* became more and more suspected. About the same Time the Pope's Quarrel with *Henry VIII.* made Way for the Introduction of the Reformation in *England*: And the House of *Navarre* in Revenge for the Pope's having sided with *Ferdinand* the *Catholick* encouraged the Protestant Religion to the utmost of its Power in *France*. Besides all this many honest sensible Men even amongst the *Roman Catholics* were quite unconcerned at *Luther's* rough Treatment of the papal Authority; because they knew it well deserved to be so treated.

Reasons for
the Reforma-
tion's not being
carried far-
ther.

As every Thing seemed thus to co operate with the Decree of Heaven in spreading the Doctrine of *Luther*, and the Spiritual Monarchy of *Rome* was upon the Brink of Ruin, it is proper to enquire in the next Place why it was not quite overthrown? It ought to be remembered, that in every State where the Doctrine of *Luther* was embraced the supreme Power in Ecclesiastical Affairs devolved upon the civil Magistrate. As this was the Case it was not to be expected that all the other Protestant States should submit to the Direction of any one, and consequently the Protestants for want of being united under some one Head could not exert their Strength with so much Advantage against the Pope as he could his against them. It ought likewise to be considered, that as the Reformation was not the Effect of Deliberation but quite unexpected no regular Plan for the carrying of it on had been agreed upon; so that although *Luther* first gave the Alarm others instead of conforming precisely to his Doctrine valued themselves upon improving it. This necessarily produced Controversies, in which no Authority to determine betwixt them being allowed the contending Parties were very obstinate. Hence arose Schisms and Things were by Degrees carried so far, that instead of uniting against the common *Enemy* the Protestants not only weakned their own Cause, but furnished the

the Catholicks with an Opportunity of saying, that the *Hereticks* not being able to come to any Agreement concerning Matters of Faith were quite bewildered. As *Luther* moreover had inveighed severely against the dissolute Manners of the *Romish* Clergy, the latter were glad of the Opportunity to retort his own Arguments upon his Followers, when some of these under the Pretence of Gospel Liberty abandoned themselves to all Manner of Licentiousness. The Progress of the Reformation was likewise impeded by the Swarms of *Anabaptists* and other *Enthusiasts* which sprung up in and disturbed the Peace of *Germany*: For as these Disturbances happened soon after the Publication of *Luther's* Doctrine they were imputed to this by the *Catholicks*, and some Princes conceived an Aversion to it as productive of civil Confusion, which they looked upon as a greater Evil than any they could thereby be delivered from. It has been thought by some, that the Judgment given by the University of *Paris* against *Luther* was a great Hindrance to the spreading of his Doctrine. Imagining that the Members of this University would be glad of an Opportunity to affront the Pope, with whom they had lately had a Quarrel concerning the Investiture to Bishopricks, he submitted his Dispute with *Eckius* to their Decision: But he found himself mistaken; for they condemned his Opinions and in very harsh Terms. As the *Spanish* Court at that Time found it necessary for its own Interest to be well with the Holy See the Introduction of the Protestant Religion was not only prevented in *Spain*; but the *League* in *France* being powerfully supported by *Spain* *Henry IV.* was in order to maintain himself upon the *French* Throne forced to abjure it. The immoderate Zeal of *Zuinglius* and *Calvin*, who were too hasty in bringing about a Change in Religion, ought also to be reckoned amongst the principal Things which hurt the *Protestant* Cause. *Luther* wisely saw the Difficulty of weaning vulgar Minds from Things to which they had been long accustomed, and made very little Alteration in external Matters: But nothing less would serve these than divesting the Churches of all Ornaments and abolishing all Ceremonies; and they would have all Degrees as well as Habits of the Clergy laid aside. Religion being thus

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

all at once stripped of what was most striking to the common People, and looked upon by them to be of great Importance, they were quite incensed against those who had done this, and were of course more zealous in adhering to the Tenets of their Ancestors. The Hopes of seizing some Revenues of the Church did indeed induce divers Men to declare for Protestantism: But on the other Hand the Fear of losing Benefices kept many fast to the Interest of *Rome*. This was manifestly seen in *France*, where before the Reformation very little Regard was paid to the Pope's Authority; but when the Bishops apprehended Danger of losing their Bishopricks they shewed more Regard for the Pope, and under the Presence of its being the Cause of GOD prevailed upon the Populace to unite with them against the *Protestants*.

*The papal
Power is like-
ly to gain
Ground.*

Upon the whole the Pope has so recovered himself, that instead of the *Protestants* being able to hurt him he will for the Time to come in all likelihood gain Ground of them. Those Things which *Luther* upbraided the Church of *Rome* with are either laid aside, or in Pursuance of the Maxim, *Si non caste saltem caute*, they are concealed from the Eyes of the Vulgar. *Paul IV.* did it is true carry it haughtily towards *Spain*, and the same Thing was done by *Paul V.* to the Republick of *Venice*: But by the Interposition of wiser and cooler Heads these Differences were composed without coming to Extremities, and Popes have since been careful to behave civilly to Sovereigns. We do not at this Day see such debauched Popes as *Alexander VI.* and if they have the ambitious turbulent Humour of *Julius II.* care is taken to hide it. Ways are now found to raise Money without that vile Practice of selling Indulgences or without open Simony. The *Romish* Bishops do in the general preserve a grave decent Character, and some of them are eminent for Learning and Piety: Nor are the Priests and Monks chargeable as heretofore with barbarous Ignorance or flagrant Immoralities. As *Luther* and his Followers gained vastly upon the People by their excellent Sermons, and by Books of Devotion published in the Vulgar Tongue, the *Romish* Clergy copied after them; so that Books and Sermons equally learned and instructive are frequently seen in Catholick Countries. They are more-
over

over at this Time well versed in the Controversial Points, and have always a Dozen Distinctions ready to obviate any Objection. For Instance it seems very absurd that the Pope should grant Absolution for 20 or 30,000 Years to come: But they by the Distinctions of *intensive* and *extensive*, *Potentialiter* and *Actualiter*, amuse young Students, and make the common People believe some profound Mystery is couched under these Terms. Instead of that Ignorance and Hatred of Literature, which drew upon them the Resentment of all learned Men and gave *Luther* greatly the Advantage over them, the *Romish* Clergy at this Time and especially the *Jesuits* are remarkable for their Application to and Improvements in Science. The *Catholick* Religion is not propagated by Fire and Sword as heretofore; but the Protestants are cajoled with fair Words or tempted by large Promises. The Revenues of the *Romish* Church are so large that if any Man, although he has nothing to recommend him, goes over thereto he is sure of being provided for, and if he be a Man of Sense his Fortune is made. On the contrary if any Person renounces Popery and embraces the Protestant Religion, he must except he has a Fortune of his own or be a Man of extraordinary Parts expect nothing but Want. Lastly the Popish Interest has been greatly advanced by the Banishment of *Protestants* from many *Catholick* States.

Temporal Government is founded on the highest Reason as well as upon divine Institution; for without this *The POPE's Authority is not founded on Reason or Scripture.* Men would constantly be exposed to Rapine and Confusion: But it has never yet been proved, that the Pope's *Reason or Scripture.* Spiritual Monarchy is founded either on Reason or upon Scripture. As this therefore is an artificial Fabrick it must be supported by Arts; and the Views of Popes will always be different from those of Temporal Princes. It is the Business of Civil Magistrates to encourage Labour and Industry, that every Individual may not only support himself and Family decently, but also be able to spare something towards defraying the Expences necessary for preserving the Peace and Security of the Publick. Instead of encouraging these the Pope contrives to draw Money from the whole Christian World for the Support of his Grandeur and Power. It is a great

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

Expence to other Princes to keep up Guards and Garrisons for the Security of their Dominions : But the *Romish* Clergy, who may be well looked upon as his standing Army, so far from being chargeable to the Pope support themselves in Ease and Luxury and bring Money into his Coffers. Prudent Sovereigns do not judge it safe to extend their Dominions too far ; but it is for the Pope's Interest and not at all dangerous to him that his Jurisdiction be carried as far as possible. If the Pope's Partisans say his Authority is founded upon the positive Command of GOD this should be proved clearly from Scripture. If they say it is derived from *St. Peter*, it ought to be proved not only that such an Authority was vested in him, but that he was Bishop of *Rome*, exercised it there, and conveyed it down to his Successors, and that the Succession has not been interrupted. Instead of proving these Things the Popish Doctors decline meddling with them, and fill the Heads of their People with Things that do not concern the main Point. They talk of a long Succession of Popes, and of the Antiquity and Universality of the Church ; and lay great Stress on the Promise that the *Gates of Hell shall never prevail against it*. Fathers, Councils and Miracles, are also appealed to : And if any one is still dissatisfied, he is without so much as hearing his Reasons branded with the Name of Heretick and has good Luck if he escapes burning.

The papal Constitution is admirably contrived for answering the Purposes it was designed for.

As a *Democratical* or *Aristocratical* Form of Government is besides other Inconveniencies liable to Factions, it is impossible the Pope's Spiritual Power, the Foundation of which is so rotten, could have lasted long under either. Monarchy then is the only Form that suited it, and of the different Sorts of Monarchy the best to answer their Purpose has been fixed upon by Popes. The whole Art of Man could not have contrived a better : For all the Subtleties of the most refined Politicians are nothing to what is to be met with here. Monarchs have heretofore strengthened their Authority by giving out that they were descended from the Gods, or that their Government was founded by the express Command of the Gods ; and if Success attended them, which was looked upon as a Mark of Divine Favour, they were sometimes after

Death reckoned amongst the Gods: But the Pope calls himself the Lieutenant of JESUS CHRIST; arrogates to himself whilst living all Power in Heaven and Earth; and would have it believed that such as refuse to acknowledge his Authority cannot be saved. If these Points are once well settled the whole Business is done; for what is more proper to draw the Veneration of Men to a Person than the Notion that the Majesty of GOD resides in him? Or what stronger Motive can there be to the most absolute Submission than the Fear of Damnation? It has been in most Monarchies thought best to have the Crown hereditary; but this would not suit here: For as there would sometimes be a Minority it would not look so well to see the Vicar of GOD riding upon a Broom-stick, which he takes for a Hobby-horse, or to see the Supreme Director of *Christendom* going himself to School. It would too be difficult for a young Prince to exercise the Functions of a Pope with becoming Gravity; nor can it be supposed that a Succession of Popes of the same Family should either like or be fit for the Office. In this Monarchy the Chief Ministers of a Pope have hopes of succeeding in their Turn, and therefore are not under the same Temptation to invade their Master's Authority: And hence it is that the Papal is not equally liable with hereditary Monarchies to Revolutions. In an hereditary Monarchy the reigning Family sometimes becomes extinct; and when this happens the Disputes concerning the Right of Succession do frequently end in the Ruin of the Monarchy. As a Train of Ladies living in great Splendor would not suit with the Gravity of the Court of *Rome* it is not proper for Popes to marry: And the People are from the Injunction of Celibacy they are under taught to believe, that being wholly devoted to spiritual Things worldly Pleasures never distract them. As a Man is moreover under a strong Temptation to prefer the Aggrandisement of his own Family to the publick Good, there would if Celibacy was not enjoined be Danger of the Triple Crown's becoming hereditary: And the Attempts of the Popes *Alexander VI.* and *Paul III.* in favour of their natural Sons shew plainly the Wisdom of this Injunction.

*Rules observed
in choosing
a Pope.*

The Holy See having heretofore suffered greatly by Schisms, it is now to prevent the disobliging of many Cardinals a Rule that no Person can be Pope without having the Votes of two thirds of the Conclave. The Election always falls upon an *Italian*, nor is this to be wondered at the Majority of the Cardinals being *Italians*. As it greatly concerns the See of *Rome* to carry it with an even Hand to *France* and *Spain* it would be dangerous to have a Pope of either of these Nations. Besides that such a one may be supposed from his long Experience in the World to be well versed in Politicks an old Pope is commonly chosen, that there may be a Prospect of his making Room in a short Time for somebody else. It would too be of bad Consequence to fix upon a young Man; for during a long Papacy the Constitution might be injured, or at least all the profitable Employments and Benefices would be swallowed up by one family. To prevent the latter Mischief care is always taken that a new Pope shall not be at all related to his Predecessor. Although as it has been observed it would be imprudent to choose a Person too much attached to the Interest either of *France* or *Spain*: Yet lest he should be disagreeable to either of these Nations each gives in a List of those Cardinals it would have excluded from the papal Dignity. Upon the whole the Election often falls upon one who did not in the least expect it; for as the Cardinals are kept locked up, that the World may believe no undue Influence is made use of, untill somebody is fixed upon they are glad at any Rate to put an End to the Contests and Cabals which sometimes reign in the Conclave. The Pope does not like other Sovereigns on his entering upon the Government bind himself to any Terms; and indeed it would be absurd for him who is said to be guided by the HOLY GHOST to be laid under any Restrictions.

Of Cardinals.

Although the College of Cardinals is the Pope's standing Council they are seldom consulted; for he usually pursues his own Inclination or is governed entirely by some Nephew. The chief Privileges of the Cardinals are their exclusive Right to choose a Pope; and that he must be one of their Body. The Number of Cardinals ought to be Seventy-two: But the Sacred College is seldom

dom full. The Nomination to the Cardinalship is absolutely in the Pope's Power; yet great Regard is paid to the Recommendation of *France, Spain* and other States. Some *Romish* Bigots have dared to assert that a Cardinal's Cap is equal in Dignity to a Crown: And to this Day the Cardinals do claim Precedence of the Electoral Princes of *Germany*. They used to be distinguished by the Title of Excellence: But this Title being grown very common in *Italy* it was by Order of *Urban VIII.* changed for the Title of Eminence. As this last had been before confined to Sovereigns the *Italian* Princes, who look upon themselves to be greater than Cardinals, and it is plain they are so because one of these will at any Time renounce the Purple for the Sake of succeeding to the smallest Principality, thereupon took and have since used the Title of Highness.

Since the Time of *Sixtus IV.* who died about the POPES com- Year 1471, Popes have made it their Study to advance *monly make* and enrich their Relations: And there are some remark- *their Families.* able Instances of their succeeding in this. *Sixtus V.* did not bring less than 3,000,000 Ducats into his Family in about five Years. *Gregory XV.* who enjoyed the Poppedom but twenty seven Months, heaped up above 3,000,000 Crowns: And it has been said that at the Death of *Urban VIII.* the House of *Barberini* were in Possession of two hundred and twenty-seven Offices or Benefices, each of which was worth from three to ten thousand Crowns; so that the Riches of this single Family could not be less than 30,000,000 Crowns. This may at first Sight be thought scandalous: But if it be considered that the Pope's Revenue is vastly larger than his ordinary Expence, what can he do better with the Surplus and the many rich Benefices in his Gift than dispose of them amongst his own Relations?

A Custom was introduced by Pope *Urban VIII.* of *Of the Cardi-* making one of the Pope's Nephews Prime Minister *nal PATRON.* with the Title of Cardinal Patron. Amongst other Reasons assigned for this it is said, that it is natural for a Pope to prefer his own Nephew to a Stranger: And that he is thereby better secured from Plots against his Life. It is certain that a Pope is more exposed to these than an hereditary Prince whose Family is powerful enough to re-

revenge his Death; nor can there be a stronger Proof how fearful the Pope is of being poisoned, than that when he receives the Sacrament the Person who administers it first tastes both the Bread and Wine. It is likewise pretended to be of Advantage to the Publick that the Administration of Affairs should be in the Hands of a Nephew: Because although he will enrich himself he will take care that other Officers shall not, since he knows the Odium thereof will fall upon himself; and it is certainly not so bad for the Publick to be plundered by one as by several. Besides as it is a sort of settled Thing for a Nephew to manage, he is not so apt to be rapacious as the Ministers are in other States where Changes are frequent; for as such know their Time may be short they will enrich themselves as fast as possible, that they may the more willingly give Way to another Set of hungry Ministers. A Nephew can likewise being so nearly related deal more freely with the Pope: And as he must be supposed to be a cordial Friend to the Pope the Interest of the latter is much more likely to be pursued by a Nephew than by a Cardinal; for most of the Cardinals receive Pensions or are some other Way influenced by foreign Princes.

The Subjects of this Monarchy. The Subjects of this Monarchy may be divided into Clergy and Laity. The former may be considered as a standing Army kept up to support the Pope in his vast Conquests. The latter are no better than Slaves; on whom large Contributions are raised for the Support of the former. The Clergy are not allowed to marry. The Pretence for this is that worldly Cares would prevent a faithful Discharge of their Duty: But the true Reason perhaps is, that being free from the Ties of paternal or conjugal Affection they may on all Occasions be ready to promote the Interest of the Church and obey implicitly the Orders of the Pope. As a Wife and Children which would perhaps be thereby exposed to the Resentment of an enraged Prince are commonly dear to a Man, a Clergyman would if married be cautious of flying in his Sovereign's Face: But a single Man can more easily get out of his Sovereign's Way. Besides if the People apprehended what they give was for the Maintenance of Clergymen's Family they would be a little

little sparing; whereas under the Notion that all this is applied to the Service of the Church avaritious Churchmen have now a fine Opportunity of heaping up Riches. Upon the whole this Injunction of Celibacy falls in with the grand Object of rendering the Clergy independent of the civil Power which Popes have always had in View: But some Remedy for Incontinence is greatly wanted amongst them. The Clergy whose Number, if *Paul IV.* was not mistaken when he boasted of having 288,000 Parishes and 44,000 Monasteries under his Jurisdiction, is prodigious may be divided into the secular and regular Clergy. The latter which consists of Monks of all sorts and Jesuits, are from their being most devoted to him to be esteemed the Pope's Body Guards. The greater Part of these live in Ease and Plenty; the rest to make Amends for their faring hard are buoyed up with the Hopes of being greatly rewarded hereafter for their extraordinary Sanctity.

As a blind Submission of the Laity to the Clergy is absolutely necessary to support this spiritual Monarchy the former are forbid to read the holy Scripture: For if this was well understood it would be obvious that no one is authorized to lord it over another's Conscience; and by keeping it from the Laity the Clergy have an Opportunity of mixing something with every Doctrine they teach that may promote the Interest or Power of the Pope or themselves. In order to make Way for Tradition the HOLY SCRIPTURE is represented as imperfect; and whatever can serve the Cause of *Rome* is imposed upon the poor deluded People under this Name. The Doctrine of Remission of Sins annexed in the Gospel to Repentance is clear, full and comfortable; and happy had it been for Mankind that Priests had never puzzled it. In the *Romish* Church Sins are distinguished into Venial and Mortal; and to make the Determination of Churchmen necessary there are many reserved Cases. Books of Casuistry enough to freight large Fleets have been written; and it would be well for the Cause of Morality if they were all at the bottom of the Ocean: For by entering too minutely into the Circumstances of some Crimes that ought not to be mentioned some Things are put into the Heads of young People which they would
other-

otherwise never think of. Amongst other Terms of Absolution Confession by which the Clergy learn all the Secrets of the Laity is made indispensably necessary. By this the latter are kept in Awe and the former have an Opportunity of carrying on their own Schemes: For notwithstanding the solemn Obligation the Clergy are under not to reveal a Confession every Thing gives Way to their Interest or Ambition. The *Romish* Church gains a great deal by a Power its Priests exercise of ordering Satisfaction for Sins: For although Pilgrimages, Prayers, Fasts and Whippings, are sometimes enjoined, any or all of these are to be got over by giving a round Sum to some Church, Convent or the Poor. That nothing may go beside the Clergy the *Mendicants* called *Minimos Fratrum* are reckoned amongst the Poor; and by making the Laity believe *St. Matthew* means these when he speaks of *Minimos Fratrum* in his 25th Chapter they are saddled with the Expence of Maintaining above 100,000 idle sturdy Fellows. Good Works certainly recommend to the Favour of God: But as in their List of Good Works Liberality to the Church and Submission to the Pope and themselves stand first the Design of *Romish* Priests in ascribing so much thereto is easily seen through. It is taught amongst the Papists that Monks can merit Heaven for themselves and have many Good Works to spare for the Laity. These called Works of Supererogation are sold at an extravagant Price to the Laity; and as the Cheat can never be made apparent on this Side the Grave silly Souls continue to be gulled and the Clergy get Money. In order to find Employment for Priests, who take Care to be well paid for all they do, the Number of Festivals and Processions is as much as possible encreased: Nay with a View to the same the Sacraments are multiplied to seven, and a Custom is introduced of saying Mass both for the Living and the Dead. By this large Sums of Money are raised: For nothing of Importance is engaged in without Mass being first sung for Success; nor does any Person of Fortune die without ordering a good Store of Masses to be celebrated for the Deliverance of his Soul out of Purgatory. Notwithstanding it is evident both from the holy Scripture and the Practice of the primitive Church that the Laity ought in receiving the Sacrament to partake of the

the Cup; yet that a Notion may prevail of the Clergy's having some superior Excellence in them the Cup is by the *Romish* Church denied to the Laity; and which makes the Thing more monstrous some unconsecrated Wine in a Chalice, which is called the Chalice of rining, is given to the Laity, just as if some Impurity left in their Mouths by the Bread was to be washed down. By making Marriage a Sacrament a Multitude of Causes are brought into Spiritual Courts; for the Succession to Crowns as well as to private Estates frequently depends thereupon. This obliged *Mary* Queen of *England* to endeavour at the Restoration of Popery; for without the Pope's Dispensation she had been a Bastard: And *Philip* III. of *Spain* was without Doubt more firmly attached to the Interest of *Rome*; because his Father had by a Dispensation from thence married his own Sister's Daughter. Persons in divers Degrees both of Consanguinity and Affinity are prohibited from marrying on purpose to encrease the Number of Dispensations; upon which Care is taken to fix a high Price. The Administration of Extreme Unction gives the Clergy an Opportunity, and it is too often made use of, of persuading dying Men, who are sometimes not perfectly sensible and for the most Part indifferent about worldly Goods, to make large Bequests to the Church at the Expence of their near and perhaps poor Relations. The Veneration for Relicks, which prevails in the *Romish* Church, besides being advantageous puts it into the Pope's Power to make a Man who has done something considerable for his Service a Present of a Piece of Bone instead of a Purse of Gold; and such is the Power of Superstition the Person thinks himself well rewarded. Adoration of Saints serves for a Pretence to encrease the Number of Churches as well as Festivals, and consequently to employ and feed more Churchmen. The Power assumed by the Pope of Canonization makes Persons of ambitious and credulous Dispositions stick at nothing that may advance his Interest or Authority; for what more alluring Bait could have been thrown out to such than the Notion of being raised to Dignities and Offices in Heaven? Mention might here be made of fictitious Miracles, Apparitions, Exorcisms and other Tricks, by which Money is drawn from the Laity; but enough has been said on this Subject.

*Learning is
prostituted to
the Support of
the POPE's
Authority.*

As the Universities in Catholick Countries are under the Pope's Direction it is easy to conceive that none but his Creatures are advanced to Professorships. The Consequence is that those who teach Divinity, Civil Law, or even Philosophy, instead of letting young Students into the Truth of Things make it their Business to amuse or confound ingenious Minds with unmeaning Terms or trifling Distinctions, lest they should discover by examining fairly the rotten Foundation of the papal Power. The Divinity of the *Romish* Schools consists of a Heap of frivolous puzzling Questions invented by *Peter Lombard*, *Thomas Aquinas*, *Scotus* and such like Pedants: And what is called Philosophy is a Heap of idle Chimeras. The *Catholick* Universities were not only overrun with such solemn Nonsense and vain Speculations in the dark Times of Ignorance; but as much as possible of these is retained in this enlightned Age. Morality in particular is perplexed with many unintelligible or double meaning Distinctions, on Purpose that the common People being bewildered may give up their Consciences to the Direction of Confessors and Casuists. As the Revival however of Learning was a principal Cause of the Reformation it became necessary to be more artful in these Things; and the Instruction of Youth in private Schools as well as Universities has been since committed to the Jesuits. These being bound by a more strict Vow to support the Pope's Power all imaginable Care is taken that nothing destructive thereto be instilled into their Pupils: On the Contrary the Impression of Veneration for the Pope is so deeply made on their tender Minds that it is scarce ever to be effaced by the strongest Reasons that can be offered. The Jesuits by thus engrossing the Care of Youth have not only acquired great Riches: But as they have thereby an Opportunity of knowing the Circumstances and Capacities of their Disciples they prevail on many who are remarkable for Wealth or Understanding to enter into their Order; and some who do not choose to enter thereinto frequently promote its Interest when they come into the World. They do indeed boast of the good Rules observed in their Society, and pique themselves on their Method of teaching the *Latin* Tongue; but it is well known that their Scholars

except

except such as are intended for their own Order are kept a good deal in Ignorance. Upon the whole however it must be allowed that the Jesuits are more learned, obliging and polite, than the other Orders. By these Qualities they have insinuated themselves as Confessors into most Courts, and they have played their Cards so cunningly that the Affairs of many Princes, in the Management of which they never forget the Popes and their own Interest, are got entirely into their Hands. Amongst other Instances of prostituting Learning to the Cause of Priestcraft the Power of licensing Books, which is exercised by the Pope or his Deputies, ought not to be passed over. By Virtue of this not only all Books which the Clergy dislike are prevented from seeing the Light, but when the Works of any Author are reprinted all Passages prejudicial to their Schemes are left out, and others which may be serviceable thereto are frequently inserted: Nay if any thing is overlooked in one Edition it is marked in an Index* kept for this Purpose to be left out in the next. As the Books wrote in Defence of the Protestant Religion are not allowed to be read but by Persons thoroughly in the Interest of *Rome*, these may misrepresent to the common People the Doctrines of Protestants as much as they please: It being impossible for the latter to vindicate themselves to such as are not allowed to read their Defence. Although this be the Truth of the Case, the Defenders of the *Romish* Doctrines have the Assurance after reviling the Protestant Doctrines to challenge the Protestants to wipe off their Aspersions: And the deluded People instead of seeing through this Trick are persuaded to believe that the Protestants cannot do this, and consequently their Aversion to Protestantism is encreased. Accounts of Miracles wrought in distant Countries and of surprizing Things done by Martyrs are likewise frequently published; and as nobody dares to Question the Truth thereof these are believed and wondered at by the Vulgar.

If all the above Methods are found insufficient *More violent* more violent ones are used to support the Pope's Power. *Methods are* As Excommunications by Virtue of which Sovereigns *used upon Oc-* have formerly been deposed and whole Kingdoms laid *casion.*

* Called Expurgatorius.

under Interdicts are now not much regarded, except by some few petty *Italian* Princes, a Tribunal known by the Names of the *Holy Office* and the *Holy Inquisition* has been erected in some Countries for the Trial of such as are in the least suspected of Heresies. Disobedience to the Pope and his injunctions being reckoned amongst the worst of these it is no Wonder the People are thereby kept in Awe; for the Proceedings in this Court are carried on so rigorously, that if a Man has the Misfortune to be prosecuted therein he is sure to be a great Sufferer although he should be able to make out his Innocence ever so clearly.

Reasons for the Continuance of sensible Men in the Catholick Religion.

By the Artifices, pious Frauds and Severities which have been mentioned, and by other Arts, the Vulgar are so deluded or frightened as to be kept under Obedience to the Pope's spiritual Power: But Men of Sense cannot but see through all these; and were they not restrained by private Reasons they would without Doubt endeavour to free themselves and others therefrom. It is probable that the Danger of exchanging an easy affluent Fortune for Distress and Poverty, which they would in all probability be immediately exposed to, prevents some sensible Men from going over to the Protestants. Others may think that the believing of the Doctrines of JESUS CHRIST and living up as much as they can to his Precepts will entitle them to the Favour of GOD. As to the rest they judge it more prudent to conform externally to many Things, although these are the Inventions of Priests, than to disturb weak Minds who always look upon such Things to be of the greatest Importance with their private Opinions: Nor do they think it of much Consequence to undeceive the Vulgar, because they well know that no Religion without a Mixture of Mystery and Extravagancy would please them. Others shocked at what has been by Churchmen added to Christianity do without taking the Pains to examine into the Simplicity, Purity and Excellency, thereof conclude, that such a Religion as it is represented cannot be from GOD: And thinking it enough to comply so far therewith as to prevent temporal Inconveniencies they are in their Hearts downright Deists.

Upon

Upon the whole the Catholick Religion seems to be *Many States* firmly established in the Countries where it at this *have an Interest in maintaining the* Time prevails, and it would be dangerous for any Sovereign to attempt the rejecting thereof: For the Clergy *POPE'S Authority.* would move Heaven and Earth against him; and they would perhaps if it became necessary at last find such a Villain as *James Clement* or *Ravillac* to do his Business. It is besides for the Interest of many States to support the Catholick Religion; nor could they expect any thing less than a civil War if they were to attempt any Change therein. As none but *Italians* are advanced to the Popedom there is scarce an *Italian* Family of any Note which has not at some Time tasted the Sweet of Church Revenues: And as all the *Italian* States derive some Advantage from *Italy's* being the Seat of papal Power, it is not to be expected that any one of these should desire to see it ruined. The Bishopricks and other rich Benefices in *Poland* being for the most part in the Hands of the Nobility, who have the principal Management of State Affairs, there is no Likelihood of the Pope's losing his Authority there. If the Numerousness of Ecclesiasticks in *Portugal* together with their being sure of Support from *Spain* in case any Change in Religion was attempted be considered, it is not at all surprizing that the *Portuguese* should bear as they have lately done the Pope's ill Treatment in the Affair of Presenting to Benefices. As temporal Power is annexed to many Bishopricks and other Benefices in *Germany* all who possess or are in Expectation of any of these will, if they prefer being powerful Princes to the being poor Preachers, adhere to the Catholick Religion: And if any Ecclesiastical *German* Prince was so disinterested as to desire the Introduction of the Protestant Religion into his Dominions, the ill Success and fatal Consequences which followed the Attempts of two Electors of *Cologne* to introduce this are enough to deter him from attempting it. What has induced some secular *German* Princes to reunite themselves to the *Romish* Communion is well known; and it is not likely, since all of these who are powerful entertain Hopes of getting the Imperial Dignity into their Family, that any of them will leave this Communion: For as *Charles V.* neglected the fair Opportunity which offered of establishing the Protestant Religion

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

in the Empire no one of his Successors had he been ever so willing could since have done this. As the Case stands at present the Ecclesiastical *German* Princes commonly side with the Emperor that they may have his Protection against the Secular ones who are more powerful: But if he was to renounce the Catholick Religion all Churchmen would be against him; the Pope would stick at nothing to ruin him; and the *French* King would perhaps take the Advantage of the Confusion which must ensue to obtain the Imperial Dignity. The *Spaniards* besides being great Bigots to the *Romish* Religion are concerned to maintain the Pope's Authority; because it is of great Use to them in preserving their Dominions in *Italy*. *France* seems to be less interested than any other Catholick State in supporting the Pope's spiritual Power; nor has the *Gallican Church* ever submitted absolutely thereto. The Parliament of *Paris* does likewise guard against all Encroachments of the Pope upon its Liberties; and many Positions advanced by the Creatures of *Rome* have been rejected by the Doctors of the *Sorbonne*. As soon as a Nuncio from the Pope enters the *French* Territories the Cross which he before carried upright is reversed until he has Leave from the King to exercise his Function; and in order to obtain this he must promise in writing not to act in any other Manner nor any longer in the Office of Nuncio than the King pleases. He is obliged to make use of a *French* Secretary; and at his Departure to leave an Account of his Negotiations, which are looked upon to be *ipso facto* void except all these and some other Formalities have been complied with. Hence the *French* take Occasion to say that the Commission of a Nuncio which he receives partly from their King lasts only during his Pleasure: And the Custom still kept up of lowering the Cross whenever the King is present implies that the Nuncio's Authority is subordinate to that of the King. It has been said that in the Time of *Richelieu's* Administration it was under Deliberation whether *France* should be erected into an independent Patriarchate? But it does not seem likely that if this Project had been carried into Execution it would have done the Nation any Service; for the Clergy jealous that the next Step would have been to seize some of their Revenues would never have been quiet. It seems
upon

upon the whole to be plain, that if any King of *France* should attempt to free himself from the Pope's Dominion he would be perpetually disturbed by Insurrections at home and Attacks from the neighbouring Catholick Powers; and if he should succeed would thereby lose all Hopes of uniting the Imperial Dignity to the *French* Crown.

The Pope would without doubt be glad that the States *Of the POPE's* which have revolted were reduced to his Obedience; yet *Interest with* he had rather these should continue as they are than that *Regard to* his own Authority should be endangered by any Catho-^{PROTES-}lick Power's raising itself too much on their Ruin. For ^{TANTS.} this Reason *Paul III.* fearing the Success of *Charles V.* against the Protestants might make him absolute in *Germany* recalled the Troops he had lent him: And if the Expedition of *Philip II.* against *England* had succeeded *Sixtus V.* would have had Cause to repent of the Share he had had therein. During the War in the *Valtelline* *Gregory XV.* sided with the *Grisons* notwithstanding their being Protestants against the *Spaniards*: Nor was *Urban VIII.* sorry to see the Power of the House of *Austria* curbed by *Gustavus Adolphus*, and especially as the Emperor had shewn in the Affair of *Mantua* that he had no great Regard for the Catholick Interest. Not many Years ago the Court of *Rome* saw with concern the Success of the *French* against the *Dutch*; and was under great Uneasiness lest *Holland* should be quite subdued. Artifice seems then to be the only Way consistent with the Pope's Interest of reuniting Protestants to the *Romish* Communion, and this is practised by the Pope and his Emissaries in various Ways. In order to bring them over to the *Romish* Religion Protestant Princes are much caressed, and they are often prevailed upon to marry Catholick Ladies. Younger Brothers of illustrious Families are sometimes tempted by rich Benefices to renounce the Protestant Religion: And instead of entering into Controversies with the Protestant Divines great Pains are taken by the *Romish* Clergy to keep up those which the Protestants have with each other. By these and other Arts the Catholicks have of late Years gained great Advantages over the Protestants; and except the latter grow wiser they will in all Probability continue to gain Ground upon them.

A Reconciliation betwixt PAPISTS and PROTESTANTS is scarce to be hoped for.

From what has been said it is easy to see that no Reconciliation betwixt Papists and Protestants is likely to be brought about; for the Difference is not only concerning Matters of Faith, but as the Catholicks want to regain the Church Revenues which are in the Possession of the Protestants their Interests are diametrically opposite. The Unwillingness of Protestant States to part with the supreme Power in Ecclesiastical Affairs, which is now looked upon by them as an essential Part of Sovereignty, would be another grand Obstacle; and the Pope could never give this up, for it would be giving up his whole Cause. If moreover the Protestants were disposed to give Way in some Things for the sake of Peace the Pope could not give Way in any Thing; for if he should allow himself to be in the Wrong in a single Point his Infallibility which is the very Foundation of papal Power would fall to the Ground. On the contrary if Protestants should once admit his Infallibility they must of course believe implicitly whatever he is pleased to advance. Upon the whole there is no Prospect of an Accommodation betwixt the Catholicks and the Protestants; and if it could be supposed that the Laity amongst the latter should be for one, the Clergy who would not in that Case know how to dispose of their Wives and Children would certainly be against it. However good therefore the Designs of such as have proposed any of these may have been all Schemes of Reconciliation betwixt the Catholicks and Protestants are chimerical: And the former who well know this laugh in their Sleeves at the serious Endeavours of some to carry any of them into Execution. This Notion of bringing about such a Reconciliation does besides hurt the Protestant Cause; because some, who do not well understand where the Difference lies, hearing their Divines talk of a Reconciliation are apt to think it is but small, and being once grown cool thereto they are ready to embrace the first advantageous Terms of renouncing Protestantism: For as neither a Fortress nor a Woman can long hold out after a Parly is once begun so if a Man is once staggered in an Opinion he soon gives it up.

Considerations upon the Strength of PAPISTS and PROTESTANTS.

In order to judge whether the Pope and his Adherents are able to reduce Protestants to Obedience to the See of Rome by Force, the Strength of each Party must be considered. *Italy, Spain, Portugal, the greatest Part of France, Poland,*

land, Hungary and some of the *Swiss Cantons* are of the Pope's Party; and according to the best Calculation above Two-thirds of the *Germans* are Papists. There are also many Papists in *Holland*; and *Great Britain* is not without them. On the Protestant Side can only be reckoned *Great-Britain*, *Sweden*, *Denmark*, *Holland*, Part of *Switzerland* and Part of *Germany*; for the Protestants in *France* are disarmed; those in *Poland* are dispersed; those in *Prussia* and *Courland* are but just able to support themselves in the Exercise of their Religion; and those in *Hungary* and *Transylvania* are not able to give any Assistance to the Protestant Party. Besides this evident Superiority in Number the Catholics are united under one Head and do in outward Appearance at least agree in Matters of Faith; but the Protestants are very much divided in their Opinions. Not to mention the Anabaptists and many other small Sects their main Body is divided into two almost equal Parties *Lutherans* and *Calvinists*; many of whom have as great an Aversion to each other as they have to the Catholics. The Form thereof being in all Protestant States regulated by the civil Magistrate Church Government is in most of these different: Nor are the Protestant Clergy so zealous as the *Ramish* in propagating their Religion. A great many of the former make no other Use of their Benefices than to live easily upon them; whereas the *Monks* and *Jesuits* gain great Applause by their Missions to the *East* and *West-Indies*; which although the Method of their Missionaries in making Converts is liable to Objections are in the main laudable. Besides all this the Jealousy which reigns betwixt some of the most considerable Protestant States, as betwixt *Sweden* and *Denmark* and *Great-Britain* and *Holland*, will for ever prevent their joining heartily against the Catholics. The Protestants in *Germany* are indeed very numerous; but being subject to different Princes whose Views are often different and sometimes contrary their Strength is inconsiderable. Twice within the same Century they were brought into such Distress by the Emperors that had not *France* and *Sweden* interposed an End must have been put to their Religion. For some Time indeed a Notion has prevailed that the *German* Protestants are able to support themselves, and that the Elector of *Brandenburg* is the properest Person to be trusted

Of the P O P E's Spiritual Monarchy.

with the Direction of their Affairs; and the Houses of *Brandenburg* and *Lunenburg* avail themselves of this Notion to justify their keeping what was granted to *Sweden* as a Recompence for having been so instrumental in preserving the Liberty and Religion of the Protestants in *Germany*. Whether this Notion is well founded Time only can determine; but the ceding of some Provinces in *Pomerania* to *Sweden* was once thought a masterly Stroke in Politicks: For that thereby the Assistance of a powerful Protestant Kingdom was effectually secured against the Enterprizes of ambitious Emperors. It is certain that no Dependence is to be had upon Treaties; and he who imagines that any Emperor would not be glad of ruining the Protestant Interest and making himself absolute in *Germany* must be quite unacquainted with the History of past Times. Notwithstanding all these Inconveniencies the Protestant Religion is in no great Danger from Force; for although they are of the same Religion it is not to be supposed that the other Catholick Powers would sit still and see any one of themselves aggrandize itself by subduing a Protestant State: Because as the Balance of Power would be thereby endangered it would be for their Interest to prevent it.

*The best Way
to preserve
the PROTESTANT Reli-
gion.*

If this be the Truth of the Case that the Protestant Religion is secure against open Force great Care should be taken in every State to prevent its being ruined secretly. The preventing of this does not depend upon such Arts as are made use of to support Popery but upon the following very simple and plain Means. Schools should be filled with Men well qualified to instruct young Persons in the Fundamentals of the Protestant Religion. The Clergy should watch constantly and warn their Hearers against the Designs of *Romish* Priests; and as Example is more prevalent than Precept they ought to be exemplary in their Lives. The Practice of Morality, to which the Peace, Order and Prosperity of every Nation are in a great Measure owing, should not only be inculcated but enforced by Rewards and Punishments: And in order to make the Observation of these general it is of vast Consequence for Persons eminent by Rank or Station to convince the lower sort of People that they are themselves influenced by the great Precepts of Christianity.

It is undoubtedly true that a Reconciliation of the different Sects of Protestants, and especially of the *Lutherans* and *Calvinists*, would greatly strengthen the Protestant Cause; and some think this might be brought about: But it will appear to any one who understands well the Passions and Prejudices of Mankind and has read the Writings of both Sects impartially to be almost impossible. Others have thought that a System of such Articles as are absolutely necessary to Salvation might be agreed upon by the two Sects; and that each might be left at Liberty as to Matters of lesser Consequence. No good Judgment can be formed of the Success of this Expedient until such a System composed with the utmost Art and Caution be offered to the Publick: But in my Opinion as there would be Danger of reviving ancient Disputes and of creating new ones it is better to leave this Matter to the Providence of GOD. In the mean time it greatly concerns the different Sects of Protestants to wave all private Differences and unite in preserving each other: For although one of these may be sometimes cajoled in order to play it off against the rest it is certainly for the Interest of *Rome* to ruin them all,

C H A P. VI.

Of NAPLES and SICILY.

*Ancient State
of NAPLES
and SICILY.*

AS *Naples* and *Sicily* are at this Day and have frequently been subject to the same Sovereign, and their History is consequently much interwoven, it is best to treat of them conjunctly. Before the Establishment of the *Roman Empire* in *Italy* that Part of it at this Time called *Naples* consisted of many independant Towns; most of which were inhabited by *Grecian Colonies*. These were by Degrees all subdued by the *Romans*: And the *Carthaginians*, who had made some Settlements there, being afterwards driven from *Sicily* this Island was also subdued and became a *Roman Province*. The *Roman Empire*, at first weakened by being divided into an Eastern and Western Empire, gradually declined so much in Power that at length *Italy* became an easy Conquest to the barbarous Nations.

*The SARA-
CENS invade
SICILY, 672.*

In the Year 672 the *Saracens* invaded *Sicily*. They could not at this Time long maintain themselves there: But by the Help of *Sardinia* and *Corfica*, which afterwards fell into their Hands, they about the Year 828 renewed their Attempts upon this Island and made themselves Masters of all of it except *Messina*. On settling the Boundaries of the two *Roman Empires* by *Charlemain* and *Nicephorus* the northern Part of *Italy*, except *Rome* and some Territories thereunto adjoining which were ceded to the Pope, was annexed to the Western; and the rest thereof was annexed to the eastern Empire. The Distance of the two Emperors from *Italy* together with the Difficulties they were perplexed with, one to keep himself upon the Throne the other to extend his Conquests in *Germany*, gave the *Lombards* an Opportunity of encroaching upon their Neighbours. By their Incurfions and the Ravages from Time to Time

com-

committed by the *Saracens Italy* was thrown into great Confusion.

This was the State of Things when the *Normans* The NOR- established themselves in the southern Part of *Italy* about MANS settle in the Year of CHRIST 1002; and laid the Foundation of ITALY, the Kingdom of *Naples*. As it was the Superstition of those 1002. Times to visit the *Holy Land* Pilgrims for their greater Security usually went in large Bodies. Some *Normans* a People remarkably infested with this Superstition being on their Return from *Palestine* they were invited to stay and refresh themselves for some Time at *Salernum* by *Guimare* the reigning Prince. Whilst they were there the *Saracens* came to demand an annual Tribute. The necessary Orders for the levying of this were issued: But as the Infidels continued in the mean Time with great Security in their Camp upon the Coast the *Normans* a warlike People, who could not bear to see this mean Submission of the *Italians*, took an Opportunity of falling so apropos upon them that only a few who fled with great Precipitation to their Vessels escaped. Upon their coming back to *Salernum* with a great Booty the *Normans* were much carested: But all the Persuasion of *Guimare* could not prevail upon them to lay aside their Resolution of returning home. The Vessels of Gold taken from the *Saracens*, which they carried with them, and the rich Presents made by *Guimare* at parting encouraged many of their Countrymen to set out for *Italy*. After these had done divers signal Services for the Duke of *Naples* *Rainulph* one of their Chiefs was honoured by this Duke with the Title of Count; and had a Town with its Domains given to him. Hereupon *Rainulph* who soon began to act the Sovereign sent an Ambassador to the Duke of *Normandy*, to beg that some of his dear Countrymen might be suffered to come and people his new Dominions. Amongst others who went were the Sons of *Tancred* of *Hautville*, of whom as they had the chief Hand in founding the Kingdom of *Naples* and in conquering *Sicily* it is necessary to say something.

Tancred Lord of *Hautville* lived near *Coutance* in The Sons of lower *Normandy*. Although his own Estate was but TANCRED go small he in marrying, which he did twice, consulted into ITALY.

more

more the good Qualities of the Women than their Fortunes. By his first Wife he had *William* surnamed *Fier-a-Bras* or the Invincible, *Drogon* and *Humphry*: By the second he had *Robert* surnamed *Guiscard* * afterwards Duke of *Pouille* and *Calabria*, *Mauger*, *William*, *Alverede*, *Humbert*, *Tancred* and *Roger*, which last conquered *Sicily* and founded a new Monarchy there. As these had all been educated suitably to their Birth and their Patrimony was scarce sufficient for two of them they all readily embraced the Opportunity of trying their Fortunes in *Italy*. Being arrived there they went first into the Service of the Prince of *Capua*; and afterwards into that of *Guimare* Prince of *Salernum*. They distinguished themselves greatly in the Service of the latter: But they at the same Time gained the Affections of his Subjects to such a Degree that *Guimare* growing jealous of them wished for an Opportunity to get rid of them honourably.

The NORMANS assist in conquering SICILY, 1004. *Michael Ducas* Emperor of the East having about this Time formed a Design of recovering *Sicily* from the Infidels he sent an Army into *Italy* under the Command of *George Maniaces*. This General, who well knew the Bravery of the *Normans*, requested of *Guimare* that some of them might be allowed to serve under him. *Guimare* could not have met with a Way more agreeable to himself of obliging the Imperial General; and it being represented to the *Normans* that they must in this Expedition get immense Plunder they readily fell in with the Proposal, and three Hundred of them commanded by *Fier-a-Bras* set out from *Salernum*. *Fier-a-Bras* went in the Year 1004 over to *Sicily*, and after defeating the Armies of the Infidel Chiefs *Apolofar* and *Apothaps* carried his victorious Arms all over this Island: But being ill used by *Maniaces* after all his good Services he in Disgust went back with his Forces into *Italy*.

FIER-A BRAS Count of POUILLE. *Fier-a-Bras* being joined there by other *Normans* who were returning from the *Holy Land*; and having made himself Master of the *Pouille* he drove all the *Greeks* from

* This Word, which in the old NORMAN Language signified the Cunning became afterwards the Surname of the Family.

thence

thence and enjoyed it a long Time with the Title of Count.

Drogon his Successor in the *Pouille* was reduced to DROGON. great Extremity by *Meles* the Imperial General; but obtaining at last a compleat Victory over the *Greeks* he established himself and extended his Dominions. A Rebellion afterwards breaking out he was treacherously assassinated by the *Apulians*.

Humphry his Successor after revenging his Brother's HUMPHRY. Death entirely reduced the *Apulians* to Obedience. Being informed that *Henry II.* Emperor of *Germany* was coming to the Assistance of Pope *Leo IX.* against him he defeated this Pontiff's Army; and took him and all the Cardinals in his Retinue Prisoners. Instead of using his Prisoners unhandsomely *Humphry* conducted them with all imaginable Respect to *Rome*: Which so pleased the Pope that he confirmed him in the Possession of all the *Normans* had conquered in *Italy*.

After the Death of *Humphry Abelgard* his Son re-ABELGARD. ceived the Investiture of *Pouille* and *Calabria* from the Pope: But as this was contrary to the Agreement betwixt the Brothers, which was that each should in his Turn succeed to their Conquests, *Robert* surnamed *Guiscard* took Arms against *Abelgard* and soon forced him to quit his Pretensions.

Robert was afterwards made Duke of *Pouille* and ROBERT Duke *Calabria* by the Pope for the Services he did him of POUILLE against the Emperor. Whilst he was busied in extend-and CALA- ing his Dominions in *Italy* the *Saracens* made them-BRIA. selves Masters of *Messina* the only Place in *Sicily* which remained to the Emperor of the East: But their Cruelty in hanging up many of the principal Inhabitants so irritated the Rest that they invited the *Normans* to assist in the retaking of this Town. A Difference arising about the same Time betwixt the Generals of the Infidels; one of them named *Bittumene* went over to *Pouille* and encouraged *Robert* to attempt the Conquest of *Sicily*.

His Brother *Roger* being hereupon sent over to *Sicily* His Brother he defeated the Garrison of *Messina* which sallied out ROGER is sent against him. Being afterwards reinforced from the into SICILY. Continent he invested this Town, and pressed the
Sieve

Siege with such Vigour that it soon fell into his Hands. All the *Saracens* found therein were put to the Sword ; and the Town in which there were immense Treasures was pillaged. With the Assistance of *Bittumene* who brought him more Troops from his Brother he took *Ramette* and several other Places, and afterwards obtained a compleat Victory over *Balkan* the *Saracen* Governor near *Castro-Giovanni*.

A Quarrel betwixt the two Brothers.

The *Saracens* lost in this Action 10,000 Men : But a Misunderstanding arising betwixt *Roger* and *Robert*, because the latter failed in his Promise of giving half *Calabria* and half of what was taken in *Sicily* to the former, *Roger* went back to *Italy*. This was so resented by the People that *Robert* not thinking himself safe endeavoured to conceal himself in the Disguise of a Peasant. Being discovered his Life was saved by the Interposition of *Roger* ; and the two Brothers were heartily reconciled. Hereupon *Roger* went again over to *Sicily* ; where *Bittumene* who was left to command in his Absence had been treacherously murdered by some *Saracens* : But after punishing some Officers of the Garrison of *Troine* for their indecent Behaviour to the married Women and quelling an Insurrection in this Town he again went back to *Italy*. During his Stay there which was not very long the *Saracens* were so reinforced from *Africa*, that according to the Account of all Historians *Roger* found them at his coming again into *Sicily* full 300,000 strong. Being not at all discouraged thereat he attacked them and with such marvelous Success that according to some Historians not one was left to carry the News of their Defeat. In the Year 1071 he in Concert with his Brother *Robert* took *Palermo*.

ABELGARD tries to recover POUILLE.

Whilst the two Brothers were pushing their Conquests in *Sicily* some Attempts were made by *Abelgard* and *Herman* Sons of *Humphry* to recover the *Pouille* : But after sheltering themselves for some time in *Salernum* they were glad to fly for Safety to *Constantinople*. In the Quarrel betwixt Pope *Gregory VII.* and *Henry IV.* Emperor of *Germany* *Robert* sided with the former, and secured him at *Salernum* from falling into the Emperor's Hands. Having afterwards subdued *Durazzo*, *Epirus* and some of the Islands of *Greece* *Robert* died of a Fever at

Death of ROBERT.

Cassopo

Cassopo in the Year 1083. By his Will he left all out of *Italy* to *Boemond* his eldest Son; and all in *Italy* to *Roger* his other Son.

As these two Princes could by no Means agree it ROGER. came at last to an open Rupture; during which *Ben-Avir* General of the *Saracens* arrived on the Coast of *Calabria Ulterior* with a considerable Fleet and committed great Ravages upon this Coast: But an End was put to these Ravages by the Death of *Ben-Avir*: Who was killed on Ship-board by an Arrow from the Shore. Another considerable *Saracen* being in Possession of *Agrigentum* *Roger* attacked this Place; and after an obstinate Defence became Master thereof.

In the mean Time *Roger* his Uncle had after making ROGER his great Conquests upon the Infidels taken upon himself Uncle Count of the Title of Count of *Sicily*. He afterwards drove the SICILY. Infidels entirely from this Island; and he likewise took from them the Islands of *Malta* and *Gozzo*.

Upon a false Report that *Roger* Duke of *Pouille* was A Rebellion in dead his Brother *Boemond* seized some Towns, and forced POUILLE. these to acknowledge *William* the Son of *Roger* who had raised the Report of his Father's Death: But the Trick being discovered the Count of *Sicily* compelled the revolted Places to renew their Oath of Allegiance to his Nephew. At length *Boemond* having lost all in *Sicily* and finding that his Uncle was determined to support his Brother in the Dutchy of *Pouille* went over into *Asia*; where he afterwards reigned with the Title of Prince of *Antioch*, and his Descendants enjoyed the Principality of *Antioch* for many Years.

At the Death of *Roger* Count of *Sicily* in the Year ROGER II. 1102 his Son *Roger* succeeded: And by the Death of Count of Si- *William* Duke of *Pouille* without Issue this Prince had an CILY, 1102. Opportunity of annexing this Dutchy to *Sicily*. As his He succeeds to Dominions were now too large for the Title of Count POUILLE, he resolved to take that of King; and being fond of and takes the *Sicily* which his Father had obtained by Conquest all his Title of King Dominions were called by the Name of the Kingdom of of the two *Sicilies*, 1129.

Being crowned in the Year 1129 at *Palermo* Pope Quarrel with *Calixtus* II. under the Pretence that only the Pope has a the See of Right to erect a new Kingdom resented this as an In-ROME.fringement

fringement of his Right, and resolved to depose *Roger*. The Attempts of *Calixtus* to do this were however vain; nor had his Successor *Honorius* any better Success against *Roger*. The next Pope *Innocent II.* managed so well that *Roger* was besieged in *San Germano* before he knew that any Preparations for War against him were made. From thence he fled to *Galuzzo* and was reduced to the greatest Extremity: But *William* his third Son being informed of the Danger *Roger* was in marched towards this Place, and after defeating his Army made *Innocent* Prisoner. The Pope being immediately set at Liberty by *Roger* it had such an Effect, that he not only confirmed to *Roger* the Title of King but he also gave him *Naples* and the *Terre de Labour*. Upon the arrival of the News at *Rome* of *Innocent's* being taken Prisoner a new Election was immediately proceeded to by the Cardinals, who gave him over for lost; and *Peter Leon* who took the Name of *Anaclet II.* was chosen. *Roger* thinking himself in no Danger from him he had treated so generously immediately set about the reconciling of himself to the new Pontiff; and was acknowledged by him as a King. In a Council called by *Innocent* *Anaclet* was condemned as an Usurper and put to Death; and the Emperor *Lothaire* was resolved to support the Right of *Innocent* to the Holy See. *Roger* now saw his Error in having sided with *Anaclet*, and to avoid the Resentment of *Innocent* and his powerful Ally went into *Sicily*. Hereupon *Pouille* and *Calabria* became an easy Prey to the Enemies of *Roger*, and Count *Raymond* was invested by *Innocent* with these: But after the Death of this Pontiff *Roger* recovered his lost Dominions from *Raymond*; nor was he afterwards disturbed in the Enjoyment thereof by any of the Successors of *Innocent*. Having now nothing to fear on this Side *Roger* made a Descent upon *Africa*; and after imposing a Tribute upon the King of *Tunis* carried his victorious Arms as far as *Palestine*. He died at *Palermo* soon after his Return from this Expedition in the Year 1155.

WILLIAM I.

1155.

William his Son succeeded to the Throne; but Pope *Adrian* refused to acknowledge him as a King. In Revenge he seized three Towns in the Ecclesiastick State. Being

Being hereupon excommunicated, and his Subjects being discharged from their Oaths of Allegiance, Insurrections were raised in several Parts; and had *William* not been a Man of uncommon Conduct and Courage he must have been ruined. Without being in the least dismayed thereat he marched with a large Army into the *Pouille*, and put all that dared to dispute his Right to the Sword. Having reduced his rebellious Subjects to their Duty the Pope finding he could not carry his Point was glad to come to Terms with *William*.

Going afterwards over to *Egypt* *William* took several Towns from the Infidels and came home laden with their Spoils. While he was upon this Expedition *Manuel* He is successful against the *Comminus* Emperor of the East thought it a proper Time INFIDELS and the to attempt the reannexing of *Naples* and *Sicily* to his GREEKS. Empire. In his Return home *William* to his great Surprise fell in with the Imperial Fleet upon his own Coast: But having the good Fortune to obtain a Victory over it he took a hundred and fifty Vessels.

Thus far *William* made a glorious Figure; but being A Conspiracy afterwards governed entirely by a Favourite named *Mayon*, against his whom he had raised from Obscurity to the Degree of prime Life. Minister, he became odious to his Subjects and a Conspiracy was formed against him by the Nobility. Into this that Wretch *Mayon* entered; but upon his being as a just Punishment for his Oppressions assassinated the Design upon the King's Life was laid aside, and he reduced some Towns that had revolted to Obedience. He died in the Year 1167: And *William* his Son by *Margaret* Daughter of *Garcias IV.* King of *Navarre* succeeded.

This Prince, who was only nine Years of Age at his WILLIAM Accession, at the Age of fourteen took the Administra- II. 1167. tion of Affairs into his own Hands: And notwithstanding his Youth governed with such Prudence and Mildness as to obtain the Surname of *the Good*. A Quarrel He sides with breaking out betwixt the Emperor of *Germany* and the the Pope. Pope *William* as his Father had in a like Case done sided with the latter; and when the Pope was no longer safe at *Rome* conducted him in his Gallies to *Venice*. Being determined to revenge the Death of the Emperor *Alexis*, whom his Governor *Andronicus* had caused to be drowned,

William

William landed in *Theſſalonica* with an Army. This Traitor durſt not oppoſe him; and the Nobility encouraged by the Preſence of *William* immediately ſeized and tore him to Pieces. *William* afterwards turned his Arms againſt *Joſeph* King of *Morocco*; and having vanquiſhed him in a pitched Battle made his Daughter Priſoner.

He has a great Hand in ſav- About this Time the Sultan *Saladin* after taking *Jeru-*
ing TYRE. ſalem had laid Siege to *Tyre*. The Emperor *Conrade* uſed his utmoſt Efforts to prevent the falling of this important Place into the Hands of *Saladin*; and upon *Conrade*'s receiving a conſiderable Reinforcement from the King of the two *Sicilies* *Saladin* was glad to give over the Siege. *William* married *Jane* Daughter of *Henry II.* of *England*; but having no Children by her he a little before his Death declared his Aunt *Conſtance* Heireſs of his Dominions.

CONSTANCE This Princeſs Daughter of *Roger II.* had during her
is appointed his Father's Life been confined in a Convent; becauſe an
**Succ. ſor but* Abbot named *Joachim*, who was by all looked upon to
TANCRED is have the Gift of Prophecy, had told *Roger* that if ſhe
•crowned. ever married ſhe would throw all *Italy* into a Flame. After her Father's Death ſhe threw off the Veil; and married *Henry* Son of the Emperor *Frederick Barbaroſſa*. This Prince upon the Death of *William* ſet out at the Head of an Army to take Poſſeſſion of the two *Sicilies*: But in the mean Time the People not caring to be ſubject to a *German* Prince had raiſed *Tancred* a Relation of their late King to the Throne; and Pope *Clement III.* who dreaded the Increate of the Emperor's Power in *Italy*, pretending that *Pouille* and *Calabria* did by the Death of *William* without the Iſſue Male revert to the *Holy See* had inveſted *Tancred* therewith.

The two SICI- While *Henry* was on his March he received the News
LIES attacked that the Emperor his Father was drowned in *Paleſtine*.
by HENRY He did nevertheless after ſtopping to be crowned Em-
Huſband to peror at *Rome* proceed in his Enterprize againſt *Tan-*
CONSTANCE *cred*. Having taken moſt of the Towns in *Pouille* and *Calabria* he ſat down before *Naples*; but a Plague occaſioned by the exceſſive Heat of the Season made ſuch Havock in his Army that he was forced to raiſe the Siege and return into *Germany*. After his Departure the conquered Towns opened their Gates to
8 *Tancred*;

Tancred; and the Empress *Constance* whom *Henry* had left at *Salernum* was delivered into his Hands. As *Tancred* would not listen to any Proposal of *Henry* for ransoming her, the latter by ceding to him the City of *Tusculum* brought Pope *Celestin III.* into his Interest; by whose Threat of Excommunication *Tancred* was so frightened as to set *Constance* at Liberty, and she was immediately sent home by the Pope. After making great Levies in *Germany* *Henry* went again into *Italy*: And *Death of* as both *Tancred* and his Son *Roger* happened to die *TANCRED.* at this Conjunction the Minority of *William* Son of *Roger* made the Conquest of the *Two Sicilies* easy to him.

He revenged the delivering up of his Wife upon the *HENRY be-* Inhabitants of *Salernum* by razing this City to the *comes Master* Ground. He caused the Body of *Tancred* to be dug *of the two SI-* up and beheaded. He condemned *Tancred's* Widow to *CILIES.* perpetual Imprisonment; and he caused the young King *William* to be castrated. As *Constance* was soon after pregnant *Henry* to prevent the Suspicion of a supposititious Child, she being above fifty Years of Age, caused her to Lie-in at *Palermo*, and the principal Ladies of the Kingdom were present at her Delivery. The Birth of a Prince did not however extinguish the Hatred which the People had conceived against *Henry* on the Account of his Cruelty, and divers Conspiracies were formed against him; which being discovered *William* who was privy thereto had his Eyes put out and was sent into *Germany*. All the other Accomplices suffered most cruel Deaths: But one of them in particular, who was besides suspected of a criminal Intimacy with the Empress, was set naked in a Chair of red hot Iron and a Crown of the same Metal red hot was put upon his Head.

Henry offered to annex the Kingdom of the *Two NAPLES and* *Sicilies* to the Empire for ever, in case the Electors would *SICILY an-* consent to make the Imperial Crown hereditary in his *ned to the* Family. The Offer was accepted; and his Son *Frederick* *Empire.* although but three Years of Age was declared his Successor. *Henry* died at *Messina* in the Year 1198, having been as it was supposed poisoned by *Constance* who had for some Time detested him.

Frederick being a Minor the Administration of the Affairs *FREDERICK,* of the Empire was in the Hands of his Uncle *Philip*, 1198.

and after his Death in the Hands of *Otho* Duke of *Brunswick*: But the Pope disliking the latter persuaded the *Germans* to invite *Frederick* into *Germany*. He went thither and was crowned at *Aix la Chapelle*; and the Army of *Otho* being defeated at the Battle of *Bovines* by *Philip* of *France* *Frederick* took Possession of the Empire.

War with the
POPE.

Going afterwards to be crowned again at *Rome* by *Honorius III.* he ceded to this Pontiff all that his Predecessors had taken from the Holy See: But as this would not satisfy the encroaching Temper of *Honorius* *Frederick* found it necessary soon after to declare War against him. While he was engaged in this War with the Pope, who had excommunicated him, *John* of *Bricenne* King of *Jerusalem* came into *Europe* with the Princess *Iolanda* his Daughter, to beg Assistance against the *Saracens* who had driven him out of his Kingdom. *Frederick* being a Widower married this * Princess, and having reconciled himself to the Pope set out with a powerful Army and retook *Jerusalem*. During his Absence Pope *Gregory IX.* encouraged his Father-in-law *John* of *Brienne* to take Possession of *Naples*: But *Frederick* at his Return soon recovered the Possession thereof.

FREDERICK
is excommuni-
cated and de-
posed.

Having afterwards taken the Island of *Sardinia* from the *Saracens* the Pope insisted that this Island should as it used to do belong to its own Bishop; which being refused by *Frederick* he was excommunicated, and several Towns of *Italy* were encouraged by the Pope to throw off all Obedience to him. Great Preparations for War were now made on both Sides; but the Pope's Army being defeated he was glad to make Peace, and it was agreed that every Thing in Dispute should be settled by a general Council. There was no Time for the holding of a general Council during the Papacy of *Gregory IX.* or of his Successor *Celestine IV.*: But the next Pope *Innocent IV.* assembled one at *Lions* which consisted of 140 Bishops of different Nations. The Emperor being thereby deposed *Germany* was torn into Factions; and the Parties of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* were likewise revived in *Italy*. While *Frederick* was

* On the Account of this Alliance the Kirgs of SICILY have ever since called themselves Kings of JERUSALEM.

suc-

successful against the Pope in *Italy* the Archbishops of *Mentz* and *Cologne* at the Instigation of the Council proposed the Election of a new Emperor; and *Henry Landgrave of Thuring* was chosen. A Battle ensued betwixt *Conrade* Son of *Frederick* and *Henry*; but the former being worsted was forced to save himself by Flight. His Success shortly after in the Battle of *Ulm* was much better; and *Henry* died of the Wounds he received therein. *William* Count *Holland* was now elected Emperor and large Remittances were made to him by the Pope. He could not however support his Election; for being defeated by *Conrade* he was forced to return to *Holland*. In *Italy* also *Frederick* established his Affairs pretty well, and he made a near Relation of *Innocent's* whom he had declared King of *Sardinia* Prisoner: Yet the Quarrel betwixt him and the Pope continued until his Death in the Year 1250.

Upon the Death of *Frederick* *William* revived his CONRADE, Pretensions to the *Imperial* Crown; but as the Lay 1250. Princes did in the general declare for *Conrade* *William* soon found the Assistance of the Ecclesiastical ones insufficient to support him. *Conrade* after ruining *Naples* and some other Towns in his Interest defeated the Pope's Army commanded by his Nephew. Being obliged to return into *Germany* *Conrade* left the Command in *Italy* and the Care of his Son *Conradin* to *Mainfroy* his natural Brother. During the Absence of *Conrade* *William* was prevailed upon by the Pope to come Incognito to *Rome*; but finding the Affairs of *Innocent* quite different from what they had been represented he returned to *Holland*.

After the Death of *Conrade* in the Year 1254 many Many Towns Towns in *Italy* threw off their Subjection to the Empire, in ITALY and erected themselves into Republicks; and their In- make them-dependency was many Years afterwards confirmed to themselves independ- them for Sums of Money by the Emperor *Rodolph*. In dent. Consequence thereof these Towns were perpetually at Variance with each other; and *Italy* was for many Years a Theatre of Confusion and Civil War.

Mainfroy upon the Death of *Conrade* gave it out MAINFROY, that *Conradin* was also dead, and caused himself to be 1254. proclaimed King: But being excommunicated by Pope *Alexander* IV. the Kingdom of the *Two Sicilies* was by

Urban IV. his Successor offered to *Charles* Count of *Anjou* Brother to *Lewis IX* of *France*.

CHARLES I. This Prince contrary to the Advice of his Brother accepted the Offer, and was proclaimed King of the *Two Sicilies* and *Jerusalem* at *Rome*: And having defeated the Army of *Mainfroy*, who was afterwards slain by *John* Count of *Caserte* whose Wife he had violated, all *Naples* and *Sicily* submitted to him. *Conradin* who retired into *Germany* sold Part of *Suabia* to the Duke of *Bavaria*; and having raised a considerable Army went back into *Italy*. In a Battle fought near the Lake of *Celano* the *Germans* had at first the Advantage; but falling to plunder too soon *Charles* who was reinforced with some fresh Troops fell upon them and routed them with great Slaughter. *Conradin* and his Cousin *Frederick* Duke of *Austria* fled in Disguise. Being discovered by offering a Ring to Sale they were carried back to *Naples* and tried as Traitors. *Conradin* was beheaded; but he found Means to convey from the Scaffold his Ring to *Peter III.* of *Arragon* his Cousin, as a Testimony that

CONRADIN is he bequeathed to the House of *Arragon* his Right to the Crown. Having first agreed to present a white Mare and to pay 40,000 Crowns into the Apostolick Chamber yearly *Charles* was by Order of the Pope in the Year 1266 crowned King of the *Two Sicilies*. Instead of residing at *Palermo*, which had been the usual Residence of his Predecessors, *Charles* kept his Court at *Naples*. He is said by the best Historians to have been an ambitious, covetous and cruel Prince. In his Reign the horrible Massacre of the *French* called the *Sicilian Vesper* was perpetrated. He died in the Year 1285 and was succeeded by *Charles* his Son.

CHARLES II. This Prince having been sent in his Father's Life against the Fleet of *Arragon* commanded by Admiral *Lora*, he engaged too precipitately and was taken Prisoner. The Inhabitants of *Messina*, who had declared for *Peter* of *Arragon*, in Revenge for the Sufferings of *Conradin* from his Father condemned *Charles* to die; and *Constance* Queen of *Arragon* Daughter of *Mainfroy*, at whose Disposal his Life was, told him he should be beheaded as *Conradin* was, and admonished him to prepare for Death on the *Friday* following. *Charles* answered

answered boldly, *That by calling to Mind how the Saviour of the World died for Man on the same Day of the Week he should meet Death patiently.* Moved by this Answer *Constance* replied, *That if the Respect for that Day inspired him with such Courage, she out of Respect for the Day of the Week on which our Lord pardoned his Enemies would spare his Life.* The Order for his Death being hereupon revoked *Charles* was sent to *Barcelona*. During his Imprisonment his Father died, and the Government of his Dominions was by the Pope and *Philip of France* committed to *Robert* Count of *Artois*. At length by the Interposition of *Edward I.* of *England* *Charles* was set at Liberty; and as a Security for his Compliance with the Terms agreed upon his Sons *Lewis*, *Robert* and *John*, were left with *Alphonso* King of *Arragon*. Notwithstanding this Agreement, by Virtue of which *Charles* was crowned at *Rome* in the Year 1289, *James* the Brother of *Alphonso*, who claimed under *Conradin*, took upon himself the Title of King of the two *Sicilies* and continued the War in *Calabria*: But the Kingdom of *Arragon* falling to him by the Death of his Brother he accommodated Matters with *Charles*. The Terms were that *James*, who was to marry *Charles's* Daughter, should give up all Claim to the two *Sicilies*: In Lieu of which *Charles* engaged that *Charles of Valois* should renounce all Pretensions to *Arragon* and *Valencia*.

While *Charles* was gone into *France* to procure this *Sicily is d* Renunciation *Frederick* Brother to *James* attempted *to be taken from* to make himself Master of *Sicily*. *James* protested *NAPLES.* against the Attempt and assisted *Charles* with his Fleet: But *Frederick* being worsted in one Action his Brother, who was unwilling that he should be driven quite out of this Island, recalled his Succours. *Frederick* in a little Time subdued all *Sicily* and carried the War into *Naples*. A Treaty was at last agreed upon: By which *Frederick* was to enjoy *Sicily* during his Life with the Title of King of *Trinacria*; to marry one of *Charles's* Daughters; and to assist him in conquering *Sardinia*. *Charles* out of his great Zeal for *Christianity* published an Edict for compelling all the *Saracens* in his Dominions to renounce *Mahometism*: But as the evil Spirit of Persecution when once raised knows no Bounds, he afterwards most

unjustly persecuted the *Knights Templars* in his *French Dominions*. He died in the Year 1309.

ROBERT King
of NAPLES,
1309.

Robert his Son, surnamed the *Prudent*, before his Advancement to the Throne of *Naples* gave such Proofs of Courage and Conduct, that the *Florentines* and other States begged of him to command their Troops against the *Gibelines*. All his good Qualities could not however prevent *Charles II.* Son of *Charles Martel* King of *Hungary* from disputing the Succession to *Naples* with him: But the Pope paying more Regard to the Merit of *Robert* than to the Pretensions of *Charles* his elder Brother's Son caused him to be crowned at *Avignon*.

War with the
EMPEROR.

Espousing the Cause of the *Guelphs* *Robert* was cited to the Diet by the Emperor *Henry VII.* and not appearing he was sentenced to lose his Life and Dominions. Notwithstanding the Remonstrances of *Philip the Fair* of *France* against the Injustice of the Emperor he entered the Territories of *Robert*; but he was repulsed with some Loss. An End was at last put to their Quarrel in which no great Advantage was gained on either Side by the Death of *Henry*. *Lewis* Successor of *Henry* being disgusted with the Pope went to *Rome* in order to have a new one elected: But by the timely coming up of *Robert's* Army to the Pope's Assistance the Emperor was forced to retire with his Troops. The *Florentines* being hard pressed by the *Gibelines* begged the Protection of *Robert*; but the Army sent to their Relief was in endeavouring to raise the Siege of *Montcatin* defeated. *Robert* lost his Son *Charles* and his Brother *Peter* in this Battle; and another Brother named *Philip* was taken Prisoner. Being called to the Assistance of the *Genoese* *Robert* after sustaining a Siege of seven Months sallied out of *Genoa* and obliged the *Gibelines* to raise the Siege.

ROBERT is
made Lord of
GENOA.

For this extraordinary Service he was made Lord of *Genoa* and resided there eighteen Years. In a Voyage from thence to *France* he was very near losing his Life, *Frederick* of *Sicily* having hired some Villains to fire his Ship; but the Design being discovered they were seized and put to Death. The Death of *Frederick* soon after prevented *Robert* from the revenging this base Action.

Peter,

Peter, who succeeded to *Sicily* at the Death of *Frederick* his Father in the Year 1328, having made himself odious to the People *Robert* resolved to attempt the Conquest of this Island. He took *Lipari*; obtained one Victory; and was in a fair Way of succeeding had he not been called home to quell an Insurrection. After this *Robert* devoted himself entirely to Books; of which he was so fond that he used to say he would rather be deprived of his Crown than of the Pleasure of Reading. He was remarkably generous to all Men of Learning and particularly so to the famous *Petrarch*. He died in the Year 1343; and having no Sons settled the Kingdom of *Naples* upon *Jane* his Grand-daughter.

Peter of *Sicily* who died in the preceding Year was succeeded by *Lewis* his Son. During the Minority of this Prince, who was but five Years of Age at his Accession, the Government of *Sicily* was in the Hands of *John* Duke of *Athens* his Uncle.

Jane who had in her Grandfather's Life married *Andrew* Brother to *Lewis* of *Hungary* was by no Means willing he should be crowned with her; and as this was insisted upon by the Pope the Aversion she had long had for him from that Time encreased. In September 1345 *Andrew* was found hanging in his Chamber, which was near to that of the Queen. Vengeance being threatened by his Brother *Lewis* of *Hungary* the Queen who was supposed the Contriver of his Death caused the same be enquired into; and in order to take off the Odium from herself some innocent Persons suffered for it.

In the following Year she married *Lewis* of *Tarentum* her first Cousin: But as this Prince was suspected of having had too great an Intimacy with her during her former Husband's Life, and of being accessary to his Death, the King of *Hungary* went over to *Italy* with an Army and soon made himself Master of *Naples*. *Jane* dreading his Resentment fled with her Husband into *France*: By the Interposition however of the Pope, to whom being in want of Money she sold *Avignon* for eighty thousand Florins, she was suffered to return after an Absence of five Years.

Her second Husband *Lewis* dying in the Year 1362 she was within a Year married to *James* Infant of *Majorca*.

jorca afterwards King of *Arragon*. This Prince, who was called to assist his Father in recovering his Kingdom of *Majorca* from the King of *Arragon*, being taken Prisoner *Jane* paid 40,000 Crowns for his Ransom; but her Behaviour afterwards broke his Heart. He died in the Year 1368.

She marries
OTHO of
BRUNSWICK.

In the Year 1372 she married for the fourth Time *Otho* of *Brunswick*. After the Death of this Prince Pope *Urban* invested *Charles de Duras* with the Right of succeeding to *Naples*: Who having married *Mary* Sister of *Jane* was according to the Disposition of *Robert* to succeed on Failure of the Issue of *Jane*. To prevent this *Jane* adopted *Lewis* of *Anjou* Brother of *Charles V.* of *France*: But *de Duras* took Occasion from her abandoned Life to cause her to be seized and smothered between two Feather-Beds in the Year 1382.

She is put to
Death, 1382.

Kings of SI-
CILY.

During the long and scandalous Reign of *Jane* in *Naples Sicily* had had several Masters. *Lewis* Successor as it was before observed of *Peter* his Father died in the Year 1355. His Brother and Successor *Frederick* left only a Daughter named *Mary*. This Princess who married *Martin* Infant of *Arragon* reigned from the Year 1368 to the Year 1401.

CHARLES
III. 1381.

Charles III. surnamed the *Short*, Son of *Lewis de Duras* was crowned King of *Naples* in the Year 1381 by the Pope; who in order to facilitate *Charles's* Conquest of this Kingdom furnished him with a large Sum of Money. Being appointed in the Year 1370 to command the Forces of *Lewis* of *Hungary* against the *Venetians*, *Charles* for his great Address in bringing about a Reconciliation betwixt the two contending Powers obtained the Surname of the *Peace maker*. Upon the Death of *Lewis* in the Year 1382 the *Hungarians* invited *Charles* into *Hungary*. At first he took only the Title of Governor. He was however crowned King of *Hungary* in the Year 1385: But this was so resented by *Elizabeth* Widow of *Lewis* and *Mary* her Daughter that they caused him to be assassinated at a Feast in the next Year.

LADISLAUS,
1386.

Ladislaus Son of *Charles* was crowned King of *Naples* at *Gaieta* by the Legate of Pope *Boniface IX.* in the Year 1390. *Lewis* of *Anjou* the adopted Son of *Jane* was at the same Time acknowledged as King by Pope *Cle-*

ment

ment VII. whose Residence was at *Avignon*: But having lost his Credit at the Siege of *Aversa* he returned to *France*, and the whole Kingdom of *Naples* submitted to *Ladislaus*.

After the Death of *Mary* Daughter of *Frederick*, SICILY is annexed to AR- whose only Son *Frederick* survived her but a Year, *Martin* her Husband continued to reign in *Sicily* till the Year RAGON, 1409. 1409. Upon his Death *Martin* King of *Arragon* his Father succeeded; and transmitted the Kingdom of *Sicily* together with *Arragon* to his Nephew *Ferdinand*.

Sigismund King of *Hungary* having been imprisoned by LADISLAUS the Nobility *Boniface* managed so as to get *Ladislaus* is crowned crowned King of *Hungary* in the Year 1403. His Reign King of HUNGARY, there was however but short; for *Sigismund* found Means 1403. to procure his Liberty and forced *Ladislaus* to quit *Hungary*. After revenging himself upon his principal Enemies in *Hungary* *Sigismund* went over to *Italy*, and laid Siege to *Rome*; but fearing an Excommunication he soon after accommodated Matters with the Pope. At the Solicitation of Pope *Benedict* XIII. *Ladislaus* had put a Garrison into *Rome*; but this was soon expelled, and *Rome* was reduced by *Lewis* of *Anjou* to the Obedience of Pope *Alexander* V. the rival of *Benedict*. *Lewis* had besides the better of it in a pitched Battle against *Ladislaus*: yet instead of making use of these Advantages he returned to *France*.

Ladislaus was at last confirmed by Pope *John* XXIII. He is poisoned. Successor of *Alexander* in the Possession of *Naples*: But this Pope was determined at all Events to get *Rome* out of his Hands. This was at last effected by bribing a Physician whose Daughter *Ladislaus* was fond of. The Pope gave her something to rub her private Parts with, persuading her it would secure the Continuance of the King's Love to her. The credulous Girl doing as directed was herself poisoned; and the Poison had the same Effect upon *Ladislaus* the next Time he embraced her. He had however Time to be carried to *Naples*; where he died in the Year 1414 without Issue.

His Sister *Jane* who succeeded having buried her first Husband *William* of *Austria* Son of *Leopold*, she in JANE II. the Year 1415 married *James* Son of *John* of *Bourbon* 1414. and *Catherine* of *Vendôme*. This Prince, not being able
to

to bear the Insolence of *Pandolph Alope* and *Mutio Sforça* her Favourites, put the former to Death; imprisoned the latter; confined the Queen; and took the Management of Affairs into his own Hands. *Julius* of *Capua* Grand Marshal of the Kingdom, by whose Advice all this was done, being disgusted at the Partiality of *James* in raising none but *Frenchmen* to Offices laid a Plot to cut him off: And hoping thereby to recover the Queen's Favour made her privy to it. She seemingly approved thereof; but having vowed Revenge upon the Marshal as well as upon *James* she discovered it and he was put to Death.

*After being
some Time con-
fined by her
Husband she is
set at Liberty.*

This Faithfulness, as he took it to be, of *Jane's* so wrought upon the King that she was set at Liberty, and had as formerly the Direction of every Thing: But she soon contrived to stir the People up against him and clapped him into Prison. By the Intreaty of *Martin V.* of *Arragon* *James* was set at Liberty; and having sold the Principality of *Tarentum* to *John Anthony Ursin* he to shew his Contempt both of the Queen and People returned to *France*, and died in a Convent there in the Year 1438. After the Death of *Alope* the Queen fixed her Affections upon *John Carraccio* of *Naples*, who besides a fine Person had both Sense and Courage. Being made Lord High Steward he prevailed upon her to banish *Sforça* his Rival. The Pope to whom this brave General had done great Services was so provoked thereat, that he declared the Crown of *Naples* forfeited and invested *Lewis* of *Anjou* therewith.

*She adopts AL-
PHONSO of
ARRAGON,
and after-
wards LEWIS
and RENE of
ANJOU.*

In order to secure herself against the united Attempts of the Pope, *France* and *Sforça*, *Jane* adopted *Alphonso* Son of *Ferdinand* King of *Arragon*: But his Ingratitude soon discovered itself in endeavouring to exclude her from all Share in the Government; and some Attempts were made upon her Life. Upon this she recalled *Sforça*; and by his Advice revoked the Adoption of *Alphonso* and appointed *Lewis* of *Anjou* her Successor. This Disposition was approved of by *Clement V.* But as *Lewis* died before *Jane* she in the Year 1438 by a Will made upon the Day she died appointed *Rene* of *Anjou* his Brother Heir of all her Dominions.

At the Death of *Ferdinand* Nephew and Successor to *Martin* the Elder in the Year 1416 *Alphonso V.* his Son

surnamed the *Wife* succeeded to *Arragon* and *Sicily*. He died in the Year 1458 and was succeeded by *John* his Brother. The Kingdoms of *Arragon* and *Sicily* were afterwards annexed to *Castile* by the Marriage of *Ferdinand* the Catholic Son and Successor of *John* with *Isabella* Heiress of *Castile*.

Rene of *Anjou* being Prisoner at *Dijon* when *Jane* RENE, 1435. died his Wife *Isabella* set out immediately for *Naples* and was received as Sovereign. Having afterwards purchased his Liberty he entered into an Alliance with the *Genese*; and received the Investiture of *Naples* from Pope *Eugene* IV.

Upon his Arrival at *Naples* divers Towns submitted ALPHONSO I. to him; but being besieged in the Capital and in Danger of falling into *Alphonso's* Hands he was glad to save himself by Flight and leave his Rival in the Possession of the Kingdom.

Upon the Death of *Alphonso* in the Year 1458 *Ferdinand* FERDINAND I. his natural Son, who had been legitimated by Pope *Eugene*, succeeded to the Crown of *Naples*. During his Reign, which lasted 36 Years, *John* Son of *Rene* entered the Kingdom with a large Army and had taken the City of *Naples*; but Pope *Pius* II being firmly attached to *Ferdinand* he was soon driven from thence.

Alphonso the Son and Successor of *Ferdinand* having ALPHONSO II. reigned one Year the Crown fell to *Ferdinand* his Son. 1434.

During the Reign of this Prince *Charles* VIII. of FERDINAND II. *France*, to whose Predecessor *Lewis* XI. *Charles* the 1495. last Duke of *Anjou* had bequeathed his Pretensions, in a few Months subdued the greatest Part of the Kingdom: But as this alarmed *Europe* a Confederacy was entered into by the *Emperor*, the *Pope*, *Ferdinand* of *Spain* and some other Powers, for driving the *French* out of *Italy*. Hereupon *Charles* afraid of being shut up in *Naples* made the best of his Way for *France*; and *Ferdinand*, who reigned but little more than a Year, both lost and was restored in this short Time to his Dominions.

As *Ferdinand* left no Children *Frederick* his Uncle FREDERICK, 1496. succeeded. *Lewis* XII. of *France* had a Mind to assert his Pretensions to *Naples*; but calling to Mind the ill Success of *Charles* he entered into an Agreement with *Ferdinand* King of *Spain* for dividing this Kingdom be-
twixt

NAPLES annexed to SPAIN
1504.

MAZANELLO's Sedition, 1647.

twixt them. The Conquest thereof was soon made, and *Frederick* who was in the Year 1501 carried into *France* spent the Remainder of his Days there. A Dispute arising betwixt the Conquerors about adjusting their Shares it came to a Rupture. In this the *French* had at first the Advantage; but by the brave Conduct of the *Spanish* General *Gonsalvo* they were afterwards forced to evacuate *Naples*; and as *Sicily* had for some Time been it was about the Year 1504 annexed to the Kingdom of *Spain*.

In the Year 1647 the Inhabitants of *Naples* being disgusted at the imposing of a Tax upon Provisions, a Fisherman named *Thomas Agnello*, called by a corrupt Way of speaking *Mazanello*, about twenty four Years of Age declared himself publicly the Defender of the Peoples Liberties. As he was one Day carrying Fish to Market the Tax thereof was demanded and upon his refusing to pay it the Officers seized him; but the People soon rescued him and breaking open the Custom-house burnt all the Books of the Commissioners. From thence they went and set Fire to the Houses of all such as had been most forward to lay on the new Tax, and would not suffer them to save the least Thing. They went next to the *Viceroy* with *Mazanello* at their Head, and demanded of him on Pain of Death that all Taxes should be taken off, and that the Privileges granted to them by *Ferdinand* and *Charles V.* should be confirmed: And every Person who dared to oppose them was immediately put to Death by *Mazanello's* Order. The Cardinal *Philomarini* Archbishop of *Naples* after taking vast Pains to appease the People offered a large bribe to *Mazanello*; but he honestly refused to accept thereof, and would lay down his Authority on no other Terms than those demanded of the *Viceroy*. Finding it must be so the Archbishop went with him to the *Viceroy*; and Articles of Agreement were signed upon those Terms. *Mazanello* immediately let the People know what he had done and desired every Man to go home and behave quietly; charging them however at the same Time not to part with their Arms untill the Agreement was confirmed by the Court of *Madrid*. The following Inscription is also said to have been engraved upon a marble Pillar by his Order:

MAZANELLO PRINCE AND CHIEF OF THE PEOPLE ENJOINS AND COMMANDS EVERY PERSON TO OBEY NO OTHER ORDERS THAN THOSE OF THE DUKE D'ARCOS VICEROY. After acting thus surprizingly he fell into a Delirium. Some say this was occasioned by Poison given him by Order of the Viceroy : Others that having been eight Days without Rest and constantly employed in Things too mighty for him it turned his Brain. However this was the Orders he now gave being inconsistent with his former ones he was deserted, and some Gentlemen taking the Opportunity of this State of Things to kill him his Head was fixed upon a Pole, and his Body was dragged through the Streets by the same Mob who just before had almost adored him. As this was thought by the Court of *France* a proper Time to attempt the Conquest of the Kingdom the Duke of *Guise* was sent with a powerful Fleet to *Naples*. He was received by the Malecontents with open Arms : But the Insurrection being quelled he was seized by the *Spanish* Party and carried Prisoner into *Spain*.

After the Death of *Charles II.* of *Spain* Philip Duke of *Anjou* took Possession of *Naples* and *Sicily* : But the Party of the Archduke *Charles*, who also claimed the *Spanish* Succession, being prevalent in *Italy* he in the Year 1706 made himself Master of *Naples*.

In Pursuance of the Treaty of *Utrecht* the Spaniards evacuated *Sicily* in Favour of the Duke of *Savoy* : But it was agreed afterwards by the Treaty of Quadruple Alliance that the Emperor *Charles VI.* should have this Island. In lieu thereof *Charles* ceded *Sardinia* to the Duke of *Savoy* : And he agreed that *Don Carlos* should succeed to *Tuscany*, *Parma* and *Placentia*. Many Difficulties were raised afterwards by the Court of *Vienna* to prevent this Disposition in Favour of *Don Carlos* from taking Place : But he was at length introduced into *Italy* by a *British* Fleet.

Upon the breaking out of the War on Account of the *Polish* Election *France*, *Spain* and *Sardinia* united against the Emperor. Whilst the *French* and *Sardinian* Troops attacked the Imperialists in the *Milanese* *Don Carlos* accompanied by Count *Montemar* advanced towards the Kingdom of *Naples*, Count *Julius Visconti* the King, 1734.

the Viceroy fled upon the Approach of the *Spaniards* towards the *Pouille*; nor could Count *Traun*, who lay entrenched with 3000 Men in order to dispute their Passage, stop the Progress of the *Spaniards*. The Deputies from many Towns had met and submitted to the Infant in the *Ecclesiastick State*. In 1734 the Deputies from *Naples* had a Conference with him at *Aversa*; and the Privileges of this City being confirmed he upon the 10th of the next Month made his publick Entry thereinto. *Amalfi*, *Nola*, *Salernum*, *Soriento* and many other Towns declared also for *Spain*; and upon the Arrival of an Express from *Madrid* with the Cession of the two *Sicilies* to *Don Carlos* he was immediately proclaimed.

Battle of
BITONTO.

Count *Montemar* finding that the 4000 Men detached under the Duke of *Castropignano* were not sufficient to act against *Visconti*, who had got together eight or nine Thousand and was strongly entrenched near *Bitonto*, he went with 6000 more and attacked his Entrenchments Sword in Hand. After an obstinate Resistance the *Austrians* gave Way and 1400 of their Infantry were taken Prisoners; the rest with their Cavalry fled towards the Mountains of *Calabria*, where many of them were cut off by the Peasants. This Victory was followed with the surrender of *Gaieta* on the 6th of *August*; and *Capua* did the same upon the 24th of *November*. Count *Montemar* now made for his Services Duke of *Bitonto* set out immediately for *Sicily*; and had such Success in subduing this Island that the King was in the following Year crowned at *Palermo*. The Preliminaries of *Vienna* which were entered into by *France* without the Knowledge of her Allies put a Stop to all further Operations in *Italy*.

Preliminaries
of VIENNA.

By these *France* engaged that the King of the two *Sicilies* should cede the Reversion of *Tuscany* to the Duke of *Lorrain*; and the Dutchies of *Parma* and *Placentia* which were in his Possession to the Emperor. The Dutchy of *Milan* Part thereof being reserved for the King of *Sardinia* was also to be restored to the Emperor.

DON CARLOS
accedes thereto,
1735.

The Kings of *Spain* and the two *Sicilies* were by no Means satisfied with these Terms, and for some Time delayed to make the stipulated Cessions: But his Father having at last acceded to the Preliminaries of *Vienna* *Don*

Carlos

Carlos did by an Act signed at *Naples* in *December* 1736 accede thereto also.

In the Year 1738 *Don Carlos* married *Mary Emilia* Treaty with *Christina* Daughter of the King of *Poland*. He after-^{the} *Sultan*, wards concluded a Treaty of Amity and Commerce 1740. with the *Sultan*: Which was signed in *April* 1740 at *Constantinople*.

As the two *Sicilies* have thus lately been conquered by *The Interest* of the Troops of *Spain*, and erected by Virtue of a Cession the two *SICI-* from the King of *Spain* into an independent Kingdom, LIES is con- the Interest of the Kingdom of the two *Sicilies* seems at^{needed with} present to be so strongly connected with that of *Spain*,^{that of} *SPAIN*. of which an Account has been already given, that it is unnecessary to say any Thing further thereof.

C H A P. VII.

Of V E N I C E.

*Origin of the
Republick.*

THE northern barbarous Nations, encouraged by the Contempt the western Empire was fallen into, had towards the Middle of the fifth Century spread themselves as far as *Italy*. The Huns were the first of these Nations who under *Attila* their King made an Irruption thereinto; and *Aquileia* for refusing to admit them was sacked. *Milan, Pavia, Concordia, Este* and *Padua* having all in their Turn felt the Rage of these barbarous Nations many Families fled for Safety to the *Islands* in the *Adriatick*. By Degrees seventy two of the *Lagune* Islands which lay near the *Rialto*, upon which the first Comers settled, were peopled. At first every Island was distinct and a Sort of independent State governed by a Tribune; but they were all afterwards united by Bridges and composed that marvellous City since called *Venice*.

*The LAGUNES
at first govern-
ed by Tribunes.*

*PAULUCIO is
elected DOGE,
697.*

The Government of Tribunes being by Reason of the frequent Quarrels of these Magistrates found inconvenient, it was about the End of the seventh Century resolved to choose one supreme Magistrate and to give him the Title of *Doge*. *Paulucio Anafesto* being the Person pitched upon he made it his Business to digest the Laws in a concise and plain Method.

*MARCELLO,
717.*

Marcello Tegalliano who succeeded in the Year 717 was in the Year 726 succeeded by *Orso Ippato*.

ORSO, 726.

This Doge attempting to abuse his Power was assassinated by the People in the Year 737; and the Government came into the Hands of Knights.

The Seat of Residence was by these removed from *Heraclea* to *Malomoco*: But as the choosing of them annually was attended with Disturbances the People in the Year 742 elected *Theodato Ippato* the Son of *Orso* Doge.

As

As this Doge did also make an Attempt to abuse his THEODATO. Power his Eyes were put out and he was banished in 752.

Dominico Monegario the next Doge shared the same DOMINICO, Fate for the same wicked Attempt. 752.

Mauritio Galbaio his Successor in the Year 758 assist-MAURITIO, ed *Charlemain* at the Siege of *Pavia*, when he took *Didier* 758. King of *Lombardy* Prisoner. He died in the Year 781.

Giovanni Gal aio who had been seven Years associated GIOVANNI in the Government with his Father, a Thing commonly 781. at that Time done by the *Doges* in order to secure the Succession in their Families, was in the Year 804 banished together with his Son and Colleague *Mauritio*.

Obelerio Anlenorio being next chosen Doge he was de-OBELERIO, posed in the Year 809 by the People for siding with 804. *Pepin*, who had been made by *Charlemain* his Father King of *Lombardy*, against the Emperor of the *East* their natural Ally.

Pepin in Revenge made War against the new Doge ANGELO, 809. *Angelo Participatio* and took from the Republick several Islands: But he was afterwards reconciled to him and made him a Visit. While he was at *Venice* he generously restored these *Islands*, and discharged the *Venetians* from a Tribute they were accustomed to pay: Nor did his Generosity stop here; for he gave them a Tract of Land upon the neighbouring Coast, and ordered their City to be called from the *Veneti* who inhabited this Coast *Venice*. Observing that their supreme Magistrate had no Mark of Distinction he took his Sleeve from his Coat and put it on his Head: And from this it is said the ducal Horn since wore by the *Doges* took its Rise.

Giustiniano his Son and Successor was elected in the GIUSTINIANO Year 827. In his Time *St. Mark's* Church was found-ANO, 827. ed upon a Body, said to be that of *St. Mark*, brought by some Merchants from *Alexandria*, and the *Venetians* took this Saint for their Patron. He died in the Year 829.

Giovanni his Brother being of a tyrannical Disposition GIOVANNI he was in the Year 836 deposed. PARTICIPA-

Pierro Gradenigo who succeeded sent a Fleet of 60 TIO, 829. Sail of Ships to assist the Emperor of the *East* against the PIERRE *Saracens*. These being all sunk or taken the *Saracens* GRADENIGO, became Masters of the *Adriatick* Sea; which so exas- 836. perated

perated the Populace that they fell upon and murdered him in a Church during divine Service in the Year 864.

ORSO, 864. *Orso Participatio* his Successor recovered *Candia* from the *Saracens* for the *Greeks*.

GIOVANNI PARTICIPATIO II. 881. *Giovanni Participatio* his Son succeeded in the Year 881. In the Time of *Pierre Tribuno*, who succeeded in the Year 887, the *Hungarians* did after vanquishing the Emperor *Berenger* attack *Venice*; but they were repulsed with great Loss.

ORSO, 909. *Orso Badesro* his Successor in the Year 909 was the first who coined Money in *Venice*.

PIERRE CANDIANO, 932. *Pierre Candiano* who succeeded in the Year 932 conquered Part of *Istria*; and made the *Sclavonians* tributary. He died in the Year 941.

PIERRE CANDIANO II. 941. *Pierre* his Son and Successor rendered himself so odious to the People, that they set fire to his Palace in the Year 952 and killed him as he was endeavouring to make his escape.

PIERRE CANDIANO, III. Year 976. His Son and Successor *Pierre* was assassinated in the Year 976.

PIERRE ORSEOLO, 976. The next Doge *Pierre Orseolo* resigned the Government in the Year 978 and became a Friar.

VITALO, 979. *Vitalo Candiano* his Successor did the same thing in the Year 979. In his Time the *Venetians* relieved *Bari* in *Naples* which was besieged by the *Turks*.

TRIBUNO, 979. *Tribuno Memo* followed the Examples of his two Predecessors, and retired in the Year 991 into a Monastery.

PIERRE ORSEOLO, II. 991. In the Time of the next Doge *Pierre Orseolo II.* the Republick began to flourish: For the *Venetians* not only enjoyed a free Trade with *Greece*, *Syria* and *Egypt*, but he obtained for them a large Tract of Land upon the Coast of *Italy*. The *Dalmatians* and *Istrians* after suffering a great deal from the Inhabitants of *Narenta* did also put themselves under his Protection; and from this Time the Doge of *Venice* took the Title of Duke of *Dalmatia*. He died in the Year 1009.

OTTON, 1009. In regard to the Memory of this Doge *Otton Orseolo* his Son although no more than 18 Years of age was chosen; but the People repenting thereof banished him in the Year 1024 and elected *Pierre Barbolano*.

Centravio Orseolo Patriarch of *Aquileia* caused this *PIERRE*,
Doge to be deposed: And his Brother *Otton* was restored. 1024.

Dominico Fiabanico who succeeded in the Year 1034 *DOMINICO*,
made a Law that no Doge should have a Collegue. 1034.

Dominico Contarino, who was raised to the Dogeship *DOMINICO*,
in the Year 1042, reduced *Zara* a maritime Town in 1042.

Dalmatia which had revolted to Obedience; and obtained
a Victory over *Robert Guiscard* Duke of *Pouille*. He
died in the Year 1060.

The next Doge *Dominico Silvio* was deposed in the *DOMINICO*,
Year 1083 for his ill Success against *Guiscard*. 1060.

Vitalo Faliero had no better Success in the War against *VITALO*,
Guiscard than his Predecessor; but by extending the Do- *MICHIELLE*,
minions of the Republick in *Dalmatia* he secured him- 1083.
self from the Resentment of the People.

Vitalo Michiele, who was elected in the Year 1095; *VITALO MICHIELE*,
being well skilled in naval Affairs the Fleet of the Re- *CHIÈLE*,
publick was encreased to 200 Sail. His Son being sent 1095.
out therewith he took 22 Gallies from the *Pisans* off
Rhodes; and afterwards made himself Master of *Brun-*
disium.

Ordelaffo Faliero succeeded in the Year 1101, and *ORDELAFFO*,
having defeated the *Paduans* the two States did by the
Mediation of the Emperor come to an Agreement about
their Limits. He once repulsed the *Hungarians*; but
upon their invading *Dalmatia* a second Time he was
slain in Battle and the *Venetians* were glad to sue for
Peace. In his Time great Part of *Venice* was burnt
down by an accidental Fire.

At his Death in the Year 1120 *Dominico Michiele* was *DOMINICO*,
elected Doge. He went at the Recommendation of the 1120.
Pope with a powerful Fleet to the Assistance of *Baldwin*
King of *Jerusalem*; and had a considerable Share in re-
covering *Tyre* from the *Saracens*. The taking of this
important Place would have rendered the Conquest of all
Syria easy to the *Christians*, had not the Doge been
obliged to return home for the Defence of his own Do-
minions; which were attacked by the Emperor of the
East. The Perfidy of the latter cost him dear; for the
Doge took from him the Islands of *Samos*, *Scio*, *Rhodes*,
Metellino and *Andro*. Having afterwards reconquered
Dalmatia he died in the Year 1131.

PIERRE,
1131.

Pierre Polano his Successor conquered *Fano*; and defeated the Armies of *Pisa* and *Padua*. In his Time the *Venetians* made a Descent upon *Sicily* and brought away much Spoil.

DOMINICO,
1147.

In the Year 1147 *Dominico Morisini* was elected. He made *Pola* and *Parenzo* tributary; and obtained great Advantages in Trade from *William* King of *Sicily*.

VITALO MIC-
CHIELE II.
1156.

In the Dogeship of *Vitalo Michiele* II. who succeeded in the Year 1156, the Patriarch of *Aquileia* surprised *Grado* and pillaged it; but as he was returning with the Plunder the *Venetians* met and made him and most of his Followers Prisoners. The Condition of his Ransom was that he should send every Year to *Venice* a Bull and twelve Boars. It became a Custom afterwards to bait these Creatures annually during the Time of the Carnival for the Diversion of the Populace.

War with
GREECE.

Emanuel Emperor of the *East* having made himself Master of some Places in *Dalmatia* belonging to the Republick the Doge marched against him, and had retaken some of these; but by the Persuasion of the Governour of *Negropont* he clapped up a Peace with this Emperor. For doing this and for carrying home the Plague in his Army, which was occasioned by the Emperor's causing the Waters to be poisoned, he was in the Year 1173 assassinated.

Power of the
DOGE li-
mited.

From the Time of *Paulucio Anafesto* the first Doge to the Death of *Vitalo Michiele* II. the Doges had been chosen by the Body of the People. Being consequently accountable only to the whole People they were all despotick: And some of them would have been Tyrants. As popular Elections have great Inconveniencies, and there is no Remedy in an arbitrary Government against the Abuse of Power but by an Insurrection, the State was frequently thrown into great Convulsions. A Consultation being upon the Death of *Vitalo Michiele* held among the principal Citizens it was resolved, that for the sake of preventing these Mischiefs the Doges should for the Time to come be elected by eleven Persons; and that these eleven Electors should themselves be elected out of a Council consisting of 240 of the chief Inhabitants: But to make the People amends for losing the Right of electing a Doge they were to have the Power
of

of chusing twelve *Tribunes*; whose Consent was necessary to the Validity of the *Doge's* Order. These *Tribunes*, who were to be two out of each of the six Wards the City was divided into, had besides the Power of nominating forty Persons out of their respective Wards to compose the Council of 240: Which was to be renewed every Year and to consist of Nobility, Gentry and Tradesmen without Distinction.

Sebastiano Ziani the first *Doge* chosen under this new Regulation sheltered Pope *Alexander III.* from the Resentment of the Emperor *Frederick Barbarossa*. After having in vain tried all Methods to reconcile these two this *Doge* declared War against the latter; and having taken his son *Otho* Prisoner forced him to submit to his own Terms of Peace. The Interview at the Time of making this Peace in which the Pope set his Foot on the Emperor's Neck was at *Venice*. Some have said that this story is fabulous; but the *Venetians*, who insist upon the Truth thereof, were very angry with Pope *Urban VIII.* for taking down a Painting in the Pope's Palace at *Rome* representing this Interview, and as well pleased with Pope *Innocent X.* for replacing it again.

The Sovereignty of the *Adriatick* being bestowed upon the Republick by Pope *Alexander* during the Dogeship of *Sebastiano*, he instituted the Custom of espousing this Sea once a Year. His Successors do still retain this Custom: And when the Ring one of the Ceremonies observed is thrown into the Sea the *Doge* pronounces these Words: *Desponsamus te Mare in Signum veri & perpetui Dominii.*

Orio Mastropetro, who succeeded in the Year 1178, finding himself unable to stop the Progress of the *Hungarians* in *Dalmatia* retired into a Monastery; and *Henri Dandolo* was in the Year 1192 chosen.

The Divisions which had for a great while weakened the Imperial Family at *Constantinople* in his Time entirely ruined it; and made Way for the Aggrandisement of the Republick. *Alexis Angus* having put out the Eyes of his Brother *Isaac* and seized the Throne, this *Doge* at the Solicitation of *Alexis* Son of *Isaac* joined with *Boniface* Marquis of *Montferrat* and *Baldwin* Count of *Flanders* in sending a Fleet to the Assistance of *Isaac*. After taking *Constantinople* the Usurper fled; but *Isaac* was

*The Republick
reaps great
Advantage
from the Divi-
sions in the Im-
perial Family.*

shortly after dispossessed again by *Alexis Marzuffle*, who the more effectually to secure himself poisoned the young *Alexis*. He did not long enjoy the Fruit of this Villainy; for the Allies drove him from *Constantinople* in the same Year; and *Isaac* being by Reason of his Blindness incapable of governing Count *Baldwin* was proclaimed Emperor of the *East*. The *Venetians* had for their Part of what was taken at the sacking of *Constantinople* an immense Treasure, and amongst other things twelve *Cuirasses* of Gold adorned with a great Number of precious Stones: Which are at this Day to be seen in *St. Mark's* Treasury. They had besides on the Division of the Empire *Corfu* and most of the Islands in the *Adriatick* and *Archipelago*: And they bought *Candia* which fell to the Marquis of *Montferrat's* Share of him for 80,000 Marks.

PIERRE,
1205.

Pierre Ziano Son of *Sebastiano*, who was elected in the Year 1205, sent Colonies to divers of the Islands gained by his Predecessor and conquered *Padua*. He in the Year 1228 became a *Friar*.

JACOPO,
1228.

The next Doge *Jacopo Tiepolo* made *Negroponte* tributary; rescued *Candia* from the *Greek* Corsairs; recovered *Zara* from the King of *Hungary*; and made him give up all Right to this Town which had so often changed its Master. In his Time *Tzelino* took *Padua* from the *Venetians*; and penetrated into their Marshes as far as *St. Ellero*.

MARINO,
1248.

Marino Morosini his Successor in the Year 1248 recovered *Padua* while *Tzelino* was before *Mantua*; whereupon the latter being enraged barbarously put all the Inhabitants of *Padua* in his Army to Death.

REGNIER,
1252.

In the Year 1252 *Regnier Zeno* succeeded. *Baldwin* Emperor of the *East* being in his Time betrayed by the *Greeks* *Michael Paleologus* seized the Empire, and being assisted by the *Genoese* took some Islands from the *Venetians*: But the *Genoese* Fleet being worsted off *Sicily* by *Regnier Paleologus* was glad to restore these and sue for Peace. Having afterwards the better in another naval Engagement the *Genoese* were glad to make a Truce with *Regnier*. He died in the Year 1268.

LAURENZO,
1268.

In the Time of *Laurenzo Tiepolo* his Successor there was a great Scarcity of Corn in *Venice*; for the neighbouring States envying the Greatness of the Republick would

would not supply it therewith. Hereupon they exacted a Toll from all Ships sailing in the *Adriatick*, which being refused by the *Bolognians* a War ensued; but the *War with the Bolognians* being constantly beat they were in the End BOLOGNI-
ANS. glad both to pay the Toll and to let the *Venetians* have Corn.

Jacopo Contarini who succeeded in the Year 1275 ab- JACOPO,
dicated the Dogeships in the Year 1280. 1275.

His Successor *Giovanni Dandolo* being the first who GIOVANNI
coined Gold the Coin was from his Ducal Dignity 1280.
called a Ducat. In his Time the *Adriatick* swelled so high that the City was laid under Water. He died in the Year 1290.

Pierre Gradenigo the next Doge changed the Form of PIERRE
Government which was settled at the Election of *Sebastiano* GRADENIGO,
117 Years before and had been ever since adhered to. II. 1290.

Instead of the Council of 240 annually chosen he ordered, that all who had been of this Council for the four last The Govern-
ment new
modelled. Years should be entitled to ballot; and that such Persons as should have twelve Ballots should be hereditary Mem-

bers of the new Great Council, which was to be called *il Serrar del Consiglio*. As many of the first Rank were hereby for ever excluded from all Share in the Government it is easy to conceive that some of these should be disgusted; and that the Body of the People who by this Regulation lost all their Power should join with them. A Conspiracy headed by *Marino Bocconio* and *Giovanni* Bocconio's
Conspiracy. *Balduino* being soon after formed, the Design thereof was to massacre the *Doge* and all the new Council, and to put Things upon the former Establishment: But the Plot being discovered they were both put to Death.

Upon the Death of *Afon D'Est* in the Year 1309 the City of *Ferrara* submitted to the Republick: But Pope *Clement V.* being disgusted thereat the *Venetians* rather than suffer the Mischiefs of an Excommunication gave up all their Right to this City.

In the next Year a very dangerous Conspiracy was The Conspiracy
formed against the *Doge* and *Senate*, *Bajomonte Tiepolo* of TIEPOLO.
whose Father was a Competitor with *Pierre* for the Dogeship being at the Head thereof: And besides the common People the *Quirini*, the *Baduarii* and many other illustrious Families were engaged in it. The Conspirators

being assembled they went in an hostile Manner to *St. Mark's* Palace: But the Doge and Senate who were prepared received them so warmly, that after great Slaughter on both Sides they were overpowered. Endeavouring to save themselves by Flight *Bajamonte* was felled from his Horse by a Stone which a Woman threw at him from a Window; and the Pursuers soon put an End to his Life. All the principal Persons taken were put to Death instantly betwixt *St. Mark's* Pillars; and such as escaped never durst appear in *Venice*. The Palace of *Tiepolo* was razed to the Ground; that of *Quirini* was converted into a Butchery; the Woman who threw the Stone was well rewarded by the Senate: And the 5th of *June*, on which Day the Conspirators were defeated, has been ever since observed as an annual Festival throughout the Dominions of the Republick.

The Council of
TEN.

This gave Occasion to the erecting of that formidable Tribunal called the *Council of Ten*: Whose extensive Power in searching into and punishing State Crimes has ever since kept the Nobility as well as the People in Awe. Upon the whole, whatever Arts *Pierre* might use to have his own Friends chosen of the new Council, the Republick is indebted to him for the most perfect Form of Government it ever had.

War with
GENOA.

During these intestine Commotions the *Genoese* upon the Expiration of the Truce sent a Fleet into the *Adriatick*: By which the *Venetian* Admiral *Dandolo* who came up with them on the Coast of *Dalmatia* was defeated with great Loss. The *Venetians* refitted their Fleet again as fast as possible; but it was a second Time worsted in the Straights of *Gallipoli*. These two Victories cost the *Genese* however so dear that they were willing to make Peace. *Pierre* died in the Year 1312.

MARINO,
1312.
GIOVANNI,
1313.

Marino Giorgio his Successor lived only 10 Months. The next Doge *Giovanni Soranzo* not only reduced *Zara* which had revolted a little before to Obedience, but he also extended the Dominions of the Republick in *Dalmatia*. Before his Death in the Year 1329 the *Candians* grew mutinous: By the prudent Conduct however of Admiral *Justiniano* they were soon made easy.

FRANCISCO,
1329.

In the Time of *Francisco Dandolo* the next Successor the House of *Scala*, then very powerful in *Italy*, refused

refused to let the *Venetians* trade up the *Po* or *Adige*. A War ensuing the *Florentines*, the *Duke of Milan* and *John War* with King of *Bohemia*, joined with the *Republick*: And in about two Years Time *Mastino de Scala* being constantly unsuccessful was glad to make Peace on the following disadvantageous Terms. To the King of *Bohemia* he ceded *Feltro*, *Bellano* and *Cineda*; to the *Florentines* four Castles; to *Visconti Duke of Milan* *Bergamo* and *Brescia*; and to the *Venetians* *Treviso*, *Castelbaldo* and *Bassano*. Upon the Death of *Francisco* in the Year 1340 the Election fell upon *Bartholomeo Gradenigo*. MASTINO DE SCALA.

During his Dogeship the *Adriatick* rose and continued for three Days four Yards higher than usual. The Danger of being drowned was scarce over when the *Venetians* received the News of an Insurrection in *Candia*; but this was happily quelled. BARTHOLOMEO, 1340.

Andrea Dandolo who succeeded in the Year 1343 took *Smyrna* from the *Turks*, and obtained Liberty for the *Venetian* Merchants to trade into *Egypt*: By which as all the *East-India* Trade was at this Time carried on through *Egypt* a vast Advantage accrued to the *Republick*. ANDREA, 1343.

Some Merchant Ships of *Venice* being taken by the *Genoese* in the *Levant* in the Year 1350 Hostilities were recommenced. In an Engagement off *Pera* the *Venetians* lost fourteen Gallies and a great Number of Men: But being joined by a Fleet from *Aragon* they obtained a signal Victory in the Year 1353 near the Island of *Sardinia*. In this the *Genoese* lost thirty-two Vessels and two thousand Men; and double that Number were taken Prisoners. They however refitted their Fleet, and in the next Year their Admiral *Doria* falling in with the *Venetian* Fleet near the *Morea* he attacked it with such Vigour that every Ship but one was lost or taken. The Prisoners among whom was Admiral *Pisani* amounted to near six thousand; and four thousand Men fell in the Action. This Defeat of the *Venetians* was shortly after followed with a Truce for five Years. Hostilities with the Genoese recommenced, 1350. Battle of SARDINIA, 1353. Battle of MOREA.

In the same Year *Marino Faliero* was elected *Doge*. A young Gentleman having been detected in an Intrigue with his Wife the Senate in Consideration of the loose Character she bore thought a Months Imprisonment a sufficient MARINO, 1354.

He conspires against the Senate. sufficient Punishment; nor could her Husband prevail upon them to order a severer Punishment. Exasperated hereat *Marino* entered into a Conspiracy for cutting off the whole Senate: But the Plot being discovered by *Bertrando Belliziro* an Accomplice he was seized and beheaded; and several concerned therein were hanged.

GIOVANNI,
1355.

Giovanni Gradenigo who succeeded in the Year 1355 died in the next Year.

GIOVANNI,
1356.

Giovanni Delfino the next Doge being unsuccessful in the War with *Hungary*, which began in his Predecessor's Time, he for the sake of Peace was forced to make considerable Cessions in *Dalmatia*.

LORENZO,
1360.

Lorenzo Celso succeeded in the Year 1360.

MARCO,
1365.

He was succeeded in the Year 1365 by *Marco Cornaro* who lived only two Years.

ANDREA,
1367.

In the Time of the next Doge *Andrea Contarini* a Dispute arose between *Carrario* Lord of *Padua* and the Republick concerning the Limits of their respective Territories; and the former prevailed upon the King of *Hungary*, the Duke of *Austria*, the Patriarch of *Aquileia* and their irreconcilable Enemies the *Genoese*, to join with him against the *Venetians*.

War with divers Powers.

The Republick being thus attacked on all Sides was upon the Brink of being ruined. After defeating her Fleet the *Genoese* took *Umago*, *Grado*, *Caorle*, *Ghiozza*, *Malamoco*, *Paviglia* and some other Islands. The other Allies made great Conquests at the same Time upon the Continent, and *Venice* itself was thrown into such a Consternation, that had the *Genoese* Fleet appeared before this City it is highly probable that it would have surrendered without striking a Stroke. As *Carrario* would hear nothing of an Accommodation the *Venetians* sent a Deputation to the *Genoese* Admiral *Doria* with a *Chart Blanc*; but his Answer was that nothing less than the entire Ruin of *Venice* would satisfy his Masters. Finding they had nothing else for it the *Venetians* hereupon determined to make a bold Push at Sea; and after mature Deliberation it was resolved to attempt the retaking of *Ghiozza*. They had so little Hopes of Success that it was at the same Time according to some Historians resolved, in case they did not succeed, to remove the Republick from *Venice* to *Candia*: But Fortune favoured them, the *Genoese* Fleet being worsted

worsted and *Doria* their Admiral being killed in an Engagement off *Biondolo*. *Chiozza* was now easily retaken; and the *Genoese* Garrison consisting of 3000 Men were made Prisoners. After refitting at *Trieste* the *Genoese* again attempted the taking of *Chiozza*. Failing in this and being equally unsuccessful in their Attempts upon *Pirano* and *Parenzo* they retired into the Harbour of *Marano*. Not long after the *Genoese* took several Towns in *Istria*: But in the mean time the *Venetians* had recovered most of their *Islands* and their Affairs began to put on a more favourable Aspect.

At length by the Mediation of *Amadeus VI. of Savoy* Treaty with a Treaty was concluded upon the following Conditions: *PADUA*.

That the King of *Hungary* should not protect any Pirates in his Ports of *Dalmatia*; that the *Venetians* should keep *Tenedos* which they had lately obtained from *Calo John* Emperor of the East; that the Archduke of *Austria* should have *Treviso*; that all taken from the *Venetians* in *Istria* and *Dalmatia* except *Trieste* which was to be left to the Patriarch of *Aquileia* should be restored; and that *Carrario* should restore *Cavafera* and *Marano* and have in lieu thereof some Places taken from him by the *Republick*. Not long after the Conclusion of this Peace in the Year 1383 *Andrea* died.

Michiele Morosini his Successor living but four Months *MICHIELE,*
Antonio Veniero was raised to the ducal Chair. 1383.

As the *Venetians* were not heartily reconciled to *Carrario* they in the Year 1380 renewed the War against him. *ANTONIO,*
1383.

John Galeaz Visconti Duke of *Milan* sided with the *Republick*. *Carrario* was assisted by the Marquis of *Ferrara*. In this War *Carrario* was entirely stripped of his Do-*War with*
minions; and the Marquis of *Ferrara* was obliged to *PADUA and*
deliver up the *Polesine* as a Security for eighty thousand *FERRARA.*
Ducats which he was indebted to the *Republick*. He also stipulated that no more Salt should be made at *Commachio*. During the Dogeship of *Antonio Corfu* before subject to the King of *Naples* put itself under the Dominion of the *Republick*. He died in the Year 1400.

Soon after the Election of *Michiele Steno Carrario*, to *MICHIELE,*
whom *Visconti* had at the Intercession of the *Republick* 1400.
restored *Padua*, laid Siege to *Vincenza*: But rather than fall into his Hands this City submitted to the *Venetians*,
and

and a Herald was sent to let *Carrario* know this. Instead of giving over the Siege he cut off the Messenger's Nose and Ears; and bid him tell his Masters that it would become them better to mind their fishing than to meddle in the Affairs of Princes.

Unhappy End
of CARRA-
RIO.

The War being hereupon renewed *Verona* and *Padua* were both taken; and *Carrario* with his Brother and Son being carried to *Venice* they were all privately strangled in *Prison*. Thus an End was put to the *Paduan War*, which had been so expensive and dangerous to the Republick: But the Joy hereby occasioned did not last long; for *Ladislaws* King of *Naples* and *Hungary* soon after attacked the Republick in *Dalmatia* and took *Zara* and some other Towns. These were however all redeemed for the Sum of 100,000 Ducats; and a Truce was made with him.

THOMAS,
1413.

Thomas Mocenigo who succeeded in the Year 1413 reformed some Abuses in the publick Offices; and the Republick being at Peace with her Neighbours the rebuilding of *St. Mark's Palace* was begun.

FRANCISCO,
1424.

Francisco Foscari elected in the Year 1424 was prevailed upon by the *Florentines* to engage with them in a War against *Philip* Duke of *Milan*. Several Treaties were made; but as *Philip* lost something by every one of these he soon broke through them all. A lasting Treaty was however concluded in the Year 1441. By this *Brescia*, *Bergamo*, *Peschiera*, *Legnano*, *Ravenna* and some other Places, were ceded to the *Venetians*: And the *Cremonese* was given to *Francis Sforça*, who during the War went over from *Philip* to the *Venetians* and had a great Share in their Success. *Sforça* was afterwards reconciled to *Philip* and married his natural Daughter. Upon the Death of *Philip* *Sforça* took Possession of the Dutchy of *Milan*: But the Dutcheffs Dowager opposed him in doing this and called in *France* and *Savoy* to her Assistance.

Treaty with
MILAN.

The VENETI-
ANS assist
FRANCIS
SFORÇA.

Hereupon the *Venetians*, although they did not like so enterprizing a Neighbour as *Sforça*, rather than *France* should have the Disposal of this Dutchy assisted him with Men and Money. Being established therein he pursuant to his Agreement confirmed the Cessions made by *Philip* to the Republick; and likewise gave up all belonging to *Milan* which lay beyond the *Adda*.

Whilst

While these Things were doing in *Italy* the *Turks War* with the took *Argos*, *Corinth* and other Places, from the Repub-^{TURKS.} lick. The *Venetians* afterwards turned all their Forces against the *Turks*: But finding it insufficient to stop their Progress they were glad to put an End to the War by giving up the Island of *Lemnos* and some Places in the *Morea*. By the Treaty made they also agreed to pay the yearly Sum of 8,000 *Ducats* for the Liberty of trading in the *Black-Sea*. After these important Services to the Republick *Foscari* was at last ungratefully deposed in the 84th Year of his Age.

In the Time of *Pascali Malipiero* who succeeded in ^{PASCALI,} the Year 1457 all *Italy* suffered greatly by an Earth- 1457-quake. He died in the Year 1462.

During the Dogeship of *Christophoro-Moro* the Repub-^{CHRISTO-} lick which was the first Christian State that entered into a ^{PHORO,} 1462. Treaty with the *Turks* paid dear for it. As they trusted too much thereto the Infidels overrun the *Morea*, and in the Year 1469 made themselves Masters of *Negropont*. The ^{The MOREA} Sultan *Mahomet II.* enraged at the Resistance made at ^{and NEGRO-} this last Place, 40,000 Men being lost before it, put all ^{PONTE taken} above the Age of twenty found therein to the Sword; and ^{by the TURKS,} contrary to his Promise caused *Paulo Erizzo* the Go- 1469. vernor to be cut in two with a Scimitar.

In the Year 1471 *Nicolas Trono* was raised to the ^{NICOLAS,} Dogeship. Some Time before this *James* a natural Son 1471. of *John King* of *Cyprus* had, without regarding the Pretensions of *Charlotte* the only legitimate Child of *John* who was married to *Lewis* of *Savoy*, seized this Kingdom. Having afterwards married *Katherine Cornaro* of *Venice*, who was in Consideration of this Match adopted as Daughter of the State, he left a Son of his own Name by her. As this Prince died soon after his Father the Senate sent *George Cornaro* to persuade his Sister *Katharine* to abdicate the Kingdom in Favour of the Republick. By his Threats and Intreaties she was prevailed upon so to do; but she declared publicly that her Consent was extorted from her. The *Venetians Acquisition of* being by these Stratagems in Possession of *Cyprus* they ^{CYPRUS.} would never enter into a Discussion of the House of *Savoy's* Right thereto; and gave no other Answer to its frequent

frequent Complaints of Injustice than in the Words of the Royal Prophet *: *Heaven is the Lords but he hath given the Earth to the Sons of Men.*

NICOLAS,
1473.

Nicolas Marcello elected in the Year 1473 died next Year.

PIERRE,
1474.

His Successor *Pierre Mocenigo* bravely defended *Scutari* against the *Infidels*; and restored the King of *Caramania* to his Dominions.

ANDREA,
1476.

At his Death in the Year 1476 the Election fell upon *Andrea Vendramino*. The *Turks* having in his Time overrun *Albania* he before his Death in the Year 1748 entered into a Negociation for a Treaty with them.

GIOVANNI,
1478.

Giovanni Mocenigo the next Doge brought this to a Conclusion. The Terms of the Treaty were that *Scutari* in *Albania* together with the Islands of *Corfu* and *Tenaro* should be ceded to the *Turks*.

War with
FERRARA.

In the Year 1480 *Hercules* Duke of *Ferrara* in Violation of the Treaty subsisting with *Venice* set the Salt Pits at *Commachio* at Work. A War ensuing *Naples*, *Florence* and *Milan*, united with him; but Ways being found to detach the Duke of *Milan* from the Alliance *Hercules* was in the End forced to give up *Rovigno* and the *Polesine* to the Republick. In lieu of these he was to have the Liberty of working the Salt Pits at *Commachio*.

MARCO,
1485.

Marco Barberigo elected in the Year 1485 was in the following Year succeeded by his Brother *Augustino Barberigo*.

AUGUSTINO,
1486.

This Doge entered into the Alliance for obliging *Charles VIII.* of *France* to quit *Naples*; and the Negotiation at *Venice* for forming this Alliance was carried on so secretly that the famous *Comines* Ambassador from the *French* Court knew nothing thereof. Being after its Conclusion acquainted therewith he was quite surprized; and in his Confusion said he hoped they would give his Master Leave to go home with his Troops. The *Venetians* who spared for no Expence on this Occasion were, upon *Ferdinand's* being established in *Naples*, put into Possession of *Otranto*, *Mola* and some other Places.

Not long after *Pisa* having revolted from the *Flo-War with*
rentines put itself under the Protection of the Republick. PISA.

As the *Florentines* had been all along dangerous Ene-
 mies to the *Venetians*, and would not enter into the Con-
 federacy against *France*, the *Venetians* were determined
 to support the *Pisans* against the *Florentines*. Whilst a
 War was carried on upon this Account *Lewis XII.* of
France, who laid Claim to *Milan* in the Right of his
 Grandmother *Valentina Visconti*, resolved to attack this
 Dutchy: And the *Venetians*, enraged at *Lewis Sforça* its
 present Duke for aiding the *Florentines* in the *Pisan*
 War and induced by the Promises of the *French King*
 to cede Part of this Dutchy to them, were brought into
 his Interest.

Many Senators represented the Absurdity of joining *The VENETI-*
 against *Sforça*, who could never be in a Condition of ANS unite with
 hurting the *Venetians*, and that if the *French* were once FRANCE in
 established in the *Milanese* the Republick could not long conque: ing
 be safe; but these Representations were slighted, and *Lewis* MILAN, 1499.
 by the Help of the *Venetians* soon became Master of this
 Dutchy

During these Wars in *Italy* the *Turks* fell upon the LEPANTO
Venetians and took *Lepanto*, *Moden*, *Coron* and *Durazzo*; and other
 all which they were for the Sake of putting a Stop to the Places ceded to
 Conquests of the *Infidels* obliged to give up by a Treaty. the TURKS.

Upon the Death of *Augustino Barberigo* in the Year LEONARDO,
 1501 *Leonardo Lorelano* was raised to the Dogeship. 1501.
Pope Alexander VI. dying shortly after and his natural
 Son *Cesar Borgia*, who had been poisoned, being in a
 languishing Condition the *Venetians* took *Rimini*, *Faenza*
 and some other Places from him. *Pope Julius II.* having
 in vain demanded the Restitution thereof as belonging to
 the Ecclesiastical Estate, and the Mediation of the Em-
 peror *Maximillian* having been refused, the latter de-
 clared War against the *Venetians*: But his Army being
 defeated near *de la Vieve* they took *Trieste* and some
 other Places, and he was glad to make Peace and leave Battle of DE
 them in Possession of their Conquests. LA VIEVE.

The Emperor however retained his Ill-will; and in
 the Year 1509 entered into a League at *Cambray* with League of
 the *Pope*, the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, the Duke of CAMBRAT,
Ferrara and the Marquis of *Mantua*, for humbling the 1509.
 * Re-

Battle of
VAILA.

Republick: Whose Pride and Encroachments upon all its Neighbours were grown intolerable. The *Venetians* might by satisfying some of the *Allies* have easily detached them from this League; but the Success which had for a good while attended their Arms made them imagine their Troops to be invincible. They were by dear Experience soon convinced how ill grounded this Notion was; for the *French* King entirely defeated their Army near *Vaila* with the Loss of 8,000 Men; and made General *Alviano* who commanded there Prisoner. Being at the same Time attacked by the other Allies they in a little Time found themselves dispossessed of every Thing upon the Continent except *Trevise*. The Offers made by the *Venetians* to the Emperor were rejected with Disdain; but by restoring *Ravenna*, *Faenza*, *Rimini* and some other Places, to the State of the Church, and by giving up the Right they had long enjoyed of presenting to Benefices they made the Pope easy.

The REPUB-
LICK enters
into a League
against
FRANCE.

The Towns and Ports which they held in *Naples* being soon after ceded to his *Spanish* Majesty he was also drawn off from the Alliance, and entered into one with the Pope and Republick against the *French*; who by the Addition of *Brescia*, *Bergamo*, *Cremona* and *Crema*, to the *Milanese* were looked upon to be too powerful in *Italy*. A Negotiation was also entered into under the Mediation of the Pope for purchasing *Padua*, *Verona* and *Vincenza*, which the Emperor had taken from them. This did not succeed; but *Andrea Gritto* their General surprized the former of these Places. The Duke of *Ferrara* who still adhered to *France* was excommunicated, and a strong Fleet was sent by the *Venetians* up the *Po* to attack the *Ferrarese*: But this was ruined and their Army was repulsed with great Loss by the Imperial General from before *Verona*. On the other Side the *Venetian* Troops, which were joined with those of *Spain* and the Pope, became Masters of all the *Brescian* except *Bergamo* and the Capital. The latter being invested by the *Venetians* it was after a brisk Action relieved by the *French* General *Gaston de Foix*: And *Andrea* who commanded the Siege with several other Officers were taken Prisoners. As the *Venetians* had suffered greatly in this Action it was determined to give over the Siege of

Battle of
BRESCIA.

Bononia:

Bononia: And the united Forces of *Spain*, *Venice* and the Pope retired towards *Ravenna*. The *French* General in Conjunction with the Duke of *Ferrara* followed; and coming up with them near *Ravenna* a Battle ensued. In this after a most obstinate Resistance and Battle of great Loss on both Sides the *French* were victorious; *RAVENNA*. but it cost them dear, for that excellent General *de Foix* being killed in the Action their Affairs from that Time declined, and they soon after agreed to evacuate *Italy*. The *Venetians* now turned their whole Force against the Emperor; and notwithstanding a Defeat they met with from the Imperial General at *Vincenza*, who cut off 5000 of their Army, they took several Towns in *Friuli*. A Treaty being concluded in the Year 1516 betwixt Treaty with the Emperor and the Republick, it was agreed that each the Emperor, Party should keep what it was in Possession of in *Friuli*; 1516. and that *Verona* should on their paying a Sum of Money be restored to the *Venetians*. Thus the *Cambray* War which had for eight Years together made *Italy* a Theatre of Blood and Confusion was happily ended; and the Republick such was her Prudence and Fortitude lost nothing, although the principal Powers of *Europe* were united against her, except what was ceded to *Spain* and the Pope.

Antonio Grimani, who in the Year 1521 succeeded *ANTONIO*. *Leonardo*, dying two Years after the Election fell upon *Andrea Gritto*; who had given great Proofs both of his Conduct and Courage during the *Cambray* War.

This Doge in the Contest betwixt *Charles V.* and *ANDREA*, *Francis I.* sometimes assisted one and sometimes the other, 1523. as it best suited with the Interest of the Republick; and thereby brought it again into a flourishing Condition.

The *Turks*, who were at War with the Emperor, War with the suspected the *Venetians* of assisting their Enemy private-TURKS, ly; and they were confirmed in this Suspicion by an intercepted Letter from the Imperial Admiral *Doria* to *Pesaro* the Republick's Admiral. *Doria* in this Letter, 1537. which he took Care to have fall into the Hands of the *Infidels*, informed *Pesaro* of the Approach of the *Turkish* Fleet; and added that now was the Time for the *Venetians* to attack the *Infidels*. It answered his Purpose of diverting the Storm which threatened his Master: For the Sultan

Soliman in the Year 1537 declared War against *Venice*. After losing fourteen Islands in the *Archipelago*, amongst which were *Chio*, *Patmos* and *Stamphalia*, and the Towns of *Nadin* and *Laurano* in *Dalmatia*, the *Venetians* plainly saw that the *Germans* who had drawn them therein did not act with Vigour, but endeavoured to throw the Burden of the War entirely on them. *Lewis Baduario* being hereupon sent Ambassador to *Constantinople* his Instructions were to make a Peace at any Rate; and if it could not be done otherways to offer *Malvasia* and *Napoli* in *Romania* and a large Sum of Money, the Senate did not care how much so that the Islands were restored again to the Republick. Some Persons having treacherously discovered his Orders, as soon as the *Venetian* Ambassador began to treat the *Turkish* Ministers told him plainly that he had better come at once to the Point; for they well knew his Commission and Trifling would answer no Purpose. Upon the whole a Treaty was in the Year 1539 concluded; but it cost the *Venetians* very dear; for they were forced to cede the fourteen Islands, some Towns in *Dalmatia*, *Malvasia* and *Napoli* in *Romania*, and to pay a large Sum of Money.

Treaty with
the TURKS.

PIERRE, In the same Year *Andrea* was succeeded by *Pierre*
159. *Lando*.

FRANCISCO, At his Death in the Year 1545 *Francisco Donato* was
1545. elected.

ANTONIO, *Antonio Trivisano* who succeeded in the Year 1553
1553. retired in the next Year into a Monastery.

FRANCISCO, *Francisco Venerio* the next Doge, who prudently took
1554. Care to keep out of the Wars in which his Neighbours were engaged, obtained the Surname of *Princeps Pacis*. He died in the Year 1556

LAURENTIO, In the Time of *Laurentio Priuli* Successor of *Francisco*
1556. *Venice* was visited with a severe Plague.

HIERONYMO. *Hieronimo Priuli* his Brother, who succeeded in the Year 1559, was for his Zeal against the Reformation rewarded by the Pope with the perpetual Right of choosing the Patriarch of *Aquileia*.

PIERRE, *Pierre Loredano* elected in the Year 1569 had the
159. Mortification to see *Venice* afflicted with Famine, Fire and War. Whilst the first of these raged, of which all *Italy* felt the Effects, the *Arsenal* took Fire and was burnt

to the Ground. The Loss of military Stores hereby occasioned together with the Solicitations of *John Miquez* a Jew, who having formerly resided at *Venice* was exasperated against the *Republick*, because they would not at his Request give up some Islands in the *Adriatick* to the Jews, encouraged the Sultan *Selim* to invade *Cyprus*. In the Year 1570, while the *Venetians* were preparing to repel the *Turks* and animating other *Christian* Powers to join with them, *Pierre* died and *Lewis Mocengio* succeeded.

The *Turks* besides some Places in *Dalmatia* took in LEWIS, 1570 the Year 1570 *Nicosia*; and in the next Year they *War with th* became Masters of *Famagosta* the Capital of *Cyprus*. TURKS. As this last Place held out a long Time and cost the *Infidels* 20,000 Men, the Governor was dead alive and all the Garrison were cut to Pieces contrary to the Capitulation. Being Master of this important *Island* *Selim* in- Battle of LE- tended to carry his Arms into *Italy*; but his Hopes of so PANTO, 1571 doing vanished upon the signal Overthrow of his Fleet near *Lepanto*. In this Action *Don John* of *Austria* Admiral of the Confederate Fleet in Conjunction with *Venier* the *Venetian* Admiral took 130 Gallies; burnt or sunk fourscore; killed 30,000 of the Enemy; made 5000 Prisoners; and delivered 20,000 Christians from Slavery. The Loss on the Side of the Allies being inconsiderable the *Turks* immediately abandoned *Cyprus*, and this Victory, had not the Jealousies and Misunderstandings amongst them prevented it, must have been followed with still greater Advantages to the Christians: But as the Admiral *Don John* of *Austria*, who was not without great Importunity prevailed upon to do thus much, would come into no further Measures for annoying the *Infidels* they had Time to rally their shattered Forces; and the *Venetians* were after some inconsiderable Efforts forced in the Year 1573 to make a Treaty with them. By this the rich and pleasant Treaty with *Island* of *Cyprus* together with *Dulcigno* and *Antivari* the TURKS. in *Dalmatia* were ceded to the *Turks*. A little before the Death of *Mocenigo*, which happened in the Year 1577, the City of *Venice* suffered a great deal by repeated Fires; and a severe Plague broke out therein.

SEBASTIANO, *Sebastiano Venier*, who was raised to the Ducal Chair
1577. for his brave Conduct in the Battle of *Lepanto*, dying nine
Months after he was succeeded by *Nicolas de Ponto*.

NICOLAS, In his Time the *Maltese* were chastised for their In-
1578. solence in committing Depredations upon the *Venetian*
Merchants.

PASCALI, *Pascali Ciconia*, who succeeded in the Year 1585, took
1585. Care that the Republick should not be involved in the
War in which most of the *European* Powers were at this
Time engaged. He built the Bridge called the *Rialto* ;
and died in the Year 1595.

MARINO, In the Time of *Marino Grimani* his Successor a Quar-
1595. rel with the See of *Rome* began in the following Man-
Quarrel with ner. A great Part of the Republick's Lands being got
the POPE. into the Hands of the Clergy, these were, as the Clergy
never parted with any Thing and insisted upon an Im-
munity from Taxes, become wholly useless to the State.
To put a Stop to this growing Evil a Decree of the Se-
nate was published : Whereby they were prohibited
from purchasing Land without License ; and all Persons
were prohibited from giving any real Estate to the
Church in any Manner or upon any Account whatsoever.
A Check being hereby put to the Ambition and Ava-
rice of the Clergy they complained to Pope *Paul V.*
Upon the Refusal of the Senate to revoke this Decree
he excommunicated the Republick ; yet the Senate re-
solved to carry the Decree into Execution. Most of
the Clergy submitted thereto. The *Jesuits*, *Capuchins*
and *Theatins* being refractory were banished. The Pope
endeavoured with all his Might to stir up the Catho-
lick Powers of *Europe* against the *Republick* : But as his
turbulent Humour and the insatiable Thirst of Church-
men for Riches and Power were well known it was all
in vain ; and the *Venetian* Ministers were in all Courts
treated with great Respect. Finding his Excommuni-
cation thus justly despised the Pope at last took it off of
his own Accord. The *Theatins* and *Capuchins* were
hereupon suffered to return ; but as the *Jesuits* had been
remarkably insolent, it was some Time before these were
allowed to set a Foot into the Dominions of the Repub-
lick. The ready Submission of all the Clergy, except
the Orders abovenamed, to the Senate in such a Coun-
try

try as *Italy*, where PRIESTCRAFT and CHURCH POWER are in their Meridian, seemed a little extraordinary; and was perhaps owing to the following Incident. In the Beginning of this Affair the Vicar of *Padua*, being asked by one of the chief Magistrates how he intended to act? answered he had not determined but that it should be as the *Holy Ghost* should direct him. The other replied that the *Holy Ghost* had already directed the Council of the Ten to hang all who were disobedient. This had such an Effect upon the Vicar that he was one of the first who submitted to the Decree.

Leonardo Donato elected in the Year 1605, in whose LEONARDO, Time this Dispute was ended, protested publicly against 1605. the Pope's Bull: And all along strenuously insisted upon the Right of the Senate to make any Regulation for the publick Good. He died in the Year 1612.

Antonio Memo his Successor took great Pains to suppress the *Uscoques*: But the Honour of doing this entirely 1612. was reserved for *Giovanni Bembo*, who succeeded in the GIOVANNI, Year 1615. 1615.

These People, whose Name means Fugitives, were at first composed of such as retired from the Towns in *Dalmatia* which came into the Hands of the *Turks*, and fixing at *Segna* and other Places thereabouts put themselves under the Protection of the Archduke of *Austria*. As the *Turks* had taken their All from these People they were implacable Enemies to them; and did them all the Mischief they could and especially at Sea. This privateering War against the *Infidels* being very profitable it by Degrees degenerated into downright Piracy; and as no Regard was paid to the Flag of any Nation the Navigation upon the *Adriatick* became quite unsafe. The Republick after repeated Complaints to the Court of *Vienna* without Redress fitted out armed Vessels against the *Uscoques*; and hung up all that fell into their Hands. Notwithstanding this as *Segna* was become the Resort and Refuge of Villains of all Sorts and Nations their Number encreased. It was hereupon resolved in the Senate to block up *Segna* and make Reprisals upon the *Austrians*. Commerce being greatly obstructed by the *Uscoques*, and all *Europe* being scandalized at the Court of *Vienna's* Protection of them, a Commissary was at last sent to

Segna with full Power to punish the guilty. As he banished many and put some of the most guilty to Death, he was accused of holding a Correspondence with the *Venetians*: And it was represented to the *Archduke*, that his Commissary's Cruelty had deprived him of great Numbers of brave Subjects. Being from this Time looked upon with an evil Eye by his own Court the Commissary was shortly after assassinated: Whereupon all who had been banished returned to *Segna*, and his Regulations being broke through Depredations were renewed. The Republick now lost all Patience, and after declaring War sent an Army into *Friuli*: But after some Progress made there this Affair was accommodated. The Conditions of the Accommodation were, that all Places in *Friuli* should be restored; that the Barks of the *Uscques* should all be burnt; and that most of the *Uscques* should be sent to *Carlsbadt* and other Towns at a Distance from the Coast. The Republick was hereby effectually delivered from the Robberies of these People; to prevent which they had been for many Years at a vast Expence.

NICOLAS,
1618.

Nicolas Donato, who was raised to the Ducal Dignity in the Year 1618, being deposed within a Month *Antonio Priuli* succeeded.

ANTONIO,
1612.
Conspiracy of
DE LA
QUEVA.

In his Time a most dangerous Conspiracy was formed by the Spanish Ambassador *Alphonso de la Queva*, the Duke of *Offuna* Viceroy of *Naples*, and the Governor of *Milan*, for ruining the Republick, and so delivering *Spain* from the only Power capable of thwarting her Designs in *Italy*. *De la Queva* had engaged some *Venetians* to set Fire to the Arsenal and City in several Places, and to take the Advantage of the Confusion thereby occasioned to open the Gates for some chosen Troops, which the Viceroy was to have ready. The Traitors had also agreed to murder by the Help of these Troops all the principal Senators: And at the same Time the Governor of *Milan* was to have an Army ready to seize the strong Places of the Republick upon the Continent. This Plot was carried on with such Secrecy, that notwithstanding the Number of Citizens engaged therein, it escaped the Knowledge of the Spies which are constantly employed by the Council of Ten; nor did they know

know the least of it till the Night before the intended Execution thereof. It was discovered by one *Jaffier* an Accomplice, who could not bear the Thought of the shocking Scene to be the next Day acted: And while he was under Examination two *French* Gentlemen arrived, on Purpose to inform the Senate of some Hints that had been dropped concerning it. Such of the Conspirators as could be seized met with the severest Punishment; but notwithstanding the Ambassador of *Spain* had had so large a Share in this Plot, the Senate unwilling to violate the Law of Nations contented themselves with insisting on his being recalled and punished by his Master. He however thought himself in Danger from the Populace; and took the first Opportunity of fleeing to *Milan*. Thus was the Republick delivered, when upon the Brink of Destruction, from the most dangerous Conspiracy ever formed against it.

After this the *Venetians* applied themselves to the pre-*The Attempt of* serving of the Liberty of *Italy* and guarding against the *SPAIN on the* Designs of the *Pope* and *Spaniards*. When these last *VALTALINE* endeavoured in the Year 1619 to make themselves *is frustrated,* Masters of the *Valtaline*, whose Inhabitants had revolted 1619. from the *Grisons*, the *Republick*, who well knew her Communication with *France*, *Savoy* and *Swisserland* would be thereby cut off, and that she should be entirely surrounded by the Dominions of *Spain* and the *Empire* both Subject to the House of *Austria*, with all her Might opposed it. She supplied the *Grisons* and *Swiss* with Money and Arms, until by soliciting the Courts of *England*, *France* and *Savoy* to assist in preserving the Independency of the *Grisons* such a Confederacy was formed, as prevented the *Spanish* Scheme which must in the End have been fatal to the Republick from taking Effect.

As it appeared from this Attempt that Union amongst *FRANCISCO,* the *Italian* Powers was absolutely necessary for their Pre- 1623. servation, the next Doge *Francisco Contarini*, elected in the Year 1623, took great Pains and at last succeeded in reconciling the Dukes of *Savoy* and *Manua*: Who had been long at Variance on Account of the Succession to *Montferrat*. He died in the Year 1625.

GIOVANNI,
1625.

Giovanni Cornaro his Successor joined with the *French* in supporting the Pretensions of *Charles* Duke of *Nevers* to the Dutchy of *Mantua*; and notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by the Emperor, *Spain* and *Savoy*, he was at last therein established. A little before the Death of *Giovanni* in the Year 1630 a Plague made great Havock in *Venice*.

NICOLAS,
1630.

Nicolas Contarini who succeeded reigned but one Year.

FRANCISCO,
1631.

In the Time of his Successor *Francisco Erizzo* the Knights of *Malta*, having taken some rich *Turkish* Ships bound to *Mecca*, carried them into a Port in *Candia*: Which being looked upon by the Sultan *Ibrahim* as protecting his Enemies he determined to resent it. He however at the same Time gave out, that the Fleet he was fitting out was intended against *Malta*: And notwithstanding the repeated Advice from their Consul at *Constantinople*, the Senate would not believe that he intended to make a Descent upon *Candia*; nor did they take any Measures for the Defence thereof.

War with
the POPE,
1641.

The Republick might indeed be diverted from taking the necessary Steps on this Account by the War she was engaged in against Pope *Urban VIII.* whose Nephews the *Barbarino's* had taken the Dutchy of *Castro* from *Edward* Duke of *Parma*. After this War, in which the Dukes of *Tuscany* and *Modena* acted in Concert with the Republick, had been continued with great Vigour for the space of four Years, a Peace was brought about in the Year 1645 by the Cardinal *Bichi* Minister of *France*; and *Edward* had Satisfaction. *Contarini* dying about this Time the Election fell upon *Francisco Melino*.

FRANCISCO,
1645.

The *Turkish* Fleet put to Sea in the same Year, and having landed some Troops in *Candia* the Forts *Theodore* and *Canea* soon fell into their Hands. In the next Year

War with the
TURKS, 1646

they took *Retimo*: But the *Venetians*, who had for the Sake of making a Diversion thrown themselves into *Dalmatia*, became in the Year 1647 Masters of *Cliffa*.

1647.

The *Turks*, wholly intent upon conquering *Candia*, instead of opposing the Progress of the *Venetians* in *Dalmatia* laid Siege in the following Year to *Candia*.

1648.

This was carried on two Years: But after losing many Men the *Turkish* General changed the Siege into a Blockade,

Blockade. Before the Death of this Doge in the Year 1655 nine *Turkish* Vessels were burnt by a Fireship in the Bay of *Foggium*.

His Successor *Carolo Contarini* was, after reigning one Year succeeded by *Bertuccio Valerio*. CAROLO, 1655.

In the Year of his Accession to the Dogeship the *Bertuccio*, Venetian Admiral *Mocenigo* defeated the *Turkish* Fleet 1656.

twice. In the first Action he took twelve Ships and burnt five; in the second the *Turks* lost fourteen Vessels: In both great Numbers were taken Prisoners. In the Year 1658 another still more compleat Victory was gained over the *Turks* by the Venetian Admiral *Marcello* near the *Battle of Dardanelles*: But this brave Admiral fell in the Action. LES, 1658.

All the *Turkish* Ships a few Gallies excepted were taken, sunk or burnt; ten thousand of the *Turks* were killed; and half as many *Christian* Slaves were set at Liberty. Soon after the Islands of *Tenedos* and *Lemnos* fell into the Hands of the *Venetians*. *Bertuccio* dying in the same Year *Giovanni Pisauo* was elected Doge.

He died about a Year after and was succeeded by *Giovanni, Dominico Contarini*. 1658.

Notwithstanding all this Success the *Venetians* were not able to drive the *Turks* from the Blockade of *Candia*: But as the *Sultan* had sent most of his Forces into *Transylvania* against *Ragotski*, who had revolted to the Emperor, this City was in no Danger. A Peace being concluded betwixt the *Sultan* and the Emperor, the Siege of *Candia* was renewed with great Vigour by the Grand *Vizier* in Person. At length the *French* Troops sent to its Relief under Marshal *Noailles* being defeated all Hopes of raising the Siege were lost: And the City surrendered in September 1679. This long Siege according to the best Calculation cost the *Turks* above 100,000 Men, besides seven *Bashaws* and fourscore Officers of Distinction. As the *Venetians*, who had also sustained great Loss, were unable alone to support the War a Treaty was shortly after concluded: By which *Suda*, *Treaty with Spinalonga* and *Carabusa* in *Candia*, with *Cliffa* and some other Places in *Dalmatia* were left to the *Venetians*. All the rest of *Dalmatia* and of the Island of *Candia* was ceded to the *Turks*.

DOMINICO, 1652.

1679.

LEWIS, 1676. Three Years before the Conclusion of this Treaty *Lewis Contarini* was raised to the Dogeship in the Room of *Nicolas Sagredo*, who had been deposed soon after his Election.

MARCO, 1684. *Marco Antonio Justiniani* who succeeded in the Year 1684 resolved to make use of the favourable Opportunity, which the Loss sustained by the *Turks* in being repulsed from *Vienna* gave him, to join with the Christians against their common Enemy: And as the Island of *St. Maure* had ever since it came into the Hands of the *Turks* been a Harbour for the *Corfsairs* of *Barbary*, the Conquest thereof was resolved upon. While the *Venetian* Fleet bombarded the City of *St. Maure* it was pressed on the Land Side by the confederate Forces of the Pope, *Malta* and *Tuscany*, and soon forced to surrender. The Coast of *Dragomestro* being afterwards ravaged and *Previza* being taken, the Allied Army lay still

ST. MAURE
taken.

1685.

the Remainder of this Campaign. In the Year 1685 the * *Morlaques* in Revenge for their Sufferings from the *Turks* declared for the *Venetians*; and taking *Paulo Michiele* a noble *Venetian* for their Leader assisted in raising the Siege of *Duaro*. *Coron* was also taken and sacked by the *Venetian* Admiral *Francisco Morosini*. In the next Campaign *Morosini*, having first raised the Siege of *Cliffa*, assisted Count *Koningsmark* in taking *Novaron*, *Modon* and *Napoli* and *Romania*. In the Year 1687 the *Venetian* Fleet passed the *Dardanelles*: Which struck such Terror into the *Turks*, who had looked upon this as impracticable, that the Recovery of *Lepanto* and good Part of the *Morea* became easy. On receiving the News of this Success at *Venice* great Rejoicings were made for three Days; a Statue of Brass was erected in Honour of *Morosini*: And Presents were made to all his Officers who had distinguished themselves. The Doge dying soon after no Person was thought by the Senate so proper to succeed as *Morosini*.

Part of the
MOREA re-
conquered,
1687.

FRANCISCO,
1688.

Francisco Morosini, who in Return for this Honour thought himself bound to do something of Consequence, attempted the Siege of *Negroponte*; but notwithstanding his utmost Efforts he failed therein. While these Things were doing at Sea the *Venetian* Army under General *Cornaro* made great Progress in *Albany* and

* The Inhabitants of the Mountains in CROATIA are so called.
Dalmatia

Dalmatia. As *Francisco* fell ill, and his Physicians declared it necessary for the Preservation of his Life, he returned next Year to *Venice*: Where he was received with all the Marks of Affection and Distinction justly due to him for the important Services done his Country.

Valier, who succeeded in commanding the Fleet, *Bravery and* being sent in the *St. Mark* to *Milo* for collecting the *Death of VA-* Tribute of this *Island*, he had the Misfortune to fall in *LIER.* with ten *Algerine* Ships under the famous Pyrate *Mezzo Porto*. After fighting his Ship bravely for some Time his Powder took Fire: Yet *Valier* would not strike. At last the *St. Marks* Rudder being lost; *Valier* being himself killed by a Cannon Ball; and his Lieutenant being mortally wounded; the *Turks* boarded her: But while they were rummaging her she sunk and all on board perished.

On the Death of *Francisco*, in the Year 1694 *Sylvest-* SYLVESTRO, *tro Valier* was raised to the ducal Chair. In the next 1694. Year the *Turks*, who since the Death of *Valier* had been successful in two naval Engagements, went to attack *Chio*: And by the Cowardice of the *Venetian Ad* CHIO lost, miral, who fled in the Night with such Precipitation that 1695. Part of the *Republic's* Troops had not Time to reembark, the whole Island was soon subdued; and all the *Venetians* left behind were made Slaves.

The Emperor being come to a Resolution of making *Treaty of* a Peace with the *Turks*, the Republic did the same under *CARLOWITZ,* the Mediation of the Court of *London*. By a Treaty signed 1699. at *Carlowitz* in the Year 1699 it was agreed, that the *Venetians* should keep all they had gained in the *Morea* together with the Islands of *St. Maure* and *Engia*; that *Lepanto* and all the Islands in the *Archipelago* should be restored to the *Turks*; that the *Venetians* should be left in Possession of the Forts of *Chnin*, *Sing*, *Ciclut* and *Gabella*; that a strait Line should be drawn from *Chnin* to *Vertica*, from *Vertica* to *Sing*, from *Sing* to *Duaro*, from thence to *Vergoraz*, and so on to *Ciclut* and *Gabella*, which was to be the Boundary of the Dominions of the two Powers; and that some other less important Matters should be settled by Commissaries.

Marco Antonio Mocenigo, who succeeded in the Year *MARCO,* 1700, prudently kept out of the War which disturbed 1700. Europe on Account of the *Spanish* Succession.

In

GIOVANNI,

1709.

A Misunder-
standing with
FRANCE.

In the Time of *Giovanni Cornaro*, who was raised to the ducal Chair in the Year 1709, a Misunderstanding arose betwixt the Courts of *Paris* and *Venice* on the following Occasion. The former having in the Year 1710 fixed upon Cardinal *Ottoboni* to be the Protector of the Rights of *France* at *Rome*, it was opposed by the Republick; Whose Laws forbade every Subject who had been in any publick Employment to enter into foreign Service. As *France* persisted in her Choice and the Cardinal accepted the Charge all his Family were banished; and he was deprived of his Privileges as a Senator. Ambassadors were immediately recalled on both Sides, and every thing looked like an open Rupture; but it ended in nothing more than a Coolness betwixt the two Courts. In the next Year the Republick sent a Person of Rank to *Paris* to make this Matter up; and she would fain have been *Mediatrice* betwixt the Allies and *France*. This being refused by the Courts of *Madrid* and *Paris*, both which her Acknowledgment of the Emperor as King of *Spain* had disgusted, she sent her Ministers to the Congress at *Utrecht*, to demand Satisfaction for some Losses sustained during the War; but none was obtained.

War with the
TURKS,
1715.

Great Preparations for War being in the Year 1715 made by the *Turks*, which were supposed to be intended against the *Venetians*, the latter lost no Time in putting themselves into a Posture of Defence: And the Imperial Minister at *Constantinople* had Orders to declare, that if the Republick should be attacked his Master could not dispense with the Obligations he was under of assisting her. War being nevertheless declared the Pope and the Knights of *Malta* joined their Forces to those of *Venice*; but this did not prevent the *Turks* from taking all in the *Morea* from the *Venetians*: Nor would they have come off so if the Emperor had not made a powerful Diversion in *Hungary*. The *Turks* next landed an Army upon the Island of *Corfu*; and laid Siege to the Capital the only fortified Place therein. This Place and consequently the whole Island being saved by the Courage and Conduct of General *Schulemburg*, the Senate amongst other Acknowledgments decreed him a Statue in the Palace of *Corfu*. As the *Turks* afterwards employed all their Forces

CORFU saved
by SCHU-
LEMBURG.

Forces in *Hungary*, nothing remarkable which properly belongs to the History of *Venice* happened.

Peace being restored in the Year 1718 by the Treaty *Treaty of Pass-*
of Passarowitz, the Republick, who avoided entering SAROWITZ,
 either into the War in *Italy* on account of the *Polish* 1718.
 Election, or into that betwixt the Emperor and the
Turks, has ever since enjoyed a profound Tranquillity.

Giovanni was in the Year 1722 succeeded by *Aloisio* ALOISIO,
Mocenigo. 1722.

Carolo Ruzzini succeeded in the Year 1732. CAROLO.

He was in the Year 1735 succeeded by *Aloisio Pisani*. ALOISIO.

The present Doge, who was raised to the ducal Chair PIERRE,
 in the Year 1741, is *Pierre Grimani*. 1741.

The *Venetians* have not so much Subtlety as some other *Manners of the*
Italians; but this is sufficiently made amends for by their VENETIANS.

Prudence and Judgment. Their Jealousy of their Li-
 berties which they have preserved in the most dangerous
 Circumstances is such, that if any one amongst them be-
 comes too popular, he is immediately sent to the Govern-
 ment of some foreign Province. They are easily pro-
 voked; and although they seem to be reconciled never
 forgive the least Affront, and only wait for an Opportunity
 of revenging it. They are very frugal in their Families
 that they may have the more to spare for their Pleasures:
 In which they indulge themselves without Restraint. As
 Courtezans are publickly licensed, and the younger Sort
 and especially of the Nobility are kept within no Bounds,
 this with the sordid Flattery and Meanness of their Do-
 mesticks makes the Nobility haughty, lascivious, and vio-
 lent in all their Passions.

The Republick of *Venice* is on the account of its Capi- *Dominions of*
 tal and Dominions, some of which may be justly reckon- *the REPUB-*
 ed the Bulwark of Christendom, very considerable. The LICK.
 Strength of her Capital consists a good deal in its Situ-
 ation: Which is on many Islands in the middle of a low
 Tract of Land, five or six Miles broad, overflowed by the
 Sea. On the Land Side the Water is generally so shal-
 low, that they are forced to set up Piles to shew where
 there is a sufficient Depth for the Passage of a Boat. As
 the *Venetians* could in Case of Need easily cut down these
 Piles, an Army would in all Probability perish before it
 got near enough to hurt them. This Shallowness of the
 Water is certainly a great Security to *Venice*; but the
Venetians

Venetians are at a vast Expence in clearing away the Sand which constantly lodges, and would by Degrees rise so high as to make the City accessible from the Land. Towards the *Adriatick* there is no Passage except that of *Lido*, which is narrow and defended by a strong Castle, that has sufficient Depth of Water for a Ship of any considerable Burthen to approach the City. The *Trevisan*, *Paduan*, *Vincentin*, *Bergamase*, *Brescian*, *Cremone* and *Polesine* in *Italy*; together with good Part of *Istria*, *Dalmatia*, *Friuli* and *Albania*, and many Islands, the principal of which are *Corfu*, *Zante* and *Cephalonia*, belong to the Republick. These Countries are in the general fertile of Corn, Wine and Oil; and they abound with Silk.

*Its Revenues,
Strength and
Trade.*

It has been calculated that the Revenue of the Republick, besides the large Sums which arise from Confiscations, Sale of Offices, and of the Peerage which is frequently sold, the large Contributions raised on the *Jews*, and the Tenths paid by the Clergy, amounts annually to 6,890,000 Ducats * of Silver: So that as the Expence of the Government in Time of Peace is not more than 4,000,000 of Ducats, she must necessarily in any long Peace grow rich. It is said, that before the *Candian* War there were in *St. Mark's* Treasury 14 or 15,000,000 of Ducats in Specie; and a Chain of Gold, which is shewn to the People on some publick Days, that forty Porters could scarce carry. The Arsenal of *Venice* is always so well furnished with Arms and all military Stores, that a considerable Fleet can be fitted out and a large Army set on Foot at a very short Warning. The Trade of the *Venetians* is vastly declined. They used formerly to supply all *Europe* with Spices and other *India* Goods, which were brought over Land through *Egypt* and *Syria*, at their own Price; but since the Discovery of a Way to the *East-Indies* by Sea the *India* Trade is entirely got into other Hands. The *Venetians* have moreover suffered a good deal from the Edicts of *Lewis XIV.* by which the importing of Glass, Looking-glasses and *Venice* Point into *France* is prohibited; but they have still a great Demand for all these Manufactures in *Germany*, *Italy* and *Turky*.

* Worth about Four Shillings each.

The Senate, which has the entire Administration of *Its Government*. Affairs, is composed of such noble Families as were elected Senators in *Pierre Gradenigo's* Time; of about thirty more whose eminent Services or the Sums advanced by them for the publick during the *Genoesse* Wars recommended them to this Dignity; and of seventy more who bought the same while the *Candian* War which quite exhausted *St. Mark's* Treasury continued. Although all these Families their Names being written in the Golden Book are reputed equal; yet the most ancient are commonly fixed upon for Offices of great Trust. There are besides several foreign Families enrolled amongst the *Venetian* Senators, as that of *Bourbon*; most of the *Italian* Princes; and the Families of *Richelieu*, *Joyeuse*, *Mazarin* and *d'Argenson*. Every Male of all these Families, when resident in *Venice*, has a Right to all the Senatorial Priviledges. A *Venetian* Senator is prohibited from receiving any Pension from or enjoying any Estate in the Dominions of a foreign Prince; nor is he or any Son of his suffered to marry a Foreigner, or to correspond with any foreign Minister. He may marry into any noble Family that resides in the Republick's Dominions out of *Venice*, although such Family has no Share in the Government; but if he marries any Person beneath his own Rank his Priviledges do not descend to the Sons of such Marriage. The Right of Primogeniture is not regarded in *Venice*: The Estate being divided equally among the Male heirs, who have all when twenty-five Years of Age and resident in *Venice* a Vote in the Senate. The Head of the Republick who is called *Doge* is elected by the Senate; and has the Title of *Serene Highness*. All Decrees and publick Dispatches are wrote in and the Coin bears his Name: Yet upon the whole he is no more than President of the Senate; can do nothing without its Consent; and is as much accountable to the Laws as the meanest Subject. He is allowed a Pension of 11,300 Crowns to support his Dignity; but he cannot stir out of *Venice* without the Leave of the Senate: And lest he should at any Time attempt to make himself arbitrary his near Relations are always excluded from Offices of Trust.

It

The Interest of It is for the Interest of the Republick to be upon good
VENICE with Terms with the Pope: Whose Influence will be always
Regard to the useful in gaining her Allies when attacked by the *Turks*.
 POPE. She has for all this on many Occasions vigorously op-
 posed the Encroachments of this Pontiff; and to prevent
 the Intrigues of Churchmen in his Favour they are ren-
 dered incapable of all civil Employments.

GERMANY.

The *Venetians* have Reason to fear, that the House of *Austria* will at some Time revive its Claims on the *Pa-
 duan* and *Trevisan*: But as the Power of this House
 in *Italy* is a good deal reduced they are at present secure
 enough. It is for the Interest of the Republick to cul-
 tivate a good Understanding with the Empire: Whose
 Assistance often has been and always will be of the
 utmost Service in the case of a Rupture with the
Turks. On the other Hand as the Empire has always
 suffered by Expeditions into *Italy*, it will never be pru-
 dent for the *Germanick Body* to disturb any of the *Italian*
 Powers, and especially this Republick, who is the best
 Ally it can have against the Infidels.

SPAIN.

The Republick, who has not yet forgot the Conspi-
 racy wherein the *Spanish* Ambassador was engaged, ought
 to be jealous of the Power of *Spain* in *Italy*; and it par-
 ticularly concerns her that the Dutchy of *Milan* does
 not fall under Subjection to a *Spanish* Prince.

FRANCE.

The *Venetians* have not much to fear from *France*,
 which is at a great Distance from them: But it is for
 their Interest to preserve the Balance of Power betwixt
 the Houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon*.

SAVOY.

The assuming of the Title of King of *Cyprus* by the
 King of *Sardinia* is to this Day disliked by the Republick,
 although the Island of *Cyprus* has been long subject to the
Turks. The Friendship however of this Prince, who is
 in Possession of the Passes into *Italy*, and is by the Acqui-
 sition of *Sardinia* become formidable, ought to be cul-
 tivated by the Republick. On the other Hand she is ca-
 pable of assisting him on many Occasions; and it is upon
 the whole for their mutual Interest to be upon good Terms.

NAPLES and
SICILY.

They would thereby lose a beneficial Trade; nor
 could the *Venetians* get any Thing by a Rupture with the
 King of the *Two Sicilies*. On the contrary as they could
 annoy

annoy him greatly by Sea, it is not likely that he should attack them.

It is much for the Interest of the other States of *Italy* The other to be in Alliance with the Republick; and indeed the ITALIAN Preservation of all the *Italian* States, and the Liberties States. of *Italy*, does very much depend upon Union amongst themselves.

The Republick is in no Danger from the *Swiss*; nor SWISSERS can she have any Interest in attacking them. On the LAND. contrary it concerns her to be in Amity with the *Swiss*, that she may in case of Need hire Troops of them.

A prodigious Hatred of the *Portuguese* did for a long PORTUGAL Time subsist amongst the *Venetians*, because the *Portuguese* were the first who deprived the *Venetians* of their *India* Trade: But as this is now pretty well forgot and both States have Reason to be jealous of *Spain*, it is for their mutual Interest to be upon good Terms.

The Friendship of the *Maritime* Powers ought always The MARI- to be cultivated by the Republick; for, besides that it is TIME POW- their Interest in common with hers to preserve the Bal- ERS. lance of Power betwixt the Houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon*, without the Assistance of a Fleet from them the House of *Bourbon* might easily become Master of the *Mediterranean*. These Powers too can by their Fleets convey Succours and Provisions to the Republick, when her other Allies cannot bring her either of these.

The Republick has little or no Concern with any of The NORTH- the Northern Powers except *Poland*; with whom she is ERN POWERS. engaged in a Defensive Alliance against the *Turks*.

The *Venetians* have suffered a great deal and have more The TURKS. to fear from the *Turks*; for, notwithstanding that all the Christian Powers are concerned in point of Interest to join with them against the common Enemy, it has been often found that their Assistance was not to be depended upon, or was rendered ineffectual by the Jealousies which arose amongst themselves. For these Reasons, and on Account of the great Traffick which they carry on in *Turky*, it is for the Interest of the *Venetians* to avoid as much as possible a War with the *Turks*.

C H A P. VIII.

Of D E N M A R K.

DENMARK a *very ancient Monarchy.* **D**ENMARK a very ancient Monarchy had its Kings long before the Birth of JESUS CHRIST; but as the ancient History of this Kingdom is in the general obscure and uncertain, we shall content ourselves with just mentioning a few Things, which are with some Degree of Certainty handed down.

FROTHO III. *Frotho* III. one of the most famous amongst the ancient Kings of *Denmark*, was as it is said Master of *Denmark*, *Sweden*, *Norway*, *England*, *Ireland* and that Part of *Germany* bordering on the *Baltick*. He likewise subdued the *Vandals*; and took upon himself the Title of King of the *Vandals*.

GOTRIC. *Gotric* another of the antient Kings was remarkable for the great Assistance he gave to *Witiking* King of *Saxony* against the Emperor *Charlemain*.

ERIC I. 846. In the Time of *Eric* I. who reigned about the Year of CHRIST 846, Christianity was first promulgated in this Kingdom by *Ansgarius* Bishop of *Bremen*.

GORMO II. An Attempt being afterwards made to extirpate Christianity by *Gormo* II. the Emperor *Henry* the *Bird-catcher* took up Arms against him, and forced him to permit the free Exercise thereof all over his Dominions.

HARALD VI. In the Reign of *Harald* VI. Son of *Gormo* II. *Jutland* and some other Provinces in *Germany* belonging to the *Danes* were conquered by *Otho* the Great.

SWEYN I. 980. *Sweyn* his Son, who succeeded to the Crown in the Year 980, being taken Prisoner by the *Fulins*, the Women gave their Ornaments of Gold and Silver for his Ransom. In Return for this he ordained that Daughters, who before inherited only a small Part of their Father's Estate, should for the Time to come share equally with Sons.

Canute

Canute II. Son and Successor of *Sweyn*, surnamed *the CANUTE II.* Great, compleated the Conquest of *England* which his Father had begun.

At the Death of this Prince in the Year 1017 his *CANUTE III.* Dominions were divided betwixt his three Sons. *Harald* had *England*; *Sweyn* *Norway*; and *Canute* *Denmark*.

After the Death of *Canute Magnus* Son of *Olaus* the *MAGNUS.* Saint King of *Norway* made himself Master of *Denmark*.

The Kingdom of *Denmark* was afterwards conquered *SWEYN II.* by *Sweyn*, who defeated *Harald Hardroode* King of *Norway*.

Sweyn died in the Year 1074, and *Harald* his Son *HARALD* after reigning two Years was succeeded by *Canute* his *VII.* Brother.

This Prince by encreasing the Power and Authority *CANUTE IV.* of the Bishops, and by granting the Tenth Penny to the Clergy, so exasperated his Subjects, that the *Futlanders* fell upon and slew him in the Year 1087: But in Return for his Liberality to the Church he was canonized.

Olaus IV. his Brother was next raised to the Throne; *OLAUS IV.* and at his Death in the Year 1095 *Eric* another Son of *1087.* *Sweyn II.* succeeded.

After taking *Julin* a strong City in *Pomerania* *Eric* *ERIC II.* died in the Year 1105 in the Island of *Cyprus*, as he was *1095.* going a Pilgrimage to *Jerusalem*.

After a long civil War which followed upon the *SWEYN III.* Death of *Eric*, *Sweyn*, *Canute* and *Waldemar*, who all *CANUTE V.* laid Claim to the Crown, agreed to divide the King-*WALDEMAR* dom betwixt them: But *Canute* being assassinated at the *l. 1157.* Instigation of *Sweyn*, and *Sweyn* being slain in a Battle with *Waldemar*, the latter became about the Year 1157 Master of the whole Kingdom. *Waldemar* afterwards chastised the *Rugians* and *Vandals*, who had during the civil War committed great Ravages in *Denmark*; demolished *Julin*; and laid the Foundation of *Dantzick*. In his Time also it was that *Absalom* Bishop of *Roschild* *COPENHAGEN* began to build *Copenhagen*. *founded.*

Canute his Son, who succeeded in the Year 1182, *CANUTE VI.* was for a long Time at War with the *Vandals*; but he *1182.* in the End forced all their Princes to do him Homage, and took upon himself the Title of King of the *Vandals*. He

ESTHONIA and LIVONIA *conquered.* afterwards took *Hamburg*, which continued subject to the *Danes* twenty seven Years, and other Places from *Adolph* Count of *Holstein*; and having conquered *Esthonia* and *Livonia* caused the Christian Religion to be preached in these Provinces. He died in the Year 1202 and was succeeded by *Waldemar* his Brother.

WALDEMAR II. 1202. This Prince was in the Beginning of his Reign very successful, and considerably extended his Dominions in *Germany*; but they were afterwards greatly diminished in Consequence of his Conduct with regard to Count *Swerin*. The latter being informed upon his Return from an Expedition to the *Holy Land*, that *Waldemar*, to whose Care he had committed his Lady and Country, had most wickedly abused his Confidence by living in Adultery with her, he contrived to make *Waldemar* Prisoner; and after confining him three Years forced him to pay 45,000 Marks of Silver for his Ransom.

Many Provinces revolt. *Pomerania*, *Mecklenburg*, *Lubeck* and *Dantzick* took this Opportunity to revolt. *Adolph* Count *Schawenberg* took from him many Places in *Holstein*; and the Knights of the *Teutonic* Order made themselves Masters of *Esthonia* and *Livonia*. Attempting to recover these Countries *Waldemar* was defeated with great Loss in the Year 1227 by Count *Schawenberg* at the Battle of *Bornhou*: He however before his Death in the Year 1241 did recover *Esthonia* and *Revel*.

ERIC V. 1241. *Eric* his eldest Son succeeded to the Crown; but *Waldemar* gave some Parts of his Dominions to his other Sons: As the Dutchy of *Sleswick* to *Abel*; the Province of *Blking* to *Canute*; and the Islands of *Laland* and *Falster* to *Christopher*. A Quarrel soon arose between *Eric* and his Brothers who refused to do him Homage; and a War ensued, which lasted till he was assassinated by *Abel* in the Year 1250.

ABEL, 1250. After reigning two Years *Abel* was slain in a Battle with the *Friselanders* and *Ditmarsians*, and *Christopher* succeeded.

CHRISTOPHER I. 1252. This Prince after suffering a good deal from the Intrigues of the Archbishop of *Lunden* clapped him into Prison: But it cost *Christopher* dear; for being excommunicated he was poisoned in the Year 1286, and as some say with the Host.

The Reign of *Eric* his Son was greatly disturbed ERIC VI.
by the Clergy; and he was at the same Time at War 1286.
with both *Norway* and *Sweden*. He was at last barbarously assassinated by some Lords of his own Kingdom.

Eric his Son upon his Accession declared War against ERIC VII.
the King of *Norway*, who had given Shelter to his Father's Assassins: But nothing considerable was done by *Eric* in this or in his Wars with some other Neighbours. He died in the Year 1319.

Christopher Brother and Successor of *Eric*, who associated CHRISTOPHER II.
his Son *Eric* with him in the Government, was driven out of the Kingdom because he had laid very heavy 1319.
Taxes on his Subjects; and *Waldemar* Duke of *Sleswick* was chosen. The People grew afterwards weary of *Waldemar* and *Christopher* was recalled. In a Battle with *Waldemar* *Eric* was mortally wounded.

In this Reign the Kingdom of *Denmark* was so torn The Kingdom
into Pieces that scarce any Thing remained to *Christopher*; and the Interregnum of seven Years, which hap- is rent into
pened after his Death in the Year 1334, gave the *Holsteiners* an Opportunity of lording it in *Denmark*. Being
at length quite tired with their Oppressions, the *Danes* invited *Waldemar* Son of their late King, who had been brought up at the Court of the Emperor *Lewis* the *Bavarian*, to the Throne.

This Prince drove most of the *Holsteiners* out of WALDEMAR III.
the Kingdom; and in some measure reestablished its Affairs. He did indeed sell *Estonia* to the Knights of the *Teutonic Order* for 18,000 Marks of Silver, most of which he spent in a Voyage to the *Holy-Land*: But to make good the Loss of this Province, he prevailed on *Magnus Samech* of *Sweden* to restore *Scania*, which the Count of *Holstein* had sold to him in the late Reign.

By a Treaty concluded in the Year 1366 betwixt him ALBERT of SWEDEN
and *Albert* of *Sweden*, the Island of *Gothland* and some Places belonging to the *Swedes* were ceded to *Waldemar*. makes large
He had afterwards some Quarrels with the *Hans Towns*, Cessions to him.
and died in the Year 1375.

During the Minority of *Olaus* Successor of *Waldemar*, who was the Son of his Daughter by *Hacquin* OLAUS VI.
of *Norway*, *Margaret* Mother of *Olaus* had the Administration of Affairs. This Prince succeeded after- 1375.
wards NORWAY is annexed to DENMARK.

wards to the Crown of *Norway*, and in Right of his Father who was Son of *Magnus Samech* laid Claim to that of *Sweden*.

MARGARET, At the Death of *Olaus* in the Year 1387, the *Danes* and
1387. *Norwegians* chose *Margaret* his Mother for their Queen; who having associated *Eric* of *Pomerania* her Sister's Son in the Government immediately declared War against *Albert* of *Sweden*. As the *Swedes* dissatisfied with *Albert* were ready to submit to *Margaret*, the Troops of *Albert* were soon dispersed; and he was taken Prisoner.

War with SWEDEN. After six Years Confinement *Margaret* upon his re-
Union of the three NORTH- nouncing all Pretensions to the *Swedish* Throne set *Albert*
ERN CROWNS. at Liberty, and caused *Eric* her Collegue to be crowned King of *Sweden*. Not long after it was in an Assembly of the States of *Denmark*, *Sweden* and *Norway* at *Calmar* resolved, that for the Time to come these three Kingdoms should be subject to the same Sovereign. *Margaret* died in the Year 1412 greatly regretted by the *Danes*: To whom she had been an extraordinary good Queen.

ERIC VIII. *Eric* now sole Master of the three Kingdoms had a
1412. long Quarrel with the Counts of *Holstein*, who were assisted by the *Hans Towns*, concerning the Dutchy of *Sleswick*; but it was at last made up. In the Year 1438 he gave the Isle of *Rugen* to the Duke of *Pomerania* his Cousin, which had been for many Years subject to *Denmark*.

He is stripped of his Dominions. About this Time the *Swedes*, disgusted because *Eric* had violated the Oath taken at his Coronation by sending many foreign Officers amongst them, resolved to stand up in Defence of their Liberties. The *Danes* and *Norwegians* also, taking the Advantage of his neglecting the Affairs of Government and living altogether in *Gothland*, threw off their Obedience; and after alledging that he had forfeited his Right to the Crown, by endeavouring contrary to the reserved Privilege of Election to raise *Bogistas* Duke of *Pomerania* to the Throne, they chose *Christopher* Duke of *Bavaria* his Sister's Son for their King. *Eric* finding himself thus stripped of his Dominions retired in the Year 1439 to *Pomerania*, and spent the Remainder of his Days privately.

Christopher

Christopher reigned nine Years to the general Satisfaction of his Subjects. The Crown being at his Death offered to *Adolph* Duke of *Sleswick*, he excused himself on the account of his infirm old Age from accepting thereof: But he recommended to the *Danes* and *Norwegians* *Christian* Count *Oldenburgh* his Sister's Son, from whom the present Royal Family of *Denmark* is descended. CHRISTOPHER III. 1439.

As the *Swedes* did not agree with the two other Nations in choosing *Christian* for their King, but elected *Charles Canutson*, the former soon after his Accession made War against *Charles*; and many *Swedish* Lords joined with him. After this War had been for some Time carried on with great Animosity, the Bishop of *Upsal* fell upon *Charles* so unexpectedly that he was forced to save himself by flying into *Prussia*; and *Christian* was in the Year 1458 crowned King of *Sweden*: But the *Swedes* dissatisfied with his Government in the Year 1463 recalled *Charles*, whereupon the War betwixt the two Nations was renewed. CHRISTIAN I. 1448. The SWEDS refuse to acknowledge him. He is crowned King of SWEDEN, 1458.

At the Death of *Charles* in the Year 1470 *Christian* went with a powerful Army into *Sweden*; but instead of regaining the Crown he was routed with great Loss near *Stockholm* in the Year 1471. The Emperor gave to this Prince the Province of *Ditmarsh*; and erected the County of *Holstein* into a Dutchy for him. *Margaret* one of his Daughters having married to *James III.* of *Scotland*, *Charles* gave her in Dowry the Islands of *Orkneys* and *Sbetland*: Which before appertained to the Kingdom of *Norway*. Rout of the DANES, 1471.

Upon the Death of *Christian* in the Year 1481 his Son, who divided the Dutchy of *Holstein* with his Brother *Frederick*, was chosen King of *Denmark* and *Norway*. JOHN, 1481.

After reigning peaceably many Years *John* attacked *Sweden* with great Vigour; and having defeated the *Dalecarlians* forced *Steen Sture*, in whose Hand the Administration of Affairs was, to deliver up *Stockholm*. He was hereupon crowned King of *Sweden*; but his Army was afterwards defeated by *Steen Sture*, and he was forced to quit the Kingdom. *Steen Sture* Administrator of the Affairs of *Sweden*, and *Suante Sture* his Successor, did He is crowned King of SWEDEN.

afterwards in Concert with the *Lubeckers* give *John* so much Trouble, that he was glad a little before his Death in the Year 1513 to accommodate Matters with the latter.

CHRISTIAN
II. 1513.

Christian the Son and Successor of *John* soon drew upon himself the Hatred of the *Danes*: Which was occasioned partly by his suffering himself to be governed by *Sigebrita*, a cunning old Woman Mother to *Duveche* whom he kept as a Mistress, and partly by his putting the Governor of *Copenhagen* to Death unjustly.

He obtains the
the Crown of
SWEDEN, but
is afterwards
driven from
thence.

A Difference arising about this Time in *Sweden*, betwixt *Steen Sture* the younger and *Gustavus Trolle* Archbishop of *Upsal*, whose Castle had been plundered by *Steen*, *Christian* came to the Archbishop's Assistance and carried him for Safety into *Denmark*. An Expedition was soon after concerted by these two against *Sweden*; and they obtained a Decree from the Pope, condemning the *Swedes* to condign Punishment for the Outrage done to *Gustavus*. *Steen Sture* being slain in his first Battle with the Troops which *Christian* sent to carry this Decree into Execution, the Affairs of *Sweden* were thrown into such Confusion, that upon *Christian's* going in Person the Gates of *Stockholm* were opened to him by *Christiana* Widow of *Steen*. Having given his Word for pardoning all past Transactions he was declared King: But when the *Swedes* thought themselves quite secure, he caused some of the Chief amongst them to be seized and put to Death by the common Hangman, and many other Acts of Cruelty were exercised. His Tyranny however did not last long; for *Gustavus Erickson* who had been sent Prisoner into *Denmark* made his Escape from thence; and putting himself at the Head of the *Dalecarlians* drove *Christian* out of *Sweden*: Which has ever since bravely maintained its Independency of *Denmark*.

He flies into
the NETHER-
LANDS.

The Hatred of his own Subjects having in the mean Time encreased against *Christian*, a Rebellion broke out in the Year 1523 amongst the *Futlanders*. This so terrified him that he fled with his Wife and Children into the *Netherlands*; and the *Danes* chose *Frederick* Duke of *Holstein* his paternal Uncle for their King.

Christian

Christian afterwards raised some Troops; but these **FREDERICK** were soon dispersed; nor could the Emperor *Charles V.* I. 1523. his Brother-in-law give *Christian* any Assistance, because he had a War with *France* upon his Hands. In the Year 1532 *Christian* landed in *Norway*: But upon a Promise that his Person should be safe, he soon surrendered himself Prisoner to *Canut Gilderstern*; and he was confined by the Order of *Frederick* in the Castle of *Sundenburg*. In the Year 1546 he was forced to give up all his Pretensions to the Crown: And being conducted to *Cullenburg* was as he justly deserved confined there untill his Death in the Year 1559. *Frederick* in order to strengthen himself had entered into an Alliance with *Gustavus* King of *Sweden* and the *Hans Towns*, and he also granted great Privileges to the Nobility. He died in the Year 1533.

Christian the Son of *Frederick* was in the Beginning **CHRISTIAN** of his Reign greatly disturbed by the Intrigues of *Chri-* III. 1533. *stopher* Count *Oldenburg* and the *Lubeckers* in Favour of *Christian II.* and some Provinces had declared for this deposed Prince. By the Assistance however of *Gustavus* King of *Sweden* he triumphed over all his Enemies; and in the Year 1536 made himself Master of *Copenhagen*.

As the Bishops had been remarkably active against *The Protestant Christian*, they were not included in the Agreement after- *Religion is* wards come to; and being deprived of their Sees the *Pro-* established in *testant* Religion was established in *Denmark* and *Nor-* **DENMARK.** *way.* *Christian* reigned peaceably from this Time to the Day of his Death in the Year 1558, and was succeeded by his Son *Frederick*.

This Prince after subduing the Province of *Ditmarsh* **FREDERICK**; entered into a War against *Eric* King of *Sweden*: II. 1558.

Which having continued with great Losses on both Sides nine Years, it was ended by a Treaty concluded under the Mediation of their *Imperial*, *Christian* and *Polish* Ma- *Treaty of STE-* **TIN.** *jesties* at *Stetin* in the Year 1570.

From the Accession of *Christian IV.* who in the Year **CHRISTIAN** 1558 succeeded his Father, the Kingdom enjoyed a most **IV. 1558.** profound Tranquillity till the Year 1611. A War *War with* breaking out at this Time with *Charles IX* of *Sweden* **SWEDEN.**

Christian took *Calmar* and *Elseburg*: But by a Treaty concluded

concluded with *Gustavus* the Son of *Charles* in the Year 1613, these Places were both delivered up for a Sum of Money.

Battle of
KONINGS-
LUTERN.
Treaty of
LUBEC,
1629.

Christian engaged in the civil War of Germany, and was made General of the Circle of *Lower Saxony*; but it cost him dear: For being routed near *Konings-Lutern* he was forced to quit Germany. The Emperor's Troops afterwards over-run *Holstein* and *Jutland*; but both these Provinces a few Places excepted were restored to *Christian* by the Treaty of *Lubec* in the Year 1629.

War with
SWEDEN.

When *Gustavus* of Sweden entered into the War against the Emperor *Christian* offered his Mediation, hoping thereby to recover what he had lost, and to prevent the *Swedes* from getting a Footing in Germany: Which being refused he endeavoured to put a Stop to the Progress of the *Swedes*; and in order to distress them seized and confiscated many of their Merchant Ships in their Passage through the *Sound*. As the frequent Complaints hereupon made were disregarded, the *Swedes* who could no longer bear these Injuries invaded *Holstein* and *Jutland*. In the Course of the War that ensued the *Danes* sustained great Losses both by Sea and Land: And for the sake of Peace, which was obtained in the Year 1645 by the Interposition of the *French* Court, were forced to give up *Gothland*, *Osel* and *Femperland*. They moreover put the *Swedes* into the Possession of *Halland*; which Province was to be kept as a Pledge for their observing this Treaty for the Space of thirty Years: And the *Dutch* took this Opportunity of fixing the Toll for passing the *Sound* at a much lower Rate than had been usually paid. *Christian* died in the Year 1649.

1645.

FREDERICK
III. 1649.

Frederick his Son and Successor, imagining that *Charles Gustavus* of Sweden had exhausted his Strength by a War with *Poland*, and being thereto instigated by the *Dutch*, declared War against Sweden in the Year 1657.

War with
SWEDEN,
1657.

In this he found himself mistaken; for *Charles* attacked him with great Vigour in *Holstein* and *Jutland*; and amongst other Places took the Fortrefs of *Frederickstad* by Storm. The Winter being in the Beginning of the next Year very severe, *Charles* marched his Army over

Surprizing
Progress of the
SWEDES.

the Ice to *Funen*, and having surprized the *Danish* Troops in this Island made the best of his Way through the Islands

Islands of *Langeland*, *Laland* and *Falster* into *Zealand*.

As this surprizing Progress laid *Frederick* under a Necessity of making Peace at any rate, he by the Treaty of *Treaty of Roschild* ceded the Provinces of *Halland*, *Bleking* and *Roschild*. *Scania*, the Island of *Bornholm*, and *Babus* and *Drontheim* in *Norway* to the *Swedes*.

Being informed that the *Danes* had at the Solicitation War with of the Emperor, the Elector of *Brandenburg* and the *SWEDEN*. *States General* engaged to renew the War, as soon as his being engaged with *Poland* or *Germany* should give them an Opportunity, *Charles* resolved to be before-hand with them; and passing again over into *Zealand*, he took *Cronenburg* and besieged *Copenhagen* both by Sea and Land.

A *Dutch Fleet* was sent to the Relief of *Copenhagen* in Battle of Co- the Year 1658, and a very sharp Action ensued betwixt *PENHAGEN*, this Fleet and that of *Sweden*; in which the *Swedes* who 1658. behaved with great Bravery were worsted. The Attempt in the next Year to take *Copenhagen* by Storm failed, and the *Swedes* lost a Battle in the Island of *Funen*. About the same Time the Island of *Bornholm* revolted, and *Drontheim* was taken: Which Advantages, together with the Death of *Charles*, gave the *Danes* Hopes of recovering their former Losses; but a Plan of Peace being settled by *France*, *England* and *Holland*, a Treaty was shortly *Treaty of Co-* after signed at *Copenhagen*. By this, which in other *PENHAGEN*. Respects confirmed the Treaty of *Roschild*, the *Danes* were to keep *Drontheim* and the Island of *Bornholm*; and to give the *Swedes* in Lieu thereof some Lands in *Scania*.

This War being ended the States of the Kingdom, in *The Crown* a Diet held at *Copenhagen* in the Year 1660, conferred *made absolute*, upon *Frederick* the absolute Sovereignty of the King- 1660. dom; and made it hereditary. Hereby the Power and Privileges long enjoyed by the Nobility were put an End to; and a new Form of Government by which the King could do what he pleased without any Controul was introduced.

To *Frederick* who died in the Year 1670 succeeded *CHRISTIAN Christian* his Son. Having put his own Affairs into a good V. 1670. Posture, and entered into an Alliance with the Emperor and *Holland*

Holland and their Allies, this Prince thought no Time so proper to break with the *Swedes* as when they had been unsuccessful in *Brandenburg*.

War with
SWEDEN,
1675.

With a View to this he in the Year 1675 forced the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp*, who having no Suspicion gave him a Meeting, to renounce all the Advantages he had gained by the Treaty of *Roschild*; and to consent to the Demolition of the Fortrefs of *Toningen*. *Christian* afterwards made himself Master of *Wisnar*, and having in the following Year made a Descent upon *Scania*, he took without much Trouble *Helsingburg*, *Landscroon*, *Christianstadt* and the greatest Part of *Gothland*: But the Troops detached to invest *Helmstadt* were surprized by *Charles XI* of *Sweden*, and all cut to Pieces or made Prisoners; and not long after the *Danish* Army was routed in a bloody Battle fought near *Lunden*. In the Year 1677 *Christian* laid Siege to *Malmoe*: But having sustained great Loss in making an Assault upon this Place, he retired and was soon after defeated by *Charles* near *Landscroon*. In the following Year the *Danes* were repulsed from before *Bahus*, and being in Want of Provisions they were forced to surrender *Christianstadt*: But they gained considerable Advantages at Sea. By a Treaty shortly after concluded, all except a few Places in *Germany* that had been taken from the *Swedes* was restored.

1676.
Battle of
LUNDEN,
1677.
Battle of
LAND-
SCROON.

Treaty with
SWEDEN.

HOLSTEIN
invaded, 1683.

A fresh Misunderstanding arising betwixt *Christian* and the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp*, *Christian* in the Year 1683 invaded *Holstein*, and at the same Time seized *Jevevn* which belonged to the House of *Anhalt Zerbst*. He afterwards made himself Master of the Island of *Heiligenland*: But by the Interposition of the Emperor and the maritime Powers, a Treaty was concluded at *Altena* in the Year 1689. By this the Duke was reestablished in his Dominions; and the House of *Anhalt* retook upon certain Conditions Possession of *Jevevn*.

Treaty of AL-
TENA, 1689.

HAMBURG
attacked,
1686.

In the Year 1686 *Christian*, who had for some Time formed Pretensions to this Town, attacked *Hamburg*: But after reducing it to the greatest Extremity, which was in a great Measure owing to the Discord amongst the Magistrates, the Fears and Danger of the Inhabitants

tants were removed by the Accommodation of *Pinnenburg*.

A Difference arose in the Year 1693 betwixt *Christian* Dispute concerning *Ratzburg*, whose Fortifications the Princes of this House had encreased : *BURG*, 1693. Which ended in an Agreement that all the new Fortifications should be demolished.

On the Death of the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* in *HOLSTEIN* the Year 1694, the Court of *Copenhagen* insisted upon it *invaded*, as a Thing agreed by a Treaty; that the Troops of this *1694*. Dutchy should be disbanded; that no new ones should be raised without the King of *Denmark's* Consent; and that a Stop should be immediately put to the fortifying of Forts and Citadels. Consent to these Demands being refused, the *Danes* seized the Forts *Holmer* and *Sorcker*, and the Fortrefs of *Crimpen*; and as soon as they were in their Hands began to destroy the Fortifications. The Courts of *Vienna*, *London* and *Sweden* interposed, and prevailed upon the new Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* to agree, that his Troops should go into the Emperor's Service in *Hungary*; and that no new ones should be raised: But nothing less than a formal Renunciation of the Duke's Right to arm himself would satisfy *Denmark*. The Duke having in the mean Time married the King of *Sweden's* eldest Daughter, the latter resolved to assert the Rights of his Son-in-law; and Troops were ordered to march for the support of him.

Frederick who in the Year 1699 succeeded *Christian* his *FREDERICK* Father, would abate nothing of his Father's Demands: And *IV*. 1699. not content with demolishing the new Works he made himself Master of several Places in *Holstein*. The Siege however of *Toningen* was raised by the united Troops of the Circle and *Sweden*; and *Frederick* soon found himself attacked in his Capital by the combined Fleet of *England*, *Holland* and *Sweden*.

By a Treaty, which this obstinate Prince was under a *Treaty of* Necessity of concluding at *Trawendall* in the Year 1700, *TRAWEN-* it was stipulated, that the House of *Holstein* should be *DALL*, 1700. absolutely at Liberty to raise Troops, build Forts and enter into Alliances; that the Convention betwixt this House and the Chapter of *Lubec* for its Succession to the Bishoprick of *Lubec* should continue in full Force; that
the

the King of *Denmark* should pay the Duke 260,000 Crowns; and that neither Power should erect a Fort within two Miles of any Fort belonging to the other, or within a Mile of the other's Territory. Some Difficulties were started as to the Payment of the Money, and these were encreased by the Dissensions in the Chapter of *Lubec*: Some of whom in the Year 1701 chose *Christian* Brother to the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* Coadjutor to the Bishop of *Lubec*; others the hereditary Prince of *Denmark*.

LUBEC at- Upon the Death of the Bishop in the Year 1705,
tacked, 1705. the Court of *Copenhagen* resolved to make good the Prince of *Denmark* Election by Force: But this Matter was compromised; and a Sum of Money being paid him by *Great-Britain* he quitted the Places he had taken Possession of.

Missionaries About this Time the King of *Denmark* sent some
sent to the Persons to propagate Christianity on the *Malabar* Coast:
EAST-INDIES. And the Success of these Missionaries fully answered his Expectations.

War with *Sweden* being almost ruined by the fatal Battle of
SWEDEN, *Pultawa, Frederick*, pursuant to a Resolution formed at
1709. an Interview with the Kings of *Prussia* and *Poland* at *Berlin*, declared War in the Year 1709 against *Sweden*,

FREDERICK and made a Descent upon *Scania*: But being in the
is repulsed Year following about to invest *Helsingburg*, the *Swedes* fell
from SCANIA, upon him with such Vigour that he was forced to repass
1710. the Sea. In *October* the same Year there was an Engagement at Sea; in which although the Loss was great on both Sides the Fleet of *Sweden* suffered most. *Frederick* having in Concert with *Poland* attacked *Swedish*

1711. *Pomerania* in the Year 1711, he took *Damgarten*: But his Attempts upon *Wismar* and *Stralsund* both failed. In

1712. the Year 1712 he invaded the Dutchy of *Bremen*, and made himself Master of *Stade*. This Advantage was however dearly paid for by the Loss his Troops sustained near *Gadebusch*: Which was followed with the burning

ALTENA of *Altena*. In the next Campaign *Frederick* seized some
burnt, 1713. Places in *Holstein*, and obliged Count *Steinbock* to surrender himself Prisoner with all his Troops. The

1714. Congress held at *Brunswick* being unsuccessful, *Frederick* became in the Year 1714 Master of *Toninguen*. In the

the Year 1715 the *Swedish Fleet* was defeated by 1715.
that of *Denmark*; and which was of more Consequence the united Troops of *Denmark* and *Prussia*, *Fleet worsted.*
commanded by the two Kings in Person, forced the
Town of *Stralsund* to capitulate. The next Year was 1716.
equally successful to the *Danes*; the *Swedes* being driven
out of *Norway* by *Frederick*, and *Wismar* in *Pomerania*
being taken. After the taking of this last Place the
Vigour of *Frederick* in pushing the War abated visibly:
Which was generally imputed to the Opposition made
by his own Allies, to a Design he had formed of con-
quering *Scania*.

Upon the Death of *Charles XII.* of *Sweden* his *Britan- Treaty of*
nick Majesty offered his Mediation: Which being readily *STOCKHOLM,*
accepted by *Frederick*, a Treaty of Peace was signed in 1720.
June 1720 at Stockholm.

In the following Year *Louisa* of the House of *Meck- FREDERICK*
lenburg Gustrow Wife of *Frederick* died; and he mar- *marries the*
ried the *Dutchess* of *Sleswick*, Daughter of the late *Dutchess of*
Count *Reventlau* Grand Chancellor of the Kingdom. *SLESWICK.*
Having the Misfortune two Years before to see *Copen-*
hagen his Capital reduced to Ashes, *Frederick* died at
Odensee in the Year 1730, and was succeeded by *Chris-*
tian Frederick his Son: Who was born in the Year
1699, and married in the Year 1721 to *Sophia Madeleine*
of the House of *Brandenburgh Culmbach*.

This Prince in the Year 1732 acceded to the Alliance *CHRISTIAN*
concluded betwixt the Courts of *Vienna* and *Petersburg*: *VI. 1732.*
Of which the principal Conditions were: That the con- *Alliance with*
tracting Powers should guaranty each other's Possessions; *the Courts of*
that all Treaties contradictory directly or indirectly to *VIENNA and*
this Alliance should be revoked; that in Case either of *PETERS-*
the contracting Powers should be attacked the others *BURG.*
should endeavour by good Offices to procure Satisfac-
tion; and if these were insufficient should furnish the
Succours stipulated, and not lay down their Arms till the
Power injured had ample Justice; and that any Power
should be at Liberty to enter into this Alliance. Some
Things moreover which concerned Trade were regu-
lated; and the King of *Denmark* undertook for him-
self and his Heirs the Guaranty of the *Pragmatick*
Sanction.

In

Difference

with the HAM-
BURGHERS,

1734.

In Consequence of this Treaty *Christian* sent in the Year 1734 Six Thousand Men to the Emperor's Assistance, in the War which broke out on Account of the *Polish* Election. Upon the Marching of these Troops very near *Hamburg*, the Inhabitants, betwixt whom and the Court of *Denmark* there had for some Years been a Misunderstanding, feared they might be intended to surprize this Place; and the King of *Prussia* at their Request wrote as Director of the Circle to *Christian* concerning this Affair. The latter in his Answer, declared that he had no Design upon the Town of *Hamburg*: Yet at the same Time hinted, that he did not look upon it as dependent upon the Empire, but as a Place which absolutely belonged to him. When the *Hamburgers* afterwards sent Deputies to *Christian* with Presents at *Altena*, whither he went to review his Troops, he refused to see them: And instead of suffering the *Hamburgers* to trade as they desired with *France* during the War, he seized some of their Ships. The *Hamburgers* having afterwards agreed to disannul their Bank, and to take on all Occasions the current Coin of *Denmark*, which they had for some Years refused, this Quarrel was ended in *April* 1736 by a Convention; whereby every Thing was put upon the same Footing it had been before the Year 1710.

Commerce en-
couraged.

From this Time *Christian* applied himself with great Diligence to the encouraging of Trade, and a Council of OEconomy and Commerce was established, for the examining of all Plans offered for the Benefit of the Nation. Artificers of divers kinds were likewise sent for from *Holland*; and in order to encourage *Danish* Manufactures as much as possible, the importing of foreign ones was prohibited. For the sake moreover of preventing the Exportation of Money a Royal Bank was erected.

Difference

with his BRI-
TANNICK
Majesty, 1731.

After the Courts of *Great-Britain* and *France*, jealous of each other, had each for some Time endeavoured to attach the Crown of *Denmark* to it by a Treaty of Subsidy, the Endeavours of the former had like to have been frustrated by the following Accident. His *Britannick* Majesty, who was in Possession of the Dutchy of *Lawenburg*, having in the Year 1738 obtained from the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* a Cession of all his Pre-
tensions

tensions to the Lordship of *Steinhorst*, which had formerly been mortgaged by the Dukes of *Lawenburg* to his House, the Regency of *Hanover* declared by a publick Act that they intended to take Possession thereof. A Detachment of Soldiers being hereupon sent by the King of *Denmark* who also laid Claim to it into this Lordship, the Regency of *Hanover* after protesting against this Step ordered some Troops that Way, and a Skirmish in which some were killed on both Sides ensued. It was at first thought this would have had bad Consequences; but the Matter being compromised *Christian* gave up his Pretensions to *Steinhorst*, and a Treaty of Subsidy, by which he engaged to keep up six thousand Men for the Service of his *Britanick* Majesty, was shortly after signed at *Copenhagen*.

In the Year 1740 some *Dutch* Ships fishing upon the *Dutch Vef-*
Coast of *Iceland*, which belongs to the Kingdom of *Nor-*
way, were seized by the *Danish* Guard ships and carried *sels seized on*
into *Copenhagen*. This was resented by the *States Gene-*
ral, and every thing looked very much like a Rupture *the Coast of*
betwixt the two Nations; but by the Mediation of *Swe-*
den the Affair was amicably determined. ICELAND.
1740.

It is evident from History that the *Danes* have for-
merly been a brave warlike People; but their Glory is *Manners of the*
at this Day greatly diminished: Which may in some *DANES and*
Measure be imputed to their having been very little en-
gaged in War since the *Swedes* shook off their Yoke. *NORWEGI-*
ANS.
As their Country is moreover neither very large nor very
populous the *Danes* when they have had Occasion for
Troops have commonly hired *German* Troops; and by this
Means military Skill has been much neglected amongst
them. Since the making of the King absolute Attempts
have indeed been made to augment the Forces of this
Nation; they are however at present inconsiderable: Nor
would any King perhaps choose to see a martial Spirit re-
vived in the Nobility, lest they should endeavour to regain
their lost Privileges. The *Norwegians* are naturally brave
and their Climate inures them to Hardship; but since *Nor-*
way has been subject to the *Danes* they have made it
a point to keep the *Norwegians* from exerting their Va-
lour. There are at this Time very few of the ancient
Nobility of *Norway* left. The *Norwegians* being very
VOL. II. O good

good Seamen many of them are in the Service of the *Dutch*: Nay most of the Inhabitants of *North Holland* who generally employ themselves in the Herring and other Fisheries are of *Norwegian* Extract.

Soil and Com-
modities of
DENMARK
and NOR-
WAY.

Denmark is not very extensive; yet as the Soil is exceeding good for Pasture as well as Tillage many Horses and Oxen are annually exported, and a considerable Quantity of Corn is sent from hence into *Norway* and *Iceland*. The Coast of this Kingdom is well stored with Fish; but the People are so indolent that no more are caught than are sufficient to serve themselves. Wine, Salt and Strong Beer the *Danes* are forced to have from other Countries, and they used formerly to be supplied with woolen Cloths and Spices by Foreigners; but since the Encouragement given by *Christian VI.* to Trade and Manufactures they make the former and the latter are imported from their own Settlements in the *East Indies*. One of the principal Branches of his *Danish* Majesty's Revenue is the Toll paid in ready Money by all foreign Vessels, for the Subjects of *Sweden* who used to be exempt now pay it, that pass the *Sound*. *Norway* wants many of the Necessaries of Life: But it has some Things in great Plenty as Fish, Timber, Masts, Tarr and Pitch, and its Situation is vastly convenient for exporting these. Here are likewise Copper, Iron and some Silver Mines. *Iceland* abounds with dried Fish, salted Flesh and fine Down. These are exchanged by the Inhabitants for such Necessaries of Life as they are in Want of.

Interest of
DENMARK
with Regard
to GERMANY.

As the Forces of *Denmark* bear no Proportion to those of *Germany* her Dominions upon the Continent are always liable to Insults from the Empire: But the Islands of which the Kingdom is in Part composed are in no Danger, except which very seldom happens the greater and lesser Belt should be both frozen over, because the Empire has no naval Strength. It is not however probable that these two States should be embroiled unless the King of *Denmark* should make an Attempt upon *Hamburg*: Which besides that he has some Pretension thereto is indeed a Morfel delicious enough to tempt any Prince. If he were to do this it would not be likely to succeed without some Division or Treachery in the Town; for as it is of great Consequence to many *German* Princes that this
important

important Place does not come under Subjection to him they would undoubtedly interpose. It would moreover be highly imprudent in *Denmark* to draw upon herself the Resentment of the Empire: Because it is from thence that she must at all Times draw the chief Part of her Forces to defend herself against *Sweden*.

As the *Danes* have frequently endeavoured to reduce SWEDEN, *Sweden* again under Subjection to them, and have since they found this impracticable constantly disturbed the Trade of *Sweden* and upon all Occasions opposed its Aggrandisement, it is natural to suppose that there is a great Animosity betwixt the two Nations. If at the same Time the Conquests made of late Years upon *Denmark* by the *Swedes* be considered it will appear that *Sweden* is a most formidable Enemy: Yet it is not probable that she should attack *Denmark*; because it is obvious that *France* and the *Maritime* Powers whose Interest it is to preserve the Balance of Power betwixt the two Kingdoms would interpose. On the contrary as the *Swedes* are now so powerful that no Acquisition could be made from them by the *Danes* it would be imprudent in the latter to break with *Sweden*. Upon the whole it is for the mutual Interest of the two Kingdoms to forget all past Differences and support each other against the neighbouring States, and especially against the *Russians* whose great Encrease of Power has rendered them quite formidable.

The *Danes* may in all extreme Cases depend upon THE *MARI-* the Assistance of the *Maritime* Powers; because their TIME *Power* Trade in the *Baltick* would be endangered by the Ruin ERS. of this Kingdom: Yet neither of these would like to see *Denmark* too powerful lest she should raise the Toll paid for passing the *Sound*. As this Kingdom on the other Hand cannot possibly get any Thing by a War with *Great-Britain* or *Holland*, and may as the naval Strength of both is infinitely superior to hers lose a great deal thereby, it is not to be supposed that she should choose to break with either of these Powers.

Denmark is at present in no Danger from *Russia*; be- RUSSIA. cause the *Swedes* would be glad of the Opportunity of a Quarrel betwixt *Denmark* and *Russia* to endeavour the Recovery of what has in this Century been taken from

them by the *Russians*. It cannot on the contrary be of any Use for *Denmark* to break with *Russia*, and it is undoubtedly of *Consequence* to her that the Jealousy betwixt *Sweden* and *Russia* should continue; yet she should be cautious of being cajoled by the latter into an Alliance against or an Indifference concerning *Sweden*; for if *Russia* should once become Mistress of *Sweden* *Denmark* would in all Probability soon lose her Independency.

POLAND.

Although this Kingdom has nothing to fear from *Poland* it is for her Interest to cultivate a good Understanding with the *Poles*: Who may be serviceable Allies to her in Case of a War with *Russia*, *Sweden* or *Germany*.

FRANCE.

France can scarce have any Interest of her own to quarrel with *Denmark*, nor is it probable that she would like to see this Kingdom ruined: Yet as *France* has been for many Years in Alliance with *Sweden* it has been a Maxim and a very prudent one of the Court of *Copenhagen* to side with the Enemies of *France*.

SPAIN and
other Powers.

Denmark has nothing to fear from *Spain* or such other Powers of *Europe* as are at a great Distance and have no considerable Maritime Force: Nor has she any Concern as to these further than what concerns the Preservation of the Balance of Power in general.

C H A P. IX.

Of S W E D E N.

IT seems clear from the Records of Antiquity that *Swe-Great Antiqui-*
den is a very ancient Kingdom. The *Swedish* Histo-*ty of the SWE-*
 rians say that it was sooner peopled after the Deluge than *DISH Mo-*
 any other Part of *Europe*. One of these *Johannes Magnus* *narchy.*
 relates that *Magog* Son of *Japhet* and Grandson of *Noah*
 was the Founder of the *Swedish* and *Gothic* Nations; and
 that they took their Names from *Sweno* and *Gethar* or
Gog two of his Sons: And after tracing the History of
 the *Goths* to their settling themselves near the *Black-*
Sea, he goes on to shew how they made an Irruption
 into the *Roman* Empire and erected one Kingdom in
Italy and another in *Spain*.

This Account of Things is indeed contradicted by *The ancient*
Johannes Messenius in his *Scandinavia Illustrata*: Who *History thereof*
 says that *Magnus* has outdone the *Danish* Historian *Saxo-* *quite uncer-*
Grammaticus in extravagant Relations; and that as the *tain.*
 Transactions of the earliest Times are only handed
 down by Tradition, ancient Songs or fabulous Legends
 nothing concerning these can with any Certainty be re-
 lied upon. He likewise rejects the List given by *Magnus*
 of the Kings who reigned before the Birth of *JESUS*
CHRIST, and says there is no authentick Account of those
 Times extant. As moreover the History of the Kings who
 reigned for several Centuries after the Birth of *JESUS*
CHRIST is much interrupted and very uncertain, we
 shall as best suiting with the Design of this Introduction
 just mention a few Things which are with some Degree
 of Certainty handed down, and descend to the Times
 whereof there is a better Account.

The famous *Othin* or *Woden* having been about sixty *WODEN,*
 Years before the Birth of *JESUS CHRIST* driven by *Pompey*
 O 3 with

with a great Number of People out of *Asia* he subdued the *Russians*, *Saxons* and *Danes*; and afterwards made himself Master of *Norway* and *Sweden*. He did indeed only keep *Sweden* for himself; but all the *Scandinavian* Princes were obliged to do him Homage: And hence came a Custom which lasted many Years, that at an Assembly of the *States General* of *Scandinavia* the King of *Denmark* held the Bridle and the King of *Norway* the Stirrup while the King of *Sweden* mounted his Horse.

FROTHO.

In the Reign of *Frotho* surnamed *Ingo* the Church at *Upsal* was as it is said surrounded with a Chain of Gold of immense Value.

VISLUR.

DAMADER.

AGNIUS.

Vislur one of the antient Kings of *Sweden* was burnt by his Children; *Damadar* another of them was sacrificed by his Subjects to the Idol at *Upsal*: And another of them *Agnius* was hanged by his Wife.

HACQUIN I.

BATTLE OF

BROVALLA.

The famous Battle of *Brovalla* in which the *Danes* lost 30,000 Men and the *Swedes* only 12,000 was fought in the Time of *Hacquin* surnamed *Ring*. This Prince sacrificed nine of his Children to the Idol at *Upsal*; and would have served the tenth named *Egillus*, who was the only one left, in the same Manner if his Subjects had not interposed.

INGELLUS.

Ingellus Successor of *Hiro* caused seven petty Princes his Vassals to be burnt in their Apartments the Night after his Coronation; and he afterwards caused five more to suffer the same cruel Death. *Afa* his Daughter, who was married to *Gudrot* Prince of *Scania*, being of her Father's barbarous Disposition murdered her Husband and his Brother; and delivered up this Province to the *Swedes*.

SWEDEN invaded by the
DANES.

Being sheltered by her Father *Ivan* Son of *Regner* King of *Denmark* invaded *Sweden*, and put all the Country to Fire and Sword. *Ingellus* finding himself reduced to the last Extremity by the Advice of his Daughter burnt himself with her and all his other Children, except *Olaus* who saved himself and fled into *Wermeland*, in his own Palace.

BERO.

After the Death of *Ingellus* a *Swedish* Nobleman named *Charles* seized the Crown; but he was slain by *Regner* King of *Denmark*, and *Bero* or *Biern* Son of *Regner* was raised to the Throne.

Under

Under the Reign of this Prince and about the Year *Christianity* of CHRIST 829 *Ansgarius* Bishop of *Bremen* was sent *introduced*, by the Emperor *Lewis* the *Pious* to propagate the 829. Christian Religion in *Sweden*: And because *Bero* would not embrace it he was dethroned and banished by his Subjects.

His Successor *Asmund* reigned but a short Time; for *ASMUND I.* being a Persecutor of the *Christians* he was forced to quit the Kingdom, and *Olaus* was called from his Retirement in *Wermaland* and raised to the Throne.

This Prince in order to secure himself thereupon *OLAUS I.* married his Son *Ingo* to a Daughter of *Regner*. In the Year 853 *Ansgarius* came again into *Sweden*; and *Olaus* who resided at *Birca* at that Time a populous City was converted by this Bishop to the Christian Faith.

He afterwards marched an Army against *Denmark*, *He conquers* and having subdued this Kingdom appointed his Son *DENMARK.* *Ennegruus* to administer the Affairs thereof. Upon his return home he was sacrificed by his Heathen Subjects to the Idol at *Upsal*.

Ingo his Son and Successor was slain in the Year 890 *INGO I.* while he was at War with the *Russians*.

Eric his Son, surnamed *Weatherbat*, the next Suc- *ERIC I.* cessor is said to have been well skilled in Magick. 890.

The Son and Successor of this Prince was *Eric* *ERIC II.* surnamed *Segherfel*. He conquered the Provinces of *Finland*, *Courland*, *Livonia* and *Esthonia*. He afterwards took *Halland* and *Scania* from the King of *Denmark*, and obliged him to abandon all the rest of his Dominions; nor did he return to them untill his Enemy was dead.

Stenchild the Son and Successor of *Eric* after being *STENCHILD I.* baptized caused the Idol at *Upsal* to be pulled down, and forbid his Subjects on Pain of Death to worship Idols; which so enraged his *Heathens* Subjects that they slew him and two Christian Priests whom he had obtained from the Bishop of *Hamburg*.

This did not deter *Olaus* his Brother and Successor *OLAUS II.* from sending for other Christian Priests to *Ethelred* King of *England*: And he was baptized with great Num-

bers of his Subjects at a Spring, which is from the Name of the Priest who baptized them to this Day called *St. Sigifred's Well*. He was surnamed *Skotkonung* or *Tributary*: Because at the Sollicitation of some Priests he consented to pay the Pope an annual Tribute called *Romskot* for carrying on the War against the *Saracens*.

GOTHLAND This Prince took the Kingdom of *Norway* from *Oluf*
united to SWE- *Trygeson*; but the latter recovered it again: And he it
DEN. was that perfectly united the Kingdom of the *Goths*, betwixt whom and the *Swedes* there had been frequent Wars, to that of the *Swedes*.

ASMUND II. In the Reign of *Asmund* his Son Christianity made vast Progress in *Sweden*: And Justice was administred with great Impartiality.

ASMUND III. *Asmund* surnamed the *Slemme* his Brother and Successor, who took no Care about the Affairs of Religion or Government, was slain, and his Army was cut to Pieces by *Canute* King of *Denmark* near *Strangepelle-Bridge*.

HACQUIN II. A Difference arising after his Death betwixt the *Swedes* and *Goths* the former chose *Hacquin* surnamed the *Red*; the latter *Stenchild* surnamed the *Younger*: But the Matter was compromised by an Agreement that *Hacquin* who was far advanced in Years should enjoy the Crown during Life, and that the other should succeed thereto.

STENCHILD II. *Stenchild* who pursuant to this Agreement succeeded *Hacquin* defeated the *Danes* in three considerable Actions.

INGO II. *Ingo* the next King surnamed the *Pious* endeavoured to put an End to Idolatry; but he failed in doing this, and being forced to quit the Kingdom was afterwards assassinated in *Scania*.

HALSTAN, *Halstan* his Brother who succeeded in the Year 1086
 1086. reigned with great Wisdom and Prudence.

PHILLIP. The Reign of *Phillip* Son of *Halstan* was happy and glorious for *Sweden*. He was in the Year 1138 succeeded by his Son *Ingo*.

INGO III. *Ingo* was a Prince of great Piety; and his Queen
 1138. *Raguild* was so extraordinary for her Virtues that she was after her Death canonized and her Tomb at *Telga* was visited. He was poisoned by the *Ostro Goths*: Who
 were

were grown quite weary of the *Swedish* Government. *Christianity*
Under the Reigns of the five last Kings the Christian *makes great*
Religion had spread itself greatly in *Sweden*. *Progress.*

After the Death of *Ingo* the *Ostro Goths* without con-
fulting the other *Goths* chose *Ragwald Knaphofde* for their
King; but he was slain by the *Visgoths*. RAGWALD:

In his Stead the *Ostro Goths* chose *Swercher* a very
good Prince for their King, who was afterwards mur-
dered by one of his Domesticks. SWERCHER I.

They afterwards elected *Charles* his Son: But as
the States of *Sweden* had chosen *Eric* surnamed the
Saint, who had married *Christina* Daughter of *Ingo* III.
the *Goths* finding an Union of the two Kingdoms neces-
sary consented to have him for their King also. It was
however at the same Time agreed betwixt the *Swedes*
and *Goths* that *Charles* should succeed at the Death of
Eric; and that the Descendants of these two Princes
should reign alternately. ERIC III.

Eric after reducing the *Finlanders* who had revolted
to Obedience obliged them to receive the *Christian*
Religion. He also caused all the ancient Laws of
the Kingdom to be collected into one Book which
was called *St. Eric's Law*. He was slain in the Year
1160 near *Upsal* by *Magnus* Son of *Scatiler* of
Denmark: Who thereupon caused himself to be pro-
claimed. The Christian
Religion intro-
duced into Fin-
land.

His Reign was very short; for the *Swedes* and
Goths being informed of the Death of *Eric* fell upon
the *Danes* with such Fury that *Scatiler* and his Son
Magnus with their whole Army were cut to Pieces.
The Booty taken after this Action was applied to the
building of a Church on the Field of Battle which was
very near *Upsal*; to which Church the Name of *Den-*
mark was given. MAGNUS I:
1160.
Battle of
UPSAL, 1160.

Charles the Son of *Swercher*, who was in the Year
1168 acknowledged as King of the *Swedes* and *Goths*,
reigned with great Applause untill the Return of *Canute*
the Son of *Eric* who had retired into *Norway*. Being
surprized by this Prince and put to Death, because he
was suspected of having been accessory to *Eric's* Death,
his Wife fled with her Children into *Denmark*. CHARLES,
1168.

Some

CANUTE.

Some *Danish* Succours being at her Request granted they took the Field in Concert with the *Goths*; But their General *Kol* Brother of *Charles* was slain and this Army was entirely defeated by *Canute*. He afterwards reigned peaceably for the space of twenty-three Years.

SWERCHER
II.

After his Death *Swercher* Son of *Charles* was raised to the Throne: But he had for a Competitor *Eric* Son of the late King. The Difference being at Length composed by an Agreement that *Eric* should succeed, *Swercher* in order to make this void and secure the Kingdom to his own Family caused all the Sons of *Canute*, except *Eric* who fled into *Norway*, to be put to Death. Upon the Return of *Eric* with an Army the *Swedes* who detested this perfidious Behaviour flocked to him; and *Swercher* after being defeated fled for Shelter into *West Gothland*. Having obtained from *Waldemar* of *Denmark* a Body of Troops to the Number of 16,000 Men he attempted to regain the Crown; but a compleat Victory was gained over him in the Year 1208 by *Eric* and he was very near being made Prisoner. Two Years after he made another Effort in *West Gothland*; he was however again worsted and fell in the Action.

He flies into
GOTHLAND.ERIC IV.
1210.

Eric Son of *Canute* being thus established upon the Throne the ancient Treaty betwixt the two Families was renewed, and he declared *John* the Son of *Swercher* II. his Successor. He afterwards married *Rickot* Sister of *Waldemar*; and died at *Wifingsoe* in the Year 1219.

JOHN, 1219.

John, who pursuant to the Appointment of *Eric* succeeded, after reigning three Years died also at *Wifingsoe* at that Time the usual Residence of the *Swedish* Kings.

ERIC V.
1222.

Eric furnished from an Impediment in his Speech the *Stammerer* Son of *Eric Canutson* was next raised to the Throne. In order to secure himself from the ambitious Designs of the House of *Folckunger*, which was very powerful, he married three of his Sisters to three of the principal Persons of this House, and was himself married to *Catherine* Daughter of *Sweyn Folckunger*. This did not answer his Expectations; for the Influence of these Lords being thereby increased one of them named *Canute* took Arms against *Eric* and obliged him to flee into *Denmark*.

He returned with a powerful Army; and having de- *He overcomes*
 feated *Canute*, who together with his Son *Halinger* *FOLCKUN-*
 were put to Death, Peace was restored in the Kingdom. *GER.*
 Having afterwards suppressed a Rebellion in *Finland* *Eric*
 in order to awe the Inhabitants built Fortresses on the
 Frontiers of this Province.

Waldemar the Son of *Birger* by *Eric's* Sister being at *WALDEMAR,*
 the Death of *Eric* proclaimed King the Administration *1250.*
 of Affairs was during his Minority lodged in his Father's
 Hands. *Birger* enacted some good Laws and by his
 prudent Conduct so won the Affections of the People,
 that he who before had only the Title of *Ferl*, which
 signifies Earl, was at the unanimous Desire of the States
 made a Duke. He however met with great Opposition *The FOLCK-*
 from the Heads of the House of *Folckunger*, which *UNGERS* are
 came in the End to an open Rupture: But having *beheaded.*
 prevailed upon them to give him a Meeting for accom-
 modating Matters he contrary to his Promise caused
 them to be seized, and all of them except *Charles* who
 escaped and fled into *Prussia* were beheaded. The
Folckungers being thus entirely got rid of *Birger* married
 his Son to *Sophia* Daughter of *Eric* of *Denmark*; and *STOCKHOLM*
 in the Year 1263 laid the Foundation of *Stockholm*. *founded, 1263.*
 Notwithstanding his Son was arrived at Man's Estate
Birger kept the Reins of Government in his own Hands
 untill his Death in the Year 1266.

Waldemar having while he went a Pilgrimage to *Je- A Querrel be-*
rusalem left his Brother *Magnus* Regent he upon his *twixt WAL-*
 Return accused *Magnus* of having aspired at the Crown. *DEMAR and*
 As the States of *Sweden* who assembled for this Pur- *his Brothers.*
 pose in the Year 1275 at *Strengness* could not recon-
 cile the two Brothers *Magnus* with another Brother
 named *Eric* went into *Denmark*. Having upon their
 Return with an Army made *Waldemar* Prisoner it was
 resolved by the States, that *Magnus* whose Administration
 they liked best should have all the Kingdoms except
East and *West Gothland* and the Provinces of *Smaland*
 and *Dalia*, which were to be reserved for the King.
 A War was hereupon commenced by *Waldemar*;
 and the *Danes* whom *Magnus* had disgusted by with-
 holding the Subsidy he had promised joined with him.
 The Event was for some Time doubtful; But *Walde-*
mar

mar being at Length deserted by the *Danes*, to whom *Magnus* had paid what was in Arrear, he was forced to resign the Government in an Assembly of the States.

MAGNUS II.
1279.

The Throne being now vacant *Magnus* was crowned at *Upsal* in the Year 1279; and took the Title of King of the *Swedes* and *Goths*. This Title which had not been before made use of since the Time of *Olaus II.* has been ever since retained by the *Swedish* Kings.

The FOLCK-
KUNGERS re-
new their In-
trigues.

The Intrigues of the *Folckungers* being in this Reign recommenced, they after gaining over good Part of the Nobility caused *Ingemar* a Favourite of the King's to be put to Death; and *Girard* Count of *Holstein* the King's Father-in-law was thrown into Prison. The *Folckungers* having laid Siege to *Jencoping* *Magnus* so wrought upon them by fair Promises that they gave it over, and set *Girard* at Liberty; but they were afterwards condemned to die for High Treason, and all of them except *Philip* of *Runki* who bought off the Sentence for a large Sum of Money were beheaded: Nor has this Family been since able to make any Figure.

WALDEMAR
dies in Prison.

His Affairs being in this manner established *Magnus* caused his Wife *Hedwig* to be crowned at *Suder-coping*; and by the Advice of the Senate confined *Waldemar* in the Castle of *Nicoping* where he died in the Year 1288. Having appointed *Torkel Canutson* Grand Marshal to be Regent during the Minority of *Birger* his Son, *Magnus* died himself two Years after at *Wifingsoe* and was buried at *Stockholm*.

BIRGER,
1290.

CARELIA is
conquered.

Torkel Canutson, who administred the Affairs of the Kingdom thirteen Years with great Reputation, having secured the Sons of *Waldemar* in Prison sent an Army into *Carelia*. After subduing Part of this Province he obliged the Inhabitants to receive the Christian Religion; and built the Fortrefs of *Wiburg* upon their Frontier. He also took *Kexholm* from the *Russians*. *Birger* who after he came of Age married *Mareta* of *Denmark* extended his Dominions in *Carelia* and *Ingermania*, and built *Nordburg* on the Frontiers of *Russia*: But this Fortrefs was some Years after destroyed by the *Russians*. In the Year 1298 he appointed *Magnus* his Son then only three Years of Age his Successor; and this Ap-
pointment

pointment was in the Year 1303 confirmed by the Nobility and his two Brothers.

A Misunderstanding arising afterwards betwixt the *A Misunder-* King and his Brothers, the latter distrusting him and *standing be-* *Torkel* fled into *Denmark* and from thence into *Norway*. *twixt the King* Being furnished with an Army by *Hacquin* of *Norway* and his Bro- they soon after penetrated into *Gothland* and defeated *thers.* the *Swedish* Troops sent against them. Hereupon *Birger* went in Person; but on coming up with them the Difference was by the Interposition of some *Senators* composed, and the two Brothers were put into Possession of their Estates. Being accused of spiriting up the Quarrel betwixt the Brothers, and other Things being laid to his Charge, *Torkel* was in the Year 1305 beheaded at *Stockholm*: But the Death of this prudent old Man cost the King dear; for he was soon after surprized by his Brothers at *Hatuna*, and after being obliged to abdicate the Crown in Favour of his Brother *Eric* was committed Prisoner to the Castle of *Nicoping*. During these Troubles the young Prince *Magnus* had been conveyed by one of his Domesticks into *Denmark*. After three fruitless Attempts made by the King of *Denmark* to restore his Brother-in-law it was agreed to refer the Matter to the Senate. In this which met at *Arboga* it was resolved, that if *Birger* would pardon all that was past and be content with such Part of the Kingdom as should be assigned him he should be set at Liberty. Consenting to this his Brothers and the Senate renewed their Oaths of Allegiance to him and Tranquility seemed so be re-established: But another Storm soon arose.

Eric of *Denmark* having first concluded an Alli-SWEDEN in-
ance with *Hacquin* of *Norway* entered *Sweden* with an *vaded by the*
Army of 60,000 Men to assist *Birger* in reducing his *DANES.*
Brothers to Obedience. The Success was at first such
as might be expected from so large an Army, *J.ncoping*
being taken and the Troops of the two Brothers being
forced to retire: But the *Danes* were soon obliged to re-
turn home for Want of Provisions. Another Interview
being now had by the Brothers at *Helsingburg* the Treaty
of *Arboga* was confirmed: By which *Eric* was to have
for his Share *West Gothland* with the Provinces of *Dalia*,
Halland, *Wermaland* and *Smaland*; and *Waldemar* the
other

other Brother *Upland*, the Island of *Oeland* and Part of *Finland*.

BIRGER seizes his Brothers and throws them into a Prison where they are starved.

As all Animosity was now supposed to be at an End *Waldemar* in the Year 1317 made *Birger* a Visit at *Nicoping*. He was entertained with great Civility and at his going away *Birger* pressed him very much to come again and bring his Brother with him; for that he should be glad to have the Ground of their Quarrel entirely removed. Deceived by these fair Speeches *Waldemar* prevailed upon *Eric* who was at first quite averse thereto to go with him. They were received with all Marks of Affection and entertained with great Magnificence: But as soon as they were laid in their Beds they were seized, and after being loaded with Irons and otherwise ill used they were confined in the Castle of *Nicoping*. *Birger* having next caused all their Attendants to be murdered or imprisoned he made the best of his Way for *Stockholm* with an intent to surprize this City: The News however of this villainous Action having arrived there the Inhabitants who were prepared for him drove him back to *Nicoping*. Apprehending they would besiege this Place *Birger* after securing the Prison where his Brothers were confined as much as possible threw the Keys thereof into a River; and having ordered that the Doors should not upon Pain of Death be opened till his Return retired to *Stegburg*. The Castle of *Nicoping* was immediately invested: But the two Brothers were before it could be taken starved to Death.

He flies into DENMARK and MAGNUS the Son of ERIC is proclaimed.

Some Troops sent by the King of *Denmark* to the Assistance of *Birger* were soon dispersed; and after skulking from Place to Place he to avoid the Fury of his Subjects, who could not bear the Thoughts of his having so perfidiously broke through the Laws of Hospitality, went into the Island of *Gothland*. *Stegburg* being taken in the Year 1319 his Son *Magnus* whom the *Swedes* found there was sent Prisoner to *Stockholm*, and *Matthew Ketelmundson* was declared Regent. Hereupon *Birger* seeing his Affairs quite ruined fled for Shelter to *Denmark*, and *Magnus* an Infant Son of *Eric* was proclaimed King.

MAGNUS the Son of BIRGER is beheaded.

Not long after *Magnus* the Son of *Birger*, who had been before acknowledged by the States as Successor to the

the Throne, was beheaded at *Stockholm*; the News of which being carried to his Parents at *Denmark* it broke their Hearts.

During the Administration of *Ketelmundson* Things MAGNUS III. were conducted with great Discretion: But the People 1319. after his Death found themselves disappointed in the Hopes they had conceived of the young King. Being arrived at full Age he married *Blanch* Daughter of the Count of *Namur*; and having dismissed the old Counsellors was entirely governed by some young Favourites, amongst whom *Bengt* a Native of *West-Gothland* was the Chief. The Inhabitants of *Scania* who had long groaned under the Oppressions of the *Holsteiners* submitted to this Prince, and the Possession of this Province was confirmed to him by *Waldemar* of *Denmark*.

Engaging about the Year 1348 in a War against *Russia* it succeeded so ill that *Magnus* for the sake of War with DENMARK. Peace gave up Part of *Carelia*. Having in this War exhausted his Coffers he mortgaged the Crown Lands, and greatly disgusted the People by imposing some heavy Taxes. He was about the same Time excommunicated by Pope *Clement VI.* for not paying the Tribute granted in the Time of *Olaus II.* to the Holy See. At length *Magnus* being grown quite odious did at the Request of the Senate resign the Crown: And his Dominions being divided betwixt his two Sons *Eric* had *Sweden* and *Hacquin Norway*.

Bengt his Favourite being soon after put to Death ERIC VI. *Magnus* repented of quitting the Throne; and having obtained Succours from *Denmark* a bloody War ensued betwixt him and his Son *Eric*.

In order to put an End thereto a Division was in the ERIC is Year 1357 made of the Kingdom; by which the Fa- poisoned. ther had *Upland*, *Gothland*, *Wermland*, *West-Gothland*, *Oeland* and Part of *Halland*; and the Son the Remainder of the *Swedish* Dominions. As *Magnus* was however still jealous of *Eric* he prevailed upon him under the Pretence of having something of Importance to communicate to come to his Court; where he was poisoned by the Queen his Mother.

Magnus

MAGNUS re-
assumes the
Crown.

Magnus now sole Master of the Kingdom determined to revenge himself upon the Nobility who had all along been against him; and in order to do it the more effectually he by a secret Treaty gave up *Scania* to the King of *Denmark*. This Prince after taking Possession thereof in the Year 1361 fell pursuant to his Agreement with *Magnus* into *Gothland* and *Oeland*: And after cutting many Peasants in Pieces and plundering the Country demolished *Bornholm*.

HACQUIN of
NORWAY is
called to the
Assistance of
his Subj. &c.

The Protection of *Hacquin* being hereupon begged by the *Swedes*, who in this Distress scarce knew what to do, he marched against his Father and confined him in the Castle of *Calmar*. *Magnus* being afterwards set at Liberty he banished some *Swedish* Noblemen in the Year 1363. These repaired to the Court of *Holstein* and would have persuaded *Henry* Count thereof to accept the Crown of *Sweden*. He refused it on the Account of his great Age; but advised them to apply to the Duke of *Mecklenburg* who was the Son of *Magnus's* Sister; and the second Son of this Prince named *Albert* set out with them. After making themselves Masters of the Island of *Gothland* they came before *Stockholm*; which as they had a strong Party therein soon submitted and *Albert* was in the Year 1364 proclaimed King.

ALBERT,
1364.

Magnus and his Son *Hacquin*, who was now married to *Margaret* of *Denmark*, assembled all the Troops they could in *Norway* and *Denmark* and marched against *Al-*

Battle of LIN-
COPING.

bert. Coming up with him near *Lincoping* a desperate Action ensued: In which *Magnus* was taken Prisoner and *Hacquin* who was wounded saved himself with great Difficulty. The War being continued *Hacquin*, who was from Time to Time reinforced with fresh Troops from *Denmark* and *Norway*, became at last Master of the Field and *Sweden* was brought into a most deplorable Condition.

MAGNUS re-
nounces the
Crown, 1371.

Upon the sitting down of *Hacquin* in the Year 1371 before *Stockholm* this City agreed to give *Magnus* his Liberty, in case he would pay 12,000 Marks and renounce his Right to the Crown in Favour of *Albert*. These Conditions being agreed to *Magnus* retired into *Norway*; where he was shortly after drowned by Accident. *Hacquin* did not long survive his Father, and

as *Olaus* his Son died very young the Crowns of *Norway* and *Denmark* were united under *Margaret* Daughter of *Waldemar*. By the Death of this young Prince the Race of *Swedish* Kings which began with *Eric III.* and had continued above 200 Years ended.

Albert who now thought himself securely fixed on the Throne soon began to slight the *Swedish* Nobility; and all Offices of great Profit or Trust were conferred upon *Germans*. As his Coffers were quite exhausted he endeavoured to obtain the Consent of the States for annexing Part of the Revenues of the Church and some Lands which belonged to the Nobility to the Crown: Which being refused he resolved to do it by Force. Some of desperate Fortunes and others of corrupt Minds came into his Views: But the Majority of the People implored the Assistance of *Margaret* of *Denmark*; and on their promising to acknowledge her as Queen in Case they were delivered from the Oppressions of *Albert* it was granted.

This was the Source of infinite Misfortunes; for as the Country had been before exhausted all Sorts of Violences and Ravages were committed by both Parties. In the Year 1588 *Albert* mortgaged the Island of *Gothland* to the Knights of the *Teutonic* Order for 20,000 Nobles. As these however were insufficient to support the Expences of the War long he offered to give the Army of *Margaret* Battle in the Plain of *Faloping*. The Offer being accepted a Battle ensued upon the Day fixed, and it was fought with great Obstinacy on both Sides; but the Queen's Troops being in the End victorious *Albert* and his Sons were made Prisoners. This did not put an End to the Miseries of *Sweden*; for as the Duke of *Mecklenburg*, the Count of *Holstein* and the *Hans* Towns had declared for *Albert*, *Stockholm*, *Calmar* and some other strong Places in the Hands of his Party were supplied from the Ports of *Rostock* and *Wismar*. The *German* Garrisons who made frequent Sallies from these Places committed great Havock; and the *Swedish* Coast being at the same Time infested with Privateers Trade was quite ruined. Negotiations being entered into at *Aleholm* in the Year 1595 it was agreed to set *Albert*, his Son, and all Prisoners of Distinction

at Liberty ; but it was upon Condition that *Albert* should within the Space of three Years cede all Pretensions to the Crown of *Sweden* to *Margaret* or return back to Prison ; and on his Failure in both the *Hans Towns* engaged to pay her the Sum of 60,000 Marks of Silver. He complied with the first of these Conditions ; and after having reigned above twenty Years spent the Remainder of his Days in *Mecklenburg*.

He retires to
MECKLEN-
BURG.

MARGARET.

Margaret being now Mistress of the three Northern Kingdoms her next Care was to unite them for the Time to come under one Head. With a View to this she caused her Sister's Son *Henry Duke of Pomerania*, who in order to please the *Swedes* took the Name of *Eric*, to be proclaimed King. In the Year 1396 he was crowned in an Assembly of the States of the three Kingdoms at *Calmar* ; and an Union, which if it had been preserved would undoubtedly have been of Service to the three Nations, was agreed upon and confirmed in the most solemn Manner.

ERIC VII.

1396.

MARGARET
has the Ma-
nagement of
Affairs.

Eric being very young the Administration of Affairs was during his Minority committed by the States to *Margaret*. Her Partiality to the *Danes* was soon perceived by the *Swedes* and *Norwegians*, nor could they bear to see the Revenues of *Sweden* and *Norway* spent in *Denmark* her ordinary Residence. She made an Attempt in the Year 1408 to recover the Island of *Gothland* without paying any of the Money lent thereupon by the Knights of the *Teutonic Order* ; but it failed and in order to get Possession of this Island she was forced to pay 10,000 Nobles.

ERIC takes the
Government
into his own
Hands.

Upon the Death of *Margaret* in the Year 1412 *Eric*, who had two Years before married *Phillippa* Daughter of *Henry IV. of England*, took the Management of Affairs into his own Hands. Being soon after engaged in a War with the Dukes of *Holstein* and *Mecklenburg* and the *Hans Towns* concerning the Dutchy of *Sleswick*, he in Order to defray the Expence thereof notwithstanding it was an Affair in which *Denmark* alone was interested laid heavy Taxes upon the *Swedes* : And their Trade with the *Hans Towns* was at the same Time greatly interrupted. The Discontent, which the sending of the
Swedish

Swedish Records to *Denmark* and other Proceedings contrary to the Articles of the Union had occasioned, being hereby greatly encreased the *Dalecarlians* headed by a Nobleman named *Engelbrecht Engelbrechtson* took up Arms.

As the *Dalecarlians* were joined by the *North-Hallan- Rebellion in* ders under *Eric Puck* they bore down all Opposition; and DALECAR- after massacring all Foreigners and pulling down their LIA. Houses, for being irritated to the last Degree their Rage knew no Bounds, they obliged the Senate of *Sweden* assembled at *Wadstena* to renounce their Oaths of Allegiance to *Eric*. A Peace was hereupon clapped up with the Powers he was at War with by *Eric* and he went in Person to *Stockholm*: But finding himself unable to cope with *Engelbrecht*, to whom Numbers flocked in daily, he concluded a Truce for twelve Months, and having left a Garrison of 600 Men in the Castle of this City retired to *Denmark*. Negotiations were now entered into for compromising this Affair, and these were in a fair Way of succeeding had not the King given evident Marks of Insincerity: Upon which in a Meeting of the Nobility and Deputies from every Town at *Arboga* it was resolved to desist from Treaties with him, and *Charles Canutson* Grand Marshal was declared Governour and General of the Kingdom.

Engelbrecht, who looked upon himself to be injured CHARLES by the Preference of *Charles* to him, being shortly after CANUTSON assassinated his intimate Friend *Eric Puck* resolved is made Governour of the Kingdom. to revenge his Death. The Troops of *Eric Puck* defeated those of *Charles*; but being prevailed upon for the sake of putting an End to all Differences to give *Charles* a Meeting he was seized, and contrary to the safe Conduct promised he was beheaded. As many of the principal Nobility soon began to dislike the Proceedings of *Charles* and to grow jealous of his Power, they ordered Matters so as to have a general Assembly of the States of the three Kingdoms held at *Calmar*. The King's Commissary met them: But as he refused to comply with their Demands nothing was agreed upon.

ERIC is de-
posed by the
DANES.

Not long after the *Danes*, who as well as the *Swedes* were disgusted with *Eric*, taking the Advantage of his Absence, for he spent most of his Time in the Island of *Gothland*, invited *Christopher* Duke of *Bavaria* the Son of *Eric's* Sister to the *Danish* Throne. Upon his Arrival in the Year 1439 in *Denmark* Ambassadors were sent to inform the *Swedish* Senate thereof, and to exhort them as the only Means to preserve the Peace and Union of the North to acknowledge him for their King. *Charles* and his Friends were hereat greatly surpris'd; but finding the Majority were for acknowledging *Christopher* they also came into it and he was crowned at *Upsal*.

CHRISTO-
PHER, 1439.

This Solemnity being over *Christopher* returned into *Denmark* and four Years after married *Dorothy* of *Brandenburg*. As the Island of *Gothland* remained still in the Hands of *Eric* *Christopher* made great Preparations for reducing it, but he soon after to the Surprize of every Body clapped up a Peace with *Eric* and left him in Possession of this Island. *Christopher* died in the Year 1448.

Assembly at

STOCKHOLM.

The States of *Sweden* which assembled at *Stockholm* being divided some were for deferring the Election of a new King untill an Assembly of the States of the three Kingdoms could pursuant to the Articles of the Union be held: But others were for having a King of their own without any Regard to the Union. The Disputes on this Subject ran very high and continued many Days: But the Party of *Charles* at length prevailed and he was himself chosen King.

CHARLES I.

Immediately upon his Accession he besieged *Eric* in the Castle of *Wifbi*; and had not his Generals suffered themselves to be amused by a Suspension of Arms *Eric* must have fallen into his Hands. As this gave *Christian*, whom the *Danes* had chosen for their King, Time to send a Fleet to the Assistance of *Eric* he was conveyed into *Pomerania*; where he ended his Days without making any further Attempt to regain his lost Dominions.

Death of
ERIC.

War with the
DANES.

Charles being afterwards acknowledged for King by the Majority of the *Norwegian* Lords a War was commenced against him by *Denmark*. In the Beginning thereof the Troops of *Charles* were successful: But after the Death of *Thord Bonde* his General who was barbarously murdered

dered it was otherwise. Being moreover deserted by the Archbishop of *Upsal* and many other *Swedish* Lords *Charles* after having been shut up and reduced to the greatest Extremity in *Stockholm* retired to *Dantzick*. Having thus in the tenth Year of his Reign quitted the Kingdom *Christian* of *Denmark* was invited into *Sweden* and crowned in the Year 1458.

The Government of *Christian* at first gave general CHRISTIAN I. Satisfaction; but his loading the People with Taxes and 1458. putting many Lords to the most cruel Deaths upon a Suspicion of their corresponding with *Charles* rendered him quite odious. Having moreover sent the Archbishop of *Upsal* Prisoner into *Denmark* the People headed by *Catil* Bishop of *Lincoping* took up Arms; and forced him to quit the Kingdom. *Christian* reentered *Sweden*; but his Troops being defeated by those of the Bishop he was a second Time obliged to retire and went into *Denmark*.

Upon the Arrival of *Charles*, whom the Bishop had CHARLES re- called to his Assistance, *Stockholm* in which *Christian* stored, 1464. had left a Garrison surrendered; and he was reinstated in the Throne. The Joy of *Charles* on this Account was however very short-lived: For a Difference arising betwixt him and *Catil*, who wanted to have the *Archbishop* discharged from his Confinement in *Denmark*, the latter made his Peace with *Christian*. The Archbishop who was hereupon set at Liberty being met upon the Frontiers of *Sweden* by *Catil* they united in levying Forces against *Charles*; and having defeated him in a Battle fought upon the Ice near *Stockholm* forced him Battle of to renounce all Pretensions to the Crown. The *Arch-* STOCKHOLM. bishop became afterwards with very little Difficulty Master of all the strong Fortresses in the Kingdom: But a Party being formed by *Nils Sture* and *Eric Alex-* son things were so managed as to have the latter who had married *Charles's* Daughter declared in the Year ERIC ALEX- 1466 Regent; and the Archbishop was obliged to son is made abandon *Stockholm* and several other Places. Both Parties Regent. did for some Time after commit great Ravages; but that of the Archbishop, who thereupon died with Grief, being in the End overpowered the People in Order to put an End to their Miseries once more restored *Charles* to the Throne.

CHARLES is
once more re-
stored to the
Throne.

As *Eric Nilson* however together with *Eric Carelson* and some other Chiefs of the Archbishop's Faction continued in Arms, they surpris'd the Army of *Charles* in the Year 1468 and forced him to retire into *Dalia*. He was followed by *Eric Carelson*; but the latter being notwithstanding his Forces were superior defeated he fled into *Denmark*. In the Year 1470 *Charles* returned to *Stockholm*; and having a little before his Death recommended his Sister's Son *Steen Sture* for Regent died there in the same Year.

STEEN STURE
made Regent,
1471.

A strong Party for restoring *Christian* being now formed *Sweden* was for the Space of a whole Year in the utmost Confusion and without any Head; but the Party of *Sture* at length prevailed and he was declared Regent. *Sture* having gained a compleat Victory over *Christian* near *Stockholm* the latter was glad to retire by Sea to *Denmark*; and although Factions were several Times formed for restoring him to the Throne he never after dared to come to an open Rupture with *Sture*. The Administration of *Sture* was for many Years happy and prosperous: But the States of *Sweden* having after the Death of *Christian* acknowledged upon certain Conditions his Son *John* the Kingdom was again exposed to infinite Calamities. *Sture* from Time to Time for the Space of fourteen Years found some Pretence to put off the Resignation of his Power: But being at last defeated by *John* near *Stockholm* he in the Year 1497 consented to do it and *John* was crowned.

JOHN I. 1497.

Under the Pretence that the Revenues of the Crown had been diminished this Prince seized some Fiefs which *Steen Sture* and others were possessed of; and great Violences were committed by his Governors in their respective Provinces. Being not long after shamefully repulsed by the *D.tmarfians* the People, who wished for such an Opportunity to revenge his repeated Infractions of the Conditions agreed to in the most solemn Manner at his Coronation, met at *Wadstena*; and having openly renounced their Allegiance to *John* again put the Reins of Government into the Hands of *Steen Sture*.

John,

John, who at hearing this News was quite Thun-STEENSTURE derstruck, made the best of his Way having first put again made a strong Garrison into *Stockholm* for *Denmark*. This Regent. City wherein he left the Queen and several other Cities soon submitted to *Sture*; and although great Progress was made afterwards by *Christian* his Son in *Gothland* *John* was glad for the sake of having the Queen set at Liberty to accommodate Matters with *Sture*. In the Year 1503 *Steen Sture* died suddenly as he was upon his Return from Escorting the Queen to *John*. His Death being for some Time concealed it was suspected to have been by Poison given him as it was supposed by a Woman named *Mareta*, who was upon the Point of marrying *Suante Sture*, in order to make Way for his Accession to the Regency.

It became now a Question in the Dyet whether *John* SUANTE should be restored or the Administration of Affairs be STURE made lodged in the Hands of *Suante Sture*; but the latter Regent, 1503. being resolved upon *Sture* in the Year 1504 took it upon himself. War with *Denmark* being hereupon re-War with kindled *John*, who had taken Care to engage the Em-DENMARK peror, the Pope and *Russia* on his Side, at first annoyed the rekindled. *Swedes* greatly: By the Prudence however and Courage of *Sture* their Affairs took afterwards a much better Turn. Having brought about a Peace with *Russia* and engaged the *Lubeckers* in his Interest *Sture* retook *Calmar* and *Borgerholm*; and if Death had not put a Stop thereto in the eighth Year of his Regency he would in all Probability have made Conquests upon the *Danes*.

On the Death of *Suante Sture* the younger Part of STEENSTURE the Senate proposed *Steen Sture* Son of *Steen Sture* as a the younger proper Person to succeed to the Regency. The Bishops made Regent, and ancient Lords objected thereto and recommended 1511. *Gustavus Trolle* a Man of Sense, full of Years, and of great Experience; but after frequent Debates the former for whom out of Regard to his Father's Memory the People had a vast Esteem was chosen. Upon the Death of *John* in the Year 1513 the States of *Norway* and *Denmark* proclaimed *Christian* his Son, and Ambassadors were sent to prevail upon the *Swedes* to take him for their King also: Which being refused, for they remembered his Cruelties when he commanded in *Gothland*, he

resolved after waiting four Years in vain to attempt the Conquest of Sweden.

GUSTAVUS
TROLLE,
sides with
CHRISTIAN.

Having engaged Pope *Leo X.* and the new Archbishop *Gustavus Trolle* in his Interest *Christian* persuaded the *Russians* to invade *Finland*. The Regent being timely informed of the Archbishop's Treachery offered him the Oaths of Allegiance: And upon his refusing to take them besieged him in his Castle of *Steeka*. *Christian* who came to his Assistance seized some Vessels which belonged to *Sture*: But being unable to raise the Siege the Archbishop was forced to surrender and was deprived of his See. A Bull of Excommunication was hereupon obtained from the Pope against *Sture*; and a fine of 100,000 Ducats was set upon the *Swedes*. *Sture* regardless thereof advanced to meet *Christian* and gave him Battle in *Gothland*: But being mortally wounded in the Action his Army retired and dispersed. The Archbishop immediately reassumed his Function; and having in Concert with some other Lords proclaimed *Christian* he was after passing an Act of Oblivion crowned in the Year 1520 at *Upsal*.

Death of
STURE.

CHRISTIAN
II. 1520.

Christian at first carried it handsomely to the People: But Satisfaction for the Affront done to the Holy See in the Outrage committed against the Archbishop was soon demanded; and in order to give some Colour for the cruel Proceedings which followed it was given out that a Design had been formed of blowing up the King in his Castle with Gun-powder.

He is very
cruel.

Fourscore and fourteen Persons of Consequence were on this Account beheaded and all their Servants were hanged. The Body of *Steen Sture* was dug up; and after being exposed with the Bodies of the executed Persons quartered. His Mother and Widow did indeed buy off the Sentence pronounced against them: But it cost them their whole Fortunes and they were nevertheless kept with divers other Ladies in Prison.

An Insurrec-
tion headed by
GUSTAVUS
ERICSON.

While *Christian* was wholly taken up in these and other monstrous Acts of Cruelty *Gustavus Ericson*, whose Father had been beheaded by the Tyrant's Order and whose Mother was amongst the confined Ladies, prevailed upon the *Dalecarlians* to take up Arms. Their Example being followed by other Provinces he was declared

declared Protector of the Kingdom: And the Hatred to the King so spread itself through all Ranks of People that only the Archbishop and a few others continued in his Interest. For the sake of revenging himself upon *Gustavus Christian* sent his Mother and both his Sisters from *Stockholm* to *Copenhagen* where they all perished in Prison: And he ordered that no Quarter should be given to any of the *Swedish* Nobility. As the *Swedes* were equally cruel to the *Danes* it is easy to conceive that this wretched Kingdom became a Scene of perfect Butchery. While *Gustavus* was in the Year 1523 in Conjunction with the *Lubeckers* before *Stockholm* News came of the Revolt of the *Futlanders*; which so discouraged *Christian's* Party that they every where fled before the Troops of *Gustavus* and *Stockholm* soon fell into his Hands.

Christian, who was moreover grown detestable to the CHRISTIAN *Danes*, being obliged to retire into the *Netherlands* they *fled into the* elected in his room *Frederick* his Uncle, and would have NETHER-persuaded the *Swedes* to acknowledge him for their King: LANDS. But as the Union had by dear bought Experience been found so hurtful to *Sweden* they refused to do this and *Gustavus* was raised to the Throne.

This Prince finding the Royal Treasury quite exhaust- GUSTAVUS ed, and being largely indebted to the *Lubeckers* for the I. 1523. Assistance they had given him, laid a Tax upon the Clergy and seized some of the superfluous Ornaments of the Churches. Complaint was hereupon made by *Brask* Bishop of *Lincoping* to the Pope's Legate; *Peter* Bishop of *Westeras* endeavoured to stir up an Insurrection in *Dalecarlia*; and the Clergy seemed every where resolved to assert at all Events their Privilege of being exempt from Taxes.

About the same Time the Doctrine of *Luther*, at The Doctrine first introduced by some *German* Soldiers and some of LUTHER *Natives* of *Sweden* who had studied at *Wittenberg*, be- reads in SWE- gan to spread itself in the Kingdom: And *Olaus Peter* DEN. who had been a Pupil to *Luther* himself defended it in the Publick Schools. The King who well knew in what manner some *German* Princes had appropriated to themselves the Revenues of the Church was hereat greatly pleased: Yet he resolved to act with Caution until

until he could see what the Bishops would do. During these Transactions the Pope sent a Legate on Purpose to stop the Progress of the *Protestant* Religion: But as *Olaus* defended the *Protestant* Cause well this did not hinder the King from making him Minister of the *Great Church* in *Stockholm*. Other vacant Benefices were disposed of to those who had been educated at *Wittenberg*; and the King plainly told Bishop *Brask* that he could not refuse his Protection to the *Lutherans* until they were convicted of some Heresy or Immorality.

Quarrel with
DENMARK,
concerning
GOTHLAND.

As *Soren Norby*, who had all along adhered to the Interest of *Christian*, still kept Possession of the Island of *Gothland*, and from thence greatly annoyed the Merchant Ships of *Sweden*, *Gustavus* sent *Barnard Van Melen* to reduce this Island. *Norby* knowing himself unable to withstand the Forces of *Sweden* immediately put himself under the Protection of *Denmark*; and hence arose a Quarrel betwixt the two Crowns.

OLAUS disputes several
Times with
PETER
GALLE.

The King being informed that *Olaus*, who had a little before married publicly, was employed in translating the *New Testament* into *Swedish* he gave Orders to the Archbishop to have the same done by some *Catholic*. A Dispute being likewise ordered to be publicly held betwixt Dr. *Peter Galle* and *Olaus* upon the controverted Points the latter had greatly the Advantage, and his Translation of the *New Testament* was allowed to be much the best. As the Clergy still refused to comply with the King's Demand this Matter was moreover ordered to be canvassed by these two Disputants; and it was in a Dispute publicly held proved from holy Scripture that the Clergy had no Divine Right to the Privilege they claimed of being exempt from all Taxes. A Diet being shortly after called at *Westeras* it was resolved that the Clergy were liable to Taxes; and to get rid of the Archbishop who grew very refractory he was sent Ambassador into *Poland*.

The Clergy set
up a Pretender
to the Throne,

1527.

In order to remove all Suspicion of his being partial a second Dispute was ordered by *Gustavus* to be held upon the controverted Points: But Bishop *Brask* and the rest of the Clergy opposed this although it was the most proper Way to come at Truth and set up a Pretender to the Throne. This Person, who was only a Peasant's Son,

Son, having given it out that he was the Son of *Steen Sture* a considerable Party was formed in the Year 1527 in *Dalecarlia*; and being supported by the King of *Denmark* and the *Swedish* Clergy he threatned Fire and Sword to all the *Lutherans*, and particularly to the City of *Stockholm* whose Inhabitants were most zealous for the Reformation.

As the Pope was about the same Time besieged by *Gustavus Charlequint* in the Castle of *St. Angelo* *Gustavus* think-^{seizes some}ing it a convenient Time to declare himself convened ^{Church Reve-}a Diet at *Westeras*. After representing to this Diet that ^{nues.}the Clamour of the Clergy against him was only because he would not suffer them to oppress the Laity, he proposed the annexing of some Revenues of the Church to the Crown, and that all Lands which had been given to the Church since the Year 1454 should be restored to the lawful Heirs of the Donors. To bring the common People the more easily into his Views *Gustavus* promised to apply these Revenues to the easing them of Taxes; and for the sake of cajoling the Senators he made a publick Entertainment, and ordered that they should take Place of the Bishops who were before used to sit next the King. Being hereat greatly provoked the Clergy came to a Resolution of not giving up any of their Revenues, and Bishop *Brask* plainly told the King in an Assembly of the States, “*That it was not in the Power of the*
“*Clergy to give up any Part of their Revenues or to admit*
“*of any Change in Religion without the Pope's Consent.*”

This Speech being applauded by all the Clergy and ^{He offers to}some Temporal Lords the King, who rose from his Seat ^{resign the}in a great Passion, said that he was ready if the States ^{Crown.}would reimburse him the Expence he had been at for the Defence of the Kingdom to resign the Crown; and to shew that he was in earnest he retired with some of his Officers into the Castle. As the States hereat surprized found that the City of *Stockholm* adhered to *Gustavus*, and that *Galle* had been worsted in a second Dispute with *Olaus*, they thought proper to ask his Pardon and begged of him not to quit the Throne. He at length complied with their Request: And after obliging several Bishops to surrender their Castles into his Hands they
were

were all forced to sign an Act for the Regulation of Ecclesiastical Affairs.

His Reign The Clergy endeavoured after this to disturb his much disturbed Reign; but as the *Dalecarlians* frightened into Submission by the Intrigues had sent away their Leader the pretended *Sture*, and of Churchmen. *Sigismund* of Poland had refused the Crown of Sweden which the Malecontents offered to him, all their Efforts signified nothing; and Bishop *Brask* despairing of the Success of the Catholick Cause under the Pretence of going a Journey to *Dantzick* retired.

The Protestant Religion established. After being solemnly crowned at *Upsal* in the Year 1528 *Gustavus* called a general Assembly of the Clergy at *Orebro*. In this wherein the King's Chancellor presided the Protestant Religion was established and many of the inferior Clergy embraced it; but by the Intrigues of the Bishops and some Lords Insurrections were stirred up in divers Provinces.

The Insurrections hereupon formed are happily quelled. The Design of these was to dethrone *Gustavus*, who was accused of Heresy and other Crimes, and to make *Magnus Brynteson* King: But by the Prudence of *Gustavus* they were all happily quelled. *Magnus* Bishop of *Skara* and *Thuro Johanson* Grand Marshal, who were two of the Ringleaders, fled into *Denmark*. Two others *Magnus Brynteson* and *Nils Olufsson* were condemned for High-Treason and executed; and *Thuro Ericson* who received Sentence of Death with these two bought it off for a large Sum of Money. Another Insurrection was formed in *Dalecarlia* on Account of the taking of some Bells from the Churches; but as *Gustavus* marched thither at the Head of a large Army and ordered his Soldiers to fire amongst the Mutineers, they fell upon their Knees and promised to be more obedient for the future.

He repulses CHRISTIAN from NORWAY. An End being pretty well put to these domestick Troubles *Gustavus* in the Year 1532 married *Catherine* Daughter of *Magnus* Duke of *Saxe Lawenburg*. He soon after sent an Army under *Lars Sigeson* against *Christian* King of *Denmark* who had landed in *Norway*. This General being joined by some *Danish* Troops obliged *Christian*, who had been greatly concerned in exciting the Insurrections against *Gustavus*, to give over the Siege of *Babus*. *Christian* afterwards surrendered himself to

the *Danes*; and being committed to Prison by *Frederick* his Rival he spent the remainder of his Days therein.

Another Storm soon threatened *Sweden* from the Side *War with the* of *Lubeck*; whose Inhabitants because they were re-LUBECKERS. fused the exclusive right of trading to the northern Parts of the Kingdom joined with many Refugees of the Party of *Christian*. Being headed by *John* Count of *Hoya* Brother-in-Law of *Gustavus* they proposed no less than the conquering of the three northern Kingdoms; and by promising to make this City a Hans Town they prevailed upon some Burghers at *Stockholm* to enter into a Conspiracy against *Gustavus*. The Divisions which arose in *Denmark* upon the Death of *Frederick* gave the *Lubeckers* some Advantage against the *Danes*: But by the Succours of Ships and Money sent by *Gustavus* to *Christian III.* of *Denmark* the Fleet of *Lubeck* was defeated and quite ruined. Being jealous that the Emperor *Charles V.* intended to put *Frederick* Count *Palatine* Son-in-Law of *Christian II.* into Possession of the northern Kingdoms *Gustavus* in the Year 1542 entered into a Defensive Alliance with *France*.

In a Diet held at *Westeras* in the Year 1544 the *The Catholick* Crown was declared hereditary; and after appointing *Religion is* *Eric Gustavus* his eldest Son then but eleven Years of *prohibited,* Age to succeed *Gustavus* the States took a solemn Oath 1544. to maintain the Protestant Religion, and the Exercise of the Catholick Religion was entirely prohibited.

The Remainder of this Reign was undisturbed except *The RUSSIANS* by an Irruption of the *Russians* into *Finland*. A Treaty *invade LIVO-* with *Russia* being concluded *Gustavus* in the Year 1556 *NIA.* made a Will; by which some Parts of his Dominions were given to *John*, *Magnus* and *Charles* his younger Sons, on Condition however that these were to be held as Fiefs of the Crown. He died in the Year 1559 while his eldest Son was preparing for a Voyage into *England* with a Design to marry *Elizabeth* Queen thereof.

Eric who succeeded being jealous of his Brothers *ERIC VIII.* put off his intended Voyage; and in order to support 1559. himself obliged them although much against their Will to subscribe to certain Articles which were agreed upon in a Diet held at *Arboga*. In the Beginning of this Reign

Reign the Titles of *Count* and *Baron* were introduced into *Sweden* and made hereditary.

Part of *LIVONIA* submitted to him.

Troubles arising in *Livonia* Part of the People submitted to *Denmark*; Part to the King of *Poland*: And others who bordered upon *Sweden* begged the Protection of *Eric*. Hereupon *Eric* sent an Army under *Nicholas Horn* into this Province and the Town of *Revel* opened its Gates to the *Swedes*: But as the *Poles* insisted upon the Restitution thereof it created ill Blood betwixt the two Nations.

He gives over all Thoughts of going into *ENGLAND* to marry *ELIZABETH*.

Pursuant to the Resolution he had taken of marrying *Elizabeth Eric* embarked for *England*: But meeting with a violent Tempest he was forced to put back; and being of a superstitious Turn he looked upon this as an ill Omen and gave over all Thoughts of attempting this Voyage again. He afterwards made one Offer of Marriage to *Mary Queen of Scots*, another to a Princess of *Lorrain*, and another to *Katherine* Daughter of the Landgrave of *Hesse*: But all these came to nothing.

He makes his Brother *JOHN* Prisoner.

John his Brother having in the mean Time married without consulting him to *Katherine of Poland* *Eric* besieged *John* in his Castle of *Abo*: And having made him Prisoner he was sentenced to die. The Sentence was indeed changed to perpetual Imprisonment: But this did not screen *Eric* from the Resentment of the *Polish* Court; and the *Danes* and *Lubeckers* were prevailed upon to join in revenging this Injustice done to *John*. *Eric* defended himself with such Bravery that the Loss was equal on both Sides: But his Subjects took the Opportunity of his being thus attacked on all Sides to discover their Dissatisfaction at his Conduct.

The imprudent Conduct of *ERIC*.

After abandoning himself for some Time to a Seraglio of Mistresses *Eric* grew fond of one of very low Birth named *Katherine*; and thereby quite lost the Esteem of the Nobility. Being moreover governed entirely by a Favourite named *Joran Peerfon* and by *Dennis Beurré* who had been formerly his Tutor, these two stirred up in him a Jealousy of the House of *Sture* which proved fatal to this House. False Witnesses being suborned against them *Suante Sture* with *Eric* his Son and many of his Relations were seized and suffered

Sufferings of the House of *STURE*.

most

most cruel Deaths : And *Eric* stabbed *Nils Sture* with his own Hands. He afterwards repented of these cruel Actions and caused *Beurré* who had put him upon them to be slain by his own Guards. Fearing however the ill Consequences, for the People were hereat exasperated to the highest Degree, he upon certain Conditions set his Brother *John* at Liberty ; and in order to appease the People threw *Joran Peerfon* on whom he laid all the Blame into Prison. Being afterwards successful against the *Danes* who came to the Assistance of his Subjects he not only released *Peerfon*, but declared that he was quite innocent of all that was laid to his Charge and that the *Stures* were justly punished.

By the Advice of *Peerfon* *Eric* also proposed to his Brothers the giving up of what their Father had left them in Exchange for some Territories in *Livonia* : And because they would not consent thereto he resolved to have them assassinated at the Celebration of his Nuptials with his Mistress *Katherine*. Being advertised of this cruel Design they instead of going to the Wedding entered into a Conspiracy with the Relations of the *Stures* for dethroning him : And in order to do it more effectually a Truce was by the Interposition of the King of *Poland*, who was privy to the Design, concluded with *Denmark*.

Having assembled all the Forces they could and gain- ed over some *German* Troops in the Pay of *Eric* the Conspirators seized the Castles of *Steckburg*, *Leckoo* and *Wadstena* ; in the last of which they found a considerable Treasure. A Manifesto was now published containing their Reasons for taking up Arms ; and marching directly to *Stockholm* they besieged this City on the Side of *Brunkenberg*. *Eric* defended himself for some Time with great Vigour and made frequent Sallies on the Besiegers ; but at length the Senate who had all along been secretly in the Interest of his Brothers opened the Gates whilst *Eric* was at Church, and he had much ado to save himself by flying into the Castle. Being forced to surrender he was committed to Prison, where he was cruelly treated by the Relations of the *Stures* who had the Charge of him.

John,

JOHN II.
1568.

Treaty with
DENMARK.

John, who was upon his Brother's Deposition in the Year 1566 proclaimed King, after causing some of his personal Enemies and others that had been concerned in the Massacre of the *Stures* to be executed sent Ambassadors to the King of *Denmark* at *Koschild* with Instructions to conclude a Peace; or if that could not be done a Prolongation of the Truce. The Terms agreed upon being very disadvantageous to *Sweden* the Treaty made by these Ambassadors, who were accused of having exceeded their Orders, was declared void in an Assembly of the States; and other Ambassadors were sent to get if possible better Terms.

He cedes some
Provinces to
his Brother
CHARLES.

As *John* had always promised that his Brother *Charles*, who had had a great Share in bringing about this Revolution, should share with him in the Government, he ceded to him pursuant to the Tenour of their Father's Will the Provinces of *Sundermania*, *Nericia* and *Werm-land*.

War with
MUSCOVY.

Being informed that the Czar of *Russia* was advancing with Design to put *Magnus* Duke of *Holstein* into Possession of *Livonia*, *John* for the Sake of preventing this ratified the disadvantageous Peace made with *Denmark*. The Operations of the *Russians* were retarded by the *Tartars*, who at the Instigation of the Court of *Warsaw* invaded *Russia* and after setting Fire to *Moscow* put 30,000 Men to the Sword: But a Treaty being concluded betwixt the *Russians* and the *Poles* the former entered *Livonia* with an Army of 80,000 Men. They for some Time carried every thing before them and committed great Ravages: But a Body of 16,000 of them being defeated by about 1600 *Swedes* the Czar astonished at this Blow, for not less than 7000 of the *Russians* were left upon the Field, proposed to enter into Negotiations for a Peace at *Newgarte*. This Place being objected to by *John* and the War being continued the *Swedes* were repulsed from before *Wesenberg*, and again at the Siege of *Tolzburg*: And another Accident which was more fatal to their Affairs happened in their own Camp. A Quarrel arising betwixt the *German* Cavalry and the *Scotch* Infantry it came to Blows, and the latter were so roughly handled that

that not above fourscore out of 1600 escaped being killed on the Spot. The *Russians* having not long after surprized the *Swedes* at a Time when they were drunk in their Camp and cut to Pieces a great Number of them. *Truce with* a Truce for ten Years was concluded. It has been *RUSSIA.* thought that *John* might have carried on this War to much greater Advantage, if he had not been more intent about making a Change in Religion than in pushing it.

Having at the Persuasion of the Queen resolved not- *JOHN attempt* withstanding that he was himself educated in the Pro- *to reestablish* testant to reestablish the Catholick Religion, *John* encour- *the Catholick* aged some Jesuits to come in Disguise into the King- *Religion.* dom, that they might assist his Secretary *Peter Tretenius* to whom the Management of this Affair was committed. An Assembly of the Bishops and Clergy being convened by this Minister, he in Imitation of what had been attempted in *Germany* proposed the compromising of all religious Differences; and a new Liturgy which ordained the Celebration of Mass, the Consecration of Bishops and the Administration of the Sacraments, agreeably to the Manner of the Church of *Rome* was composed. This Liturgy, called *the Liturgy of the Church of Sweden conformable to the Catholick and Orthodox Church*, being signed by the new Archbishop, some Bishops and a few of the inferior Clergy, the *Catholick* Doctrines began to be publickly preached; and great Pains were used to prevail upon *Charles* to admit these in his Dominions.

His Answer was that according to their Father's Will *CHARLES re-* it was neither in his nor in the King's Power to make *fuses to admit* any Alteration in Religion. The Clergy of *Stockholm* *this into his* were also solicited to receive the new Liturgy; but they *Dominions.* plainly told *John* that it was calculated to introduce Popery, and in order to justify their Refusal appealed to a general Assembly of the Clergy. One was called in the Year 1577: But the Majority of the Clergy who too! too! oft attend to the Dictates of Interest came into the King's Views. The Liturgy was moreover confirmed by the temporal Estates of the Kingdom; and it was declared that all who should for the Time to come oppose the same should be adjudged guilty of High Treason.

The Protestants are hardly used. Many of the Clergy who did oppose this Liturgy were imprisoned: Yet the honest Part of them were not deterred from exposing the Artifices of their Adversaries; and their Cause which from a Consciousness of its Justice they defended with great Boldness was espoused by the Protestant Universities abroad. As several Stratagems to set *Eric* at Liberty had during his Confinement of nine Years been tried, and *John* could not tell what turn these intestine Divisions which he knew to be secretly encouraged by his Brother *Charles* might take, he in order to make sure of *Eric* caused him to be poisoned by his Secretary. *John* afterwards founded a new University at *Stockholm* whose Professors were all to be Catholics; and an Ambassador being sent to the Pope he in Return sent a Nuncio into *Sweden*, and the Protestants were every where rigorously used.

ERIC is poisoned.

War with RUSSIA.

While these Things were doing the War with *Russia* had been renewed: But no considerable Advantage was gained until *Stephen* of *Poland* did attack the *Russians* on the Side of *Poland*. The Diversions hereby made enabled the *Swedes* under their General *Pontus de la Gard'e* to take *Leckholm*, *Poden* and *Narva*, at which last Place 7000 *Russians* were slain, and some other Places of Consequence: But a Peace being concluded in the Year 1582 by the *Poles* who began to grow jealous of the Progress of the *Swedes*, the latter did likewise find it necessary to make a Truce with the *Russians*.

The two Brothers are reconciled.

Not long after the Difference which had for some Time subsisted betwixt the two Brothers was made up by the Interposition of some Senators; the new Liturgy was however still rejected in the Dominions of *Charles* by the Clergy to whom this Matter was referred.

Fresh Jealousies arise.

On the Death of *Stephen* of *Poland* in the Year 1587, *Ann* his Wife prevailed upon the Nobility of *Poland* to choose *Sigismund* her Nephew the Son of *John* in his Stead: The Conditions however of his accepting of this Crown were quite disagreeable to the *Swedish* Nation, and he afterwards repented thereof. After this *John* again tried to introduce the new Liturgy into the Dominions of his Brother: But finding that the Clergy who relied on the Protection of their Prince would never consent

sent thereto he gave over all Thoughts of it. The Marriage of *Charles* in the Year 1592 with *Christina* Daughter of *Adolph* Count of *Holstein* revived *John's* Jealousy of him: But the Death of *John* a few Months after put an End thereto.

The Death of *John* was concealed until the Ar-SIGISMUND, rival of *Charles* at *Stockholm*. He immediately dispatched an Express to *Sigismund* his Nephew in *Poland*; and in the mean Time took upon himself with the Consent of the Senate the Administration of Affairs. Being confirmed in the Regency by *Sigismund* he caused an Assembly of the Clergy at which those of *Finland* refused to be present to be held at *Upsal*. It being herein resolved to restore the Confession of *Augsburg* and lay aside the new Liturgy the States of the Kingdom confirmed this Resolution; and they declared by another Resolution that no Appeal should be carried to the King in *Poland*. It was moreover agreed that *Sigismund* should before his Coronation confirm both these Resolutions: But instead of doing this he insisted that being an hereditary Prince no Persons had a Right to prescribe Terms to him; and he declared moreover that the Resolutions which had been come to without his Knowledge were *ipso facto* void. 1592.

This Conduct of *Sigismund* displeased the People, and *The People are* their Fears for the Protestant Religion encreased when *much dissatisf-* upon his coming into *Sweden* he demanded a Church *fied with his* in every Town for the Exercise of the Catholick, and *Conduct.* declared that the Crown should be set upon his Head by the Pope's Nuncio who accompanied him from *Poland*. Deputies were hereupon sent to *Charles* to beg his Interposition: And he did all he could to prevail upon *Sigismund* to confirm the Resolutions of the States. Finding him deaf to all he urged on this Occasion he entered into a League with the States for the Defence of the Protestant Religion; and Troops were assembled in the Neighbourhood of *Upsal*. Hereupon *Sigismund*, who did not think it proper to come just then to Extremities, complied with most of the Demands of the States and was crowned by the Bishop of *Strengness*: But being returned to *Stockholm* he resolved to break

through the Engagements he had entered into; and in order to intimidate the States sent for Troops out of *Poland*. When he found that the States whom *Charles* assisted would not be frightened, he hoping the confused State Things were in would make it easy for him to force them into his Terms by the Advice of some *Poles* quitted the Kingdom.

Vigorous Resolutions come to by the States. Being apprized of his embarking for *Dantzick* the States in Conjunction with *Charles* took the Government out of the Hands of the Person he had left Regent who was a Papist; and forbid the Exercise of the Catholick Religion. Having in a Diet soon after held at *Sudercoping* justified their Conduct in a Letter to *Sigismund* the States established the Confession of *Augsburg*, and declared all Papists incapable of Offices. They moreover passed several Acts for securing the Liberties of the People: And having declared Prince *Charles* Regent vested the whole Power during the King's Absence in him and the Senate. The Proceedings of this Diet were for the Satisfaction of the World afterwards published in *Latin*, *Swedish* and *German*.

SIGISMUND endeavours to sow Discord betwixt his Uncle and the Senate. Hereupon *Sigismund* sent some Persons to persuade *Charles* to alter his Conduct. As nothing could be done with him *Sigismund* in order to cajole the States wrote to them that he was willing to leave every thing to the Management of the Senate, provided *Charles* was excluded therefrom. This last Artifice had such an Effect that some Senators, who wanted to curry Favour with the King or were disgusted with *Charles*, did not repair to the Diet held at *Arboga*: Nevertheless all that had been agreed upon in the Diet of *Sudercoping* was confirmed therein, all Allegiance to *Sigismund* was renounced and *Charles* was declared sole Regent.

CHARLES repulses Sigismund's Forces. Having now assembled all the Troops he could *Charles* gained great Advantages over *Nicholas Flemming Sigismund's* General: And the Governors appointed by him together with the disaffected Lords every where fled before the Troops of *Charles*. All *Sweden* being soon lost to *Sigismund* he, hoping his Presence might do something, resolved to put himself at the Head of 6000 Men and make the best of his Way thither.

Being

Being thereof informed *Charles* in the Year 1598 assembled the States at *Wadstena*; and having acquainted them with the King's Design it was unanimously resolved to meet him at *Calmar*: But while *Charles* was busy in reducing the *Finlanders* who had declared for *Sigismund* to Obedience the latter landed without any Opposition at *Calmar*. Overtures for accommodating Matters were made whilst he was there: Which having no Effect Recourse was had to Arms.

In the first Engagement near *Strengness* the Army of *Charles* was routed; but he soon after surprized a considerable Body of the King's Troops at *Stangbro* and with very little Loss on his Side cut off above 2000 of them. After this Defeat *Sigismund* pretended to be reconciled to *Charles*; and promised to go to *Stockholm* and leave every thing to be settled by the States. As he instead of keeping his Word returned to *Dantzick* the States assembled at *Stockholm* and once more appointed *Charles* Regent; and their Oath of Allegiance to *Sigismund* was for the second Time renounced. It was also resolved to offer the Crown to his Son *Uladislaus*, provided he would within the Space of one Year come into *Sweden* and be instructed in the Protestant Religion: And it was at the same Time agreed that if he failed in either of these he and his Descendants should be for ever excluded from the Throne.

Charles having in the Year 1600 entered into a strict Alliance with *Russia* he in the following Year called a Diet at *Lincoping*: In which many Lords who had adhered to the King were declared guilty of High Treason and put to Death. It was moreover declared that *Sigismund* had forfeited all his Right to the Crown; and that *Uladislaus* his Son should for want of coming into the Kingdom within the Time prescribed be excluded from the Throne. Being informed that the *Poles* were intent on raising *Demetrius* a Pretender to the Throne of *Russia*, *Charles* seeming to be afraid of the Union of *Russia* and *Poland* against *Sweden* desired to resign the Government; and the Crown was offered to *John* Brother to *Sigismund*. On his Refusal the States in Consideration of his being the only remaining Son of *Gustavus* and of his own great Services did in the Year 1604

SIGISMUND
lands with an
Army in SWE-
DEN, 1698.
STRENGTHNESS.
The Family of
SIGISMUND is
excluded and
the Crown is
conferred on
CHARLES.

confer the Crown upon *Charles*; and declared that his Heirs not excepting even Females should succeed thereto.

CHARLES,
1604.

Charles was no sooner in Possession of the Crown than he undertook an Expedition into *Livonia*: But the *Poles* worsted him and had it not been for the Divisions which arose in *Poland* his ill Success there might have had fatal Consequences. He soon after sent Succours to the Assistance of the *Russians* who had raised *Basilus Suski* to the Throne; yet this did not hinder the *Poles* from obliging the *Russians* to deliver *Basilus* into their Hands.

The Progress
of the DANES
is stopped by
the Prince

GUSTAVUS,
1611.

Uladislaus Son of *Sigismund* being hereupon made Czar of *Russia*, the *Danes* took the Opportunity of their being at War with *Russia* and *Poland*, to attack the *Swedes*; and the Affairs of *Sweden* would in all Probability have went on very ill had it not been for the uncommon Bravery and prudent Conduct of *Gustavus Adolphus* Heir Apparent to the Crown. While the *Danes* were in the Year 1611 before *Calmar* he with 1500 Horse surprized their Magazines at *Blekingen*, which Place is now called *Christianstadt*; and took from them the Island of *Oeland* and the Castle of *Bornholm*. In the following Winter *Charles* died at *Nicoping* in the 61st Year of his Age.

GUSTAVUS
II. 1611.

As *Gustavus Adolphus* was a Minor his Father had appointed *Christiana* the Queen, Duke *John* and some Senators to be his Guardians: But it was resolved in the Diet, great Expectations being raised of him from his prudent and brave Conduct, that he should although no more than 18 Years of Age immediately take the Management of Affairs into his own Hands.

Truce with
DENMARK,
1613.

Being unsuccessful in the War with the *Danes* whose Fleet was greatly superior, *Gustavus* for the Sake of carrying on his Designs in *Russia* in the Year 1613 made a Truce with them; and agreed to pay 1,000,000 Crowns for the Restitution of *Calmar*, *Fort-Risbi* and *Elsburg*.

CHARLES
Brother of
GUSTAVUS is
invited to the
Throne of
RUSSIA.

James de la Gardie his General in *Russia* managed so well there that the *Russians* invited *Gustavus* and *Charles* his Brother, to whom they offered the Crown, to come to *Moscow*: But as *Gustavus* had a greater Mind to unite the *Russian* Crown to the *Swedish* than that his Brother should have it, he in his Answer which was some time deferred

deferred only spoke of coming himself. As the *Russians* hereupon grew jealous of his intending to make *Russia* a Province to *Sweden* they raised one from amongst themselves named *Michael Foederowitz* to the Throne; so that before *Charles* did go into *Russia* the Party of *Michael* was grown so much too powerful for him that he was soon forced to retire. In Revenge the *Swedes* fell vigorously upon the *Russians*; and after defeating them in several Engagements took many frontier Places from them. A Treaty of Peace with the *Russians* was ^{Treaty of} concluded under the Mediation of *England* at *Stolbova* ^{STOLBOVA,} in the Year 1617; by which *Kexholm* and the Province ^{1617.} of *Ingermania* were ceded to the *Swedes*.

The Truce which had been concluded with *Po-War with the* land being now near expiring *Gustavus* resolved to re-^{POLAND.} commence the War against the *Poles*. That he might in this meet with no Interruption he caused the Remainder of the Sum due to *Christian* of *Denmark* to be paid; and married *Mary Eleanor* Daughter of *John Sigismund* Elector of *Brandenburgh*. After taking *Riga* which was defended for six Months with great Bravery the Truce was renewed for two Years; and during this Proposals of Peace were made: But *Sigismund* although it was quite against the Inclination of the *Poles* persisted in his Resolution of continuing the War. Hereupon ^{GUSTAVUS} *Gustavus* marched into *Livonia* and after defeating ^{overruns LIT-} 3000 *Lithuanians* commanded by *Stanislaus Sapieha*, ^{VONIA.} who attempted to oppose his Passage into this Dutchy, made himself Master of all thereof except *Duneburg*: Yet being encouraged by the Emperor whom Fortune favoured in *Germany* *Sigismund* would hear nothing of Peace.

Being now resolved to make one grand Push against *He lands at* the *Poles* *Gustavus* landed in the Year 1626 with the ^{PILLAW.} Consent of the Elector of *Brandenburg* at *Pillaw* with ^{1626.} 26,000 Men; which being quite unexpected he easily became Master of *Braunsberg* and *Frawenberg*, and *Elbing* submitted upon his appearing before it. He also before the *Poles* could send any Forces against him took *Marienbergh*, *Mewe* and several other Places in *Prussia*. The *Poles* in vain attempted to surprize the former of these Places; nor did they succeed better in

the Siege of *Mewe*: But some Troops raised by *Gustavus* in *Germany* were dispersed by the *Podolians* under *Stanislaus Kaniecpolski*.

1627.

He attacks the
POLES in
their Camp.

Having early in the next Year received a Reinforcement from *Sweden* *Gustavus* laid Siege to *Dantzick*; but being wounded in attacking an Outwork he gave over this Siege for the present. After taking *Mewe* the *Poles* encamped near *Dirshaw* within Sight of the Army of *Gustavus*. As there was a Morass between the two Armies he did not think proper to attack them: But when they retreated he cut off many of their Rear-Guard. A few Days after he fell upon them in their Camp: Being however himself wounded by a Musket Ball in the Beginning of the Action no great Advantage was gained. Towards the End of this Year Negotiations were again entered into; and they were in a fair Way of succeeding if the Emperor had not promised to send a Body of 12,000 Men to the Assistance of *Sigismund*.

1628.

The POLES
are defeated.

In the Beginning of the ensuing Campaign the *Poles* were defeated with the Loss of 3000 Men, 40 Pieces of Cannon and some Standards; yet the Action being very obstinate the Loss was considerable on the Side of *Gustavus*. In order to favour an Attempt upon *Dantzick* he sent eight Ships of War to block up the Harbour; but an Engagement ensuing in which the *Swedish* Admiral was killed these were forced to retire. Having towards the End of this Year conveyed a thousand Foot over the *Vistula* in Boats they surprized *Newburg* where the *Poles* had a large Magazine; and besides other Plunder carried away 600,000 Crowns in Specie.

1629.

Battle of
BRODNITZ.

In the Year 1629 the *Swedish* General *Herman Wrangel* came up with the *Poles* who were before *Brodnitz*; and defeated them with the Loss of 3000 killed on the Spot, 1000 made Prisoners, 50 Pieces of Cannon and all their Baggage. The Courage of the *Poles* was in some Measure revived by the coming up of a Reinforcement of 7000 *Germans*: Yet *Gustavus* although his Army was inferior did not decline a Battle. The two Armies met near *Stum* and a bloody Action ensued, in which the King who exposed his Person

Battle of
STUM.

too much was twice very near being taken Prisoner; but the *Poles* sustained much the greatest Loss. Being afterwards worsted in another Engagement they began to suspect the Fidelity of *Arnheim* the Imperial General, who was a Vassal of the Elector of *Brandenburg*.

A Plague moreover breaking out in their Army, which *Truce with* had already suffered much from Famine, the *Poles* re-*POLAND*. solved to accommodate Matters with *Sweden*; and a Truce for six Years was concluded under the Mediation of *France*, *Brandenburg* and the *Maritime Powers*. By this *Pillaw*, *Memel*, *Braunsburg* and *Elbing* together with all he had conquered in *Livonia* were ceded to *Gustavus*; and it was agreed that *Marienburg* should be put into the Hands of the Elector of *Brandenburg*. The Wars with *Russia* and *Poland* being thus ended with great Glory to *Gustavus* and vast Advantage to the *Swedish* Nation he went into *Germany*, and performed such Things there as surprized all *Europe*.

The Protestants had in the Beginning of the Troubles *GUSTAVUS* in *Germany* invited *Gustavus* to enter into the League *resolves to* against the Catholics; but while the *Polish* War con-*assist the GER-* tinued he did not although he wished well to their *MAN Prote-* Cause think proper to do this. After the Defeat of *Christians*. *Christian* of *Denmark* who was proud of being at the Head of this League, which was followed with the Conquest of all *Lower-Saxony* by the Imperialists, *Gustavus* fearing the Consequences of their getting Footing on the *Baltick* Coast was more than ever desirous of a Peace with *Poland*. Before the Conclusion thereof he did send some Succours to the Inhabitants of *Stralsund*, which prevented the Imperialists from taking this important Place; but being now quite at Liberty he represented to the States of *Sweden* the Necessity of acting vigorously in *Germany*. After making great Preparation he sent *Alexander Lesly* in the Year 1630 with a Body of Troops to drive the Imperialists from the Island of *Rugen*, which was happily executed; and landed himself with a considerable Army upon the Island of *Usedom*.

As the Imperialists quitted this Island on his Arrival *He lands in* and also abandoned *Wollin* *Gustavus* caused his Troops *POMERANIA,* to re-embark and made the best of his Way for *Stetin*. 1630. Appearing before this Place the Duke of *Pomerania* admitted

admitted his Troops and entered into a defensive Alliance with him. *Gustavus* afterwards took *Stargard*, *Anclam*, *Unkermonde* and *Wolgast*; nor did the taking of these Places hinder his sending a Body of Troops under *Dideric* of *Falkenburg*, to assist in reestablishing the Affairs of *Christian William* Administrator of *Magdeburg* whom the Emperor had deposed. Upon the coming up of some Reinforcements commanded by *Gustavus Horn* from *Finland*, *Livonia* and *Prussia*, *Gustavus* set out with a Body of Troops with a Design to penetrate into *Mecklenburg*. After his Departure an Attempt was made by the Imperialists to force the *Swedish* Camp at *Stetin*: But they were repulsed with great Loss; and being about the same Time driven by *Gustavus* from *Grieffenhagen* and *Gartz* they were forced to abandon all the *Lower Pomerania*.

Some GER-
MAN Princes
enter into an
Alliance with
him.

Encouraged by this vast Success the Archbishop of *Bremen*, *George* Duke of *Lunenburg* and *William* Landgrave of *Hesse*, entered into an Alliance with *Gustavus*; and the Protestants all over *Germany* began to flatter themselves with the Hopes of being delivered from the Oppression of the Catholics. Towards the End of the same Year the Treaty of Subsidy, whereby *France* engaged to pay *Sweden* 400,000 Crowns *per Annum*, which had been long upon the Tapis was signed.

1631.

TILLY ap-
pointed to com-
mand the Im-
perialists.

As this Money enabled *Gustavus* to take the Field very early in the next Year he notwithstanding the Severity of the Season made himself Master of *Lokenitz*, *Prentlow*, *Brandenburg*, *Clempenow*, *Craptow* and *Leitz*. *Demmin* likewise of which the Duke of *Savelly* was Governor surrendered in three Days Time; and the Town of *Colberg* after having been blocked up five Months was taken. Finding that his own Generals were by no Means a Match for *Gustavus* the Emperor had given the Command of his Forces to *Tilly* the *Bavarian* General, a Man of great Bravery and great Experience. This General was marching to the Relief of *Demmin*; but hearing in the Way of its having surrendered he attacked *Brandenburg*. *Kniphausen* the Governor defended this Place with great Bravery; but as it was ill fortified and the Garrison small he was forced to give Way to Numbers. Afterwards *Tilly* finding

finding the Army of *Gustavus* strongly intrenched went towards *Magdeburg*; hoping thereby to draw him into the open Field. Hereupon *Gustavus* made a forced March to *Frankfort* upon the *Oder*; and after carrying this Place by Storm on the third Day of the Siege detached some Troops to drive the Imperialists from *Lansberg*.

An Assembly being at this Time held by the Protestants at *Leipsick*, for concerting proper Measures to render the Emperor's Edict for restoring Church-Lands ineffectual, *Gustavus* sent Deputies thither to exhort them to Union and to request Supplies of Men and Money. The Elector of *Saxony* put off under divers Pretences the declaring himself as to this Matter: But his real Design was to make himself the Head of the League; and to embrace the present Opportunity of putting the Affairs of the Protestants into such a Condition, that they might be able to preserve the Ballance of Power betwixt the Emperor and the King of *Sweden*.

Shortly after *Gustavus* marched towards *Magdeburg* which was hard pressed: But he would not attempt the Relief thereof, until the Elector of *Brandenburg* had in order to secure a Retreat in case of Need put into his Hands *Spandaw* and *Custrin*. Having gained this Point he earnestly solicited the Elector of *Saxony* to join him with his Forces, that he might attempt the raising of the Siege of *Magdeburg*; but the latter trifled so long that *Tilly* took this Place by Storm and it was after being plundered set on Fire; nor did above 400 of the many thousand Inhabitants which were therein escape. Lest the loss of this Place should be imputed to *Gustavus* he made publick the Reasons which prevented his going Time enough to the Relief thereof. After sending Part of his Army to the Assistance of the Duke of *Mecklenburg* *Gustavus* now went and encamped with the Remainder at *Werben* upon the *Elbe*. *Tilly* being informed thereof advanced with the main Body of his Army and offered Battle to *Gustavus*: But as the Design of the latter was only to gain Time, the former who did not think proper to attack him in his Camp was soon forced to retire for Want of Forage to his old Camp at *Wolmerstadt*.

The Imperialists lose
Ground in
MECKLEN-
BURG.

During these Transactions the Imperialists were with the Help of the *Swedish* Auxiliaries driven from every Thing in *Mecklenburg* except *Domitz*, *Wismar* and *Rostock*, and these Places were all closely blocked up. About the same Time the Marquis of *Hamilton* having under his Command 6000 *English* and *Scotch* Troops landed in *Pomerania*; but the Sickness which broke out amongst these Troops carried off so many Men that they did the Allies very little Service.

TILLY penetrates into
SAXONY.

Finding he could not attack *Gustavus* without great Disadvantage *Tilly* decamped, and marching into *Saxony* made himself Master of *Leipsick*. His Army which consisted of at least 40,000 Men being greatly superior to that of the Elector of *Saxony*, the latter was under a Necessity of soliciting *Gustavus* to come to his Assistance. *Gustavus* foreseeing what would happen had already advanced as far as *Brandenburg*; but as he was not a little pleased to see the Elector of *Saxony* forced to beg now what he a little before would not accept of, he refused to join him until he had consented to certain Conditions. These being complied with *Gustavus* passed the *Elbe* with 13000 Foot and 9000 Horse; and having joined the Troops of the Elector of *Saxony* near *Dieben* a Council of War at which the Elector of *Brandenburg* assisted was held. *Gustavus* who knew *Tilly's* Experience was for acting with great Caution: But as the other Generals and especially the Elector of *Saxony* were for coming to a decisive Battle, he thought it best to attack *Tilly* before he was joined by the Generals *Altringer* and *Tieffenback*; the former of whom was arrived at *Erfurt* and the latter was in full March through *Silesia*.

Battle of
BRAITEN-
FIELD.

Upon receiving Advice of their Intention to attack him *Tilly* strengthened his Camp near *Leipsick*, with a Design to wait for the Allies there: But the Advice of *Papenheim* and other Generals, who relied too much on the Goodness of the imperial Troops and despised the Enemy because the Troops of the Electors were new raised and those of *Gustavus* fatigued with a long March, was followed, and he resolved to give them Battle in the Plain of *Braitenfield*. *Tilly* had taken Care to post himself upon a rising Ground and to have the Advan-
tage

tage of the Wind; but by the prudent Disposition of *Gustavus* who commanded the right Wing of the Allies he was forced to change the Position of his Army, and by so doing lost the Wind. As the great Effort of the Imperialists was upon the left Wing of the allied Army, of which the Electors of *Brandenburg* and *Saxony* had the Command, the *Saxon* Infantry and Part of the Cavalry of this Wing gave Way. *Gustavus* who had already routed the left Wing of the Enemy perceiving this, he attacked the right Wing of the Imperialists which was pursuing the *Saxons* and soon threw the Cavalry into Disorder. Still the Imperial Infantry stood firm; but being attacked by *Gustavus* who had made himself Master of their Artillery in Flank the Victory soon became compleat. 7600 of the Imperialists were left upon the Field, 5000 of them were made Prisoners, and they lost a hundred Colours and Standards. *Tilly* himself, who was here all at once robbed of the Laurels he had been long gathering, refusing to ask Quarter had certainly been slain by a Captain of Horse, if the Duke of *Saxe-Lawenburg* had not come up in the very Nick of Time and shot this Captain through the Head. *Leip-sick* was soon after retaken by the *Saxons*, and *Gustavus* made himself Master of *Merseburg*.

It being now after some Debate agreed that *Gusta-GUSTAVUS* *vus* should, while the *Saxons* invaded the Emperor's makes great hereditary Dominions, march into *Franconia*, he with-Progress in out much Difficulty took *Koningshofen* and *Zweinfurt*, FRANCONIA. and the Castle of *Wurtzburg* submitted to him. *Tilly* having in the mean Time rallied his Forces and received some Reinforcements, he was advancing towards the Banks of the *Tauber* in order to cover the Emperor's Dominions and *Bavaria*: But being unexpectedly attacked in the Way by the *Swedes* his Rear-Guard consisting of four Regiments was entirely cut off. An Alliance with the Margrave of *Anspach* being at this Time concluded by *Gustavus* he marched towards the *Rhine*; and after subduing the *Rhingan* resolved to turn his Arms against the *Spaniards* who had entered the *Palatinate*. Having passed the *Rhine* at *Stockstadt* and defeated them *Mentz* submitted to him; the

the Garrison of *Oppenheim* was cut to Pieces; and *Landau*, *Spire* and *Germersheim* soon fell into his Hands.

ROSTOCK, The Towns of *Rostock* and *Wismar* were about
WISMAR and the same Time taken from the Imperialists; and they
PRAGUE are were quite driven from the *Baltick* Coast. In the mean
 taken.

Time the Troops of *Saxony* under *Arnheim* had made themselves Masters of *Prague* and many other Places in *Bohemia*; but the Elector growing jealous that *Gustavus* was aiming at the Imperial Dignity would not let his Troops penetrate either into *Moravia* or *Austria*. As *Tilly* had been so unsuccessful in this Campaign it was resolved to give the Command of the Imperial Troops to *Wallstein*, a favourite General of the Soldiers and so rich that he was able to support an Army at his own Expence. He at first refused to take this: but being prevailed upon to accept it Preparations were made for having a large Army on Foot in the following Spring.

1632.
TILLY
 is killed by a
 Cannon-Ball.

Having very early in the Year 1632 obtained another Victory over the *Spaniards*, and taken *Crutzenach* and several other Places in the *Palatinate*, *Gustavus* left the Command there to *Axel Oxenstern*; and went in Search of *Tilly* who still commanded the *Bavarians*. Upon the Approach of *Gustavus* *Tilly* abandoned *Suabia*; and all on that Side of the *Danube* quite as far as *Ulm* fell into the Hands of *Gustavus*. Advancing to the Banks of the *Lech* where *Tilly* had intrenched himself in a Wood, the latter received a Wound from a Cannon-Ball of which he died a few Days after. Dismayed at the Loss of their General the *Bavarians* fled in great Disorder; and left the whole Country open to *Gustavus*. *Rain*, *Newburg* and *Augsburg* made very little Resistance; but the Attempts of *Gustavus* upon *Ingolstadt* and *Ratisbon* failed. At the former of these Places he had a Horse shot under him and the Marquis of *Baden* was killed by his Side; and the Elector of *Bavaria* had taken Care to put a strong Garrison into the latter. He afterwards laid all *Bavaria* under Contribution, and coming before *Munich* the Gates of this City were thrown open to him.

In

In the mean Time the Saxons had been driven out of Bo- After driving
hemia, and great Ravages had been committed by the Im- the SAXONS
 perialists in *Lower-Saxony*; but the ill Success of the Sax- out of BOHE-
 ons was a good deal owing to the Treachery of *Arnheim* MIA the Impe-
 their General, who had the utmost Hatred to *Gusta- rialists turn*
rus. *Papenheim* being now left to command in *Lower- their whole*
Saxony, it was agreed by *Wallstein* and the Elector of Ba- Force against
varia to join their Forces and fall upon *Gustavus* in GUSTAVUS.
Bavaria. The latter made a forced March to pre-
 vent this Junction; but being unable to do it he en-
 camped near *Naumburg*. In order to make him quit
 this advantageous Post *Wallstein* made a Feint March
 as if he intended to go into *Saxony*. Finding this would
 not do he advanced towards *Gustavus*, and endeavoured
 to force him to a Battle by straitning him in his
 Camp. Being afterwards reinforced by Troops from
 divers Parts of *Germany* *Gustavus* resolved to attack
Wallstein: But the latter had entrenched himself so
 strongly, that notwithstanding its Superiority in Number
 the allied Army was repulsed with considerable Loss.
 During these Transactions *Papenheim* had worsted the
Hessians near *Volkmarssen*; obliged the Duke of *Luneburg*
 to give over the Siege of *Calenberg*; and defeated General
Bauditz twice; and he was upon the March to join
Wallstein. It was hereupon resolved by *Gustavus*, who
 found there was no trusting to the Saxon General *Arn-*
heim, to march with the Flower of his Army towards
 the *Lech*. Whilst he was making Conquests there he Progress of
 received a Letter from the Elector of *Saxony*, begging GUSTAVUS
 him to come immediately to his Assistance against *Wall- upon the LECH.*
stein, who had entered *Misnia* with all his Forces. *Gus-*
tavus had been for some Time dissatisfied with this Elec-
 tor's Conduct; yet fearing that he might be forced to
 make a separate Peace with the Emperor, he left the
 Command in *Bavaria* and *Suabia* to *Christian Bircken-*
field Count *Palatine*, and went with a considerable Body
 of Troops.

Hearing upon his Arrival at *Naumburg* that *Wallstein* Battle of
 had detached a large Body of Troops under *Papenheim*, LUTZEN.
Gustavus resolved not to wait for the Duke of *Lunenbourg*
 who was at *Wittenberg*; but to come to an Engagement
 before *Papenheim* could rejoin the Imperial Army. With
 a View

Death of
GUSTAVUS.

a View to this he advanced into the Plain of *Lutzel* and an obstinate Battle ensued. The *Swedish* Infantry began the Attack with such Intrepidity that the Imperialists were forced to retire and leave their Cannon. The Cavalry who pursued them being stopped by a Ditch, *Gustavus* in order to encourage the rest put himself at the Head of the *Smaland* Horse and passed it: But advancing too far he lost his Life. Concerning the Manner of his Death there are various Conjectures. The most probable is that the Duke of *Saxe-Lawenburg*, who with two Grooms were the only Persons in his Company, bribed by the Imperialists was the Occasion thereof. Instead of being dismayed at his Death the *Swedes* fought more desperately, and routed the Enemy on all Sides. The Imperialists being rejoined by *Pappenheim* did indeed rally; but this General being slain they were a second Time routed and the Victory became compleat: Yet as it cost the *Swedes* the Life of so great a King it was a dear bought one.

CHRISTIANA,
1633.

Christiana Daughter and Successor of *Gustavus* being only six Years of Age at his Death, it was resolved in the Dyet that the Regency should be in the Hands of the principal Officers of State; and that the Care of Affairs in *Germany* should be committed to the Chancellor, *Oxenstern*.

OXENSTERN
continues the
War in GER-
MANY.

This Minister foresaw the Divisions that would arise amongst the Protestant Princes upon his Master's Death; yet as the abandoning of what had been conquered in *Germany* would have been giving up the *Protestant* Cause and hurtful to *Sweden*, he judged it proper to carry on the War vigorously until a good Peace could be obtained. Thinking it best to divide the Army 14000 Men were sent by him to join *George* Duke of *Lunenburg* in *Westphalia*; and he sent a large Body of Troops into *Silesia*. These last being deserted by the *Saxons*, whose General held a secret Correspondence with *Wallstein*, they were routed with considerable Loss: But the Troops of the Allies were successful in *Franconia*, in the *Palatinate* and upon the *Lower Rhine*. The Duke of *Lunenburg* did also make great Progress in *Westphalia*; and after defeating Count *Mansfield* had laid Siege to *Hamel*. A Body of 15,000

Impe-

Imperialists was sent to the Relief of this important *Battle of HA-*
Place; but these being defeated with the Loss of 2000 MEL.
 slain on the Field and as many more made Prisoners
 it capitulated. Notwithstanding the allied Army was
 thus every where except in *Silesia* victorious the *Swedes*
 found the War grow more and more burthensome;
 and that their Allies were grown quite weary thereof.
 About this Time the Imperial General *Wallstein* was WALLSTEIN
 disgraced; and he was shortly after assassinated by the is assassinated.
 Order of his Master. 1634.

The King of *Hungary* Son of the Emperor being
 hereupon appointed to command his Father's Troops,
 he in the Year 1634 after being joined by some Troops
 of *Spain* which were passing into the *Low-Countries* laid
 Siege to *Nordlinguen*. An Attempt being made by the *Battle of*
 Allies to possess themselves of an advanced Post near NORDLIN-
 this Town a Skirmish ensued betwixt the advanced GUEN.
 Guard of the two Armies, which by Degrees drew on
 a general Engagement. In this Action the *Swedes*
 who were entirely routed lost 6000 Men, 130 Colours
 and all their Artillery and Baggage; and amongst the
 many made Prisoners was *Gustavus Horn*. As it was
 followed with the Loss of all *Upper-Germany* and the
 Elector of *Saxony* had made a separate Peace the Affairs of
Sweden looked black, and they would have been glad of
 Peace: But as this could not be had on any tolerable
 Terms they for the Sake of prolonging the Truce with the
Poles gave up *Prussia*; and in Order to secure the As-
 sistance of *France* put her into Possession of *Philipsburg*.

The *Swedes* having thus reestablished their Affairs, The Elector of
 they would not accept the Sum of Money offered by SAXONY goes
 the Elector of *Saxony* for the Archbishoprick of *Magde-*
burg; upon which he in the Year 1635 went over to Emperor.
 the Emperor's Side. This cost the *Saxons* dear; for they Battle of AL-
 were soon after defeated in the Battle of *Altenburg* with TENBURG.
 the Loss of above 3000 Men.

The *Swedes* were moreover deserted by others of their 1635.
 Allies; yet being now at Liberty to act without any The SWEDES
 Restraint they could although the Number of their Army are deserted by
 was lessened act with greater Vigour. other Allies,

In the next Campaign *Magdeburg* was taken by the
Saxons; but they were soon after attacked in their Camp

1636.

Battle of PER- near Perleburg by Banier the Swedish General. After
LEBERG. this signal Action, in which above 5000 of the Saxons
 were notwithstanding their great Superiority in Number
 and advantageous Situation slain upon the Field, the
Swedes retook *Erfurt*, and obliged the *Imperialists* to
 retire through the *Landgraviate of Hefs* into *Westphalia*.

1637. In the Beginning of the Year 1637 *Banier* gained
The SWEDES some Advantages over the *Imperialists* and *Saxons*: But
he was afterwards in Danger of being surrounded with
his whole Army near *Custrin*; and although he had the
Address to extricate himself he could not prevent the
 Loss of some Places in *Pomerania*. About this Time
George Duke of Lunenburg declared against the *Swedes*;
 and they began to be jealous of the *Elector of Brandenburg*,
 who upon the Death of *Bagislaus XIV.* the
 last Duke of *Pomerania* laid Claim to this Dutchy:
 But having renewed their Alliance with *France* they
 determined to assert their Right thereto.

1638. The Losses sustained by the *Swedes* in the last Cam-
BANIER re- paign were amply repaired by the Successes of the Year
pulses GAL- 1638. *Banier* drove the Imperial General *Gallas* quite
LAS. into the Emperor's hereditary Dominions: But the *Rhine*
 where *Bernard Duke of Weimar* commanded became the
 principal Theatre of Action.

Great Success This General after repulsing the *Imperialists*, who
of BERNARD twice attempted to relieve this Place, made himself Master
Duke of WEI of *Rhinfield*: And *Rothelin* and *Friburg* in the *Brissgaw*
MAR. submitted to him. He afterwards laid Siege to *Brisack*,
 and the *Imperialists* who came to the Relief thereof
 with 12000 Men were received so warmly by him that
 not above 2500 of them escaped. Another Attempt was
 made by the Duke of *Lerrain* to raise the Siege of this
 important Place; but his Army being likewise cut to
 Pieces it surrendered.

1639. It being resolved by these two victorious Generals to
BANIER pene- carry the War in the next Campaign into the Emperor's
trates into the hereditary Dominions, *Banier* after gaining some Advan-
Empero's he- tages over the *Imperialists* and *Saxons* had actually pene-
reditary Dami- trated into *Bohemia*; and would undoubtedly have made
nims. great Progress there if the Death of the Duke of *Weimar*
 had

had not disconcerted his Measures. As this Duke had refused to comply with the Solicitations of the *French*, who wanted him to put *Brisack* into their Hands, it was suspected, his Death being very sudden, that they poisoned him: And this Suspicion was confirmed by the Entrance of the Troops of *Weimar* into the Service of *France*. Hereupon *Banier* who found himself unable to withstand the Imperial Forces alone retired into *Misnia* and *Thuringia*.

Being joined in the Spring of the Year 1640 by the Duke of *Longueville*, who had succeeded the Duke of *Wei-*
mar in his Command, and by the Troops of *Hesse* and *Lunenburg*, whose Duke disgusted at the Emperor had again declared for the *Swedes*, *Banier* would fain have come to an Engagement: But not being able to draw the Imperial General out of his Intrenchments this Campaign was spent in observing each others Motions.

1640.

The Duke of
LUNENBURG
declares again
for the
SWEDES.

Banier had in the Beginning of the next Year laid a Scheme to surprize *Ratisbon* where the Emperor and Diet were assembled; and it would in all Probability have succeeded if the Ice had not prevented his making use of a Bridge of Boats. Failing in this *Banier* determined to penetrate into *Moravia*, *Bohemia* and *Silesia*. He thereby hoped to put an End to the War: But for want of being supported by *Longueville* the *French* General he found himself so hard pressed by the *Imperialists*, that he had nothing else for it but to retreat through the *Bohemian* Forest. This he effected by leaving three Regiments under Colonel *Slang* to stop the *Imperialists*: Who notwithstanding the brave Resistance made by these came up to the Pass of *Preitznitz* within half an Hour after the *Swedes* had secured it. The Death of *Banier* shortly after was a great Misfortune to the *Swedes*: Yet they had the better in two Skirmishes which happened in this Campaign near *Wol-*
fenbuttel.

1641.

The SWEDES
for want of
being supported
by the FRENCH
General are
brought into
the great Difficul-
ties.

Death of
BANIER.

*Torsten*son who succeeded that brave General *Banier* in his Command opened the Campaign of the Year 1642 by taking *Glogau* in *Silesia* Sword in Hand. Having afterwards besieged *Sueidnitz* the *Imperialists* under the

1642.

Battle of
BRAITEN-
FIELD.

Duke of *Saxe-Lawenburg*, who fell in the Action, attempted to relieve it: But they were defeated with great Loss. After taking this and several other Places he sat down before *Brieg*; the *Imperialists* however who were now superior in Number obliged him to retire: And finding himself unable to pursue his Intention of penetrating into *Bohemia* he passed the River *Elbe* and laid Siege to *Leipsick*. The whole *Imperial* Army under the joint Command of the Archduke and *Picolomini* advanced to succour this Place, and a bloody Battle ensued in the same Plain near *Braitenfield* where *Gustavus Adolphus* had formerly obtained a signal Victory. In this the left Wing of each Army was thrown into Disorder; but that of the *Swedes* rallying and taking the Right of the *Imperialists* in Flank the latter were entirely routed. Five thousand of these were left upon the Field, and near as many of them were made Prisoners. The Loss on the Side of the *Swedes* was not more than 2000 Men, and *Leipsick* soon surrendered to them.

1643.
The SWEDES
are repulsed
from FRI-
BURG.

The Siege of *Friburg* undertaken in the next Year was raised by the Imperial General *Picolomini* with some Loss to the *Swedes*; and during this Campaign the Troops under *Guebriant* the French General were almost ruined by the *Bavarians*.

War with
DENMARK,
1644.

Towards the End of this Year *Torstenson* on receiving Orders for this Purpose from his Court, which was resolved to bear no longer the Insults of the *Danes*, threw himself into the Dutchy of *Holstein*. His Intention to march thither was kept so secret that before the *Danes* had any Suspicion thereof he had overrun the greatest Part of this Dutchy. The *Danes* were afterwards defeated both in *Jutland* and *Scania*; and the *Swedes* having worsted their Fleet made themselves Masters of the Bishoprick of *Bremen* and of the Island of *Bornholm*. As this rapid Progress laid *Denmark* under a Necessity of making Peace at any Rate a Treaty was concluded at *Bromsebroo* early in the Year 1645: By which, besides other advantageous Terms, *Fempterland* and *Horn-dale* with the Islands of *Gothland* and *Oeland* were ceded to *Sweden*.

Treaty of
BROMSE-
BROO.

1645.
Truce with
SAXONY.

A Truce being likewise concluded with the Elector of *Saxony* *Torstenson* made the best of his Way into *Bohemia*;

Bohemia; and a Battle ensuing near *Janowitz* the *Impe-* Battle of JA-
rialists lost 4000 Men upon the Field and as many were *NOWITZ*.
 taken Prisoners.

The *Swedes* meeting now with no Opposition passed *TORSTEN-*
 through *Bohemia* and *Moravia*; and having joined the *SON penetrates*
 Forces of *Ragotzki* in *Austria* would have brought the *into AUS-*
 Emperor to their own Terms, if *Ragotzki* had not upon *TRIA*.
 receiving Satisfaction from the Emperor retired with
 his Troops. The French General *Turenne* being more-
 over defeated in *Bavaria* *Torsten*son found it necessary
 to return into *Bohemia*. The latter shortly after re-
 signed the Command of the *Swedes*, for which his Infir-
 mities rendered him quite unfit, and *Wrangel* was ap-
 pointed to command in his stead.

This General having in the Spring following joined 1646.
Turenne they laid Siege to *Augsburg*; but upon the *WRANGEL*
 Approach of the *Imperialists* they were forced to give over *c mmands in*
 this Siege. GERMANY.

In order to act more vigorously against the Empe-
 ror, whose Troops had in the last Campaign recovered
 a good deal in his hereditary Dominions, *Wrangel* con-
 cluded in the Year 1647 a Truce with the Elector of *Truce with*
Bavaria: But this Prince at the Persuasion of the Em- *BAVARIA*
 peror broke the Truce a few Months after and sent *which is soon*
 some Troops to the Imperial Army. broke.

Wrangel took the Field early in the next Campaign,
 and being joined by *Turenne* they drove the Elector of
Bavaria who fled before them quite to *Saltzburg*; and 1648.
 put his Country to Fire and Sword, because the Inhabi- *BAVARIA put*
 tants did not pay the Contributions laid upon them. *to Fire and*
Koningsmark, who commanded a flying Camp and had *Sword*.
 during the War greatly annoyed the *Imperialists*, at the
 same Time surprized that Part of *Prague* where the Em-
 peror's and some other grand Palaces were; and his
 Troops carried off a vast Booty.

Towards the End of this Campaign two Treaties of *Treaties of*
 Peace, which had been long negotiating, were signed *OSNABRUG*
 at *Osnabrug* and *Munster*. As the Courage and Con- *and MUNS-*
 stancy of the *Swedes* did soon after the fatal Battle of *TER*.

Nordlinguen reestablish their Affairs in Germany the
Imperialists used their utmost Endeavours to bring
 them

them into a separate Peace: Which being refused as dishonourable and unsafe Preliminaries for a general one were at length agreed upon. The Ministers of the Protestant Princes met those of the Emperor at *Osnabrug*; and Negotiations were at the same Time carried on betwixt the Ministers of the Catholick Powers and some other Imperial Ministers at *Munster*. By the Treaty of *Osnabrug* the Dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden*, the greatest Part of *Pomerania*, the Isle of *Rugen* and the City of *Wismar*, to be held however as Fiefs of the Empire, were ceded to the *Swedes*; and five Millions of Crowns were to be paid them. Besides these advantageous Terms to themselves the *Swedes* had the Pleasure of reflecting upon the great Share they had in preserving the Liberties of the *Germanick* Body; and in the Establishment of the *Protestant* Religion in the Empire. The *German* War being thus gloriously ended *Christiana*, who had resolved to resign the Crown in Favour of *Charles Gustavus* her Nephew, took great Pains to adjust the Differences still subsisting with *Poland*; which it was feared would on the Expiration of the Truce involve the two Nations in another War: But the *Poles* being quite intractable nothing could be done. Having reserved to herself a Pension sufficient to support her Dignity this Princess resigned the Crown on the 6th of *June* 1654 in an Assembly of the States at *Upsal*; and *Charles Gustavus* Count *Palatine* her Nephew was the same Day crowned.

CHRISTIANA
resigns the
Crown.

CHARLES X.
1654.

War with
POLAND.

After reannexing with the Consent of the Senate to the Crown the fourth Part of what had been granted away since the Death of *Gustavus Adolphus*, for he found the Treasury quite exhausted, this Prince resolved to put himself at the Head of his Forces and march into *Poland*. His Success was such that *John Casimir* King of *Poland* was forced to fly into *Silesia*, and the *Poles* took an Oath of Allegiance to *Charles*: But upon his going into *Prussia* they soon revolted, and falling upon the *Swedes* every where and especially in *Lithuania* they slew many of them. The Dispute betwixt *Charles* and the Elector of *Brandenburg* concerning *Prussia* being amicably ended these two Princes joined their

their Forces, and marching towards *Warsaw* obtained a *Battle of* compleat Victory over the *Poles* and *Tartars*. *WARSAW.*

In the Year 1656 *Bogislaus Radzivil* Prince of *Transylvania* entered into an Alliance with the *Swedes*; and they would undoubtedly have humbled the *Poles* if the *Danes* had not taken this Opportunity to declare War against them. Having drawn the Main of his Army *Surprizing* thither *Charles* in the Year 1658 not only made great *Progress of* Progress in *Holstein*; but which was so surprizing that *CHARLES a-* Posterity will scarce give Credit thereto he marched *gainst the* his Troops from *Holstein* into the Island of *Funen* over *DANES, 1558.* the Ice, and from thence over the Ice into the Island of *Zealand*.

Hereupon the King of *Denmark*, who began to tremble for his Capital, by a Treaty clapped up at *Ros-Treaty of Ros-* child consented to give up the Provinces of *Scania, Hal-* CHILD. *land* and *Blekingen*, together with the Island of *Born-* holm and several Places in *Norway*.

Growing afterwards suspicious that the *Danes* would *Hospitalities re-* break this Peace *Charles* embarked his Troops that *commenced.* were in *Holstein*; but instead of Sailing as he pretended to *Dantzick* he landed in *Zealand*: And whilst *Wrangel* attacked *Cronenburgh* sat down himself before *Copen-* hagen. The *Danes* defended themselves with great Bravery, and the Siege was pushed vigorously both by Sea and Land till the Arrival of a *Dutch Fleet*; which *Battle of the* having defeated that of *Sweden* *Charles* was obliged to *SOUND.* raise it. Not long after the united Forces of the *Empe-* ror, *Brandenburg, Poland* and *Denmark* fell upon and entirely routed the *Swedish* Army near *Nyburg* in the *Battle of* Island of *Funen*: All their Infantry being cut off or *NYBURG.* made Prisoners. Whilst *Charles* was busy in making Preparation to revenge this Loss he was seized with a Fever; and died on the 23d of *February* in the Year 1660.

As *Charles* his Successor was not five Years of Age *CHARLES XI.* at his Father's Death the *Swedes* wholly intent on 1660. Peace concluded in the *May* following a Treaty with *Treaties with* *Poland* at *Oliva*; by which *John Casimir* quitted all *POLAND and* Pretensions to the Crown of *Sweden*, and the *Poles* re-*DENMARK.* nounced their Claims upon *Livonia*. In the same Month a Treaty was concluded with *Denmark*: Of which the

Conditions were the same as those of *Roschild*, except that the *Swedes* were to give up the Island of *Bornholm* and *Drontheim* in *Norway*.

War with
BRANDEN-
BURG and
DENMARK.

The *Swedes* afterwards entered into the Triple Alliance with *England* and *Holland*: But on the Commencement of the War in the Year 1674 they broke through their Engagements with the *Maritime Powers*; and in order to cause a Diversion in Favour of *France* sent an Army into *Brandenburg*. This Proceeding involved the young King in a War which had fatal Consequences. The Elector of *Brandenburg* after defeating them made himself Master of all that belonged to the *Swedes* in *Pomerania*; the Duke of *Lunenburg* overran the Dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden*; and *Wisnar* together with several Places in *Scania* were taken by the *Danes*. The *Danes* were indeed afterwards worsted in two Battles

Treaty of St.
GERMAINS.

fought in *Scania*; and by a Treaty signed at *St. Germain's*, which followed that of *Nimeguen*, all the *Swedes* had lost in this War except a little in *Germany* was restored to them. Having afterwards in order to cement the Alliance with *Denmark* married *Ulrica Eleanor* Sister to the reigning King *Charles* applied himself to the putting of his Fleet and Army into a good Condition.

CHARLES
establishes the
Grand Com-
mission.

In order to fill his Coffers he revoked many Grants of his Predecessors; and having established a grand Commission for enquiring into the Conduct of such as had any Share in the Management of Affairs during his Minority heavy Fines were set upon all who had been guilty of the least Fraud. By these rigorous Proceedings many noble Families, together with some Senators, Admirals and Generals, were reduced from affluent Circumstances to great Want: But they durst not repine; for as he had for some Time trampled upon the Authority of the Senate the Power of *Charles* was become almost absolute.

Treaties with
RUSSIA
and HOL-
LAND.

In the Year 1682 a Treaty of Alliance was concluded with *John Czar* of *Russia*; and in the preceeding Year *Charles* had entered into a defensive Treaty with the *States General*, to which the Emperor and his Catholick Majesty did afterwards accede.

He raises the
Value of Mo-
ney.

In the Year 1685 *Charles* published an Edict for doubling the Value of Money. By this the Capital of

of the publick Creditors was diminished one half, and a Calculation being moreover made of all the Interest they had received, for which they were to account according to this encreased Value of Money, many of them by so strange a Way of reckoning instead of being Creditors became Debtors to the Crown. This Project, nor could any Thing less be expected from it, besides entirely ruining many Families was very prejudicial to Commerce in general. Two Years after the Exercise of any Religion except it was agreeable to the Confession of *Augsburg* was prohibited under severe Penalties: But by the Intercession of the *States General* a Dispensation was obtained in Favour of the *Calvinists*.

A Difference arising between the King of *Denmark* *He resolves to* and the Duke of *Holstein* the former made himself *assist the Duke* Master of *Holstein*. As it was not for the Interest of *Swe-* of *HOLSTEIN*. *den* that he should keep Possession of this Dutchy Preparation was made by *Charles* for War; but the Duke being reinstated in the Possession of his Dominions by the Treaty of *Altena*, concluded in the Year 1689 under the Mediation of the Emperor and the Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenburg*, no Hostilities were committed. In the *February* following a defensive Treaty was con- *Treaties with* cluded betwixt *Sweden* and *Denmark*: And this was *DENMARK*, soon followed by another for regulating all that con- 1690. cerned Trade and Navigation. *Charles*, who took great Pains to bring about a Peace betwixt *France* and the *Allies*, had the Pleasure before his Death in *April* 1697 to see the Negotiations for a Treaty in great Forwardness.

Charles his Successor being a Minor the Regency *CHARLES* was committed by the Will of his Father to his Grand- *XII.* 1697. mother until he should arrive at the Age of eighteen Years: But by the unanimous Consent of the Senate he was although not quite sixteen declared Major in the *November* following. He had the Pleasure of seeing the Treaty of *Ryswick* concluded under his Mediation in the *September* following; and his Coronation was solemnized in *December*. New Differences arising betwixt the Courts of *Denmark* and *Holstein* Conferences *War with* were opened at *Pinenburg*: But as the Matters in Dis- *DENMARK* pute *and* *POLAND*.

pute could not although the Conferences lasted two Years be adjusted the Duke of *Holstein* judged it proper to fortify some Places; and *Charles* thought himself bound to support this Prince who had married his Sister *Edwiga Eleonora*. *Frederick IV.* of *Denmark* hereupon entered into an Alliance with *Augustus* of *Poland* and the Czar: Which was kept very secret; and the latter for some Time seemed disposed to observe a Neutrality. While *Frederick* overran *Holstein* *Augustus* under the Pretence that he had bound himself by his Coronation Oath to reunite to the Republick of *Poland* all that had been taken from it attacked *Livonia*: But the *Swedish* Fleet being joined by thirty Sail of *English* and *Dutch* Men of War the Fleet of *Denmark* unable to keep the Sea retired into Port. *Copenhagen* was soon after attacked on the Land Side by *Charles*, and it was at the same Time bombarded by the combined Fleet. This together with the Check his Troops met with before *Tonningen* obliged the King of *Denmark* to sue for Peace, and a Treaty was concluded in *August* 1700 at *Trawendall*.

Treaty of
TRAWE-
DALL,

1700.

The RUS-

SIANS are surprized every Thing for acting against the *Poles* in the next Spring; but in the mean Time News came that the *Russians* were to the Number of 100,000 Men before *Narva*. He marched immediately, and coming up with them on the 30th of *November* when they apprehended nothing of it the *Russians* were surprized in their Camp and totally routed.

VA.

Charles after quitting the Island of *Zealand* had disposed every Thing for acting against the *Poles* in the next Spring; but in the mean Time News came that the *Russians* were to the Number of 100,000 Men before *Narva*. He marched immediately, and coming up with them on the 30th of *November* when they apprehended nothing of it the *Russians* were surprized in their Camp and totally routed.

1701.

AUGUSTUS

fies before

CHARLES.

Early in the following Spring *Charles* obliged the Troops of *Augustus* to give over the Blockade of *Riga*, and took *Mittau* in *Courland* at which Place the *Polish* Magazines were. *Augustus* discouraged at this ill Success retired into *Poland* and would now have been glad of Peace at any Rate; but instead of listening to his Overtures *Charles* made the best of his Way to *Warsaw*. The Primate of *Poland* who had opposed the Election of *Augustus* wanted to have an Interview with *Charles*; yet he did not Care to render himself suspected by his Prince. Having amused *Augustus* with a Notion that *Charles* was disposed to accommodate Matters, the

Primate

Primate and Count *Leczinski* had leave to give him a Meeting.

The Project of dethroning *Augustus* having been in this Meeting agreed upon the *Swedes*, in order to pave the Way for doing this by driving the *Saxons* out of *Poland*, advanced in the next Campaign towards *Cracaw*. *Augustus*, who was there, finding it must come to Extremities resolved to risk a Battle before the Reinforcements expected by the *Swedes* came up; and one was fought near *Glissow*. Being worsted in this Action he retired *Battle of* to *Lespol*; from whence fresh Proposals were made and *GLISSOW*. the *Republick* offered her Mediation: But *Charles* insisted that as some of her Troops had fought at *Glissow* she was a Party concerned; and consequently that it was not reasonable to admit her Mediation. While Detachments were sent against such Palatines as had entered into an Agreement for the supporting of *Augustus* *Charles* continued with the main Body of his Army at *Lublin*.

In February 1703 the Primate called a Diet at *Warsaw*: In which as few repaired thereto no Resolution *Diet of WAR-* was come to. An Assembly of the States being about *saw*. the same Time held by the King at *Thorn*, and another afterwards at *Marienburg*, the Members of this took a solemn Oath to maintain their Laws and Constitution; and the Diet held at *Warsaw* was declared to be illegal. In April *Charles* declared by a publick Act that he intended nothing more than to cultivate a good Understanding with the *Republick*; but that in order to this it was necessary for the *Saxons* to evacuate the Kingdom. He afterwards surprized *Bug* whose Garrison composed of *Saxon* Troops was very near being made Prisoners; and he made himself Master of *Thorn* which was also garrisoned by *Saxon* Troops.

A Confederacy was moreover formed with the Con-*AUGUSTUS* sent of *Augustus*, who knew nothing of his real Design, *is deposed*. by the Primate; and the Nobility who imagined this was intended to promote the Interest of the King and *Republick* did in the general come into it. A Meeting of the Confederates being hereupon held at *Warsaw* some Persons were deputed to treat with Count *Horn* the *Swedish* Minister; but he gave them to understand that the King his Master insisted upon it as a Preliminary that

that *Augustus* should be deposed; and added that the Republick ought to make no Difficulty of deposing him since he had offered to treat without her Knowledge. This was a sufficient Handle for the Primate; and he managed so artfully that it was resolved on the 14th of *February* to depose *Augustus*. and to proceed to the Election of a new King. A Day being fixed for this Purpose *Charles* was requested to send Ministers to assist thereat.

STANISLAUS *Augustus* in an Assembly of his Friends declared every
is elected King Thing done by the Confederates void; but as the *Swedes*
of POLAND, drove him from Place to Place and he was once very
1704. near being taken Prisoner this made no Alteration in

their Measures. A Diet for the Election of a new King, at which *Charles* in order to make every thing sure was present, was opened in the 19th of *June*. In the Beginning thereof the Princes *James* and *Alexander Sobieski* had some Votes; but as the Majority of the Nuncio's were for *Stanislaus Leczinski* Son of the Grand Treasurer of the Crown the rest came over to them; and he was declared King about the Middle of *July*. After entering into close Engagements with this Prince *Charles* endeavoured to surprize *Augustus* near *Jaroslow*. Failing in this he marched towards *Leopol*; and took it by Storm. In the mean Time *Augustus*, who had been joined by Prince *Gallitzen* at the Head of twenty thousand *Russians*, was marching towards *Warsaw*. The new Queen, the Primate and some others, on the first News of his making forced Marches this Way retired into *Prussia*; and *Stanislaus* with others of his Friends went to join the King of *Sweden* at *Leopol*. The Event discovered the Prudence of this Step: For *Warsaw* being taken on the 4th of *September* Count *Horn* was made Prisoner, and the Affairs of *Augustus* began to put on a better Aspect. By a Treaty at the same Time concluded the Czar engaged to keep up at his own Expence a large Body of Troops for the Service of the Republick; to pay her an annual Subsidy; and to leave her in Possession of all that should be conquered in *Livonia*.

AUGUSTUS
retakes WAR-
SAW and en-
ters into an
Alliance with
the CZAR.

He retires into
SAXONY.

On the Return of *Charles*, who struck Terror where-
ever he came, this Prospect so pleasing to *Augustus*
began to vanish. After besieging *Pozna* ten Weeks
his

his Troops were forced to retire; and the main Body of his Army composed of *Russians* and *Saxons* being driven into and defeated by *Charles* in *Silesia* his Party in *Poland* diminished daily. Apprehending that this victorious Prince would next make an Irruption into *Saxony* he secretly retired thither to guard against it: But as his sudden Departure looked like giving up the *Polish* Crown the Palatines of *Siradia*, *Pofnania* and *Carlitz*, and others of the Nobility who had all along adhered to *Augustus* acknowledged *Stanislaus*; and many Advantages were gained by the *Swedes* over such of the *Poles* as still appeared in Arms for *Augustus*.

An Irruption being made into *Saxony* in the Year *Treaty of* 1706, and the Country being laid under Contributions, *ALT-RAN-*
Augustus in order to deliver his Electorate from the *STADT*,
 Oppressions of the *Swedes* was forced to conclude a sepa- 1706.
 rate Treaty at *Alt-Ranstadt*. By this Treaty he agreed to abdicate the Crown of *Poland*; to acknowledge *Stanislaus*; and to deliver Count *Patkul* into the Hands of *Charles*.

This Nobleman, a *Livonian* by Birth, had been *History of*
 formerly one of the five Deputies sent to represent to *Count PAT-*
Charles XI. that the Proceedings of the Grand Com- *KUL*.
 mission for resuming the Grants of his Predecessors were quite inconsistent with the Privileges of the *Livonians*. As this Representation had no Effect it was resolved in an Assembly of the States of this Province to present a Memorial setting forth their Rights to his Majesty. Therein was contained a lively Representation of the extreme Misery to which many noble Families were reduced: But instead of procuring Redress all privy thereto were looked upon as guilty of High Treason; and *Patkul* who had been principally concerned in drawing it up was condemned to have his right Hand cut off, and to be deprived of his Estate, Honour and Life. In order to avoid this cruel Sentence he fled into *Russia*, and after having been raised to the highest Dignities was employed by the Czar in negotiating the last Treaty with *Augustus*. All of a sudden when he seemed to be in the highest Confidence with both these Monarchs he was arrested by the latter at *Dresden*; and kept Prisoner until the Conclusion of the Treaty of *Alt-Ranstadt*. What-
 ever

ever might be the Reason for confining him it is certain that *Augustus* to whom he had done most important Services was unwilling to deliver *Patkul* up; and the Czar whose Ambassador he was protested against it: But as the *Swedes* were in the Heart of his Country and nothing less would satisfy *Charles*, *Augustus* was forced to do it. The unhappy *Patkul* being conducted to the *Swedish* Camp, he shortly after, notwithstanding the Intercession made for him by several Powers, suffered that ignominious and cruel Death of being broke alive upon the Wheel and quartered.

CHARLES
procures some
Advantages
for the Prote-
stants in SI-
LESIA.

He resolves to
turn his whole
Force against
the RUSSIANS.

Battle of Ho-
LOWESIN,
1708.
Defeat of
LEUWEN-
HAUPT.

Before *Charles* quitted *Germany* he procured some Advantages for the *Protestants* in *Silesia*: For the Emperor, fearing that he might being an Ally and Pensioner of *Lewis XIV.* declare for *France*, durst not refuse him any Thing; and the Duke of *Marlborough* made him a Visit in his Camp on Purpose to prevent this which would have been fatal to the Allies. *Charles* imagined that the making of a separate Peace would produce an irreconcilable Difference betwixt *Augustus* and the Czar; and consequently that he should now have only the latter to deal with: But he found himself mistaken for the Zeal of *Peter*, who knew very well that as things were circumstanced he could not refuse any Thing, for the Cause of *Augustus* did not in the least abate; and it was moreover for his own Interest that *Charles* should not carry his Point in *Poland*. Taking it for granted, *Augustus* being as he thought not at all to be feared, that *Stanislaus* would be able to support himself *Charles* in the Year 1708 resolved to turn his whole Forces against the *Russians*. He gained one Victory over them in a Battle fought in *July* near *Holowesin*, and he had the better in several Skirmishes; but while he was advancing towards the *Ukraine* the *Russians* fell upon General *Leuvenhaupt*, who was following with a Convoy of Ammunition and Provision, and handled him so roughly that of 15,000 Men under his Command not above 4000 escaped. In the mean Time *Mazeppa* General of the *Cossacks* had revolted and joined *Charles*; and the *Swedes* had had the Advantage in several inconsiderable Actions; yet as these were not decisive *Charles* had really the worst of it, because while fresh Troops were coming

coming up every Day to the *Russians* his Army could not be at all recruited. The severe Winter which followed carried off many of his Men; nevertheless *Charles* instead of returning home as he might have then done full of Laurels conceived a Design of penetrating into the Heart of the Czar's Dominions. CHARLES attempts to penetrate into RUSSIA, 1709.

With a View to this he endeavoured to make himself Master of *Pultawa*; but meeting with such a Resistance here as he had not been accustomed to *Peter* who wanted no Men had Time to bring his Numbers down. *Charles* soon found himself so surrounded by the *Russian* Army that he had no other Way to extricate himself than by a Battle. In this the good Fortune which had all along attended him quite deserted *Charles*: For the *Swedes* being entirely defeated 8619 of them were left upon the Field; 2978 of them amongst whom were Count *Piper* and General *Reinschild* were made Prisoners; and all the Baggage, Archives, and Artillery together with the Military Chest of the *Swedes* fell into the Hands of the *Russians*. *Charles* retired with about 18,000 Men; but these went not far: For Provisions failing above 16,000 of them surrendered soon after in one Day to the *Russians*. After these Misfortunes, which from the sitting down before *Pultawa* had cost him above 27,000 Men, *Charles* accompanied by only a Handful of Men passed the *Borystenes* and sheltered himself at *Oczakow*; from whence he went to *Bender* a Frontier Town belonging to the Sultan. In the mean Time the *Swedish* Army unable to support itself had quitted *Poland*; and with it went *Stanislaus*. Battle of PULTAWA. He retires to BENDER.

The Way thereto being now open *Augustus* remounted the *Polish* Throne, having first declared by a Manifesto that he did not look upon himself to be bound by the Abdication which had been extorted from him. AUGUSTUS remounts the Throne of POLAND.

The King of *Denmark* who was unwilling to lose this favourable Opportunity did at the same Time make a Descent upon *Scania*; and thus the *Swedes* found themselves all at once attacked by *Denmark*, *Poland* and *Russia*. DENMARK declares against the SWEDES.

The Czar made himself Master of *Riga*, *Dunamunde*, *Pernau* and *Revel* in *Livonia*; of *Wiburg* and *Kexholm* in *Corelia*; and of the Island of *Oesel*; to which *Sue-* 1710. Conquests of the CZAR.
cesses

cesses a Plague and Famine that had carried off a 100,000 of the Inhabitants of these Provinces contributed a good deal.

The DANES
are repulsed in
SCANIA.

The *Danes* extended their Conquests from *Helsingburg* to *Christianstadt* and *Carlsbaven*; but they were in the Month of *March* 1710 driven out of *Scania* by General *Steinbock*. As the Powers allied against *France* feared that the War in the North would spread itself into *Germany*, which might by causing a Diversion be prejudicial to them, a Neutrality was proposed for the Dominions of all the Northern Powers in the *Empire*. To this the States of *Sweden* whom the Absence of their King and the Misfortunes which overwhelmed them had called together consented willingly; and a Scheme was concerted for forming an Army to act against any Power who should break the Neutrality; but no Army was formed. *Charles* who looked upon this Step of the States as an Infringement of his Royal Prerogative protested against it; but he lost by this ill-timed Obstinacy all that belonged to him in *Germany*.

CHARLES pro-
tests against the
Treaty of Neu-
trality for
GERMANY.

1711.
POMERANIA
is invaded.

1712.

Battle of GA-
DEBUSCH.

1713.

Count STEIN-
BOCK made
Prisoner.

In the Year 1711 an Army of *Danes*, *Poles* and *Russians* invaded *Pomerania*; and after taking some considerable Places blocked up *Wismar*. In the beginning of the next Campaign the *Danes* who acted by themselves conquered the Dutchy of *Bremen*; and the Principality of *Verden* was taken Possession of by the Electoral Troops of *Hanover*. Upon the Arrival of Count *Steinbock* at the Head of 16,000 *Swedes* in *Pomerania* the *Danes* joined the *Russians* and *Poles* and a Battle ensued at *Gadebusch*; in which *Steinbock* although his Loss was considerable remained Master of the Field. Having in the *January* following burnt *Altena* *Steinbock* posted his Army in *Holstein*: Whose Administrator for the Duke was a Minor put *Tonningen* into his Hands, that he might in Case of Need have a strong Place to retire to. All this Precaution was insufficient; for as the *Danes* came with their whole Force against him, and *Steinbock* had only 11,000 Men under him, he was forced to surrender with his whole Army Prisoners of War. *Tonningen*, concerning which nothing was stipulated, being soon after forced to surrender its Fortifications were immediately demolished; and while these

these Things were doing in *Holstein* others of the Allies had made such Progress in *Pomerania* that *Stetin* was blocked up and on the Point of surrendering; but his *Prussian* Majesty interposing it was agreed that the Dutchy of *Pomerania* should be sequestered in his Hands until the Conclusion of a Peace. In the same Campaign the Czar FINLAND landed with a powerful Army in *Finland*, and after de- overrun by the feating several Bodies of *Swedes* made himself Master of RUSSIANS. almost all this Province.

In this desperate Situation of Things the States of 1714. *Sweden* in the Year 1714 came to a Resolution that *Ul-CHARLES* *rica Eleonora* Sister of *Charles*, who continued in *Turky* returns from and seemed quite unconcerned at all his Misfortunes, TURKEY. under which any Man but himself would have sunk, should take upon herself the Administration of Affairs: And a Congress was opened at *Brunswick* for restoring Peace in the North. This determined *Charles* who still talked big and breathed only Vengeance to return Home at all Events. Setting out from *Turky* in *October* he after crossing *Hungary* and *Germany* arrived when it was not in the least expected at *Stralsund*; and without paying any Regard to the Sequestration of the Dutchy of *Stetin* attacked some *Prussian* Posts. Hereupon the King of *Prussia* declared openly for the Allies; and the King of *Great-Britain* as Elector of *Hanover* did the same.

Towards the End of the next Year *Charles* having 1715. lost all *Pomerania* except *Stralsund* went over to *Sweden*: He arrives in But his Grandmother *Edwiga Eleanora*, who died a little SWEDEN. before his Arrival, had not the Pleasure long wished for by her of seeing him.

In the Year 1716 *Sweden* was threatned with an Inva- 1716. sion from *Denmark*, the Czar having lately been at *A projected* the Court of *Copenhagen* to concert the proper Mea- Descent on sures for this Purpose; but a Difference arising betwixt SWEDEN him and *Frederick IV.* of *Denmark* no Attempt to invade comes to *Sweden* was made. nothing.

The Expedition to the Island of *Zealand* resolved 1717. upon in the next Year by *Charles* was soon laid aside: CHARLES And a Scheme was formed by him of bringing about meditates on a Revolution in *Great-Britain* in Favour of the Pretender. Expedition in- This being discovered Count *Gillenburg* the *Swedish* to GREAT- Minister was arrested at *London*; and Baron *Gortz* Mi- BRITAIN.

nister of *Holstein* charged with the Affairs of *Charles* at the *Hague* was at the Instance of the *British* Court likewise arrested: But they were both afterwards set at Liberty.

1718. As the Attempt made this Year to penetrate into *Nor-*
He attempts to way failed *Charles*, who in the next resolved to exert
penetrate into his utmost Efforts, put himself at the Head of his Army.
NORWAY. His Troops had advanced as far as *Christiana* and *Fre-*

Death of the latter Place on the 11th of *December* in the thirty-sixth
CHARLES. Year of his Age. It may be justly said of *Charles* that he
was the most intrepid Hero of his Age; and had his Pru-
dence been equal to his Courage he would undoubtedly
have made as glorious a Figure as any Person ever did.

ULRICA After some Debates, whether the Succession belong-
ELEONORA. ed to the Duke of *Holstein* Son of the late King's
eldest Sister or to the Princess *Ulrica Eleonora*, the latter
was proclaimed. An End being put to the Difference
with *Great-Britain* by the Death of *Charles* the Court
of *London* entered into an Alliance with the new Queen,

1718. and sent a Fleet into the *Baltick*; but as the *British*
She enters into Ships being large durst not venture near the Shore this
an alliance did not put a stop to the Ravages committed by the
with GREAT- did not put a stop to the Ravages committed by the
BRITAIN. *Russian* Barks on the Coasts of *Sweden*. Negotiations
for Peace being soon after the Accession of this Princess
entered into one was concluded with *Denmark* and
another with *Poland* in the Year 1720: And in the
following Year Treaties were signed with the Czar and
his *Prussian* Majesty.

Treaties with By the Treaty with *Denmark* his *Danish* Majesty en-
DENMARK gaged not to assist the Czar in any Manner whatsoever;
and POLAND, and in Consideration of a Sum of Money agreed upon
1720. to give up all that had been taken from the *Swedes* in
this War, except the Dutchy of *Bremen* which he had
fold to the Elector of *Hanover*. On the other Side it
was agreed that the Ships of *Sweden* should for the
Time to come pay the same Toll for passing the *Sound*
as those of other Nations; and that *Wismar* should not
be fortified. The principal Articles of the Treaty with
Poland were, that her *Swedish* Majesty should during the
Life of *Augustus* acknowledge him as King of *Poland*,
and after his Death the Person who should be lawfully
elected:

electd: And that *Stanislaus* who was to retain the Name of King should not bear either the Arms or Title of King of *Poland*. *Augustus* on his Side engaged that there should be a general Amnesty for the Adherents of *Stanislaus*; that all these should be restored to their Honours and Estates in *Poland*; and that he would use his utmost Endeavours to preserve Peace in the North.

By the Treaty with *Prussia* the *Swedes*, who in Con-*Treaties with* sideration of so doing were to receive a large Sum of *PRUSSIA* and Money, agreed to quit all Claim to the City of *Stetin*. *RUSSIA*, The greatest Difficulty was to settle Matters with the 1721. Czar: But this was at length done in *August* 1721 on the following Terms. *Ingermania*, *Livonia*, Part of *Carelia*, the Islands of *Oesel*, *Dragoe* and *Maen*, and the Territory of *Wiburg* in *Finland* were ceded to him. The rest of *Finland* was restored to the *Swedes* and the Czar engaged to pay them 2,000,000 Crowns. The *Swedes* were however to have the Liberty of buying Corn annually without paying any Duty to the Amount of 50,000 Rubles at *Riga*, *Revel* or *Wiburg*; and the Inhabitants of the ceded Provinces were to enjoy their ancient Privileges and be allowed the free Exercise of their Religion.

In the Year 1720 *Frederick* hereditary Prince of *FREDERICK Hesse-Cassel* Husband to the Queen, who since her raised to the Accession had been made Generalissimo of *Sweden*, was *Throne*, 1720. with the Consent of her and the Senate raised to the Throne. The principal Difficulty that for some time obstructed this was his having been educated in the Reformed Religion, whereas *Lutheranism* was the established Religion of the Kingdom; but upon the Queen's declaring that he would embrace *Lutheranism* he was on the 14th of *May* crowned.

In Order however to set Bounds to the Prerogative, He signs a which had in the two last Reigns been extended to *Capitulation*. absolute Power, a Capitulation was drawn up by a Committee appointed for the Purpose, and signed by *Frederick* before his Coronation. The Articles of this were: That the King shall profess publickly the *Lutheran* Religion; that he shall employ none but such as are of the same Religion; that the Exercise of any other shall be prohibited except in the Houses of foreign Ministers;

sters; that the King shall conduct himself according to the Form of Government established after the Death of the late King; that Affairs of Importance shall not be transacted in the Privy Council but in the Senate and in the respective Colleges; that the States shall always be at Liberty to demand the assembling of a Diet; that all civil Offices and all military ones from a Colonel upwards shall be at the Disposal of the Senate; that no Person shall be removed from his Office without a formal Trial; that the King shall not meddle in what concerns the Privileges of the four Colleges but leave every thing of this Kind to be adjusted amongst themselves; that the Power of levying Taxes and disposing of the publick Money shall be in the respective Colleges; that no Foreigner shall be employed in the Service of *Sweden*; that no more Officers than are absolutely necessary shall be employed in any of the *German* Provinces; that the King shall not part with any of his *German* Dominion during his Life, nor if he shall have a Child dispose of any Part thereof by Will to any one of the *Hesse* Family; that the supreme Authority shall at all Times in his Absence be in the Senate; that he shall not use any Influence to have the Succession fixed by the States, who are always to have the Liberty of electing their Monarch, in any Person during his Life except in one of his own Male Issue by the present Queen; that the Value of Gold and Silver Coins shall be the same as at the Accession of *Charles XI.* that the Right of Patronage to all the Universities shall remain as it is at present; that the King shall not revoke any Pension nor appropriate to himself any Thing given to a pious or charitable Use; and that if any Person shall dare to advise any Thing contrary to this Capitulation he shall cause such Person to be proceeded against as for High Treason.

Other Regulations in the Form of Government.

As the present Constitution of *Sweden* is founded upon this Capitulation and the Form of Government established upon the Accession of the Princess *Ulrica Eleonora*, it is proper to mention the principal Articles of the latter which are not contained in the Capitulation, that the Reader may have at once a clear View thereof. These are: That no King shall be for the Time to come declared Major or take the Government into

into his own Hands before he is 21 Years of Age; that the States shall not be bound by any Laws which shall be made without their Consent; that the King may make Peace with the Advice of the Senate only, but that War shall not be declared without the Consent of the States; that the Senators, to be approved however by the Prince upon the Throne, shall be nominated by the College of Nobles; that the King shall in all Things conduct himself according to the Advice of the Senate; that every Cause wherein the Life or Honour of any Gentleman is concerned shall be tried openly in the Court called *Hoffraten* and in no other Court; that the Presidents of the four Colleges and the Governor of *Stockholm* for the Time being shall be Senators; that all Officers in both Land and Sea Service shall take an Oath of Fidelity to the King the Kingdom and the States; that no Colonel shall upon Pain of Death march a single Soldier from the Place he is quartered in without an Order from the King given with the Consent of the Senate; that once in three Years a Diet shall be held and oftner if the publick Good requires it; that the Nobility of *Sweden* shall have the Liberty of electing their own Marshal; that the Nobility of the *German* and other Provinces subject to *Sweden* shall as soon as the War is ended be reinstated in their ancient Privileges; and that every Town shall be restored to the Enjoyment of its full Rights and Privileges. The Wisdom and Reasonableness of most of these Regulations are obvious, and although the regal Power may be too much limited by some of them, no honest Man, since Patriotism is the noblest Passion that can animate a human Breast, will blame the *Swedes*, who had suffered a great deal from the absolute Power exercised in the two last Reigns, for being jealous of their Liberties.

The Court of *Sweden* used afterwards its Endeavours to procure for the Duke of *Holstein* the Restitution of the Dutchy of *Sleswick*: But the King of *Denmark* would hear nothing of parting therewith; and the States were unwilling to plunge the Nation already exhausted by one War into a new one. As the Court of *Great-Britain* took great Pains in the Year 1726 to

prevail upon *Frederick* to accede to the Treaty of *Hannover* a Diet was called, for the King could not do it of himself, which after being continued from time to time for the Space of a Year consented thereto. By a secret Article in the Act of Accession to this Treaty *Frederick* in Consideration of the Sum of 50,000 Pound, to be paid annually for the Space of three Years by *Great-Britain* and *France*, agreed to keep up a Body of 10,000 Men, besides the 5000 which as a contracting Party he was obliged to keep up. In case any of these Troops should march out of the Kingdom they were forthwith to be taken into the Pay of the *Allies*; and the States of *Sweden* reserved the Liberty of recalling them if they should be wanted for the Defence thereof.

*Alliance with
the SULTAN,
1728.*

An Ambassador arrived in the Year 1728 in *Sweden* to settle the Account of what had been advanced for *Charles XII.* while he was in *Turky*. The Reception he met with and the paying what appeared to be due laid the Foundation of a strict Alliance betwixt the two Courts. The Persecution set on Foot against the Protestants in *Thorn*, which was contrary to the Treaty of *Oliva*, had like to have involved *Sweden* in another War with *Poland*; it was however prevented and the two Kings being heartily reconciled wrote in the Year 1729 most friendly Letters to each other. The Court of *Sweden* at first made great Difficulty of acknowledging the Czar as Emperor of *Russia*, a Title he had lately taken; but after mature Deliberation in the Senate it was resolved to give this Title to him and his Successors.

*FREDERICK
succeeds to
HESSE,*

In the Year 1730 *Frederick* succeeded his Father in the Landgraviate of *Hesse*; and appointed his Brother *William* Administrator of Affairs there.

*1730,
EAST-INDIA
Company erected.*

About the same Time a *Dutchman* named *Van Asper*, who had proposed the same Thing at *Copenhagen*, proposed the erecting of an *East-India* Company in *Sweden*. His Proposal being approved of the King took upon himself to be the Protector of the new Company; and when the *Dutch*, who apprehended this would be as prejudicial as the *Ostend* Company had been to their Trade, complained thereof they were given to understand, that Commerce was free to all Nations and that the *Swedish* had an equal Right to it with others.

The

The *Swedish Laws*, besides that many of them were *The Laws* in the ancient *Swedish Language* which few understood, *reformed*, being now so extensive and perplexed that the Study thereof was very difficult, Commissioners were appointed by the King in the Year 1731 to do what was necessary for making the Administration of Justice more expeditious, cheaper and more certain. By these the old Laws were put into the modern Language of *Sweden*; and the whole Body of the Law, its Superfluities, Triflingness and Tautologies being first retrenched, was methodized in a Manner so concise, yet quite clear, that a single Volume and that not a very large one contained the whole thereof. This useful Work, which cost some Years Pains, being compleated it was in the Year 1734 approved of by the Diet; and being made publick all Courts were from the first of *January* next ensuing ordered to conform strictly thereto. 1734.

Sweden notwithstanding her Vicinity to *Poland* did *Treaty with* not openly take any Part in the War which broke out *DENMARK.* on Account of the *Polish* Election. In the Year 1734 a Treaty of mutual Defence and for the Encouragement of Trade and Navigation was signed with *Denmark*. The King whose Health had for some Time been bad in the Year 1738 solemnly resigned the Government into the Queen's Hands; but on his Recovery he again took it upon himself. A Diet being held in the same Year the Senators *Bond, Bark, Beilk, Hardt* *Some Senators* and *Creutz*, whose Conduct had been enquired into, *disgraced*, were removed from their Offices; because they had as it was pretended went beyond their Instructions in renewing the Treaty of *Neustadt* with *Russia*. As the Party called *Hats* who wanted nothing so much as to break with *Russia* prevailed in this Diet, it was resolved that the Forces of the Kingdom should be augmented both by Sea and Land, and that the Treaty of Subsidy with *France* should be renewed. In this Diet likewise, which held almost a Year, the settling of the Succession and the Form of Government which should take Place upon a Vacancy of the Throne were talked of. The Nobility seemed inclined to the Duke of *Holslein*; but the three other Orders were for restoring such a Republican Form of Government as existed before *Sweden* 1738.

was annexed to *Denmark*. As the Debates on this Subject which could not be agreeable to the King ran very high, it was in order to prevent the ill Consequences which these might have had resolved to put an End thereto by dissolving the Diet.

War with
RUSSIA,
1741.

The Conclusion of Peace betwixt *Russia* and the *Turks* occasioned its being delayed a little: Yet it was easy to see that a War with *Russia* was resolved upon whenever a favourable Opportunity should offer. The Infancy of the Prince appointed to succeed *Anne* Empress of *Russia*, the Deposition of the Regent, together with the Revolution which happened in *Russia* were thought to furnish this; and Hostilities were commenced by *Sweden* in September 1741 against *Russia*. As Baron *Sinclair* a *Swedish* Major had passed several Times betwixt the Courts of *Stockholm* and *Constantinople*, it was suspected that something prejudicial to the *Russians* was in Agitation. In the Month of June 1739 this Baron was assassinated in his Way from *Constantinople* to *Sweden* by a *Russian* Officer a *Silesian* by Birth, who lay in wait for him in a Wood in *Silesia*. The Courts of *Vienna* and *Petersburg* took great Pains to clear themselves from the Suspicion of having been privy to this Murder, and *Sweden* seemed to be satisfied with the Declarations made at that Time: But it was plain she was not; for in the Declaration of War against *Russia* in July 1741 it was amongst others mentioned as a Motive thereto.

Manners of
the SWEDES.

The *Swedes* have always been reckoned a brave People and very able to endure the Fatigues of War: Yet there was a Time when for Want of Discipline the Troops of *Sweden* were in no great Esteem. By the prudent Conduct of *Gustavus Adolphus* who employed foreign Officers, together with the frequent Wars they have been since engaged in, this Defect is now cured; and what they did under *Charles XII.* plainly shews that there are no better Soldiers than the *Swedes*. There are not in *Sweden* as in most other Countries a Number of large populous Towns; for the Peasants are a much more considerable Body of People than the *Burghers*. The Peasants in this Kingdom have the Right of sending Deputies to the Diet; nor can any new Tax

be

be laid on without the Consent of their College. The Gravity so natural to the *Swedes* makes them for the most Part a reserved and disagreeable People. They are in the general suspicious and too apt to think highly of themselves and contemptibly of others. There are amongst them some who do not want Capacity; but very few of the *Swedes* have Application enough to attain to any great Degree of Perfection in the Sciences. It is also to be imputed to their want of Industry that Manufactures and the mechanick Arts are so much neglected amongst them.

Sweden, which comprehends the greater Part of the *Soil, Com-*
Peninsula Scandinavia, abounds with Rocks, Forests *modities, and*
 and Lakes; yet some Parts of it are very fruitful; and the *Strength of*
 Lakes besides being well stored with Fish are very con- *SWEDEN.*
 venient for Inland Navigation. As the principal Com-
 modities of this Country are Copper, Iron, Tar, Pitch,
 Masts and Boards it is easy to see that the Balance of
 Trade must be against the *Swedes*: But in order to re-
 medy this as far as possible Trade and Navigation have
 of late Years been much encouraged. As the maintain-
 ing of Soldiers costs but little in *Sweden* and the Inhabi-
 tants are naturally brave the Forces of this Kingdom
 must be respectable; especially as they have been of late
 Years put upon a very good Footing. While *Stock-*
holm was the only Port where a Fleet could be fitted
 out the Marine of *Sweden* was very inconsiderable;
 but since *Gottenburg* and *Carlsbaven* have been made
 good Ports this has been greatly augmented. *Sweden*
 has a Ridge of Rocks so high as to be almost inaccessible;
 which serve as a Bulwark to it on the Side of *Nor-*
way.

Whilst the *Swedes* were superior in military Skill *Interest of*
 to the *Russians* they were so far from apprehending any *SWEDEN*
 Thing on that Side that they made Conquests upon the *with regard*
Russians: But this Matter is now quite altered; for the *to RUSSIA.*
 long War in the Time of *Charles XII.* and the great
 Pains taken by the Czar *Peter I.* have made the latter,
 who exceed them vastly in Number, such good Soldiers
 that they are now an Over-match for the *Swedes*. So
 long as this is the Case it must be for the Interest of
Sweden to be upon good Terms with *Russia*; nor can
 she

she except assisted by some powerful Ally hope to gain any Thing by a War with the *Russians*.

POLAND.

Since *Livonia* and the neighbouring Provinces have been ceded to *Russia* the Bone of Contention betwixt *Sweden* and *Poland* is in a great Measure removed; yet it is of Consequence for the former to be in Amity with the latter, because the Assistance of *Poland* in case of a War with *Russia* would be very serviceable to *Sweden*.

PRUSSIA.

The Acquisitions of the King of *Prussia* in *Pomerania* are looked upon with an evil Eye by the *Swedes*; but as this Prince is powerful and the Expence of transporting Troops to the Continent is very great it would be imprudent in them to come to a Rupture with him; and especially as he may be a very good Ally to them in Case of a War with *Denmark* or *Russia*.

HANOVER.

Sweden would undoubtedly be glad to regain the Dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden* which have been for some Time annexed to the Electorate of *Hanover*; but as the House of *Brunswick* is in Possession of the *British* Throne it would be impolitick in her, as the naval Force of *Great-Britain* is vastly superior to that of *Sweden*, to attempt any Thing against these Dutchies.

GERMANY.

As *Sweden* is by Virtue of her *German* Dominions a Member of the *Germanick* Body it is for her Interest to preserve the Liberties of and Balance of Power in the Empire. It is moreover although she has nothing to fear from any of the Princes of the Empire of Consequence to *Sweden* to be upon good Terms with them all; because they may in many Cases make a powerful Diversion in her Favour.

DENMARK.

Since the Sea is now become the Boundary of *Sweden* and *Denmark* it is not for the Advantage of the former to make any Conquests upon the latter; nor is it probable that *Sweden* would succeed in an Attempt to do this, since all Nations who trade up the *Baltick* are concerned to prevent her becoming Mistress of the *Sound*. Upon the whole it seems to be for the Interest of both *Swedes* and *Danes* to eradicate their mutual Animosity, to forget all ancient Quarrels, and to unite in guarding against the Designs of their powerful Neighbours the *Russians*.

The

The Alliance which has long subsisted betwixt *Swe-France*. *den* and *France* was at first founded on its being their common Interest to oppose the ambitious Designs of the House of *Austria*. This Reason is now at an End; yet as the Friendship of *France* may be on many Occasions very serviceable and the Subsidy she receives from thence is considerable it would be imprudent in *Sweden* to break this Alliance.

Sweden has much more to hope for than to fear from *Great-GREAT-Britain*: Because the latter is vastly concerned as a trading *BRITAIN*. Nation to preserve the Balance of Power in the North. The Court of *Stockholm* should however take Care that it does not by too close an Attachment to *France* draw upon itself the Resentment of *Great-Britain*: Because a *British* Fleet could in such a Case greatly annoy the Coasts of *Sweden* and give vast Assistance to her Enemies.

Sweden and the Republick of the *United Provinces* *HOLLAND*. have a mutual Interest in supporting each other; for it greatly concerns the latter to hinder either *Russia* or *Denmark* from becoming Mistress of the *Baltick*. On the other Hand it is of vast Consequence to the latter that the maritime Strength of *Holland* be not reduced too low, lest *Great-Britain* should be capable of lording it in the *Baltick*.

Spain, *Portugal* and the *Italian* Powers are at such a *SPAIN and* Distance from *Sweden* that, as their naval Power is *other Powers*. inconsiderable, nothing is to be apprehended from any of these; nor is it except for the Benefit of Commerce worth her while to give herself any Trouble concerning them.

With Regard to *Turky* it is quite otherwise; for not-*TURKY*. withstanding its great Distance it highly concerns the *Swedens* to be in Amity with the *Turks*: Because the latter are well situated for making a powerful Diversion in favour of the former in the case of an Attack from the *Russians*.

C H A P. X.

O f P R U S S I A.

*Division of
PRUSSIA.*

PRUSSIA an extensive Country is divided into two Parts: One of which from being annexed to the Crown of *Poland* is called royal *Prussia*; the other because formerly enjoyed by a Branch of the House of *Brandenburg* with the Title of *Duke* has been distinguished by the Name of ducal *Prussia*. The latter which in Process of Time became subject to the Elector of *Brandenburg* was not many Years ago erected into a Kingdom: But in Order to understand the History of this Country aright we must say something of the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*, who subdued, civilized and governed it for many Years.

*The TEUTONICK ORDER
first established
at ACRE.*

Acra known to the Ancients by the Name of *Ptolemais* being besieged in the Year of our Lord 1190 by the Christians a Dysentery broke out in their Army; which for Want of proper Care carried off great Numbers of Soldiers. Some Merchants of *Bremen* and *Lubeck* being grieved at this Misfortune, they with a Sail made a kind of Tent capable of receiving many sick Soldiers: Who before lay upon the Ground exposed to the Air. This charitable Disposition was approved of by many Christian Princes in the Camp; and they thought it their Duty to promote it as much as possible. Hence arose a Society who made it their Business to take Care of sick Soldiers: Which was soon after erected into an Order by Pope *Celestine III.*

*Different
Names of this
Order.*

As the Persons who entered thereinto wore a particular Habit on which was a black Cross they were called Knights of the *Holy Cross*: And taking the Virgin *Mary* for their Patroness they were also called Knights of *St. Mary*. As the first Grand Master of this Order

was

was a German it was from thence called also the *Teutonic* Order. At first it consisted only of Nobility and Priests: But in Process of Time another Class made up of Laymen of a lower Sort was added; and at length a fourth composed of Women who were called Sisters of the *Teutonic* Order. The three First Grand Masters *Henry Walpot* of *Passenheim*, *Otton de Karpen* of *Bremen*, and *Herman Bart* of *Holstein* resided at *Ptolemais*: But upon the Decline of the Affairs of the Christians in the East *Herman de Saltza* the next Grand Master quitted *Ptolemais* and made *Venice* the Place of the Residence *It is removed to VENICE.* of the Order.

Being a prudent Man and greatly respected he made up the Differences betwixt the Emperor *Frederick II.* and the Popes *Honorius III.* and *Gregory IX.* to the Satisfaction of all Parties. For this Service the Pope made him a Present of a Ring: Which was preserved in the Order and put upon the Finger of every Grand Master at his Election: And the Emperor besides adding an Eagle to the Arms of the Order made *Herman* a Prince of the Empire, which Honour was enjoyed by all his Successors. The Design of its Institution in the East being put an End to by the Progress of the *Saracens* *Herman*, in whose Time although the *Teutonic* Order was not of more than 21 Years standing it consisted of above two Thousand Knights, quitted as it was before observed *Ptolemais*: But Work was soon cut for him in the North.

Whilst the Inhabitants of *Prussia* were under the *The PRUSSIAN* grossest Idolatry and being without any kind of Government lived according to ancient Tradition wild in *GO-ANS choose WAYDE-* the Woods, an old Man named *Waydewest* made them *WEST for their King.* sensible from the Example of Bees that a King would be of service to them. Being himself pitched upon by them for King he amongst other Things ordered that every Male should have a Field; that his Wife and Family should assist him in cultivating it; and that all who by Sickness or any Accident were rendered incapable of working should be killed out of the Way. Having afterwards divided the Government betwixt his Sons he took upon himself the Office of Chief Priest; and made some Changes in the Idolatry which prevailed.

Being arrived at a great Age he voluntarily caused himself to be burnt on a funeral Pile as an Offering to the Gods of his Country.

His Sons.

His Sons were twelve *Saymo, Nydro, Sudo, Slavo, Natango, Barto, Galindo, Warmo, Oggo, Pomezso, Colmo* and *Lituo*; from whom perhaps the Countries of *Samland, Nadravia, Sudinia, Sclavonia, Natangia, Bartonia, Galindia, Warmia, Oggerland, Pomesania, Culm* and *Lithuania* had their Names.

Manners of the PRUSSIANS while Heathens.

Of these ancient Times we have very little handed down; but it is pretty certain that the *Prussians* while Heathens worshipped under Oaks: One of which at *Thorn* being remarkably large stood a long Time after the Conversion of the Inhabitants to Christianity. It was the antient Custom of the *Prussians* to sacrifice to their Gods such as were taken Prisoners; of which there cannot be a stronger Proof than that some Persons who in later Times fell into their Hands were offered up as Victims.

The Death of ST. ADALBERT occasions a War with POLAND.

St. Adalbert Archbishop of *Progue*, who went towards the End of the tenth Century to preach the Gospel in *Prussia*, having been assassinated by the *Prussians* *Boleslaus* King of *Poland* put himself at the Head of an Army; and after destroying the Idol at *Romova* brought away the Body of this Prelate. The War began by *Boleslaus* was continued by three of his Successors; and *Waldemar II.* of *Denmark* marched also against the *Prussians*: Yet no great Advantage was gained over them.

Some Bishopricks are erected in PRUSSIA.

In the Beginning of the thirteenth Century a Monk named *Christian* being encouraged so to do by *Conrade* Duke of *Masovia* went into *Prussia* to propagate Christianity; and such was his Success that four Bishopricks were soon erected there: namely those of *Warmia, Culm, Pomesania* and *Samland*. It must not however be supposed that the Inhabitants of these Provinces were all converted; for great Opposition was made by the Heathens to the spreading of the Gospel: And had not the new Bishops been supported by the Kings of *Poland* and *Bohemia* they could not have maintained their Ground.

In Order to revenge themselves upon *Conrade* for the Assistance given by him to *Christian* afterwards Bishop of *Culm* the *Prussians* invaded his Dominions, and committed the utmost Ravages. Two hundred and Fifty Churches were demolished; Infants had their Brains dashed out; Nuns were ravished; and many of his Subjects were carried into Slavery. Touched at these Calamities *Christian* proposed the erecting of an Order of Knights for making War, in Imitation of the *Knights of the Sword* who had distinguished themselves against the Heathens in *Livonia*, upon the *Prussians*. This Proposal being approved of a new Order was erected, whose Knights from *Dobrin* the Place of their Residence took the Name of *Knights of Dobrin*; but *Conrade* soon found that these Knights were unable to make Head against the *Prussians*.

Being at a Loss what to do he applied for Help to the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*: Who were glad of an Opportunity to gain a Settlement for themselves, and to shew at the same Time their Zeal against the Enemies of the Christian Faith. Having obtained the Pope's Leave they set out for *Culm*: Where a Treaty was concluded, the Conditions of which there being no authentic Copy of it extant have been variously represented. The Friends of the Order say it was agreed that the Knights should have all they could make themselves Masters of: But others insist that what should be conquered in *Prussia* was to be divided betwixt the Knights and *Conrade*.

However this was the Conquest of *Prussia* was begun about the Year 1230; and the Knights behaved so well that in ten Years Time a large Tract of Country, which were the Towns of *Thorn*, *Culm*, *Althaus*, *Marienburg* and *Elbing*, fell into their Hands.

The *Teutonic Order* being about the Year 1239 strengthened by the Incorporation of the *Order of the Sword* therewith *Suentopulk* Duke of *Pomerania* thought it high Time to put a Stop to its Progress. A War which lasted from the Year 1241 to the Year 1250 ensued; but as the Knights were assisted both by the *Germans* and *Bohemians* *Suentopulk* grew at last weary thereof.

Primislaus

The present *Primislaus III. King of Bohemia* made one Campaign
Inhabitants of against the *Prussians* in the Year 1254, during which
PRUSSIA are he laid the Foundation of *Koningsberg*; and another in
of divers Na the Year 1254. The same Thing was done in the
tions. Year 1255 by *Otho Margrave of Brandenburg*, who

gave the Name of *Brandenburg* his Country to a small
 Place in *Prussia*. *Thieri of Misnia* made also a Cam-
 paign in the Year 1272 against the *Prussians*. As these
 Princes and some others, for the Expeditions against the
Prussians amounted in the whole to Sixteen, left always
 some of their People behind them it is not to be won-
 dered at that the present Inhabitants of *Prussia* should be
 such a Medley of different Nations.

War with This War by which the Knights acquired near all
POMERANIA. *Prussia* being ended in the Year 1283, another with
 the Duke of *Pomerania* which lasted near sixty Years
 was entered into. The Occasion thereof was an At-
 tempt of some Princes of the House of *Pomerania*,
 namely *Vratislaus, Sambor and Ratibor*, who had entered
 into the Order, to join Part of *Prussia* which lay con-
 tiguous to the Dutchy of *Pomerania* to this Dutchy.

MARIEN- In the Beginning of the 14th Century *Sifroi Grand*
BURG is made Master made a Place in *Prussia*, called from the *Vir-*
gin Mary Patroness of the Order *Marienburg*, the
the Residence Residence of the Order: Which had been for some Time
of the Order. at *Marpurg* in Germany.

SIFROI an- In his Time moreover the Knights took Advan-
nexes POME- tage of the following Accident to encrease their Domi-
RELIA to nions. *Peter Suenze* Governor of *Pomerelia* being
what before disgusted with *Uladislaus* King of Poland, he resolved
belonged to the to revenge himself by delivering up this Province with
Order. *Dantzick* its Capital to the *Margraves of Brandenburg*.
 Hereupon the *Margraves John and Waldemar* entered
Pomerelia and took Possession of the whole except the
 Citadel of *Dantzick*. *Boguff* Bailiff of *Pomerelia*, who
 defended this for *Uladislaus*, finding himself hard pressed
 wrote to him for Succours. Hereupon *Uladislaus* not
 being in a Condition to send any ordered him, with-
 out considering what was likely to be the Consequence,
 to apply for Assistance to the Knights of the *Teu-*
tonick Order. By their Help the *Margraves* were
 driven from before *Dantzick*; but the Knights after-
 wards

wards obliged *Boguff* to quit this City likewise, because he did not make good his Agreement with them, which was as they said that they should be reimbursed the Expence they had been at. *Uladislaus* accused the Knights of Ingratitude; but instead of regarding his Accusation they gave the *Margraves*, who laid Claim to *Pomerelia*, a Sum of Money to evacuate it and took Possession of the whole thereof.

About the Time this happened, which was in the MICHELOW Year 1311, *Lescus* Duke of *Cujavia* ceded to the Knights ceded to the the Province of *Michelow*. This Prince had on being Order, 1311. made Prisoner in *Hungary* by *Wenceslaus* King of *Bohemia* in order to raise Money for his Ransom, mortgaged this Province to the *Teutonic* Order; and finding himself unable to redeem it he in Consideration of a further Sum put them into Possession thereof.

About the Year 1313 Herrings which had for some Herrings Time been used to come in great Quantities upon the leave the Coast of *Prussia* quitted it; and went first upon the Coast PRUSSIAN of *Norway* and afterwards upon the *British* Coast. Coast.

Werner D'Orseln raised in the Year 1324 to the Dig- WERNER nity of Grand Master was involved in the Censures D'ORSELN, which the Court of *Rome* thundered out against the Em- 1324. peror *Lewis* the *Bavarian*: Because he sided with this Emperor against the Pope. The Request of a Knight named *John de Bienendorf*, who wanted to make a Campaign in the Year 1330 against the *Lithuanians*, being refused by *Werner* he bespoke a large Knife. When it was made the Cutler asked this Knight if he would not have a Sheath for it? He answered no: For that he intended it should have the most illustrious Sheath in *Prussia*. Not long after he plunged it into the Grand He is stabbed. Master's Body as he was coming from evening Prayers, and he died upon the Spot.

An Attempt being made by the *Poles* to recover War with *Pomerelia* a bloody Battle was fought near *Ploskow*: POLAND. In which according to the *Polish* Historians who make their own Loss inconsiderable the Order lost 20,000 Men. The Emperor *Charles* IV. made a Journey into *Prussia* on Purpose to accommodate Matters betwixt the *Poles* and the Knights: But the Pleasure of

ending this War was reserved for *Lewis Konig* a *Saxon*, who succeeded to the Grand Mastership in the Year 1341.

LEWIS KO-
NIG, 1341.
Treaty of
KALISCH.

By a Treaty concluded two Years after at *Kalisch* it was agreed that the Knights should keep *Pomerelia*, the Territory of *Culm* and the Province of *Michelow*: But all that had been taken by them in *Dobrin* and *Cujavia* was to be restored to *Poland*.

War with
LITHUANIA.

This Grand Master began a War with the *Lithuanians*; but being unsuccessful therein and being reproached on this Account by the Knights it gave him so much Uneasiness as to distract him.

HENRY
DUSENER.

Henry Dufener of *Pomerania* the next Successor was successful against the *Lithuanians*: But he in the Year 1351 abdicated the Grand Mastership in Favour of *Henry de Knippenrodde*, who for thirty Years past had had the principal Direction of the Affairs of the Order.

HENRY DE
KNIPPEN-
RODDE.

Henry founded many Schools in *Prussia*; for he was accustomed to say, *Our Order does not want for Money or Dominions; but it has not a sufficient Number of Wise and Honest Men in it.* The *Lithuanian War* being continued he in the Year 1370 gained a signal Victory near *Rudau*: Yet on examining thereinto before his Death in the Year 1382 it was found that this War had cost the Order, notwithstanding there had been only this one Action of any Consequence, above 50,000 Men. The principal Cause thereof which was the Idolatry of the *Lithuanians* being likewise removed, for *Jagellon* their Duke in order to pave the Way for his Advancement to the *Polish Throne* had promised to introduce Christianity into *Lithuania*, the next Grand Master *Conrade de Jungingen* concluded a Treaty of Peace with *Jagellon* in the Year 1404.

Treaty with
LITHUANIA.

CONRADE DE
JUNGINGEN.

During his Grand Mastership, who was of a mild and peaceable Disposition, the Order became so rich and flourishing that he bought the *New Marche* of the Emperor *Sigismund* for sixty thousand Florins of Gold. In his Time the Order had 55 walled Towns, forty-eight Castles and eighteen Thousand Parishes; and its certain Revenue besides some casual Sums amounted to 800,000 Guilders.

The Order is
very rich and
flourishing.

Ulrick

Ulrick de Jungingen, who succeeded in the Year 1407, ULRICK DE JUNGINGEN, being of a quite different Temper he resolved to break the Peace with the *Lithuanians*: And having for this Purpose taken the Field began with sending to *Jagellon* two Swords dipped in Blood. This Prince on receiving these said he looked upon them as an Earnest of Victory: It being usual for the vanquished to deliver up his Arms to the Conqueror. 1407. War with LITHUANIA.

On the 15th of *July* 1410 the famous Battle of *Tanneburg* in which this Blood-thirsty Grand Master lost his Life was fought. The Loss therein on the Side of the *Poles* was much the greater; but their Army being before vastly superior they remained Masters of the Field and made 14000 Prisoners. TANNEBURG, 1410.

As there could be no Election while the Confusion hereby occasioned lasted, for not less than 40,000 Knights fell in the Action, *Henry Reusse* took upon him to do the Office of Grand Master. This Victory being pushed by *Jagellon Dantzick, Elbing, Thorn, Culm, Koningsberg* and a great Part of *Prussia* soon fell into his Hands. Having defeated the Knights a second Time at *Carnovia* *Jagellon* like a wise Prince thought it the best Way to accept the advantageous Terms of Peace offered. By a Treaty concluded in the Year 1411 he consented to restore all he had taken in *Prussia*: But the Knights were to pay him a large Sum in ready Money. It was moreover stipulated that *Samogitia*, which during the Life of *Witold* the present Grand Duke was to continue annexed to *Lithuania*, should after his Death return to the Order. HENRY REUSSE. 1411. Treaty with LITHUANIA.

The Conduct of *Reusse* being afterwards very bad he was degraded and imprisoned during Life, and *Michael Kuchenmeister* was elected Grand Master; but his Election gave Rise to a Division in the Order. The Nobility, whose Party was called by the Name of the *Golden Fleece*, espoused the Interest of the degraded Grand Master: The lower part of the Order, who formed another Party called the *Ship of Gold*, attached themselves to the new Grand Master. The Grand Mastership being during these Troubles a very disagreeable Office *Michael* after undergoing the Fatigue thereof nine Years resigned it in the Year 1422. MICHAEL KUCHENMEISTER, 1413.

PAUL POE-
LIZER,
1422.

Paul Poelizer the next Successor a *Corinthian* by Birth put a Stop to the Persecution of the *Hussites*, who had been before rigorously treated. He renewed in the Year 1436 with *Ladislaus* Son of *Jagellon* the Treaty made with his Father. Abandoning himself afterwards to Incontinence, so as not only to dishonour the Wives and Daughters of his Subjects but to throw such Fathers and

He is degraded.

Husbands into Prison as upbraided him, he was unanimously degraded at *Marienburg* in the Year 1440.

CONRADE
D'ERLICK-
SHAUSEN,
1440.

In the Time of *Conrade D'Erlickshausen* who was elected in his Stead the Knights of *Franconia*, *Suabia* and *Bavaria* entered into a Combination, and nothing less would satisfy them than the excluding of the Knights of all other Countries from all Offices. A Confederacy being hereupon entered into by the Towns of *Dantzick*, *Thorn* and *Elbing*, and by the Bishops of *Culm*, *Pomerania* and *Samland*, it came in the Year 1450 to an open Rupture. As the combined Knights prevailed the Confederacy was declared void by *Conrade*; and in Order to please the former he set a large Fine on those Knights who had entered into the latter: Which so exasperated the Towns and Bishopricks above-mentioned that they put themselves under the Protection of *Casimir IV.* of *Poland*.

War with
POLAND.

Hence arose a cruel War which lasted from the Year 1454 to the Year 1467. In this the Knights behaved very well: But the *Poles* in the End too powerful forced them to give up the Towns of *Dantzick*, *Culm*, *Thorn*, *Elbing*, *Marienburg*, and the Provinces of *Ermland* and *Michelow*; and they moreover consented to do Homage to *Poland* for the rest of *Prussia*. The Ravages committed in *Prussia* during this War were so great that not above 3000 Villages were left. From the Division of *Prussia* pursuant to the Treaty made at the Conclusion thereof arose the Distinction of *Polish Prussia* and *Prussia* of the *Teutonical Order*; nor have the Knights been ever able to recover what was thereby ceded.

Part of
PRUSSIA
ceded to PO-
LAND.

HENRY
REUSSEN.

Henry Reussen of *Plauen* the next Grand Master deferred for two Years the taking upon himself the Title, hoping thereby to be exempted from doing Homage to *Poland*: But the Artifice would not do for he was in the End obliged to do this publickly.

A Dispute arose betwixt *Henry Reffle* of *Rieffenberg*, HENRY REFFLE, who succeeded in the Year 1470, and *Casimir IV.* of *Poland* concerning the Bishoprick of *Ermland*. The latter would have promoted *Stanislaus Oporowski* to this See; but *Henry* insisted upon the Right of presenting and it was expected it would have come to a Rupture. This was however prevented by *Casimir's* suffering *Nicholas de Thungen* the Person nominated by *Henry* to take Possession thereof. 1470.

In the Year 1477 *Martin Truches* of *Wetzhausen* was raised to the Grand Mastership. He for a long Time refused to do Homage to *Poland*; but in order to prevent a War he was in the End forced to comply. MARTIN TRUCHES, 1477.

At his Death in the Year 1489 *John Tieffen* a *Swiss* was raised to the Dignity of Grand Master. His Austerity of Life was so remarkable that he would never lie in a Bed nor wear any Linen: And he had these Words *O God of Heaven* always in his Mouth. He died in the Year 1497 as he was going into *Walachia* to the Assistance of the *Poles*. JOHN TIEFFEN, 1489.

After his Death the Knights desirous to throw off if possible their Dependence upon *Poland* resolved for the Time to come to choose their Grand Masters out of powerful Families. *Frederick* Duke of *Saxony* the Person now chosen had soon an Opportunity of doing this: For the *Poles* who thrice within a short Time had changed their King were so divided amongst themselves that they were in no Condition to compel him to do Homage. Upon the Death of this Prince in the Year 1510 the Election fell upon *Albert Margrave* of *Brandenburg*. FREDERICK DUKE OF SAXONY, 1497.

Sigismund I. of *Poland* would fain have persuaded this Prince who was his Sister's Son to do Homage to him: But he absolutely refused it; and finding a War unavoidable he in order to support himself against so powerful an Enemy sold the *New Marche* to *Joachim* Elector of *Brandenburg*. ALBERT OF BRANDENBURGH, 1510.

Hostilities being commenced by the *Poles* in the Year 1520 they took *Holland*, *Brandenburg* and *Marienwerder*. This unfortunate Beginning made *Albert* think of suing for Peace; but being reinforced by 2500 *Danes* he resolved to continue the War; and that Money might not be wanting he for a large Sum to be paid

immediately agreed to exempt the Knights of *Livonia* from all Dependence upon himself as Head of the Order. In the following Year 13000 *Germans* were sent to his Assistance, who after failing in an Attempt upon *Dantzick* ravaged *Pomerelia*: But upon the coming up of the *Polish* Army they were forced to retire with the utmost Precipitation. Being thus deprived of his Auxiliaries *Albert* in the Year 1522 concluded a Truce for four Years. The Negotiations for a final Determination of all Disputes entered into soon after came to nothing: But Conferences being renewed in the Year 1525 at *Breslau* in *Silesia* a Treaty was concluded.

PRUSSIA erected into a secular DUTCHY, 1525.

By this that Part of *Prussia* which belonged to the *Teutonic* Order was to be formed into a secular Dutchy for *Albert*; to be held however as a Fief of the *Polish* Crown, and to be annexed on failure of Issue of himself and of his Brothers to this Crown. This Appropriation of what belonged to the Order being exclaimed against by the Knights *Albert* was put under the Ban of the Empire; but as the *Poles* protected him no Person would attempt to carry this Sentence into Execution.

ALBERT embraces the Protestant Religion.

About the same Time *Albert* embraced the *Lutheran* Religion; and having renounced his Vow of *Celibacy* married *Anna Maria* of *Brunswick*. In the Year 1527 such *Prussian* Knights as were dissatisfied with the Behaviour of *Albert* and others who lived out of *Prussia* elected another Grand Master. *Walter Cronberg* who made *Mergenstien* the Place of Residence was the Person chosen; and the Emperor *Charles V.* whom *Albert's* Conduct had provoked to the last Degree confirmed him in his Dignity. Not long after a new Liturgy conformable to the Confession of *Augsburg* to which most of the Bishops subscribed was composed: And in order to introduce the Protestant Religion as fast as possible into *Prussia* an University, in which all the Professors were to be *Lutherans*, was founded at *Koningsberg* in the Year 1544.

Disputes between the

OSIANDRISTS and MORLI-NISTS, 1549.

A new System of Justification having been published in the Year 1549, by *Osiander* a Favourite Divine of *Albert's*, a Priest named *Morlin* who presumed to preach publicly against this was banished: Nor could *Albert* notwithstanding many of the Clergy adhered to

the Opinion of *Morlin* and great Interest was made be prevailed upon to recall him. Instead thereof *Paul Scalichius* who was in great Credit at Court took the Advantage of *Albert's* Incapacity, grown by Reason of his advanced Age quite Childish, to oppress the Followers of *Morlin*.

As no Redress could be had from *Albert* Complaint SIGISMUND was made to *Sigismund II. of Poland*; who issued a Commission to enquire into this and some other Matters *interposes*. which had for many Years disturbed *Prussia*. *Scalichius* had the good Luck by going Ambassador into *France* to avoid the impending Danger: But *Matthias Horst*, *John Schreel* and *John Funk* his Creatures, all Bigots to *Osiandrism*, were beheaded at *Koningsberg* on the 28th of *October* 1566; and an End was thereby put to the theological Disputes with which *Prussia* had for a long Time been distracted. Two Years after *Albert* died and *Albert Frederick* his Son succeeded.

Upon the Investiture of this Prince the Succession, ALBERT II, before limited to the Issue of *Albert* his Father and his Brothers, was enlarged so as to take in *Joachim Frederick* Elector of *Brandenburg* and his Issue. 1568. *Albert* was in the Year 1573 married to *Mary Eleanor* of *Cleves*; and hence came the Claim of the House of *Brandenburg* to the Dutches of *Juliers* and *Cleves*. The Senses of *Albert* had been for some Time much impaired; but growing afterwards quite incapable of governing his paternal Uncle *George Frederick* took upon himself the Administration of Affairs. Upon the Death of *George* without Issue in the Year 1604 *Joachim Frederick* Elector of *Brandenburg* was invested by the King of *Poland* with the Regency. At his Death two Years after *John Sigismund* his eldest Son, who besides being Heir to *Prussia* upon Failure of the Issue of *Albert* had married the eldest Daughter of *Albert* by the Princess of *Cleves*, succeeded to the Electorate of *Brandenburg* and to the Regency of *Prussia*. In the Year 1611 all Hopes of *Albert's* Recovering being lost *John* obtained in Right of his Wife, for *Albert* had no Sons, the Investiture of the Dutchy of *Prussia* for himself and his three Brothers. In the Year 1618 *Albert* died.

JOHN SIGIS-
MOND Elec-
tor of BRAN-
DENBURG,
1611.

About the Year 1614 *John* embraced the Doctrine of *Calvin* and this was soon after introduced into his Dominions. The Family of *Cleves* becoming extinct in his Time *John* with the Assistance of the Elector *Palatine*, notwithstanding all the Opposition made thereto by the House of *Saxony*, took Possession of the Dutchy of *Cleves*. He died in the Year 1619 and *George William* his Son succeeded.

GEORGE
1619.
War concern-
ing Religion.

In his Time the Edict for restoring all to the Catholics in *Germany* which had been taken from them since the Treaty of *Passau* was published; in opposing which as it extended to many Benefices in his Dominions *George* was much interested. As *Sweden* came into the War which arose on this Occasion *George* in order to facilitate his Endeavours to relieve *Magdeburg* put *Spandau* and *Custrin* into the Hands of *Gustavus Adolphus*; but all was insufficient to prevent *Tilly* from becoming Master of *Magdeburg*. This General having afterwards thrown himself into *Saxony* *George* joined *Gustavus* with a large Body of Troops, and had a considerable Share in the Victory gained near *Leipsick*. The Situation of Affairs in *Germany* being much altered by the Death of *Gustavus* *George* came into the separate Peace concluded betwixt the Emperor and the Elector of *Saxony* at *Prague* in the Year 1635. He died in the Year 1646.

FREDERICK
1640.

Frederick William his Son and Successor, who was one of the most illustrious Princes of his Time, did for the Peace of *Germany* give up by the Treaty of *Osnaburg* that Part of *Pomerania*, since called *Swedish Pomerania*, which fell to the House of *Brandenburg* at the Death of *Bogislaus XIV.* the last Duke of *Pomerania*. To make *Frederick* Amends for this the Bishopricks of *Halberstadt* and *Minden* were secularized in his Favour by the Germanick Body; and the Reversion of the Archbishoprick of *Magdeburg*, which was to be secularized when it fell in, was likewise granted to him.

War with
POLAND.

On the breaking out of the War in the Year 1655 betwixt *Charles X.* of *Sweden* and *John II.* of *Poland* *Frederick* joined with the former; and contributed a good deal to the Success of the Battle of *Warsaw*: But a
sepa-

separate Peace was afterwards concluded betwixt him and *John*: Of which the principal Article was that *Frederick* and his Descendants should enjoy *Prussia* independently of *Poland*.

He afterwards acted against the *Swedes* and took *PRUSSIA* from them a great Part of *Pomerania*: By the Treaty ^{comes inde-} however of *Oliva* made in the Year 1660, which con- ^{pendent of} firmed to *Frederick* the Sovereignty of *Prussia*, this was ^{POLAND.} restored to *Sweden*. Three Years after notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by some *Prussians*, who were unwilling to lose the Right of appealing from their own Government to the *Polish* Crown, *Frederick* was publicly declared at *Koningsberg* to be independent Sovereign of *Prussia*; and received the Homage of the States as such.

The Dutchy of *Cleves* having suffered from the *French* Treaty with Troops, which in the Year 1672 attacked the *Nether-FRANCE,* lands, *Frederick* sent some Troops to the Assistance of 1673. the Emperor *Leopold*; but finding nothing else would save this Dutchy, for the *French* immediately over-ran the whole of it, he in the next Year made a separate Peace with *France*. The Terms of this were: That the *French* Troops should evacuate all Places in the Dutchy of *Cleves*, and the Counties of *Mark* and *Ravensberg* except *Wesel* and *Rees*; and pay *Frederick* within a Time limited 1,800,000 Livres.

In order to stop the Progress of the *French*, who not ^{FREDERICK} content with invading the *Netherlands* had attacked ^{declares} the Electorates of *Triers* and *Palatine*, *Frederick* entered ^{against} in the Year 1674 into an Alliance with the Emperor and ^{FRANCE,} the *States General*; and putting himself at the Head of 1674. his Troops penetrated in Conjunction with the Imperialists into *Alsace*. The Conduct however of the Imperial General *Bournonville* was so very bad that they could not make good their Winter Quarters there: And *Frederick* was moreover forced to return home to defend his own Dominions against the *Swedes*; who had taken the Opportunity of his Absence to attack these.

He arrived at *Magdeburg* in June 1675 before the *His Dominions* *Swedes* were aware of it, and fell upon them near *Bellin* attacked by the with so much Vigour that 15000 were killed upon the ^{SWEDES,} Spot; 1675.

Battle of
BELLIN.

1676.

1677.

1678.

Spot; and General *Wrangel* was glad to retire with the Remains of the *Swedish* Army into *Mecklenburg*. In the same Year *Frederick* made himself Master of *Wollin* and *Walgatz*; and in the following Year of *Anclam* and *Demin*. *Stetin* was taken by him after a bloody Siege in the next Campaign; and the *Swedes* were in the Year 1678 driven from *Stralsund* and *Greipswald* the only Places which remained to them in *Pomerania*. Marching after this in the Midst of Winter into *Prussia* *Frederick* repulsed General *Horn* who had penetrated thereinto with great Loss; and the *Swedes* who had sustained considerable Losses on all Sides must have suffered still more, if the Success of *France* had not laid the Empire and *Holland* under a Necessity of making Peace. As the Terms insisted upon by *France* for *Sweden* were disagreeable to *Frederick*, who as he had driven the *Swedes* out of *Pomerania* was unwilling to have again such dangerous Neighbours, he would not accede to the Treaty of *Nimeguen*.

Treaty of
ST. GER-
MAINS, 1679.

By a Treaty signed at *St. Germain* in the Year 1679, to which *Frederick* was forced to consent, it was agreed that the *Oder* should for the Time to come be the Boundary of the Dominions of the Elector of *Brandenburg* and the King of *Sweden* in *Pomerania*. *Dam* and *Golnau* were indeed to be ceded to *Sweden*; but the latter was to continue in *Frederick's* Hands as a Mortgage for 50,000 Crowns. It was moreover stipulated that all the Toll of *Colberg*, in which the *Swedes* had formerly been Sharers, should for the future belong to the *Prussians*; and that *France* should upon his restoring some Towns belonging to *Sweden* pay *Frederick* 300,000 Crowns. This truly great Prince died in the Year 1688 and *Frederick* his Son succeeded.

FREDERICK
King of
PRUSSIA,
1688.

This Prince entered into the Alliance against *France* in the Year 1689; and the Troops he furnished were of great Service in *Italy*, *Germany* and the *Netherlands*. The Shelter he gave to the *French Refugees* served greatly to augment his Forces; and helped a good deal to the Establishment of Arts and Sciences of which he was a great Promoter in his Dominions. In the Year 1701 he went with his Son into *Prussia*; and laying aside the Title of Duke was crowned King of *Prussia*.

Being

Being immediately acknowledged by the Emperor *He joins in a* and his Allies as King *Frederick* in Return came hear- *War against* tily into the War which arose on account of the *Spanish* FRANCE, Succession; and his Troops had a considerable Share in 1701. the principal Events thereof. The Court of *Warsaw* made a great Difficulty of doing it; but on *Frederick's* declaring that the Right of *Poland* to *Prussia*, in Case the Electoral Family of *Brandenburg* should become extinct, would not be in the least affected by his taking the Title of King thereof he was at length acknowledged as such by this Court.

Upon the Death of *William III.* of *England* *Frederick* *He claims the* laid Claim to the Dominions of the House of *Orange*: But *Succession of* his Right thereto was disputed by several Princes. Some ORANGE, Parts of these Dominions he took Possession of by Force; 1702. the Right of some Claimants he purchased: And that of others was left to a future Discussion. The Pretensions of the House of *Brandenburg* to this Succession were founded upon the Marriage of *Louisa Henrietta* Daughter to *Henry Frederick* Prince of *Orange* to the late Elector: But it should be observed that this Elector left no Children by this Princess, *Frederick* being by a second Wife.

As the great Pains *Frederick* took to bring about a *Treaty of* Peace betwixt all the Powers at War were ineffectual UTRECHT. he had agreed upon Terms for a Treaty betwixt himself and *France*; which was signed at *Utrecht* on the same Day that Treaties were signed by others of the Allies: But his Death in the preceding *February* robbed him of the Satisfaction of seeing the finishing Hand put thereto. The principal Articles of this Treaty were: That their most Christian and Catholick Majesties should acknowledge *Frederick* as King; and that *Spain* should cede to him the upper *Guelderland*, with this Condition that the Inhabitants should not be disturbed in the Exercise of the Catholick Religion. The County of *Kessel* with the Prefecture of *Kriekenbeck* were also to be ceded to him; and *France* agreed to acknowledge him as Sovereign of *Neufchattel*. *Frederick* on his Part ceded to *France* the Principality of *Orange* and *Chateau Beliard* in the *Franche Comté*: and took upon himself to satisfy the Demands of all Persons thereupon.

Frederick

FREDERICK
II. 1713.

The SWEDES
driven out
of POME-
RANIA.

Frederick William his Son and Successor after signing this Treaty endeavoured to restore Peace in the North, and with a View thereto Negotiations were entered into; but as *Charles XII.* of Sweden would listen to no Terms he joined his Troops to those of the *Allies* and the *Swedes* were driven quite out of *Pomerania*. Upon the Division of *Swedish Pomerania* afterwards made this Prince had for his Share the City of *Stetin*. From this Time *Frederick* lessened the Magnificence and Pomp which had prevailed at Court in his Father's Time; and applied the Savings that arose from thence to the augmenting of his Forces.

Conduct of
FREDERICK
with Regard
to PRUSSIA.

Frederick was moreover very intent upon the peopling of *Prussia*: Great part of which by its almost constant Wars, and by a Plague that carried off great Numbers in the Years 1709 and 1710, was become quite a Desert. His Father had done something toward this: But the Glory of bringing so good a Work to Perfection was reserved for this Prince. By giving great Encouragement to all Foreigners who would settle there many Families were induced to come out of *Suabia* and *Franconia*; and the Protestants of *Saltzburg* flocked thither in such Numbers that according to the best Calculation they amounted to 17000 Persons. Instead of drawing what Revenue he could out of *Prussia*, as some rapacious Monarchs would have done, *Frederick* like a true Father of his People spent about 6,000,000 Rixdollars of his own Money therein. These Methods succeeded so well that by the End of the Year 1719 fifty new Towns and four hundred Villages were built. Pleased thereat he from this Time to the Year 1735 never received a Farthing from *Prussia*: But in some Years sent thither out of his own Coffers 20,000 Rixdollars or more for the Encouragement of further Buildings. Notwithstanding this uncommon Liberality and his keeping up a vast Army *Frederick William*, who was in other Respects very frugal, at his Death in the Year 1740 left *Frederick* his Son and Successor in the Possession of full Coffers.

FREDERICK
III. 1740.

Upon the Death of the Emperor *Charles VI.* which happened soon after his Accession this Prince resolved to
assert

assert his Right to Part of *Silesia*: Of which his Ancestors had been deprived by the House of *Austria*. Upon his entering this Dutchy he declared himself ready to come to an Accommodation with the *Archdutchess*; but as the Court of *Vienna*, relying upon the Guaranty of the *Pragmatick Sanction* whereinto so many Powers had entered, would hear nothing of ceding any Part thereof Hostilities were commenced.

The Battle of *Molwitz* fought in April 1741, which was a very bloody one, compleated the Conquest of *Silesia*; and *Frederick* being victorious in another Battle fought near *Czaſlaw* in *Bohemia* the Queen of *Hungary*, who found herself attacked on all Sides, consented to give up to him by the Treaty of *Breslaw* concluded in May 1741 almost all *Silesia*.

1741.

The Dominions of the King of *Prussia* consist of the Marquisate of *Brandenburg*, the greater Part of *Pomerania*, the Dutchy of *Magdeburg*, the Principalities of *Minden* and *Halberstadt*, the Dutchy of *Cleves*, the Counties of *Mark*, *Ravensberg*, *Lingen*, *Neuschattel*, *Valengin* and *Tecklenburg*, and the Prefecture of *Quedlinberg*. *Cothus*, *Peskau* and some other Places in *Lower Saxony* belong also to him; and notwithstanding its being a free imperial Town he keeps a Garrison in *Nordhausen*. All these Dominions together with *Prussia* and great Part of *Silesia* make his *Prussian* Majesty very powerful; and if some of them did not lye at so great a Distance from the rest he would be much more so.

With regard to the Empire in General it concerns his *Prussian* Majesty as a Member thereof to consult the Interest and preserve the Constitution of the *Germanick* Body. As to the House of *Austria* in Particular it is for his Interest to guard against its becoming too powerful: For as the Cession of *Silesia* may be looked upon by this House as extorted by him it will undoubtedly, if it finds itself in a Condition so to do, be glad of an Opportunity to attempt the Recovery thereof.

Part of the *Prussian* Dominions border upon the United Provinces: But as the Troops of *Prussia*, which are looked upon to be the best in *Europe*, are much more numerous than those of *Holland* the is in no Danger from thence.

thence. Upon the whole, for the other Powers of *Europe* would be unwilling to see one of these Powers make Conquests upon the other, it is for the mutual Interest of *Prussia* and *Holland*, who are capable of giving great Assistance to each other, to be upon good Terms: And it should be always remembered that a War betwixt these two Powers may prove fatal to the *Protestant Religion*.

POLAND.

Prussia is from its Situation liable to be attacked by the *Poles*: Yet unless these should be assisted by some other Power they would in all Probability get nothing but Blows by attacking it. On the other Hand as the King of *Prussia* cannot pass by Land from *Brandenburg* into *Prussia* without crossing *Polish Prussia*, and as the *Poles* are capable of assisting him in Case of a War with *Russia* or the House of *Austria*, it will always be for his Interest to be in Amity with them.

RUSSIA.

The *Russians* could easily over-run *Prussia*; but whilst the Jealousy betwixt these and the *Swedes* subsists it is not likely that they should attack *Prussia*, except its Master should attempt to extend his Dominions on this Side: Which as there is no Probability of his succeeding it would, for *Prussia* itself would be thereby endangered, be Madness in him to think of.

SWEDEN.

The *Swedes* do without Doubt look with an evil Eye upon the Acquisitions of his *Prussian Majesty* in *Pomerania*; but he is so strong on this Side that they know it would be in vain for them to attempt the regaining of any Thing there. On the contrary it is for the Interest of his *Prussian Majesty* to be upon good Terms with the *Swedes*; because they can make a powerful Diversion in his Favour if he should be attacked by the *Russians*.

DENMARK.

His *Prussian Majesty* can scarce have any Reason to Quarrel with the King of *Denmark*. On the contrary as the latter is capable of being an useful Ally to him in case of a War with the *Swedes* the former ought to cultivate a good Understanding with him. It is moreover for the Interest of his *Prussian Majesty*, although the Trade of his Subjects on their own Bottoms is not very considerable, that the Passage of the *Sound* should continue as it is at present.

There

There seems to be but little Connexion of Interest GREAT- betwixt *Great-Britain* and *Prussia* except so far as Trade BRITAIN. is concerned: It however concerns his *Prussian* Majesty to be upon good Terms with the King of *Great-Britain*, because it is always in the Power of a *British* Fleet to annoy such Parts of his Dominions as are accessible by Sea.

It is for his *Prussian* Majesty's Interest to be in Amity FRANCE. with *France*, that he may in case of a Quarrel with the House of *Austria* have the Assistance of *France*: Yet it concerns him, so far at least as the Preservation of the Balance of Power may make it necessary, to guard against the too great Aggrandisement of the *French* King.

C H A P. XI.

Of P O L A N D.

POLAND anciently inhabited by the *Sarmatians* and afterwards by the *Sclavonians* took its Name from the Flatness of the Country, *Pole* in the Language of the Natives signifying a Plain. Some however are of Opinion that the Word *Polaki* means Descendants from *Lechus*. The Ancestors of the *Poles* dwelt formerly in *Tartary*; for when the *Germans* overran the *Roman Empire* the ancient Inhabitants of *Poland* took Possession of *Germany*; and so left Room for their Neighbours the *Tartars*, who laid the Foundation of a new State in *Poland* about the Year of CHRIST 550.

LECHUS,
550.

Lechus the Leader of these is said to have built the City of *Gnesna*, which Word signifies in the *Polish* Tongue a Nest, and to have made it the Place of his Residence; because having found an Eagle's Nest on the Spot where this City stands he took it for a good Omen. It is probable that he for the same Reason caused an Eagle to be born in the Arms of his new State.

POLAND

governed by a
Duke.

The first Governors of this new State, which comprehended no more than what goes by the Name of greater and lesser *Poland*, did not take upon themselves the Title of King but had that of Duke.

Afterwards by
WAYWODES.

In Process of Time upon the Extinction of the Family of *Lechus*, of the Duration or Achievements of which we have no clear Account, the *Poles* were governed by twelve Persons called *Waywodes*; but this Form of Government being on account of the Divisions it was liable to found inconvenient the Sovereignty of *Poland* was about the Year 700 conferred upon a Person named *Cracus*, who took upon himself the Title of Prince.

Cracus after rectifying many Disorders of the State built CRACUS,
a City which was called after him *Cracaw*, and made it 700.
the Place of his Residence.

He was assassinated by *Lechus* his youngest Son; but LECHUS II.
the Parricide being discovered *Lechus* who had usurped
the Sovereignty was deposed and banished.

To him succeeded in the Year 750 *Venda* his Sister. VENDA, 750.
This Princess after vanquishing *Ritiger* a German Prince,
who had made her an Offer of Marriage, out of a blind
Superstition drowned herself in the *Vistula*.

Upon her Death twelve *Waywodes* or *Palatines* again LESCUS I.
took upon themselves the Administration of Affairs:
But not long after a Goldsmith named *Premislaus* was
in Return for his important Services against the *Mora-*
vians, who had made an Irruption into *Poland*, elected
Prince, and took upon himself the Name of *Lescus*. At
his Death in the Year 776 without Issue it was re-
solved that the Person who should win in a Horse-race
to be run should succeed.

In order to gain his Point one of the Candidates LESCUS II.
strewed Iron Hooks upon the Course, by which Means 776.
the Horses of the others were lamed and he came in first;
but this Trick being discovered he was beheaded upon
the Field, and a certain Peasant named *Lescus* who had
run the Race on Foot and came in next to this Cheat
was declared Prince of the *Poles*. This Prince was ac-
cording to most Historians slain about the Year 804 in
a Battle fought with *Charlemain*.

Lescus his Son and Successor accommodated Matters LESCUS III.
with *Charlemain*. 804.

The next Successor was *Popiel* the Son of *Lescus* III. POPIEL I.

This Prince was succeeded by *Popiel* his Son, who at POPIEL II.
the Instigation of his Wife caused all his paternal Uncles
to be assassinated and would not suffer them to be buried:
But this Act of Cruelty was signally punished; for if
Report says true there came from the dead Bodies Mice
which devoured him and his Wife and Children.

During the Interregnum which followed upon this re- PIASTUS,
markable Instance of *Divine Vengeance* the Nation was 830.
thrown into great Confusion: But at length in the Year
830 a Peasant named *Piaustus*, from whose Name the

Poles have since called every Prince who has been elected from among the Natives a *Piaſt*, was fixed upon. The Descendants of this Prince who lived to the Age of 120 Years enjoyed the Sovereignty many Years; and from him ſprung the Families of the Dukes of *Lignitz* and *Brieg* in *Sileſia* which but lately became extinct.

ZIEMOVITUS 905. *Ziemovitus* Son of *Piaſtus* who began to reign in the Year 905 was ſucceeded by his Son *Lescus*.

LESCUS IV. To him who died in the Year 921 ſucceeded *Ziemomiflus* his Son.

ZIEMOMIS- *Miciſlaus* the only Son of this Prince, who was born
LUS, 921. blind, being about the Age of ſeven Years all at once reſtored to his Sight, it was looked upon as an Omen that the Darkneſs of the Heathen Superſtition would be diſpelled by the Light of the Goſpel.

MICISLAUS I. The Conjecture was not vain; for *Miciſlaus* having
962. after his Acceſſion in the Year 962 married ſeveral Wives by whom he had no Children, he was perſuaded by ſome *Germans* that if he would embrace Chriſtianity he would certainly beget Children.

Introduction of Being hereupon baptized *Miciſlaus* introduced the
Chriſtianity Chriſtian Religion into *Poland*, and alſo the Cuſtom that
into POLAND. when in ſaying Maſs the Goſpel is read the Men draw
999. their Scimitars half Way, in order to ſhew their Readineſs to fight in Defence thereof.

BOLESLAUS I. *Boleſlaus Chrobry* Son of *Miciſlaus*, who ſucceeded in the Year 999, was honoured by the Emperor *Otho III.* with the Title of King; and this Emperor likewise gave up all his Pretenſions to *Poland*, as an Acknowledgement for the civil Treatment he received from *Boleſlaus* when he viſited purſuant to a Vow made in a Fit of Sickneſs the Tomb of *Aldebert* Biſhop of *Gneſna*. *Boleſlaus* afterwards gained great Reputation and made vaſt Conqueſts in the Wars he waged againſt *Ruſſia*, *Bohemia*, *Pruſſia* and *Saxony*. Before his Death in the Year 1025 he inſtituted a Council of twelve to aſſiſt in the Affairs of Government.

MICISLAUS *Miciſlaus* his Son and Succeſſor loſt the greateſt Part
II. 1025. of what his Father had conquered; and amongſt the reſt *Moravia* which was taken from him by the *Bohemians*. He died in the Year 1034.

As *Casimir* Son and Successor of *Micislaus* was quite young his Mother *Rixa* had for some time the Administration of Affairs; but finding that the *Poles* were quite dissatisfied with her Conduct she fled with her Son, and he went into a Monastery in *France*. CASIMIR, 1034.

The Confusion which followed amongst other ill Consequences gave *Maslas* an Opportunity of obtaining the Sovereignty of the Province of *M. sovja*; and it continued for many Years independent of the *Polish* Crown. The *Poles* afterwards invited *Casimir* to the Throne; and in order to obtain a Discharge from his Monastick Vow of the Pope they all except the Nobility and Clergy promised to pay annually a Penny each towards the Maintaining of a perpetual Lamp in St. *Peter's* at *Rome*, and to have their Heads shaved like Monks. *Casimir* after taking upon himself the Government defeated *Maslas*; and in some Measure restored the publick Tranquillity. He goes into a Monastery but is invited from thence by the POLES.

Boleslaus his Son surnamed the *Hardy*, who succeeded in the Year 1058, was in the Beginning of his Reign successful against the *Bohemians*, *Prussians* and *Russians*; but abandoning himself to Voluptuousness and Debauchery he was after being in vain admonished excommunicated by *Stanislaus* Bishop of *Cracaw*. Enraged hereat *Boleslaus* caused this Prelate to be beheaded at the Altar; but it cost him dear: For being excommunicated by the Pope he finding himself universally hated fled in the Year 1082 out of the Kingdom, and as it is said killed himself with his own Hands. BOLESLAUS II.

His Brother and Successor *Uladislaus* for fear of obliging the Pope, who had forbid him to do this, did not take the Title of King. His Reign was full of domestick as well as foreign Troubles; but he happily surmounted them all. He died in the Year 1103. ULADISLAUS I. 1082.

Boleslaus his Son and Successor was a brave Prince and understood the Art of War well. He defeated the Emperor *Henry V.* with great Loss near *Hunsfeldt*, and of the 47 pitched Battles he fought lost only the last which was against the *Russians*. His ill Success in this being owing to the Cowardice of the *Waywode* of *Cracaw* *Boleslaus* sent this *Waywode* a Hare-skin and a Distaff: BOLESLAUS III. 1103.

Which so mortified him that he hanged himself. *Boleslaus* who never outgrew the Uneasiness this Defeat gave him died in the Year 1139; and the Kingdom was pursuant to his Will divided betwixt his four Sons.

ULADISLAUS II. 1139. As a Foundation was hereby laid for Jealousies *Uladislaus* the eldest, who was chosen Prince, endeavoured to rob his Brothers of their Shares; but instead of being able to do this he lost what belonged to himself and was driven out of *Poland*.

BOLESLAUS IV. 1146. Upon this, which happened in the Year 1146, *Boleslaus* his Brother surnamed the *Curled* was chosen Prince of *Poland*. He had a long War with the Emperors *Conrade III.* and *Frederick I.* who both attempted to restore *Uladislaus*. For the Sake of Peace it was at last agreed that *Boleslaus* should keep *Poland*, but that *Silesia* should belong to *Uladislaus*. This Province was in Process of Time divided into several Dutchies, and became in the End subject to *Bohemia*. *Boleslaus* was afterwards, his Army having been by the Treachery of a Guide led into a Bog, routed with great Loss by the *Prussians*.

MICISLAUS, III. 1174. At the Death of *Boleslaus* in the Year 1174 *Micislaus* his Brother, surnamed on the Account of his great Age the *Old*, succeeded: But he rendered himself so odious by his ill Conduct that he was deposed in the fourth Year of his Reign; and *Casimir* his Brother was fixed upon for Prince.

CASIMIR II. 1178. *Casimir* is remarkable for having subdued *Prussia* and made it tributary. He died in the Year 1194.

LESCUS V. 1194. The Right of *Lescus* Son of *Casimir* was disputed by the deposed *Micislaus* until the Death of the latter in the Year 1213. Nay this Dispute was continued for some Time after by *Uladislaus* Son of *Micislaus*: But he was in the End forced to leave *Lescus* in Possession of *Poland*. In his Time the *Tartars*, who afterwards committed great Ravages in *Poland*, made their first Inroad into *Russia*. *Lescus* had also a War with *Suente-polk* Governor of *Pomerania* who took up Arms against him: Which ended in the Loss of this Province. In this Reign likewise *Conrade* Brother of *Lescus*, to whom the Provinces of *Masovia* and *Cujavia* were subject, finding himself unable to make Head against the *Prussians* called

called to his Assistance the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*, who had been lately driven by the *Saracens* out of *Syria*. In order to obtain their Assistance he ceded *Culm* to these Knights; and it was also agreed that they should have half the Conquests made in *Prussia*. Hereby a Foundation was laid for the Wars which afterwards arose betwixt the *Teutonic Order* and the *Poles*. *Lescus* died in the Year 1226; and his Son *Boleslaus* surnamed the *Chast* succeeded.

In his Time the *Tartars* after committing great Ravages in *Poland* made an Inroad into *Silesia*; and in a Battle fought near *Lignitz* slew so many of the Inhabitants that nine large Sacks would scarce hold the Ears cut from the dead Bodies. The Reign of *Boleslaus* was moreover disturbed by domestick Broils.

Lescus his Cousin, who succeeded in the Year 1279, was likewise greatly disturbed by domestick Broils, and also by the Incursions of the *Tartars*; but he was very fortunate in his Wars with *Russia* and *Lithuania*, and entirely got the better of the *Jazygians* who inhabited *Podolia*. He died in the Year 1289.

Great Contests now arose concerning the Sovereignty: But at length *Premislaus* Lord of Great *Poland* succeeded thereto; and reassumed the Title of King which had been laid aside above two Hundred Years: Because the Pope had after the Excommunication of *Boleslaus* II. forbid it to all future Sovereigns of *Poland* to take the Title of King. After reigning seven Months *Premislaus* was assassinated by some *Brandenburghers* who had entered into a Conspiracy against him.

Uladislaus surnamed *Leiticus* his Successor was deposed in the Year 1300 for Male Administration, and the Crown of *Poland* was conferred upon *Wenceslaus* King of *Bohemia*; but at the Death of the latter in the Year 1309 *Uladislaus* remounted the Throne. He was afterwards engaged in a long War with the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*, whom he in the End vanquished entirely. Before his Death in the Year 1333 the *Silesian* Dukes, who had been many Years subject to *Poland*, submitted to *Bohemia*.

CASIMIR III. *Casimir* surnamed the *Great* Successor to *Uladislaus* subdued Part of *Russia* and incorporated it with *Poland*. He moreover introduced the Laws of *Magdeburg* into the Kingdom; and forced the Duke of *Masovia* to become his Vassal. He died in the Year 1370 without Issue. *Casimir* was the last Descendant in the Male Line from *Piaſtus*.

LEWIS, 1370. *Lewis* King of *Hungary* his Sister's Son was next raised to the Throne: but the *Poles* were greatly displeased at his manifest Partiality to the *Hungarians*.

ULADISLAUS IV. 1382. Upon his Death in the Year 1382 the *Poles* set his Son *Sigismund* aside, and some proposed a Marriage betwixt *Ziemovitus* Duke of *Masovia* and *Edwiga* Daughter of *Lewis* for whom the Crown was reserved; but she refused to marry this Prince. She was afterwards crowned; and on his promising to introduce Christianity into *Lithuania* and annex it to *Poland* was married to *Jagellon* Duke of *Lithuania*. Being baptized he took the Name of *Uladislaus*; but the Execution of the latter Promise was for a long Time deferred by the Kings of *Poland* under the Pretence that the *Lithuanians* did not like it: Although the Truth was that they did not care to part with their hereditary Right to this Dutchy.

He defeats the Knights of the Teutonic Order, 50,000 of them being left upon the Field, and he took from them several Places in *Prussia*.

ULADISLAUS V. 1434. At the Death of this Prince in the Year 1434 *Uladislaus* his Son, who was then King of *Hungary*, succeeded. The *Turks* whom he was at War with having been worsted by *John Hunniade* his General in *Moravia*, and again by himself on the Frontiers of *Macedonia*, a Truce for ten Years was agreed upon. He broke this at the Instigation of the Pope, who sent Cardinal *Julian* on Purpose to grant him a Dispensation for so doing: But it cost him dear; for he was in the Year 1445 entirely routed and lost his Life in the Battle of *Warna*, which besides the Disgrace that attended it was a fatal Stroke to the Christians.

CASIMIR IV. To *Casimir* Successor of *Uladislaus* great Part of *Prussia* weary of its Masters the Knights of the *Teutonic*

nick Order submitted; which gave occasion to a War *Part of* betwixt these Knights and the *Poles*. After this had *PRUSSIA* *an-* been carried on successfully for some Time it was *ended to Po-* agreed by a Treaty concluded under the Mediation of *LAND*. the Pope that the *Poles* should have *Pomerelle, Culm, Marienburg, Stum and Elbing*; and that for the rest of *Prussia* which the Knights were to keep their Grand Master should do Homage to the *Polish Crown*. About the same Time the Prince of *Walachia* offered voluntarily to do Homage to the Crown of *Poland*; and in this Reign the Nobility first began to send Deputies or *Nuncios* to the Diet. *Casimir* died in the Year 1492 and *John Albert* his Son succeeded.

This Prince was entirely routed by the *Turks* with *JOHN I.* whom the *Walachians* had joined in *Walachia*, and they 1492. followed him to *Poland*; but so many thousands of these were carried off by a severe Frost which came on all at once that they were glad to retire.

In the Reign of *Alexander* Brother of *John*, who suc- *ALEXANDER,* ceeded in the Year 1501 and died five Years after, no- 1501. thing remarkable happened.

Sigismund the next Successor was one of the most il- *SIGISMUND* lustrious Princes of his Time. He had vast Success in *I. 1506.* three Wars with the *Russians*: But these kept Possession of *Smolensko* which was treacherously delivered up to them. His long War with the Knights of the *Teutonic Order* ended in an Agreement that *Albert* Margrave of *Brandenburg* Grand Master of this Order should be hereditary Duke of the Eastern Part of *Prussia*: To be held however as a Fief of the *Polish Crown*. In his Reign moreover the Province of *Masovia* was reannexed to *Poland*; and he entirely suppressed the Rebellion in *Walachia*. He died in the Year 1548.

Sigismund Augustus his Son and Successor assisted the *SIGISMUND* *Livonians* against the *Russians* who had made them- *II. 1548.* selves Masters of *Dorpt* and other Places in *Livonia*. The Archbishop of *Riga* Grand Master of the *Teutonic Order* in *Livonia* terrified at the Progress of the *Russians* desired also his Protection; but *Sigismund* would *LIVONIA* not grant this unless he would submit to be a Vassal to *and Part of* *Poland*. This being consented to *Riga* and some Places *ESTHONIA* in *Esthonia* were put into the Hands of *Sigismund*; *annexed to* *who* *POLAND.*

who in Return made the Archbishop Duke of *Courland* and *Semigalia*. Hence arose a War betwixt *Russia* and *Poland*; in which the latter lost *Pleskow*. This Prince in whom the *Jagellonick* Line ended died without Issue.

HENRY,
1574.

After great Contests *Henry* Duke of *Anjou* Brother of *Charles IX.* of *France* was chosen King. *Henry* came into *Poland* and was crowned in the Year 1574; but being informed before he had reigned four Months of his Brother's Death he in the Night Time, lest the *Poles* should stop him, quitted the Kingdom in order to go and take Possession of the *French* Throne. The *Poles* provoked hereat to the last Degree proceeded immediately to a new Election. Many of them were for *Maximilian* Duke of *Austria*: But the Majority being for *Stephen Batori* Prince of *Transylvania* he made the best of his Way into *Poland*; and in order to secure himself upon the Throne married *Anne* Sister to *Sigismund II.*

STEPHEN
1575.
War with
MUSCOVY.

Having reduced *Dantzick* which held out for *Maximilian* *Stephen* declared War against the *Russians*, and took from them *Pleskow* and some other Places: But by a Peace afterwards made he upon Condition of their restoring some Places in *Livonia* gave up all he had taken in *Russia*. *Stephen* afterwards applied himself with great Diligence to the Improvement of the Constitution; and having augmented the Cavalry these were stationed upon the Frontiers to prevent the Inroads of the *Tartars*. By this Means a vast Tract of Land lying between the *Niefter* and *Boristenes*, before a wild and desert Country, was filled with Towns and People.

The Cossacks civil-
ized.

Stephen also civilized and disciplined the *Cossacks*, and made these who had been used to live by *Rapine* and *Plunder* such good Soldiers, that they have since not only been of great Service to the Kingdom against the *Tartars*, but have in all Times of War greatly annoyed the *Turks* by cruising in the *Black-Sea*. Nay they once went so far as to sack the Towns of *Trabisonde* and *Sinope*, and to plunder the Suburbs of *Constantinople* itself. This truly great King died in the Year 1586 whilst he was preparing for a War with the *Turks*.

Upon

Upon his Death the *Poles* chose *Sigismund* Son of SIGISMUND
John King of *Sweden* by *Catherine* Sister of *Sigismund* II. III. 1586.
 for their King. Some did indeed call in *Maximilian* of
Austria, and he attempted to possess himself of the Throne
 by Force: But being defeated he was made Prisoner;
 and for the Sake of his Liberty forced to renounce all
 Pretensions to the Crown.

Sigismund was after his Father's Death in the Year *War with*
 1592 crowned King of *Sweden*; but he was soon de-SWEDEN.
 posed by the States of *Sweden*, which occasioned a War
 betwixt the *Swedes* and *Poles*. At first *Charles* who was
 raised to the Throne of *Sweden* took some Towns in
Livonia; but these were retaken by the *Polish* General
Zamoski. Besides this *Charles* was entirely routed near
Riga in the Year 1605, and with great Difficulty escaped
 being made Prisoner: But the Divisions which arose in
Poland betwixt the King and the Nobility gave *Charles*
 Time to recover his Affairs.

About the same Time a Quarrel arose betwixt *Rus-* The POLES
sia and *Poland* on the following Occasion. There support the
 was a Person in *Poland* who called himself *Demetrius* Pretensions of
 Son of *John* *Basilowitz* Czar of *Russia*, and to have this DEMETRIUS
 Story gain Credit said, that whilst he was an Infant *Boris* to RUSSIA,
Gudenow would in order to pave the Way for his own 1605.
 succeeding to the Empire on the Death of *Theodore* eldest
 Son of *John* *Basilowitz* have killed him: But that ano-
 ther Infant was put into his Place and murdered in his
 Stead. Whether this Story was true or false some be-
 lieved it; and *George* *Mniszeek* Governor of *Sendomir*,
 whose Daughter *Demetrius* had promised to marry, raised
 in Conjunction with some other *Polish* Lords an Army,
 and went with him in the Year 1605 into *Russia*. *Boris*
Gudenow the Czar happening to die at this Juncture
 a great Number of *Russians* declared for *Demetrius*; and
 after defeating his Opposers he entered the City of *Mos-*
cow and was unanimously proclaimed. The *Russians* to
 whom he soon became odious began to suspect the Impo-
 sture: Yet they determined to conceal their Rage un-
 til the Arrival of his intended Bride in *Russia*. Mat-
 ters were in the mean Time so managed by the House of
Suski, descended by their Mother from the Royal Family
 of *Russia*, that 20,000 Men were ready to appear at any
 Time

Time in Arms. While the Nuptials were celebrating these forced their Way into the Castle; and having as it was said seized *Demetrius* murdered him and all the *Poles* they could lay Hands upon.

BASILIVS
SUSKI pro-
claimed Czar
of RUSSIA.

Basilus Suski was immediately proclaimed Czar and a Body said to be that of *Demetrius* was exposed in the Market-place: But this Body being so disfigured that no Person could know it a Report was given out that he had escaped; and a Person who took upon him to be *Demetrius* was acknowledged by the *Poles*, who were glad of a Handle to revenge the Death of their Countrymen. This new or old *Demetrius*, which ever he was, entered *Russia* in the Year 1608 with a large Army of *Poles* and *Cossacks*; and gained such Advantages over the *Russians* that *Basilus* was glad to set the Wife of *Demetrius* at Liberty, and to beg of *Sigismond* to recall the *Poles*. He refused to do this, and as the Woman set at Liberty acknowledged the present *Demetrius* for her Husband his Party increased greatly; and it would have been all over with *Basilus* if an Army of *Swedes* commanded by *Pontus de la Gardie* had not come to his Assistance.

SIGISMOND
attacks RUS-
SIA, 1611.

Thinking this a favourable Opportunity to make Conquests upon the *Russians*, or at least to recover *Smolensko*, *Sigismond* put himself at the Head of an Army; and in the Year 1611 after having besieged it near two Years took *Smolensko* by Storm. About this Time the *Poles* who had followed *Demetrius* had Orders to join *Sigismond*; for besides that he wanted their Assistance he began to apprehend ill Consequences from suffering so many of his Subjects to serve under a foreign Prince. As this gave *Basilus* Time to recover his Affairs he marched in Concert with the *Swedes* to the Relief of *Smolensko*; he had the Misfortune in a Battle which ensued to be entirely routed by the *Poles*.

Battle of
SMOLENSKO.

ULADISLAUS At length the *Russians* in order to avoid the Danger which threatned them resolved to depose *Basilus*, whose ill Success had estranged the Minds of the People, and to confer the Crown upon *Uladislaus* Son of *Sigismond*. Hereby they hoped effectually to ruin *Demetrius* and to stop the Progress of the *Poles*. As to the rest they imagined that when Things were once settled they could at any Time get rid of *Uladislaus*. It succeeded according

Son of SIGIS-
MOND pro-
claimed Czar
of RUSSIA.

to their Wish. *Demetrius* was quite deserted, and the *Russians* after delivering up *Basilus* to the *Poles* took an Oath of Allegiance to *Uladislaus*: But instead of repairing as it was expected he should to *Moscow* his Father *Sigismund* listened to the Advice of some about him; who insinuated that it was better and as Matters stood not difficult to conquer *Russia*, than for his Son to accept of the Crown as a Gift from the *Russians*.

This being perceived the *Russians* resolved to re-^{The RUSSIANS} renounce their Allegiance to *Uladislaus*; and they made ^{renounce their} the less Difficulty of so doing because *Demetrius* had ^{Uladislaus} Allegiance to in the mean Time been assassinated by the *Tartars* his Body Guards. The first Attempt of the *Russians* was to cut the Garrison of *Moscow* consisting of 7000 *Poles* to Pieces; but these defended themselves with uncommon Bravery and in Revenge set the whole City on Fire: By which as it did not contain less than 100,000 Houses great Numbers perished. Nevertheless as soon as the Consternation occasioned by this Fire was a little over the *Russians* laid Siege to the Castle: Wherein the Garrison had shut themselves up. Having for some Time in vain expected Relief from *Sigismund*, who instead of marching to *Moscow* which would in all likelihood have established his Affairs in *Russia* returned immediately after the taking of *Smolensko* into *Poland*, the Garrison a small Number being left for Guards made a Sally; and cut their Way through the *Russians*. *Sigismund* after this made one grand Push in *Russia*: But for want of a good Understanding amongst his Generals nothing was done; and the *Poles* left in the Citadel of *Moscow* were obliged to surrender for Want of Provisions. Besides this Loss of all in *Russia*, at which *Sigismund* was the more disturbed, because he hoped that the Conquest of *Russia* would have made that of *Sweden* easy, the *Poles* were about the same Time defeated with great Loss in *Moldavia*.

Another Attempt made in the Year 1615 by *Uladislaus* ^{RUSSIA,} Truce with upon *Russia* failing a Truce for fourteen Years was con- 1615. cluded; during which Time the *Poles* were to keep Possession of the Duchies of *Severia*, *Czernichow* and *Novogrod* which they had taken during this War. While these Things were doing in *Russia* *George Farenback*, Gover-

Governor of *Livonia* had delivered up several Towns to *Gustavus II.* of *Sweden*; but it looked as if he intended to betray this Prince: For being soon after reconciled to *Sigismund* he restored all these Places except *Pernau* to him.

War with the TURKS,
1620. In the Year 1620 the *Poles* were involved in a War with the *Turks*, which was stirred up by *Bethlem Gabor* Prince of *Transylvania* because *Sigismund* had joined with the Emperor against him. *Moldavia* whose Prince was in Alliance with *Poland* being hereupon invaded by the *Turks* the *Polish* General *Zolkieski* was sent to his Assistance: But having advanced too far his Army was as it was retiring totally routed and *Zolkieski* was himself slain in the Action. In the next Year the *Turks* who were coming with their whole Force against *Poland* were met by *Uladislaus* near *Chotzim*. The *Turkish* Emperor *Osman* attempted thrice to force the *Polish* Camp but his Troops were every Time repulsed with great Loss; yet as the *Turkish* Army was still greatly superior and the *Poles* began to want both Provisions and Ammunition *Sigismund* was glad to make Peace.

The POLES routed in MOLDAVIA.

Irruption of the SWEDES into LIVONIA,
1621.
1625.
1629. While the *Poles* were thus engaged with the *Turks* *Gustavus II.* of *Sweden* made an Irruption into *Livonia*; and in the Year 1621 made himself Master of *Riga*. In the Year 1625 *Gustavus* subdued the rest of this Province as far as *Duneberg*; and in the Year following a Descent was made by him upon *Prussia*. The War was continued by the *Swedes*; but nothing decisive happened till the Year 1629. In this Year the *Poles* were defeated by General *Wrangel* near *Gorzno*: But on the coming up of a Body of Imperial Troops to their Assistance they resolved to hazard another Battle. After this in which the *Swedes* although their King had like to have been made Prisoner were victorious the Affairs of *Poland* grew quite desperate. At last a Truce was concluded under the Mediation of *France* and *England*; but the *Poles* were forced to agree that *Gustavus* should keep *Elbing*, *Memel*, *Braunsberg* and *Pillau* together with all he had taken in *Livonia*. In the Year 1632 *Sigismund* died and *Uladislaus* his Son succeeded.

Battle of GORZNO.

Truce with SWEDEN.

ULADISLAUS VI. 1632. This Prince after defeating the *Russians* who had laid Siege to *Smolensko* reduced them to such Straits that they were

were forced to surrender Prisoners; and about the same *He is success-*
 Time the *Turks* who had entered *Poland* were vigorously *ful against the*
 repulsed. In the Year 1634 the *Russians* confirmed by *RUSSIANS*
 Treaty to *Uladislaus* the Cessions made by the Truce of *and TURKS.*
 the Year 1615: Which with his own valorous Conduct
 so dismayed the *Turks*, that they consented to give him
 Satisfaction for the Damages sustained from their Inroad,
 and the Bashaw who commanded therein was strangled.

In the Year 1635 the Truce with *Sweden* was re-*The Truce*
 newed for twenty-nine Years; but *Uladislaus* would not *with SWE-*
 renew this without the Restitution of all they had taken *DEN is re-*
 in *Prussia*: Which as their Affairs in *Germany* had after *newed, 1635.*
 the Battle of *Nordlinguen* taken an unlucky Turn they
 durst not refuse.

In the Year 1637 a War betwixt the *Poles* and *Cos-**War with the*
sacks which brought infinite Misfortunes upon *Poland* was *COSSACKS,*
 kindled in the following Manner. Some *Polish* Lords *1673.*
 not satisfied with acquiring great Estates in the *Ukraine*
 and hoping to increase their Power by oppressing the
Cossacks represented to the King, that it was necessary to
 keep these People whose great Privileges had drawn vast
 Numbers to them in Awe. It being hereupon resolved
 to build a Fort upon the Point of Land where the *Zwa-*
mer discharges itself into the *Boristenes* the *Cossacks* en-
 deavoured to obstruct the Building of this by Force: But
 being worsted they were obliged to deliver up their Ge-
 neral *Baulucki* with many others of their Chiefs; who
 were all contrary to the Promise made them beheaded.
 It was moreover resolved in the Diet to abolish the Li-
 berties of the *Cossacks*; to take from them *Techtimirow*
 their chief Fortrefs; and that a Militia upon a quite new
 Establishment should be kept up in the *Ukraine*. An
 Army was sent to carry these Resolutions into Execution,
 against which the *Cossacks* defended themselves with
 great Bravery; protesting however that they would con-
 tinue faithful to the Crown of *Poland* if their ancient
 Privileges were confirmed. Finding them desperate a Pro-
 mise was made that these should be confirmed: But instead
 of keeping this some of their Churches were taken from
 them; and which irritated them more than any thing
 their General *Schmielinski* could not obtain any Redress
 for the greatest Injury that a Man could receive. The
 King

King having given this General Leave to build some Mills a Gentleman named *Jarinski* took it in his Head to set these on Fire; and not content therewith he after ravishing his Wife caused both her and his Son to suffer cruel Deaths.

JOHN II.
1647.

Soon after the Accession of *John Casimir*, who in the Year 1647 about the Time this Outrage was committed succeeded *Uladislaus* his Brother, *Schmielinski* put himself at the Head of the *Cossacks*; and in Revenge committed every Kind of Violence upon the *Polish Nobility*.

The POLES are
twice routed
by the COS-
SACKS.

As the King, whose Answer to the Remonstrances of the Nobility was that they should have been wiser and not have connived at the Burning of his Mills, refused to take the Field against *Schmielinski* the Nobility set on Foot an Army of 50,000 Men: Which was defeated by the *Cossacks* and they moreover took *Kiow*. Exasperated at these Losses and the King's Lukewarmness the Nobility levied the seventh Man throughout the Nation; but they were a second Time defeated. Some time after as *Schmielinski* was celebrating the Nuptials of his Son with the Princess of *Walachia* at *Kiow* the *Poles* surprized this City, and carried off the Patriarch of *Greece* with them as a Prisoner. Deputies being hereupon sent to the King to ask if this was done by his Order, his Answer was *No*; but that the *Polish Nobility* had done it in Revenge for the Mischiefs done to them by the *Cossacks*. As the *Cossacks* not satisfied with this Answer joined with the *Tartars* in making an Irruption into *Poland* *John* at Length took the Field against and de-

An Accommo-
dation with
the COSSACKS

feated them. He soon after came to an Accommodation with them; with which the Nobility were quite dissatisfied, because the Terms thereof were as they said too advantageous to the *Cossacks*.

War with
RUSSIA.

While the Jealousy hereby occasioned continued the *Russians* came to a Rupture with the *Poles*; and being joined by many of the *Cossacks* they in the Year 1654 took *Smolensko*. This was followed with the taking of *Wilna* and other Places; and they committed most horrid Ravages in *Lithuania*.

The SWEDES
invade Po-
LAND, 1655.

In the next Year the *Poles* were unexpectedly attacked from another Quarter. *Charles X.* of Swe-

den entered the Kingdom with an Army of chosen Troops, and after over-running *Great and Little Poland* together with the Province of *Masovia* fell into *Prussia*. All the Towns in *Prussia* except *Dantzick* opened their Gates to him; and it was owing to the Exhortations of their Ministers, for he had a strong Party therein, that the People of this City did not do the same. The Resistance he met with here gave the *Poles* Time to get the better of the Consternation his rapid Progress had thrown them into; and being joined by the *Tartars* they every where fell upon the *Swedes*: Who being dispersed up and down could make but little Resistance. The *Lithuanians* also threw off the Allegiance they had been forced to swear to *Charles*; and cut in Pieces the *Swedish* Troops quartered amongst them. Besides these Misfortunes the *Swedish* Army suffered greatly in its March to *Jaroslau*; not only from the Length of the March but because the *Polish* General *Czarneski* constantly harrassed it with his Light Horse. In the mean Time the *Poles* had retaken *Warsaw*; and General *Wittenberg* with the rest of the *Swedish* Officers were contrary to the Articles of the Capitulation made Prisoners. Being joined by the Forces of *Brandenburg* *Charles* Battle of attacked the *Poles* and *Tartars* near *Warsaw*; and after *WARSAW*. a Battle which lasted three Days gained a compleat Victory over them.

This Success of the *Swedes* gave Umbrage to several *Several* Powers; and it being thought absolutely necessary to *Powers de-* cause a Diversion in Favour of the *Poles* *Livonia* was *clare against* invaded by the *Russians*. The *Hollanders* moreover *de-the SWEDES.* clared plainly that they would never suffer *Prussia* to be annexed to *Sweden*; and the *Danes* began to be in Motion.

Ragotzki Prince of *Transilvania* thinking this a fa-*The POLES* vourable Opportunity to make himself Master of the *recover their* Kingdom entered *Poland* with an Army: but it cost *Affairs.* him dear; for the King of *Sweden* being called home to defend his own Dominions against the *Danes* he was worsted by the *Poles*, and forced to consent to very dishonourable Terms of Peace. After this the *Poles* retook *Cracaw* and *Thorn*; and obliged the *Swedes* to evacuate

the Dutchy of *Courland*. Such a favourable and unlooked for Turn of Affairs, which was principally to be ascribed to the Stand made by the *Dantzickers*, encouraged the *Poles* to attempt the Siege of *Riga*: But the *Swedish* Governor General *Helmfield* defended this Place so bravely that after losing many Men before it they were forced to give it over.

Treaty of
OLIVA,
1660.

By the Treaty of *Oliva* concluded in the Year 1660 all in *Prussia* was restored to the *Poles*: They were however forced to quit all Pretensions to *Livonia*, and to cede *Smolensko*, *Kiow* and the Dutchy of *Severia* to the *Russians*. As the Nobility still refused to comply with the Demands of the *Cossacks* some of these put themselves under the Protection of *Russia*; and others which has been of great Prejudice to *Poland* in her Wars with the *Turks* under that of the *Sultan*. Finding he could not put an End to the Cabals and Factions with which the Kingdom continued to be rent in Pieces *John* in the Year 1670 resigned the Crown, and retired to the Abby of *St. Germain*s in *France* where he died a few Years after.

JOHN resigns
the Crown.

MICHAEL,
1670.

None of the Royal Family being now left many Foreigners offered themselves as Candidates for the Crown; but after great Contests the Election fell upon *Michael Wiefnowiski* a *Piaſt*. His Reign although of no long Duration was full of Troubles and Misfortunes. The

War with the
TURKS.

Turks after committing great Ravages in *Poland* did in the Year 1672 make themselves Masters of *Kaminieck* although it was looked upon to be impregnable; and the *Poles* were for the Sake of Peace forced to consent that this important Place, which has since served as a Key to *Poland*, should remain in their Hands, and also to pay an annual Tribute to the *Sultan*. *Michael* died in the Year 1673.

JOHN III.
1673.

Treaty with
the TURKS.

In the next Year *John Sobieski* General of the *Poles*, who had a little before attacked the *Turks* so opportunely and with such Vigour in their Camp that of 32,000 Men not 1500 escaped, was elected King. The War with the *Turks* was hereupon recommenced: But by a Treaty concluded in the Year 1676 the *Turks* who were to keep *Kaminieck* agreed to remit the Tribute.

This

John having afterwards at the Solicitation of the *Pope* He com-
 entered into a League against the *Turks* he marched in ^{mands against}
 the Year 1683 with 20,000 Men to the Relief of *Vien-* ^{the} *TURKS*,
na; and had a great Share in the Victory which obliged ^{1683.}
 the Infidels to give over the Siege of this Capital. The ^{Battle of Vi-}
 Loss of the *Turks* was so great that they thought proper ^{ENNA.}
 to retire into *Hungary* with the utmost Precipitation. ^{Battle of BAR-}
John came up with them near *Barcan*: But he had not ^{CAN.}
 the same Success there; for attacking them, that he
 might have all the Honour to himself, before the *Im-*
perialists under the Duke of *Lorrain* came up his Troops
 were routed, and he together with his Son were in great
 Danger of losing their Lives. A *Turk* had actually
 lifted up his Sabre against *John* and would undoubtedly
 have killed him if another Person had not slain the *Turk*
 in the very Instant: Nor could he being so fatigued as
 not to be able to sit his Horse have at last got off the
 Field, if the Grand Marshal and a Gentleman of *Li-*
thuania had not led him away by the Arms. He was
 not long without his Revenge: For upon the coming up
 of the *Imperialists* the *Turks* were, notwithstanding their
 being in high Spirits on the Account of this Victory,
 defeated and *Gran* was soon after taken. Towards the
 Close of this Campaign *John* had an Interview with the
 Emperor; in which he thought himself not treated with
 the Respect to which his Services to this Prince entitled
 him. Being disgusted thereat and at the Badness of the
 Winter-Quarters assigned his Troops *John* returned into
Poland.

The quitting of the Command of the Army by *John* was ^{He returns}
 a great Misfortune to the *Christians*; but he continued to ^{into} *POLAND*,
 cause a Diversion in their Favour, and flattered himself
 with the Hopes of making good the Losses *Poland* had
 sustained in the former War. With a View thereto he
 made several Campaigns in *Podolia* and *Moldavia*; but
 for want of being supported by the Senate with whom
 he had a Quarrel nothing considerable was done. Find-
 ing himself by Reason of his advanced Age and the vast
 Fatigues he had suffered in War grown quite infirm
John at Length resigned the Command of the Army to
 the Grand General *Jablonowski*; but the Repose he pro-
 mised himself was very short: For being seized with a

Kind of *Lethargy* he died in the Year 1696, which was the seventy-second Year of his Age and the twenty-second of his Reign.

Interregnum,
1696.

The provincial Assemblies forthwith held for appointing Nuncios to the preliminary Diet were very tumultuous; and it was insisted upon in many of these that the Queen Dowager a *French Lady* Daughter of the Cardinal *D'Arquien*, whose Intrigues for raising one of her Sons to the Throne had been long notorious, should together with her Sons be at a Distance from *Warsaw* till the Election was over. After long Contests in this Diet which were not likely to end one of the Nuncios left it; and entered his Protest against every Thing that should be done.

Confederacy
of the Nobility.

An End being thereby put to the preliminary Diet it was resolved in the Senate, and most of the Nuncios consented thereto, that a Confederacy of the Nobility for the Preservation of their Religion, Rights and Liberties, and for the Security of a free Election, should immediately be formed. The Time of Election was moreover fixed for the 15th of *May* 1697; and with a View to exclude the Sons of the late King it was after some Debate agreed, that such Persons as should propose the raising of a *Piast* to the Throne should be looked upon as

Confederacy of
the Army.

Enemies to their Country. While the Nobility were busied in raising Money to satisfy the Demands of the Army, which had also entered into a Confederacy and for want of being paid its Arrears threatned to march into the Heart of the Kingdom and live at free Quarters, the Deputy Marshal of *Lithuania* had raised some Troops in this Dutchy and committed Ravages upon the Lands of the Grand Marshal. The latter immediately assembled all the Forces he could in order to revenge this Insult; and the King of *Sweden* and Margrave of *Brandenburg* offered him a Body of Troops.

The TARTARS
invade
POLAND.

In the mean Time the *Tartars* had invaded the Kingdom and advanced as far as *Leopol*, where some considerable Skirmishes happened with the Confederate Army: But as the latter declined coming to a general Battle, the *Tartars* overran *Volhinia* and committed great Ravages. Instead of pursuing these the Confederate Army seemed wholly intent upon guarding against *Jablonowski*

blonowski Grand General of *Poland*; and exacted where-
ever it came heavy Contributions. Hereupon Prince
Sapieha raised ten thousand Men in *Lithuania*: And hav-
ing joined the Troops under *Jablonowski* the Confede-
rate Army on his Approach quitted its Camp near *Leo-
pol* and retired to *Bizeze*. The Prince followed them;
yet although it was worsted in one Action and in
Want of every Thing this Army refused to follow the
Example of the Army under the Deputy Marshal in *Li-
thuania* which had submitted, and would listen to no
Terms until its Arrears were paid.

This Situation of Things gave the Abbe de Po-^{*intrigues of the*}
lignac Minister of *France* a Handle to push the Inte-^{*Abbe de*}
rest of the Prince of *Conti* one of the Candidates for^{*POLIGNAC.*}
the Crown. This Abbe engaged on the Part of the King
his Master for six Millions to pay what was demanded by
the Confederate Army; and which he knew would have
great Weight with the *Poles* gave them to understand,
that if they would choose the Prince of *Conti France*
would soon put him into a Condition of recovering *Ka-
minieck* and all *Podolia* from the *Turks*.

The Demands of the Confederate Army being adjusted^{*The Confede-*}
by its Deputies and the Commissaries of the Republic it^{*rate Army*}
was expected that it would have separated; but instead^{*continued.*}
thereof an Express was sent to the Primate to acquaint
him, that as this Army had something further to propose
its disbanding must be deferred. It was now plainly seen
that the Heads thereof had no Mind to disband their
Troops until the Election was over; and it began to be
suspected that *James* elder Son of the late King, whose
Pretensions were backed by the *Czar* and who had not-
withstanding all the Intrigues of the *French* Minister a
strong Party in the Kingdom, encouraged this rebellious
Behaviour.

As the Time of Election drew near it was more and^{*The Queen*}
more insisted upon that the Queen should leave *War-*^{*compelled to*}
saw; for the Aversion of the People was encreased by^{*leave WAR-*}
her Attempts to exclude *James* and raise her younger Son^{*SAW.*}
Alexander, although he was not so old as the Constitution
required, to the Throne. Finding it must be so she set
out for *Dantzick* upon the 30th of *April*: But she did
not do this without the utmost Reluctance.

*A Double
Election.*

Prince *James* seemed at first to have good Interest in the Diet: It was however soon found that neither he, nor the Prince of *Neuburg*, nor the Prince of *Lorrain* stood any Chance; for the Majority was upon every Division for the Prince of *Conti*. This being perceived *Augustus* Elector of *Saxony*, to whose Valour or Merit there could be no Objection, was unexpectedly proposed. He was approved of by all the Opposers of the *French* Faction, who found that no other Candidate had Interest enough to thwart its Designs: Yet the Party of the Prince of *Conti* prevailed, because it was doubted by some if *Augustus* would embrace the Catholick Religion; and the former was proclaimed by the Primate who would not wait for the Arrival of the Pope's Nuncio. As the Pope's Nuncio came into the Diet a few Minutes after and assured the Members that *Augustus* had in the most solemn and publick Manner abjured *Lutheranism* he was likewise elected; and while the Grand Marshal went to enter a Protest against the former Election he was proclaimed by the Bishop of *Cujava*, who had all along been very zealous against the *French* Party. In order to prevent the ill Consequences of this double Election a Conference was held; but as the Persons appointed to manage for the Prince of *Conti* insisted upon the Validity of his Election and threatened to make it good by Force nothing could be agreed upon.

*The Primate
proposes a new
Election.*

It was afterwards proposed by the Primate, who saw the Nation upon the Brink of being involved in a Civil War, to proceed to a new Election. This Proposal being rejected by the Friends of *Augustus* the Primate summoned a Diet called a *Diet of Relation* to meet at *Warsaw* on the 26th of *August*. An Act of Association against *Augustus* was therein signed: But it was protested against by his Friends, who held a Meeting at the same Time in another Part of the Town.

*AUGUSTUS
enters Po-
LAND with an
Army.*

While these Things were doing *Augustus* who had entered the Kingdom with an Army of *Saxons* took Possession of *Cracaw*; and in Order to make sure of this City it being the Place of Coronation gave Orders for encreasing its Fortifications. On the 14th of *September* notwithstanding the Primate had secured his Body, hoping as all other Stratagems failed thereby to defer the Co-

rona-

ronation of *Augustus* until the Arrival of the Prince of *Conti*, the Obsequies of the late King were solemnized, as is the Custom the Day before the Coronation of a new King, in the same Manner as if his Body had been actually there. When the Person who at this Solemnity carried the late King's Sword was, which is Part of the Ceremony, about to break it *Augustus* prevented him; and at which all present were vastly pleased cried out with a loud Voice, *Don't break that Sword which has been so often drenched in Blood; for I intend to make Use of it in driving the Barbarians and other Enemies out of the Kingdom, and in maintaining its Liberty and Laws.*

His Coronation being the next Day celebrated amidst *Augustus* the utmost Acclamations of the People divers of the No-crowned, bility who had entered into the Association against *Au-* 1697. *gustus* submitted to him, and the Towns of *Dantzick*, *Thorn* and *Elbing* declared for him.

About this Time the Primate, who had retired with *Proceedings of* his Friends and some Troops from *Warsaw* to *Jarof-the Primate.* *law*, demanded in the Republick's Name the Protection of the Elector of *Brandenburg*; and as this would have had great Weight in *Poland* vast Pains were taken by the *French* Court to get the Pope's Approbation of the Prince of *Conti*'s Election. In order to procure this it was suggested to him, that as the Elector of *Saxony*'s Conversion was so sudden and upon the Prospect of a Crown the Sincerity thereof ought to be suspected, and that his Authority had been trampled upon in the Person of the Primate: But as it might have been dangerous to disgust the *Saxon* Party, which was vastly superior in the Kingdom, the Pope would not interfere.

Upon the 26th of *September* the Prince of *Conti* arrived *Arrival of the* in the Harbour of *Dantzick*; but not meeting with the *Prince of* Reception he expected from the Magistrates of this *CONTI.* City he continued some Weeks on Shipboard. The Primate his fast Friend with many others of the Association repaired upon the 21st of the next Month to the Field of Election, and after proclaiming him a second Time sent Deputies to settle with him the *Pacta Conventa*; yet his Party notwithstanding the large Sums of Money distributed among the Nobility did not much encrease. Al-

though the Prince never had any Opinion either of his Election or of this Voyage, which was undertaken merely out of Complaisance to the *French* Court, and could see plainly that he had been both deceived and betrayed; yet that he might not be reproached with having neglected any proper Step he sent circular Letters throughout the Kingdom. The Purport of these was to set forth the Nullity of his Rival's Election, and to acquaint the People that he was ready to sacrifice his Life and Fortune in the Defence of their Religion and Liberties.

Progress of
General
BRANDT in
PRUSSIA.

In the mean Time General *Brandt* was come with an Army of *Saxons* into *Prussia*; and finding the Prince's Troops unable to look him in the Face he resolved to make a bold Push. Having advanced as far as *Oliva* he surprized this Place, and made above 200 Persons Prisoners, amongst whom were forty Domesticks of the Prince. The Abbe *de Polignac* with great Difficulty escaped; and if the *Saxon* General had been only two Hours later the Prince himself, who was just about coming on Shore, would in all Probability have fallen into his Hands. Marching while the Consternation hereby occasioned lasted from *Oliva* to *Marienburg* *Dzialinski Kraizi* the Governor of this Place soon submitted to *Brandt*; and his Example was followed by the Palatines of *Saradia*, *Bielinski* and many others. The Loss of *Marienburg*, which was the only Place he could have landed any Troops at, and the seeing himself deserted by so many at once made the Prince give over all Hopes; but before his Departure he resolved to give the *Dantzickers* some Mark of his Resentment for having declared so early in Favour of his Rival.

DANTZICK
threatened by
the FRENCH
Minister.

With a View to this the *French* Ambassador declared to the Burgomaster of *Dantzick* that his Master had issued Orders for seizing all Ships belonging to this City, and threatned that it should be treated as *Genoa* had lately been. Far from being frightened at these Menaces it was immediately resolved in an extraordinary Council to seize all the Effects of any Subjects of *France* which should be found in *Dantzick*; and a Messenger was dispatched to the Court of *Denmark*, to beg that the *French* Squadron might not be suffered to carry through

through the *Sound* four *Dantzick* Vessels which it had taken.

Before the Prince sailed homewards he wrote two Letters: One to the Primate, the other to the *Repub-lick*. In both these he expressed in strong Terms his Concern to see *Poland* under Subjection to foreign Troops and its Religion in Danger; but in the latter he launched out against some of the Nobility, who by false Representations of Things and Protestations of Faithfulness, by which they meant nothing, had thus exposed him who never sought after being their King in the Face of all the World. In his Way home he was introduced by the *French* Ambassador at *Copenhagen* to the King of *Denmark*; yet the latter would not suffer the *French* Admiral to carry his four *Dantzick* Prizes through the *Sound*. *The Prince of Conti returns home.*

Upon the Departure of the Prince many of his Adherents swore Allegiance to *Augustus*; and at Length the Primate being thereto exhorted by the Pope, who had acknowledged *Augustus* for King of *Poland*, did the same: But his Conduct afterwards shewed plainly that he was not sincere in this. By Degrees all that had entered into the Association against *Augustus* were reconciled to him; and an End was put to the Differences which had arisen in *Lithuania* betwixt the Family of *Sapieha* and the rest of the Nobility. *The Primate and others acknowledge AUGUSTUS.*

In the Year 1700, while *Charles XII.* of *Sweden* was at War with *Denmark* concerning *Holstein*, *Livonia* was invaded by the *Poles*. The Pretence for this Invasion was, that *Augustus* had bound himself by an Oath to reunite all that had been taken from it and especially this Province to the *Polish* Crown. *Dunamunde* and some other Places were taken by the *Poles* without much Difficulty; but upon the Remonstrances of *England* and *Holland*, whose Merchants had valuable Effects in this Town, the Siege of *Riga* was given over. *Charles* of *Sweden* finding himself attacked on all Sides, for the *Russians* and *Danes* had also declared against him, clapped up a Peace with *Denmark*, that he might be able to act with greater Vigour against his other Enemies. *invades LIVONIA, 1700.*

1701. In August 1701 Charles having first defeated the Poles
Progress of the and Saxons, who attempted to obstruct his Passage, passed
 SWEDES. the Duna, and retook Kockenhausen and Koberſchanz. He next sent a strong Detachment into Courland, whose Duke was in Alliance with his Enemies; and before the End of the Campaign was again Master of Duna-munde. The Elector of Brandenburg having in the same Year taken the Title of King of Prussia it at first surprized the Republick; but as the Emperor and most of the European Powers had acknowledged him in that Quality she thought proper to do the same. When the Poles saw that the Swedish War was likely to turn out so very ill they cried out against the Advisers thereof; and the Powers which were at War with France endeavoured to bring about an Accommodation: But Charles who as he did not begin the War thought he might justly push the Advantage he had gained would listen to no Terms. Being advanced as far as Warsaw he had a Conference with the Primate; in which it is supposed that although the latter was sent by him to compromise Matters the dethroning of Augustus was resolved upon.

1702. In July 1702 the Poles and Saxons were defeated near
Battle of Klissow; but this Victory cost the Swedes dear, for the
 KLISSOW. Duke of Holstein-Gottorp fell in the Action. The Mediation of the Republick having been refused it was resolved in a Diet held at Sendomir to act vigorously in Favour of Augustus: But many Members of the Republick who met about the same Time at Warsaw came to a Resolution of sending Ambassadors once more to Charles. Towards the End of this Year a Confederacy was entered into in Great-Poland; wherein after declaring an Intention of continuing faithful to the King, and a great Desire of Peace, it was resolved that a general Diet should be held. As the Primate in his Letters for convoking a general Diet did not mention Augustus it was imputed to his Enmity to this Prince, who soon after summoned an Assembly of the States at Marienburg.

1703. In this which met early in the Year 1703 Augustus
Assembly of the took an Oath to observe the *Pacta Conventa*; and the
 States at MA- Persons of whom it was composed renewed their Oaths
 RIENBURG. of

of Allegiance, and confirmed all that had been resolved upon in the Diet of *Sendomir*. In the mean Time the Republick's Ambassadors had had an Audience of *Charles*: But his Answer was that she had put it out of her Power to be a Mediatrix by suffering her Troops to act against the *Swedes* in the Battle of *Kliffow*, and that he would not treat with her till she was quite independent of *Augustus*. Not long after the *Swedes* had *the Advantage* in an obstinate Battle fought near *Pultosck*. PULTOSCK. In *June* *Augustus* convoked a Diet at *Lublin* in which the Primate assisted; but the latter soon began again to tamper with *Charles*. It was herein resolved that if *Charles* continued obstinate the Republick should strengthen herself by new Alliances, and exert herself to the utmost in Support of *Augustus*. In *October* another Confederacy was entered into in *Great Poland*, which was thought by the Declarations of some of its Members to be in Favour of the King; but its real Design was quite contrary. During this Campaign the *Swedes* made themselves Masters of *Thorn* and *Elbing*, and at the End thereof they took Winter Quarters in *Prussia*: And besides all these Misfortunes *Poland* was disturbed by an Insurrection in the *Ukraine*.

In the next Spring the Primate with the Consent of the Confederates called a Diet at *Warsaw*. In this, to which 1704. the Ambassadors of *Sweden* were admitted, it was agreed The Crown declared vacant. to throw off all Allegiance to *Augustus*, because he had not as it was said observed the *Pacta Conventa*; and notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by the Pope's Nuncio the Throne was declared vacant. *Augustus* being informed thereof and that a new Election was resolved upon, and that one of the late King's Sons was intended for King, he seized Prince *James* and his Brother *Constantine* and they were both sent into *Saxony*.

It was said that the Primate had a Desire to raise STANISLAUS the Grand Marshal *Lubomirski* to the Throne; but as *Stanislaus Leczinski* was the greater Favourite of *Charles*, whom it was at this Time necessary to oblige, he was chosen upon the 12th of *July* and proclaimed by the Bishop of *Poznania*; for the Primate took Care to be absent. *Augustus* published a Manifesto in which this Election was

Battle of
PUNITZ.

was said to be *unjust, forced, and destructive to the Liberty and fundamental Laws of the Kingdom*; and marching with the utmost Diligence towards *Warsaw* he caused the Bishop of *Posnania* and the three *Swedish* Ministers who had assisted at the Diet of Election to be arrested: But upon the Approach of the *Swedes* his Troops retired towards *Silesia*. The *Swedes* came up with them on the Frontiers of this Province; and after defeating them in a Battle fought near *Punitz* drove them quite into *Saxony*. The *Pope* in very strong Terms exhorted the Bishops and Senators of the Kingdom not to rebel against their King at the Instigation of Hereticks, for so he called the *Swedes*, and summoned the Primate upon Pain of Excommunication to appear and answer for his Conduct at *Rome*: But instead of obeying this Summons he went to *Dantzick*, and published a Writing full of Invectives against *Augustus* in which he acknowledged *Stanislaus* for King.

STANISLAUS
crowned.

As this confused State of Things was likely to continue a Confederacy headed by *Potocki* was in the Year 1705 formed: Which without declaring at first for either King proposed as its main Design the Restoration of the publick Tranquillity. Finding however the Party of *Stanislaus* much the stronger it afterwards joined with this, and in a Council held at *Warsaw* it was thought proper he should be crowned: And notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by the Partizans of *Augustus* he was crowned upon the 4th of *October*. The *Pope* had forbidden all Bishops to be present at his Coronation; but this did not hinder the Archbishop of *Lemberg* from assisting thereat. In the next Month *Augustus* had an Interview and renewed his Alliance with the *Czar*. The Primate *Radzeowski*, who had the Mortification to see his Sentence of Excommunication publicly fixed up, died about this Time; whereupon *Augustus* promoted *Szembeck* Bishop of *Cujavia* to the Archbishoprick of *Gnesna*.

CHARLES de-
feats the SAX-
ONS.

On the other Hand *Stanislaus* did also enter into fresh Engagements with *Charles*; who had not long before defeated an Army of *Poles* and *Saxons* and taken *Patkul* their General Prisoner. This unhappy Gentleman, who must not be confounded with Count *Patkul* who was delivered

livered up to *Charles* by the Treaty of *Alt-Ranstadt*, being because he was born a Subject of *Sweden* sent to *Stockholm*, he was although he had spent most of his Life in foreign Service condemned and beheaded there for high Treason. Early in the following Year *Augustus* General PAT-
 set out with an Intent to join General *Schulemberg* KUL is be-
 who was bringing a large Reinforcement from *Saxony*; headed.
 but being informed in the Way that he was defeated 1706.
 with the Loss of 7000 Men by the *Swedish* General *Ren-* Defeat of
child Augustus marched to *Cracaw*, and shut himself SCHULEM-
 up there. About September *Charles*, who had all the BERG.
 Summer driven the *Russians* before him in *Volhinia*, left
 General *Mardefeldt* to command there and made a Dis- CHARLES pe-
 position for penetrating into *Saxony*. This being perceived netrates into
 by *Augustus*, who found that whilst he was contending SAXONY.
 for a foreign Crown his hereditary Dominions would in-
 evitably be ruined, he resolved to make Peace at any Rate.

A Negotiation being immediately entered into a Treaty of
 Treaty was signed at *Alt-Ranstadt* of which the princi-ALT-RAN-
 pal Conditions were: That *Augustus* should retain the STADT.
 Title of King, but that he should renounce that of King
 of *Poland* and acknowledge *Stanislaus*; and that Count
Patkul Minister from the Czar to *Augustus* of whom
Charles was determined to make an Example should be
 delivered up.

Not long after *Mardefeldt* who being ignorant of this AUGUSTUS
 Treaty had refused to listen to some Proposals from *Au-* retires into
gustus was defeated; and the latter in a Council held at SAXONY.
Cracaw forbade all his Subjects to assist the *Swedes*. This
 looked as if he did not intend to observe the Treaty
 with *Charles*; but his setting out soon after privately for
Saxony plainly shewed it to be done with no other View
 than to amuse the *Poles* until he could get out of the King-
 dom.

In the Beginning of the next Year *Stanislaus* was ac- 1707.
 knowledged by most of the Powers of *Europe*; and *Au-* STANISLAUS
gustus himself who was glad to deliver at any Rate his acknowledg-
 Subjects from the Oppressions of the *Swedes* wrote him ed by many
 a congratulatory Letter upon the Occasion. The Friends Powers.
 of *Augustus* being thus abandoned held an Assembly at
Lublin; in which for they were resolved not to acknow-
 ledge *Stanislaus* the Throne was declared vacant, and
 hav-

having entered into an Alliance with the *Czar* their Design was to proceed to a new Election: But the Return of *Charles* whose Army was both augmented and enriched during its stay in *Saxony* prevented it. By the End of the Year this victorious Prince had driven the *Russians* quite out of *Poland*; but as nothing less than ruining their Army would satisfy him he without considering the Consequences thereof resolved to penetrate into *Russia*.

KRASSAW A Body of Troops was left in *Poland* under Baron
left to assist *Krassaw* to assist *Stanislaus*: But nothing considerable
STANISLAUS. happened there in the Year 1708.

1709. Upon receiving Advice that the *Czar* had ruined beyond the Hopes of Recovery the Affairs of *Charles* his Enemy *Augustus* determined to attempt the regaining of a Throne, which the Necessity of the Times had forced him to quit. Having published a Manifesto in which he declared that his Ministers had exceeded their Commission; and that the *Swedes* themselves notwithstanding the hard Terms thereof to which he was forced to consent had first violated the Treaty; *Augustus* entered *Poland* with an Army early in the Year 1709. As his Friends were continually going over to *Augustus*, who had had an Interview with the *Czar* at *Thorn*, *Stanislaus* finding it impossible to maintain his Ground thought it the best Way to secure himself while this could be done by retiring with the *Swedish* General *Krassaw*.
1710. In the Year 1710 *Augustus* was congratulated by the Nobility and Senate upon his happy Return; and Measures were taken to prevent the Return of the *Swedes* who were in *Pomerania* into the Kingdom. A large Fine was moreover set upon the Town of *Dantzick* for its Partiality to *Stanislaus*; and the *Russians* took *Elbing* from the *Swedes*.

1711. On the Commencement of a War in the next Year
He has an In- betwixt the *Sultan* and the *Czar* the latter had an In-
terview with interview with *Augustus* at *Farislow*, and it was resolved
the *CZAR.* in a Diet that the Republick should take Part therein: But there was no need for the Republick to do this, for before the End of the Campaign a Treaty was concluded; of which one Article was that neither of the two Powers should meddle in the Affairs of *Poland*. As *Pomerania* was now become the Seat of the War
with

with Sweden some neighbouring German Powers proposed a Treaty of Neutrality for this Province. *Augustus* and his Allies consented thereto: but by their King's Obstinacy, who notwithstanding all he had suffered would not accept of this advantageous Offer, the *Swedes* lost in a short Time all that belonged to them in *Germany*.

In a Diet held at *Warsaw* in June 1712 the Acts of the Diet of *Sendomir* were confirmed; and all subsequent Acts and particularly the Election of *Stanislaus* were declared to be void. Some Things were moreover agreed upon for the Security of *Augustus*, and it was resolved to rid the Kingdom as soon as possible of the *Russians*; yet there was a restless Party who watched for an Opportunity of involving their already exhausted Country in new Troubles. A Conspiracy was next Year formed by one *Jablonowski*, whose Design was to make Way for the Return of *Stanislaus* by the Assassination of *Augustus*; and a large Body of *Turks* advanced at the solicitation as it is said of the King of *Sweden* to *Chitzim*, under the Pretence that some Fortifications had been there erected contrary to the Treaty of *Carlowitz*. By the Vigilance however of *Augustus* all the Schemes of his Enemies were frustrated; yet the Maintenance of the Troops which he thought it necessary to raise upon this Occasion furnished the Dissaffected with a Handle of Complaint. On his Return in July 1714 from *Saxony*, where he had been for six Months, he received *Kiowski* and *Schmiegoelowski* two of his most inveterate Enemies into Favour; and for the Sake of easing the People gave Orders for thirteen *Saxon* Regiments to quit the Kingdom.

The Nobility now desired *Augustus* to call a general Diet on Horseback: Which being refused, because he apprehended it might excite fresh Disturbances, divers of them did assemble of their own Accord in the Palatinate of *Cracaw* and *Sendomir*. He hereupon recalled Part of his *Saxon* Troops, and threatened that as this was done without the Authority of either himself, the Primate, or any College of the Senate lawfully convened, he would unless they dismounted and dispersed immediately treat them all as Rebels. After this a Confederacy was entered into by the Malecontents; but by the brave and

prudent Conduct of General *Flemming* the fatal Consequences which might naturally be expected therefrom were prevented.

Quarrel at
THORN
which cost ma-
ny Protestants
their Lives,
1724.

A Quarrel arising in the Year 1724 betwixt the Lads of the *Jesuits* College and the Townsmen of *Thorn* the latter in their Heat attacked the College, and after a Kind of Siege which lasted some Hours broke into the Church: From whence amongst other Images they carried one of the *Virgin Mary* which was burnt in Triumph. As the chief Magistrate instead of endeavouring to suppress the Riot had encouraged the Townsmen he was condemned by some Commissioners sent from *Poland* to enquire into it, and was afterwards beheaded. Many of the Ring-leaders were also executed; and it was resolved that for the future the Law by which Part of the Magistrates of this Town were to be *Catholicks* and Part *Protestants* should be carried strictly into Execution. It was moreover ordered that the *Bernardins* should be restored to a Convent now used as a *Protestant* School; and in order to justify this Step the Republick of *Poland* insisted, that these Monks had preserved a Right to this Convent by all along protesting against the Seising thereof by the Protestants. The Protestants answered that as the Government of the Town was in their Hands and they were in Possession of the Convent at the Signing of the Treaty of *Oliva* the making of any Alteration in these Matters would be an Infraction of this. The Kings of *Great-Britain*, *Sweden* and *Prussia*, and some other Powers did moreover interpose warmly in Favour of the *Protestants*; but as *Augustus* declared that he had no Hand in the Thing they did not choose to come to Extremities.

Dispute con-
cerning COUR-
LAND.

The *Poles* had about the same Time another Affair upon their Hands that gave them a good deal of Uneasiness, to understand which rightly it is necessary to look back. About the Year 1561 *Gothard Ketler* Grand Master of the *Teutonic* Order in *Livonia* was upon his renouncing the *Catholic* Religion made Duke of *Courland*, which was before Part of *Livonia*. He however did Homage for this Dutchy to *Poland*; and his Posterity enjoyed it as a Fief of the *Polish* Crown. In the Year 1719 the King of *Prussia* proposed to the King and Republick

publick of *Poland* the giving the eventual Investiture of this Dutchy, *Ferdinand* its present Master the last Duke of the House of *Ketler* being unlikely to have Children, to the Margrave of *Brandenburg-Swedt*, who was descended from a Branch of the House of *Ketler*; and in order to induce them to comply with this Proposal promised that he should discharge the Debts it was then liable to. The *Czar* whose Niece was Dutcheſs Dowager of *Frederick* Predeceſſor of *Ferdinand* liked this Proposal, becauſe his Niece had a large Demand upon *Courland*: But the *Poles* were deſirous of having it annexed to *Poland*. As the States of *Courland* extremely anxious to preſerve their Independency would hear nothing of this it was propoſed, that Count *Maurice* of *Saxe* a Natural Son of the King of *Poland* ſhould marry the Dutcheſs Dowager and ſucceed upon the Death of *Ferdinand*. *Ferdinand* who reſided at *Dantzick*, becauſe the *Czar* being reſolved to keep his Niece in Poſſeſſion of *Courland* until her Demand was ſatiſfied he was not able to aſſert his Right, proteſted againſt the Letters iſſued in his Name for calling a Diet; yet the States met and Count *Maurice* was in the Year 1725 choſen for his Succeſſor. After all this the *Poles*, who began to ſuſpect he had a Deſign of ſecuring the *Polish* Crown for his Son the Electoral Prince of *Saxony*, forced *Auguſtus* to ſet aſide this Election in Favour of *Maurice*, and they would not be ſatiſfied until he had quitted *Courland*.

The Diet called in the Year 1728 did not meet be-^{Several Diets} cauſe of the King's Illneſs; and in that which met in the ^{are held but} next Year the Diſputes ran ſo high that no Buſineſs could ^{nothing is re-} be done. After the Departure of *Auguſtus*, who here-^{ſolved upon.} fore ſo-
upon left the Kingdom abruptly, the *Lithuanians* proteſted againſt every Thing which might at any Time be done contrary to the Right of Election and the other Priviledges of the Republick; againſt the Incorporation that had been made of the *Saxon* Troops with thoſe of the Crown; againſt the King's going out of the Kingdom without the Leave of the Senate; and againſt the conferring of Offices upon Foreigners. As the Diet called in the Year 1730 broke up alſo without coming to any
Reſo-

Resolutions *Augustus* summoned an extraordinary one to meet in *September* 1732; but the Divisions were as great in this as in the other two. He hereupon ordered another extraordinary one to meet upon the 26th of the ensuing *January*: But his Death which happened a few Days after its meeting prevented his seeing what would have been the Result thereof.

Death of AUGUSTUS.

1733.
A Double Election.

As *Augustus* had been for some Time busy in paving the Way for his Son's Election, so on the other Hand the Primate and such as disliked this had taken their Measures to prevent it. The Emperor moreover disgusted with *Augustus*, because he had observed some Thing in Agitation betwixt him, *France* and *Bavaria*, which although nothing thereof transpired he apprehended would be prejudicial to the *Pragmatick Sanction*, did all he could to traverse his Designs; and he had no great Difficulty to prevail upon the Court of *Petersburg* to do the same. While the Nobility were entering into a Confederacy for securing the Freedom of Election the *French* Minister at *Warsaw* was very busy in forming a Party to raise *Stanislaus* to the Throne he had before sat upon. After his withdrawing from *Poland* *Charles XII.* finding the Restoration of this Prince impracticable, had given him for his Support the Revenue of the Dutchy of *Deux-Ponts*, which was the Patrimony of *Charles's* Ancestors before their Advancement to the *Swedish* Throne. As this Favour was discontinued by the Successor of *Charles* *Stanislaus* went into *France*, the usual Asylum of unfortunate Princes, and had some Years after the Happiness to see his only Daughter become Queen thereof. At the same Time, as the young Elector of *Saxony* had shewed a quite different Disposition from that of his Father with Regard to the Court of *Vienna*, the *Imperial* and *Russian* Ministers had Orders to push his Interest in *Poland*. The Consequence was a double Election; but as the Party of *Augustus* was backed by a *Russian* Army *Stanislaus* thought proper to go for Shelter to *Dantzick*. After staying there some Time in Expectation of powerful Succours from *France* he retired to *Königsberg* the Capital of *Prussia*; and the *Dantzickers* were forced to submit to *Augustus*.

Being

Being now Master of the whole Kingdom *Augustus* AUGUSTUS was forthwith acknowledged by most of the Powers II. 1733. of *Europe*; and upon the signing of the Preliminaries of *Vienna* betwixt *France* and the Emperor *Stanislaus* renounced all his Pretensions to the *Polish* Crown. *Augustus* would not enter into the War which soon after began betwixt the *Emperor* and the *Sultan*; and as he set out upon a Principle of being tender of the Rights and Privileges of the People, in which Kings will ever find their Account, his Reign has not hitherto been disturbed by any intestine Commotion.

The *Poles* must be considered as divided into Nobi-Manners of lity and Peasants: For the Inhabitants of the Towns in the *POLES*. *Poland* are but of small Account, the Mechanicks who reside there being for the most part Foreigners. As the Peasants moreover being little better than Slaves are quite rude and uncivilized, what we are going to say of the Manners of the *Poles* can only be applied to the Nobility. These are in the general of an honest, open Temper; and although they are proud and love a great deal of Respect they know how to be civil in their Turn. They affect a sort of Pomp in their Discourse, and will be magnificent in their Entertainments whether they can afford it or not. They keep a watchful Eye upon the Conduct of their King, and do not scruple whenever they apprehend any Design upon the Constitution to enter into Confederacies against him. This Jealousy of their Rights and Privileges in itself laudable lays them open to the Arts of designing Men, and sometimes hurries them into Conspiracies and Rebellions. They do not want Courage: But they cannot well bear the Fatigues and Hardships of War. The *Polish* Infantry is but indifferent; for the Spirits of the lower Sort of People are quite broke by their servile State, and the Nobility will serve no other Way than on Horseback. Hence it is that the *Poles* are forced to hire foreign Infantry, or to make use of the *Cossacks* an intrepid People.

The Soil of *Poland* is so fertile, it being equally good Soil and Com- for Tillage or Pasture, that the *Poles* export annually modities of large Quantities of Corn and supply *Germany* with Oxen. *POLAND*.

The Wool of *Poland* is pretty good and there are Plenty of Horses. *Lithuania* produces so much Honey, that

besides a vast deal which the Inhabitants use for Mead a large Quantity thereof is sent into foreign Countries. There are moreover exported from this Kingdom great Quantities of Wax, Linnen, Hemp, Flax, Pot-Ash, Salt and Wood; but the *Poles* are supplied by Foreigners with Woollen and Silken Goods, Tapestry, *Spanish* and *Hungarian* Wines, and all sorts of Spices. Upon the whole it is plain, that if the *Poles* were frugal and would apply themselves to the Encouragement of Manufactures the Balance of Trade would be greatly on their Side. This Kingdom which is of very large Extent is well peopled and full of Towns and Villages. It has been said that not less than 90,000 Towns and Villages belong to the King and the Nobility; 100,600 to the Bishops and Canons; and 60,550 to the Convents and other Ecclesiasticks. If this Calculation be true there are in the whole 251,150 Towns and Villages.

Its Strength.

The Strength of *Poland* consists chiefly in its Nobility, from which a Body of 150,000 or as some say of 200,000 Cavalry can be raised. This seems to be almost incredible except Servants are included; but it is certain that the Nobility are no where so numerous as in this Country. The *Poles* could likewise raise Money enough to support a large Body of Infantry; but the Misfortune is that the Nobility and Clergy, without whose Consent no Money can be raised, are quite averse except the Necessity be very urgent to the laying on of Taxes, and soon grow weary of paying them: For which Reason a War is seldom continued long with proper Vigour. Besides this whenever the Nobility are summoned to appear in the Field they come very slowly thereinto, and cannot well brook to be under Command. An Army composed of Nobility has moreover another Inconvenience; which is that wherever there are 10,000 fighting Men the Number of their Servants and Followers makes up at least four Times that Number: Which notwithstanding the Plentiffulness of the Country frequently causes a Scarcity of Provisions and Forage.

Of the Polish Constitution.

The *Poles* have a Head who bears the Title and lives in the Splendor of a King: But upon examining into the Matter it appears that he is no more than the Head of a Republick. The *Polish* Nobility, in whom alone the Right of choosing a King is vested, do

fre-

frequently give the Preference to a Person of the Blood Royal; but they never choose one until the Throne is vacant: Wisely judging that an Interregnum is the proper Time to rectify the Abuses of Government which may have crept in during a former Reign, and to guard against the Encroachments of a Successor upon their Liberties. During an Interregnum the Archbishop of *Gnesna* who is Primate is Regent; and to prevent Disorders Justice is administered with more Severity than at other Times. It has been for a long Time a Maxim with the *Poles* rather to choose for their King a foreign Prince than one of their own Nobility; because the former is supposed to be free from Partiality to any particular Family: But they are always averse to the choosing of a Prince of the House of *Austria*, lest they should share the same Fate as the *Hungarians* and *Bohemians* have done. The Election of *Sigismund* of *Sweden* was a very great Misfortune to *Poland*; and indeed the Situation of these two Kingdoms is such, and their Interest so jarring, that they can scarce be both happy under the same Prince. The King's Revenue which is very considerable arises from the Lands appropriated to the Crown; to which no Addition can be made by Purchase or otherwise. He has the Disposal of all vacant Benefices, Offices and Dignities; but he cannot keep any of these in his own Hands, or give them to his own Children or Foreigners, without the Consent of the Senate: Nor can he without such Consent impose a Tax, make a new Law, enter into a War or undertake any Matter of Consequence. The Diet of *Poland* is composed of Bishops and some Abbots; of Governors of Provinces called *Palatines* or *Waywodes*; of *Castellans* who are Governors of Castles; of the principal Officers of State; and of Nuncio's who are Deputies from the Nobility of the different Provinces. The Power of these Nuncio's is something like that of the *Roman* Tribunes, the Protest of one of them being sufficient to make void any Act of a Diet. As the Nuncio's speak with the utmost Freedom concerning the King or his Ministers Matters are sometimes debated with great Warmth; and the Caprice of one of them being sufficient to put a stop to the Proceedings thereof it frequently happens that a Diet breaks up without coming to any Re-

olution : For by the Constitution of the Kingdom which is seldom broke through, and when it is only for a few Days, no Diet can sit above six Weeks. The Administration of Justice, for the King has nothing to do therein except some Part of his Revenue be concerned, is according to a Regulation made in the Reign of *Stephen* in the Hands of a certain Number of the Nobility, who are changed every Year; from whom there is no Appeal except in some extraordinary Cases to the Diet. The *Poles* naturally fond of Liberty are great Lovers of and very jealous of any Change in this Form of Government; but it must be allowed to be a very improper one for any considerable Undertaking that requires Dispatch: Because the Forces of this great Kingdom cannot be exerted to Advantage if there happens to be a Difference betwixt the King and the Nobility. It cannot be denied that the Right of choosing a King brings much Money into *Poland*, since that Candidate is most likely to succeed who gives most amongst the leading Families; but if a proper Attention be had to the Civil Wars, Confederacies and Ravages of the opposite Parties, to which it is hereby exposed, it seems upon the whole to be a Misfortune to the Kingdom. It is moreover to be doubted whether the Power of the Nuncios be not too great; for it is scarce reasonable that it should be in the Power of a single Member, who may be indiscreet, capricious, obstinate or traitorous, to prevent such Resolutions in a Diet as are absolutely necessary for the Peace or Security of the State: Yet so long as the Maxim prevails, *That this Privilege of the Nuncio's is the very Soul of Polish Liberty*, it would be both impracticable and dangerous to attempt any Alteration therein.

Interest of
POLAND *with*
Regard to
RUSSIA.

As *Russia* is the most formidable Enemy of *Poland*, it being in the Power of the former whose Troops are better and more numerous to overrun the latter at any Time, it is of great Consequence for the *Poles* to avoid a War with the *Russians*. The good Understanding which has for some Time subsisted betwixt these two Nations may in a great Measure be ascribed to the Obligations laid both upon the late King and the present by the *Russians*; for the Restoration of the former and the raising of the latter to the Throne was principally owing to them.

It would be imprudent in the *Poles* who are not a *TURKY*. Match for them to attack the *Turks*. On the other Hand in Case these should attack the *Poles* the latter would undoubtedly be assisted by *Russia* and other *Christian* Powers. Upon the whole the *Poles* should if possible be upon such Terms with the *Turks* that these may in Case of a Quarrel with *Russia* cause a Diversion in their Favour.

The *German* Empire notwithstanding its Superiority is *GERMANY*. not to be feared by *Poland*; for it is not likely that *Russia* or even *Turky* would suffer this Empire to become Mistress of *Poland*. On the contrary it would be very imprudent for *Poland* to think of attacking the *German* Empire; and it is undoubtedly for the mutual Interest of *Germany* and *Poland* to be upon good Terms; for the former can assist the latter in Case of a War with *Turky*, *Russia* or *Prussia*; and the latter is capable of being a good Ally to the former against the *Turks*, or of being a dangerous Enemy in Case of its being at War with *France*. From the House of *Austria* singly *Poland* is in no Danger: Yet, besides that the *Poles* carry on a considerable Trade in Oxen, Salt and other Things therein, as the Dominions of the House of *Austria* border for a long Way together on *Poland* it is for her Interest, since this House may be a serviceable Friend or a mischievous Foe, to cultivate a good Understanding therewith.

The King of *Prussia* would find it difficult nor would *PRUSSIA*. other Powers and particularly *Russia* suffer him to make Conquests upon *Poland*. As moreover his Kingdom of *Prussia* is separated from the rest of his Dominions by *Polish Prussia* it is best for him to be in Amity with *Poland*. On the contrary while this Prince does not attack the *Poles* it would be imprudent in these to break with him; because by attempting to recover *Prussia*, which would not be easy for them to do, they would disoblige him who is able to assist them powerfully against either the *Germans*, *Russians* or *Turks*.

As the Provinces which used to be the Bones of *CON-SWEDEN*. tention betwixt them are now ceded to *Russia* the *Swedes* and *Poles* have nothing to quarrel about. On the contrary *Poland* ought to cultivate a good Understanding with *Sweden*; because the latter is able and the Hopes of repairing her Losses would make her ready to cause a

powerful Diversion in Favour of the former in the Case of a War with *Russia*.

DENMARK.

While the Differences betwixt *Poland* and *Sweden* subsisted it was of Consequence for the former to be in Alliance with *Denmark*. At present *Poland* has nothing to hope for or fear from this Kingdom, except it be her raising the Toll for passing the *Sound* which would be prejudicial to the Trade of *Dantzick*.

Other EURO-
PEAN Powers.

With the other *European Powers* *Poland* has little or no Connection further than Trade may be concerned. *France* has indeed for some Years been forming a Party in this Kingdom; but from what happened after the two last Elections it appears plainly that she is not capable of doing either much good or much hurt to the *Poles*.

C H A P. XII.

O F T H E

RUSSIAN EMPIRE.

THE Accounts of the Origin of the *Russian* Empire and of the Actions of its first Princes are very uncertain and confused; nor is it indeed to be expected that there should be any good Account of what has happened amongst a People who were till of late Years quite barbarous and illiterate. It is however pretty evident that this extensive Empire was at first composed of many petty States.

Upon the Marriage of *Wolodimir* a Prince of the *Rus*-CHRISTIAN-
sians with *Anne* Sister to *Basilius Porphyrogenetus* Empe-NITY planted,
ror of the *East*, which was celebrated about the Year 989, 989.
the Christian Religion was introduced into *Russia*.

George another Prince of the *Russians* being slain in RUSSIA sub-
Battle by *Baitus* King of the *Tartars* in the Year 1237 dued by the
the *Russians* fell under Subjection to the *Tartars*; and TARTARS,
continued in a State of Dependence upon these until the 1237.
Time of *John* Son of *Basilius* the Blind, who began to
reign in the Year 1450.

This Prince after throwing off the Yoke of the *Tar*-JOHN I. 1450.
tars subdued divers petty Princes and amongst others the *He subdues*
Duke of *Great-Novogrod*; from whom he as it is said many petty
took three Hundred Cart Loads of Gold and Silver. States.
Having by the Union of all their Dominions to his own
laid the Foundation of the present Empire he built
Iwanogrod near *Narva*.

Basilius V. his Son and Successor made himself Mas-BASILIVS V.
ter of *Pleskow* before a free Town, and took *Smolensko* from

the *Poles*: But being afterwards entirely routed by the *Casan Tartars* these plundered *Moscow*.

JOHN II.
1553.

At his Death in the Year 1553 *John Basilowitz* his Son a most cruel Prince succeeded. He subdued the Kingdoms of *Casan* and *Astracan Tartary* and annexed both these to *Russia*. Having afterwards used the *Livonians* and *Esthonians* very cruelly *Revel* in *Livonia* and all *Esthonia* submitted to the *Swedes*; and the rest of *Livonia* put itself under the Protection of the *Poles*. A War with *Poland* ensuing he was at first successful; but the *Poles* did in the End take *Pleskow* and several other Places from him.

THEODORE
I. 1584.

From *Theodore* the Son of *John* quite a weak Prince, who succeeded in the Year 1584, the *Swedes* took a good deal of the Province of *Ingria*.

BORIS.

As *Theodore* died without Issue *Boris Gudnow* his Brother-in-Law was raised to the Throne; But it cost him dear; for his Right thereto was disputed by the Impostor *Demetrius*, and he died overwhelmed with Misfortunes in the Year 1605.

THEODORE
II. 1605.

Theodore Borislowitz his Son was hereupon proclaimed *Czar*. He enjoyed this Dignity however but a short Time; for as the Majority of the People adhered to *Demetrius* he was about six Months after made Prisoner and assassinated; and *Basilius Sufki* was advanced to the Throne.

BASILIIUS
VI. 1605.

For the Sake of obtaining Assistance from the *Swedes* against *Demetrius*, who being backed by the *Poles* was too strong for *Basilius*, he promised to give up *Kexholm* to the *Swedes*; but when his own Turn was served he refused to make this Promise good. Hereupon the *Swedish* General *Pontus de la Gardie* seized this Place: And having afterwards made himself Master of *Carelia* and of all that remained to the *Russians* of *Ingria* both these Provinces were annexed to the Crown of *Sweden*. *Basilius* being grown quite contemptible by his ill Success both against the *Swedes* and *Poles* he was in the Year 1610 delivered into the Hands of the latter; and in order to avert the Danger which threatned them from the *Poles* the *Russians* conferred the Crown upon *Uladislaus* Son of *Sigismond II.* of *Poland*.

As

As this was however done only to gain Time the *Rus-Uladi-*
fians soon revolted, and falling upon the *Polish Gar-SLAUS*, 1616.
 rison in *Moscow* which consisted of 7000 Men would
 have put the whole thereof to the Sword, if the *Poles* had
 not after defending themselves bravely retired into the
 Citadel. In Revenge the *Poles* set Fire to the Town
 in many Places; by which a vast Number of Persons lost
 their Lives. The *Poles* being afterwards closely besieged
 by the *Russians* a Resolution was taken, as Provisions be-
 gan to fail and they saw no Hope of being relieved by
Sigismond their King, of cutting their Way through the
 Army of the Besiegers. This was effected without
 much Loss: But the Citadel of *Moscow* soon after fell
 into the Hands of the *Russians*, and in the Year 1613
Michael Foederowitz Son of *Theodore Mikitowitz* by a
 Daughter of *John Basilowitz* was proclaimed.

Two Years after an Attempt was made by the *Poles* MICHAEL,
 to reestablish *Uladi-slaus* upon the *Russian* Throne: But 1613.
 this was frustrated by the Prudence of *Michael*, and
 having afterwards accommodated Matters with *Sweden*
 he put the Affairs of *Russia* upon a very good Footing.

Alexis Michaelowitz Son and Successor of *Michael* at-ALEXIS.
 tacked the *Poles* in the Year 1645; and after taking
 from them *Smolensko* and *Kiow* committed most horrid
 Ravages in *Lithuania*. Having in the Year 1656 in-He invades
 vaded *Livonia* Alexis made himself Master of *Derpt*, Ko-LIVONIA.
kenhausen and some other Places: But he was repulsed with
 considerable Loss from before *Riga*; and by a Treaty
 concluded afterwards with *Sweden* he restored all he
 had taken in this Province.

Alexis was much disturbed about the Year 1669 by *Rebellion in*
Stephen Ratzin, who had made himself Master of *Casan* CASAN and
 and *Astracan*; but having taken *Stephen* Prisoner and ASTRACAN,
 punished him according to his Deserts the rest of his re- 1669.
 bellious Subjects were soon brought back to their Duty.
 The Submission of many of the *Cossacks* to this Prince
 gave Occasion to a War with the *Turks*; in which he
 gained no Advantage.

Upon the Death of *Alexis* in the Year 1675 *Theodore* THEODORE
 his Son who was quite young succeeded. During this III. 1675.
 Reign which lasted only seven Years nothing remark-
 able happened.

Peter

JOHN III. and *Peter* younger Brother to *Theodore* was now raised
PETER I. to the Throne, his other Brother *John* being by Reason
 1682. of his Defects both in Mind and Body judged incapable of governing. As *Peter* was by a second Wife *Sophia* Sister of *John* by the same Mother out of Regard for him, or because she hoped if so weak a Prince could be placed upon the Throne to get the Management into her own Hands, opposed the Elevation of *Peter* with all her Might. An almost general Insurrection being stirred up by her it was to prevent Mischief agreed that *John* should reign jointly with his Brother, and that all publick Affairs should be administered in both their Names.

Plot for dethroning

PETER, 1668.

As this Regulation did not satisfy the ambitious *Sophia* she in the Year 1688 laid a Scheme in Concert with Prince *Gallizin*, to whom she was on the Point of marrying, for dethroning *Peter*. Every thing was disposed for carrying this Scheme into Execution; but it being discovered she was sent into a Convent where she died in the Year 1704, and the Prince being sent into *Siberia* he spent the Remainder of his Days there in a most miserable Condition. Hereupon *John* who had taken no Part in these Intrigues resigned his Share of the Government to *Peter*.

JOHN resigns his Share of the GOVERNMENT.

War with the TURKS.

Peter now sole Monarch acted vigorously against the *Turks*, against whom a War had been carried on for the Space of two Years with but indifferent Success. After taking *Asoph* and gaining divers other Advantages Proposals of Peace were made by the *Sultan*: And a Truce for two Years was concluded.

PETER visits the principal States of EUROPE,
 1697.

Having thus put a glorious End to the *Turkish* War *Peter* made a Triumphal Entry into *Moscow*; and not long after for the Sake of getting rid of that barbarous Ignorance in which his Ancestors had lived resolved to visit the principal States of *Europe*. Setting out *incognito* in the Year 1697 he made the Tour of *Holland* and *England*; and visited the Courts of *Dresden* and *Vienna*. In all the States he passed through he took Care to contract a personal Acquaintance with the respective Sovereigns and the principal Persons employed by them: But he conceived a more than ordinary Veneration

ration for the Emperor *Leopold*. *Peter* examined into many Things in every Country with great Diligence; but the Art of building Ships being the Thing he intended to make himself Master of he applied himself principally to this. After having although a powerful Monarch served as it were an Apprenticeship thereto he engaged some of the best Workmen in every Branch of it to go with him into *Russia*. Instead moreover of preventing his Subjects, as it had been a Maxim with the Predecessors of *Peter* to do, from going abroad he encouraged the Spirit of Travelling in young Gentlemen as much as possible, that having learned the Manners and Customs of polite Nations they might at their Return Home assist him in his Design of civilizing the *Russians*.

This Conduct for which he deserved their utmost Esteem drew upon *Peter* the Hatred of the Peasants, *Conspiracy* against him. who could not bear the Thought of any Change in what they had received from their Ancestors; and a Conspiracy was entered into for preventing his Return to his Dominions. An Aversion to him was at the same Time spirited up by the Princess *Sophia*: But as *Peter*, who in his Way home in *September* 1699 had an Interview with *Augustus* in *Poland*, arrived at *Moscow* before he was expected her Schemes were all frustrated. His Return was fatal to the Conspirators six Thousand of these being put to Death; and to put an End to all Hopes of her mounting the Throne he caused the Princess *Sophia* to be for the future more strictly guarded. The Truce with the *Turks* being expired it was renewed for thirty Years; and it was agreed that *Peter* should keep *Asoph*: But it was stipulated that his Subjects should not fail upon the *Black-Sea*.

Shortly after War was declared against *Sweden*; for *War with* which the Pretence was that the *Swedes* instead of *SWEDEN*, paying him due Honours when he passed by *Riga* had made him pay very dear for every Thing he or his Followers had Occasion for: But the true Reason was, and his Ambassadors at *Stockholm* and the *Hague* declared nothing less would satisfy him, that he wanted a Port in the *Baltick*. Having entered *Livonia* *Peter* in *October* 1700 laid Siege to *Narva*: But by the expeditious

Battle of
NARVA.

ditionous and unexpected coming up of *Charles XII.* of *Sweden* his Troops before this Place were defeated with great Loss and forced to retire.

1701.

In the Beginning of the next Year *Peter* had an Interview with *Augustus* at *Birsen* in *Lithuania*. The Design of this was to bring the Republick of *Poland* which was quite averse thereto into the War against *Sweden*. The Troops of *Peter* were in this Campaign worsted in endeavouring to hinder the *Swedes* from passing the *Duna*: But they had the Advantage in one or two inconsiderable Actions which afterwards happened.

Battle of the
DUNA.

1702.

PETERSBURG
founded.

The *Russians* having in the next Campaign taken *Notteburg* they after increasing the Fortifications thereof called it *Schuffelburg*: And the Foundation of a new Town called *St. Petersburg* was laid at *Nien Schantz*.

1704.

PETER enters
POLAND.

In the Year 1704 *Narva*, *Derpt* and *Iwanogrod* were taken from the *Swedes*; and in the same Year an Alliance was concluded betwixt *Russia* and *Poland*. *Peter* pursuant thereto entered *Poland* in the next Campaign with a powerful Army: And after a bloody Action betwixt the *Swedish* General *Lewenhaupt* and the *Russian* General *Czeremetow* the latter made himself Master of *Courland*.

1706.

A Fleet fitted
out at PE-
TERSBURG.

In the Year 1706 the *Russians* acted only upon the defensive at Land: But a fine Fleet of Ships which the *Czar* commanded in Person was fitted out at *Petersburg*.

1707.

The RUSSI-
ANS make
great Havock
in POLAND.

While the *Swedish* Army was in the next Year in *Saxony* *Peter* again entered *Poland* with an Army: And the Towns of *Ravitsck*, *Reussin*, *Bojonowa*, *Kalisch* and *Lissa*, which all held out for *Stanislaus*, being set on Fire many of the Inhabitants perished in the Flames. Upon the Return of the *Swedish* Army into *Poland* the *Russians* thought proper to retire; but in their Way they put many Places to Fire and Sword.

1708.

Battle of
MOHILOFF.

After the Battle of *Mobiloff* in the Year 1708, in which the *Russians* sustained great Loss, the *Swedes* passed the *Nieper*: They however soon found the Inconvenience of being without Magazines and in an Enemy's Country. It was said that *Charles* at one Time had it in his Head to advance to *Moscow* and dethrone *Peter* as he had done *Augustus*: But the Misfortune which happened

happened to *Lewenhaupt* put an End to this Pro-Battle of the
ject. This General, who was bringing up a large NIEPER.

Convoy of which the *Swedes* were in great Want, had scarce passed the *Nieper* before the *Russians* fell upon him with such Vigour that he lost the whole Convoy; and had so many killed or made Prisoners that of 15,000 Men under his Command he did not join his Master with above 4000. To add to this Misfortune the *Swedish* Army, which lay the following Winter in the *Ukraine*, suffered greatly from the extreme Coldness of the Weather. *Mazeppa* Chief of the *Cossacks* having about this Time revolved to *Charles*, *Peter* in Revenge caused him to be hanged in Effigy at *Baturin* the Place of his Residence.

As soon as the Season would permit *Charles* contrary to the Advice of all his Generals except *Mazeppa*, who were for advancing directly to *Moscow*, laid Siege to *Pultowa*: But as many Things necessary for this Siege were wanting it went on very slow; and in the mean Time the *Russians*, who were continually receiving Reinforcements, encamped so as almost to surround the *Swedish* Army. At length Provisions failing *Charles* found himself under a Necessity of either forcing the Lines of the *Russians*, and cutting his Way through the whole *Russian* Army, or of starving. The former being resolved upon the Attempt was made upon the 8th of *July*; but as the *Russians* besides their advantageous Situation were much superior in Number his Army was after sustaining great Loss entirely routed. The *Swedes* fled with such Precipitation that some of them did not taste any Thing for three Days together: Yet many fell in the Pursuit; and being at last hemmed in upon the Banks of the *Nieper* they were all, except the Body Guards who at great Hazard of their Lives had passed this River with *Charles*, made Prisoners. His whole Army being thus ruined *Charles* at the Persuasion of *Mazeppa* retired to *Bender* which belonged to the *Turks*; *CHARLES* and sent Ambassadors to *Constantinople* to beg the Protection of the Sultan. A Demand was at the same *BENDER*. Time made at the *Ottoman* Court by the Ministers of *Peter* that his Enemy should be delivered into his Hands. After an Interview had towards the Close of this Campaign

paign betwixt *Peter* and *Augustus* at *Thorn*, in which the Measures necessary for supporting the latter on the *Polish* Throne were agreed upon, the former made a publick Entry amidst Thousands of *Swedish* Prisoners into *Moscow*.

1710.
Duke of
COURLAND
restored.

In the Year 1710 the *Russians* made themselves Masters of *Wiburg*, *Riga*, *Dunamunde*, *Kexholm* and other Places in *Livonia* and *Finland*; and the *Swedes* being obliged to evacuate *Courland* *Frederick* its Duke was upon marrying a Niece of *Peter's* reestablished in this Dutchy.

1711.
War with the
TURKS.

The *Sultan* being prevailed upon by *Charles* and the *Kan* of *Tartary*, who acted in Concert with *Charles*, to break with *Russia*, an Army headed by the Grand Vizir was under the Pretence that the *Czar* had in pursuing the *Swedes* violated the Territories of the *Sultan* ordered in the Year 1711 to march towards *Russia*. In order to prevent a War with the *Turks* which interfered with his Designs against *Sweden* *Peter* offered to make a Satisfaction to the *Sultan*, and to grant *Charles* a Passage under an Escort of 5000 *Turks* through his own Dominions, and to procure the same for him in *Poland*. As these Offers were refused *Peter* advanced for the sake of being joined by the Troops of *Moldavia* towards the *Pruth*: But the *Turks* who were too quick for him had passed this River and came up with him before he expected it. A bloody Battle which lasted the 11th, 12th, and 13th of *July* ensued without any great Advantage on either Side; yet as he was not joined by any Troops from *Moldavia*, as Provisions began to fail, and as the *Turkish* Army was greatly superior *Peter* made Proposals of Peace.

Treaty with
the TURKS.

A Truce for two Days being agreed upon a Treaty was during this concluded: Of which the principal Articles were that *Asoph* should be delivered up to the *Turks*; that certain Forts near *Asoph* should be demolished; and that *Peter* should meddle no more in the Affairs of *Poland*. No mention was therein made of *Charles*; because the *Vizir* was much disgusted at his haughty Carriage. Having by this Treaty extricated his Army from the Difficulties it was under *Peter* for some Time delayed the delivering up of *Asoph*: But as Hostages were

were given for the doing thereof and he knew *Charles* would if possible stir up a fresh War it was done early in the next Year.

The *Sultan* charmed with the getting of *Asoph* forgot *The TURKS* his reiterated Promises to *Charles* of making no Treaty grow weary without including him in it, and the Treaty was con- of *CHARLES*, firmed. The Hostages were however detained because 1711. *Peter* had not withdrawn his Troops from *Poland*; and the *Sultan* wanted moreover to have something settled concerning the Passage of *Charles*, of whom he was grown quite weary, into his own Dominions. As he was never satisfied with any Way proposed for his Return *Charles* in the Year 1713 received an Order to leave *Bender*. As he paid no Regard to this the *Kan* He is forced of *Tartary* attacked the House in which *Charles* had shut from BEN- himself up, and having forced him after suffering it DER, 1713. to be set on Fire about his Ears to come out carried him Prisoner to the *Sultan*, who was then at *Adria-nople*.

While this unfortunate Prince continued thus at a Progress of Distance from his Dominions the *Russians* had taken the *Russians*. *Abo* and made themselves Masters of the Island of *Aland*; but they soon after quitted this Island. They had moreover took *Nyſlot* in the Province of *Savolatz*, and committed great Ravages upon the Coast of *Bothnia*.

Some *Russian* Troops had at the same Time a con- A large Body siderable Share in the Progress made by the *Allies* in Po- of *Russians* *merania*; and a large Body of *Russians* was sent in the sent into the Year 1716 with a Design to make in Conjunction with *EMPIRE*, the *Danes* a Descent upon *Scania*: But some Difficulties 1716. arising about the carrying of this Design into Execution these Troops took up Quarters in the Dutchy of *Mecklenburg*. As the Duke of *Mecklenburg* had at this Time a Quarrel with his Nobility it was feared by some neighbouring States, that something prejudicial to the Liberties of the *Empire* might be done by *Peter* in Favour of this Duke who was his Nephew; and hence arose a Coolness betwixt *Peter* and the other *Allies*.

Being determined in the next Year to make the Tour *PETER goes* of *France* *Peter* was, for he did not as in his former into *FRANCE*, Tour travel incognito, in his Way through *Holland* re- 1717. ceived at *Amsterdam* in a Manner suitable to his Dignity.

Upon his Arrival at *Paris* the Regent and the whole Court paid him the highest Honours; and during his Stay there he applied himself with the utmost Diligence to the Study of the Sciences. Having afterwards engaged some eminent Men in all Professions to go to *Petersburg* he returned Home; where he met with the most affecting Misfortune a Man could be tried with.

*Conspiracy
against him.*

His Son *Czarowitz* far from answering the Expectations which were raised from the great Care that had been taken in his Education went from Court in Disgust, and had for some Time concealed himself. Upon his Father's Return Home many Persons of the highest Rank of both Sexes suffered the most cruel Deaths for having entered into a Conspiracy against *Peter* in Favour of *Czarowitz*; and it being found that this Prince was privy thereto he was also condemned to die. The Apprehension of Death which he acknowledged to have justly deserved made such an Impression upon *Czarowitz* as to bring on an Apoplexy; which by carrying him off robbed his Father of the Pleasure he had promised himself from pardoning him.

*Negotiations
with SWE-
DEN, 1718.*

The Invasion meditated by Baron *Gortz* upon *Great-Britain* being laid aside he proposed an Accommodation betwixt the Courts of *Petersburg* and *Stockholm*. Conferences were in order thereto opened in the Island of *Aland*; and notwithstanding the seeming Difficulties it was highly probable they would have succeeded if the sudden Death of *Charles* had not happened. As this was followed with the Ruin of Baron *Gortz* and the Princess who succeeded would not come into *Peter's* Terms the War was continued.

*Treaty with
SWEDEN,
1721.*

Upon the concluding of Peace betwixt *Sweden* and *Great-Britain* and *Denmark*, *Peter* for the sake of forcing the *Swedes* into his Terms made an Irruption into *Sweden*, and ravaged a great Extent of Country. Still the Court of *Stockholm* held out: But at Length a Treaty was concluded in the Year 1721 at *Neustadt*. By this *Sweden* ceded to *Russia* the Provinces of *Livonia*, *Esthonia* and *Ingria*; Part of *Carelia* and the District of *Wiburg*; the Towns of *Riga*, *Dunamunde*, *Pirnau*, *Revel*, *Derpt*, *Narva*, *Wiburg*, *Kexholm* and some others; the Islands of *Dagoe*, *Oeland* and *Moen*; and

and all the Islands in the Gulph of *Finland*. It was however stipulated that the Inhabitants of the Countries and Towns ceded should not be disturbed in the Exercise of their Religion: And the *Swedes* reserved to themselves the Liberty of buying annually at *Riga*, *Revel* or *Arensburg*, Corn free from all Duties to the Amount of 50,000 *Rubles*. Upon the Reading of this Treaty in the Senate it was decreed that *Peter*, who had before obtained the Surname of the *Great*, should have the Titles of *Father of his Country* and *Emperor of all the Russias*.

Having thus gloriously ended the *Swedish War* *Peter* An Academy endeavoured in good Earnest to make his Subjects taste the Comforts of Peace. Some Mines which had long been neglected were again worked; he encouraged learned Men from all Parts to come to *Petersburg*; and having founded an Academy there upon the Model of the *French Academy* he honoured it with being himself a Member thereof.

The Progress of his Arms in the Years 1722 and 1723 upon the Coast of the *Caspian Sea* contributed a good deal to make this Sea, to which the *Ancients* were almost Strangers, well known. In the Year 1724 a Defensive Alliance was concluded with *Sweden*; and in the same Year the Provinces conquered from *Persia* were guarantied to *Russia* by a Treaty concluded with the *Sultan*.

As *Czarowitz* the Son of *Peter* left only one Son an Infant it was declared in an Assembly of the States the Year 1722, and confirmed by a solemn Oath, that the Person appointed by *Peter* for Successor should be acknowledged as such. *Peter* had resolved in his own Mind that the Empress should be the Person: But he thought it would be better to accustom the People by Degrees to render her the Honours he thought her worthy of than to declare her Successor immediately.

With a View to this he caused her to be crowned with all the Ceremonies which had been usual at the Coronation of a *Grecian* Empress, and with such Magnificence as had never been seen in *Russia*. The Duke of *Holstein*, who since the being deprived of his own Dominions had lived at *Petersburg*, for the Sake of engaging *Peter* more hear-

Death of
PETER.

tilly in his Interest made an Offer of Marriage to his Daughter *Anne Petrowna*; but while Preparations were making for the Celebration thereof *Peter* fell ill of a Distemper, which carried him off in *February 1725*.

CATHERINE,
1725.

The Empress *Catherine Alexiowna* was immediately declared Sovereign of all the *Russias*; and an Oath of Allegiance being taken to her by the Senate and all Officers civil and military she was acknowledged as such by all the Powers of *Europe*. After the Celebration of his Marriage a Fleet was fitted out for restoring the Duke of *Holslein* to his Dominions: But it being apprehended at the Court of *London* that something was intended in Favour of the Pretender a *British* Fleet was sent into the *Baltick*; by which the Design of the *Russian* Fleet was frustrated.

Conspiracy
for dethroning
her.

Catherine pursued the Plan laid down by *Peter* who had so vastly aggrandized the Empire; nor did she make any considerable Change in the Ministers or Officers employed by him: Yet many were dissatisfied with her Administration. It being discovered that a Conspiracy was formed for deposing her and putting the Government into the Hands of *Peter Alexiowitz* Son of *Czarowitz*, of whose Education she had taken great Care, the Counts *Devier* and *Tolstoy*, the Generals *Butturlin* and *Pesserow*, Prince *Alexander Nariskin*, the young Prince *Dolgorucki* and some others were banished into *Siberia*; and the Estates of others not suspected of being so deeply concerned were confiscated. Having by a Will appointed a Regency during the Minority of the Grand Duke *Catherine* died in *May 1727*.

PETER II.
1727.

One Article of *Catherine's* Will being that the Regency should endeavour to bring about a Match betwixt *Peter Alexiowitz* her Successor and one of the Daughters of Prince *Menzikow*, who had been a great Favourite in her's and the preceding Reign, this Prince was declared Generalissimo by Sea and Land. Fortune however soon frowned upon him; for being accused in less than four Months of appropriating to himself some Thousands of Ducats, which he had received as a Present from the Emperor to his Sister, he was all at once robbed of his Honours, and after seeing all his Estate

con-

confiscated was sent into Exile. *Tolstoy*, *Nariskin*, *Devier Prince MEN-* and the other Exiles, whose Crime was now said to *zikow* *dis-* have been the giving of Umbrage to *Menzikow*, were *graced.* immediately recalled; and instead of his Daughter's being married to the Emperor his whole Family were involved in his Disgrace.

Peter in the Year 1729 married a Daughter of *Alexis* *PETER* *mar.* *Dolgorucki* who had been his Governor, and whose Sons *ries*, 1729. *Sergius* and *John* were his principal Favourites: But the Death of *Peter* who died upon the 30th of *January* 1730 of the Small-pox prevented her being crowned.

According to the Disposition of the Empress *Catherine* *ANNE*, 1730. the Succession now devolved upon her eldest Daughter the Princess *Anne Petrowna* Dutchess of *Holstein*; but besides that the Empire would if this Disposition had taken place have been exposed to the Misfortunes of a long Minority, for she died two Years before *Peter* and left only one Son who was very young, it was feared that the Interests of *Holstein* might clash with those of *Russia*. It was also thought that as the Male Line of *Peter* the Great was at an End the Daughters of *John* his elder Brother ought to be preferred. The eldest of these was *Catherine* Dutchess of *Mecklenburg*: Yet as she was married to a Prince who had lost *Mecklenburg* by attempting to invade the Privileges of his Nobility, it was judged proper to pass by her lest the Empire should be involved in a War on the Account of his *German* Dominions; and the Crown was conferred upon *Anne Iwanowna* Dutchess of *Courland* her Sister. In order to reconcile the People thereto it was given out, that *Peter* II. had expressly appointed her to succeed: For by the Regulation made by *Peter* the Great every Sovereign was to have the Right of appointing a Successor. A Council was also appointed and such Limitations were made as left *Anne* little more than the Title of Empress: But although she accepted the Crown on these Terms she soon checked the Ambition of the *Dolgorucki* Family, who intended to have reigned in her Name, and assumed to herself the Power justly due to the Crown. This Princess had the Pleasure of seeing *Augustus* II. whose Elevation to the *Polish* Throne was principally owing to her, reign quietly and happily.

War with the
TURKS.

She likewise entered into a War with the *Turks*; and the Court of *Vicnna*, with which she had constantly been in strict Alliance; after endeavouring in vain to procure Satisfaction at the *Ottoman* Court for the Damage done to *Russia* by an Irruption of the *Tartars* joined with her therein. This War which turned out very unlucky for the Emperor of *Germany* was very successful to the *Russians*: Yet it cost these dear; for the long fatiguing Marches carried off many Men, and the Expence of sending Provisions to such a Distance was very great, the Seat of the War being in quite a barren Country. The Emperor having accommodated Matters with the *Turks* *Anne* made a Treaty with them also: But as the settling of Limits was for some Time deferred by the *Sultan* it looked as if the Terms of this Treaty were not agreeable to the *Turkish* Nation.

THAMAS

KOULI KAN

courts the

Friendship of

ANNE.

Thamas Kouli Kan having in her Time usurped the Throne of *Persia* he for the Sake of acting vigorously against the *Turks* courted the Friendship of *Anne*: Which as he could give her great Assistance in case of a Renewal of the War with the *Sultan* was quite agreeable to her.

Count BIRON

chosen Duke of

COURLAND,

1737.

On the Death of *Ferdinand* Duke of *Courland* without Issue, who was the last Duke of the House of *Ketler*, this Dutchy was pursuant to an Agreement made in the Year 1726 to have been annexed to the *Republick* of *Poland*: But in a Diet held in *Courland* a Year before the Death of *Ferdinand* it had been resolved to annul this Agreement, and that the States should be at Liberty to choose themselves a Duke. The doing of this was protested against by the Elector of *Cologne* Grand Master of the *Teutonick* Order, to which Order *Courland* formerly belonged; and Count *Saxe* endeavoured to maintain the Election made in his Favour in the Year 1725: But the *Russian* Interest prevailed, and Count *Biron* a Person whom the Empress had raised from the lowest Rank to the highest Honours was chosen.

The DOLGORUCKI's executed, 1739.

The Marriage of the Princess of *Mecklenburg* Niece to the Empress with a Prince of the House of *Brunswick* was strongly opposed by the *Dolgorucki* Family; and they were resolved at all Events to rectify the Abuses

of

of Government introduced by the Duke of *Courland*: But he was in so high a Degree of Favour that they perished in the Attempt; three of them *John* and *Sergius* Brothers, and *Basilus* their Cousin, being executed for high Treason in *November 1739*.

Not long after *Artemis Walinski* another Favourite of *WALINSKI* the Empress, who could not bear to see the whole Power and others engrossed by the Duke of *Courland*, entered into a Conspiracy with many of the Nobility against him: But it being discovered *Walinski* and his Associates suffered ignominious Deaths. This Effusion of Blood served however only to increase the Hatred to the Duke of *Courland*.

Upon the Death of *Anne* in *October 1740* *John* Son of *Anne* her Niece by Prince *Anthony Ulrick* of *Brunswick* *JOHN III.* *1740.* *Wolfenbuttle* was pursuant to her Will declared Successor; and the Duke of *Courland*, than which there could not be a stronger Instance of her Regard for him, was appointed sole Regent without any Limitation of his Power till this Prince only two Months old should become Major. As the Princess *Anne* was Daughter of *Catherine* Dutcheß of *Mecklenburg*, who had a better Right to the Crown than the late Empress her younger Sister, she was far from being satisfied with this Disposition: By which although her Son had the Name of Emperor the whole Power was for many Years to come vested in the Duke of *Courland*.

In order to ingratiate himself with the People the Regent forthwith published a Pardon for all who had been condemned to Death, the Gallies or Banishment, except there was something in their Crime remarkably atrocious. He moreover restored such to their Offices as had been discharged for Want of passing their Accounts; and forgave all Debts due to the Crown before the Year 1719: Nay he discharged such as were indigent of all Debts due to the Crown, although some of these had been contracted since that Year.

As to himself he was contented with a Pension of 300,000 Rubles, which he managed so as to have the same offer him: But in order to make the Princess *Anne* easy under the Loss of the Regency he considerably augmented her Allowance. He moreover settled a large Revenue

nue upon *Elizabeth* Daughter of *Peter* the Great; and caused a Patent to be made out appointing the Prince of *Brunswick* Generalissimo: But this Prince, who thought it inconsistent with his Dignity to serve as his Son was Emperor under any Subject, excused himself from accepting thereof.

The People
greatly dissatisfied.

Notwithstanding these Acts of Clemency and Generosity the People soon saw that the Disposal of all Dignities and Employments was entirely in the Regent; who having lately caused some Lords to be arrested had without bringing them to a Trial sent them into *Siberia*. This Severity made him some Enemies; and it was in general thought wrong that a Person of his low Birth should be raised to the Regency of a mighty Empire, and enjoy this with such an unlimited Power as it had never been enjoyed with before. In order to encourage the Discontent it was given out that he had taken the Advantage of the Empress's Weakness in her last Moments to obtain this absolute Direction of Affairs; and besides that his Power must at all Events have continued a long Time it was feared there would be no End thereof; for if the Emperor should die and leave a Son or Brother under Age it was to continue; and in case he should leave neither Son nor Brother it was in the Duke of *Courland*'s Power to raise with the Consent of the Synod and Senate whomsoever he pleased to the Throne.

The Princess
ANNE advanced to the Regency.

Conferences being secretly held in the Palace of the Princess *Anne*, who was very uneasy under her dependent Situation, a Resolution was come to of putting an End to this monstrous Power; and pursuant thereto the Duke of *Courland* was arrested in his Bed by General Count *Munich* early in the Morning of the 20th of *December*. In order to get rid of this General, who as well as Count *Osterman* frequently opposed his Measures in the Council, the Regent had caused an Enquiry to be set on Foot concerning his Conduct whilst he commanded against the *Turks*: But instead of ruining Count *Munich* as he intended the Duke of *Courland* was himself forced to answer for his own Conduct.

The Duke of
COURLAND banished.

Being tried for High Treason he was condemned to die: The Princess *Anne* however become by this Revolution

tion Regent contented herself with sending him into *Siberia*; where he was confined with his Brother and some others in a House built on Purpose for them.

As Count *Munich* had had so great Share in this Trans-Count *Munich* action he was at first much caressed by the new Regent; *NICH* *dis-* but he soon found that the Favourites of Princes stand *graced*. on very slippery Ground, being in the *March* following removed from all his Offices.

Anne was very strongly solicited by the Queen of *Hungary* to assist her against the King of *Prussia*: But it being imprudent as Things were circumstanced to involve *Russia* in a War about the Affair of another she did not choose to interpose further than by good Offices; and instead of doing this the ancient Treaties betwixt *Russia* and *Prussia* were renewed.

It being resolved in the *Swedish* Diet held in the Year *War with* 1741 to declare War against *Russia* the *Russian* Mini-*SWEDEN*, ster Count *Bestuchef* was sent home guarded; and Baron 1741. *Gillenstern* with the Secretaries *Archenholtz* and *Mathe-* *fius* were punished for holding a criminal Correspondence with him. This Resolution supposed to be taken at the Solicitation of *France*, in order to prevent the Court of *Petersburg* from taking Part in the War in *Germany*, was soon followed with an open Rupture. After the *Battle of* *Swedes* were defeated in the *Battle of Wilmanstrand* *WILMAN-* the Regent promised to assist the Queen of *Hungary* *STRAND*. with 30,000 Men in the Spring following, and Measures were concerted for acting vigorously against the *Swedes*: But in the mean Time the *Russian* System was entirely changed by another Revolution.

In the Evening of the fifth of *December* all the Ave-*The Princess* nues of the Imperial Palace and the principal Posts in *ELIZABETH* *Moscow* were seized by the Guards: And at the same *raised to the* Time the Friends of the Princess *Elizabeth*, who were *Throne*. assembled at her Palace, proclaimed her Sovereign of all the *Russias* under a Triple Volley of the Guards. In a Manifesto forthwith published, setting forth that the Disorders which had arisen in the Empire were owing to the Want of observing the Disposition of her Father *Peter the Great*, it was declared that she had been invited by all her loving Subjects and particularly by her faith-

ful Guards to ascend the Throne. Soon after another Manifesto appeared: In which it was observed that by the Will of her Mother the Empress *Catherine* she ought to have succeeded upon the Death of *Peter II.* her Brother; but that by the Intrigues of Count *Osterman* and others the Princess *Anne Iwanowna* had been advanced to the Imperial Dignity; that the same Count *Osterman* and Count *Munich* had prevailed upon the Empress *Anne*, in her last Illness when she was quite weak, to appoint *John* Son of Prince *Anthony Ulrick* of *Wolfenbuttle* her Successor: And that afterwards, notwithstanding they had taken an Oath to observe the Act for settling the Regency in the Duke of *Courland*, Prince *Anthony* and his Wife had by the Help of the said Counts seized the Government. Guards were immediately set upon the late Regent and her Family; and the Counts *Osterman* and *Munich* were seized. The *Swedish* Officers taken Prisoners at the Battle of *Wilmanstrand* and elsewhere were set at Liberty; and the new Empress proposed in a Letter wrote by herself to the King of *Sweden* the making of Peace.

Duke of
COURLAND
recalled.

After putting all the Affairs of Government on the same Footing they had been in her Father's Time *Elizabeth* annulled the severe Sentences against the House of *Dolgorucki*, and the Families of some other illustrious Lords, who had suffered in the Reign of *Anne*; and the Duke of *Courland* and his Adherents were recalled from Exile in *Siberia*.

Proceedings a-
gainst OSTER-
MAN and
others.

Count *Osterman*, his Son-in-law Baron *Mengden*, Count *Munich* and Count *Lewenwolde* having been sentenced to die they were all conducted to the Place of Execution. Count *Osterman*, who went first upon the Scaffold, had kneeled down to the Block and the Executioner had raised the Axe: But before the fatal Stroke was given it was declared that the Empress would not take the Forfeiture of their Lives; and they were all banished. This Mercy availed Count *Osterman* who was grown old in the Service of the Court of *Petersburg* but little; for he had at this Time a Mortification in his Leg which soon after carried him off.

It

It being resolved that the Princess *Anne* should go with *The Princess* her Family into *Germany*, she was allowed to carry with *ANNE* *con-* her all the Jewels given her by the Empress *Anne* her *fin-* Aunt. A large Sum for the Expences of her Journey was also given to her, and a yearly Pension of 50,000 Rubles was settled upon her: But some Things being laid to her Charge by Count *Osterman* she and her Family were stopped and confined at *Riga*. The *Prussian* and *Austrian* Ministers who interceded for their Liberty were told, that as *Elizabeth* had given Directions for the Family to be treated suitably to their Rank they ought not to be uneasy under Confinement; and that they should in the End find she had no ill Design against them.

As *Elizabeth* was resolved to secure the Succession to *The Duke of* the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* Son of her Sister, who *HOLSTEIN in-* died in the Year 1728 as soon as this Duke was born, *vited into* she invited him from the Bishop of *Lubeck's* Court; *RUSSIA.* who being the nearest Relation had taken Care of him since the Death of his Father in the Year 1739. From the Time of his Arrival in *Russia* he was looked upon as presumptive Heir to the Throne; and it being a fundamental Law in *Russia* that the Sovereign must be of the *Greek Church* Care was taken to instruct him in the Principles and Rites thereof.

The Negotiations with *Sweden* had as yet come to *War with* nothing more than a Suspension of Arms, notwithstanding the Marquis *de la Chetardie* Minister from *SWEDEN,* *France* had taken great Pains to accommodate Matters. It was generally supposed that this Minister had some Share in the late Revolution: And whether he had or not there can be no Doubt of the *French* Court's liking much better to see a *Russian* Princess upon the Throne than a Princess of the House of *Brunswick*; one Branch of which House was already in Possession of the *British* Crown and the Electorate of *Hanover*. The *Swedish* General Count *Lewenhaupt* made publick Rejoicings in his Camp on the Occasion; for which the Empress thanked him in a Letter wrote with her own Hands; yet as the *Swedes* could not bear the Thought of sheathing the Sword without gaining some Advantage, and the Court of *Petersburg* would make Peace on no other Terms

Terms than those of the Treaty of *Neustadt*, Hostilities were in the Year 1742 recommenced. Upon this General Count *Lacy* put himself at the Head of the *Russians*, and went in Quest of the *Swedes* who were encamped near *Fredericksham*. Hereupon *Lewenhaupt*, who did not care to risk a Battle, retired behind a Branch of the *Kimene* and *Lacy* followed him. When the Inhabitants of *Finland* saw *Lewenhaupt* fly in this Manner before the *Russians* they left the *Swedish* Army; which being thereby reduced to about 14,000 Men was shortly after blocked up before *Helsingfort*.

The SWEDISH
Army capitulates.

During the Absence of the Generals *Lewenhaupt* and *Budenbroeck*, who repaired to the Diet at *Stockholm*, the commanding Officer Major General *Bousquet* accepted of the Capitulation offered by General *Lacy*. The principal Article of this was, that the whole *Swedish* Army might embark with their small Arms and suitable Ammunition, Colours, Standards, Drums and Trumpets, together with Provisions for their Passage into *Sweden* and their light Baggage; but that their Artillery, their heavy Baggage and their Magazines should be delivered up. It being moreover agreed that if any of the Troops of *Finland* did not choose to go into *Sweden* they should be at Liberty of staying with their Arms and what belonged to them 7000 of these left the *Swedish* Army; and having delivered up their Arms to General *Lacy* they were sent home to their respective Habitations. *Finland* being thus conquered in one Campaign it was given out that *Elizabeth*, instead of annexing it to the *Russian* Empire, had a Mind to erect it into an independent Sovereignty for the Duke of *Holstein-Gottorp*.

The Duke of
HOLSTEIN
declared Successor.

The Election of a Successor to the *Swedish* Crown being about this Time deliberated in the Diet the Duke of *Holstein-Gottorp* was fixed upon. It was hoped that the Choosing of him for Successor would induce this Duke to use his good Offices for procuring better Terms for the *Swedes*: But this Election soon became void by his being declared by the Empress her presumptive Heir; for by the Law of *Russia* no Person who is possessed of another Crown can succeed to that of this Empire.

Before

Before the Beginning of the present Century the *Manners of Russians* were quite ignorant as well as indolent; *the RUSSIANS.* and being zealously attached to the superstitious Customs of their Ancestors, howsoever extravagant these were, they despised all other People. They were moreover insolent and cruel in Prosperity, and of a mean and dastardly Spirit in Adversity; so that upon the whole their Manners were very little better than those of the *Tartars* their Neighbours. *Peter the Great*, whose vast Genius fitted him for great Undertakings, lamented this Barbarism; and in order to introduce Arts and Sciences amongst his own Subjects took the Pains to go and learn them himself of Foreigners. The *Russians* had long been a numerous and intrepid People, and they could bear the Fatigues of War well; but being quite ignorant of the Art thereof and commanded by Officers as ignorant as themselves they were soon thrown into Confusion. By the Conduct and Courage of *Peter*, who not only encouraged able and experienced Officers to come and serve in his Armies but commanded them often in Person, Matters were so changed in about twenty Years Time that the *Russians* were brought to stand firm in an Action, and they became pretty good Troops at the Siege of a Town.

The *Russian* Empire is vastly extensive; but a great Part thereof is barren and uninhabited. There are more-*Of the Domi-*
 over many large Tracts inhabited only by *Tartars*; *nions and Com-*
 who live quite a savage Life and support themselves *modities of*
 by hunting, fishing and the Milk of their Flocks. The *RUSSIA.*
 Inhabitants of some of these are rather tributary than Subjects; nor are they of any Service to the State, except that through them a Way is opened for Caravans to pass and repass from *Moscow* to *China*, so that the *Russians* can trade into *China* without going out of their own Dominions. *Russia* does in the general abound with Corn, Cattle, Game, Fish, Salt and all the Necessaries of Life. The *Russians* are supplied by Foreigners with Wines, Woollen Goods and Silks, which last they have at an easy Rate from *Persia*: But they receive all these in Exchange for Furs, salted Fish, Caviar, Skins, Wax, Honey, Tallow, Soap and Hemp; the sending of Money
 abroad

abroad being forbid under a severe Penalty. *Archangel* the Way to which was found out by the *English* in the Year 1553 was heretofore the only *Russian* Port; but since the Conquests made by *Peter* the Great upon the *Baltick* Coast a considerable Trade has been carried on from *Riga*, *Revel* and *Petersburg*.

Its Government and Strength. The *Russian* Emperor who is bound by no Law takes the Title of *Autocratour*; which signifies unlimited Power over the Lives and Fortunes of all his Subjects. His Revenue which is drawn from many large Provinces is very considerable; and the Trade in Sables which is entirely in his own Hands is a vast Addition thereto. This with the implicit Obedience paid him enables him to raise some hundred thousands of Men at a very short Warning: And it moreover contributes greatly to the Strength of *Russia*, that its Dominions are on the North and East Sides secured by a vast unnavigable Ocean and by extensive Deserts.

Interest of RUSSIA with REGARD to CHINA. The *Russians* have nothing to fear from the *Chinese*: It being for the Interest of the *Chinese* to be upon good Terms with the *Russians*, because they carry on a very profitable Trade with these.

GREAT-TARTARY. As the Inhabitants of *Great-Tartary* are by no Means a Match for the *Russians*, the former instead of thinking to attack the latter fear nothing so much as the being attacked by them.

PERSIA. The Conquests of *Peter* the Great upon *Persia* shew, that neither the *Caspian Sea* nor the Mountains by which it is covered are sufficient to secure the *Persian* Empire from the Efforts of the *Russians*, when these set about a War in good Earnest: Yet as the Supporting of Armies at such a Distance must be very expensive, and *Russia* had already some good Ports upon the *Caspian Sea* it is not for her Interest to break with *Persia*. On the contrary it is of great Consequence to *Russia* to prevent the Extension of those Conquests which that enterprizing Monarch *Thamas Kouli Kan* has made upon the *Turks*; for it might be fatal to *Russia* if the Ballance of Power betwixt the *Persian* and *Turkish* Empire should be destroyed.

The *Crim Tartars*, who are tributary to the *Sultan*, TURKY. being always ready to make Incursions, at the Instigation of the *Turks* into *Russia* it would be of great Consequence for keeping these lawless Robbers in Awe to have *Asoph* in the Hands of the *Russians*: But the *Turks* who well know its Value will never give up this important Fortrefs; and for fear of the worst they have taken Care to demolish its Works. Upon the whole since a War with the *Turks* would, as the Country which must be the Seat thereof is quite barren and at a great Distance, be very burthensome to the *Russians* it is best for them to be upon good Terms with the *Turks*; yet they ought always to keep up a strong Body of Troops upon their Frontier in order to prevent the Inroads of the *Crim Tartars*.

The great Augmentation and Improvement in Dis- POLAND. cipline made of late Years in the Forces of *Russia*; the Share this Empire had in restoring the late King and in advancing the present King his Son to the *Polish* Throne; together with the Disposition of *Courland* according to its Pleasure, notwithstanding that this Dutchy is a Fief of *Poland*; manifest such a Superiority in *Russia* that she can have nothing to fear from *Poland*: Yet as the *Poles* could, in the Case of a War with any of the other neighbouring Powers, cause a Diversion in Favour of the *Russians* it is for the Interest of the latter to be in Amity with the former.

The Cessions made to *Russia* by the Treaty of Neu- SWEDEN. stadt have been ever since grudged by the *Swedes*; and they look with an evil Eye upon the encreasing Greatness of *Russia*: But the ill Success of the late War shews sufficiently the Inequality of their Forces to those of the *Russia*; so that if *Sweden* is wise she will be very cautious of coming to a Rupture with *Russia*.

The *Russians* could easily overrun *Prussia*; but as PRUSSIA. other Powers would be unwilling to see them make further Acquisitions on this Side it would be imprudent in them to attempt any Thing against this Kingdom: And the King of *Prussia*, besides that his Dominions taken altogether do make him very respectable, would undoubtedly in such a Case be assisted by *Sweden*.

As

DENMARK.

As the King of *Denmark* is Master of the *Sound* it is for the Interest of the *Russian* Emperor, whose Subjects now carry on a considerable Trade in the *Baltick*, to be upon good Terms with him; nay further the *Danes* could in the case of a *Swedish* War be of great Service to the *Russians* by causing a Diversion in their Favour.

Other Powers. *France*, *Spain* and some other Powers have very little Connection with *Russia*: Nor have the *Maritime Powers* any Thing to do with this Empire except so far as Trade is concerned.

C H A P. XIII.

Of T U R K Y.

IT seems extravagant to suppose that *Turcus*, who is *Origin of the* said to have been descended from *Priamus* King of *TURKISH* *Troy*, was the Founder of the *Turkish* Empire: But *Empire.* whoever was the Founder thereof it was according to the best Accounts at first inhabited by *Scythians* and *Saracens*. The latter originally Inhabitants of *Arabia*, who as their Name which signifies Robbers denotes had been accustomed to live by Plunder, began to be taken Notice of in the middle of the fifth Century. *Terebon* the Son of *Christianity* *Aspetus* one of their Chiefs having about this Time been embraced by miraculously cured of a Palsy he embraced the Christian *the SARA-* Religion; and the *Saracens* did in the general follow his *CENS.* Example.

About the Year of *CHRIST* 611 a new System of Re-*The Rise of* ligion was with the Assistance of a Monk, a *Nestorian* *MAHOMED-* and a Jew, composed by *Mahomet* *: Which enjoins the *TISM.* Belief of no other Articles, than *that there is but one God* and *that Mahomet is his Prophet*. The Notion of *Mahomet's* being a Prophet, which he artfully propagated, and the Success of his Arms paved the Way for the Reception of his Religion. His immediate Successors, who were called *Caliphs*, extended the Conquests of the *Saracens* and the Religion of *Mahomet* over a vast Extent of Country. The Dominions of the *Saracens* were at first divided into small Sovereignities, each of which had its particular *Caliph*.

The *Turks*, so called from *Turquestan* their ancient *The SARA-* Country, about the Year 1030 overran several Provinces *CENS van-* in *Asia* and *Africa*. Having subdued the *Saracens* they *quished by the* embraced *Mahometism* and the Country was from their *TURKS,* Name called *Turky*. As we have no good Account of *1030.* the Princes who reigned before him we shall come at

* *The TURKS call him MOHAMMED.*

once to *Ottoman*; from whose Name succeeding *Sultans* obtained the Name of *Ottoman* Emperors.

OTTOMAN.

1300.

This Prince the first who took the Title of *Sultan* reigned about the Year 1300, and made himself Master of *Phrygia*, *Galatia* and *Cappadocia*. Having also taken *Prusa* the Capital of *Bythynia* he made it the Place of his Residence: And thereby fulfilled what was foretold by an ancient Oracle, *That Wolves should come and settle in Bythynia who should afterwards ravish the Scepter from Constantinople*. He died in the Year 1326.

ORCAN, I. 26.

Orcan his Son, who had before given signal Proofs of his Valour, being upon his Father's Death preferred to his elder Brothers he made great Advantage of the Quarrels in the Imperial Family at *Constantinople*; by which the Eastern Empire was rent in Pieces. He conquered *Nicea*, *Nicomedia* and the greater Part of *Natalia*: And in his Time according to some the Body of *Janissaries* which are the *Sultan's* Guards was formed. *Orcan* was slain after a Reign of thirty-two Years in an Engagement with the *Tartars*. According to some Historians *Orcan* was succeeded by *Solyman* his eldest Son: But the best, who say that *Solyman* was killed during his Father's Life by a fall from his Horse in Hunting, make *Amurat* second Son of *Orcan* the next Successor.

The JANISSA-
RIES formed.

AMURAT I.

1358.

He comes into
EUROPE.

Amurat put himself at the Head of his Troops, and having bribed the Sailors on board some *Genoese* Ships, by giving a Ducat to each Man, to transport them into *Europe*: *Gallipoli* and several other Places were taken, before any Person imagined the *Turks* were so near. This execrable Avarice of the *Genoese* was fatal to the Christians; for *Amurat* soon took *Phillipoli* and *Adrianople*, and made the latter the Place of his Residence. As the Christians could make but very little Resistance he afterwards became Master of *Nissa* and some other Places; and the Provinces of *Apollonia*, *Albania* and *Bosnia* were likewise overrun by the *Turks*.

He defeats the
SERVIANS
and BULGA-
RIANS.

The Princes of *Servia* and *Bulgaria* collected their Forces, and endeavoured to put a Stop to this rapid Progress; but their Cavalry frightened at the *Turkish* Camels threw their whole Army into Confusion, and *Amurat* gained a complete Victory over them. *Lazarus* Prince

of *Servia* having been killed in this Battle one of his Domesticks in order to revenge the Death of his Master went to *Amurat's* Tent; and under the Pretence of revealing a Secret stabbed him with a Dagger. This Action, which happened in the Year 1383, gave Rise to a Custom that no Person is allowed to have an Audience of the *Sultan* without having his Hands held by two *Bashaws*. In the Time of *Amurat* the Body of *Spahies*, *The SPAHIES* who are the Flower of the *Turkish* Cavalry, was formed and provided for: And he is said to have been the first *Sultan* that made use of an Officer called *Grand-Vizir*.

Bajazet Son and Successor of *Amurat* gained great Advantages over the Christians, to which the Contests betwixt *Andronicus* and *Emanuel Paleologus* for the Eastern Empire contributed not a little. The former in order to obtain the Assistance of *Bajazet* promised to put *Philadelphia* into his Hands, and to pay him an annual Tribute: But as *Emanuel*, whose Party was much the stronger, offered to do the same *Bajazet* sided with him. *Emanuel* also engaged to pay an annual Tribute of 30,000 Ducats: And because the Inhabitants of *Philadelphia* refused to give up their City he laid Siege thereto himself: And having forced it to surrender put the *Turks* into Possession thereof.

The Prince of *Bulgaria* being afterwards slain in Battle all this Province submitted to *Bajazet*; and going over into *Asia* and *Armenia* was subdued by him. Upon his Return into *Europe* his Army committed such ravages in *Albania* and *Bosnia* that the Emperor *Sigismund*, who was also King of *Hungary*, resolved to attack the *Turks*, in order to prevent if possible their establishing themselves so near him.

Having assembled an Army of 40,000 Men *Sigismund* thought himself so certain of Victory, that he was heard to say if the Sky should fall the Lances of his Cavalry were sufficient to hold it up. Puffed up with such vain Thoughts he went in the Year 1396 before *Nicopolis*; but the *Turks*, who were much superior in Number, fell upon him with such Vigour that after an obstinate Resistance his Army was routed, and he with much Difficulty escaped falling into their Hands. After this Victory *Bajazet*, who thought nothing too mighty for him,

laid Siege to *Constantinople*. His good Fortune however began now to abandon him; for he was forced to give this over and pass the Sea, in order to make Head against *Tamerlane* the *Tartar*, who being jealous of his Power and provoked at his Treatment of some *Caramanian* Princes had fallen into *Natolia* with a powerful Army.

BAJAZET

taken Prisoner.

A single Battle fought in the Plain betwixt *Ancire* and *Mount Stella*, upon the same Spot where *Mithridates* was defeated by *Pompey*, robbed *Bajazet* of all his Glory, and falling into the Hands of *Tamerlane* he was confined in an Iron Cage. Some say that the Conqueror afterwards made *Bajazet* stoop down to serve as a Footstool when he mounted his Horse: that he made him scramble for his Meat with the Dogs under the Table; and that his Wife was forced to wait upon *Tamerlane* as a Cup-Bearer quite naked: But others say that *Tamerlane* was of too humane and brave a Spirit to be guilty of these and the other Acts of Cruelty imputed to him; and that all these Stories were invented by the

He dies miserably.

Greeks who had the utmost Hatred to *Bajazet*. During the Reign of this unfortunate Prince, who despairing of his Liberty put an End to a miserable Life by beating out his Brains against the Bars of his Cage, an Ordonnance was published whereby Judges, who were to be paid out of the publick Treasury, were forbid to accept of any Thing from either of the Parties to a Suit.

MAHOMET, I.

1400.

The Defeat of *Bajazet* was amongst other Misfortunes followed by a Civil War betwixt his Sons; but about the Year 1400 *Mahomet* the youngest was declared his Successor. *Emanuel* Emperor of the East assisted *Mahomet* in recovering a good deal of what had been taken from his Father; who in Return gave *Emanuel* Leave to build a Wall across the *Isthmus* of *Corinth* for the Security of his Dominions.

War with
VENICE.

Mahomet afterwards entered into a War with *Venice*: But this cost him dear; for his Fleet was ruined off *Gallipoli*, and besides giving up *Lampfacus* to this Republick he was forced to consent, that if any *Turkish* Ship should thereafter pass the Streight of *Gallipoli* it should be lawful for the *Venetians* to seize it. The petty Princes who reigned in the *Morea* being attacked by *Mahomet*,
several

several of these who were unable to withstand his Forces, rather than be subdued by the *Turks* put themselves under the Protection of *Venice*.

Another War against the Christians being commenced by *Mahomet Valona* in *Albania* was delivered up to him. SUCCESS OF MAHOMET He also subdued the *Bulgarians*: And the Prince of *Caramania* was brought under his Yoke. AGAINST THE CHRISTIANS. Encouraged by this Success he in the Year 1410 under the Pretence that the Treaty with *Venice* related only to the Sea, and did not hinder him from acting at Land, attacked *Thessalonica* in *Macedonia*; which *Andronicus* Emperor of the East had because it lay at a great Distance from him ceded to the *Venetians*. *Mahomet* afterwards restored to *Andronicus* all that had been taken from his Predecessors in the *Morea*, as a Recompence to this Prince for having caused *Mustapha* the Brother and Rival of *Mahomet* to be arrested in his Dominions.

Amurat who succeeded in the Year 1422 soon found AMURAT II. 1422. himself involved in great Difficulties: But by his Prudence these were all happily surmounted. A civil War was stirred up by *Mustapha* his Uncle whom the Emperor of the East had, notwithstanding the Offer made by *Amurat* of giving up to him all the Country round *Galipoli* and making him a Present of 200,000 Ducats, set at Liberty: But being taken Prisoner at *Adrianople* he was afterwards strangled. The Attempt of *Mustapha's* Son to revenge his Father's Death cost him his own Life, and the Christians paid dear for assisting him against *Amurat*; for the latter blocked up *Constantinople*, and obliged the Emperor before he would retire to demolish the Wall built across the *Isthmus* of *Corinth*.

As the demolishing of this Wall opened a Way into HIS PROGRESS. the Countries he wanted to conquer *Amurat* landed with a large Army in the *Morea*; and soon made himself Master of *Semendria* and many Places in *Servia*, *Wallachia* and *Rascia*. The Prince of *Bosnia* was likewise forced to pay Tribute to him; and under the Pretence that the King of *Hungary* had favoured his Enemies he laid Siege to *Weissenburg* in *Transilvania*: But by the Valour of *John Hunniade* Governor of this Province a Stop was put to the Torrent of his Success.

Exploits of
JOHN HUN-
NIADÉ.

Having been repulsed from *Weissenburg* and afterwards defeated in several Battles, one of which namely that near *St. Sophia* cost him near 30,000 Men, *Amurat* found his Mistake in rousing such a Lion as *Hunniade*, and the Princes of *Caramania* took this Opportunity to revolt. As all these Misfortunes brought him under great Difficulties, he by a Truce concluded with *Uladislaus* King of *Poland* and *Hungary* consented to give up to their respective Princes all he had taken in *Servia*, *Rascia* and *Walachia*. Hereupon the Prince *Caramania* in order to avert the Storm that threatned him laid down his Arms, and submitted to the Terms prescribed by the Sultan. Shortly after *Uladislaus* suffered himself to be prevailed upon by Cardinal *Julian* the Pope's Legate to break this Truce with the *Turks* without any Cause: But it cost him dear; for he was defeated at the bloody Battle of *Warna* in the Year 1445, and fell himself in the Action.

Battle of
WARNA,
1445.

AMURAT
worsted by
SCANDER-
BERG.

The Success of *Amurat* was however not so good against *Scanderberg* Prince of *Epirus*. This young Hero justly surnamed the *Great* made a Stand with a Handful of Men against the whole *Turkish* Power; and had the better in several Actions which he dared to risk in the open Field. Hereupon *Amurat* sat down before *Croia* his Capital: But being forced to raise the Siege it gave him so much Uneasiness that he died shortly after.

The JANIS-
SARIES im-
proved.

In his Time divers Improvements were made in the Discipline of the *Janissaries*, who have since made so great a Figure; and he ordained that they should be composed only of such Christian Children as their Parents, for Want of being able to pay the large Taxes required of them, were forced to deliver into the Hands of the *Turks*.

MAHOMET
II. 1451.

Mahomet Son of *Amurat* who succeeded in the Year 1451 continued the War in *Epirus*: But being twice repulsed from before *Croia* he grew weary of *Scanderberg*, from whom he got nothing but Blows, and resolved to turn all his Forces against *Constantinople* the Capital of the Eastern Empire. This City was after a long Resistance taken by Storm in May 1453: And with the Emperor *Constantine Palaeologus* who perished in the
sacking

CONSTAN-
TINOPLE
taken, 1453.

sacking thereof an End was put to the Eastern Empire. All Greece was hereby so terrified that twenty-eight Cities submitted to *Mahomet* without making any Resistance. Elated with this Success he laid Siege to *Belgrade*: But he was driven from thence with the Loss of 40,000 Men. This saved *Hungary*: But it cost the *Christians* dear; for *Hunniade* the Scourge and Terror ^{Death of} of the *Infidels* received a Wound in the Battle, of which ^{HUNNIADÉ.} he died shortly after.

About the Year 1461 the City of *Trebisonde* was taken ^{TREBISON-} by *Mahomet*; and its Emperor *David Commenus* and his ^{DE taken,} Children being slain an End was put to this Empire; ^{1461.} which had for about 250 Years been independent of the Eastern Empire.

The *Venetians* being soon after attacked by *Mahomet* ^{War with} he after making himself Master of *Argos*, *Patras* and ^{VENICE.} *Corinth* laid Siege to *Negropont*; which being taken ^{NEGROPONT} he was so enraged at the obstinate Resistance of *Erizzo* ^{taken.} the *Venetian* Governor, for it cost him 40,000 Men, that he caused him to be cleft in sunder. Notwithstanding this barbarous Action the City of *Scutari* withstood two brisk Attacks, the first of which cost *Mahomet* 20,000, the latter 50,000 Men; nor did he succeed better at the Siege of *Lepanto*. *Scanderberg* being dead *Croia* fell under Subjection to *Mahomet*: But in the mean Time the *Venetians* had taken *Athens* and the Island of *Lembro*. They afterwards restored the Prince of *Carmania* to his Dominions; sacked *Smyrna*; and burnt the Magazines which the *Turks* had at *Gallipoli*: But not being supported by the other Christian Powers, and being disappointed in a Diversion they expected on the side of *Persia*, all these Advantages were lost; and they were forced to make Peace. The Terms of this besides re-^{Treaty with} storing all they had taken from the *Turks* were, that the ^{VENICE.} *Venetians* should give up *Scutari*, *Tenaro* and the Island of *Lemnos*, and pay an annual Tribute of 80,000 Ducats for the Liberty of trading in the *Black-Sea*.

The Attempt made afterwards by *Mahomet* upon the ^{OTRANTO} Island *Rhodes* failed: But the *Achmet Bashaw* surprized ^{taken, 1481.} with a Part of the *Turkish* Fleet *Otranto*, and caused some Fortifications to be built there. All *Italy* was

hereat alarmed, and *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* marched against him ; but as the Garrison consisted of 8000 of the best *Turkish* Troops, his Success would not have been quite so certain if the Death of the Sultan had not happened. News of this, which happened in the Year 1481, being received the Garrison signed a Capitulation ; the Articles however thereof were not well observed by the *Christians*. *Mahomet* ordered while he lay upon his Death Bed an Inscription for his Tomb : In which amongst other Things it was said, that if he had lived his Intention was to have subdued the Island *Rhodes* and proud *Italy*.

BAJAZET II.
1481.

Bajazet whose Party was stronger than that of *Zizimus* his Brother being now declared Successor, the latter fled into the Island of *Rhodes* ; and from thence, because the Knights of *St. John* of *Jerusalem* apprehended the harbouring of him might draw upon them the Indignation of the former, into *France*. Going afterwards to *Rome* where he died suddenly it was suspected from the bad Character of *Pope Alexander VI.* and from the Friendship that subsisted betwixt him and *Bajazet*, that *Zizimus* was poisoned by the Order of this Pope.

Death of
ZIZIMUS.

War with the
SULTAN of
EGYPT.

In the Beginning of *Bajazet's* Reign *Ibrahim* Prince of *Caramania* was vanquished, and his Dominions were annexed to the *Ottoman* Empire : But this drew upon *Bajazet* the Arms of *Cathbey* Sultan of *Egypt* who espoused the Cause of *Ibrahim*. A Battle ensuing near *Jasso* *Cathbey* lost 20,000 Men : But the *Ottoman* Army of which near 60,000 were cut off was defeated ; and *Bajazet* for the Sake of Peace soon after ceded to him *Tarsus* and *Adena*.

Defeat of the
HUNGARIANS,
1493.

The Troops of *Bajazet* being in other Parts more successful *Moncastro* in *Bosserabia* was taken ; and one of his Generals gained in the Year 1493 a Victory over the *Hungarians*, of whom 7000 were left upon the Field. In Order to shew the real Number of the Slain in this Battle their Noses were cut off and sent to the *Ottoman* Court.

War with
VENICE,
1497.

In the Year 1497 *Bajazet* at the Solicitation of *Lewis Sforza* commenced a War against *Venice* ; and took *Lepanto*, *Modon*, *Coron* and *Durazzo*. The *Venetians* on their Side made themselves Masters of the Islands of
Cepha-

Cephalonia and *St. Maure*: But by a Treaty concluded three Years after they agreed to give up the former of these *Islands*, and that the *Turks* should keep all they had taken. This War being ended *Bajazet* attacked *Persia*; and his Generals had the Advantage in two Actions. The Commotions however which arose in *Turky* prevented his making any great Progress.

Being attacked by the Gout, which rendered him un-*Intestine Trou-*able to bear the Fatigues of War, *Bajazet* neglected *bles.* all military Affairs, and devoted himself wholly to reading the Works of *Averroes* the celebrated *Arabian* Physician. As this Conduct alienated the Minds of the Soldiers from *Bajazet* *Selim* his second Son, having engaged the *Fanissaries* in his Interest, and being encouraged by the *Kan* of the *Tartars* whose Daughter he had married, endeavoured to dethrone him. The Party of *Selim* was defeated near *Ciorlo*, and he was very near being made Prisoner: But as *Achmet* his eldest Son had also revolted *Bajazet*, for the Army refused to march against *Achmet* except headed by *Selim*, was forced to send for him. On his Arrival the Soldiers flocked to him; and being immediately proclaimed Emperor he, to prevent the Odium which the deposing of his own Father might have drawn upon him, caused *Bajazet* to be *BAJAZET* poisoned by a *Jew* his Physician. This happened in *poisoned.* the Year 1512.

The next Care of *Selim* being to march against *SELIM I.* *Achmet*, the latter was after a bloody Action made Pri- 1512. soner and strangled: And in order to secure himself *ACHMET* upon the Throne *Corcutus* his other Brother with seven *strangled.* other Princes of the *Ottoman* Family shared the same Fate.

Selim soon after marched against *Ishmael* King of *Per-* War with *sia*; because he had given his Daughter in Marriage to *PERSIA.* *Amurat* second Son of *Achmet* who had fled to him for Shelter. Upon the Approach of the *Turks* *Ishmael* shamefully gave up his Son-in-Law; yet for this did not satisfy *Selim* a Battle ensued. As the *Persian* Cavalry had not been accustomed to the noise of Fire Arms they were soon thrown into Confusion, and 16,000 of the *Persians* were left upon the Field. The loss however of the *Turks* was much greater; and although they after-

wards took *Tauris* they were forced, Provisions and Ammunition failing, to retire towards the *Euphrates*.

ALADULUS
beheaded.

Aladulus an independent Sovereign, who reigned over *Mount Taurus* and the Country round it, having in this War sided with the *Persians* he was attacked by *Selim*, and was after losing his Dominions beheaded.

War with
EGYPT.

Battle of
ALEPPO,
1516.

His Alliance with *Persia* was equally fatal to *Campson Gauri* Sultan of *Egypt*; for being defeated in the Year 1516 by *Selim* near *Aleppo* he in flying fell from his Horse, and was trod to Death by the Pursuers. This Victory was followed with the Submission of *Aleppo*, *Antioch*, *Tripoly*, *Damascus*, *Gaza* and many other Towns. The War was for some Time continued by *Tomom-Bei* Successor of *Campson*; but the Battle of *Matari*, in which the *Turkish* General *Sivan Bashaw* after an obstinate Resistance entirely routed his Forces, was decisive. Hereupon *Grand Cairo* opened its Gates to *Selim*; and *Tomom-Bei* being taken Prisoner was hanged. With him the Power of the *Mamalukes* who had reigned over *Egypt* 260 Years ended; and his Dominions were annexed to the *Turkish Empire*. After this vast Success *Selim* resolved to turn his Arms against the *Christians*, and Preparations were made for an Expedition against *Rhodes*: But the carrying of this into Execution was prevented by his Death in the Year 1520.

SOLIMAN I.
1520.

WEISSEN-
BURG taken.

Soliman his Son surnamed the *Magnifick*, after suppressing an Insurrection raised by the *Mamalukes*, resolved to turn his Arms against the *Christians*, and began with laying Siege to *Weissenburg*. Notwithstanding the Inattention of *Lewis* of *Hungary*, for the Garrison was small and very ill provided, this Place made a brave Defence: But one of the Towers of the Citadel being blown up by a Mine, which two *Christian* Deserters had taught the *Infidels* to dig, it was at length forced to surrender. Elated with this Success *Soliman* laid Siege to *Rhodes*. The Emperor and Pope were at this Time engaged in a War with *France*; the other Christian Powers sent no Succours to the Knights of *St. John* of *Jerusalem*; and one of their own Body named *Andro Amara*, disgusted because he was passed by at the Election of a late *Grand Master*, did moreover hold a

Cor-

respondence with the Enemy. His Treachery was detected and paid for with his Life: Yet the Knights, being reduced to the greatest Extremity and seeing no ^{RHODES} Hope of Relief, were forced to deliver up *Rhodes* in ^{sur-}rendered. December 1522. Thus did *Soliman* in a short Time make himself Master of two Places, which had baffled all the Designs of *Mahomet* II. when in the Meridian of his Power; and which were looked upon to be the Bulwarks of *Christendom*.

The *Turkish* Ambassadors sent to treat with *Lewis* War with of *Hungary* having been sent back without either Noses ^{HUNGARY.} or Ears *Soliman*, to whom the Way was by having *Weissenburg* in his Hands always open, resolved to penetrate into this Kingdom. *Lewis*, who was governed entirely by *Paul Tamore* his Generalissimo formerly a Bishop, being determined, contrary to the Opinion of all his other Generals, whose Advice was that he should wait for the Reinforcements coming from *Transylvania*, *Croatia*, *Bohemia* and *Silesia*, to risk a Battle one was ^{Battle of Mo-}fought in the Plain of *Mehatz*: But it cost him his Life, ^{HATZ.} and the Rout was so total that of 30,000 Men of which his Army consisted not above 8000 escaped. *Buda* hereupon opened its Gates to *Soliman*. In the midst however of this Success *Soliman* was called home to suppress an Insurrection, and forced to abandon his new Conquests. As *Lewis* died soon after the *Hungarians* were divided in the choice of a King: Some choosing *Ferdinand* Brother of *Charles* V. who had married *Anne* Sister to their late King; others *John* Waywode of *Transylvania*. As the Friends of the latter found themselves unable to support him against the powerful House of *Austria* they put themselves under the Protection of *Soliman*; who had returned in the Year 1529 at the Head of a powerful Army into *Hungary*.

After once more taking *Buda*, of which he put *John* War with the into Possession, he marched directly to *Vienna*: But the ^{EMPEROR,} Governor *Philip* Count *Palatine* made so obstinate 1529. a Defence, that after loosing 20,000 Men *Soliman* raised the Siege of this City and retired with the utmost Precipitation. Three Years after he made another Attempt upon *Hungary*; but *Ferdinand* defended himself bravely, and the *Spanish* Fleet sent to cause a Diversion

version took in the Year 1533 *Patras* and *Coron* in the *Morea*. The *Spaniards* were however soon driven from these Places; and while *Soliman* was busy in preparing for a War with *Persia* the famous Pirate *Barberossa*, whom he had made his Admiral, deposed *Muley-Hassan*, and made himself Master of his Kingdom of *Tunis* in *Africa*.

War with
PERSIA.

The Success of *Soliman* against *Persia* was at first as great as could be wished, *Tauris* and *Babylon* being soon taken; but as these Places were at so great Distance he thought proper to quit them both; and his Army having suffered much by Hunger and Sickness he was glad to make Peace. Suspecting that *Ibrahim* his *Grand Vizir* had put him upon this Expedition, in order to give the *Christians* whom he loved in his Heart some Rest, *Soliman* upon his Return to *Constantinople* caused him to be strangled.

War with
VENICE.

The *Venetians* having during his Absence in *Persia* assisted the *Spaniards* *Soliman* at his Return made himself Master of *Sciro*, *Chio* and many other Islands in the *Archipelago*, which belonged to them; but *Tine* one of these soon shook off the *Ottoman* Yoke and submitted to its old Masters. For want of being supported by the *Spaniards*, who had drawn them into this War, the *Venetians* were by a Treaty concluded in the Year 1539 forced to give up *Laurano* in *Dalmatia*, *Napoli de Malvasia*, and *Napoli de Romania*, together with fourteen Islands in the *Archipelago*; and they moreover consented to pay 300 000 Ducats towards the Expences of this War.

Battle of Bu-
da, 1541.

Upon the Death of *John* his Competitor for the Crown of *Hungary* in the Year 1541 *Ferdinand* sent General *Kockendorf* against *Buda*: But the *Turks* coming to the Relief thereof he was defeated with the Loss of 20,000 Men; and the *Turks* under the Pretence of keeping this Place for *John Sigismund* Son of *John*, who was a Minor, made great Additions to its Fortifications. The *Christians* were equally unsuccessful at the Siege of *Pest*; which after great Loss they were forced to give over: But the Infidels in the mean Time made themselves Masters of *Weissenburg* and *Gran*; and shortly after *Temiswar* and *Zolnock* fell into their Hands. They were however driven from before *Agria*, and afterwards from

GRAN taken.

from *Sigeth*; at which last Place they sustained a considerable Loss.

The *Spaniards*, who during the Absence of *Soliman* in *The SPANISH Persia* had restored *Muley-Hassan* to his Dominions, *Fleet destroyed*, made a Descent in the Year 1555 on the Island of *Gerbi*: 1555. Upon which the *Turkish* Admiral *Pials Bacha* was sent against them. This Admiral came up with their Fleet when the *Spaniards* did not in the least expect him, and attacked it so briskly that many Ships were burnt or sunk, and very few of the rest escaped. The Loss of the *Spaniards* in this Action was supposed to be at least 18,000 Men.

In the Year 1565 *Soliman* made an Attempt to con- *Expedition* quer the Island of *Malta*; but after losing 20,000 Men, *against MAL-* amongst whom was the famous Corsair *Dragut*, he *TA*, 1565. quitted this Island. He afterwards invested *Sigeth* with an Army of above 100,000 Men. Notwithstanding however their Number the *Turks* were several Times repulsed by the brave *Nicholas de Serin* the Governor; which so provoked *Soliman* that it hastened his Death. This Place, which had cost the *Turks* above *Death of So-* 30,000 Men, being taken a few Days after the Death *LIMAN.* of *Soliman* every Person found therein was put to Death.

Soliman, who may be justly reckoned among the *His Character.* greatest Princes that ever lived, was amongst other good Qualities remarkable for hearing the Complaints of all his Subjects; and he never failed to do strict Justice to the poorest of them. He was very temperate; and his Contenance was such that although it was permitted by the Law of *Mahomet*, to which he always paid the highest Regard, he never after his Marriage with *Roxelana* indulged himself in any Liberties with the other Ladies of the *Seraglio*.

Selim his eldest Son by *Roxelana* was upon the Death *SELIM II.* of *Soliman* in the Year 1566 advanced to the Sultanship; 1566. his Way thereto having been opened by his Mother, who under the Pretence of his tampering with the *Fanissaries* had caused *Mustapha* an elder Son of *Soliman* by a *Circassian* Woman to be strangled about twelve Years before. This Prince, who was much addicted *Treaty with* to drinking, soon after his Accession concluded a Treaty *the EMPE-* with the Emperor *Maximillian II.* The Terms thereof *ROR.*

were

were that the *Turks* should keep *Sigeth*; but the rest of their Conquests in *Hungary* were to be restored to the Emperor.

FAMAGOSTA In the Year 1571 *Selim* at the Persuasion of *John taken, 1571.* *Miquez* a few attacked *Cyprus*, and *Famagosta* the Capital of this Island was after an obstinate Defence taken. This City was however dearly bought; for it cost the *Turks* 20,000 Men; and their Fleet was shortly after entirely ruined by the combined Fleet of *Spain* and *Venice* off *Lepanto*; which was the most fatal Stroke to the *Turks* that they ever met with. Twenty Thousand *Christian* Slaves and 5000 *Turks* were taken Prisoners; near 30,000 *Christian* Slaves and *Turks* were destroyed in the Action; and besides eighty which were burnt or sunk 140 *Turkish* Gallies fell into the Hands of the *Christians*. As the *Spaniards* instead of following this Blow were quite irresolute, and would come into no Scheme proposed by the *Venetians*, the latter were forced by a Treaty concluded two Years after to leave the *Turks* in Possession of the Island of *Cyprus*. In the Year 1575 *Selim* died, and *Amurat* his Son succeeded.

Treaty with
VENICE.

AMURAT III. This Prince engaged in a War with *Persia* and took 1575. *Tauris*; but while he was meditating new Conquests his Army was defeated with the Loss of 40,000 Men. War with PERSIA. By the Negligence however of the *Persian* Monarch, who gave himself up entirely to his Pleasures, the *Sultan* so recovered his Affairs, that the former for the Sake of Peace consented by a Treaty concluded in the Year 1589 to cede *Tauris*, *Chars*, *Tifflis* and some other Places, to the *Turks*.

Treaty with
PERSIA,
1589.

War with HUNGARY. Peace being made with *Persia* *Amurat* resolved to employ his Forces against *Hungary*; but he was in the beginning of the War which ensued very unsuccessful. The *Bashaw* of *Bosnia* was defeated by the *Imperialists* with the Loss of 10,000 Men, amongst whom was *Mahomet* Son of this *Bashaw*; and he in another Action near *Weissenburg* lost 8000: Nor could he prevent the *Imperialists* from making themselves Masters of *Filleck* and *Novigrad*. The Grand Vizir having in the Year 1593 taken the Command of the Army upon himself *Raab* was besieged; and by the Cowardice or Treachery of Count *Hardeck* the Governor this important

tant Fortrefs soon fell into his Hands: But *Amurat*, who RAAB taken. died in the same Year, did but just live to hear the good News thereof.

Mahomet the Son and Successor of *Amurat* was of MAHOMET a most cruel and voluptuous Disposition. He caused III 1593. nineteen of his Brothers to be strangled, and ten of his Father's Concubines to be thrown into the Sea; because these were supposed to be pregnant. The War in *Hungary* was continued, and *Mahomet* entered into one with *Persia*: But he dearly repented of the latter, which gave Occasion to a dangerous Insurrection in *Asia*, and the former succeeded very ill.

The Imperialists in spite of the Attempts of the *Otto-The TURKS* man Army to relieve these Places took *Gran* and *Vice-defeated.* *grad*; and *Sigismund Battori* Prince of *Transilvania* obtained two Victories over the *Turks*. In the first they lost 18,000 Men; in the second 16,000. Thinking thereby to retrieve his Affairs in *Hungary* *Mahomet* in the Year 1596 took upon himself the Command of his Army; and having laid Siege to *Erla* and *Agria* these Places after being defended bravely both fell into his Hands. The Archduke *Maximilian* came up with and attacked *Mahomet* in *October* the same Year, and the *Turks* after an obstinate Resistance began to give Way: But the Folly of the Christians in beginning to Plunder too soon gave the *Turks* Time to rally, and falling on with fresh Vigour a most horrid Slaughter ensued, and they remained The CHRIS- Masters of the Field. This Disaster to the Christians TIANS routed, was in Part made amends for by the Surprize of *Raab* 1596. in the following Year. *Canise* being soon after besieged by the *Turks* the Duke of *Mercoeur* endeavoured to relieve it. He failed therein; but he made so good a Retreat, that notwithstanding the whole *Turkish* Army was upon his Back his Loss was inconsiderable. The *Imperialists* did not succeed in the Attempt made in the next Campaign to retake *Canise*; they however carried *Weissenburg* by Storm.

In the Year 1604 *Mahomet* died of a Plague which Death of made great Havock in *Constantinople*, and was succeeded MAHOMET. by *Achmet* his Son. He had another Son elder than *Achmet*; but he was strangled with his Mother during *Mahomet's*

met's Life: It being suspected that a Scheme had been laid by these two for dethroning him.

ACHMET I.
1604.

Achmet was in the Beginning of his Reign defeated in two Battles with the *Persians*, in the last of which he lost 30,000 Men; but his Affairs went on very well in *Hungary*: For the Violences committed there by the *German Soldiers*, together with the Persecution set on Foot upon the Account of Religion, had so alienated the Minds of the People from the House of *Austria*, that many of them submitted to *Stephen Botskay* Prince of *Transylvania*, who had put himself under Protection of the *Port*.

Treaty with
the Emperor,
1606.

Gran being also taken a finishing Hand was in the Year 1606 put to a Treaty, which had been long upon the Carpet. By this it was agreed that the *Emperor* and *Sultan* should each keep what he was in Possession of in *Hungary*; and that *Botskay* should not be disturbed in the Enjoyment of *Transylvania*.

War with
PERSIA.

Not long after *Achmet* attacked *Persia* and laid Siege to *Erivan*; but the *Persian* Monarch came to the Relief thereof, and forced him after losing 20,000 Men to retire. This ill Success obliged him to clap up a Treaty in the Year 1614; by which the *Persians*, who had made a considerable Progress, were left in Possession of all they had taken.

Treaty with
PERSIA,
1614.

MUSTAPHA
I. 1617.

Osman the Son of *Achmet*, who died three Years after, being only 16 Years of Age *Mustapha* the Brother of *Achmet* was advanced to the Throne; but being a weak Prince he was soon deposed and *Osman* succeeded.

OSMAN.

This young Prince raised an Army of 300,000 Men with a Design to chastise the Insolence of the *Cossacks*; whose Piracies upon the *Black Sea* were grown intolerable. Hereupon an Army of *Poles* commanded by *Uladislaus* their King marched to the Assistance of the *Cossacks*, and entrenched themselves very advantageously near *Choczim*. *Osman* made several Attempts to force their Entrenchments; but their Conduct and Courage made such Amends for their Want of Number, that notwithstanding his vast Army the *Sultan* after losing many Men made Offers of Peace.

He is assassi-
nated.

Suspecting that the *Janissaries* had not behaved well in this Campaign *Osman* had a Mind to disband them, and to raise an *Arabian* Militia in their Stead; but as he

knew this could not be done safely at *Constantinople* he pretended to make a Visit to *Mahomet's Tomb*. His real Design, which was to remove his Residence to *Damascus*, being perceived the *Janissaries*, for there was no persuading him to lay it aside, assembled in a tumultuous Manner, and took away his Life in the Year 1622.

Hereupon *Mustapha* was restored; but it being soon MUSTAPHA found that his Incapacity remained he was a second restored, 1622. Time deposed, and *Amurat* Brother to *Osman* succeeded.

This Prince had vast Courage, but he was of a cruel AMURAT Disposition and much addicted to Drinking. Being of a IV. 1623. Deistical Turn he made a Joke of all religious Systems, and which sufficiently shewed how little Regard he had for the *Mahometan* Religion he caused the *Musti*, who is the Head thereof, to be hanged. The Reign of *Amurat* was however in many Respects prudent; for he caused Justice to be administred with the utmost Impartiality; and punished rigorously the least Infraction of the Law. He would often go in Disguise; and if he could detect any Seller of Tobacco, or any Fraud in a Person who sold Bread or other Provisions, he was put to Death upon the Spot: For *Amurat* always had some Persons ready the least Notice to execute his Orders.

Amurat attacked *Persia* in the Year 1635, and *Erivan War with* was treacherously delivered up to him; but it was re-PERSIA, taken in the following Campaign, and the *Cossacks* made 1635. themselves in the next Year Masters of *Ajoph*. Having 1636. in the Year 1638 taken *Bagdat*, at the Siege of which 1637. *Amurat* commanded, he in Revenge for the Death BAGDAT of his Grand Vizir, who was killed before this Place, taken, 1638. caused the whole *Persian* Garrison consisting of 24,000 Men to be put to the Sword.

Upon the Death of *Amurat* in the Year 1640 *Ibra-*IBRAHIM,
him his Brother, for he left no Children that were of 1640. a sufficient Age to succeed, was raised to the Throne. This Prince naturally stupid was so addicted to Voluptuousness, that he caused the Floors of the Rooms in which he sometimes danced with the Ladies of the Seraglio to be covered with Sables. As he took no Care of his Finances, and was at the same Time very extravagant in his Pleasures, he not only exhausted the publick

lick Treasury: But it was after his Death found, that he had anticipated the Revenue of the Empire for seven Years to come.

War with
VENICE.

The Knights of *Malta* having in the Year 1644 seized some Gallies, as they were going with the customary annual Present to *Mecca*, and sheltered themselves in *Candia*, *Ibrahim* attacked this Island which belonged to the *Venetians*: But being wholly devoted to his Pleasures little Progress was made there in his Time. Having, such was his unbridled Lust, violated the Chastity of the *Mufti's* Daughter a Conspiracy was entered into by her Father and many of the principal Officers of State, whom his Conduct had disgusted; and the *Janissaries* being brought into their Views *Ibrahim* was deposed in the Year 1648 and strangled.

IBRAHIM
strangled.

MAHOMET
IV. 1648.

Mahomet his Successor continued the War in *Candia*; it was however for some Time very unsuccessful. The *Turkish* Fleet, which had already been thrice worsted, was in a fourth Action near the *Dardanelles* quite ruined; only fourteen Gallies, notwithstanding that it consisted of seventy-four Gallies and forty other Vessels, escaping. This was followed with the Loss of the Islands of *Tenedos* and *Stalimene*; but after the Death of the *Venetian* Admiral *Mocenigo* both these Islands fell again into the Hands of the *Turks*. By the prudent Conduct of *Mahomet Kieuperli* the new Grand Vizir the Face of Affairs in *Candia* was much altered for the better; yet he did not live long enough to see the Reduction

Siege of CAN-
DIA, 1669.

of the Capital thereof. After a Siege of near three Years, during which the Besiegers lost 108,000 Men and the besieged above 80,000, this important Place submitted to the *Turks* in September 1669. By a Treaty shortly after concluded it was agreed, that the *Venetians* should keep some Towns they had taken in *Dalmatia*; but the whole Island of *Candia*, except *Suda*, *Spinalongo* and *Carabusa*, was ceded to *Mahomet*.

Treaty with
VENICE.
1669.

War with the
Emperor.

During this War the *Turks* were embarrassed with another on the Side of *Hungary*. *George Ragotski* Prince of *Transilvania* having, although forbid so to do by the *Sultan*, intermeddled in the War betwixt *Poland* and *Sweden* he was deposed; and endeavouring to recover his Dominions by Force he was himself slain in the

the Battle of *Fogaras*. The Successor of *George* pursued the same Measures, for which he shared the same Fate; and *Michael Apaffy* was some Time after declared Prince of *Transilvania*. As the Emperor *Leopold* had in the mean Time seized *Clausenburg*, *Zathmar*, *Fort Serinswar* and some other Places, which had for some Time belonged to the Principality of *Transilvania*, the *Turks* fell into *Hungary* and took *Neuhausel*. In the Course of the War which ensued the Imperialists were repulsed from before *Canise*, and *Fort Seriswar* whose Garrison the *Turks* cut to Pieces was retaken. On the other Hand the Infidels were worsted near *Leventz* by *Count de Souches*; and at *St. Godard* where they lost 8,000 of their best Troops by General *Montecuculli*: Yet by the Treaty made in the Year 1664 *Transilvania* and *Neuhausel* in *Hungary* were ceded to the the Emperor, *Turks*. 1664.

In the Year 1672 Preparations were made for attack War with ing *Persia*; but it being insisted upon by the *Poles*, that POLAND, the *Sultan* should disown publickly the having given 1672. Protection to the *Cossacks* the Army raised for a War with *Persia* was employed against *Poland*. As the *Poles* at this Time split into Factions could make no Head against the *Turks* *Kamienieck* was easily taken: And for the Sake of Peace his *Polish* Majesty, besides giving up this important Place and great Part of the *Ukraine*, con- Treaty with sented to pay an annual Tribute of 30,000 Crowns. POLAND. War being soon after renewed the *Polish* General *John Sobieski* defeated the *Turks* with the Loss of 15,000 Men; and although *Kamienieck* could not be retaken, it was stipulated by a Treaty made in the Year 1676 that the Tribute should be no longer paid.

A Scheme being now laid by the Grand Vizir for War with the penetrating into the Heart of *Austria*, he after several Emperor. Years Preparation took the Field in the Year 1683 1683. with the most formidable Army that had ever been seen. The Imperialists, who had taken the Field before the Grand Vizir and laid Siege to *Neuhausel*, were soon forced to retire: And he pursued them with such Diligence that many Regiments were cut to Pieces, and the Remainder of the Imperial Army had but just Time to throw itself into *Vienna*.

Siege of
VIENNA.

This Capital being immediately invested the Siege was carried on with great Vigour; but Count *Stabremberg* defended it so bravely, that a large *Christian* Army, composed of different Troops commanded by the King of *Poland*, the Electors of *Saxony* and *Bavaria*, and the Duke of *Lorrain*, had Time to come up. The Camp of the Grand Vizir, who not imagining that any Army sufficient to look his in the Face could be got together had taken no Care to secure the Passes of the Mountains, was hereupon forced; and after a horrid Slaughter all the Artillery of the *Turks* with great Part of their Baggage were taken.

Defeat of the
TURKS.

Battles of
BARCAN.

The City of *Vienna*, which was reduced to the greatest Extremity, being hereby relieved it was resolved to pursue the *Infidels*; but by the Imprudence of *John Sobieski*, who attacked the *Turks* before the *Germans* had joined him, the *Poles* were defeated with great Loss near *Barcan*. Count *Denhoff* Governor of *Pomerelia* was amongst the slain, and the King of *Poland* himself with his Son the Prince *James* were in the utmost Danger of their Lives. Upon the coming up however of the *Germans* a second Battle was fought; in which the *Turks* had their Turn of ill Fortune, many Thousands of them falling by the Sword or being pushed into the *Danube*. Amongst other Prisoners of Note there were the Vizirs of *Silistria* and *Caramania*; and this Victory was followed with the taking of *Gran* by the Allies.

1684.
Siege of
BUDA.

The *Venetians* having afterwards entered into the Alliance against them the *Turks* were early in the next Campaign worsted in two Actions; and the Allies laid Siege to *Buda*: But after losing 20,000 Men by Sickness and Famine they gave this Siege over. *Vero-vitz* and some Places in *Croatia* were in the same Campaign taken by the allied Army; and the Island of *St. Maure* together with the Town of *Previza* submitted to the *Venetian* Fleet.

Progress of the
ALLIES,

1685.

1686.

In the Year 1685 the allied Army took *Neubausel* and repulsed the *Infidels* from before *Gran*; and the *Venetians* on their Side took *Coron* and *Calamita*. In the following Campaign the *Turks* lost *Buda*, *Segedin* and some other Places in *Hungary*; and the *Venetians*

made

made themselves Masters of *Navarin*, *Modon*, *Napoli de Romania* and the Fortrefs of *Sing*. These Misfortunes were followed with the Accession of the *Czar* to the Alliance against the *Turks*. His Expedition however against the *Tartars* in the next Campaign came to very little. The Grand Vizir being this Year defeated with the Loss of 7000 Men, together with all his Artillery and Baggage, near *Mohatz* by the Dukes of *Bavaria* and *Mohatz*. *Lorrain* all *Transilvania* submitted to these: And the Success of the *Venetians*, who took *Castle-Novo*, *Lepanto*, *Patras*, *Mistira* and *Athens*, was quite surprizing. The Minds of the People being alienated on the Account of these Losses from *Mahomet*, he was in the same Year deposed and shut up in Prison, where he continued until his Death in the Year 1693; and *Soliman* his Brother was advanced to the Dignity of *Sultan*.

Matters were not in the least mended by this Change of *Sultan's*; for the allied Army in the next Campaign took *Weissenburg*, *Belgrade*, *Sigeth*, *Nissa* and *Widin*: But the *Venitians*, after losing their General *Sbarco* and many Men before this Place, were obliged to give over the Siege of *Negropont*. The *Turks* were in the Year 1689 driven from before *Nissa* and *Widin*; yet both these Places fell into their Hands before the End of the Campaign. After having in the next Year gained some Advantage over General *Heusler* *Belgrade* was taken by the *Turks*, and *Essech* was invested; but by the prudent Conduct of the Duke de *Croy* its Governor this Place was kept out of their Hands: And the *Venitians* in the mean Time took *Napoli de Malvasia*, *Ral-lona* and *Canina*. In the same Year *Soliman* died.

Achmet his Brother and Successor received in the first Year of his Reign the disagreeable News, that his Army was defeated by Prince *Lewis* of *Baden* near *Salankemen*. In this Action the *Turks* lost 12,000 Men, and all their Artillery and Baggage. In the next Year *Great-Waradin* submitted to the *Imperialists*; and the *Venetians* subdued the Island of *Chio*. These Losses helped to shorten the Days of *Achmet*, who died in the next Year; and *Mustapha* eldest Son of *Mahomet* IV. succeeded.

MUSTAPHA

II. 1693.

Battle of

LUGOS,

1695.

1690.

Battle of

OLASCH.

Treaty of

CARLOWITZ,

1699.

Deposition of

MUSTAPHA.

The MUFTI

beheaded.

ACHMET III.

1703.

As the Cowardice of his Predecessors had contributed a good deal to the Misfortunes of the *Ottoman* Empire, this *Sultan* resolved to take the Command of his Army upon himself. In the Year 1695 the *Allies* were defeated with great Loss near *Lugos*, *Veterani* their General being slain in the Action: And in the same Year the Island of *Chio* was abandoned by the *Venetian*. In the next Year the *Russians* took *Asoph*, and the *Allies* had invested *Temeswaer*: But being informed that the *Turkish* Army headed by the *Sultan* approached they quitted this Place; and going to meet it a Battle ensued near *Olasch*. In this Action, which was very bloody, the Loss was pretty near equal; but the Defeat of the *Turks* by Prince *Eugene* in the next Year, which cost them above 30,000 Men, was decisive.

The vast Loss in this Battle, which was fought on the Banks of the *Teiss*, determined *Mustapha* to enter into a Negotiation for a Peace, and a Treaty was concluded under the Mediation of *England* and *Holland* at *Carlowitz* in the Beginning of the Year 1699. By this it was agreed, that the *Russians* should keep *Asoph*; that all conquered by the *Venetians* in the *Morea* and *Dalmatia*, together with the Island of *St. Maure*, should be ceded to them; that the Emperor should keep what he was in Possession of in *Hungary*; and that *Kaminieck* should be ceded to the *Poles*.

From this Time *Mustapha* gave evident Proofs, that he desired nothing so much as to cultivate a good Understanding with all the neighbouring Powers: But he was guilty of a great Mistake in suffering himself to be guided entirely by the *Musti* his Favourite. Jealousies being hereby raised in the *Grand Vizir* and other principal Officers of State, it came in the Year 1703 to an Insurrection of the *Janissaries*: During which the *Mufti* was beheaded; *Mustapha* was deposed; and *Achmet* Brother of *Mustapha* was advanced to the *Sultanship*.

This Prince, in order to please those who had raised him to the Throne, banished the *Sultaneß* his Mother from Court; to whom the imprudent Steps in the latter Part of *Mustapha's* Reign were imputed. *Achmet* gave Shelter

Shelter to *Charles XII.* of *Sweden* after the Battle of *Pultowa*; and the Slight put upon this Monarch on his first coming into the *Ottoman* Territories cost the *Bashaw* of *Oczakow* his Head.

War being at the Solicitation of *Charles* entered into War with by *Achmet* against *Russia*, the Grand Vizir in the Year RUSSIA, 1711. 1711 passed the *Danube* with the *Ottoman* Troops, and came up with the *Russians*, whom the *Czar* commanded in Person, a little below *Falazin* upon the Banks of the *Pruth*. The *Russian* Camp was defended only by *Chevanx de Frise*; yet the *Russians* defended themselves so well, that during a brisk Attack which lasted three Days no Impression was made upon their Camp by the *Turks*, who lost a great Number of Men.

Nevertheless as Provisions began to fail the *Czar* de-Treaty of fired a Truce for two Days; and during this a Treaty of PRUTH. Peace was concluded betwixt him and the Grand Vizir. This Treaty did not please *Charles*, who commanded a separate Body of 20,000 Men: But as the Diversion expected from the *Swedes* in *Pomerania* was not made; and the *Czar* consented to give up *Asoph*, and to demolish some Forts that gave Umbrage to the Court of *Constantinople*; which was perhaps as much or more than could have been obtained by continuing the War, it was ratified by the *Sultan*.

After several Years Preparation for War, which alarm- War with ed all the *Christian* Powers, the *Turks* in the Year VENICE, 1715. 1715 attacked the *Morea*. The Knights of *Malta* joined their Fleet to that of *Venice*, yet the Loss of the *Morea* could not be prevented; and had it not been for the Operations of an Imperial Army in *Hungary*, pursuant to a defensive Treaty entered into with the *Venetians*, the latter could have made no Stand against the *Ottoman* Forces. A large Body of Troops was afterwards landed by *Achmet* upon the Island of *Corfu*; but by the Courage and Conduct of General *Schulemburgh*, for which a Statue was decreed him in the Palace thereof, the Siege of *Corfu* was rendered ineffectual. As *Hungary* became afterwards the principal Theatre of this War, nothing considerable happened betwixt the *Turks* and the *Venetians*.

War with the
Emperor.

1716.

Battle of
PETERWA-
RADIN.

Achmet having in the Year 1716 sent a large Army into *Hungary*, a Battle was fought with the *Imperialists* upon the fifth of *July* near *Peterwaradin*; in which the *Turks* were entirely routed, and the *Grand Vizir* and ten *Bashaws* fell in the Action. 170 Pieces of Cannon with all their Artillery and Baggage fell into the Hands of the *Imperialists*; and Prince *Eugene* afterwards made himself Master of *Temeswaer*. The next Campaign being opened with the Siege of *Belgrade*, which held out obstinately, the *Turks* attempted on the 15th of *August* to relieve it; but they were a second Time defeated with the Loss of 131 brass Guns, 37 Mortars, 52 Colours and 9 Horse-Tails; and this City surrendered two Days after. *Achmet* was so dismayed at these Losses, that he proposed entering into a Negotiation for Peace; and a Treaty, whereby the *Imperialists* were left in Possession of all they had taken, was concluded in the Year 1718 at *Passarowitz*.

Treaty of
PASSARO-
WITZ, 1718.

War with
PERSIA.

Achmet at first made great Advantage of the Troubles that arose in the *Persian* Empire: But by the Conduct of *Thamas Kouli-Kan* a compleat Victory was gained over the *Ottoman* Army near *Tauris*; and not content with retaking what had been taken from *Persia*, he carried the War into the *Turkish* Dominions. Alarmed hereat *Achmet* called Part of his Forces from *Europe*, and it was expected that the whole *Ottoman* Court, which did pass the *Bosphorus* to a Camp marked out at *Scutari*, would for the Sake of being near the Seat of War have went to *Aleppo*.

Insurrection in
CONSTANTI-
NOBLE,

1730.

The *Turkish* Army increased daily: But *Achmet* having agreeably to the cruel Policy of the *Turks* demanded the Heads of some *Bashaws*, accused of failing in their Duty, a Fellow of the very Dregs of the People erected on the 28th of *September* 1730 a Flag all rent in Pieces in one of the most publick Places in *Constantinople*, and cried out with a loud Voice that all good *Musselmenn* ought to follow him. Every Thing continued pretty quiet that Night; but as Numbers flocked in to this Fellow next Day the *Sultan* returned to *Constantinople*. The *Janissaries* took the Opportunity of the Contention hereby occasioned to demand, that the *Grand Vizir*, the *Reis Effendi* and the *Captain Bashaw*, should be

be punished with Death: And the Tumult came in the End to such a Pitch, that notwithstanding these three were put to Death the *Sultan* was deposed; and *Mahomet* Son of *Mustapha* II. was taken out of Prison and advanced to the Throne.

In the Time of *Achmet*, who was himself very learn-*The Sciences* ed, the Study of the Sciences was much encouraged; *promoted.* and in order to promote this the Art of Printing, for which the *Turks* had the utmost Aversion, was introduced into *Constantinople*.

The Person who was the first Mover in this Insur-*MAHOMET* rection received great Marks of Favour from the new *Sultan*; but as he continued to make new Demands it was thought proper to take him off, lest being of a daring Temper he should stir up another Insurrection. Soon after the Accession of *Mahomet* an Army was sent against the *Persians*, whom the Success at *Tauris* and the Insurrection in *Constantinople* had greatly encouraged; but by the prudent Conduct of the *Serafquier* who commanded against the *Persians* they were in a short Time brought into such Terms of Peace as were very advantageous to the *Turks*. V. 1730.

In the Year 1732 *Kouli-Kan*, under the Pretence *War with* of this Treaty's having been extorted, demanded in the *PERSIA*, Name of *Schah Abbas* III. an Infant, the Restitution 1732. of what was thereby ceded to the *Turks*. Receiving a haughty Answer he commenced a War; and Things were pushed so vigorously, that besides conquering the Provinces lately ceded a good deal which had been lost some Time before by the *Persians* was recovered. In the Year 1733 *Kouli-Kan* laid Siege to *Babylon*; but 1733. being attacked by an Army under the Command of *Battle of Topal Osman*, who had a little while before been deposed *BABYLON*. at the Desire of the *Janissaries* from the Office of Grand Vizir, he was forced although the Loss was near equal on both Sides to give this over. The *Turkish* General had also the Advantage in a second Action; and it was believed by the *Turks* that *Kouli-Kan* fell therein: But he soon convinced them of their Mistake; for before the End of the Campaign he fell upon them when they were *Rout of the* not in the least aware of it. In this Battle, besides losing *TURKS*. *Topal Osman*, the *Turks* were after an incredible Slaugh-

ter entirely routed. The *Turkish* Army being in the next Year unable to look him in the Face *Kouli Kan* extended his Conquests; and in *June* 1735 gained a second Victory: Which was so compleat, that of 160,000 Men of which the *Turkish* Army consisted not above half escaped.

War with
RUSSIA,
1736.

The *Russians* having for some Time complained without obtaining any Redress of the Incursions of the *Tartars*, they thought no Time so proper to do themselves Justice in as the present. Hostilities being commenced by them in the Year 1736, they after taking *Baccifera* laid Siege to *Asoph*.

Peace with
PERSIA.

Not content with the Title of Generalissimo *Kouli-Kan* had now, with the Consent of the *Grande*es, taken upon himself the Title of *Sophi*. He continued however to act in this Campaign against the *Turks*; but being desirous of having his new Dignity acknowledged by the *Ottoman* Court, an Ambassador was towards the End thereof sent with full Power to make a Peace, and a Treaty was signed at *Constantinople* in *September*. By this the *Sultan* acknowledged *Kouli-Kan* as *Sophi*, and engaged to assist him against all who should attempt to disturb him in the Possession of the *Persian* Throne; and to prevent the disagreeable Word *Cession* and the naming of the Provinces ceded it was agreed, that the Limits of the two Empires should be fixed as they were in the Time of *Amurat* I. Prisoners on both Sides were moreover delivered up; and it was stipulated, that the *Persians* should have Liberty to visit *Mahomet's* Tomb.

War with the
Emperor.

The Court of *Petersburg* was far from being pleased with this Treaty betwixt the *Turks* and *Persians*; and as the Emperor had by the Preliminaries of *Vienna* put an End to the War that arose on Account of the *Polish* Election, he caused his Minister at *Constantinople* to declare, that if Satisfaction was not made to the *Russians* for the Depredations of the *Tartars*, he was obliged to join with the Empress of *Russia* his good Ally against the *Turks*. The Court of *Constantinople* was hereat greatly surprized; because the Imperial Minister there had upon the Expiration of the Treaty of *Passarowitz* declared, that his Master desired to continue in

Amity

Amity with the *Sultan*. No Regard being paid to the Threats of the Emperor Preparations for War were made on all Sides; but it being impossible to act vigorously in two Places at once, it was resolved to act only upon the Defensive against *Russia*. This gave the *Russians* an Opportunity of taking *Asoph*, *Oczakow* and *Choczim*; but Things took quite another Turn on the Side of *Hungary*. His Imperial Majesty's Troops took *Nissa* in the Year 1737, and sat down before *Widin*; but upon the Approach of the *Turkish* Army they thought proper to retire, and *Nissa* came again into the Hands of the *Turks*. General *Doxat* Governor thereof who capitulated was beheaded; and the Imperial General Count *Seckendorf* being called to an Account for the ill Success of this Campaign, in which a very fine Army was ruined without having done any Thing, he was disgraced and imprisoned. The *Turks* in the next Campaign made themselves Masters of old and new *Orsova*, and several inconsiderable Skirmishes happened: But the Battle of *Crotzka* was the fatal Stroke to the Imperial-*CROTZKA*. *ists*; and it was the more so, because it rendered the Defence of *Belgrade* which was besieged in the next Campaign impracticable. The Negotiation which had been before carried on under the Mediation of *France* was hereupon renewed; and full Power being sent to the Imperial General *Wallis* Count *Neupurg* repaired by his Order to the *Turkish* Camp.

After a Conference of twelve Hours a Treaty was signed upon the first of September 1739; of which the principal Articles were, that *Belgrade* should after demolishing the Works be delivered up to the *Turks*; that for the Time to come the *Danube* and *Sava* should be the Boundaries of the two Empires; that the Emperor should have the *Bannat* of *Tameswaer*; and that the Limits of *Bosnia* should be as they were fixed by the Treaty of *Carlowitz*. This Treaty was certainly very disadvantageous to the Emperor, and the Persons concerned in the Negotiation thereof were under the Presence that they had exceeded their Instructions disgraced; but as the Emperor was in no Condition to stop the Progress of the *Turkish* Army, it is probable he would

would if the War had continued have sustained greater Losses.

Treaty with
RUSSIA.

By a Treaty shortly after concluded with *Russia* it was agreed, that the *Russians* should keep *Ajoph* and *Oczakow*; but that *Choczim* should be restored.

Of the Man-
ners of the
TURKS.

It is generally allowed that the *Turks* are superstitious, avaricious and lecherous; but if it be considered that they are by their Religion allowed to have four Wives, and as many Concubines as they please, this last is not much to be wondered at. On the contrary they are for the most Part temperate, courteous, and just in their Dealings; and they are remarkable for adhering to their Word with the utmost Faithfulness. The Devoutness and Zeal of the *Turks* in religious Matters ought to make some *Christians* blush; and the forgiving of Injuries is so practised among them that Duelling is never heard of in *Turky*. It is so customary in the Beginning of their Feast of *Bairam*, which in some Measure resembles the *Easter* of the *Christians*, for all the *Turks* who are at Enmity to be reconciled, that such as refuse to be so are thought to profane this Festival. They are naturally brave; and their Intrepidity in Battle is vastly encreased by the Prevalence of a Notion, that every Man's Days which can neither be lengthned nor shortned are appointed, and that the Souls of such as fall in Battle are immediately carried to the Regions of Bliss. The Sciences are but little cultivated amongst the *Turks*; yet they do not want for good natural Sense, and they distinguish in most Cases very well. Upon the whole it appears, that the *Turks* are by no means such Monsters of Inhumanity as some imagine. This however must be understood of the Native *Turks*: For as to the *Renegadoes* found in *Turky*, who are generally the Scum of the Nation left by them, these are always a Disgrace to the Nation to which they go.

Of the TUR-
KISH Domi-
nions and Com-
modities.

The Dominions of the *Sultan* are commonly divided into *European* and *Asiatick Turkey*; but as a good Deal in *Africa* belongs to him this is not quite a just Division. *Turky* in *Europe* comprehends all *Greece*; the Islands in the *Archipelago*, and those of *Cyprus*, *Rhode* and *Candia*; *Thrace*, *Macedonia*, *Albania*, *Servia*, *Rascia*,
Bul-

Bulgaria and good Part of *Hungary*; and *Crim-Tartary* and many Countries that lie along the *Black Sea*. The *Hospadars* of *Wallachia* and *Moldavia* are likewise dependent upon the *Sultan*. *Turky* in *Asia* comprehends the Provinces of *Natolia*, *Syria*, *Arabia*, *Mesopotamia*, *Turcomania* and *Georgia*. *Egypt* in *Africa* belongs also to the *Sultan*; and he maintains a kind of Sovereignty over *Algiers*, *Tripoli* and *Tunis*. The principal Commodities exported from *Turky* are Oil, Wine, Raisins, Cotton, Honey, Wax, Turpentine, Mastick, Cassia, Aloes, Senna, Opium, Coffee, Leather, Silk and Carpets.

The *Sultan* is so absolutely Master of the Lives and Of the SULTAN'S Power Fortunes of his Subjects, that when any Man dies he allows what he thinks proper for the Support of his Family, and takes the rest of his Estate to himself; and if he demands the Head of any Subject the Resignation to his Pleasure is such, that instead of opposing the poor Man comforts himself with the Notion of its being a kind of Martyrdom, and that it is a much shorter and surer Way to Paradise than by a natural Death. The ordinary Revenue of the *Sultan* amounts to about 8,000,000 Crowns, and the Confiscation of Estates makes a great Addition thereto: A Minister or principal Officer of State in *Turky* being often sacrificed for no other Reason than because he is rich. Notwithstanding however the Absoluteness of his Power it imports the *Sultan* to carry it well to the *Janissaries*; for not to mention the many Ministers who have fallen Victims to their Rage, it is plain from the Examples made of *Osman*, *Ibrahim* and others, that it is dangerous even for the *Sultan* himself to provoke these.

An Army of two or three hundred thousand Men Of the can easily be raised in *Turky*; nor is it any Expence to Strength of the the Publick: For the greatest Part of these are brought TURKISH into the Field by the *Bashaws* or *Beglerbegs*, who hold EMPIRE. Lands called *Timariots* on Condition of furnishing a certain Number of Men when called for, and the rest are paid out of the *Sultan's* Coffers. Of all the *Turkish* Troops the Body of *Janissaries* is much the best; yet these are fallen from their ancient Reputation. Amongst other Reasons to which this may be ascribed, the Deviation

ation from the Custom of admitting only *Christian* Children into this Body ought to be looked upon as one of the principal ones. The *Christians* have no Attachments; but as the native *Turks*, who for the Sake of enjoying the Privileges enjoyed by the *Janissaries* have contrived to get into this Body, have Relations and Friends, these are often governed by Motives inconsistent with true Valour, and sometimes by such as are hurtful to the State. The Wars moreover in *Candia* and *Hungary* have carried off great Numbers of the *Janissaries*, and it has been a Maxim since the Death of *Ibrahim* to restrain as much as possible their Power; which was heretofore carried to such a Pitch, that they made no Scruple of demanding whenever they pleased a Minister's Head, and they frequently went so far as to depose and murder the *Sultan* himself. The maritime Power of the *Turks* is by no means contemptible; yet as they have been usually worsted at Sea, and often by an inferior Force, they have a Proverb amongst them, *That God has given the Earth to the Turks and the Sea to the Christians*. Upon the whole the Power of the *Turks* is very considerable; and it is much increased by the Maxim, which prevails amongst them, of paying no Regard in the Disposal of Offices to Rank or Riches: For as military Merit is in *Turky* the only Way to Promotion in the Army, any Person, however low his Birth and Fortune is, may if he discovers uncommon Courage rise to the highest Command therein.

Interest of
TURKEY with
Regard to
PERSIA.

The *Turks* have the utmost hatred to the *Persians*, whom they look upon as Hereticks; yet they could never do any Thing considerable against these: For notwithstanding the *Persians* were at that Time no Match for the *Turks*, they took such Care to carry away all Provisions, and to divert all the Waters, that the large Armies sent against *Persia* in the fifteenth and sixteenth Centuries suffered greatly from Famine. If therefore it was at that Time, when the *Persian* Monarchs were sunk in Luxury and Effeminacy, imprudent for the *Turks* to attack *Persia*, it must be much more so to do it at this Time, when the *Persian* Affairs are by the valorous and prudent Conduct of *Kouli-Kan* brought into a much better Condition. On the other Hand the Barrenness of the

the Provinces of *Turky*, which border on *Persia*, is a great Security to the *Ottoman* Empire; for it would be very difficult and expensive for the *Persians* to support a considerable Army long therein.

Russia is next to *Persia* the most formidable Enemy RUSSIA. to the *Turks*; for the Countries on the *Black Sea*, which border upon *Russia*, are the weakest of the whole *Turkish* Empire; and *Asoph* the Key thereto is now in the Hands of the *Russians*. As it would however be a great Expence to the *Russians* to carry on War at so great a Distance, and in a barren Country; and the *Tartars*, who are tributary to the *Sultan*, would in such a Case annoy the *Russians* greatly, the *Turks* have not much to fear from them. Upon the whole it is for the Interest of these two Empires to be upon good Terms, that they may have each others Assistance in Case of a War with *Persia*.

As the Forces of the *Poles* bear no Proportion to those POLAND. of the *Sultan*, the latter are in no Danger from the former. On the other Hand, as the Court of *Petersburg* would not in all Probability choose to see the *Turks* make Conquests upon the *Poles*, it is not likely that they should get any Thing by attacking *Poland*.

The *Turks*, as appears plainly from the Event of the HUNGARY. late War, are more than a Match for the House of *Austria*; and they have ever since the Reign of *Selim II.* been intent upon making themselves Masters of *Hungary*. It is however a very great Expence to carry on War in *Hungary*; and a strong Confederacy would in all Probability be formed by the *Christian* Princes against them, as there was in the Year 1683, if they should attempt any Thing further on this Side: So that it seems their wisest Way, to think themselves well off with what was ceded by the Treaty of *Belgrade*, which was indeed vastly advantageous to them.

Venice cannot hurt the *Ottoman* Empire; and the Loss VENICE. of the *Morea* sufficiently shews that she is unable to withstand the Power thereof. It has moreover been so much a Maxim with the *Venetians*, whose Trade with *Turky* is vastly profitable, to avoid a Rupture with the *Turks*, that the *Spaniards* call the Republick of *Venice* the Concubine of the *Sultan*.

The

The AFRICAN POWERS. The King of *Æthiopia* is the most respectable Neighbour the *Turks* have on the Side of *Africa*; but as his Power is nothing if compared with that of the *Sultan* they are in no Danger from him. As to the other *African* Powers they are so far from having any Notion of making Conquests upon the *Turks*, that they make it Part of their daily Prayer to be free from the Attacks of the *Turks*.

Danger to the TURKS from a Confeaeracy. If *Venice*, *Hungary* and *Poland*, should join heartily in a War against the *Sultan*, they would undoubtedly be able to drive the *Turks* out of *Europe*: But as these Powers would soon grow jealous of each others Acquisitions, although at the Expence of the common Enemy of *Christendom*, such a Junction is scarce to be expected.

End of the SECOND VOLUME.

A N

I N D E X

T O T H E

T W O V O L U M E S.

The Numerals I. and II. denote *First* and *Second Volume*, and the smaller Figures which follow denote the Pages.

A BEL King of Denmark, I. 180. He is slain, *ib.*
 Abelgard Count of Pouille, II. 123. He is deposed by Robert his Brother, *ib.* His Attempt to recover the Pouille fails, 124.

Abenaxa a Moorish General in Spain revolts and takes the Title of Miramolin, I. 53. He is beheaded, *ib.*

Achmet I. Emperor of Turkey, II. 366. He makes Peace with the Emperor of Germany, *ib.* He is worsted by the Persians, *ib.*

Achmet II. Emperor of Turkey, II. 371. His ill Success against the Christians shortens his Days, *ib.*

Achmet III. Emperor of Turkey, II. 372. He shelters Charles XII. of Sweden, 373. He attacks Russia, *ib.* He engages in a War with the Emperor of Germany and Venice, *ib.* Kouli Kan defeats him, 374. The Sciences are encouraged by him, *ib.* He is deposed and strangled, 375.

Achmet son of Bajazet is strangled, II. 359.

Actions in France sink to half their Value, I. 299.

Adolph Emperor of Germany, I. 354. He attempts the Recovery of Arles, *ib.* He is deposed and slain by his Rival, *ib.*

Adrian Pope, II. 60. Charlemain confirms to him the Grant of his Father, *ib.*

Ætius the Roman General is slain by his Master, I. 218.

Agila King of the Visgoths, I. 25. He is deposed and slain, *ib.*

Agnius King of Sweden, II. 198. He is hanged by his Wife, *ib.*

Aladulus Prince of Taurus is beheaded, II. 360.

Alans they are subdued by the Franks, I. 219.

Alarick King of the Visgoths, I. 23. He is slain, *ib.*

Albania is subdued by the Turks, II. 352.

Albermarle Lord is taken Prisoner, I. 294.

Alberoni Cardinal is disgraced, I. 101.

Albert of Austria is made Governor of the Netherlands, I. 321.

Albert I. Emperor of Germany, I. 354. He is murdered, *ib.*

Albert

I N D E X.

- Albert II. Emperor of Germany*, I. 356.
- Albert King of Sweden*, II. 260. He overcomes *Magnus* his rival, *ib.* Oppressing his Subjects they call in *Margaret of Denmark*, 109. Being made Prisoner he resigns the Crown and retires to *Mecklenburg*, *ib.*
- Albert Frederick Duke of Prussia*, II. 279. Becoming incapable of Governing he is deposed, *ib.*
- Albert Grand Master of the Teutonic Order*, II. 277. *Teutonic Prussia* is erected into a Dutchy for him, 278. He is put under the Ban of the Empire, *ib.* He embraces the Protestant Religion, *ib.*
- Alençon Duke of the Netherlands* desire his Protection, I. 318. He accepts the Sovereignty of Part of the *Netherlands*, 319. Attempting to make himself absolute he is driven from thence, *ib.*
- Alexander the Great* his surprizing Progress, I. 7. His Conduct in conforming to the Manners of the *Persians* vindicated, 8. Contests betwixt his Generals upon his Death, *ib.*
- Alexander King of Poland*, II. 295.
- Alexander de Medicis Duke of Florence*, II. 42. He is assassinated, *ib.* His Murderers suffer Death, *ib.*
- Alexander II. Pope*, II. 67. His Election is declared void by the Emperor, *ib.*
- Alexander VI. Pope*, II. 93. His Intrigues, *ib.* He is poisoned, *ib.*
- Alexis Emperor of Greece* is drowned, II. 128.
- Alexis Michaelowitz Czar of Muscovy*, II. 329. He commits great Ravages in *Lithuania*, *ib.* The *Swedes* repulse him in *Livonia*, *ib.* A Rebellion against him, *ib.*
- Aloizo Mocenigo Doge of Venice*, II. 173.
- Aloizo Pisani Doge of Venice*, II. 173.
- Alope Pandolph* is put to Death, II. 138.
- Alphonso I. King of Austria*, II. 36. He signalizes himself against the *Moors*, *ib.*
- Alphonso II. King of Asturia*, II. 38. He refuses to comply with an infamous Treaty made by his Predecessor with the *Moors*, *ib.* His Reign is disturbed at Home, *ib.* He cuts off 50,000 *Moors*, *ib.*
- Alphonso III. King of Asturia*, I. 41. He is successful against the *Moors*, *ib.* He uses *Bernardo del Carpio* ill, *ib.* His Son forces him to resign the Crown, *ib.*
- Alphonso IV. King of Leon*, I. 43. He retires into a Monastery, *ib.*
- Alphonso V. King of Leon*, I. 46. He takes much from the *Moors*, *ib.* He is killed at the Siege of *Viscu*, *ib.*
- Alphonso VI. King of Castile*, I. 51. He makes Conquests upon the *Moors*, *ib.* He disgraces the *Cid*, *ib.* He takes *Toledo*, 52. Marrying a Moorish Princess he gives Assistance to her Father, 53. His Troops are worsted by the *Moors*, 54.
- Alphonso VII. King of Castile*, I. 55. He is deprived of part of his Dominions by *Uraca* his Wife and her Son, *ib.*
- Alphonso VIII. King of Castile*, I. 56. He defeats twelve Moorish Kings,

I N D E X.

- Kings, 57. *Alphonso of Portugal* repulses him, *ib.* He takes the Title of Emperor, 58. He brings all the Christian Princes into a League against the *Moors*, 59. He divides his Dominions, 60.
- Alphonso IX.* King of *Castile*, I. 60. The Kingdom is much disturbed during his Minority, *ib.*
- Alphonso X.* King of *Castile*, I. 61. An irreverent Expression of his, *ib.* He is well skilled in Astronomy, *ib.* His Son deprives him of the Crown, 62. His Forces are routed by the *Moors*, *ib.*
- Alphonso XI.* King of *Castile*, I. 64. He suppresses a Rebellion 65. He defeats the united Forces of *Navarre* and *Arragon*, 66. He dies of a Plague, *ib.*
- Alphonso Perez de Gusman* his great Constancy, I. 63.
- Alphonso I.* King of *Naples*, II. 139. He prevails over *Rene Duke of Anjou* his Rival, *ib.*
- Alphonso II.* King of *Naples*, II. 139.
- Alphonso I.* Count of *Portugal*, I. 120. He drives *Ferdinand Paetz* out of *Portugal*, *ib.* He throws off all Subjection to *Leon*, 121. He is proclaimed King, *ib.* Five Moorish Kings are defeated by him, *ib.* He becomes Master of *Lisbon*, *ib.* He is taken Prisoner, *ib.*
- Alphonso II.* King of *Portugal*, I. 121.
- Alphonso III.* King of *Portugal*, I. 121. He is excommunicated, *ib.*
- Alphonso IV.* King of *Portugal*, I. 122.
- Alphonso V.* King of *Portugal*, I. 124. He takes some Places in *Africa*, *ib.*
- Alphonso VI.* King of *Portugal*, I. 129. He is attacked by the *Spaniards*, 130. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Altena* is burnt by the *Suedes*, II. 190.
- Alviano General* is made Prisoner, II. 160.
- Amadeus I.* of *Savoy*, II. 1.
- Amadeus II.* of *Savoy*, II. 1.
- Amadeus III.* of *Savoy*, II. 2. He distinguishes himself in *Palestine*, *ib.*
- Amadeus IV.* of *Savoy*, II. 2. He is made Duke of *Aoust*, *ib.*
- Amadeus V.* of *Savoy*, II. 3. He obtains the Sirname of *Grand*, *ib.* He considerably enlarges his Dominions, *ib.* He saves *Rhodes* from the *Turks*, *ib.*
- Amadeus VI.* of *Savoy*, II. 3. He buys the *Pais de Vaux*, *ib.* He assists the Emperor of *Greece*, 4. He dies of a Plague, *ib.*
- Amadeus VII.* of *Savoy*, II. 4. He is killed by a Fall from a Horse, *ib.*
- Amadeus VIII.* of *Savoy*, II. 4. He buys *Geneva*, *ib.* He is made Duke of *Savoy*, *ib.* He resigns the Government, *ib.* He is chosen Pope, *ib.*
- Amadeus IX.* Duke of *Savoy*, II. 4.
- Amalarick* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 24. He is slain by his Wife's Brothers, *ib.*
- America* is discovered by *Columbus*, I. 76.
- Amurat I.* Sultan of *Turkey*, II. 352. He comes into *Europe*, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- He makes *Adrianople* his Residence, *ib.* He institutes the Office of Grand Vizir, 353. He is stabbed, *ib.*
- Amurat II.* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 355. His Rival *Mustapha* is strangled, *ib.* *Hunniade* repulses him, 356. He is worsted by *Scanderberg*, *ib.*
- Amurat III.* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 364. The *Persians* rout him, *ib.* He attacks *Hungary*, *ib.*
- Amurat IV.* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 367. He attacks *Persia*, *ib.* His Cruelty to the Garrison of *Bagdat*, *ib.*
- Anabaptists* Insurrection of these in *Westphalia*, I. 358.
- Andrea Contarini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154. A powerful Alliance is formed against him, *ib.*
- Andrea Dandolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 153. He obtains Liberty to trade in *Egypt*, *ib.* He is unsuccessful against the *Genoese*, *ib.*
- Andrea Gritto* Doge of *Venice*, II. 161. The Republick flourishes under him, *ib.* He is attacked by the *Turks*, 162.
- Andrea Vendramino* Doge of *Venice*, II. 158.
- Angelo Participatio* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. He is attacked by *Pepin*, *ib.*
- Arbault* Prince of is slain, II. 291.
- Anjou* Duke of is appointed Heir to the *Spanish* Monarchy, I. 88.
- Anne* Empress of *Russia*, II. 339. *Augustus* is raised by her to the *Polish* Throne, *ib.* She attacks the *Turks*, 340. *Thamas Kouli Kan* courts her Friendship, *ib.* She punishes the *Dolgorucki's*, *ib.* *Walinski* and others are punished by her, 341.
- Anne* Princess of *Brunswick Wolfenbuttle* obtains the Regency of *Russia*, II. 342. She is removed from it, 343. She is confined at *Riga*, 345.
- Anne* Queen of *Great-Britain*, I. 195. She pushes the War against *France*, *ib.* Her Ministry is changed, 197. She dismisses the Duke of *Marlborough*, 198. She makes Peace with *France*, 199.
- Ansgarius* Bishop of *Bremen* plants Christianity in *Denmark*, II. 178. He does the same in *Sweden*, 199.
- Anthony* King of *Navarre* is slain, I. 259.
- Antonio Grimani* Doge of *Venice*, II. 161.
- Antonio Memo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 165.
- Antonio Priuli* Doge of *Venice*, II. 166. The Authors of a Conspiracy against him are brought to Justice, *ib.* He frustrates the Designs of the *Spaniards* upon the *Valteline*, 167.
- Antonio Trivisano* Doge of *Venice*, II. 162. He retires into a Monastery, *ib.*
- Antonio Veniero* Doge of *Venice*, II. 155. He renews the *Paduan* War, *ib.* *Corfu* submits to him, *ib.*
- Argyle* Duke of commands in *Scotland*, I. 201.
- Argyle* Earl of is beheaded, I. 192.
- Armado* *Spanish* is ruined, I. 78.
- Armenia* is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 353.
- Arminians* Dispute betwixt them and the *Gomarists*, I. 325.

I N D E X.

- Arminius James* his Doctrines are condemned, I. 325.
- Arnolph* Emperor of Germany, I. 346.
- Arragon* is detached from *Navarre*, I. 48. It is annexed to *Castile*, 70. It is deprived of its Privileges, 195.
- Arthur* Duke of *Bretany* claims the *English* Crown, I. 154. He dies in Prison, *ib.*
- Asiart Paul* is put to Death, II. 60.
- Asmund* I. King of *Sweden*, II. 199. He is forced to quit the Throne, *ib.*
- Asmund* II. King of *Sweden*, II. 200. He is routed and slain, *ib.*
- Assyrian* Monarchy its Antiquity, I. 2. Arts of its Monarchs to awe the People, 3. Ruin thereof, *ib.*
- Astolph* King of *Lombardy* subdues the *Exercate*, II. 54. He ravages the Pope's Territories, *ib.* He is forced to give over the Siege of *Rome*, 55. He again attacks *Rome*, 57. He surrenders the *Exercate* to *Pepin*, 58.
- Athanagilde* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 26.
- Athenians* their imprudent Conduct, I. 5.
- Athens* the most famous State in *Greece*, I. 5. A Confederacy against it, *ib.*
- Atterbury* Bishop of *Rocheſter* is banished, I. 205.
- Attila* the *Hun* is defeated, I. 218.
- Atulph* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 21.
- Audemar* Count of *Genoa* conquers *Corſica*, II. 17.
- Auguries* are founded on moſt uncertain Principles, I. 13.
- Auguſtino Barberigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 158. He drives *Charles* VIII. from *Naples*, *ib.* The *Pifans* are ſupported by him, 159. He joins againſt *Lewis* Duke of *Milan*, *ib.*
- Auguſtus* I. King of *Poland*, II. 309. A remarkable Speech of his, *ib.* The *Conti* Party acknowledge him, 311. He invades *Livonia*, *ib.* *Poland* is overrun by the *Swedes*, 312. The *Polish* Throne is declared vacant, 313. He retires into *Saxony*, *ib.* He regains the *Polish* Crown, 316. A Conſpiracy againſt him, 317. He calls ſeveral Diets, 319.
- Auguſtus* II. King of *Poland*, II. 320. He makes his Election good againſt *Stanislaus*, *ib.*
- Arelio* King of *Aſturia*, I. 37. He makes an infamous Treaty with the *Moors*, *ib.*
- Aymon* of *Savoy*, II. 3.

B.

- B***Ajamonte Tiepolo* his Conſpiracy, II. 152. He is trod to Death, *ib.*
- Bajazet* I. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 353. He ſubdues *Bulgaria* and *Armenia*, *ib.* He is attacked by the Emperor of *Germany*, *ib.* *Tamerlane* takes him Priſoner, 354. His miſerable Death, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Bajazet* II. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 358. His Rival *Zizimus* is forced to fly, *ib.* The Sultan of *Egypt* worsts him, *ib.* He is successful in *Hungary*, *ib.* The *Venetians* are attacked by him, *ib.* His Sons take Arms against him, 359. He is poisoned, *ib.*
- Banier* General his Progress in *Germany*, II. 242.
- Barcelona* Count of succeeds to *Arragon*, I. 58.
- Barcelona* is taken by the Allies, I. 92. *Philip* V. takes it by Storm, 99.
- Bartholomio* Gradenigo Doge of *Venice*, II. 153.
- Basilus* *Suski* Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 328. *Demetrius* prevails against him, *ib.* He is delivered into the Hands of the *Poles*, *ib.*
- Basilus* V. Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 327. The *Casan Tartars* rout him, *ib.*
- Battle of *Albuhera*, I. 125. *Aleppo*, II. 360. *Aljubarotta*, I. 123. *Almanara*, 96. *Almanza*, 290. *Altenburg*, II. 241. *Alveda*, I. 40. *Antwerp*, 322. *Arles*, 24. *Athlone*, 193. *Avennes*, 82. *Augsburg*, 347. *Avergne*, 222. *Auxerre*, 227. *Azin-court*, 241. *Babylon*, II. 375. *Badojox*, I. 96. *Bannocksborough*, 157. *Banan*, II. 370. *Basil*, I. 401. *Belgrade*, 383. Another there, II. 357. *Bellin*, 282. *Bicoca*, I. 73. *Bitonto*, II. 142. *Börnhou*, 180. *Bosworth*, I. 168. *Bovines*, II. 130. *Boyne*, I. 193. *Braitenfield*, II. 236. Another there, 244. *Bresse*, 160. *Brisack*, 242. *Brodnitz*, 232. *Browalla*, 198. *Buda*, I. 374. Another there, II. 362. *Cadiz*, I. 78. *Callo*, 326. *Carion*, 49. *Carnovia*, II. 275. *Carpi*, I. 90. *Cassal*, 83. *Cassano*, 93. *Castro-Giovanni*, II. 124. *Celano*, 132. *Cerisoles*, I. 253. *Chiari*, 90. *Choczim*, II. 300. *Coni*, 10. *Copenhagen*, 187. *Couriray*, I. 234. *Contras*, 263. *Cressy*, 235. *Crevant*, 163. *Croia*, II. 356. *Crotzka*, 377. *Czaslaw*, 285. *Dalmatia*, 152. *Dantzick*, 232. *Dardanelles*, 169. *Denain*, I. 294. *Dieppe*, 265. *Dreux*, 259. *Dutlinguen*, 273. *Dundee*, 201. *Ekereen*, 287. *Eriwan*, II. 366. *Estremos*, I. 85. *Falcoping*, II. 209. *Falczin*, 373. *Falkirk*, I. 156. *Ferrara*, II. 161. *Fleury*, I. 330. *Fontarabie*, 272. *Friburg*, II. 244. *Fridlinguen*, I. 287. *Fogaras*, II. 369. *Gadebusch*, 256. *Gallipoli*, 152. *Gemblours*, I. 317. *Gerbi*, II. 362. *Giera*, I. 248. *Gironne*, 87. *Gorzno*, 300. *Gran*, 370. *Granfon*, I. 402. *Grave*, 316. *Gravelines*, 255. *Guastailo*, II. 14. *Hagenau*, I. 289. *Hamel*, II. 241. *Hastings*, I. 147. *Helsingburg*, II. 190. The *Herrings*, I. 163. *Hockstet*, 288. Another there, 371. *Holowesin*, II. 254. *Hunsfeldt*, 291. *Janowitz*, 245. *Jasso*, 358. *Ivry*, I. 265. *Kliffow*, II. 251. *Konings-Lutern*, II. 168. *Logos*, I. 284. *La Hague*, 283. *Landscroon*, II. 188. *La Vieve*, 159. *Leith*, I. 188. *Lepanto*, II. 163. *Leucate*, I. 83. *Leuctra*, 8. *Leventz*, II. 369. *Leuse*, I. 330. *Lignitz*, II. 293. *Lincoping*, 208. *Lisse*, I. 321. The *Loire*, 23. *Lofa*, 60. *Lugos*, 366. *Lunden*, II. 188. *Lutzen*, 239. *Luzara*, I. 91. *Maestricht*, 325. Another there, 330. *Malplaquet*, 293. *Marignan*, 249. *Marsaille*, 284. *Matari*,

I N D E X.

- Matari*, II. 360. *Marciano*, I. 255. *Mersebourg*, 346. *Mobatz*, II. 361. Another there, 371. *Mobiloff*, 332. *Molwitz*, 285. *Moncoutour*, I. 260. *Mont Cassel*, 235. *Mont-Catin*, II. 134. *Mount-L'Heri*, I. 244. *Montreuil*, 252. *Morat*, 402. *Morea*, II. 153. *Morgarten*, I. 401. *Mount-Stella*, II. 354. *Mulberg*, I. 357. *Musselborough*, 174. *Nancy*, 402. *Naples*, 226. *Narva*, II. 250. *Naumburg*, 239. *Negropont*, 20. *Nerwinde*, I. 284. *Nicopol's*, II. 353. *The Nieper*, II. 333. *Nieuport*, I. 322. *Nissa*, II. 371. *Nojara*, I. 67. *Novara*, 403. *Nordlinguen*, 273. Another there, II. 241. *Nuys*, 367. *Nyburg*, II. 247. *The Oglio*, I. 90. *Ollasch*, 366. *Orleans*, 218. *Ottagio*, II. 7. *Oudenarde*, I. 291. *Parma*, II. 14. *Pavia*, I. 251. *Pera*, II. 153. *Perleberg*, 242. *Peter-waradin*, I. 383. *Ploskow*, II. 273. *Poitiers*, I. 23. Another there, 237. *Prague*, 361. *Pultosk*, II. 313. *Pultawa*, 255. *Punitz*, 314. *Ramilies*, I. 289. *Ravenna*, 348. *Retkel*, 274. *Rhinfield*, II. 242. *Rochelle*, I. 238. *Rocroy*, 273. *Radau*, II. 274. *St. Albans*, I. 165. *St. Andre*, II. 370. *St. Denis*, I. 259. *St. Godarts*, 363. *St. Omers*, 330. *St. Quintin*, 255. *St. Sophia*, II. 356. *Salankemen*, 371. *Santa Vittoria*, I. 91. *Saragossa*, 96. *Sardinia*, II. 153. *Sempach*, I. 401. *Seneff*, 329. *The Seven Counts*, 54. *Sicily*, 330. Another there, II. 150. *Sintziem*, I. 279. *Smolensko*, II. 298. *The Sound*, I. 328. *Spigno*, II. 8. *Spire*, I. 287. Another there, 354. *The Spurs*, 249. *Stangbroo*, II. 229. *Staffarde*, I. 283. *Stetin*, II. 234. *Steenkirk*, I. 87. *Stockholm*, II. 213. Another there, 214. *Stoloffen*, I. 290. *Strangepelle-Bridge*, II. 200. *Strengness*, 229. *Stull-Weissenburg*, 364. *Stum*, 232. *Sweinitz*, 244. *Tanneburg*, 275. *Taoro*, I. 125. *Tariff*, 66. *The Taro*, 247. *Tauris*, II. 374. *The Teiss*, I. 366. *Tercera*, 263. *Tbionville*, 272. *Tirnauw*, 373. *Toninguén*, II. 250. *The Tor*, I. 284. *Tournavento*, II. 8. *Trenschin*, I. 377. *Treves*, 279. *Turin*, 290. *Turnhoost*, 321. *Vaila*, II. 160. *Vecchio*, 27. *Verneuil*, I. 163. *Verona*, II. 160. *Vienna*, I. 365. *Vivo*, 195. *Villa-Viciosa*, 85. Another there, 97. *Vincenza*, II. 161. *Ulm*, 131. *Upsal*, 201. *Waitzen*, 370. *Warna*, 294. *Warsaw*, 303. *The White-Sea*, I. 290. *Wilmanstrand*, II. 343. *Wilmerguen*, I. 409. *Worcester*, 188. *Xeres*, 34. *York*, 186. *Zulpich*, 221.
- Battori Sigismund* his Progress against the *Turks*, II. 365.
Bavaria Elector of his Success against the *Turks*, II. 370.
Bavaria Elector of declares for *France*, I. 370. He flies into the *Netherlands*, 372. He is put under the Ban of the Empire, 374. He lays Claim to the *Austrian* Succession, 389.
Beaufort Duke of is killed, I. 277.
Becket Thomas of is assassinated, I. 152.
Bedford Duke of is made Regent of *France*, I. 162. Contest between him and the Duke of *Burgundy*, 163.
Benedict IX. Pope, II. 64. he is driven from *Rome*, *ib.* He resigns the Papal Dignity, *ib.*
Berauld of *Savoy*, II. 1.

I N D E X .

- Bernardo del Carpio* his Exploits against the *Moors*, I. 41.
Bero King of *Sweden*, II. 198. He is banished, 199.
Bertuccio Valerio Doge of *Venice*, II. 169. He is successful against the *Turks*, *ib.*
Beurre Denis is murdered, II. 223.
Birger administers the Affairs of *Sweden*, II. 203. He seizes the *Folkungers*, *ib.* He founds *Stockholm*, *ib.*
Birger King of *Sweden*, II. 204. He is forced to abdicate the Crown, 205. He is restored to it, *ib.* He perfidiously seizes his Brothers, 206. He flies into *Denmark*, *ib.* His son is beheaded, *ib.*
Biron Count is made Duke of *Courland*, II. 340. He is appointed Regent of *Russia*, 341. He is banished, 342. He is recalled from Exile, 344.
Biron Marshal is beheaded, I. 268.
Boccanegra Captain General of *Genoa*, II. 19. He is deposed, *ib.*
Boemond the Son of *Guiscard* reigns at *Antioch*, II. 125.
Bohemia is annexed to the *Austrian* Dominions, I. 353.
Boleslaus I. King of *Poland*, II. 290. His Wars are very successful, *ib.*
Boleslaus II. King of *Poland*, II. 291. He is successful in his Wars, *ib.* He is excommunicated, *ib.* The Bishop of *Cracaw* is beheaded by him, *ib.* He dies by his own hands, *ib.*
Boleslaus III. Prince of *Poland*, II. 291. He gains many Victories, *ib.* His Treatment of a Coward, *ib.* He divides his Dominions, 292.
Boleslaus IV. Prince of *Poland*, II. 292. He frustrates the Attempts of the Emperor to restore his Brother, *ib.* He cedes *Silesia* to his Brother, *ib.* The *Prussians* rout him, *ib.*
Boleslaus V. Prince of *Poland*, II. 293. His Reign is greatly disturbed, *ib.*
Bonde Thord is murdered, II. 212.
Bombardment of *Algiers*, I. 280. *Brussels*, 88. *Dieppe*, 284. *Genoa*, 280.
Boniface a Monk greatly promotes papal Power, II. 81.
Boniface of *Savoy*, II. 2. He dies in Prison, *ib.*
Boniface IX. Pope, II. 93. He reduces *Rome* to Obedience, *ib.* He builds the Castle *St. Angelo*, *ib.*
Boris Gud now Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 328. His Right is disputed by *Demetrius*, *ib.* He dies overwhelmed with Misfortunes, *ib.*
Bosnia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 352.
Bourbon Duke of goes over to the Emperor, I. 250. He takes *Francis I.* Prisoner, 251.
Bourbon Duke of becomes first Minister, I. 300. He is disgraced, *ib.*
Braganza Duke of is stabbed, I. 125.
Brandt General his Progress in *Prussia*, II. 310.
Brask Bishop his Intrigues in *Sweden*, II. 217.
Brazil Discovery thereof, I. 127. The *Dutch* make Settlements there, 325. It revolts from the *Dutch*, 326.

I N D E X.

Bretany is annexed to the *French Crown*, II. 245.
Breynteson Magnus is beheaded, II. 220.
Britain the largest Island formerly known, I. 142. Ancient State thereof, *ib.* The *Romans* conquer it, *ib.* It is ravaged by the *Picts* and *Scots*, 143. The *Saxons* come into it, *ib.*
Britons they build a Wall across *Scotland*, I. 142. They settle in *Gaul*, 217.
Bruce Robert his honest Answer to *Edward I.* I. 156.
Buckingham Duke of is beheaded, I. 168.
Bulgaria is subdued by the *Turks*, I. 355.
Bullen Anna is married to *Henry VIII.* I. 172.
Burgundy Duke of is assassinated, I. 241.
Burgundy Duke of is reconciled to *Charles VIII.* I. 243.
Burgundy Duke of is slain, I. 245.
Burgundy is annexed to the *Austrian Dominions*, I. 216.
Burgundians they settle in *Gaul*, I. 216.
Bythynia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 352.

C.

Cadwallader the last King of the old *British Race*, I. 143. He goes into *France*, *ib.*
Cæsar Borgia his Attempt in *Italy*, II. 93. He is forced to fly from *Rome*, 94.
Cambout Marquis of is slain, I. 286.
Campulus is banished from *Rome*, II. 63.
Canary Islands their Commodities, I. 114.
Candia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 368.
Canute II. King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He compleats the Conquest of *England*, *ib.*
Canute III. King of *Denmark*, II. 179.
Canute IV. King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He is slain in a Tumult, *ib.* He is canonized, *ib.*
Canute V. King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He is assassinated, *ib.*
Canute VI. King of *Denmark*, II. 180. He conquers *Esthonia* and *Livonia*, *ib.*
Canute King of *England*, I. 145. His just Reproof of Parasites, 146.
Canute King of *Sweden*, II. 202. The *Danes* are routed by him, *ib.*
Caponi Peter his Courage saves *Florence*, II. 41.
Cappadocia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 352.
Caramania is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 355.
Cardinal Patron, II. 105.
Cardinals the College of, II. 104.
Carelia is annexed to *Sweden*, II. 328.
Carloman King of *Germany*, I. 345. He conquers *Italy* and takes the Title of Emperor, *ib.*
Carloman Brother of *Pepin* opposes the Pope, II. 56. He is confined in a Monastery, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Carolo Ruzzini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 173.
- Carlos Don* takes Possession of *Parma* and *Placentia*, I. 107. He becomes King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 142. He accedes to the Preliminaries of *Vienna*, *ib.*
- Caron* his Intrigues against the *Portuguese* at *Japon*, I. 139.
- Carrario* Lord of *Padua* brings the Republick of *Venice* into imminent Danger, II. 154. His unhappy End, 156.
- Carthage* its fine Situation for Trade, I. 9. The *Romans* ruin it, 10.
- Carthaginians* their mistaken Policy, I. 9.
- Casimir I.* King of *Poland*, II. 291. He flies and goes into a Monastery, *ib.* *Masovia* is taken from the *Poles*, *ib.* He is recalled to the Throne, *ib.* He vanquishes *Maslas*, *ib.*
- Casimir II.* King of *Poland*, II. 292. He makes *Prussia* tributary, *ib.*
- Casimir III.* King of *Poland*, II. 294. He subdues part of *Russia*, *ib.* He forces the Duke of *Masovia* to do him Homage, *ib.*
- Casimir IV.* King of *Poland*, II. 294. Part of *Prussia* revolts from the *Teutonic Order* and submits to him, *ib.*
- Castile* its Counts are seized perfidiously, I. 42. It becomes independent of *Leon*, I. 43. Great Progress of its Counts, *ib.*
- Catalonians* their Sufferings, I. 98.
- Catherine Alexiowna* Empress of *Russia*, II. 338. A Conspiracy against her, *ib.*
- Catherine Carnaro* is adopted by the State of *Venice*, II. 157.
- Catherine de Medicis* obtains the Regency of *France*, I. 257.
- Catholic Majesty* origin of this Title, I. 72.
- Catinat* Marshal commands in *Italy*, II. 10.
- Charlemain* King of *France*, I. 225. He is crowned King of *Lombardy*, *ib.* He subdues Part of *Spain*, 226. He compleats the Conquest of *Germany*, *ib.* He goes to the Assistance of the Pope, II. 60. He confirms his Father's Grant to the Holy See, 61. He is proclaimed Emperor, *ib.* His Descendants lose the Imperial Dignity, I. 346.
- Charles II.* King of *France*, I. 227. He obtains the Imperial Dignity, *ib.*
- Charles III.* King of *France*, I. 228. Several Governors throw off their Obedience to him, *ib.* He dies in Prison, *ib.*
- Charles IV.* King of *France*, I. 234.
- Charles V.* King of *France*, I. 238. He takes much from the *English*, *ib.* The Emperor pays him a Visit, 239.
- Charles VI.* King of *France*, I. 239. His Expedition to *Naples* fails, *ib.* His Subjects take Arms against him, *ib.* He loses his Senses, 240. The *English* attack him, *ib.* His Queen is banished, 241. The Dauphin his Son is excluded, *ib.*
- Charles VII.* King of *France*, I. 242. The *English* bring him into great Straits, *ib.* He concludes a Truce with the *English*, 243. His Forces are routed at *Basil*, *ib.* He gains much from the *English*, 244. He dies of Grief, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Charles VIII.** King of *France*, I. 245. He annexes *Bretany* to the Crown, *ib.* He cedes the *Roussillon* to *Spain*, 246. He conquers *Naples* but loses it again, *ib.*
- Charles IX.** King of *France*, I. 245. His Reign is all along disturbed by civil War, *ib.*
- Charles I.** Emperor of *Germany*, see *Charlemain*.
- Charles II.** Emperor of *Germany*, see *Carloman*.
- Charles III.** Emperor of *Germany*, I. 346. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Charles IV.** Emperor of *Germany*, I. 355. He causes his Rival to be poisoned, *ib.* He annexes *Silesia* to *Bohemia*, *ib.* He publishes the *Golden Bull*, *ib.* He sells all that belonged to the Empire in *Italy*, *ib.*
- Charles V.** Emperor of *Germany*, I. 356. He causes *Luther* to be outlawed, 357. He attacks the Protestants, *ib.* He suppresses several Insurrections, *ib.* The *Turks* are repulsed by him, *ib.* His Intrigues in *Genoa*, II. 25. He resigns the Imperial Dignity, I. 358.
- Charles VI.** Emperor of *Germany*, see *Charles III.* of *Spain*.
- Charles I.** King of *Great-Britain*, I. 181. He makes Peace with *France* and *Spain*, *ib.* Mistakes in his Education, *ib.* He raises Money without a Parliament, 182. He oppresses the Puritans, 183. He endeavours to establish Episcopacy in *Scotland*, *ib.* He revokes Grants there, *ib.* He marches against the *Scotch*, 184. He makes large Concessions, 185. He seizes six Commons, *ib.* It comes to a Rupture between him and the Parliament, 186. He is delivered by the *Scotch* to the *English*, *ib.* He is beheaded, 188.
- Charles II.** King of *Great-Britain*, I. 190. He is proclaimed in *Scotland*, 188. Being routed at *Worcester* he flies to *France*, *ib.* He is restored, 190. He attacks the *Hollanders*, *ib.* He is forced to make Peace with them, *ib.* He refuses to pass the Exclusion Bill, 191. The Duke of *Monmouth* is banished by him, *ib.*
- Charles I.** King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 132. He defeats *Mainfroy*, *ib.* He routs *Conradin*, *ib.*
- Charles II.** King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 132. His Life is spared in an extraordinary Manner, *ib.* *Sicily* is taken from him, 133.
- Charles III.** King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 137. He obtains the Sirname of Peace-maker, *ib.* He is crowned King of *Hungary*, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Charles I.** King of *Spain*, I. 72. He succeeds to the Imperial Dignity, *ib.* He takes *Francis I.* Prisoner, 73. He subdues the *Milanese*, *ib.* He shuts the Pope up in the Castle *St. Angelo*, *ib.* He restores *Muley Hassan* King of *Tunis*, 74. He penetrates into *France*, 75. He resigns the Crown, 76.
- Charles II.** King of *Spain*, I. 85. He is attacked by the *French*, 86. He joins against *France*, 87. He is disgusted at the Partition Treaty, 88. He appoints the Duke of *Anjou* to succeed him, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Charles III.** King of Spain, I. 91. He arrives in *Portugal*, *ib.* Several Powers declare for him, *ib.* He is proclaimed at *Saragossa*, 94. He gains Ground in *Italy*, 95. The Pope acknowledges him, 96. *Naples* submits to him, *ib.* *Sardinia* is subdued for him, *ib.* He is advanced to the Imperial Dignity, 97. He leaves *Spain*, *ib.* *Great-Britain* grows cool to his Interest, 98. He continues the War alone, 380. He exchanges *Sardinia* for *Sicily*, 384. He suspends the *Ostend* Company, 385. He institutes the *Pragmatick Sanction*, *ib.* He supports the Election of *Augustus II.* to the *Polish* Throne, 387. *France*, *Spain* and *Sardinia* unite against him, *ib.* His War with the *Turks* costs him dear, 388. His Daughter the Archdutchess is attacked on all Sides, 389.
- Charles** King of Sweden, II. 201. He is put to Death, *ib.*
- Charles VIII.** King of Sweden, II. 212. He is made Regent, 211. He is chosen King, 212. He is driven out of the Kingdom, 213. He is restored, *ib.* He is forced to resign the Throne, *ib.* He is again restored, 214.
- Charles IX.** King of Sweden, II. 230. He refuses to admit the Catholick Religion into his Dutchy of *Sundermania*, 225. He is made Regent, 228. He repulses the Forces of *Sigismond*, *ib.* He is raised to the Throne, 230. The *Poles* worst him, *ib.* His Son *Gustavus Adolphus* repulses the *Danes*, *ib.*
- Charles X.** King of Sweden, II. 246. He revokes the Grants of his Predecessors, *ib.* He attacks *Poland*, *ib.* His surprizing Progress against the *Danes*, 247.
- Charles XI.** King of Sweden, II. 247. He attacks *Brandenburg*, 248. He establishes the Grand Commission, *ib.* He raises the Value of Coin, *ib.* He supports the Duke of *Holstein*, 249.
- Charles XII.** King of Sweden, II. 249. *Denmark*, *Poland* and *Russia* unite against him, *ib.* He routs the *Russians*, 250. He deposes *Augustus* and causes *Stanislaus* to be elected King of *Poland*, 251. His Cruelty to Count *Patkul*, 253. He penetrates into *Russia*, 255. He retreats into *Turky*, *ib.* The Allies take much from him, 256. He returns from *Turky*, 257. He is killed before *Fredericksbal*, 258.
- Charles I.** Duke of Savoy, II. 5.
- Charles II.** Duke of Savoy, II. 5.
- Charles III.** Duke of Savoy, II. 5. His Dominions being overrun by the *French* he dies of Grief, *ib.*
- Carolo Contarini** Doge of *Venice*, II. 169.
- Charles Emanuel I.** Duke of Savoy, II. 6. His Insult upon *Henry III.* is revenged, *ib.* His Attempt on *Geneva* fails, *ib.* He attacks *Montferrat*, 7. The *Genoese* are attacked by him, *ib.* His Dominions are ravaged, *ib.* His unhappy End, 8.
- Charles Emanuel II.** Duke of Savoy, II. 8. He cuts a Passage thro' Mount *Viso*, 9. A Fright kills him, *ib.*
- Charles Emanuel III.** King of *Sardinia*, II. 13. He joins in a War against the Emperor, 14.
- Charnock** and others are executed, I. 194.

I N D E X

- Charter of Forests*, I. 154. The great one, *ib.*
- Childerick King of the Franks*, I. 219. He flies into *Germany*, *ib.* He is recalled, *ib.* He routs the *Saxons*, *ib.* He subdues the *Alans*, *ib.*
- Childerick King of the Visgoths*, I. 30.
- Chio* is taken by the *Turks*, II. 171.
- Christian I. King of Denmark*, II. 183. He forces the *Swedes* to acknowledge him but they soon revolt, *ib.*
- Christian II. King of Denmark*, II. 184. He is proclaimed in *Sweden*, *ib.* The *Swedes* drive him from thence, *ib.* He flies into the *Netherlands*, *ib.* He dies in Prison, 185.
- Christian III. King of Denmark*, II. 185. He prevails over *Christian II.* and his Adherents, *ib.*
- Christian IV. King of Denmark*, II. 185. He joins with the Protestants in *Germany*, 186. He cedes much to *Sweden*, *ib.*
- Christian V. King of Denmark*, II. 187. *Sweden* is attacked by him, 188. He invades *Holstein*, *ib.* He attacks *Hamburg*, *ib.* The Quarrel with *Holstein* is revived by him, 189.
- Christian VI. King of Denmark*, II. 191. A Misunderstanding between him and *Hamburg*, *ib.* He encourages Commerce, 192. He lays Claim to *Steinhorst*, *ib.*
- Christian I. King of Sweden*, II. 213.
- Christian II. King of Sweden*, II. 216. A Rebellion against him, *ib.* He flies into the *Netherlands*, 217.
- Christiana Queen of Sweden*, II. 240. She continues the War in *Germany*, *ib.* Most of her Allies desert her, 241. She attacks *Denmark*, 244. The Crown is resigned by her, 206.
- Christopher I. King of Denmark*, II. 180. Being excommunicated he is poisoned with the Host, *ib.*
- Christopher II. King of Denmark*, II. 181. He is driven out of the Kingdom, *ib.* He is mortally wounded, *ib.*
- Christopher III. King of Denmark*, II. 183.
- Christopher King of Sweden*, II. 212.
- Christophlus* deposes the Pope, II. 58. He is disgraced, 59. His Friends are recalled from Exile, *ib.*
- Christophoro Moro Doge of Venice*, II. 157. The *Turks* take much from him, *ib.*
- Cid* his Exploits against the *Moors*, I. 51.
- Cinq-Mars* conspires against Cardinal *Richelieu*, I. 272. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Clarence Duke of* is murdered, I. 167.
- Clement James* stabs *Henry III.* I. 264.
- Clement II. Pope*, II. 65.
- Clodion King of the Franks*, I. 217. He is driven out of *Gaul*, *ib.* He reenters it, *ib.*
- Clothaire II. King of France*, I. 124.
- Clovis King of France*, I. 220. He puts an End to the *Roman Power* in *Gaul*, *ib.* Regulations in the Government made by him,

I N D E X.

- him, *ib.* He embraces Christianity, 221. He is successful against the *Germans*, *ib.* He obtains the Name of eldest Son of the Church, *ib.* The *Britons* are subdued by him, 222. He conquers *Burgundy*, *ib.* He is successful against the *Visgoths*, *ib.* He subdues many petty States, 223.
- Cobham* Lord suffers Death, I. 180.
- Cologne* Elector of is put under the Ban of the Empire, I. 374.
- Compromise* an Association of the *Netherlanders* so called, I. 314.
- Conde* Prince of joins with the *Huguenots*, I. 258. He is killed, 260.
- Conde* Prince of is confined by Cardinal *Mazarine*, I. 274. He goes over to the *Spaniards*, 275.
- Conferences* at *Gertrudenberg*, I. 293. *Poissy*, 285.
- Congress* of *Cambray*, I. 300. *Courtray*, 86. *Soissons*, 301.
- Conrade* I. Emperor of Germany, I. 346.
- Conrade* II. Emperor of Germany, I. 348. His Reign is disturbed by Civil War, *ib.* He annexes *Burgundy* and *Arles* to the Empire, *ib.* He is successful against the *Poles*, *ib.*
- Conrade* III. Emperor of Germany, I. 350. He overcomes *Henry* Duke of *Saxony*, *ib.* His Expedition to *Palestine* is unsuccessful, *ib.*
- Conrade* King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 131. He quarrels with the Pope, *ib.*
- Conrade* Duke of *Masovia* his Country is ravaged, II. 271. He calls the Knights of the *Teutonic* Order to his Assistance, *ib.*
- Couradin* Duke of *Suabia* is beheaded at *Naples*, II. 132.
- Constance* of *Sicily* Prophecy concerning her, II. 128.
- Constant* surprizes and slays his Brother *Constantine*, II. 49. He is supplanted by *Magnencius*, *ib.*
- Constantine* is slain by *Constant*, II. 49.
- Constantine* the Great divides the Empire, II. 48. He stops the Persecution of the *Christians*, *ib.*
- Constantinople* is made the Imperial Residence, I. 109. Divisions in the Imperial Family there, 149. It is taken by the *Turks*, II. 356.
- Constantius* overcomes *Magnencius*, II. 49.
- Constitution* a military one is bad, I. 11.
- Constitution* *Unigenitus*, I. 298.
- Conti* Prince of arrives at *Dantzick*, II. 309. He is proclaimed King of *Poland*, *ib.* He returns to *France*, 311.
- Convention* betwixt *Great-Britain* and *Spain*, I. 208.
- Copenhagen* is burnt, II. 191.
- Corfew* Bell is ordered to be rung in *England*, I. 148.
- Corfu* is saved by General *Schulemburg*, II. 172.
- Corinth* the Wall at its Isthmus is demolished, II. 355.
- Corfica* is taken from the *Saracens* by the *Genoese*, II. 17. Some Imperial Troops are sent to quell an Insurrection in this Island, 29. A Treaty is concluded with the *Malecontents*, 30. They fly to Arms again, 31. They proclaim *Theodore*, 32. They are reduced to Obedience by the *French*, 35.

I N D E X.

- Cosmo* Lord of *Florence*, II. 38. He is banished, *ib.* The People invite him back, *ib.* He is called *Father of his Country*, 39.
- Cosmo* I. Duke of *Florence*, II. 43. He enlarges his Dominions, *ib.* He loses both his Sons in one Day, *ib.* He is made Grand Duke, *ib.*
- Cosmo* II. Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 44. He succours the Duke of *Mantua*, *ib.* The Emperor is assisted by him, *ib.*
- Cosmo* III. Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 45.
- Cossacks* they are civilized, II. 296. Their Exploits against the *Turks*, *ib.* A Quarrel betwixt them and the *Poles*, 301.
- Covenant* or *Directory* is confirmed by the *Scotch* Parliament, I. 184.
- Courland* is erected into a Dutchy, II. 295.
- Cracus* Prince of *Poland*, II. 289. He founds *Cracaw*, *ib.* His Son assassinates him, *ib.*
- Crescence* the Consul is executed at *Rome*, I. 348.
- Cromwell* *Oliver* brings the Army into an Association against the Parliament, I. 187. He is successful against the *Scotch*, *ib.* He suppresses the Royalists in *Ireland*, 188. He is made Protector, *ib.* He forces the *Hollanders* into his Terms, 189. *Jamaica* is conquered by him, *ib.* His Friendship is sought by divers Powers, *ib.* Some Account of his Conduct, *ib.*
- Cromwell* *Richard* is removed from the Protectorship, I. 190.
- Crusades* are first set on foot, I. 230. Reflections upon them, *ib.*
- Cyprus* is ceded to the *Turks*, II. 163.
- Cyrus* his wife Institutions, I. 4.
- Czarowitz* Son of *Peter* the Great is condemned for conspiring against his Father, II. 336.

D.

- Dagobert* King of *France*, I. 224.
- Dalmatius* is put to Death, II. 48.
- Damader* King of *Sweden*, II. 198. His Subjects sacrifice him, *ib.*
- Damascus* II. Pope, II. 65.
- Danes* they settle in *England*, I. 141. Manners of them, II. 193.
- Darius* his imprudent Conduct, I. 7.
- Darnly* Lord marries *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, I. 177. He stabs *David* *Ritz*, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- David* King of *Scotland* is taken Prisoner, I. 159.
- Dauphin* why the eldest Son of *France* is so called, I. 236.
- Dauphins* three die within a very short Time, I. 294.
- D'Ancre* Marshal suffers Death, I. 269.
- D'Aylva* Duke conquers *Portugal*, I. 128. His cruelty in the *Netherlands*, 316.
- De Groy* Duke saves *Buda* from the *Turks*, II. 371.
- D'Egmont* Count is beheaded, I. 315.
- Defender* of the Faith Origin of this Title, I. 172.

- De Foix Gaston* is slain, II. 161.
De Haro Don John is beheaded, I. 65.
De la Marck Count takes *Brill*, I. 315.
De Wit Cornelius and *John* are torn to Pieces, I. 329.
Demetrius the *Poles* support his Claim to *Russia*, II. 297. He is proclaimed but the *Russians* soon throw off all Allegiance to him, 299.
Denhoff Count is slain, I. 370.
Denis King of Portugal, I. 222. He founds many magnificent Buildings, *ib.*
Denmark a very ancient Kingdom, II. 178. Great Confusion in it, 179. An Interregnum there, 181. Its Sovereignty is made absolute, 187. Manners of its Inhabitants, 193. Its Soil 194. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*
Depredations of the *Spaniards* upon *British* Ships, I. 106.
Derwentwater Earl of is beheaded, I. 202.
Devolution Right of a Custom in Brabant, I. 86.
Didier King of Lombardy, II. 58. He seizes some Places in the *Exercate*, *ib.* He stirs up an Insurrection against *Pepin*, *ib.* He deposes the Pope, *ib.* He lays Siege to *Rome*, 59. He is sent Prisoner into *France*, 61.
Disb a famous one of *Emerald* in *Genoa*, II. 17.
Dolgorucki's executed, II. 340.
Dominico Monegario Doge of Venice, II. 145.
Dominico Cantarino Doge of Venice, II. 147. He is successful against *Guiscard*, *ib.*
Dominico Cantarini Doge of Venice, II. 169. He loses *Candia*, *ib.*
Dominico Fiabenco Doge of Venice, II. 147.
Dominico Mich'ele Doge of Venice, II. 147. He assists *Baldwin King of Jerusalem*, *ib.* He takes much from the *Eastern Empire*, *ib.*
Dominico Morisini Doge of Venice, II. 148.
Dominico Silvio Doge of Venice, II. 147. He is deposed, *ib.*
Doria his brave and disinterested Conduct, II. 25. His Artifice to bring *Venice* into a War, 161.
Doxat General is beheaded, II. 377.
Dregon Count of Pouille, II. 123. He supports himself against the *Greeks*, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*

E.

- E**AST-Indies the Way to them by Sea is discovered, I. 226.
Ecclesiastick Court one is erected in the *Netherlands*, I. 312.
Eclipse a remarkable one, I. 30. Another, I. 93.
Eckius disputes at *Baden*, I. 404.
Edict of Spire the *Lutheran Princes* protest against it, I. 357.
Edmund Ironside King of England, I. 145. *Canute* shares the Kingdom with him, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Edward the Confessor King of England*, I. 146. He introduces the Custom of Touching for the Evil, *ib.*
- Edward I. King of England*, I. 155. He subdues the Principality of *Wales*, *ib.* He makes the King of *Scotland* Prisoner, 156.
- Edward II. of England*, I. 157. The *Scotch* are too many for him, *ib.* He defeats the Barons, *ib.* He is murdered in Prison, *ib.*
- Edward III. King of England*, I. 157. He is successful against the *Scotch*, 158. He makes great Progress in *France*, *ib.* He quits all Pretensions to the *French* Crown, 159. He loses much in *France*, 160.
- Edward IV. King of England*, I. 166. He defeats *Henry* his Rival, *ib.* The Earl of *Warwick* makes him Prisoner, *ib.* He routs *Warwick*, *ib.*
- Edward V. King of England*, I. 167. He is murdered in the Tower, 168.
- Edward VI. King of England*, I. 174. He establishes the Protestant Religion, *ib.* *Jane Gray* is appointed to succeed him, *ib.*
- Edward Son of Edward III. of England* signalizes himself in *France*, I. 159. He takes *John* of *France* Prisoner, *ib.* He is made Duke of *Guyenne*, *ib.* He assists *Peter* of *Castile*, *ib.*
- Edward King of Portugal*, I. 124. He dies of a Plague given him by a Letter, *ib.*
- Edward of Savoy* II. 3.
- Egbert King of England*, I. 144. All the *Saxons* Kingdoms are united under him, *ib.*
- Egbert Landgrave of Thuring* is slain, I. 348.
- Egica King of the Visgoths*, I. 32.
- Egypt* is annexed to the *Persian* Empire, I. 4. The *Romans* subdue it, 9. It is annexed to the *Turkish* Empire, II. 360.
- Elizabeth Empress of Russia*, II. 343. She confines the Princess of *Brunswick Wolfenbuttle* and her Family, *ib.* She recalls the Duke of *Courland* from Exile, 344. She banishes the Counts *Osterman* and *Munich*, *ib.* *Finland* is conquered by her Troops, 346.
- Elizabeth Queen of England*, I. 176. She refuses to marry *Philip* of *Spain*, *ib.* She reestablishes the Protestant Religion, *ib.* The *Puritans* and *Papists* are kept under by her, *ib.* She makes *Mary* Queen of *Scots* Prisoner, 178. She assists the Protestants in *France*, *ib.* She supports the United Provinces, *ib.* She plays off her Lovers artfully, 179. Trade and Manufactures flourish under her, *ib.* She maintains her Superiority at Sea, *ib.*
- Emanuel King of Portugal*, I. 125. The Emperor *Maximillian* claims his Crown, *ib.* He banishes the *Moors* and *Jews*, 126. He makes great Conquests in the *East-Indies*, *ib.* He makes Settlements on the *African* Coast, *ib.* He does the same in *Brazil*, 127.
- Emanuel Philibert Duke of Savoy*, II. 5. He commands at the Battle of *St. Quintin*, *ib.* His Dominions are restored to him, 6. The *Vaudse* rebel against him, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Engelbrecht Engelbrechtson* heads the *Dalecarlians*, II. 211. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- England* is so called from the *Angles*, I. 143. Its seven Kingdoms are united under *Egbert*, 144. Its Commons are admitted to Parliament, 150. Its Barons take up Arms against *John*, 154. They do the same against *Henry III.* 155. It begins to trade to the *East-Indies*, 179. It plants Colonies in the *West-Indies*, 181. *Scotland* is united to it, 195. See *Great-Britain*.
- English* Manners of them, I. 209.
- Epamonidas* makes *Thebes* famous, I. 6.
- Erasmus* paves the Way for the Reformation, II. 96.
- Eric I.* King of *Denmark*, II. 178.
- Eric II.* King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He dies on a Pilgrimage, *ib.*
- Eric V.* King of *Denmark*, II. 180. He is slain in a Quarrel with his Brothers, *ib.*
- Eric VI.* King of *Denmark*, II. 181. The Bishops disturb his Reign, *ib.* He is murdered by his own Subjects, *ib.*
- Eric VII.* King of *Denmark*, II. 181.
- Eric VIII.* King of *Denmark*, II. 182. He is deprived of his Dominions, *ib.*
- Eric I.* King of *Sweden*, II. 199.
- Eric II.* King of *Sweden*, II. 199. He greatly extends his Dominions, *ib.*
- Eric III.* King of *Sweden*, II. 201. He reforms the Laws, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Eric IV.* King of *Sweden*, II. 202.
- Eric V.* King of *Sweden*, II. 202. He overcomes the *Folckungers*, 203. He suppresses a Rebellion in *Finland*, *ib.*
- Eric XIII.* King of *Sweden*, 210. The *Dalecarlians* rebel against him, 211. The Senate renounces all Allegiance to him, *ib.*
- Eric XIV.* King of *Sweden*, II. 221. He gives over his Voyage to *England*, 222. He offers Marriage to several Princesses, *ib.* He throws his Brother *John* into Prison, *ib.* The House of *Sture* suffer much from him, *ib.* The *Danes* are repulsed by him, 223. He lays a Scheme for cutting off his Brothers, *ib.* They depose him, *ib.*
- Eric Alexson* Regent of *Sweden*, II. 213.
- Eric Puck* defeats *Charles Canutson*, II. 211. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Erizzo Paul* is cleft asunder with a Scimitar, II. 157.
- Erwig* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 32.
- Essex* Earl of takes *Cadiz*, I. 179. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Essex* Earl of is found dead in the Tower, I. 191.
- Ethelred II.* of *England*, I. 144. He flies into *Normandy*, 145. He returns from thence, *ib.*
- Eude* King of *France*, I. 228.
- Eugene* Prince his Progress in *Italy*, I. 98. He signalizes himself against the *Turks*, 366. His Progress in *Hungary*, 383.
- Eurick*

I N D E X.

- Eurick* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 23. He drives the *Romans* out of *Spain*, *ib.*
Exclusion Bill in *England* passes both houses, I. 191.
Exercate is conquered by the *Lombards*, II. 54. It is given to the Pope, 58.

F.

- Favila* King of *Asturia*, I. 36. He is killed by a Bear, *ib.*
Ferdinand I. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 358. He annexes *Hungary* and *Bohemia* to the *Austrian* Dominions, *ib.*
Ferdinand II. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 360. He ravages the Palatinate, 361. His Troops overrun lower *Saxony*, *ib.* He is robbed of all his Conquests by *Gustavus Adolphus*, *ib.* He makes a separate Peace with *Saxony*, 362.
Ferdinand III. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 363.
Ferdinand I. King of *Naples*, II. 139. He prevails against *John Duke of Arjou*, *ib.*
Ferdinand II. King of *Naples*, II. 139. *Charles VIII.* of *France* deprives him of his Dominions, *ib.* He is restored to them, *ib.*
Ferdinand King of *Portugal*, I. 122. He lays claim to *Castile*, *ib.*
Ferdinand I. King of *Castile*, I. 49. He succeeds to *Leon*, *ib.* He gains Advantages over the *Moors*, *ib.* He takes the Title of Emperor, *ib.*
Ferdinand II. King of *Castile*, I. 61. He succeeds to *Leon*, *ib.* His Progress in *Moorish Spain*, *ib.*
Ferdinand III. King of *Castile*, I. 63. His Right to the Crown is disputed, *ib.* A cruel Sentence of his, 64. He dies in an uncommon Manner, *ib.*
Ferdinand IV. King of *Castile*, I. 69. *Jane* Daughter of *Henry* disputes his Right to *Castile*, *ib.* He establishes the *Inquisition*, *ib.* He succeeds to *Arragon*, 70. He puts an End to the *Moorish* Power, *ib.* He becomes Master of *Naples*, 71. He treats *Gonsalvo* the Great Captain ill, *ib.* *Navarre* is conquered by him, *ib.* His Son *Philip* reigns in *Castile*, *ib.* He is restored to *Castile*, *ib.* He obtains the Surname of *Catholick*, 72. *Tripoli* is taken by him, *ib.*
Ferdinand I. Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 44. He throws off the Yoke of *Spain*, *ib.* He assists *Henry IV.* of *France*, *ib.*
Ferdinand II. Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 45. He supports *Edward Duke of Parma*, *ib.* He assists the *Venetians*, *ib.*
F. E. R. T. Origin of this Motto, II. 3.
Fier-a bras signalizes himself in *Sicily*, II. 122. He becomes Master of the *Pouille*, *ib.* The *Greeks* are driven by him from thence, *ib.*
Fiesque a Conspiracy headed by him, II. 25.
Finland is annexed to *Sweden*, II. 299. It is conquered by the *Russians*, II. 345.
Fisher Bishop of *Rocheſter* is beheaded, I. 172.
Flatterers are prudently reprov'd, I. 146.

I N D E X.

Flavius Chinduasinte King of the *Visgoths*, I. 30.

Flavius Recefuinte King of the *Visgoths*, I. 30. The Laws reformed by him, *ib.*

Fleury Cardinal becomes Prime Minister in *France*, I. 300.

Florence the House of *Medicis* is banished from thence, II. 40.

The Designs of *Charles VIII.* of *France* thereupon are baffled by a single Man, 41. The House of *Medicis* is restored, *ib.* Being forced to fly again it is a second Time restored by *Charlequint*, *ib.* It is made a Grand Dutchy, 34.

Florinda the Rape of her is followed with a Revolution, I. 34.

Folckungers are beheaded, II. 203. Their Power in *Sweden* is quite broken, 204.

Fore de Sobrabe, I. 40.

France when first so called, I. 220. It is divided into several Kingdoms, 223. Dispute betwixt its Ambassadors and the Court of *Lisbon*, 133. Its Kings lose all their Authority, 224. Many independent Sovereignties therein, 229. It is ravaged by the *Engliff*, 237. Origin of its Claim to *Milan*, 240. The *Jesuits* are banished from this Kingdom, 267. Contest betwixt its Ambassador and that of *Spain*, 276. It is well peopled, 304. Manners of its Inhabitants, *ib.* Its Strength, 305. Its Soil, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Settlements, 306. Its Government, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 307.

Francis I. King of *France*, I. 249. He recovers the *Milanese*, 250. He is taken Prisoner by the *Spaniards*, 251. He enters into an Alliance against *Spain*, *ib.*

Francis II. King of *France*, I. 256.

Francis Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 144. He is poisoned, *ib.*

Francis Stephen Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 46.

Francis Duke of *Savoy*, II. 8.

Francisco Dandolo Doge of *Venice*, II. 152.

Francisco Foscari Doge of *Venice*, II. 156. He attacks *Milan*, *ib.* He assists *Francis Sforça*, *ib.* The *Turks* fall upon him, 157. He is deposed, *ib.*

Francisco Contarini Doge of *Venice*, II. 167.

Francisco Donato Doge of *Venice*, II. 162.

Francisco Erizzo Doge of *Venice*, II. 168. He joins with *Edward* Duke of *Parma* against the Pope, *ib.*

Francis Fregosa Doge of *Genoa*, II. 24.

Francisco Melino Doge of *Venice*, II. 168. The *Turks* attack him, *ib.*

Francisco Morosini Doge of *Venice*, II. 170. He signalizes himself against the *Turks*, *ib.* A Statue is erected in Honour of him, *ib.*

Francisco Venerio Doge of *Venice*, II. 162. He is called *Princeps pacis*, *ib.*

• *Franks* Origin of this Name, I. 217. They enter into a League of Defence, *ib.* They are driven out of *Gaul* by the *Romans*, *ib.* They reenter and extend themselves in *Gaul*, *ib.*

Frederick

I N D E X.

- Frederick I. King of Denmark, II. 185. He throws Christian his Rival into Prison, ib.*
- Frederick II. King of Denmark, II. 185. He attacks Sweden, ib.*
- Frederick III. King of Denmark, II. 186. His War with Sweden costs him dear, ib.*
- Frederick IV. King of Denmark, II. 189. He is attacked in his Capital, ib. He asserts his Right to Lubeck, 190. He attacks the Swedes, ib.*
- Frederick I. Emperor of Germany, I. 351. He loses all Authority in Italy, ib. He is drowned in Palestine, ib.*
- Frederick II. Emperor of Germany, I. 352. He recovers Jerusalem from the Infidels, ib. He is excommunicated and deposed, ib. He opposes the Pope's ambitious Designs, ib.*
- Frederick III. Emperor of Germany, I. 356. He engages in a War with Hungary, ib.*
- Frederick King of Naples, II. 139. The French and Spaniards subdue Naples, ib. He dies a Prisoner in France, 140.*
- Frederick King of the Two Sicilies, II. 130. He succeeds to the Empire, ib.*
- Frederick I. King of Sicily, II. 133.*
- Frederick II. King of Sicily, II. 136.*
- Frederick King of Sweden, II. 259. He signs a Capitulation, ib. He succeeds to the Landgraviate of Hesse, 262. The Laws are reformed by him, 263. He after resigning the Crown re-assumes it, ib. He attacks Russia, 264.*
- Frederick Duke of Brunswick being elected Emperor is assassinated in his Way to be crowned, I. 356.*
- Frederick Elector Palatine accepts the Crown of Bohemia, I. 360. His Affairs are quite ruined, 361.*
- Frederick Grand Master of the Teutonic Order, II. 277. He throws off all Subjection to Poland, ib.*
- Frederick Henry Prince of Orange Stadtholder, I. 325. He defeats Papenheim, ib.*
- Frederick Duke of Prussia, II. 282. He joins in the first Grand Alliance against France, ib. He takes the Title of King, ib. He comes into the second Grand Alliance, 283. He claims the Succession of Orange, ib.*
- Frederick William Duke of Prussia, II. 280. Some Bishopricks in Germany are secularized for him, ib. He assists Charles Gustavus, ib. Prussia is declared independent of Poland, 281. The Swedes are repulsed by him, ib.*
- Frederick I. King of Prussia, II. 282. He joins in a War against France, 283. He claims the Dominions of the House of Orange, ib.*
- Frederick II. King of Prussia, II. 284. He assists in driving the Swedes from Pomerania, ib. His prudent and generous Conduct in Prussia, ib.*
- Frederick III. King of Prussia, II. 284. He attacks Silesia, ib.*
- French Manners of them, I. 304.*
- Froila King of Asturia, I. 37. He causes his Brother to be assassinated, ib. He is himself murdered, ib.*

I N D E X.

- Froila* I. King of *Leon*, I. 37.
Froila II. King of *Leon*, I. 42.
Frotho III. King of *Denmark*, II. 178. He becomes Master of
 several other Kingdoms, *ib.* He subdues the *Vandals*, *ib.*
Frotho King of *Sweden*, II. 198.

G.

- G***abel* is first imposed in *France*, I. 236.
Galatia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 352.
Galle Peter disputes in *Sweden*, II. 218.
Gaius is deposed by *Constantius*, II. 49.
Garcia King of *Asturia*, I. 42.
Garcias Sancho Count of *Castile* his untimely End, I. 47.
Gaul its ancient State, I. 216. The *Romans* conquer it, *ib.* The
 barbarous Nations settle therein, *ib.*
Generals it is dangerous to invest them with too much Power, I. 18.
Geneva an Attempt to surprize this City, II. 6.
Genoa its ancient State, II. 17. It is sacked by the *Lombards*, *ib.*
 It is governed by Counts, *ib.* It throws off Subjection to these,
ib. Its naval Strength becomes considerable, *ib.* It assists *Bald-*
win King of *Jerusalem*, *ib.* It engages in a War with the *Pisans*,
 18. It sides with the Pope, *ib.* It has Wars with *Venice* and
Pisa, 19. Its Sovereignty is conferred upon the King of *Naples*,
 20. It submits to the Duke of *Milan*, *ib.* It becomes Mistress
 of *Lesbos*, *ib.* It engages in Wars with *Cyprus* and *Venice*,
 21. It submits to *France*, 22. It submits to *Montferrat*, *ib.*
 Its Liberty is purchased, *ib.* It is rent in Pieces by the Factions
 of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines*, *ib.* It submits to *Milan*, *ib.* It sub-
 mits again to *France*, 23. It recovers its Liberty, *ib.* It en-
 gages in a War with *Florence*, *ib.* It submits again to *Milan*, *ib.*
 It is conquered by *France*, *ib.* It drives out the *French* and
 chooses a Duke, 24. It is taken by the *Spaniards*, *ib.* *Doria*
 restores its Liberty, *ib.* *Fiesque* conspires against the *Dorias*, 25.
 It seizes *Final*, 26. Divisions amongst its Nobility, *ib.* *France*
 and *Savoy* attack it, *ib.* It is bombarded by the *French*, 27.
 It buys *Final* of the Emperor, 28. Its Dominions, 35. Man-
 ners of its People, *ib.* Its Government, 36. Its Revenue
 and Trade, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*
Genoese Manners of them, II. 36.
George I. King of *Great-Britain*, I. 200. He suppresses a Rebellion,
 202. He destroys a *Spanish* Fleet, 203. He sends a Fleet upon
 the *Spanish* Coast, 205.
George II. King of *Great-Britain*, I. 206. He carries *Don Carlos*
 into *Italy*, 207. He sends a Fleet to *Lisbon*, 208. He engages
 in a War with *Spain*, *ib.*
George Prince of *Darmstadt* is killed, I. 92.
George Ragotzki Prince of *Transilvania* is slain, II. 368.
George William Duke of *Prussia*, II. 280. He assists the *Prote-*
stants in *Germany*, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Germans* Manners of them, II. 389
- Germany* ancient State thereof, I. 345. It is annexed to the Empire of the *Franks*, *ib.* It becomes independent of *France*, *ib.* Its Princes throw off Subjection to the Emperor, 346. It is miserably torn to Pieces, 351. Interregnum there, 353. Manners of its People, 389. Its Soil, 390. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its different Princes, *ib.* Its Constitution, 391. Inconveniencies which this is subject to, 392. Union amongst its Members not to be expected, 394. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 395.
- Gesalick* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 23. He is slain, 24.
- Gibelines* a Faction in *Italy*, I. 352.
- Gibraltar* taken by the Allies, I. 52. Its Restitution is demanded, 204. It is besieged, 206.
- Gilon* the *Roman* Governor is chosen King of the *Franks*, I. 219. They soon throw off their Allegiance to him, *ib.*
- Giovanni Bembo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 165. He puts an End to the Piracies of the *Uscoques*, 166.
- Giovanni Cornaro* I. Doge of *Venice*, II. 168. He assists *Charles* Duke of *Nevers*, *ib.*
- Giovanni Cornaro* II. Doge of *Venice*, II. 172. The *Turks* fall upon him, *ib.*
- Giovanni Dandolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 151. Ducats are first coined by him, *ib.*
- Giovanni Delfino* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154.
- Giovanni Galbaio* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. He is banished, *ib.*
- Giovanni Gravenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154.
- Giovanni Mocenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 158. He forces *Hercules* of *Ferrara* to his Terms, *ib.*
- Giovanni Participatio* I. Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Giovanni Participatio* II. Doge of *Venice*, II. 146.
- Giovanni Pisauo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 169.
- Giovanni Soranzo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 152. He makes Conquests in *Dalmatia*, *ib.*
- Giustiniano Participatio* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145.
- Glocester* Duke of is Regent of *England*, I. 162. He is successful in *Flanders*, 164. He is murdered in Prison, 165.
- Gondebaud* becomes Master of *Burgundy*, I. 221.
- Gonsalvo* King of *Sobrabé* is assassinated, I. 49.
- Gonsalvo* the Great Captain is used ill, I. 71.
- Gonsalvo Nunes* Count of *Castile*, I. 43. He signalizes himself against the *Moors*, *ib.* His unhappy End, 45.
- Gormo* II. King of *Denmark*, II. 178.
- Gothard Ketler* Duke of *Courland*, II. 318.
- Goths* settle in *Spain*, I. 21. In *Gaul*, 216. Their Kingdom is annexed to that of the *Swedes*, II. 200.
- Government* Civil none before the Flood, I. 1. Origin thereof, 2. Its first Form was heroical, *ib.* Sudden Changes therein liable to Defects, 15. Monarchic not proper for a large and populous City, 141.
- Grandeës* Origin of this Order, I. 37.

I N D E X.

- Grand Vizir* Institution of this Office, II. 353.
Granville Cardinal his violent Proceedings in the *Netherlands*, I. 313.
Gray Lord suffers Death, I. 180.
Great Britain its Soil, I. 210. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Settlements, 211. Its Constitution, 212. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest in General, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 214.
Greece many independant States there, I. 5.
Gregory III. Pope, II. 51. He refuses to pull down Images, *ib.*
Gregory VI. Pope, II. 64. He rectifies Disorders in the Holy See, *ib.*
Gregory VII. Pope, II. 68. He greatly extends the Power of *Rome*, *ib.* He excommunicates the Emperor, *ib.* The Emperor shuts him up in *Rome*, *ib.*
Grifler his Insolence in *Switzerland*, I. 399. His Cruelty to *William Tell*, 400.
Grifons are assisted by *France*, I. 271.
Gritto General is made Prisoner, II. 160.
Grotius *Hugo* is condemned to Prison for Life, I. 160.
Grumbach stirs up a Commotion in *Germany*, I. 359.
Guelfs a Faction in *Italy*, I. 352.
Guildford Lord is beheaded, I. 175.
Gui t an Instance of the Difficulty to conceal it, I. 48.
Guise Duke of is murdered, I. 259.
Guise Duke of his Intrigues to get the *French* Crown, I. 263.
Guise Duke of is carried Prisoner into *Spain*, II. 141.
Guises manage every thing in *France*, I. 257.
Guise the Duke and Cardinal of are both assassinated, I. 264.
Gustavus I. King of *Sweden*, II. 217. He heads the *Dalecarlians*, *ib.* The Clergy give him much Trouble, *ib.* He offers to resign the Crown, 219. He establishes the Protestant Religion, 220. He suppresses several Insurrections, *ib.* He repulses the *Danes*, *ib.* He is successful against the *Lubeckers*, 221.
Gustavus II. King of *Sweden*, II. 230. He takes much from the *Poles*, 231. He goes to the Assistance of the Protestants in *Germany* and does Wonders there, 233. He is slain in a Battle, 240.
Gundemar King of the *Visgoths*, I. 28.

H.

- Hacquin* I. King of *Sweden*, II. 198. He sacrifices nine of his Children, *ib.*
Hacquin II. King of *Sweden*, II. 200.
Halstan King of *Sweden*, II. 200.
Hamburgh an Insurrection there, I. 377. It is attacked by the *Danes*, II. 188.
Hannabalian suffers Death, II. 48.
Harald VI. King of *Denmark*, II. 178. He loses much in *Germany*, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Harald VII.* King of *Denmark*, II. 179.
- Hardi-canute* King of *England*, I. 146. He is a remarkable Eater, *ib.*
- Harold I.* King of *England*, I. 145. He causes *Emma* to be assassinated, *ib.*
- Harold II.* King of *England*, I. 146. He defeats *Harold Harfager*, 147. He falls in Battle, *ib.*
- Helvetick Body* see *Switzerland*.
- Heemskirk James* dies in burning a *Spanish Fleet*, I. 322.
- Henry I.* King of *Castile*, I. 61. His Sister *Berengera* has the Management, *ib.* He is killed by the Fall of a Tyle, *ib.*
- Henry II.* King of *Castile*, I. 667. His Right to the Crown is contested, *ib.*
- Henry III.* King of *Castile*, I. 68.
- Henry IV.* King of *Castile*, I. 69. He hires one to lie with his Queen, *ib.*
- Henry I.* King of *England*, I. 149. He annexes *Normany* to the *English Crown*, 150. He engages in a War with *France*, *ib.*
- Henry II.* King of *England*, I. 151. His Son joins with *France* and *Scotland* against him, 152. He conquers *Ireland*, *ib.* He has a long Quarrel with *Thomas of Becket*, *ib.*
- Henry III.* King of *England*, I. 155. He drives the *French* out of *England*, *ib.* The Barons take him Prisoner, *ib.*
- Henry IV.* King of *England*, I. 161. He is while Duke of *Hereford* banished, 160. The *English* invite him over, *ib.* He repulses the *Scotch*, 161. The *Welsh* are routed by him, *ib.* Several Conspiracies against him, *ib.*
- Henry V.* King of *England*, I. 161. His Youth is very unpromising, *ib.* He signalizes himself in *France*, 162.
- Henry VI.* King of *England*, I. 163. He is crowned at *Paris*, *ib.* His Affairs in *France* are quite ruined, 165. He is confined in the Tower, 166. He is restored to the Throne, *ib.* He is slain in Prison, 167. His Son *Edward* is assassinated, *ib.*
- Henry VII.* King of *England*, I. 169. He lands in *Wales*, 168. *Richard* is defeated by him, *ib.* He marries *Elizabeth* of the House of *York*, 169. He defeats *Lambert Symnel*, *ib.* He causes *Warbeck* an Impostor to be hanged, *ib.*
- Henry VIII.* King of *England*, I. 170. He marries his Brother's Widow, 169. He repulses the *Scotch*, 170. He divorces *Catherine*, *ib.* He disgraces *Woolsey*, *ib.* He marries *Anna Bullen*, *ib.* He annuls the Pope's Authority, *ib.* The Monasteries are dissolved by him, *ib.* He is successful against the *Scotch*, 173. He engages in a War with *France*, *ib.* He marries four other Wives, *ib.*
- Henry I.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 346. He defeats the *Huns*, *ib.* The *Sorabes* and *Vandals* are vanquished by him, *ib.*
- Henry II.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 348. He is successful against the *Poles*, *ib.* He is canonized, *ib.*
- Henry III.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 348.

I N D E X.

- Henry IV.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 349. The *Saxons* rebel against him, *ib.* He is excommunicated and deposed, *ib.* He overcomes *Rodo'ph* his Rival, *ib.* He deposes the Pope, *ib.* Being deposed a second Time he dies miserably, I. 350.
- Henry V.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 350. The *Saxons* rebel against him, *ib.* He gives up the Right of collating to Benefices, *ib.*
- Henry VI.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 351. He is crowned kneeling by the Pope, *ib.*
- Henry VII.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 352.
- Henry VIII.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 354. He attempts to recover his Authority in *Italy*, *ib.* He is poisoned by a Monk, *ib.*
- Henry I.* King of *France*, I. 229.
- Henry II.* King of *France*, I. 254. He attacks *Charlequint*, *ib.* He is slain in *Tiling*, 256.
- Henry III.* King of *France*, I. 261. He comes from *Poland*, *ib.* He is excommunicated for Assassinating the *Guises*, 264. He joins with the *Huguenots*, *ib.* He is stabbed by a Monk, *ib.*
- Henry IV.* King of *France*, I. 264. He defeats the Duke of *Maine*, 265. He is excommunicated, *ib.* He embraces the Catholick Religion, 266. Many Cities submit to him, *ib.* He declares War against *Spain*, 267. An Attempt upon his Life, *ib.* The Pope absolves him, *ib.* He publishes the Edict of *Nantz*, *ib.* He attacks *Savoy*, *ib.* He establishes the Silken Manufacture, 268. He is stabbed in his Coach, 269.
- Henry* King of *Poland*, II. 295. He quits *Poland* in order to take Possession of the *French Crown*, *ib.*
- Henry* King of *Portugal*, I. 127.
- Henry* King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 129. He overcomes *Tancred* his Rival, 128. He is very cruel, 129. He annexes the *Two Sicilies* to the Empire, *ib.* He is poisoned, *ib.*
- Henry* Count of *Nassau* is slain, I. 316.
- Henry* Count of *Portugal*, I. 120.
- Henri Dandolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 149. He gains much from the Eastern Empire, *ib.* He buys *Candia*, 150.
- Henry Knippenrodde* Grand Master of the Teutonic Order, II. 274. His prudent Conduct, *ib.*
- Herrings* quit the Coast of *Prussia* and go upon the *British* Coast, II. 273.
- Heyn Peter* takes the *Spanish* Fleet, I. 325.
- Hieronymo Priuli* Doge of *Venice*, II. 162.
- Hildebrand* a Monk his Intrigues in *Germany*, II. 66. He is chosen Pope, 68.
- Holland* Foundation of this Republick, I. 318. Its Sovereignty is conferred upon the Duke of *Alençon*, 319. It is supported by *Elizabeth* of *England*, 320. It makes great Conquests in the *East-Indies*, 321. It concludes a Truce with *Spain*, 323. Domestic Confusion there, 324. It is declared a free Republick, 326. It makes a Settlement at *Brazil*, 325. Divisions amongst its States, 326. It sues to *Cromwell* for Peace, 328.

I N D E X.

- It joins with *Denmark* against *Sweden*, *ib.* It is successful against the *English*, *ib.* It is invaded by *France*, 329. Its States are forced to choose a Stadtholder, *ib.* It favours the Design of the Prince of *Orange* upon *England*, 330. It enters into the *Grand Alliance*, *ib.* It enters into the second *Grand Alliance*, 331. It is very well peopled, 337. Manners of its Inhabitants, *ib.* Its Soil, 338. Its Settlements, *ib.* Reasons for its extensive Trade, 340. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Government, 341. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 342.
- Hollanders* Manners of them, I. 337.
- Holstein* Duke of is declared Successor to *Russia*, II. 346.
- Horn* Count is beheaded, I. 315.
- Horn Gustavus* is taken Prisoner, II. 241.
- Horst Matthias* is beheaded, II. 279.
- Hugh Capet* King of *France*, I. 229.
- Humbert* I. of *Savoy* II. 1. The Emperor gives him the Valley of *Aoust* for his Assistance, *ib.*
- Humbert* II. of *Savoy*, II. 2. He acquires the *Tarentese*, *ib.*
- Humbert* III. of *Savoy*, II. 2. He sides with the Pope, *ib.* *Turin* is taken from him, *ib.*
- Humphry* Count of *Pouille*, II. 123. He reduces the *Apulians* to Obedience, *ib.* The Pope whom he makes Prisoner confirms him in his Dominions, *ib.*
- Hungary Ragotzki* is proclaimed there, I. 376. Its Malecontents are reduced to Obedience, 378.
- Hunniade John* signalizes himself against the *Turks*, II. 356. He is slain, 357.
- Huns* make an Irruption into *Italy*, II. 144. They make great Progress in *Gaul*, I. 218. They make vast Havock in *Germany*, 346.
- Huss John* is put to Death, I. 356.

I.

- Jacopo Contarini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 151. He abdicates the Dogeship, *ib.*
- Jacopo Tiapolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He conquers *Negropont*, *ib.*
- Jagellon* King of *Poland*, II. 294. He annexes *Lithuania* to *Poland*, *ib.* He overcomes the Teutonick Order, *ib.*
- Jaffier* discovers a Plot against the Senate of *Venice*, II. 167.
- Jamaica* is conquered by the *English*, I. 189.
- James* I. King of *England*, I. 180. Conspiracy against him, *ib.* He takes the Title of King of *Great-Britain*, 181. He plants Colonies in the *West-Indies*, *ib.* Mistakes in his Reign, 182.
- James* II. King of *Great-Britain*, I. 191. He in his Brother's Reign goes into *Holland*, *ib.* A Bill is brought into Parliament for excluding him, *ib.* Divers suffer for conspiring against him, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- ib.* The Papiſts are countenanced by him, 192. He flies into France, 193. He is defeated in Ireland, *ib.*
- Jane Gray* is proclaimed Queen of England, I. 174. She is beheaded, 175.
- Jane I.* Queen of Naples, II. 135. She is put to Death, 136.
- Jane II.* Queen of Naples, II. 137. Her Gallants ſuffer Death, 138. She takes the Power into her own Hands, *ib.* She adopts *Alphonſo* of Arragon, *ib.* She adopts *Rene* of Anjou, *ib.*
- Janiffaries* the Body of is formed, II. 352. It is much improved, 356.
- Janseniſts* their Diſpute with the *Jefuits*, I. 296. They are baniſhed, 298. A Stop is put to the Perſecution of them, *ib.*
- Ibrahim* Sultan of Turkey, II. 367. He devotes himſelf to his Pleaſures, *ib.* Candia is attacked by him, 368. He is depoſed and ſtrangled, *ib.*
- Ibrahim* Grand Vizir is ſtrangled, II. 362.
- Jeffreys* Chief Juſtice his Cruelty in the Weſt of England, I. 192.
- Jeruſalem* is annexed to the Kingdom of Sicily, II. 130.
- Jews* are baniſhed from Spain, I. 70. From Portugal, 116. From England, 156. From France, 244.
- Independents* get the upper Hand in England, I. 185. They reſolve to treat no more with the King, 186.
- Ingellus* King of Sweden, II. 198. His great Cruelty, *ib.* He burns himſelf and Family in his Palace, *ib.*
- Ingo I.* King of Sweden, II. 199. He is ſlain, *ib.*
- Ingo II.* King of Sweden, II. 200. He is aſſaſſinated, *ib.*
- Ingo III.* King of Sweden, II. 200. His Queen is canonized, *ib.* He is poiſoned, *ib.*
- Ingria* is annexed to Sweden, II. 328.
- Inquiſition* a Court of is erected in Spain, I. 69.
- Joan of Arc* her Exploits, I. 243. She is burnt at Roan, *ib.*
- John I.* King of Caſtile, I. 68. He is worſted by the Portugueſe, *ib.* He is killed by a Fall from his Horſe, *ib.*
- John II.* King of Caſtile, I. 68. His Subjects rebel againſt him and force him to deliver up a Favourite, *ib.*
- John* King of Denmark, II. 183. He obtains the Swediſh Crown, *ib.* The *Stures* give him much Trouble, *ib.*
- John* King of England, I. 153. He overcomes *Arthur* of Bretany, *ib.* He loſes Normandy, 154. He reſigns his Crown to the Pope's Legate, *ib.* The Barons take Arms againſt him, *ib.* He ſigns the Great Charter, *ib.*
- John* King of France, I. 236. He is taken Priſoner by the Engliſh, 237. He ſells his Daughter, *ib.* He dies in England, 238.
- John I.* King of Portugal, I. 123.
- John II.* King of Portugal, 125. A Conſpiracy againſt him, *ib.*
- John III.* King of Portugal, I. 127.
- John IV.* King of Portugal, 128. The Dutch take much from him in the Eaſt-Indies, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- John V. King of Portugal*, I. 132. He fides with Duke *Charles of Austria*, *ib.* He has a Difference with *Holland*, 133. He quarrels with the Pope, 134. He has an Interview with the King of *Spain*, 135. A Misunderstanding betwixt him and the Court of *Madrid*, 137. He is attacked in the *East-Indies* by the Natives, *ib.*
- John I. King of Poland*, II. 295. The *Valachians* rebel against him, *ib.*
- John II. King of Poland*, II. 302. He accommodates Matters with the *Cassacks*, *ib.* The *Swedes* treat with him, 303. He is successful against *Ragotzki*, *ib.* He resigns the Crown and dies in a Monastery, 304.
- John III. King of Poland*, 305. He is successful against the *Turks*, *ib.* He is defeated at *Barcan*, *ib.*
- John I. Czar of Russia*, II. 327. He throws off the Yoke of the *Tartars*, *ib.* He subdues many petty States, *ib.*
- John II. Czar of Russia*, II. 328. He annexes *Casan* and *Astracan Tartary* to *Muscovy*, *ib.* *Livonia* revolts from him, *ib.*
- John III. Czar of Russia*, II. 330. He shares the Government with his Brother *Peter*, *ib.*
- John IV. Emperor of Russia*, II. 341. His Mother removes the Duke of *Courland* from the Regency, *ib.* He is attacked by the *Swedes*, 343. He is sent out of *Russia*, *ib.*
- John Baliol King of Scotland* appears before the *English* Parliament, I. 156. He is taken Prisoner by the *English*, *ib.*
- John I. King of Sweden*, II. 202.
- John II. King of Sweden*, II. 214. He loses the Crown, *ib.*
- John III. King of Sweden*, II. 224. He cedes some Provinces to *Charles* his Brother, *ib.* The *Russians* attack him, 225. He endeavours to reestablish the Catholic Religion, *ib.* He persecutes the Protestants, 226. He causes his Brother *Eric* whom he had before deposed to be poisoned, *ib.*
- John Frederick Elector of Saxony* heads the *Protestants*, I. 357. He is deprived of his Dominions, 358.
- John Grand Duke of Tuscany*, II. 45.
- John XII. Pope*, II. 64. He is deposed by the Emperor, *ib.*
- John of Austria* governs the *Netherlands*, I. 317.
- John of Leyden* heads the *Anabaptists*, I. 358.
- John Sigismund Duke of Prussia*, II. 280. He takes Possession of *Cleves*, *ib.*
- John Tiffen* Grand Master of the Teutonick Order, II. 277. His remarkable Words, *ib.*
- Joseph Emperor of Germany*, I. 373. He continues the War against *France*, *ib.* The *Hungarians* continue in Arms against him, 374. He has a Quarrel with the Pope, 376.
- Jovian Emperor of the Romans*, II. 50.
- Irish* Manners of them, I. 210.
- Italy* its Division on the Division of the *Roman Empire*, II. 120. The *Huns* make an Irruption thereinto, 144. Its Inhabitants fly to

I N D E X.

to the *Lagunes*, *ib.* The *Lombards* become Masters thereof, 120.
 It is split into the Factions of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines*, I. 352. It
 is divided into many independent States, II. 131.
Jubilee one is instituted in *Spain*, I. 64. The Time of its Ce-
 lebration is reduced from 100 to 25 Years, *ib.*
Julian reigns at *Antioch*, II. 49. He renounces Christianity, *ib.*
 He succeeds to the Empire, 50.
Julian de Medicis is assassinated, II. 39.
Juliers Origin of the House of *Brandenburg's* Claim thereto, II. 279.
Julius II. Pope, II. 94. He reunites much to the Holy See, *ib.*
Julius of *Capua* is put to Death, II. 138.
Justicia Institution of an Officer so called in *Spain*, I. 56.

K.

K *Enmure* Lord is beheaded, I. 202.
Kiuperli Malomet his brave Conduct in *Candia*, II. 368.
Krumholtz stirs up an Insurrection in *Hamburg*, I. 377.

L.

L *Acy* General subdues *Finland*, II. 346.
Ladislaus King of *Naples*, II. 136. He overcomes the Duke
 of *Anjou* his Rival, *ib.* He obtains the Crown of *Hungary*,
 137. He is excommunicated, *ib.* He is poisoned in a sur-
 prizing Manner, *ib.*
Lagune Islands are governed by Tribunes, II. 144. They are
 united by Bridges and make a City afterwards called *Venice*, *ib.*
Lancaster *John* Duke of lays claim to *Castile*, I. 121. He accom-
 modates Matters with *Peter* of *Castile*, I. 124.
Lancaster the House of and that of *York* are united, I. 169.
La Tour stirs up a War against *Genoa*, II. 27.
Laurentio Lord of *Florence*, II. 39. His Brother is assassinated,
ib. He hangs the Archbishop of *Pisa*, *ib.* He is excom-
 municated, *ib.* He encourages the Sciences, 40. He is poi-
 soned, *ib.*
Laurentio de Medicis is murdered, II. 42.
Laurentio Priuli Doge of *Venice*, II. 162.
Laurentio Tiepolo Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He attacks the *Bolog-*
nians, *ib.*
Law the Populace of *France* are enraged against him, I. 299.
Laver *Christopher* is hanged, I. 205.
Lazarus Prince of *Servia* is slain, II. 352. One of his Domes-
 ticks revenges his Death, *ib.*
League of *Brun*, I. 401. Of *Canbray*, II. 159. Of the *Calvinists*
 in *Germany*, I. 360. Of the *Catholicks* in *Germany*, *ib.* Against
France, II. 160. Of holy Union in *France*, I. 262. Of *Smal-*
kald, I. 357.
Lechus I. Duke of *Poland*, II. 288. He founds a new State in *Po-*
land, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Leckus* II. Prince of *Poland*, II. 289. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Leicester* Earl of is made Governor of the *Netherlands*, I. 320. He is recalled from thence, *ib.*
- Leo* III. Pope, II. 62. He is shut up in a Monastery, *ib.* He is tried and acquitted, *ib.*
- Leo* IX. Pope, II. 65. He endeavours to root out *Simony*, *ib.*
- Leo* X. Pope, II. 94. He sells many Indulgences, *ib.* His imprudent Conduct with Regard to *Luther*, 97.
- Leo Isaurus* Emperor of the East, II. 50. He pulls down the Images in the Churches, *ib.* His Order for doing the same in *Rome* is disobeyed by the Pope, *ib.* His *Exarch* is murdered at *Ravenna*, 52. An Association is entered into against him, *ib.*
- Leon* is united to *Castile*, I. 61.
- Leonardo Donata* Doge of *Venice*, II. 165. He maintains his Authority against the Pope, *ib.*
- Leonardo Loricano* Doge of *Venice*, II. 159. A League is formed against him, *ib.* He enters into an Alliance against *France*, *ib.* He makes some Cessions to the Pope and to *Spain*, 160.
- Leopold* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 363. He attacks the *Swedes*, *ib.* He joins against *France*, *ib.* He is successful against the *Turks*, 364. He is attacked by *France*, 367. He supports the Pretensions of his Son to *Spain*, 369. He is extricated from great Difficulties, 371. The *Hungarians* take Arms against him, 373.
- Leopold* Archduke of *Austria* is routed by the *Switzers*, I. 401.
- Lescus* I. Prince of *Poland*, II. 289.
- Lescus* II. Prince of *Poland*, II. 289. He is unexpectedly raised to the Sovereignty, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Lescus* III. King of *Poland*, II. 289.
- Lescus* IV. Prince of *Poland*, II. 290.
- Lescus* V. Prince of *Poland*, II. 292. His Right is disputed by *Micislaus*, *ib.* He loses *Pomerania*, *ib.*
- Lescus* VI. Prince of *Poland*, II. 293. He is successful against the *Russians*, *ib.*
- Lestie* *Alexander* subdues the Island of *Rugen*, II. 253. He heads the *Presbyterians* in *Scotland*, I. 184.
- Leuwa* I. King of the *Visgoths*, I. 26.
- Leuwa* II. King of the *Visgoths*, I. 28. He is slain by *Witterick*, *ib.*
- Leuwigilde* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 26. He causes his Son to be beheaded, 27. His Intrigues at the Court of *France*, *ib.*
- Lewis* I. Emperor of the *Franks*, I. 227. He is very unhappy in his Sons, *ib.* He divides his Dominions, *ib.*
- Lewis* II. King of *France*, I. 228.
- Lewis* III. King of *France*, I. 228.
- Lewis* IV. King of *France*, I. 228.
- Lewis* V. King of *France*, I. 228.
- Lewis* VI. King of *France*, I. 230. Divers Lords take up Arms against him, *ib.*
- Lewis* VII. King of *France*, I. 230. He is unfortunate in the *Holy Land*, *ib.* He has a Quarrel with *England*, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Lewis VIII. King of France*, I. 231.
- Lewis IX. King of France*, I. 231. He is taken Prisoner in *Palestine*, *ib.* He is slain before *Tunis*, 232.
- Lewis X. King of France*, I. 234.
- Lewis XI. King of France*, I. 244. His Artifices to make himself absolute, 245. He annexes *Burgundy*, *Provence*, *Anjou* and *Maine* to the *French Crown*, *ib.* He dies miserably, *ib.*
- Lewis XII. King of France*, I. 247. He conquers *Milan*, *ib.* He joins with *Spain* in conquering *Naples*, *ib.* He enters into a League against *Venice*, 248.
- Lewis XIII. King of France*, I. 269. He entirely ruins the Power of the *Huguenots*, 270. He supports the Duke of *Nevers*, 271. He assists the *Grisons*, *ib.* He attacks the Emperor, *ib.*
- Lewis XIV. King of France*, I. 273. His unexpected Birth, 274. He continues the War against the Emperor, *ib.* He attacks *Spain*, 275. He quarrels with the Pope, 276. He attacks the *Netherlands*, 277. He engages in a War with *Holland*, 278. The Empire and *Spain* declare against him, 279. Ambassadors come to him from *Siam*, 280. He revokes the Edict of *Nantz*, 281. A grand Alliance is formed against him, 282. A second grand Alliance is formed against him, 286. He embarks Troops in favour of the Pretender, 291. He concludes Treaties with most of the Allies, 295.
- Lewis XV. King of France*, I. 298. He puts a Stop to the Persecution of the *Jansenists*, *ib.* He sends home the *Infanta* of *Spain*, 300. He enters into a War with the Emperor, 302. He sends two Squadrons into the *West-Indies*, 304. He joins against the Archduchess, *ib.*
- Lewis I. King of Germany*, I. 345.
- Lewis II. Emperor of Germany*, I. 346. The *Huns* force him to pay Tribute, *ib.*
- Lewis III. Emperor of Germany*, I. 354. He takes *Frederick* his Rival Prisoner, *ib.* He supports the *Gibelines*, 355. He is excommunicated and deposed, *ib.*
- Lewis King of Poland*, II. 294.
- Lewis King of Sicily*, II. 135.
- Lewis King of Spain*, I. 102.
- Lewis Count of Nassua* is slain, I. 316.
- Lewis Duke of Anjou* his Attempt upon *Naples* fails, I. 239.
- Lewis Duke of Milan* dies a Prisoner, I. 247.
- Lewis Duke of Savoy*, II. 4. He establishes *Francis Sforça* in *Milan*, *ib.*
- Lewis Contarini Doge of Venice*, II. 170.
- Lewis Mocenigo Doge of Venice*, II. 163. The *Turks* attack him, *ib.*
- Lisbon* is taken from the *Moors*, I. 121.
- Lithuania* is annexed to *Poland*, II. 294.
- Livonia* revolts from the *Russians* and submits to the *Poles*, II. 295.

I N D E X.

- Lombards* become Masters in *Italy*, II. 120.
Lorenzo Celfo Doge of *Venice*, II. 154.
Lorrain Duke of is successful against the *Turks*, II. 370.
Lothaire King of *France*, I. 228.
Lothario Emperor of *Germany*, I. 350.
Lubeck a Dispute concerning the Succession thereto, II. 190.
Luitprand King of *Lombardy* attacks *Rome*, II. 52.
Luther writes against Indulgences, II. 95. The Circumstances of the Times are favourable to him, *ib.* The Emperor connives at the spreading of his Doctrines, 97. Reasons for their spreading no further, 98.
Luxemburg Marshal his Success in *Flanders*, I. 283.

M.

- Macedonian* Empire is founded, I. 6. Division thereof, 8. It is quite ruined, 9.
Madeira the Island of is discovered, I. 124.
Magna Charta is signed, I. 154.
Magnencius usurps the Dominions of *Constant*, II. 49. He lays violent Hands upon himself, *ib.*
Magnus King of *Denmark*, II. 179.
Magnus I. King of *Sweden*, II. 201. He is slain, *ib.*
Magnus II. King of *Sweden*, 204. He suppresses the House of *Folckunger*, *ib.*
Magnus III. King of *Sweden*, II. 207. *Scania* submits to him, *ib.* He is excommunicated, *ib.* He abdicates the Throne, *ib.* He remounts it, *ib.* He causes his Son to be poisoned, *ib.* His Subjects call in *Albert* of *Mecklemburg*, 208. Being taken Prisoner he resigns the Crown, *ib.*
Magnus Son of *Birger* of *Sweden* is beheaded, II. 206.
Mahomet I. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 354. He is successful against the *Christians*, 355.
Mahomet II. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 356. He takes *Constantinople*, *ib.* He becomes Master of *Trebisonde*, 357. He attacks the *Venetians*, *ib.* He makes a Descent on *Italy*, *ib.* Inscription upon his Tomb, 358.
Mahomet III. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 365. He causes nineteen of his Brothers to be strangled and ten of his Father's Concubines to be drowned, *ib.* He continues the War in *Hungary*, *ib.* He dies of the Plague, *ib.*
Mahomet IV. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 368. He takes *Candia*, *ib.* He attacks *Poland*, 369. He loses much in *Hungary*, *ib.* He is deposed, 371.
Mahomet V. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 375. He is unsuccessful in a War with *Persia*, *ib.* He is attacked by *Russia* and the Emperor, 376.
Moine Duke of is made Head of the League in *France*, I. 265. He is worsted by *Henry* IV. *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Mainfroy* usurps the Throne of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 132. He is slain, *ib.*
- Mamelukes* an End is put to their Reign in *Egypt*, II. 360.
- Mantua* Duke of is put under the Ban of the Empire, I. 376.
- Manufacture* of Bays is introduced into *England*, I. 179. The Silken one is established in *France*, 268.
- Mar* Earl of is defeated at *Dundee*, I. 201.
- Marcello Tegallino* Doge of *Venice*, II. 144.
- Marcello* Admiral is slain, II. 169.
- Marcin* Marshal is slain, I. 290.
- Marco Antonio Justiniani* Doge of *Venice*, II. 170. He takes much from the *Turks*, *ib.* The *Morlaques* revolt to him, *ib.*
- Marco Antonio Mocenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 171.
- Marco Barberigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 158.
- Marco Cornaro* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154.
- Margaret* Queen of *Denmark*, II. 182. She is acknowledged by the *Swedes*, *ib.* She unites the two Northern Crowns, 210. She redeems *Gothland* from the Teutonic Order, *ib.*
- Marino Bocconio* suffers Death for a Conspiracy, II. 151.
- Marino Faliero* Doge of *Venice*, II. 153. Conspiring against the Senate he is beheaded, 154.
- Marino Georgio* Doge of *Venice*, II. 152.
- Marino Grimani* Doge of *Venice*, II. 164. He despises a Bull of Excommunication, *ib.* He supports his Authority against the Clergy, *ib.*
- Marino Morosini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He recovers *Padua*, *ib.*
- Marlborough* Duke of his brave and successful Conduct, I. 195, 196. He is made a Prince of the Empire, 195. He is dismissed from his Command, 198.
- Martel Charles* extends his Power as Mayor of the Palace, I. 224. He obtains a signal Victory over the *Moors*, *ib.* He takes the Title of Duke of *France*, *ib.*
- Mary of Medicis* her Intrigues in *France*, I. 271. She dies miserably, *ib.*
- Mary* Queen of *England*, I. 175. She restores the Catholick Religion, *ib.* She loses all in *France*, 176.
- Mary* Queen of *Scots*, I. 177. She takes the Arms of *England*, *ib.* She is confined, *ib.* She is made Prisoner by *Elizabeth*, *ib.* She is beheaded for a Conspiracy, 178.
- Massacre* of the *Danes* in *England*, I. 145. Of the *French* in *Genoa*, II. 23. Of the *French* in *Sicily*, I. 233. Of *Paris*, I. 260. Of the Protestants in *Ireland*, I. 185.
- Matilda* Countess of *Tuscany* her Donation to the See of *Rome*, II. 69.
- Matilda* Empress defeats *Stephen* of *England*, I. 151. Her Son is adopted by *Stephen*, *ib.*
- Matilda* of *Scotland* her rash Wish on marrying *Henry* I. of *England*, I. 150.
- Matthias* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 359. His Reign is disturbed by civil War, *ib.*
- Mauregate* King of *Asturia*, I. 37.
- Maurice* Elector of *Saxony* goes over to the Protestants, I. 358.
- Maurice*

I N D E X.

- Maurice* Prince of *Orange* Stadtholder of *Holland*, I. 319. His Success whilst he was Generalissimo, 321. His ambitious Designs are opposed, 324. He sides with the *Gomarists*, *ib.*
- Maximillian I.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 356. He annexes *Burgundy* to the *Austrian* Dominions, *ib.* He is unsuccessful against the *Swiss*, *ib.*
- Maximillian II.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 359. *Grumbach* disturbs his Reign, *ib.*
- Mazanello* stirs up an Insurrection in *Naples*, II. 140. A remarkable Inscription of his, *ib.* He is murdered and dragged through the Streets, 141.
- Mazeppa* revolts from the *Czar*, II. 333. He is hanged in Effigy, *ib.*
- Mazarine* Cardinal is condemned by the Parliament of *Paris*, I. 274. He is banished, 275. He triumphs over all his Enemies, *ib.*
- Menzikow* Prince is disgraced, II. 339.
- Merci* Count is slain, II. 14.
- Merovius* King of the *Franks*, I. 218. He greatly extends his Dominions, 219.
- Michael Frederowitz* Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 329.
- Michael* King of *Poland*, II. 304. He is very unfortunate, *ib.*
- Michiele Morosini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 155.
- Michiele Steno* Doge of *Venice*, II. 155. He puts an End to the *Paduan* War, *ib.* He loses much in *Hungary*, *ib.*
- Micislaus I.* Prince of *Poland*, II. 290. Being restored to Sight he embraces Christianity, *ib.*
- Micislaus II.* King of *Poland*, II. 290. He loses *Moravia*, *ib.*
- Micislaus III.* Prince of *Poland*, II. 292. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Milan* the Western Emperors reside there, II. 50. The Dutchy of is conquered by *France*, I. 247. *Maximillian* its Duke is restored, 248. It is re-conquered by the *French*, 250. It is annexed to the Dominions of *Austria*, 252.
- Minorca* is conquered by the *English*, I. 96.
- Miquez John* prevails on the *Turks* to attack *Cyprus*, II. 163.
- Mississippi* a Settlement is projected there, I. 298.
- Monasteries* Dissolution of them in *England*, I. 172.
- Monk* General compleats the Conquest of *Scotland*, I. 188. He restores *Charles II.* 190.
- Monmouth* Duke of is banished, I. 191. He is beheaded, 192.
- Montmorency Annas* is mortally wounded, I. 259. Speech of his in his last Moments, *ib.*
- Moors* are repulsed from the *Spanish* Coast, I. 31. They over-run *Spain*, 34. *Pelagius* routs them, 36. They are repulsed by *Charles Martel*, 224. The *Moors* of *Spain* unite under one Prince, 37. A signal Victory gained over them, 38. Sixty-thousand of them cut off in one Battle, 40. They lose Ground in *Spain*, 59. An End is put to their Power there and many of them are banished, 70. They are all banished from *Spain*,

I N D E X.

80. *Alphonso of Portugal* takes much from them, 121. They are banished from *Portugal*, 126.
- Mortimer* is hanged, I. 157.
- Moscow* great Part of that City is reduced to Ashes, II. 299.
- Munich* Count his Intrigues in *Russia*, II. 344. He is banished, *ib.*
- Mustapha* I. Emperor of *Turky*, II. 366. He is deposed, *ib.* Being restored, he is again deposed, 367.
- Mustapha* II. Emperor of *Turky*, II. 372. He is unsuccessful in *Hungary*, *ib.* He is deposed and the *Mufti* his Favourite is beheaded, *ib.*

N.

- N***antz* the Edict of is revoked, I. 281.
- Naples* its ancient State, II. 120. It is conquered by *Ferdinand*, and annexed to *Spain*, 140. *Charles* Archduke of *Austria* becomes Master of it, 141.
- Naval* Strength it is of the utmost Consequence to a trading Nation, I. 10. It is the natural Strength of an Island, 182. Prudence of *Elizabeth* of *England* with Regard to it, *ib.* Misfortune of its being neglected in *England*, *ib.*
- Navarre* that Kingdom is annexed to *Arragon*, I. 51. It is detached from *Arragon*, 57. An Addition to its Arms, 60. It is subdued by *Ferdinand* of *Castile*, 71.
- Netherlands* ancient State of them, I. 310. They are subdued by the *Franks*, *ib.* Division of them into 17 Provinces, *ib.* They become subject to the House of *Burgundy*, *ib.* They are annexed to the Dominions of *Austria*, 311. Civil War in them on Account of Religion, *ib.* An Ecclesiastick Court is erected in them, 312. The Duke *D'Aylva*, is sent thither, 314. The Bloody Council is erected, 315. Seven of the Provinces form themselves into a Republick, 318.
- Nicholas* II. Pope he confirms the *Normans* in the Possession of *Naples*, II. 67.
- Nicholas* Contarini Doge of *Venice*, II. 168.
- Nicholas* De Ponte Doge of *Venice*, II. 164. He puts a Stop to the Depredations of the *Maltese*, *ib.*
- Nicholas* Donato Doge of *Venice*, II. 166. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Nicholas* Marcello Doge of *Venice*, II. 158.
- Nicholas* Trono Doge of *Venice*, II. 157. He gains *Cyprus*, *ib.*
- Noailles* Cardinal he sides with the *Jansenists*, I. 297.
- Norfolk* Duke of is beheaded, I. 177.
- Normandy* is annexed to the *English* Crown, I. 150. It gives Title of Duke to the eldest Son of *England*, *ib.*
- Normans* Manners of them, II. 193. They ravage the Coast of *Spain*, I. 40. They settle in *France*, 227. They conquer *England*, 147. They settle in *Italy*, II. 121. They drive the *Saracens* from *Sicily*, 122.
- Norway* that Kingdom is annexed to *Denmark*, II. 182.
- Northumberland* Duke of he procures the Duke of *Somerset's* Death, I. 174. He is beheaded, *ib.*

I N D E X.

O.

- Oates** a Plot discovered by him, I. 191.
- Obelerio** Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Oecolompadius** disputes at *Baden*, I. 404.
- Oglethorpe** General his Attempt on *Fort Augustine* fails, I. 208.
- Olaus IV.** King of *Denmark*, II. 179.
- Olaus VI.** King of *Denmark*, II. 181. He succeeds to *Norway*, *ib.*
- Olaus** King of *Sweden*, II. 199. He embraces Christianity, *ib.*
Denmark is conquered by him, *ib.* He is sacrificed by his own Subjects, *ib.*
- Olaus** the Tributary King of *Sweden*, II. 199. He pays Tribute to *Rome*, *ib.* He annexes the Kingdom of the *Goths* to that of the *Swedes*, 200.
- Olaus** disputes in *Sweden*, II. 218.
- Olufson Nils** is beheaded, II. 220.
- Orange** Foundation of the Claim of the House of *Brandenburg* on that Succession, II. 283. A Dispute concerning the Right to that Succession, I. 232.
- Orange** Prince of is invited into *England*, I. 192.
- Orcan** Emperor of *Turky*, II. 352. He conquers *Natolia*, *ib.* He institutes the Order of *Janissaries*, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Orco Participatio** Doge of *Venice*, II. 146. He takes *Candia* from the *Saracens*, *ib.*
- Orco Mastropetro** Doge of *Venice*, II. 149. He goes into a Monastery, *ib.*
- Ordelfaffo Faleiro** Doge of *Venice*, II. 147. He is slain, *ib.*
- Order of Annunciade** is instituted, II. 4. Of *Dobrin* Institution of it, 271. Of *Grandees* Origin of it, I. 37. Of *Janissaries* Institution of it, II. 352. Of *Ricos Hombres*, I. 37. Of *St. Maurice*, II. 4. Of *St. Stephen*, II. 43. Of the *Sword*, II. 271. That Order is incorporated with the *Teutonic*, *ib.* Of *Templars*, it is ruined, I. 64. The *Teutonic*, see *Teutonic Order*.
- Ordonio** King of *Asturia*, I. 40. He is worsted by the *Moors*, 41.
- Ordonio** King of *Leon*, I. 24. He perfidiously seizes the Counts of *Castile*, *ib.*
- Ordonio III.** King of *Leon*, I. 44. He is successful against his Brother, *ib.* He joins against the *Moors*, *ib.*
- Orkneys** they are annexed to *Scotland*, II. 183.
- Orleans** Duke of is assassinated, I. 240.
- Orleans** Duke of is beheaded, I. 271.
- Orleans** Duke of his prudent Conduct as Regent, I. 298. He stops the Persecution of the *Jansenists*, *ib.* Intrigues of *Alberoni* against him, 299. He declares War against *Spain*, *ib.* He marries two Daughters to two *Spanish* Princes, *ib.*
- Ormond** Duke of is appointed to command in *Flanders*, I. 193. He goes into *France*, 200.
- Orso Badecro** Doge of *Venice*, II. 146.
- Orso Ippato** Doge of *Venice*, II. 144.
- Osman** Sultan, II. 366. He is assassinated, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Ostend* an *East-India* Company is erected there, I. 335. Its Charter is suspended, 336.
- Osterman* Count his Intrigues in *Russia*, II. 344. He is condemned to die but his Life is spared, *ib.*
- Otho* I. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 347. Rebellion against him, *ib.* He is successful against the *Danes*, *ib.* He routs the *Huns*, *ib.* He conquers *Italy* and reserves to himself and Successors the Right of confirming *Popes*, II. 63.
- Otho* II. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 347. The *French* attack him, *ib.* He is taken Prisoner, 348.
- Otho* III. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 348. He is disturbed by the *Romish* Clergy, *ib.* He is poisoned, *ib.*
- Otho* IV. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 352. He is excommunicated, *ib.* He is forced to resign the Empire, *ib.*
- Ottoman* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 352. He takes the Title of Sultan, *ib.* He subdues *Phrygia*, *Galatia*, *Cappadocia* and *Bythynia*, *ib.*
- Otton Orseolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 146. He is banished, *ib.* He is restored, 147.
- Otton* of *Savoy*, II. 1. He annexes *Susa* and Part of *Piedmont* to *Savoy*, *ib.*
- Oxenstiern* General commands the *Swedes* in *Germany*, II. 240.

P.

- PAdua* its long War with *Venice* is put an End to, II. 150.
- Palatinate* is sacked by the *French*, I. 364. War on Account of the Succession thereto, 367. Disturbances there on the Account of Religion, 368.
- Papists* Reasons for the Continuance of sensible Men amongst them, II. 112. No Reconciliation is likely between them and the *Protestants*, 115. Considerations upon their Strength compared with that of the *Protestants*, 116.
- Parma* Duke of governs in the *Netherlands*, I. 318.
- Pascali Cicconia* Doge of *Venice*, II. 164.
- Pascali Malipiero* Doge of *Venice*, II. 157.
- Patkul* Count is condemned to lose his right Hand, II. 253. He goes into the Service of *Russia*, *ib.* He suffers a most cruel Death, 254.
- Patkul* General is beheaded, II. 314.
- Paul* Pope, II. 58. He accommodates Matters with *Didier* King of *Lombardy*, *ib.*
- Paulucio Anafisto* Doge of *Venice*, II. 144.
- Pelagius* King of *Asturia*, I. 35. He gains a signal Victory over the *Moor*s, 36. He is called the Deliverer of his Country, *ib.*
- Pepin* King of *Lombardy* his Generosity to the *Venetians*, II. 145.
- Pepin* Mayor of the Palace in *France*, I. 224.
- Pepin* the younger Mayor of the Palace in *France*, I. 224. He deposes *Childerick* and is proclaimed, *ib.* Pope *Zachary* comes into his Views, *ib.* He subdues the *Saxons*, 225. He signifies himself against the *Lombards*, *ib.* He reduces the Dukes of *Bavaria* and *Aquitaine* to a State of Vassalage, *ib.* He is declared

I N D E X.

- declared Patron of the Church, II. 56. He raises the Siege of *Rome*, 57. He gives the Exercate to the Pope, 58.
- Persian Monarchy* is founded by *Cyrus*, I. 3. Prudence of its Monarchs with Regard to *Greece*, 4. It is ruined, *ib.*
- Peter* King of *Castile*, I. 66. He marries three Wives at once, *ib.* He is deposed and put to Death, 67.
- Peter I.* King of *Portugal*, I. 122.
- Peter II.* King of *Portugal*, I. 130. He acknowledges *Philip V.* of *Spain*, *ib.* He declares for the Archduke, 131.
- Peter I.* Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 330. His Brother resigns his Share in the Government, *ib.* He is successful against the *Turks*; *ib.* He visits the principal States of *Europe*, *ib.* A Conspiracy against him, 331. He engages in a War against *Sweden*, *ib.* The Duke of *Courland* is restored by him, *ib.* He is attacked by the *Turks*, 334. He sends a Body of Troops into the Empire, 335. He goes into *France*, *ib.* His Son conspires against him, *ib.* He obtains the Titles of *Father of his Country* and *Emperor of all the Russias*, 337. His Progress upon the *Caspian Sea*, *ib.* He settles the succession, *ib.*
- Peter II.* Emperor of *Russia*, II. 338. He dies of the small Pox, 339.
- Peter* King of *Sicily*, II. 135. He is attacked by *Naples*, *ib.*
- Peter I.* Lord of *Florence*, II. 39.
- Peter II.* Lord of *Florence*, II. 40. He flies from *Florence* and is drowned, *ib.*
- Peter* of *Savoy*, II. 2.
- Peter's Pence* are first paid in *England*, I. 144.
- Pharamond* King of the *Franks*, I. 217.
- Philibert I.* Duke of *Savoy*, II. 5.
- Philibert II.* of *Savoy*, II. 5.
- Philip I.* King of *France*, I. 229.
- Philip II.* King of *France*, I. 231. He goes into the Holy Land, *ib.* He takes much from the *English*, *ib.*
- Philip III.* King of *France*, I. 233. He annexes *Toulouse* to the French Crown, *ib.* He attempts the Conquest of *Aragon*, 234.
- Philip IV.* King of *France*, I. 234. He attacks the Count of *Flanders*, *ib.* He suppresses the Order of *Knights Templars*, *ib.*
- Philip V.* King of *France*, I. 234. He banishes the *Jews*, *ib.*
- Philip VI.* King of *France*, I. 234. His Right to the Crown is disputed by *Edward III.* of *England*, 235. He annexes *Dauphiny* to the Crown, 236. He imposes the *Gabel*, *ib.*
- Philip* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 351. Another Emperor is chosen, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Philip* of *Macedon* founds the *Macedonian Empire*, I. 6. Character of him, *ib.*
- Philip I.* King of *Castile*, I. 71.
- Philip II.* King of *Spain*, I. 76. His Imprudence with Regard to the *Netherlanders*, *ib.* He fits out the Armado against *England*, 77. He supports the League in *France*, 78. He is attacked

I N D E X.

- tacked by *Henry IV. of France, ib.* His scandalous Behaviour to *Antonio Perez, 79.* He puts his Son to Death, *ib.* He conquers *Portugal, ib.*
- Philip III. King of Spain, I. 80.* He makes Peace with the *Netherlanders, ib.* He banishes the *Moors, ib.* He assists the Rebels in the *Valteline, 81.*
- Philip IV. King of Spain, I. 81.* He recommences the War with *Holland, ib.* He is attacked by *France, 82.* *Portugal* revolts from him, 83. The *Catalonians* rebel against him, *ib.*
- Philip V. King of Spain, I. 89.* He is acknowledged by many Powers, *ib.* His Right is disputed by *Charles of Austria, 91.* He is forced to give over the Siege of *Barcelona, 93.* He flies from *Madrid, 94.* He recovers this Capital, *ib.* He rases *Xativa, 95.* His Rival leaves *Spain, 97.* He takes *Barcelona* by Storm, 99. He attacks *Sardinia* and *Sicily, 100.* He is attacked by the *French, 101.* He abdicates the Crown, 102. He reassumes it on his Son's Death, *ib.* He lays Siege to *Gibraltar, 105.* Depredations of his *Guard de Costas, 106.* He joins in a War against the Emperor, 107. He is attacked by *Great-Britain, 109.*
- Philip King of Sweden, II. 200.*
- Philip I. of Savoy, II. 2.*
- Philip II. of Savoy, II. 5.*
- Philip Landgrave of Hesse* is made Prisoner, I. 358.
- Phrygia* is subdued by the *Turks, II. 352.*
- Piaslus King of Poland, II. 289.*
- Piedmont* its Soil and Commodities, II. 15.
- Pierre Barbelano Doge of Venice, II. 147.*
- Pierre Candiano Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He makes the *Sclavonians* tributary, *ib.*
- Pierre Candiano II. Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He is murdered, *ib.*
- Pierre Candiano III. Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Pierre Gradenigo Doge of Venice, II. 145.* He is assassinated in a Church, *ib.*
- Pierre Gradenigo II. Doge of Venice, II. 151.* He new models the Government, *ib.* Conspiracies are formed against him, *ib.* He is worsted by the *Genoese, 152.*
- Pierre Grimani Doge of Venice, II. 173.*
- Pierre Lando Doge of Venice, II. 162.*
- Pierre Loricano Doge of Venice, II. 162.*
- Pierre Mocenigo Doge of Venice, II. 158.*
- Pierre Orseolo I. Doge of Venice, II. 146.*
- Pierre Orseolo II. Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He extends the Trade of the Republick, *ib.* The *Dalmatians* submit to him, *ib.*
- Pierre Polano Doge of Venice, II. 148.* He is successful against *Padua* and *Pisa, ib.*
- Pierre Tribuno Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He repulses the *Hungarians, ib.*

I N D E X.

Pierre Ziano Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He goes into a Monastery, *ib.*

Plague in *France*, I. 243. In *Portugal*, 124. In *Prussia*, II. 284. In *Spain*, I. 25. Another there, 66. In *Venice*, II. 148. Another there, 162. Another, 163. Another, 168.

Poland its ancient State, II. 288. It is governed by Dukes, *ib.* It is governed by *Waywodes*, *ib.* Why every King chosen from the Natives is called a *Piaß*, 289. Nuncios first sent to their Diet, 295. Interregnum in *Poland*, 306. Manners of its People, 321. Its Soil, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Strength, 322. Its Constitution, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 324.

Poles Manners of them, II. 321.

Pomerania Division of this Province, II. 282.

Popes the Right of confirming them is reserved to the Emperors of *Germany*, II. 63. Three at one Time are set aside, 65. Quarrel between them and Emperors, 68. Their Dominions, 70. Their Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.* The Grants of his Predecessors to the Holy See is confirmed by *Rodolph*, *ib.* The Papal Power is inconsistent with civil Government, 72. It was founded upon the Abuse of the Practices of the Primitive Christians, 77. The Ignorance of the Times helped to promote it, 78. *Rome* was most proper for its Seat, 79. No just Reason for the Pre-eminence of the Bishop of *Rome* over other Bishops, *ib.* The Papal Power was encreased by divers Arts, and Accidents, 80. *Boniface* did great Service to the Papal Power, 81. It has always been a Maxim with *Popes* to multiply Churchmen as much as possible, 82. Monks have been very useful to them, 84. They usurp an independent Power, 85. They throw off all Subjection to Emperors, 87. Their Intrigues in *England* and in *France*, 88. They assume a Power over all Princes, 89. Their Authority declines, 91. It is further hurt by *Schisms* amongst themselves, *ib.* The Removal of the Pope's Residence was a fatal stroke to the Papal Power, 92. *Luther* gives a great Blow thereto, 94. It is now recovered and likely to gain Ground, 100. It is not founded on Reason or warranted by Scripture, 102. The Papal Constitution is admirably contrived for preserving itself, *ib.* Rules observed in choosing *Popes*, 104. They commonly enrich their own Families, 105. They usually have a first Minister, called *Cardinal Patron*, 106. Their Subjects are of two Sorts, *ib.* Doctrines and Customs which serve to maintain the Pope's Authority, 107. Learning is prostitute to its Support, 110. Violent Methods are if necessary used, 111. Reasons for the Continuance of sensible Men under Subjection to the Pope, 112. His Interest with Regard to *Protestants*, 115. The *Papists* Strength compared with that of the *Protestants*, 116.

Popiel I. Prince of *Poland*, II. 289.

Popiel II. Prince of *Poland*, II. 289. His Cruelty is punished in an uncommon Manner, *ib.*

Powder Plot, I. 180.

I N D E X.

Portugal is given with the Title of Count to *Henry of Burgundy*, I. 120. It becomes an independent Kingdom, 121. Origin of its Arms, *ib.* It is conquered by *Castile*, 128. It recovers its Independency, 84. It loses much in the *East-Indies*, 129. Its people are driven from *Japan*, 138. Manners of the *Portuguese*, 137. Soil of *Portugal*, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Settlements, 138. Its Interests in the general, 140. Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*

Portuguese Manners of them, 137.

Pracontal Marquis is slain, I. 287.

Pragmatick Sanction is instituted by the Emperor, I. 385. The *Germanick* Body confirm it, 386. Several Powers guaranty it, *ib.*

Preliminaries of the *Hague*, I. 292. Of *Paris*, 206. Of *Radstadt*, 382. Of *Vienna*, 303.

Premislaus Prince of *Poland*, II. 293. He takes the Title of King, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*

Pretender is acknowledged by *France*, I. 194. He embarks for *Scotland*, 196. He publishes a Manifesto, 201. He arrives in *Scotland*, 202. Intrigues of *Charles XII.* in his Favour, *ib.* An Expedition from *Spain* in Favour of him, 204.

Primogeniture Right of, I. 375.

Protestants Origin of that Name, I. 357. They are attacked by the Emperor, *ib.* They are a second Time attacked in *Germany*, 361. No Reconciliation likely between them and *Papists*, II. 115. Considerations on their Strength with Regard to the *Papists*, 116. No Agreement amongst themselves to be expected, 118.

Prussia its ancient State, II. 269. The Knights of the *Teutonick* Order are invited thither, 271. Divers Princes make Expeditions there, 272. Part thereof is annexed to *Poland*, 295. That Part belonging to the *Teutonick* Order is erected into a secular Dutchy, 278. The *Protestant* Religion is introduced thereinto, *ib.* Disputes there betwixt the *Osiandrists* and the *Morlinists*, *ib.* It is declared to be independent of *Poland*, 281. It is erected into a Kingdom, 283. It is brought into a flourishing State, 284. Its present Inhabitants are of different Nations, 272. Dominions belonging to it, 282. Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*

Prussians Manners of them while *Heathens*, II. 270. Their Idols are destroyed by *Boleslaus*, *ib.* They commit great Ravages in *Masovia*, 271.

R.

Rachis King of *Lombardy* embraces Christianity, II. 54.

Radzeowski Primate his Intrigues in *Poland*, II. 312. He is excommunicated, 314.

Ragotzki is proclaimed in *Hungary*, I. 376.

Ragwalde Knafholde King of *Sweden*, II. 201. He is murdered, *ib.*

Ramire

I N D E X.

- Ramire I.* King of *Asturia*, I. 40.
- Ramire II.* King of *Leon*, I. 43. He is successful against the *Moors*, *ib.*
- Ramire III.* King of *Leon*, I. 45. The *Moors* gain Ground upon him, *ib.*
- Ravillac Francis* he stabs *Henry IV.* I. 269.
- Recarede I.* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 27. He abjures *Arianism*, 28.
- Recarede II.* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 29.
- Regnier Zeno* Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He is successful against *Genoa*, *ib.*
- Rene* King of *Naples*, II. 139. He is forced to leave his Rival in Possession of this Kingdom, *ib.*
- Requesenes Lewis* governs the *Netherlands*, I. 316.
- Religion* State of it among the *Heathens* and *Jews*, II. 72. Origin of the War on Account thereof in *France*, I. 256. Hostilities are commenced there, 259. Fatal Effects of this War, 270. A War on Account thereof in *Germany*, 357. Another there, 359. A War on Account of it in *Switzerland*, 405.
- Religion Catholick* Doctrines and Customs thereof which serve to keep the Laity under, II. 110. Violent Methods used to propagate this, 111. Reasons for the Continuance of sensible Men therein, 112. Some States have an Interest in maintaining it, 113.
- Religion Christian* Reasons for its Universality, I. 73. It is for the Interest of Sovereigns to introduce and maintain this, *ib.* The civil Magistrate ought in every State to be the Head thereof, 74. It was first embraced by the lower Sort of People, *ib.* It spread itself in a surprizing Manner, *ib.* Its Progress amongst the *Romans*, 75. Its Professors are persecuted, *ib.* No Consequence to be drawn from the Power in Ecclesiastical Matters exercised by the primitive Christians, *ib.* Reasons for the Continuance of this Power, 76. Magistrates are capable of the supreme Direction in what concerns it, *ib.* It is planted in *Denmark*, II. 178. *Finland*, 201. *France*, I. 122. *Lombardy*, II. 54. *Poland*, 200. *Prussia*, 270. *Russia*, 327. *Sweden*, 199. *Turky*, 351.
- Religion Mahometan* spreads itself in *Turky*, II. 351.
- Religion Protestant* begins in *Germany*, I. 357. It is introduced into *Denmark*, II. 185. *England*, I. 174. *Prussia*, II. 278. *Scotland*, I. 177. *Sweden*, II. 220. *Switzerland*, I. 404. Reasons for its not having spread further, II. 98. It is in no Danger from open Force, 118. The best Means to preserve it, *ib.*
- Reuchlin John* triumphs over the Monks. II. 96.
- Revolution* the Persons concerned in bringing one about are frequently influenced by ambitious Views, I. 14. One is easily brought about when the People in general have no Affection for their Governor. 84.
- Richard I.* King of *England*, I. 152. He undertakes an Expedition to *Palstine*, *ib.* He is made Prisoner in *Germany*, 153. He repulses the *French* in *Normandy*, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Richard II.* King of *England*, 160. He is forced to give up his

I N D E X.

- his Favourites, I. 160. He submits to *Lancaster*, 161. He is dethroned and murdered in Prison, *ib.*
- Richard III.* King of *England*, I. 168. He kills *Henry VI.* 167. He causes his Brother *Clarence* to be assassinated, *ib.* He causes *Edward V.* to be murdered, 168. His Intrigues to get the Crown, 169. He is defeated and slain, *ib.*
- Richelieu* Cardinal becomes first Minister, I. 270. He advises the Banishment of the *Hugenots*, *ib.*
- Riperda* Baron resigns his Employments, I. 104. He is seized at *Madrid* in the House of the *British* Minister, *ib.*
- Robert* King of *France*, I. 229. He is excommunicated, *ib.*
- Robert* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 356.
- Robert* King of *Naples*, II. 134. He joins with the *Guelphs*, *ib.* He is made Lord of *Genoa*, *ib.* He devotes himself to Books, 135.
- Robert Guiscard* Duke of *Pouille*, II. 123. His Brother *Roger* makes great Progress in *Sicily*, 124. He quarrels with his Brother, *ib.* He sides with the Pope against the Emperor, *ib.* He subdues some of the Isles of *Greece*, *ib.*
- Roderick* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 33. His Rape of *Florinda* is followed with a Revolution, 34.
- Rodolph* King of *France*, I. 220.
- Rodolph I.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 353. He deprives *Ottocare* of *Bohemia*, *ib.* He puts one of his Sons into Possession of *Suabia*, *ib.* He confirms the Grants of his Predecessors to the Holy See, II. 70. He introduces the Use of the *German* Language into all publick Acts, I. 354. He demolishes the Holds of Robbers, *ib.*
- Rodolph II.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 359. The *Hungarian* War is very troublesome to him, *ib.* He cedes *Hungary* to his Brother, *ib.*
- Rodolph* Duke of *Suabia* is slain, I. 340.
- Rodrigo Dias De Bivar* or the *Cid* his Exploits, I. 51.
- Roger* Duke of *Pouille*, II. 125. A Rebellion is raised against him, *ib.*
- Roger I.* Count of *Sicily*, II. 125. He signalizes himself against the *Saracens*, 124. *Guiscard* his Brother uses him ill, *ib.* He supports his Nephew *Roger* in the *Pouille*, 125.
- Roger II.* Count of *Sicily*, II. 125. He succeeds to the *Pouille* and takes the Title of King of the *Two Sicilies*, *ib.* This Title is confirmed to him by the Pope, 126. He distinguishes himself in *Palestine*, *ib.*
- Roman Empire* Causes of the Decline thereof, I. 15. It is divided by *Constantine the Great*, II. 48. It is divided into *Eastern* and *Western*, I. 19. The *Eastern* is weakened by the Quarrels in the Imperial Family, 20. It is put an End to by the *Turks*, *ib.* The *Western* is overrun by the Northern Nations, I. 19.
- Romans* their surprizing Constancy, I. 12. Regulations for encouraging Valour amongst them, 11. Their Mistake in putting

I N D E X.

too much Power into the Hands of Generals. I. 17. They subdue *Gaul*, 216. They drive the *Franks* out of *Gaul*, 217. They call the *Huns* to their Assistance in *Gaul*, 218. An End is put to their Power in *Gaul*, 220. They subdue *Spain*, 21. They are driven out of *Spain*, 23. They reestablish themselves there, 26. They are again driven from thence, 29.

Rome its first Inhabitants lived by Plunder, I. 10. Methods of *Romulus* to make it populous, *ib.* Its constitution was quite military, *ib.* The *Gauls* bring *Rome* into extreme Danger, 12. Its Religion was calculated to serve the Purposes of the State, *ib.* Its Priests enjoyed a great Share of civil Power, 14. Expulsion of its Kings, *ib.* Monarchy was not a proper Form of Government for *Rome*, *ib.* Contests betwixt the *Patricians* and *Plebeians*, *ib.* The Liberty of *Rome* is quite ruined by *Julius Cæsar*, 18. The Soldiers engross all the Power, *ib.* Christianity spreads itself in *Rome*, II. 75. Its first Bishops suffer much from the *Heathens*, 48. They are much caressed by the first *Christian* Emperors, 76. The Imperial Residence is removed from thence, 50. It is blocked up by the *Lombards*, 54. It is relieved by *Pepin*, *ib.* It throws off all Subjection to the *Eastern* Emperors, 86. The Exercate is annexed to the See of *Rome* by *Pepin*, 87.

Ruffel Lord is beheaded, I. 191.

Russia its ancient History very obscure, II. 327. It is subdued by the *Tartars*, *ib.* Manners of its People, 347. Its Soil, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Government, 348. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other Powers, *ib.*

Russians Manners of them, II. 347.

Ruyter Admiral is slain, I. 279.

S.

Sacheverel Dr. is silenced for three Years, I. 196.

St. Adalbert preaches the Gospel in *Prussia*, II. 270. He is assassinated, *ib.*

St. Andre Marshal is slain, I. 259.

St. Gall the Abbot of oppresses the *Togenburgese*, I. 408.

St. Ruth General is slain, I. 193.

Salique Law is reformed, I. 222.

Sancho King of *Leon*, I. 44. He is forced to quit the Throne, *ib.* He is restored thereto, *ib.*

Sancho II. King of *Castile*, I. 50. He deprives his Brother of *Leon*, 51. He overcomes *Ramire* King of *Navarre*, 50. He is murdered before *Zamora*, 51.

Sancho III. King of *Castile*, I. 60.

Sancho IV. King of *Castile*, I. 62. His Reign is much disturbed, 63.

Sancho the Great King of *Navarre*, I. 47. He is very unhappy in his Family, *ib.* He is assassinated, 48.

Sancho IV. King of *Navarre*, I. 51. He is assassinated, *ib.*

Sancho of *Navarre* his Intrepidity at the Battle of *Losa*, I. 60.

Sancho

I N D E X.

- Sancho I.* King of Portugal, I. 121.
- Sancho II.* King of Portugal I. 121.
- Saracens* why so called, II. 351. They embrace *Christianity*, *ib.* The Doctrines of *Mahomet* spreads amongst them, *ib.* They overrun the *Eastern Empire*, I. 20. They are overcome by the *Turks*, II. 351. A remarkable Defeat of them, 124. They are driven from *Sicily*, 125.
- Sardinia* the Kingdom of is erected, II. 12. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*
- Saxe Count* is chosen Duke of *Courland*, II. 319. He is forced to quit this Dutchy, *ib.*
- Saxe-Gotha Prince* of is slain, I. 291.
- Saxons* come into *Britain*, I. 143. All the South Part of this Island is subdued by them and divided into seven Kingdoms, *ib.*
- Savoy* Origin of the House of, II. 1. It is erected into a Dutchy, 4. Origin of its Claim upon *Cyprus*, *ib.* Its Soil, 15. Its Commodities, *ib.*
- Sharco General* is slain, II. 371.
- Standerberg* the Great his Exploits, II. 356.
- Scania* submits to *Sweden*, II. 207.
- Schmielinski General* is ignominiously treated, II. 301. He routs the *Poles*, *ib.*
- Schomberg Duke* of is slain, I. 284.
- Schulemburg General* a Statue is decreed him for saving *Corfu*, II. 172.
- Scotch* take up Arms against *Charles*, I. 185. They deliver him into the Hands of the *English*, 186. They are vanquished by *Cromwell*, 187. Manners of them, 209.
- Sebastian King* of Portugal, I. 127. He is too enterprizing, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Seckendorf Count* is disgraced, II. 377.
- Selim I.* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 358. He causes his Father to be poisoned, *ib.* He causes his Brother and eight other Princes to be strangled, 359. He attacks *Persia*, *ib.* He puts *Aludulus* to death, 360. He subdues *Egypt*, *ib.*
- Selim II.* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 303. He makes Peace with the Emperor, *ib.* He attacks *Cyprus*, 364.
- Sebastiano Venier Doge* of *Venice*, II. 164.
- Sebastiano Ziani Doge* of *Venice*, II. 149. He joins with the Pope against the Emperor, *ib.*
- Sicilian Vesper*, II. 132.
- Sicily* its ancient State, II. 120. The *Saracens* become Masters thereof, *ib.* They are driven from thence, 125. It is detached from *Naples*, 133. It is annexed to *Arragon*, 137. It is annexed to *Castile*, 139. It is erected into a Kingdom for the Duke of *Savoy*, 141. The Emperor is put into Possession thereof, *ib.*
- The Two Sicilies* the Kingdom of is erected, II. 125. It is ceded to the Emperor 129. It is conquered by *Don Carlos*, 142. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 143.

I N D E X.

- Sidney Algernoon* suffers Death, I. 191.
- Siege of Agrigentum*, II. 125. *Antwerp*, I. 319. *Bagdat*, II. 367. *Barcelona*, I. 93. *Belgrade*, 383. *Buda*, II. 370. *Candia*, 368. *Casal*, I. 271. *Charleroy*, 88. *Colberg*, II. 234. *Copenhagen*, 247. *Dantzick*, 303. *Dijon*, I. 403. *Famagosta*, II. 163. *Frederickshal*, 258. *Harlem*, I. 316. *Lerida*, 85. *Leipsick*, II. 244. *Leyden*, I. 316. *Lisle*, 292. *Louvain*, 272. *Luxemburg*, 87. *Maestricht*, 278. *Magdeburg*, II. 235. *Mentz*, I. 368. *Messina*, II. 123. *Namure*, I. 284. *Naples*, 252. *Negropont*, II. 157. Another of it, 371. *Neuhaussel*, I. 364. *Nice*, 289. *Orleans*, 242. *Ostend*, 322. *Pavia*, II. 57. Another of it, 61. *Raab*, 364. *Riga*, 304. *Rochelle*, I. 261. Another of it, 270. *Seutari*, II. 357. *Smolensko*, 298. *Stetin*, 282. *Stockholm*, 223. *Stralsund*, 191. *Toledo*, I. 51. *Tournay*, 293. *Toulon*, 290. *Turin*, 289. Another of it, II. 9. *Vienna*, 365. Another of it, II. 361. *Weissenburg*, 360. *Ziricksee*, I. 317.
- Sigebut* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 28.
- Sigerick* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 22.
- Sigismund* Emperor of Germany, I. 356. He causes *John Hufs* to be put to Death, *ib.* The Followers of *Hufs* give him much Trouble, *ib.*
- Sigismund* I. King of Poland, II. 295. He is successful against *Russia*, *ib.* He accommodates Matters with the *Teutonic Order*, *ib.*
- Sigismund* II. King of Poland, II. 295. *Livonia* and *Esthonia* submit to him.
- Sigismund* III. King of Poland, II. 297. He is successful against *Maximillian* his Rival, *ib.* He succeeds to *Sweden*, *ib.* He is deposed by the *Swedes*, *ib.* He supports *Demetrius*, *ib.* His Son is proclaimed by the *Russians*, 298. He is attacked by the *Turks*, 300. He loses much in *Livonia*, *ib.*
- Sigismund* King of *Sweden*, II. 227.
- Silesia* its Princes submit to *Bohemia*, II. 293. It is detached from Poland, 292. It is ceded to the King of *Prussia*, 285.
- Silo* King of *Asturia*, I. 37.
- Sinclair* Baron is assassinated, II. 264.
- Sizenand* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 29.
- Slinzers* a Party in *France* so called, I. 274.
- Soisson* Count of stirs up a Rebellion in *France*, I. 272.
- Soliman* I. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 360. *Rhodes* surrenders to him, 361. His Progress in *Hungary*, *ib.* He deposes *Muley Hassan*, 362. He attacks *Persia*, *ib.* The *Venetians* join against him, 363. Great Character of him, *ib.*
- Soliman* II. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 371. He is unsuccessful in his Wars, *ib.*
- Somerfet* Duke of is slain, I. 165.
- Sophia* Princess her Intrigues in *Russia*, II. 330.
- South-Sea Scheme*, I. 205.

I N D E X.

- Spahes* the Body of is formed, II. 353.
- Spaniards* Manners of them, I. 110.
- Spain* its ancient State, I. 21. The *Romans* subdue it, *ib.* It is overrun by the *Goths* and *Suevi*, *ib.* The *French* invade it, 25. It is subdued by the *Moors*, 34. Six independent *Christian* States therein, 48. The *Moorish* Power there is quite put an End to, 70. Manners of its Inhabitants, 110. Reasons for its being thinly peopled, *ib.* Its Soil, 111. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Settlements in the *West-Indies*, *ib.* Its Settlements in the *East-Indies*, 115. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Revenue, 116. Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*
- Sparta* its wise Laws, I. 5. It gains the Superiority in *Greece*, *ib.* It is brought into feeble State, 6.
- Spencers* suffer Death, I. 157.
- Stanhope* General is taken Prisoner, I. 97.
- Stanislaus* King of *Poland*, II. 314. His Election is declared void, 317. He lives in *France*, 320. He is again elected to the *Polish* Throne, *ib.* He renounces his Pretensions thereto, 321.
- Stanislaus* Bishop of *Cracow* is beheaded at the Altar, II. 291.
- Steinbock* Count is taken Prisoner, II. 256.
- Stenchild* I. King of *Sweden*, II. 199. His *Heathen* Subjects assassinate him, *ib.*
- Stenchild* II. King of *Sweden*, II. 200. He is successful against the *Danes*, *ib.*
- Stephen* King of *England*, I. 151. His Right to the Crown is disputed, *ib.* He is made Prisoner, *ib.* *Henry* of *Anjou* is adopted by him, *ib.*
- Stephen* King of *Poland*, II. 296. He is successful against the *Russians*, *ib.* The Laws are reformed by him, *ib.* He civilizes the *Cossacks*, *ib.*
- Stephen* Pope, II. 54. *Pepin* comes to his Assistance, *ib.* He goes into *France* and procures the Settlement of the *French* Crown upon the Sons of *Pepin*, 55.
- Stephen* III. Pope, II. 58. He is cajoled by *Didier*, *ib.*
- Stephen* IX. Pope, II. 66.
- Stirum* Count is slain, I. 371.
- Strafford* Lord is beheaded, I. 185.
- Strozzi* stabs himself, II. 42.
- Sture Steen* Regent of *Sweden* resigns his Power, II. 214. He is restored to the Regency, 215. He dies as is supposed by Poison, *ib.*
- Sture Suante* Regent of *Sweden* defends himself bravely against *John* of *Denmark*, II. 215.
- Sture Steen* the Younger Regent of *Sweden* makes *Gustavus Trolle* Prisoner, II. 216. He is excommunicated, *ib.* He is mortally wounded, *ib.* His Body is dug up and quartered, *ib.*
- Sture* the House of suffers much, II. 223.
- Suevi* settle in *Spain*, I. 21. Their Kingdom in *Spain* is put an End to, 26.
- Suffolk* Duke of is beheaded, I. 175.

I N D E X.

- Suintihila* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 29. He is deposed, *ib.*
Superstition a remarkable Instance thereof, I. 40.
Sweden a very ancient Kingdom, II. 197. It is brought into a deplorable State, 208. It is united to *Denmark*, 209. Its Crown is declared Hereditary, 221. Its Form of Government is regulated, 260. An *East-India* Company is erected there, 262. Manners of its People, 264. Its Soil, 265. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Strength, *ib.* Its Government, 260. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 265.
Swerin Count revenges the Insult done to his Wife, II. 180.
Swedes their Kingdom and that of the *Goths* are united, II. 200. Divisions betwixt them and the *Goths*, 201. Manners of them, 264.
Swercher I. King of *Sweden*, II. 210. He is murdered, *ib.*
Swercher II. King of *Sweden*, II. 202. He is slain in *West-Gothland*, *ib.*
Sweyn I. King of *Denmark*, II. 178. He is ransomed by the *Danish* Women, *ib.*
Sweyn II. King of *Denmark*, II. 179.
Sweyn III. King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He is slain, *ib.*
Sweyn King of *England*, I. 145. He is slain at *St. Edmunds Bury*, *ib.*
Swiss they gain Victories over the *Austrians*, I. 401. They are successful against *Burgundy*, 402. They signalize themselves in the Service of *France*, *ib.* They scandalously desert the Duke of *Milan*, *ib.* They go into the Pope's Service, 403. Their Alliance with *France* is renewed, *ib.* They assist the *Genoese*, 405. They are attacked by *Savoy*, 406. They send some Troops to join the Allies, 407. A civil War amongst them, 408. They enter into new Engagements with *France*, 409. They assist in quelling an Insurrection in *Geneva*, 410. Manners of them, *ib.*
Swisserland formerly belonged to *Germany*, I. 399. The Nobility are driven out of the *Swiss* Cantons, *ib.* They submit to the House of *Austria*, *ib.* First League amongst them, 400. They renew their League at *Brun*, 401. The Attempt of the House of *Austria* to reduce them to Obedience fails, *ib.* They are excluded from the *Germanick* Body, 401. Their Number and Allies, 410. Soil of *Swisserland*, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Strength, 411. Its Constitution, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 412.
Sylvestro Valier Doge of *Venice*, II. 171. He loses *Chio*, *ib.*
Symnel Lambert he is proclaimed in *Ireland*, I. 169.
Syria is subdued by the *Romans*, I. 9.

T.

- TAlza* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 30.
Tallard Count is taken Prisoner, I. 288.
Tamerlane makes *Bejazet* Prisoner, II. 354.

I N D E X.

- Tancred* King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 128. His Right to the Crown is contested, *ib.* He makes *Constance* Prisoner, 129.
- Tancred* Lord of *Hautville* his ten Sons go into *Italy*, II. 121.
- Tell *William* his brave Conduct, I. 400.
- Teutonic* Order Origin of it, II. 268. Different Names thereof, *ib.* It is removed to *Venice*, *ib.* It is settled in *Prussia*, 271. It has a long War with *Pomerania*, 272. It builds *Marienburg*, *ib.* It acquires *Pomerelia*, 273. The *Poles* attack it, *ib.* It is very flourishing, 274. Its War with *Lithuania* costs it dear, 275. Great Confusion therein, *ib.* The *Poles* take much from it, 276. Its Dominions in *Prussia* are erected into a secular Dutchy, 278.
- Tezel* *John* he writes against *Luther*, II. 95.
- Thomas* *Kouli Kan* his Progress against the *Turks*, II. 374. He usurps the Sovereignty of *Persia*, 376.
- Thebes* becomes considerable, I. 6.
- Theodato* *Ispato* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. His eyes are put out and he is banished, *ib.*
- Theodore* I. Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 328. He loses much in *Ingria*, *ib.*
- Theodore* II. Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 329.
- Theodore* III. Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 328. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Theodore* Baron *De Neuboff* arrives in *Corfica*, II. 32. He institutes the Order of Deliverance, 33. He disappears, *ib.* He comes again into *Corfica*, 34.
- Theodored* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 22. He joins against the *Huns*, *ib.* He is trampled to Death, *ib.*
- Theodorick* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 23. He is successful against the *Suevi*, *ib.* He is murdered, *ib.*
- Theresa* her implacable Hatred to *Gonsalvo*, I. 45.
- Theudis* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 25. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Thomas* of *Savoy*, II. 2. He assists the Emperor, *ib.* He is made Vicar of the Empire, *ib.*
- Thomas* *Mocenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 156.
- Thorn* a Quarrel there between the *Jesuits* and the *Townsmen*, II. 318.
- Tilly* General is killed by a Cannon Ball, II. 238.
- Togenburg* its Quarrel with the Abbot of *St. Gall*, I. 408.
- Toledo* Resolutions of a Council held there, I. 29. An Interview there betwixt several crowned Heads, 59.
- Tomem-Bei* Sultan of *Egypt* is beheaded, II. 360.
- Torkel* *Canutson* Regent of *Sweden* subdues *Carelia*, II. 204. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Torrismond* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 23. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Torsten* General he commands in *Germany*, 243.
- Treaty of *Aix-la-Chapelle*, I. 86. *Altena*, II. 188. *Alt-Ranstadt*, II. 253. *Baden*, I. 296. *Barrier*, I. 333. A second, I. 334. *Belgrade*, II. 277. *Breda*, I. 328. *Breslau*, II. 285. *Bretigny*, I. 159. *Broemsebroco*, II. 244. *Cambray*, I. 252. *Carlowitz*, II. 372. *Chateau Cambresis*, I. 255. *Chiarasco*, II. 8. *Copenhagen*, II. 187. *Crespy*, I. 254. *Falexin*, II. 373. Grand Alliance,

I N D E X:

- Alliance*, I. 193. A second, 331. *Hanover*, 104. *Kalisch*, II. 274. *Lyons*, 6. *Lubeck*, 186. *Munster*, I. 363. *Neustadt*, II. 336. *Nimeguen*, I. 279. *Oliwa*, II. 304. *Osnabrug*, 266. *Partition*, I. 286. *Passarowitz*, 383. *Passau*, 358. *Pavia*, II. 57. *Pyrenees*, I. 276. *Quadruple Alliance*, 203. *Roschau*, 409. *Raschid*, II. 187. *Ryswick*, I. 368. *St. Germain*, II. 282. *Seville*, I. 105. *Stetin*, II. 185. *Stockholm*, 191. *Stolbowa*, 231. *Trawendall*, 189. *Tripple Alliance*, I. 202. A second, 277. *Vervins*, 267. *Vienna*, 103. *Utrecht*, 295. *Westphalia*, 363.
- Transilvania* submits to the *Turks*, II. 361.
- Trebisonde* an Empire is erected there, I. 20. It is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 357.
- Tribuno Memo Doge of Venice*, II. 146. He enters into the Monastick State, *ib.*
- Trolle Gustavus* his Intrigues against *Steen Sture*, II. 216.
- Troops* hired ones are dangerous and not to be trusted, I. 9.
- Turenne* Marshal is killed, I. 279.
- Turks* Manners of them, II. 378.
- Turky* Origin of the Empire of, II. 351. Manners of its People, 378. Provinces thereto belonging, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Government, 379. Its Revenue, *ib.* Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 380.
- Tuscans* Manners of them, II. 46.
- Tuscany* its ancient State, II. 38. Dominions thereto belonging, II. 46. Its Soil, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Revenue, 47. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*

V.

- Vacher* plots against *Genoa*, II. 27. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Valentinian* Emperor of the East resides at *Milan*, II. 50.
- Valier* Admiral his brave Death, II. 170.
- Van Hutten Ulrick* exposes *Monks* and *Priests*, II. 96.
- Venda* Princess of *Poland*, II. 289. She drowns herself, *ib.*
- Venetians* Manners of them, II. 173.
- Venice* Origin of this Republick, II. 144. It is governed by *Tribunes*, *ib.* A *Doge* is chosen, *ib.* The Body of *St. Mark* as it was supposed being brought there he is taken for the Patron of *Venice*, 145. The Dominions of this Republick are enlarged by *Pepin*, *ib.* Origin of the Ducal Horn, *ib.* Great Part of *Venice* is destroyed by Fire, 147. The Power of its *Doge* is limited, 148. A famous Interview there in which the Pope is said to have set his Foot upon the Emperor's Neck, 149. The Custom of wedding the *Adriatick* is instituted, *ib.* *Ducats* first coined at *Venice*, 151. It is overflowed by the *Adriatick*, *ib.* Its Government is new modelled, *ib.* The Council of *Ten* is erected, *ib.* The *Adriatick* rises much higher than usual, 153. It is afflicted with Famine, Fire and Sword at the same Time, 162. Manners of its Inhabitants, II. 173. Its Dominions, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- ib.* Its Strength, *ib.* Its Revenue, 174. Its Government, 175. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 176.
- Veremond I.* King of *Asturia*, I. 38. He quits the Throne and reenters into the Monastick State, *ib.*
- Veremond II.* King of *Leon*, I. 46.
- Veremond III.* King of *Leon*, I. 46.
- Vernon* Admiral he takes *Porto Bello*, I. 208.
- Ugotin* is made Governor of *Genoa*, II. 20.
- Victor Amadeus I.* Duke of *Savoy*, II. 8. He takes the Title of King of *Cyprus*, *ib.* He assists the Duke of *Parma*, *ib.*
- Victor Amadeus II.* Duke of *Savoy*, II. 9. He persecutes the *Vaudese*, 10. He enters into the *Grand Alliance*, *ib.* He acknowledges the Duke of *Anjou* but goes over afterwards to the Allies, *ib.* He becomes King of *Sicily*, 12. He exchanges *Sicily* for the Kingdom of *Sardinia*, *ib.* He reforms the Laws, *ib.* Prudent Conduct of his, 13. He abdicates the Crown, *ib.*
- Victor II.* Pope, II. 66.
- Villeroy* Marshal is made Prisoner, I. 90.
- Visco* Duke of is stabbed, I. 125.
- Vislur* King of *Sweden*, II. 198. He is burnt by his own Children, *ib.*
- Vitalo Candiano* Doge of *Venice*, II. 146. He turns Monk, *ib.*
- Vitalo Faliero* Doge of *Venice*, II. 147.
- Vitalo Michiele I.* Doge of *Venice*, II. 147. He improves the Naval Strength of the Republick, *ib.*
- Vitalo Michiele II.* Doge of *Venice*, II. 148. He makes the Patriarch of *Aquileia* Prisoner, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Uladislaus I.* King of *Poland*, II. 291. He in Obedience to the Pope lays aside the Title of King, *ib.* His Reign is much disturbed, *ib.*
- Uladislaus II.* Prince of *Poland*, II. 292. He is driven from his Dominions, *ib.*
- Uladislaus III.* King of *Poland*, II. 293. He is deposed but renounces the Throne, *ib.* He attacks the *Teutonick Order*, *ib.*
- Uladislaus IV.* King of *Poland*, II. 294. He annexes *Lithuania* to *Poland*, *ib.* He vanquishes the *Teutonick Order*, *ib.*
- Uladislaus V.* King of *Poland*, II. 294. He engages in a War with the *Turks*, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Uladislaus VI.* King of *Poland*, II. 300. He is raised to the Throne of *Russia*, 298. He is deposed by the *Russians*, 299. He is successful in a War with *Russia*, 301. He repulses the *Turks*, *ib.*
- Ulrica Eleonora* Queen of *Sweden*, II. 258. She concludes Peace with all the Northern Powers, *ib.* *Frederick* her Husband is raised to the Throne, 259.
- Vortigern* King of *Britain*, II. 143. He calls in the *Saxons*, *ib.*
- Uraca* her notorious Lewdness, I. 55.
- Uscoques* Origin of them, II. 165. A Stop is put to their Piracies, 166.

W.

- W***Aldemar I.* King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He overcomes *Sweyn* his Rival, *ib.*
- Waldemar II.* King of *Denmark*, II. 180. He is confined in Prison, *ib.* Many Provinces revolt from him, *ib.*

Waldemar

I N D E X.

- Waldemar III. King of Denmark*, II. 181. He sells *Esthonia*, *ib.*
 He conquers much from *Sweden*, *ib.*
Waldemar King of Sweden, II. 203. He is forced to resign the
 Crown, *ib.* He dies in Prison, *ib.*
Walinski is executed, II. 341.
Wallia King of the Visgoths, II. 22. He joins with the *Romans*
 against the *Suevi*, *ib.*
Wallstein General is disgraced, II. 241.
Wamba King of the Visgoths, I. 30. His Reign is much disturbed,
 31. Being poisoned he turns Monk, 32. He recovers and lives
 some Years retired, *ib.* The Persons concerned in poisoning
 him are brought to Justice, *ib.*
Warbeck Perkin claims the *English Crown*, I. 169. The *Scotch*
 assist him, *ib.* He is proclaimed in *Cornwall*, *ib.* He is hanged, *ib.*
Warwick Earl of is routed, I. 269. He flies into *France*, *ib.* He
 is slain, *ib.*
Waydewest King of Prussia, II. 269. He offers himself a Sacri-
 fice, *ib.*
Weimar Duke of signalizes himself in *Germany*, II. 242.
Wenceslaus Emperor of Germany, I. 355. He is deposed, *ib.*
Werner D'Orseln Grand Master of the Teutonic Order, II. 273.
 He sides against the Pope, *ib.* He is stabbed, *ib.*
West-Indies the *Spaniards* not the first Discoverers thereof, I. 111.
 The Pope's Grant of them esteemed by the Natives ridiculous,
 112. Cruelty of the *Spaniards* in the *West-Indies*, *ib.* Their
 different Sorts of Inhabitants, *ib.* Their Riches are in a great
 Measure exhausted, 113. They have been of no real Benefit
 to *Spain*, 114. Commodities brought from thence, *ib.*
William I. King of England, I. 147. His Extraction, *ib.* He
 lands in *England*, *ib.* He overcomes *Harold*, *ib.* He is pro-
 claimed King, *ib.* He is disturbed by *Edgar Atheling*, 148.
 He conquers *Wales*, *ib.* He grows tyrannical, *ib.* He intro-
 duces the Use of the Cross-Bow, 149. His Son *Robert* rebels
 against him in *Normandy*, *ib.* He penetrates into *France*, *ib.*
William II. King of England, I. 149. *Robert* his Brother claims
 the Crown, *ib.* He is successful against the *Scots*, *ib.* His
 artful Way of raising Money, *ib.* He is shot in hunting, *ib.*
William III. King of Great-Britain, I. 193. He lands in *Eng-
 land* and is crowned, *ib.* He subdues *Ireland*, *ib.* He enters
 into the Grand Alliance, *ib.* A Conspiracy against him, 194.
 He acknowledges *Philip V.* *ib.* He dies by a Fall from his
 Horse, *ib.*
William Emperor of Germany, I. 352. He is slain in Battle, *ib.*
William I. King of the Two Sicilies, II. 126. He is excommuni-
 cated, 127. He forces the Pope to his Terms, *ib.* He is suc-
 cessful against the *Turks* and *Greeks*, *ib.* A Conspiracy against
 him, *ib.*
William II. King of the Two Sicilies, II. 127. He sides with
 the Pope, *ib.* He revenges the Death of *Alexis Emperor of
 the East*, *ib.* He assists in saving *Tyre* from the *Turks*, 128.

William

I N D E X.

William I. Prince of Orange encourages the Discontent in the Netherlands, I. 311. He raises an Army in Germany, 315. He is repulsed by the Duke *D'Aylva*, *ib.* He is made Governor of Holland, *ib.* He concert's the Union of some Provinces, 318. He is stabbed, 319.

William II. Prince of Orange, 326. He attempts to surprize Amsterdam, 327.

William III. Prince of Orange, I. 329. He is unsuccessful against the French, *ib.* He is raised to the Throne of Great-Britain, 330.

Witiza King of the *Visgoths*, I. 32. He is cruel and tyrannical, *ib.*

Woden subdues all the Northern Kingdoms, II. 197.

Woolsey Cardinal is disgraced, I. 172.

Wrangel General commands in Germany, II. 245. He carries Fire and Sword into *Bavaria*, *ib.*

X.

X *Atiwa* is raised, I. 95. A remarkable Inscription where this Town stood, *ib.*

Y.

Y *Ork* Duke of stirs up Troubles in England, I. 165. He defeats the Duke of Somerset, *ib.* He is declared Protector, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.* His Son is proclaimed, *ib.*

York the House of and that of *Lancaster* are united, I. 169.

Z.

Z *Achary* Pope, II. 53. He comes into the Views of *Pepin*, *ib.* He makes Peace with *Luitprand*, *ib.* He converts the King of Lombardy, *ib.*

Ziemomissus Prince of Poland, II. 290. His Son is miraculously cured of Blindness, *ib.*

Ziemowitus Prince of Poland, II. 290.

Zuinglius begins the Reformation in *Swisserland*, I. 504. He is slain in Battle, 405. A strange Story told of him by his Followers, 406.

40

[illegible]

WALTHAM, MASS. 02154

TUFTS UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES



3 9090 001 392 824

D
103
.P97

